

Zhan Long

(斩龙)

Volume 02

Rise of Heroes

Shi Luo Ye

(失落叶)

Story Description:

Li Xiao Yao. Former S.W.A.T member, but retired into an ordinary security guard. While being sent to grab a ladder, he accidentally stumbled upon the VIP room instead of the storage room, and found a women in the middle of changing. As revenge, she brought him out in the middle of nowhere and kicked him off there. He spent hours walking back, only to find himself being kicked out due to lack of payment. As bad things pile one after another, his previous supervisor offers him a new job as the bodyguard for the daughter of the Tian Xin group CEO, both in reality, and in a virtual reality game -Hello

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 249: Setting the Scene

“Swoosh!”

Simple had successfully teleported away once, causing the Flaming Tiger God’s attack to MISS.

I quickly regained my footing and then with an outstretched hand, I punched the ground!

“Peng!”

[Binding Chains] came out from underneath Simple’s feet! Unfortunately, Simple managed to predict this move and used her second teleport to escape, so the skill missed!

My heart shook, this wasn’t even a matter of reaction time. Simple had known I was going to activate [Binding Chains] and activated [Dimensional Leap] again in order to counter it.

With a ding sound, four golden hexagrams appeared on my sword, it was time to use brute force!

Looking at the several [Flame Blades] and [Triple Shots] coming towards me, I broke through the gaps and swung my sword at Simple. As long as I could break through her [Mana Shield], then my [Great Realm of Desolation] would be able to kill her without any huge complications!

“Shasha.....”

Simple quickly retreated, causing my first attack to miss her. Her staff then made contact with my sword as sparks began to fly from the exchange and she was pushed even farther back. How clever she was, to use the knockback from the blow to ensure that she would be able to dodge the next two attacks!

.....

“Shua!”

From the middle of the crowd came a bloody blur; it was Wolf who activated [Gouge]. However, that single strike wouldn’t be enough to

break the [Mana Shield]!

Simple slid to the side while still retaining that refined look. Concentrating a good amount of mana in her hand for a spell, she sent it straight towards Wolf and penetrated his chest. It was her 3rd class advancement skill, [Indigo Arrow], causing Wolf's body to immediately crumple down to the floor!

2987 !

Like a lightning strike, Yue Qing Qian came like a fleeting shadow. Her [Twin Harmony Strike] struck against Simple's [Mana Shield] and broke it! In a flash, Simple's health had drop down to below 50%!

With her third teleport, Simple furthered the distance between Yue Qing Qian and herself. At the same time, [Indigo Arrow] had finished its cooldown. The second one came flying out along with a [Pillars of ice & Fire], both hitting Yue Qing Qian between her eyes and from below her feet!

2554 !

1377 !

After the almost instantaneous combo of spells, Yue Qing Qian's health dropped to 0 quickly. As she fell to the ground she gave a mighty whimper, "What a fast casting speed..."

.....

After watching her kill two of my commanding generals and noticing her [Dimensional Leap] was on cooldown, it was time for me to kill her!

Taking out a God's Army Card, it was time to use one of the 5 Mohist Scrolls for the first time!

"Bzzzz"

The God's Army Card dissipated as a huge cyan beam of light splashed onto a group of players. Within the Black Tortoise Realm, everyone that was affected would have their movement speed reduced drastically. Immediately, Simple cried out, "What...what is this?!"

Without answering her, I dashed ahead with my sword. Using another 3 God's Army Cards, it was time for the second of the 5 Mohist Scrolls—Seven Star Teleportation!

“Hong!”

Appearing on top of the earth was a diagram of 7 stars. I operated with my mind and selected a spot—Alkaid!

With a “Swoosh,” my body had already appeared on top of the Alkaid point, and my distance from Simple was only a single step away. My Frost Rain Sword swung out wildly!

“My god, how can he teleport?” Simple's eyes were wide with astonishment as she raised her staff to parry my attack.

I smiled faintly, then lowered my body for [Blade Rush]!

“Hua Cha!”

Directly piercing through Simple, I turned around and attacked her once more!

1981 !

1457 !

Instant KO! Simple slowly fell onto her knees, and a pair of pretty eyes looked at me: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we've finally come to the conclusion I never wished to see.....”

I faintly laughed: “This is the plan of men carried out by the heavens.”

.....

“That was done so beautifully!” Sword Reborn made a fist and laughed, “We've finally killed Simple!”

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands shouted from afar, “Be careful Guild Master, there are people getting ready to revive Simple!”

I raised my head to look, and right in front was a Lv 60 Healer who was already going through the motions of casting [Revive], the target: Simple. We went through so much trouble to kill her, so how could we just let

that Healer revive her?

I raised my hands: [Great Realm of Desolation]!

3001 !

I killed her in one hit without incident.

At the same time, I drew out two more God's Army Cards, activating one of the Five Mohist Scrolls—[Soul Army]!

“Shua!” A radiant beam descended and within a 50×50 area multiple patterns of spirit diagrams appeared. The air carried a layer of blood red mist and in the next moment, hordes of ancient, ruthless swords plummeted from the sky. They went “Pa, pa, pa” as they struck down my enemies. Bloodcurdling screams sounded out unceasingly but those players within [Soul Army]'s range had to bear an attack every 2-3 seconds. The attack power of [Soul Army] was equivalent to my own attack power, how could they possibly hope to withstand it?!

In my heart, I was wild with joy. These Five Mohist Scrolls were a priceless treasure! With just a single cast of [Soul Army], I had directly isolated Simple's corpse, not even letting her have the hope of resurrecting. General Li Mu, Old K, Sword Reborn, and Dong Cheng Lei took their forces and slaughtered through, rapidly seizing the core region. Very quickly, there were only 2000+ men remaining of [Vanguard]'s originally 6000+ men, and their morale had taken a big hit!

.....

“Hurry, occupy the core region!”

General Li Mu hoisted his sword and chain killed ten more people. Leading Wang Jian, Bai Qi and the rest of the men, they quickly reached my side and stood firm. Simple's dead body was right beside me. Thus, she definitely could not be revived. Even if she was revived, she would be slaughtered in a second. With us this close and such a large amount of soldiers, she simply didn't even have the chance to run for her life.

After a few more minutes, 500 players from [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] had slashed and killed their way into the core of the battle, taking

control of the middle of the plains. Advancing onwards was [Misty Palace] and [Blood Contract] with their leaders out in front. Even with [Vanguard]'s 6000 people, it appeared that we had killed almost all of them. With our united forces, our strength was far too strong. Afterward, we didn't give them a chance to revive anyone. This way, we were able to slowly but firmly establish our strength.

In reality, [Vanguard] had already lost over 5000 people in battle. However, within [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bone] combined units of 1000 people, half of us had already died 2-3 times. Combined with the 3 other guilds, our losses weren't all that much better than [Vanguard]. After all, the people in [Vanguard] have followed Jian Feng Han for a long time and learned from his expertise. If it weren't for my quick arrival with reinforcement, who knows whether or not the outcome would have been victory?

.....

“Boom!”

Misty Cloud's battle axe threw itself into the earth, splattering blood all around it. Behind him was the rest [Misty Palace] battling it out. He laughed loudly, “And here I thought our deaths were certain! Who would have thought that we still pulled off a win somehow...”

Sword Reborn asked, “Misty Cloud, how did you drop down to Lv 59?”

Misty Cloud gave an embarrassed grin, “Don't remind me of it, I died three times in the past hour. Among of my deaths, Simple was responsible for killing me twice with her [Indigo Arrow]. Her [Scatter Shot] + [Indigo Arrow] are way too strong, there's just no way of defending against it...”

Han Bei Song swung his blood-drenched sword and walked out from a group of massacred corpses with Who's Blue and Not Red Yet following him from behind. The armors of the [Crimson Contract] players were torn and tattered, showing the intensity and desperation of the battle they have just fought; it was a relief that they managed to withstand the battle. This was an improvement. Only by fighting for such a long time

with so many [Vanguard] players will a guild be able to cultivate an unyielding and spirited group of players.

“Han Bei Song, how are you?” I asked, chuckling.

Han Bei Song laughed bitterly, “Don’t remind me, I was beaten by Simple almost to the point I couldn’t provide for myself any more. Damn it, that girl is really too violent. Her group of Mages have magic attacks above 1900, the moment they focus their attack on someone, the person will definitely die. Almost all of the main forces under me died three times, there is even someone who died five times. It’s not even an hour and he dropped 5 levels...”

Misty Cloud carried his battle axe on his shoulder, his eyes looking at the battle in front of him. “Don’t worry about it, as long as we beat [Vanguard], dying a few dozens times would be worth it!”

Han Bei Song nodded as he looked at me, “Eh? Xiao Yao? How come your level hasn’t dropped even once yet?”

I was startled at his question, “I didn’t die once, how could I?”

“What?!” Han Bei Song slapped his thigh, “How did you pull that off? You killed so many people at the frontlines, how did you not die even a single time?”

“Shua!”

From the side, a white beam came shining down as Yue Qing Qian’s body stood back up. Her pretty white face started to regain blood flow and she laughed, “My brother Xiao Yao was really strong with his [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. Not only that, even when he was attacking with [Blade Rush], he was able to dodge every attack aimed at him—unlike Han Bei Song. The moment you saw a beautiful girl, you would rush in blindly towards her...”

Han Bei Song held his face in his hands, “Aigh, that was seen by you...”

Wolf also revived at that moment, and upon seeing Simple’s dead body, he smirked. “Ba Huang City’s number one Mage is indeed as strong as they say. If her {Mana Shield} doesn’t break then she’s almost

invincible...”

Yue Qing Qian said, “Brother Wolf, don’t be that depressed about it. Our equipment right now is only temporary; equipment with magic resistance won’t be appearing until later on. Plus, Assassins will get a skill that will break shields in the endgame, the nightmare for Mages will begin then...”

Wolf nodded, “Yea, I can’t wait for even better equipment!”

.....

The Guild Master of [Winds of Battle] carried his staff in the midst of the bloody battle and said, “Guild Master Zi Zai and the rest of the Guild Masters here, now that Simple is dead, the battle is pretty much won. What shall we do, continue to guard the body, or...??”

My gaze grew cold as I said in the chat, “Do I really need to say it? We’re going to kill Jian Feng Han!”

“Of course, it’s time to kill Jian Feng Han!” Misty Cloud cried, “That is our real target!”

Old K asked, “Then how shall we split our forces here?”

I replied in a serious tone, “Zhan Long will dispatch 300 elites while [Winds of Battle], [Ruined Bones], [Misty Palace] and [Crimson Contract] will dispatch 100 elites each. We’ll create a 700 men force to barge into Arctic Fox Forest, which should be enough to eliminate Jian Feng Han’s 500-men force. All of the other players will stay here and guard the bodies, centering yourselves at Simple’s body. Should you want to chase after reviving people, don’t go too far and keep defending this spot. If they start their attack, hold them up here. The moment we kill Jian Feng Han will signal the victory of our five guilds battle campaign!”

Han Bei Song mouth twitched, “Yep, killing Jian Feng Han is one of my life’s ambition...”

“What other ambition do you even have?” Not Yet Red asked.

Han Bei Song smiled, “I want to personally hear Dong Zhen sing Sword

Raising under the Dark Blue Water, I also want to play a badminton match against Lin Dan, take a photo with Jay Chou, have breakfast with some stars... Just these few...”

Not Yet Red’s face had a single dark line furrowed across it, “Grow up!!”

Chapter 250: Three Heros Fight Vanguard

“Pa da... Pa da...”

Drops of rain pattered onto the leaves on the trees. At dawn, a heavy thunderstorm started pouring down. Dark clouds gathered on the supposedly bright morning sky, enveloping the entire land with darkness.

Quickly walking into the shelter of the foliage, I gazed up at the sky. Flashes of lightning arced across the sky. Gritting my teeth, I said, “Are the heavens helping us or not?”

General Li Mu laughed, saying “It’s hard to tell. For now, Jian Feng Han is surely feeling tremendous pressure on his side. The advance of 14,000 [Vanguard]’s forces were halted by us to the extent that not even one person was able to set foot into Arctic Fox Forest. [Vanguard]’s honor has been shattered. After this battle, it will surely be discussed on the sub-threads for Ba Huang City or even better, the main Chinese Server threads on the forums! The 3rd highest guild in all of China’s server, [Vanguard], was left in this horrible state by five small newly-formed guilds! Hehehe...”

Frozen Gravestone held his sword and wiped the rain off his face as he rushed here. “A thunderstorm... Wind Elves won’t be able to fly now. This could still be counted as advantageous for us. Jian Feng Han shouldn’t be able to tell if we’re coming or not right now.”

“No. The whole path has [Vanguard]’s Assassins hiding in the bushes. They will know if we were to walk past that area.” Wolf spoke.

Frozen Gravestone furrowed his brows. “That’s not good. Wolf, are you sure?”

“Yes, I am definitely sure. I ran into a Lv 60 Assassin that had advanced to his third tier profession. After I revealed his stealth, he immediately ran using [Absolute Step]. My speed wasn’t fast enough, so I was unable to catch up.”

Matcha quickly followed me. Wiping the rain from her face as well, she

blinked and said, “Boss, we need to be more cautious. There’s a reason why Jian Feng Han is one of the top players in the China server. His thoughts are extremely detailed and lined out. To achieve his goal, he could use unscrupulous methods. The reason [Vanguard]’s 14,000 man army was defeated by us was merely because Jian Feng Han wasn’t there to command it. Deep within the Arctic Fox Forest, the mining cave is Jian Feng Han’s domain. He would surely have some strategy there.”

“Yeah.”

I nodded. “Nearby the mining cave, how are our men?”

“They all perished.” Song Han replied.

“What? Those Knights, Healers, and Monks were all killed?”

Song Han nodded grievously in the rain. “Yes, Brother Xiao Yao. Half an hour ago, Jian Feng Han distributed some troops from the surroundings of the Mining Cave to attack our forces from behind. They ambushed our Healers. Having lost their support, the Knights and Monks naturally couldn’t bear the brunt of damage for long. The group of nearly a thousand men were all killed.”

“In their spiritual form, did they find out about anything?”

“Nothing...”

“Oh...”

On one side, Yue Qing Qian, gripping her dagger tightly, said, “That’s not right. Their spirits have some news.”

“What news, Qing Qian?”

“Jian Feng Han, Fushen Thousand Blade, and Fallen Wolf brought around 600 people to the mine. However, there are only 200 people inside. The other 400’s positions are unknown.”

“Their positions are unknown?” I quickly opened the map. Feeling a chill creep down my spine, I mumbled, “Be careful. Behind us!”

“What?” Misty Clouds exclaimed.

.....

“Shua shua shua...”

The tall grass shook. The next moment, a huge number of [Vanguard] members jumped out, ambushing us as we approached the dreadful terrain. A single person dashed towards our group with his sword held high and cut through a Berserker from [Misty Palace]. Utilizing the momentum from [Blade Rush], he managed to kill another few Archers. Behind him was a Rock Spirit Fighter, clashing against our group. If this isn't Jian Feng Han, who could it be?

“Shou shou”, arrows were fired. Within one minute, at least 100 men had already been killed. The enemy's Archers and Mages were hidden deep in the tall grass, making it impossible to target them directly. Our long range attackers were also brought to a tough spot.

“Retreat! Don't panic!”

I unsheathed my sword and shouted, “Stand your ground! Defensive formation, circle around and surround them. Long ranged attackers, lock on to [Vanguard]'s heavy armored players! Qing Qian, Wei Liang, Song Han, bring the Assassins and sneak into the tall grass to kill their long ranged fire. Jian Feng Han should only have at most 400 players. We outnumber them! Don't be afraid!”

After my shout, the troops steadied their footsteps. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others battled on the front lines, blocking Jian Feng Han's players from dealing damage to the group.

“Hou!”

The Flaming Tiger God slowly increased in size, releasing a [Burstfire Raid] upon them. Tens of [Vanguard]'s heavy armored players were burnt alive. Immediately, a [Fierce Roar] followed after the barrage of attacks, leaving even more players with heavy injuries.

“Pa pa pa...”

My Purple Boots stepped into a puddle formed by the rain. I found the best angle of attack and released my [Seven Star Fragments Slash] onto

the enemy group.

“Zha!”

The bushes trembled, seventeen players whose health were critically low fell to my skill. Three balls of flames shook in front of me, as well as an [Indigo Sea Arrow]. They were trying to kill my tempo!

Lowering my body, I activated the skill-- [Blade Rush]!

“Hua Cha!”

My body shot forward 5 meter. Behind me, 4 giant MISSes appeared. Successfully dodging the three [Flame Axe]s and an [Indigo Sea Arrow], I also managed to kill three Berserkers.

“Dammit!”

Fushen Thousand Blade’s face went green as he said, “Ah Han, you must kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. This guy’s attack power is really too high! Our players die too quickly. Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s pet must also be killed. If not, that Flaming Tiger God’s attack will be devastating!”

Jian Feng Han grit his teeth. His Flaming Cloud Sword swiftly hit the Flaming Tiger God with a loud “Peng”, as he shouted “[Scattered Shot] !”

“Ou... ou...”

The little tiger was knocked back. Even before coming to a standstill, a [Scattered Shot] appeared above his head--

741 !

He was stunned and the arrows just kept coming. Were they trying to chain-stun the Flaming Tiger God!?

We didn’t have many AOE attacks, so we could not let the Flaming Tiger God die! Holding my sword, I rushed towards Jian Feng Han. Using a normal attack I pierced through an Archer’s leather armor. Blood flowed out like a river. At the same time, I gave the little tiger a [Heal], and shouted. “Darling Duck, save my pet! Quickly...”

Darling Duck and others immediately used a Heal--

+1452 !

+1711 !

.....

The little tiger's health was pulled up. I secretly celebrated my choice of bringing Darling Duck along. If my Flaming Tiger God was killed, then our damage output would be severely lowered.

“Shua!”

Raising my sword in the air, I slashed downwards on Jian Feng Han's Flaming Cloud Sword. “Keng!” Sparks flew as I was pushed back five steps and my Purple Dawn Boots stepped onto the ground full of rainwater, leaving trails of mudding footprints. Jian Feng Han also retreated several steps with a face full of shock. Looking behind him, he immediately used [Corrupt Wolf Edge] on [Zhan Long]'s group. Suddenly, a soft cry was heard. It was Dancing Forest, the Lv 60 Wind Elf Archer who was one of the strongest archers in [Zhan Long].

2577 !

[Corrupt Wolf Edge]'s attack power was too high. Naturally, Dancing Forest couldn't take that amount of damage and died. Darling Duck immediately cast a [Revive] and Dancing Forest once again stood up. With a face of helplessness, she muttered, “Damn, and I thought I could rest from losing that level. Darling Duck, do you have any grudges against me...”

Darling Duck smilingly replied, “We lack firepower, please hold on...”

Dancing Forest: “.....”

.....

Our side finally started to regain our grip on the battle. Jian Feng Han managed to kill nearly 200 of our players but he couldn't pressure our group any further. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Song Han and the other third advancement Swordsmen kept wrecking havoc on the other side. Quickly overcoming our weaknesses, [Vanguard]'s troop death count surpassed

ours in a flash.

I tried to corner Jian Feng Han a few times but Jian Feng Han escaped every time. My [Binding Chains] and [Great Realm of Desolation] hit chance could be said to be 0%. These top-tier players were really hard to kill.

The number of players from both sides dwindled one by one. After ten minutes, only tens of members were left alive in the heavy rain.

“Qua.. qua...”

Jian Feng Han’s breathing was getting rougher as time passes. The blood stains on the Flaming Cloud Sword could also clearly be seen. Looking at us, he coldly said. “Is this the ending you wanted? Did you think you could defeat [Vanguard] like this?”

Han Bei Song calmly said, “That wouldn’t be too impossible a feat but today, we must at least kill you to bring relief to our members, who were killed and bullied by you lot.”

Jian Feng Han let out a cold laugh. “A hundred versus one?”

“So, do you want to 1v1 ?” I raised my Frost Rain Sword. “Jian Feng Han. I was waiting all this time for a chance to fight with you one on one. Now is the time.”

Jian Feng Han coldly glared at me, not saying a single word.

Misty Clouds held his axe tightly and said, “No, Guild Master Xiao Yao, let me have his head. I shall deal with him!”

The Guild Master from [Ruined Bones] similarly didn’t want to give up this chance. “Wait let me go!”

.....

“Haha...”

Jian Feng Han couldn’t hold his laughter. Pointing his Flaming Cloud Sword forwards, rebelliously he said, “Alright, Misty Clouds, Sword Reborn and Fighting in Blood. You three team up on me. It will save me the time of killing you one by one!”

Spouting out such words, Jian Feng Han turned behind and said, “Now, I will fight these three by myself. No one is to interfere!”

Fallen Wolf held his axe, unwillingly he said, “Ah Han, you don’t have to take this challenge. Our ten thousand players will be coming right over. Don’t fight with these people alone!”

“Shut up!”

Jian Feng Han raised his sword. with a single hand. “Brother Fallen Wolf, if you respect me, please put your trust in me this time. [Vanguard]’s honor is mine to defend. If I lose, it will be because my skills are not as good as them!”

.....

“Does he really want to solo...” Matcha said worriedly.

I replied. “What? You think they would lose?”

Matcha nodded. She whispered, “Jian Feng Han’s movements are at the expert level. He could score a solid 97 out of 100. His equipment also scores 97 but our allies... Misty Clouds would at most score a 90. Sword Reborn and Fighting in Blood would only score around 85. Their equipments are also rather weak compared to Jian Feng Han’s. Their chances of winning would be... rather slim. Not to mention his pet is also quite strong...”

I sucked in a deep breath and said. “I don’t care anymore. Men cannot take back their words, if they want to fight one on one, let them fight!”

Chapter 251: Cunning Fox

“Are you guys prepared yet?”

Jian Feng Han’s imposing figure stood in the rain with his Flaming Cloud Sword dipped down low with flames flickering from it. By the side, his giant Rock Fighter Spirit stood unyieldingly next to him with a battle axe in its hands while giving off a thunderous roar. Jian Feng Han merely stood there, with his battlemaster demeanor, he had already sensed us coming and his eyes displayed a rare type of self confidence that was seldom seen in others.

“Pow!”

Misty Palace put a hand on the handle of his battle axe and lifted the heavy weapon. His battle spirit was already seen in his eye as he smirked, “The final hour has arrived, Sword Reborn and Fighting in Blood, are you two excited yet?”

Sword Reborn waved his spear, “It’ll be 3V1, so we must not be defeated here no matter what. Right in front of us isn’t any regular person, it’s Jian Feng Han!”

Fighting in Blood’s staff trembled in slight fear as his voice lowered, “Let’s have each of our pets attack Jian Feng Han’s pet. Sword Reborn, you activate your [Defensive Stance] when Jian Feng Han attacks, Misty Cloud will be responsible for counter attacking. I’ll attack him with [Icicle], and as long as we take control of the rhythm, we may be able to win this.”

Misty Cloud nodded, “Alright, prepare yourselves then!”

“Okay!”

.....

“Pa....”

The sounds of water could be heard as Jian Feng Han’s boots hit the puddles. Without uttering a single sound he began to attack with his sword parallel to his chest as he dashed towards where Misty Clouds and Sword Reborn were.

“He’s coming, attack!”

Misty Clouds was startled but immediately lifted his battle axe in response to it. With a low growl, he began to swirl around to in preparation to attack. When Jian Feng Han was about 5 meters away, Misty Cloud’s axe caught on fire as he activated [Flame Blade]. Extending his arm, the battle axe slashed with an arc, leaving Jian Feng Han very little room to maneuver around. This was an incredible feat of prediction and probably the reason why Matcha said he had a 90 in his combat abilities.

“Hehe...”

Jian Feng Han’s mouth twitched a miniscule amount as he suddenly decreased his speed. The flaming axe slid onto the rainy water as Jian Feng Han took the chance to step on the handle of the axe. With that sudden change in trajectory and speed, the [Flame Blade] missed Jian Feng Han, leaving Misty Cloud’s shoulder wide open!

“Crap, Misty Cloud...”

Sword Reborn rapidly tried to impale Jian Feng Han with his spear. The fact that he was purposely sliding on top of the ground had added to his strength and was now just waiting for Jian Feng Han to be hit by the tip of his spear.

“Keng!”

Jian Feng Han let the spear strike him with an impassive look on his face. It was a shame that his defenses were extremely high and so the damage done to him didn’t even reach over 600. His body blurred as a sword smashed into the back of Sword Reborn and using the impact, Jian Feng Han rushed towards the third person!

In a blink of an eye, everybody understood. The reason Jian Feng Han directly bypassed two people was no doubt to first kill the Mage within the group of three. After all, Fighting in Blood, as a Mage, carried the most threat to a heavy armor class. Jian Feng Han had been using this tactic from the start!

“Shua!”

A layer of ice encircled Jian Feng Han’s sword as he hacked at Fighting in Blood’s shoulder. His attack was higher than my own and a single blow from him could shatter the [Mana Shield] straight away.

“Oh crap!”

Fighting in Blood reacted instantly, he activated [Dimensional Leap] and fled!

Jian Feng Han quickly brought his sword up and activated his skill, [Corrupted Wolf Edge]!

Fighting in Blood’s face went pale, it was time for the second leap!

“Hou!”

The Rock Fighter Spirit came lumbering towards them with its battle axe already to strike! In a wink of an eye, Fighting in Blood’s face went green after realizing resistance was futile. The third leap was activated!”

“Papapa...”

Splashing through the rain, Jian Feng Han immediately predicted where Fighting in Blood was going to be and instantly used [Blade Rush] to 4 meters in front of him.

With a “hucha”, the blade impaled Fighting in Blood and his [Mana Shield] twisted precariously. Turning around, Juan Feng Han used a [Combo] and the first three strikes broke the shield while the fourth and an extra normal attack landed directly onto Fighting in Blood!

902 !

2317 !

In two strikes, the Guild Master of [Winds of Battle] was killed!

.....

“Dammit...”

Misty Clouds reached out with his arms and threw his battle axe; it was time for the Berserker’s third class skill!

“Bang!”

1427 !

Jian Feng Han’s entire body trembled a huge chunk of his 3500 points of health was taken from him. He hurriedly downed a health potion and then with a twist of his wrist, his sword stabbed through the chest of Sword Reborn twice!

987 !

1001 !

A knight’s defense was extraordinarily strong and so Misty Cloud began to cycle again with his battle axe with both his hands. With a ferocious snarl, he activated [Flame Blade] once more and struck at Jian Feng Han!

1147 !

Jian Feng Han’s face began to pale, it was apparent that he didn’t think that Misty Cloud would do that much damage again. Not only that, but it was also a clean strike and not one that was sloppy.

His boots spread out across the muddy floor in a single arc, causing Misty Cloud’s attack to miss him. Returning the favor, Jian Feng Han’s sword trembled with [Skyshaker Slash]!

1997 !

The advantages and drawbacks could be seen clearly here; their attacks couldn’t even be compared fairly. Misty Cloud drank a health potion but did not bother to retreat, his battle axe heated up once more with [Flame Blade] before he swung it again at Jian Feng Han!

“Go die!”

Jian Feng Han sneered loudly as the previously hidden Rock Fight Spirit flew out to attack Misty Cloud. His blade trembled once more as he activated [Ice Blade] in preparation to attack Misty Cloud!

Sword Reborn clenched his teeth as he shifted to the side. He helped Misty Cloud take a slash. Although his health took a huge beating, Misty Cloud’s battle axe was left on Jian Feng Han’s shoulder!

Jian Feng Han's health immediately dropped down to a dangerous level, causing his face to ashen. His body dropped down a bit as he evaded the sword arc from Sword Reborn and the bloodthirsty battle axe from Misty Cloud. Moving in a graceful manner, golden hexagrams appeared under his foot as he activated his S rank skill-[Exposed Point]. Locking onto Sword Reborn, he knew that if he allowed Sword Reborn and Misty Cloud to stay paired up, he would definitely die.

In the middle of the fierce rainstorm of attacks, Sword Reborn fell down to his knees with the last of his health gone. In the end, he was not able to withstand the Emperor Tier Flaming Cloud Sword's attack. But while he had died, this gave Misty Cloud a chance to kill Jian Feng Han. At the moment, Jian Feng Han only had around 1500 health, all he needed was just one more strong hit to kill him!

"Hua!"

The battle axe surged in the air, it was [Flame Blade]!

At this point, Misty Cloud's eyes were already bloodshot, "It's now or never!"

Jian Feng Han's eyes grew cold, no matter how much he looked at it, if that axe hit him, he would die. Taking a look at the cooldown of his own skills, he saw that [Blade Rush] had just then finished its cooldown!

When Jian Feng Han's sword began to glow, everyone knew at that moment that Misty Cloud had lost. Even if [Blade Rush] missed the initial strike, it would be enough to avoid the [Flame Blade]...

But, no one would have thought that Misty Cloud would have taken a step back, his skill taking a delay in reaching the target. At the same time, his entire body shook and a ripple came over his battle armor. Jian Feng Han's [Blade Rush] had missed! Turning once more, the [Flame Blade] moved towards the shoulder of Jian Feng Han!

"Eh!?"

Jian Feng Han's eye widened in shock, he knew that his hit would kill

him.

+1642 !

1771 !

A split second before the [Flame Blade] landed, a Lv 61 Healer from [Vanguard] cast [Heal] from far away to help recover some of Jian Feng Han's health as well as to dash Misty Cloud's hopes. Within that same second, Misty Cloud's eye only contained despair and indignation, "Jian Feng Han, so is this how [Vanguard] truly plays?"

Jian Feng Han dashed forward with his Flaming Cloud Sword and stabbed Misty Cloud through the stomach with it, "The winner earns the spoils while the loser has nothing, I'm sorry about that!"

.....

"Pata!"

Misty Cloud fell to his knees in front of Jian Feng Han, his eyes full of wrath, "Shameless...how shameless you are..."

"Shua!"

In the middle of the rain, my shadowy figure flew like a blur. Traces of my sword could be seen hitting against Jian Feng Han's armor; it was a [Combo] skill!

571 !

554 !

MISS !

549 !

.....

Jian Feng Han immediately turned around to face me with a face full of anger, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!"

"Go die!"

I growled, my knee was itching for action and slammed against Jian

Feng Han's abdomen with a heavy amount of force. The sword in my right hand finished its 0.2 second casting time, [Wind Blade] struck against his shoulder!

1981 !

Because of how quickly I took down most of Jian Feng Han's health, he obviously did not expect to see me predicting the outcome of the battle and attack him so outrageously like this.

"Puchi!"

The Frost Rain Sword's tip penetrated through his battle armor and nailed him to a nearby tree. Then, I brought my palm up and activated my skill-[Great Realm of Desolation]!

Jian Feng Han wasn't able to defend against this at all and no strategy or planning would help him at all here!

2379 !

[Great Realm of Desolation] ripped straight through Jian Feng Han's armor, dropping him onto his knees. His pale face stared at me silently as he entered spirit mode, awaiting to be revived.

.....

"Ah Han!"

Both Fallen Wolf and Fushen Thousand Blade quickly charged on over, but I waved my sword and cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] at them!

"Bang!"

The entire earth trembled as the sword qi tore apart the ground and left behind long scars. I calmly stated, "You guys had a Healer heal Jian Feng Han and changed the outcome of the battle, don't blame me for taking action!"

Fallen Wolf roared, "Bullcrap, you just couldn't bear to watch Jian Feng Han win!"

Behind me, Li Mu and Wang Jian walked up to my left and right with

their hands on their swords, “Fallen Wolf, do you wish to die?”

Fallen Wolf gnashed at his teeth, but did not say anything more. Even he could tell, with Jian Feng Han, Simple, North Pole and Don't Be Foolish gone, [Vanguard] simply did not have anymore experts that could withstand [Zhan Long]'s attacks.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao...”

Behind me, Yue Qing Qian pointed out towards the east with her finger, “Look over there, so many people are coming...”

I turned my body to look and saw a large amount of players come rushing out of the forests. The crest on their arm meant that they actually all belonged to the same guild. The crest had the symbol of a bloody dagger –[Prague]!

.....

“Sha...”

Yan Zhao Warrior's face looked tired as he walked amongst the grass towards us, a smile on his face, “Ba Huang City is without a doubt the city out of the 3 main cities with the most fierce conflicts. As a member of Ba Huang City, was [Prague] not participating in this struggle in Arctic Fox Forest too low-key for people?”

Li Mu gnashed his teeth and growled, “You cunning fox...”

Matcha clenched her fists and whispered, “This uncle Yan Zhao Warrior, he has finally shown us his crafty side...”

Chapter 252: Public Map

“Dammit!”

Fallen Wolf clenched his battle axe, his eyes showing his anger, “Even [Prague] has come to take a bite, what the heck are you planning? Fushen Thousand Blade, when will our men arrive?”

Fushen Thousand Blade answered, “In 10 minutes...”

“Healers, revive the Guild Master!”

“Okay!”

.....

Just as a Healer was about to revive Jian Feng Han, Wolf immediately appeared behind him with his daggers and posed with [Twin Harmony Strike] ready to fire, “Anyone that dares revive Jian Feng Han will be the one responsible for him dying straight away again!”

Fox’s equipment was already pretty decent, and Old K, Yue Qing Qian and Li Mu were all standing next to Jian Feng Han’s dead body. If Jian Feng Han was revived at any time, then even he would not stand a chance with so many experts nearby.

Fallen Wolf was extremely pissed, “Guild Master Zi Zai, it seems that you want [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard] to fight to the death? Don’t tell me that’s the way you settle disputes?”

I pulled out the Frost Rain Sword from the mud and laughed, “Fallen Wolf, you brought 14,000 players from [Vanguard] to fight against [Zhan Long]; how can this not be how [Vanguard] does things? Either you win or you compromise but [Vanguard] is defeated as of this moment. Are you really going to pretend to be the victor here and lecture us on what we should do?”

Fallen Wolf grew angry but Fushen Thousand Blades extended his arm out to prevent him from doing anything. Walking forward, he said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, not so long ago, we could not be considered friends. Even with this current development, our situation has not gotten to the point where

it can't be alleviated in any way. Arctic Fox Forest...this is a public map; perhaps it really can't be controlled by any single guild. How about this then, we shall compromise: [Vanguard] will allow [Zhan Long] to enter the Arctic Fox Forest's depths."

I stated neutrally, "Then [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle], [Misty Palace], and [Blood Contract] are a part of this agreement?"

"They all will be able to go to the depths of Arctic Fox Forest!"

"Then...what about the other guilds and single players?"

"This...don't be excessive with your request..."

I couldn't help but laugh, "Say what you will, but did you think [Zhan Long] fought for Arctic Fox Forest for our own selfish reasons? Actually, you're wrong. I just couldn't stand seeing [Vanguard] monopolize Arctic Fox Forest, that's all. Today, we either fight until the end or you open Arctic Fox Forest to any guild or player so that they can freely enter. This means whoever has a high enough skill level and whoever can harvest whatever ore they find. Let's give this game a fair environment."

Fallen Wolf's face ashened, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, are you an idealist or something? Wanting a fair environment and the Arctic Fox Forest to be open to everyone? Do you even have awareness that you are the leader of a super strong guild!?"

"Yes, so?"

Bringing up my fist, I brandished it into the air and exclaimed, "On this earth, there will always be idiots that will leap out and try to defend the order, like how there will always be those that will fight for the weak. When those people don't have any strength, they will be called fools by everyone, but when they do have strength, these same people that call them fools will praise them as heroes! Fallen Wolf, I'll show you proof with each and every step of the way, no matter if I am a fool or a hero, my fists will be my proof; I will use [Zhan Long]'s thousands of brothers' strength as proof! There will always be people on earth to defend the order. If there aren't, then I, Li Xiao Yao, will be the first to do so!"

Fallen Wolf's mouth dropped open in silence before he finally uttered a word, "Stupid..."

Fushen Thousand Blades had a face of awe, "Guild Master Xiao Yao, since you want to open Arctic Fox Forest to the public, that can be discussed later. After all, rules are established by the people. But first, will you let us revive our Guild Master please?"

I took a few steps back and waved my hand, "Go for it..."

.....

"Shua!"

Jian Feng Han revived with 50% of his health and his face still with a deathly glow. His Flaming Cloud Sword trembled slightly as he stared at me coldly, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you really are a piece of work!"

I was undisturbed, "This was on you!"

Behind us, Misty Cloud, Sword Reborn and Fighting in the Blood were all revived. With an ashen face, Misty Cloud scooped up his battle axe, "Jian Feng Han, what strong face you have, to be able to look at us after that fight..."

Jian Feng Han clenched his fist, "No need to speak further, we need to agree on some rules. I will punish the Healer but [Vanguard]'s honor isn't something you can freely trample on."

Misty Cloud smirked, "[Vanguard] is already on the verge of collapsing, I'm just helping to tip it over, that's all..."

"Hmph!"

.....

At this time, a large group of people rushed forward; all of them were from [Vanguard]. The war was finally over but everyone was still taking precautions, though the desire to kill no longer existed.

Simple came running on over with her staff over her head, "Ah Han!"

"Sister..." Jian Feng Han clenched his teeth, "Arctic Fox Forest is no

longer ours to own. Xiao Yao Zi Zai thinks that it should be open to the public so anyone can enter; what do you think?”

Simple nodded her head and looked at him softly, “Arctic Fox Forest was originally open to the general population, so let it stay open to the public....but...”

She looked off to where Yan Zhao Warrior was in the distance, “But I don’t know why Yan Zhao Warrior would bring 2000 players to fully encircle this place; what is his reason for doing so?”

Yan Zhao Warrior laughed and waved a hand, “It’s nothing, I have the same intentions as Li Xiao Yao. I came here to keep the peace; if Arctic Fox Forest remains free for the public to use, then that will be to everyone’s benefit...”

Simple then looked at me and asked, “Xiao Yao, state your conditions. Public or not, this isn’t a question you can answer with just one sentence.”

I lifted my Frost Rain Sword and stepped forward so that I was right in front of Simple. Looking straight into her two eyes, I said, “It’s really simple; we keep order and our guilds will help provide that order with our names backing it up. Within the Arctic Fox Forest, players will not be allowed to PK another. Whoever first finds the mineral will be the one to mine it. No one will be allowed to hoard or forcibly take it from another. In the case that someone attacks someone else for it, then they’ll have to deal with [Vanguard], [Prague], and our 5 guilds, because it would be like an insult to our faces. What do you think?”

Simple laughed gently, “It looks like the legends behind Xiao Yao Zi Zai aren’t just empty truths after all. If you think this is fair, then let it be; I will agree as the representative of Jian Feng Han.”

Jian Feng Han kept silent and let his elder sister do all of the talking and ruling. At this moment, he resembled an unintelligent and impulsive child who had provoked someone and his older sister was playing mediator. He was somewhat helpless, somewhat angry, but he definitely had no say.

.....

“[Prague], what are your thoughts?” Simple asked.

Yan Zhao Warrior held onto his sword with both hands and shook it it, “[Prague] will defend the fairness in Arctic Fox Forest with honor; whoever has the patience to harvest all the ores they can find, then let them. The ways of the world were originally like this anyways!”

Simple laughed, “That’s good then...”

Convinced, she looked at Misty Cloud, Han Bei Song, Sword Reborn, and Fighting in the Blood with a complex look. After a few seconds, she smiled and laughed, “Perhaps this is already a new age...[Zhan Long], [Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], [Ruined Bones], and [Blood Contract]; five guilds have joined together and were able to be a match for [Vanguard] even in a tough situation like this. You all deserve your titles of experts but in the future, [Vanguard] won’t underestimate our enemies a second time. Ba Huang City’s power struggle won’t be as simple as you think, just you wait and see...”

Li Mu raised his sword, “Since the rules have already been put into place, the words said by each of the Guild Masters will be uploaded to the forums and that will be the start of opening of the mines, correct? Guild Master Jian Feng Han, please remove your guards from Arctic Fox Forest since it no longer requires their services!”

Jian Feng Han clenched his teeth and held up his hands, “Withdraw!”

Quickly, the 100 players that were at the entrance to the mine shafts all retreated.

Yan Zhao Warrior laughed and held his own hand up, “What are the blacksmiths of [Prague] waiting for? Go on and harvest already...”

The group all dispersed and at least 100 players specialized in ore mining were in the mines. With everyone’s dumbstruck faces, we understood that this was the fruit of experience. Yan Zhao Warrior had benefited from this battle without spending a single warrior. Bringing so many blacksmiths with him, the amount of ores they would be able to collect would not be small...

.....

“Damn...”

Old K slapped his leg, “I almost forgot; I’m a Lv 6 miner. Hold up for me... I’m going to go mine too...”

I looked behind myself, and saw Palace Decree carrying his hammer and shovel with a smile, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, shall we both enter the mines now?”

I nodded, “Yea, I’ll be protecting you!”

“Okay!”

Yue Qing Qian and Matcha followed me with smiles, “And we’ll protect the Guild Master...”

Li Mu and Wang Jian looked at each other and snorted, “In that case, we’ll protect the beautiful Vice Guild Masters!”

Yue Qing Qian decided not to say anything about that.

As a result, a party of the 20 strongest people from [Zhan Long] came to protect Palace Decree in the mine shafts. The reason was simple; we were unable to confirm if [Vanguard] would really not quarrel with us. With 20 players on the inside, there wouldn’t be any bullying at all!

.....

On the road, the ores were all sparkling from their places in the wall as Palace Decree looked around, “Level 6, 7, or 8 ores won’t get me enough experience to level up my proficiency with blacksmithing, so I just need the Lv 9 mineral- Blood Gold.”

Yue Qing Qian said, “And so the Blood Gold will be at the very end!”

“Correct!”

While looking around in the pitch dark mining shafts, we headed straight down into the depths of it. Finally, we reached a cliff side that was covered with a golden ore; this was the Blood Gold that was mentioned!”

Palace Decree was extremely excited, “Woah, there are so many here. Palace Spirit becoming a Lv 10 blacksmith is definitely attainable now!”

Li Mu crossed his arms across his chest and laughed, “Right now, the amount of Lv 8 blacksmiths can be counted on a single hand, Lv 9’s... those are quite legendary. But Palace Decree, can you mine the Blood Gold? [Vanguard] knows that no one in them can harvest Blood Gold, so they don’t have anyone guarding this area...”

Palace Decree tinkered and mined at the ores for a while and at the end, a single ore of Pure Gold was already resting within his palm.

Li Mu rubbed his nose, “Damn, that’s amazing; how did that happen?”

Palace Decree laughed, “The first day went online, I was already in here practicing as a half attack half health Knight. Killing monsters was easy and it was hard to die. By the end of the first week of being open, I was getting around 4 hours of sleep and was already exploring every single area in the region. Entering Ba Huang City, I knew that I couldn’t be lazy, so I became the first Lv 9 blacksmith...”

“No wonder your eyes are so red...”

“.....”

Yue Qin Qian took out her dagger. This beauty was guarding me as she faintly laughed: “If Jian Feng Han knew that we brought a Lv 9 blacksmith here, he would be full of regrets...”

I said, “Yea, for sure.. ”

I narrowed my eyes before continuing, “My Emperor Qin’s sword, I have to restore its jade body... ”

Matcha was flustered, “Boss, what are you saying, why is it that I don’t understand...”

Yue Qin Qian was speechless...

Chapter 253: Reforging

After 30 minutes at the very least, Palace Decree had mined an entire pile of Blood Gold from the cave and both Wolf and Old K's bags were filled to the brim already. Palace Decree narrowed his eyes and said, "This still isn't enough, I still need another 400 ores of Blood Gold if Palace Spirit wants to reach Lv 10. If she is not Lv 10, then she won't be able to reforge your broken sword."

I nodded, "Got it, please continue then."

"I don't have any mana pills, mining needs mana..."

"Have some..."

Giving him enough to mine, the rest of us continued to protect Palace Decree.

.....

"Sha...."

A trembling sound could be heard as Yan Zhao Warrior and Jian Feng Han came walking side by side with players from [Prague] and [Vanguard] behind them. The two strongest Guild Masters of Ba Huang City were checking up on the situation of the mines.

Yan Zhao Warrior muttered, "Oh? There are already people who can mine Blood Gold? This is a Lv 9 mineral...eh, Palace Decree, this name sounds familiar..."

Jian Feng Han had a gloomy stare, "Palace Decree? Blood Gold ore... hmph..."

Fallen Wolf lifted his battle axe, "This isn't fair, only Palace Decree has Lv 9 blacksmithing, doesn't that mean all of the Blood Gold in Arctic Fox Forest is his then?"

Fushen Thousand Blade nodded his head, "So this was why..."

"Crap..."

Fallen Wolf was no longer calm, "Arctic Fox Forest was first discovered

by us, why is it that the Blood Gold belongs to [Zhan Long]?”

.....

A few people began to make noise as I scowled, carrying my Frost Rain Sword as I walked forward, I stated, “We have already made a promise, who ever has a high enough level to mine it shall be the first to do so. What’s wrong, could it be [Vanguard] decided to go back on their promise? Besides, Blood Gold ores take a week to respawn at most. By this time, [Vanguard] should start to have people with Lv 9 mining..”

Jian Feng Han nodded his head and said, “I will not break our promise; since Arctic Fox Forest is fair grounds to everyone, this is a fair situation. But I still have to ask; Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you so desperately want this Blood Gold ore, is it possible that you have a Lv 9 blueprint?”

I shook my head, “Not at all; mining the Blood Gold ore isn’t for us to forge something, but because we need him to have Lv 10 mining.”

“What, Lv 10 mining?”

Yan Zhao Warrior was alarmed, “[Zhan Long] has people that are Lv 10 in blacksmithing?”

Yue Qing Qian laughed, “Uncle, that’s not it! He’s just a friend, for now, he isn’t a part of [Zhan Long]. But still, we believe that he’ll join us soon...”

Yan Zhao Warrior crossed his arms together and looked at Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang. “How are you two little princesses doing in [Zhan Long]? If it doesn’t work out...then [Prague]’s doors are open for you at anytime...”

Yue Qing Qian laughed once more, “Uncle, We are doing greatly in [Zhan Long]; everyone is so nice to us. We’re sorry to have you worry but you brought so many miners into the mines of Arctic Fox Forest. It’s almost as if you want to completely mine out all of the Lv 6-8 ores and sell them to Ba Huang City’s blacksmith; did you plan to control the supply chain?”

Yan Zhao Warrior waved his hands dismissively, “It’s nothing like that,

Ba Huang City is too large for that. With so many capable people appearing, there's no way for anyone to be able to monopolize the supply chain for any resource. Moreover...these miners were recruited by you. How did it become you questioning me now..."

Yue Qing Qian smirked with an obvious look of happiness on her face, "So it's like that? If Uncle doesn't want these people, then I'll go invite them to join [Zhan Long]..."

In a flash, Yan Zhao Warrior went green in the face, "No, don't; Uncle was just teasing you..."

Yue Qing Qian didn't answer him.

.....

"This won't do, we can't let them leave with that much Blood Gold!"

By Jian Feng Han's side, Leafy Gentleman abruptly pulled out his sword and dashed at Palace Decree shouting, "You can leave but the Blood Gold must be left behind; these ores were guarded by [Vanguard] with our lives!"

"Sha..."

Wang Jian came sliding in from the side, his sharp sword striking out and causing Leafy Gentleman to quickly recoil. Wang Jian frostily glared at him and said, "If you wish to kill a friend of [Zhan Long], then you'll have to walk over my dead body to get to him..."

Leafy Gentleman retreated a few more steps with extreme anger displayed on his face. But he knew that Wang Jian was one of Ba Huang City's strongest swordsman players and definitely not someone he could beat!

Jian Feng Han walked up and held a hand out to protect Leafy Gentleman, "Brother, I can understand your intentions but we have given our promise already. We cannot go back on it, so let [Zhan Long] continue to mine the Blood Gold ore. [Vanguard] admits defeat this time."

"Guild Master..." Leafy Gentleman said through clenched teeth, "If you

say so...”

.....

Upon seeing Leafy Gentleman walk back, I stepped forward and let go of my sword, “Then that’s enough of watching this spectacle now...watching someone mine isn’t something entertaining. Fox, Old K, you two go bring the ore back to the city. Make sure to find a place to store it!”

“Got it!”

Two lights dropped down as Fox and Old K carried all of the Blood Gold back. Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior’s eyes both twitched, they both knew the result of Fox and Old K going back to Ba Huang City; the number one blacksmith would not belong to either [Vanguard] or [Prague].

After a few minutes, both Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior walked off angrily while [Zhan Long] continued to protect Palace Decree.

.....

“Boss...” Matcha looked at me, “Today, many people in [Zhan Long] died; how will we compensate them? This problem has to be taken care of as soon as possible.”

I nodded, “Did we go around and sweep the battlefield for equipment?”

“Yea, [Vanguard] pretty much reclaimed 20% of their items; we have the rest of them”

“Split whatever items you can, whatever you can’t, go sell it. Then split the money with everyone that died.”

“Okay!”

After another hour, Arctic Fox Forest had its entire Blood Gold supply completely excavated. Palace Decree took count with his fingers and then laughed, “Okay, I’m sure we’re done. Palace Spirit’s blacksmithing level is ready to reach Lv 10. Guild Master Xiao Yao, let us return to the city and have the Blood Gold be sent to the blacksmith shop in the south. Spirit will be waiting for us there; she should be able to rush her level up in an

hour tops.”

I was ecstatic, “Okay, let’s go!”

.....

“Shua!”

Together, we disappeared in the white light as Li Mu and Wang Jian both went to level. I brought both Yue Qing Qian and Matcha to the blacksmith shop in the south. Arriving at the same time were Old K and Fox, both of them still carrying a bunch of blood gold to be refined.

“Ding ding ding...”

Sparks flew from the forge as a tall girl sat beating a iron. She wore refined but simple armor as her arms were entirely covered with sweat. Though her entire body was still showing a healthy complexion, her face was elegant despite the sweat rolling down her cheeks.

Palace Spirit LV-57 White Knight

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Epic

Position: Junior Member

.....

They were a pair of brother and sister, as expected!

Palace Decree walked forward, and with a smile, said, “Spirit, our customer came!”

Palace Spirit lifted her head and upon looking at me, she couldn’t help but be astounded, “Ah? A familiar face! Isn’t this... isn’t this Xiao Yao Zi Zai, the one who frequently faces the people from [Vanguard], the first-ranked Healer Swordsman Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Aha, I’m a big fan of yours! ! ”

I nodded and revealed a smile, “Palace Spirit, I am giving you these metals; the Blood Gold has already been mined. What method will you use to raise your profession level?”

“Well...” Palace Spirit lifted her blue longsword, and revealed a smile:

“As a Lv 9 blacksmith, I can craft longswords. Lv 60 Silver Tier swords aren’t worth much, and are not worth their materials, but they can still be sold to the NPC, and it also gives us some experience. If not for the fact that the handsome Zi Zai helped my brother bring back so many Pure Golds, I would have needed at least a month to become a Lv 10 blacksmith.”

Palace Decree slapped his leg, “Spirit, you don’t even know. In order to fight for the right to enter Arctic Fox Forest, [Zhan Long], [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle], [Misty Palace], and [Blood Contract] all combined their forces together. [Vanguard] brought 10,000 players to counterattack but was beaten back; these 1000 Blood Gold ores were that hard to come by...”

Palace Spirit laughed, “How would I not know, the forums went mad over this a long time go. Five major guilds contended against [Vanguard]; everyone is saying that Ba Huang City has experts coming out from everywhere. But to see [Vanguard] beaten that much and having to compromise, this is indeed a first in the history of [Vanguard] in <Destiny>.

After saying that, Palace Spirit gave me a thumbs up, “And this handsome brother Xiao Yao is such a good person. You are the first that fought [Vanguard] head to head!”

I said nothing.

Yue Qing Qian stood by my side gave a crooked smile, “Sister Palace Spirit, hurry up and level. Brother Xiao Yao is still waiting for you to reforge his Emperor Qin’s Sword isn’t he?”

Matcha laughed, “That’s right, reforging the sword requires Lv 10 blacksmithing and 100 Qilin Iron ores. Do we have the stuff?”

Palace Decree nodded, “Yea, Qilin Iron ores aren’t a problem. I went to before Qilin Valley and chanced upon the Qilin Iron ores. My mining level at the time wasn’t Lv 10 so I wasn’t able to get it. Now that my mining level is also Lv 10, I’ll immediately head on over. 100 pieces of Qilin Iron Ore are rather easy to find and mine.”

Matcha said, "Qilin Valley is our headquarters; when you head on over there I'll give them a warning so that they can help you."

"Okay, then I'll head on over now!"

"Go on, good luck!"

.....

"Ding!"

A sword was in Palace Spirit's hand after 5 minutes forging it. Then she spent another 10 seconds to confirm making the new sword. Another "ding" was heard as she brought out another sword again.

"It's a shame about all those Silver Tier swords..." Fox laughed, "The damage isn't all that bad, it's just that...anyone Lv 60 and up are considered experts and no expert would want to use such a low tier sword."

Wolf said, "Just wait another half month at the most. These Silver Tier swords will become a hot item. Store them for now; at the very least you'll be able to earn back the money spent on the materials."

.....

Looking at Palace Spirit ferociously making weapons non-stop, I sat down nervously. The Emperor Qin's Sword was about to be revealed. I didn't know the stats of the sword yet, but I was just really nervous!

"Shua!"

After an hour, a cyan light came from the heavens and enveloped Palace Spirit. With a sweet laugh, she said, "Wow! After getting Lv 10 blacksmithing, I earned 7 points of charm..."

Matcha said, "Oh, I'm absolutely envious of you..."

Yue Qing Qian was impatient, "Brother Palace Decree hasn't come back yet has he?"

Palace Spirit laughed, "Don't worry, Brother has already collected 97 Qilin Iron ores; it'll be done with soon..."

I walked on over and took out the half completed Emperor Qin's Sword to give to her. She took the long blade as her eyes looked it over, "Wow, this sword...it is worthy of being Xiao Yao Zi Zai's weapon..."

"Do you have confidence that you can reforge it?" I joked.

Palace Spirit nodded her head as she looked at me; her two vivacious eyes held a look of self confidence. "Don't worry, I'm here. You'll have <Destiny>'s strongest weapon since the beginning of the game!!"

Chapter 254: The visit of a beautiful girl

“Brother has come back!”

Palace Spirit took the half completed sword in her hand and looked off to where a person was rapidly approaching from the other end of the street. It was the spear wielding Palace Decree who was laughing while he ran, “The mission was a success; 100 Qilin Iron ores have been collected! Qilin Valley was recently revamped to have Elite Monsters around Lv 69 and so if not for my friends in [Zhan Long], I’m afraid it would have taken me another 2 hours just to get to the ores!”

Palace Spirit stepped forward to greet him and took the Qilin Iron ores with a great smile, “Thank you brother!”

.....

Standing by the side, Wolf furrowed his eyes in doubt and sending me a whisper, he said, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you really just going to hand over the sword to Palace Spirit that easily? Do you have that much confidence in her? In the event that she and Palace Decree logs off with the Emperor Qin’s Sword, what do we do?”

I gave a faint smile and whispered back, “I doubt they won’t return it, take a look at both of their eyes. I can’t even spot a single trace of dishonesty in there; the eyes are the window to a person’s soul. Besides, they are quite fanatical about this; they want to create a strong weapon. You’ll know what I’m talking about soon enough!”

“Oh?”

“Here...” I walked forward and faced Palace Spirit, “Judging from how you were forging swords earlier, you are obviously experienced. How did you become so familiar with blacksmithing? Could it be...that even in the real world, you have some experience with it?”

“Haha, so you found out...” Palace Spirit stuck out her tongue, “Brother, why don’t you explain it to the Guild Master of [Zhan Long]?”

Palace Decree still held the Qilin Iron ores in his hands, “We won’t hide

it from you, but our ancestral homelands is Long Quan City in the Zhejiang province. Our ancestors were blacksmiths by profession but renounced their blacksmith ways after a war. However, we still retained our love for weapons and many people collect swords now. Because of that, my sister and I became blacksmiths and make a living with swords.”

“So it’s like that...” I laughed, “Then I have to make a request once more, the Emperor Qin’s Sword; I must rely on it’s power in order to make an impact in Ba Huang City...”

Palace Decree laughed, “Don’t worry, Palace Spirit’s Lv 10 blacksmithing definitely won’t let you down. Besides, she has a skill of understanding– [Sword God Craftsmen]: it increases the chances of a weapon with great stats to appear by 50%. The swords she creates will definitely have better attack and stats than swords of the same level created by other players...”

I was amazed and stared at Palace Spirit intensely, “Wow...”

Palace Decree was alarmed, “Hey, don’t look at her like... like you want to eat her or something...this is my sister we’re talking about. If you dare touch her, I’ll fight you to the death, even if you’re Xiao Yao Zi Zai...”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “Don’t worry, I only just thought that...why is such a strong blacksmith fooling around in a guild like [Epic]? Palace Decree, Palace Spirit, I’d like to cordially invite you to [Zhan Long] one more time...Palace Spirit won’t just be the best blacksmith in [Zhan Long], or the best in Ba Huang City or the chinese servers, she will be the best in all of <Destiny>!”

Palace Decree felt somewhat embarrassed, “But, [Epic] has been treating us so nicely...”

Palace Spirit nodded as well, “That’s right...the Guild Master even came to Long Qian City to treat us to a meal...”

Wolf kneaded his forehead, “Palace Spirit sure is innocent, a single meal was enough to bribe her...”

Palace Spirit giggled, “It’s not like that, the Guild Master of [Epic] was very honest with us...”

“Fine then...” I exhaled, “[Zhan Long] won’t force people to do what we want, but remember that the doors of [Zhan Long] will forever stay open for you two. If one day you two decide [Epic] is not the place you want to be at, then come join [Zhan Long]. We will welcome you to our ranks!”

“Okay!” Palace Spirit nodded as she proceeded to reforge the sword.

.....

Within the forge, the Emperor Qin’s Sword was glowing red with heat as Palace Spirit continuously fed it with Qilin Iron Ores. Pouring a vat of iron on the sword, the sword absorbed the essence of the Qilin Iron ores as it blazed in the fire. Slowly over the course of half an hour, 100 Qilin Iron ores were slowly absorbed into the sword, which had also began to tremble slowly. The spirit inside seemed to be roaring and it felt like it was trying to get out—even the forge was shaking a bit.

Palace Spirit blinked, her long eyelashes and eyebrows gently knitting together, “Wow, I’ve never seen a situation like this before. The sword spirit is struggling to get out or maybe it’s excited?”

Palace Decree said, “Be careful, this is the crucial point!”

“Got it!”

All of a sudden, Palace Spirit grabbed the fiery sword handle from out of the forge. The sound of air escaping was heard as the burning handle burnt at her hands. Her iron hammer rose into the air, and then ferociously slammed onto the blade, reconstructing the sharp outline of the sword with each strike. Immersing the sword into water, she then plunged it back into the forge for a second time, and then repeated this cycle for another 7 times!

Palace Decree waited for his sister to wipe the sweat off her face before asking, “Is it almost completed yet?”

“98%, it’s almost done!”

“Okay, go on!”

Halfway through hammering it, the sword gave a clanging sound and

began to emit a bright light that terrified everyone in the vicinity. Palace Spirit cried out in shock as the hammer she was holding crumbled to pieces from the power of the sword. There was so much power being emitted, that even the anvil underneath started to chip and break apart as the sword began to restore itself!

On top of the anvil, a cyan colored beam of light shone onto the floating longsword and a seal appeared on top of it. A surge of sword qi rippled through the sword. Touching the sword now gave us the impression that it would take our lives in return since such a terrible killing intent could be felt while it was being restored. Anyone could tell that this sword was beyond normal!

“Handsome brother Zi Zai...” Palace Spirit pointed at the sword floating above the anvil, “Your weapon...go on and take it...”

I walked forward and grabbed the hilt of the sword. As if recognizing its master, the sword ceased to shake and twist, allowing itself to quietly be held by me. A powerful feeling coursed through my palm up into the rest of my body, so much that even I started to shake a bit from the sensation. Reaching out with a single finger, I stroked the edge of the blade. Immediately, a chain of numbers and words floated into the air above me. A single look stupefied all those around me—

【Emperor Qin’s Sword】 (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1400-1850

Strength: +70

Endurance: +68

Magic: +65

Extra: Increase attack by 17%

Extra: Ignore the target’s defense by 25%

Bonus: Infinite durability, this item will never lose any durability.

Bonus: Additional 10% chance of a superior strike

Unique Effect: Whenever this sword kills a player, increase the attack of

this weapon by 1% without any limits. The stacks will disappear upon logging out.

Description: In the ancient times there lived an emperor that was both kind and known to all under the heavens. His saber was named Long Quan but in the midsts of a fierce battle, it snapped in half. The broken pieces were then buried into the ground, staying there for countless generations. At last the broken sword has been unearthed and still contains the vast powers of the emperor. This sword would be known to the future generations as the king of swords and after the previous owner of the sword as Emperor Qin's Sword.

Required Level: 65

.....

I grasped the sword; this time I had truly acquired an absolute godly weapon. At this time system notifications sounded in my ears—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai has acquired the server's first Valkyrie Tier Weapon. The system rewards: Lv +1, Charm +10, Soul Gems x10!

.....

“Haha, congratulations Brother Xiao Yao. Ten points of charm!” Wolf said laughingly.

Yue Qing Qian blinked as she giggled: “This Valkyrie Tier Emperor Qin's Sword is so domineering. Brother Xiao Yao, after you've equipped Emperor Qin's Sword, how high is your attack?”

I answered: “I'll tell you later. Palace Spirit, you've forged a Valkyrie Tier weapon, surely you've been rewarded?”

“Yep!” Palace Spirit nodded and laughed: “7 points of charm, although I didn't get a system notification for it. As of right now, I currently have 54 points of charm. The higher my charm, the greater the rate of crafting better equipment. It's all thanks to handsome Brother Zi Zai's Emperor

Qin's Sword that I could earn 14 points of charm!"

I laughed, then brought up the equipment synthesis screen and drew out all the soul gems within my inventory. Adding in the ten rewarded by the system, I continuously upgraded Emperor Qin's Sword; I wanted to upgrade it until it could not be upgraded any further. Immediately, chimes relentlessly sounded in my ear extremely noisily—

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword】has been successfully upgraded. Attack increased by 5%!

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +1】has been successfully upgraded. Attack increased by 5%!

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +2】has failed to upgrade!

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +2】has failed to upgrade!

.....

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +5】has been successfully upgraded. Attack increased by 5%!

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +6】has failed to upgrade!

"Ding!"

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword +6】has failed to upgrade!

“Ding!”

System notification: Your weapon【Emperor Qin’s Sword +6】has been successfully upgraded. Attack increased by 5%!

.....

I continued until the very last soul gem. At last, Emperor Qin’s Sword had been successfully upgraded 7 times, a satisfying result. Looking again at its attack power, the stats had soared to the heavens—

【Emperor Qin’s Sword +7】(Valkyrie Tier ▪ Superior)

Attack: 1400-1850 (+490-648)

.....

Its attack had directly escalated 35%. Exchanging it with my Frost Rain Sword, my attack power immediately exploded out of proportion and all of my stats had undergone an extreme transformation—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Dragon City Night Watch)

Level: 65

Attack: 2820-3749

Defense: 2035

Health: 3925

Mana: 2286

Charm: 75

CBN ranking: 27

.....

Looking at these basic stats, I was thoroughly stunned into silence. An upper attack boundary of 3749, wasn’t it already sufficient to put Jian Feng Han’s attack power to shame?

“Brother Xiao Yao, how high is your attack?” Yue Qing Qian laughingly asked with curiosity.

I turned around to look at her: “Qing Qian, how high is Jian Feng Han’s

basic attack?”

“Mm.....”

A few minutes later, Yue Qing Qian lifted her head and looked at me: “I’ve looked it up. He’s equipped with the Flaming Cloud Sword, a necklace, and boots which are Emperor Tier and the rest are all Purple Tier. His Flaming Cloud Sword has been upgraded six times and his basic attack is 2447-2970.....”

I was astonished: “He had already had a basic attack of 2974? No wonder Misty Clouds was almost instantly killed.....”

Old K hoisted his Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe, laughing: “Under your current circumstances, you’d probably be able to instakill Jian Feng Han in a face-off. In Arctic Fox Forest, you were already able to directly KO him with a [Combo]. Now that you’ve exchanged it for Emperor Qin’s Sword, Jian Feng Han is just an appetizer now!”

I shook my head: “No. In Arctic Fox Forest it was because he had continuously killed off Misty Clouds and the other two, those three experts. His skills were all on cooldown and I suspect he probably didn’t have any mana left either. That’s why I was able to trump him in one hit or else it would have been very hard to instakill Jian Feng Han or an expert of his caliber.”

Wolf laughed lightly: “In any case, Brother Xiao Yao has acquired Emperor Qin’s Sword which is a very fortunate event for our [Zhan Long]. What are we going to do next?”

I took a look at the time, “You guys can go continue to grind or take a break, I’ll be accompanying Wan Er to eat something now...”

“Okay!”

.....

“Di!”

Wan Er’s well timed message came at that moment, “Li Xiao Yao, hurry up and get offline, I have some good news to tell you...”

“What good news?”

“You’ll know in a moment, there’s a beautiful girl that’s here for you...”

“Eh...”

Chapter 255: Fei Er

After staring at the flickering Emperor Qin's Sword, I happily celebrated by myself for a while before finally going offline.

I donned my clothes, washed my face and went out!

.....

At around 7pm I reached the girl's dorm and found that Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were already waiting for me, their freshness and beauty was almost unbearable.

Dong Cheng Yue giggled, "Xiao Yao, you are so awesome. In just one day you were able to create storms and waves in the game..."

"You already know about everything?"

"Of course, everyone on the Chinese server knows! The leaderboards' third rank guild [Vanguard] was unexpectedly defeated. They were actually toppled by [Zhan Long], [Winds of Battle], [Ruined Bones], [Misty palace], [Crimson Contract]: five newly formed guilds from Ba Huang City! Heehee, I can't even imagine what the color of Jian Feng Han's face is right now..."

I rubbed my nose and smiled, "It was all just luck, just pure luck..."

Wan Er walked forward, and pulled my sleeves, "Let's go, for dinner we'll eat out today. There's a beauty who wants to meet you; she's waiting outside the restaurant.."

"Oh, who is it?"

"You'll know when you see her..."

.....

We arrived at The Fragrant Delight restaurant outside the campus. This restaurant's specialties were it's Hunan Cuisines; its dishes were outstanding and widely known.

Following Wan Er to the second floor of the The Fragrant Delight restaurant, we entered a private room. As the door opened, I saw a beauty

wearing a western style black dress. She had long hair and a short skirt; I rated her as an 8 on my beauty scale. She looked to be around 23 years old, the kind that just graduated from university. Furthermore, a nametag decorated her chest, and with my vision, I could see the words written – ZGTV, Destiny Channel Anchor, Sun Fei!

“You’ve come...”

This beauty called Sun Fei stood up and extended her hands, “You are Ba Huang City’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai right? I am ... err, Wan Er probably hasn’t introduced me to you yet. I am Sun Fei, Zhe Jiang ZGTV Game Channel Destiny Anchor, in charge of broadcasts on players in Destiny. All the topics are decided by me. Everyone calls me “Fei Er”, so you guys can also call me that...”

“Fei Er?” I was stunned.

“Why, does it sound familiar?” Lin Wan Er turned and looked at me.

I shook my head, “No...but I think, I think I’ve seen her before... Fei Er, where are you from?”

Fei Er laughed softly, “Of course I’m from Hang Zhou. Otherwise... would you believe me if I said I was transported here from a parallel world by some heartless guy to continue doing work for him? Anyways, I don’t believe it...”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “No, no, it was just a joke. May we know the reason why you wanted to meet us?”

“It’s like this...”

Fei Er sat down once more and began to explain herself, “ZGTV has been broadcasting games for 3 years now, but lately, the ratings haven’t been so ideal for us. Destiny has been very popular, taking over 40% of the gaming industry and is steadily becoming mainstream among the common populace, so the news team appointed me to lead a special topic for Destiny. In fact... I just recently interviewed the Guild Master of [Vanguard] Mu Rong Han and his sister, Mu Rong Yun for the first episode. Right now, we’re at the second episode, and since I’m in

Hangzhou, the first few people I thought of were those famous in Destiny which includes Fan Shu City's Cang Tong and Ba Huang City's sword wielding Healer-you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai..."

Pursing her red lips together, she continued to say, "Actually, the main reason is that...this afternoon your guild [Zhan Long] united with 4 other guilds to fight against [Vanguard] in Arctic Fox Forest. This has set off a chain reaction. [Vanguard]'s defeat means that another power will be on the rise and the news team and I are sure that you will grow quite a bit..."

I smirked, "It was just one military campaign with good luck on our side. The sudden rain in the game completely threw off Jian Feng Han's thinking..."

Fei Er lightly laughed, "No matter what you say...I'm sure you saw it as well; Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are now ranked 27th on the CBN battle master rankings. Not even half a month ago, you were only at the 100,000s rank. This is a miracle and this was also the deciding factor for me to come interview you. After that...I met with Wan Er, and it's fortunate that she is familiar with you as well, so it was an easy decision to interview the both of you together. Are you willing to accept ZGTV's invitation? This will be recorded so there's no pressure..."

I looked at Wan Er, "Wan Er, did you know about this beforehand?"

Wan Er sat there quietly with her back straight and with a small laugh, she said, "I didn't tell you earlier because I was afraid you would be nervous..."

I went silent, "You weren't afraid that I would piss myself in front of Fei Er?"

Dong Cheng Yue couldn't help but laugh, "Are you that terrified?"

I smirked in response and then faced Fei Er, "An interview is no problem; however, please don't ask about my life experiences. Just ask questions related to <Destiny>, is that okay?"

Fei Er nodded her head with a smile, "That's fine. When are the both of you free? Will tomorrow morning at 9 at the ZGTV be ok?"

I looked at Wan Er, "If Wan Er is free, so am I."

Wan Er laughed lightly, "That sounds fine, we'll go together tomorrow morning."

"Okay..."

Fei Er wasn't able to contain her joy. Clapping her hands together, she said, "Then it's settled. Let us go have a meal, it'll be my treat today..."

"Okay!"

It was a delight to see that such a beautiful woman like her was looking forward to treating us out.

.....

While we ate, we talked about various topics about Destiny. It seemed that Fei Er had a lot that she wanted to talk about—

"Oh, Xiao Yao, you just recently obtained a pretty strong pet, haven't you? It's the...Valkyrie Tier BOSS rank pet Flaming Tiger God, right?"

"That's correct..." I nodded.

Fei Er became extremely curious, "They say the stats of it are really strong; it completely dominated Jian Feng Han's pet the Rock Spirit Fighter in terms of PK. How were you able to increase its level to Lv 60 so quickly?"

"I didn't, the tiger is only Lv 52..."

"Wow, Lv 52 and the Rock Spirit Fighter was unable to do anything to it? How...how strong..."

"This is normal; there are a two tiers between the two!"

Wan Er laughed by my side, "Honestly, I've grown attached to the tiger's cuteness. Have you thought about giving it a nice name yet?"

"I haven't changed the name yet..."

"What's wrong, you can't think of a nice sounding name?"

"I'm still thinking. I was originally thinking about calling it...'Merciful

Military Chief'. How about it, it'll be like a nice homage to it's predecessor, and hopefully last just as long..."

Wan Er had a look of helplessness, "Can you please just name it something nice sounding?"

"Then I'll call it Cang Tong, so whenever I call it I'll be able to think of you..."

"You..." Wan Er stared at me with wide eyes and her face began to blush. Hurriedly drinking her water, she spoke in a whisper, "Do you want to die? If you dare pick this name, I'll definitely beat you..."

"You'll find out the next time you see it..." I didn't waver in the face of her threats.

Dong Cheng Yue was happily laughing, "Don't worry, if Wan Er stabs you, I'll save you by pulling out the dagger. The beautiful maiden will save the cowardly dog..."

Fei Er couldn't help but giggle, "You three have such a nice relationship. I have to admit I'm quite jealous. Ai...ever since I joined the news team, I haven't made any close friends. Truly, I am jealous of you three..."

I said, "You may not have that many close friends, but at least you have a nice salary. It's pretty much the same..."

"Alright, you win..." Fei Er conceded.

.....

After finishing the meal, it was already 10 at night. Watching as Fei Er drove away in a Lamborghini, I couldn't help but exclaim, "Beautiful women anchors are always being pursued by suitors. The driver of that Lamborghini seemed pretty familiar..."

Dong Cheng Yue remarked, "Isn't he one of the entrepreneurs that just won a spot in the Top Ten Outstanding Youths?"

"So that's where I saw him before..."

Wan Er said, "Don't bother about stuff like that, let's hurry up and get back. I want to level a bit before calling it a night. Meet us downstairs at

the female dorms tomorrow morning at 8, we'll go to ZGTV together. And...Dong Cheng Yue will go to the humanities class tomorrow, so be sure to cover for us during roll call..."

Dong Cheng Yue hastily said, "I...I originally thought I would come with you guys to ZGTV and watch..."

Wan Er patted Dong cheng Yue on the shoulder and lightly laughed, "No need, Xiao Yao and I will be fine by ourselves. Just remember to cover us. You must believe that Xiao Yao and I both love you..."

Dong Cheng Yue gave a tiny sniff, "And I love you two as well, although it always seems like I'm always abandoned by you two....."

"How could that be, don't think crazy thoughts..."

.....

We returned to our dorms and got back online!

"Shua!"

Appearing back within Ba Huang City, the Frost Rain Sword had sold for 10,000 Gold. I carried the Emperor Qin's Sword out of the city, so that I could try out its power while taking the Flaming Tiger God with me to level. The battle had just ended, so it had dropped 2 levels to Level 50.

"Hou..."

The Flaming Tiger God came stamping out from the glowing hexagram. Upon seeing me, it's soft and tender side was revealed to me as it began to meow loudly, using its head to rub against my knee affectionately. However, his body had already grown much larger and it was actually a bit hard to bear with him being so affectionate. Opening up the pet screen, I changed its name—Cang Tong!

A familiar name appeared on top of the Flaming Tiger God's head. Patting him, I laughed and said: "Come on, let's take you to go level!"

.....

Rushing onto the roads, I pushed my way through the Ba Huang Forest and arrived at the Desolate Foggy Swamp. The Swamp snakes that were

here before had already been cleared and were now replaced with Giant Swamp Alligators!

“Splash....splash...”

Within the water grass, a water bubble floated up as a deathly brown eye stared intensely at me. This was the stare it gave when hunting for prey; as a Lv 66 Elite Monster, it was perfect for leveling up on!

I raised my hand to unsheathe my Emperor Qin's Sword, and immediately rushed at it. Dodging the snap of its jaws as I slashed at it, I activated my skill [Fierce Wind Blade]!

“Kacha!”

Blood came flying out of the Giant Swamp Alligator's wound as a huge number floated up—

3593 !

I attacked again, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

4011 !

My tiger pet struck out twice with its claws, completing the kill!

.....

Seeing how the alligator didn't even have time to retaliate before it died, I was feeling a bit frightened at my own power. Wasn't base attack of 3749 a little too scary? If my opponent had an attack like this, would I even be able to counter once before dying? What a problem this was...

Continuing onwards, I killed monsters there until around 1 AM, increasing the Flaming Tiger God to Lv 58. Then, under the suggestion of Wan Er, I got offline. I would need to get up early, oversleeping wasn't an option.

Chapter 256: Attack by Maiden

Morning in the ZGTV lobbies.

I turned my head up gazing at the structure; this building couldn't be considered luxurious at all; at least it was a lot less formal looking than the building next to it. Downstairs, a vivid lifelike bronze statue of a barbarian Berserker stood guarding the floor while holding a battle axe. The words Destiny 08/27/2017 were written on its' pedestal. That was the date on which Destiny first opened its servers.

.....

Wan Er wore a cream colored short skirt with a nice dress shirt and jacket. She exuded a gentle and refined grace while carrying her white purse. Looking at the building, she laughed, "ZGTV's gaming culture seems to be doing fine..."

Continuing, she happily said, "I was interested in video games ever since I graduated from junior high. Wu...if I had the choice, I would not have sung Heart of Time these past years but would have gone to work for ZGTV or possibly Destiny. Even if I was stuck at a small time desk job, it would still be like working at a place of my dreams. Li Xia Yao, what do you think?"

I was wearing a western black suit. Looking at her hope filled gaze, I laughed merrily, "I don't have the ability to make a choice."

"Why not?" Wan Er looked at me dumbfounded.

I answered after thinking for a bit, "Because everyone's life is different, the moment I joined my teacher on the path of martial arts, I was destined to live a life full of death and murder. What I learned was not for entertainment or for show, it was... to kill people..."

Wan Er frowned, a trace of doubt flickering within her beautiful eyes, "You...you really have killed people before?"

I turned around to avoid looking at her and gave a small chuckle, "Let's not talk about this, it's almost time to go. We should head upstairs; Fei Er

is probably waiting for us in the lobby...”

“Oh...”

Wan Er was smart, and she didn’t continue to press on about my past. She knew I wouldn’t talk about it anyways.

.....

In the ZGTV lounge. Fei Er had changed into a coffee colored uniform dress; smiling, she got up from the sofa and greeted us, “You two finally came; I was almost afraid of being stood up. If that happened, then my poor salary for this month would had been a travesty to see...”

“How could we, we are honest players that keep our promises...” Wan Er laughed.

Fei Er looked at Wan Er’s powdered face silently, “Ai, an interview with the legendary Heart of Time singer, Lin Wan Er. The pressure is too big. You’re so pretty too, I’m already feeling weak in the knees...”

I pounded my chest, “Don’t worry, you have me as a support actor here. Being beautiful is something that should be left up to you two; I’ll focus on being mediocre.”

Fei Er laughed, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai is such a jokester. You are the leader of [Zhan Long], and the new handsome player of Ba Huang City. You are in no way the support role; you and Lin Wan Er will be today’s leading roles. Let’s go on, the broadcasting station is on the 9th floor. I’ll take you all there.”

“Alright.”

.....

As the elevator slowly rose towards the 9th floor, we watched as the broadcasting hall came into view. The lights were already lit and five cameraman were already working on the set. With Fei Er as the sixth member, she gave me and Wan Er the manuscripts for the interview. On the script were all sorts of topics regarding Destiny; that way, the interview would not run out of topics to discuss.

“Need some light makeup?” Fei Er asked us, “Otherwise when the light shines on you, you won’t look as good.”

Wan Er asked, “I already have some on, just some minor foundation. It won’t be that noticeable to anyone else.”

“That’s good, what about Li Xiao Yao?” Fei Er continued.

My mouth twitched, “No thanks, I’d rather die...”

Fei Er laughed, “So be it; if you think you’re that handsome, then be prepared. During Destiny’s Future Outlook, I interviewed [Flying Dragon]’s Guild Master, Soaring Dragon. That one was one heck of a clown, he put on so much make up before appearing on screen. I bet he made small kids cry the moment the TV was switched on. Ah, I have sinned...”

Me: “.....”

.....

We sat on the sofa of the broadcasting setting; it was actually more like a chat-type interview. Fei Er was extremely professional and experienced. With the manuscript on her side, she smiled softly, “Welcome to this episode of ZGTV Famous Person interview. Today we have invited two people who have shaken Fan Shu City and Ba Huang City with their names and reputations. They are – the beauty on my left is Fan Shu City’s number one beauty, also [Hero’s Mound] Vice Guild Master and number one Assassin beauty Cang Tong. In real life, she’s known as Lin Wan Er, whom I think many of our audiences would know. Three years ago, a beautiful girl called Lin Wan Er sang a song Heart of Time that swept up a storm in Asia. It is indeed the same person as the beautiful Cang Tong in front of our eyes here...”

Lin Wan Er made a slight smile and gracefully said, “Hello everyone!”

Fei Er then continued, “The other person, the handsome guy sitting beside Lin Wan Er, is someone whom I think many would already know of just by looking at his appearance. He is indeed Ba Huang City’s number one player in fame right now, with the nickname of “Strongest Healer

Swordsman”, [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, also the first one to own a Valkyrie Tier weapon, Emperor Qin’s Sword, Xiao Yao Zi Zi! In real life, he’s called Li Xiao Yao, with an unknown background. He is a mysterious handsome guy, heehee..”

Even when faced with a sniper rifle I was still calm, so of course there was no problem when faced with a camera. I was just a little bit nervous and I nodded my head and smiled, “Hello everyone...”

Fei Er laughed lightly, “Continuing on, we shall enter our interview segment. Firstly, I would like to ask. Wan Er is Fan Shu City’s number one beauty and Xiao Yao is also Ba Huang City number one bachelor; how did you two know each other? In real life, what is the nature of your relationship?”

“How do we know each other...”

Lin Wan Er looked like she was remembering the first time we met, where I barged in into her changing room while she was changing clothes. Her oval face immediately turned beet red, “It’s nothing much, we are just normal friends; we knew each other normally...”

I nodded, “Yeah, Wan Er and I were schoolmates, we studied in the same University together. We are also classmates who played Destiny together. That’s how we met each other...”

Fei Er turned her gossip girl mode on as she laughed naughtily, “What? Why do I feel there is something else hidden? I am counted as someone who crawls through Destiny’s forums and I saw a lot of threads about the two of you. There are even a lot of speculations that you guys are lovers in real life; is that right?”

“We are not...” Lin Wan Er seemed powerless as she tried to explain.

Fei Er continued to ask, “Then how did you two actually meet?”

Wan Er with her face blushing and had totally forgotten everything all about her mind-reading abilities; her mind and heart was in absolute chaos, “That...that...actually there was one time I was shooting for a commercial, and then I met Li Xiao Yao, that was all...”

Having succeeded in getting her way, Fei Er laughed happily, “Oh oh, so that’s how you guys actually met. But the word “meet” has a lot of meanings you know. Beautiful Wan Er, how did you two actually meet?”

Wan Er’s heart was in absolute chaos as she began to stutter and mumble. She didn’t know what to say to Xia Fei Shuang any more.

I gritted my teeth and said, “Actually...Wan Er was changing clothes, and then I accidentally went into her changing room. Cough, cough, it was a misunderstanding! Director, please cut this scene out, otherwise I’ll chase you to the ends of the earth!”

Fei Er couldn’t help but laugh, “Alright, alright, sorry I pushed you guys too far... Director, just cut these few lines; it’s no big deal.”

The director signaled OK with his hands, “No problem!”

.....

Continuing to chat, we talked about everything related to the game from about Ba Huang City to Jian Feng Han and from Jian Feng Han to [Wrath of the Heroes]. Then it went from [Wrath of the Heroes] to [Zhan Long]. [Zhan Long] moved to [Hero Mound] to Dong Cheng Yue. And then it changed from Dong Cheng Yue to Yue Qing Qian to Yue Wei Liang. Fei Er explained that Dong Cheng Yue, Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, General Li Mu and General Wang Jian are all famous individuals of the main cities. In the future, the anchors of ZGTV would have many people to interview and would have many chances to invite them all to the broadcasting studio.

After 1 hour of interviewing, the first half of it was over. After drinking some of the water, I noticed that the mineral spring water next to me hadn’t even been touched.

Wan Er stood by my side and gave a pat on my shoulder, “I’m going to the restroom for a bit...” She whispered.

“Got it!”

.....

After chatting with Fei Er for almost 5 minutes, I still didn't see any signs of Wan Er. Immediately my heart stilled as I became fully alert. At the same time, my phone vibrated with a single text from Wan Er saying, "Come quickly, there's people here..."

"Ah?!"

I immediately stood up and cried out to Fei Er, "Don't leave from this spot, I'll be right back!"

"Eh, what happened?"

"It's nothing..."

.....

Rushing out of the broadcasting lounge's grand doors, I turned right towards the women's restroom.

After turning the corner, the faint shadow of a man turned around. A black barrel suddenly pointed itself at my forehead. The heck, it was a gun!

Immediately increasing my qi, I leaned towards the side as the sound of the muffler on the gun was heard. As the scorching hot bullet grazed past my face like a meteor, I stared intensely at the person in front of me. The shooter was very tall, with high set cheekbones and eyes that were sunk in. This guy was not a chinese person!

My legs kicked into motion as I moved forward but this man's speed wasn't all that bad, and his knee came up to strike me. Unfortunately for him, his speed was slower than mine. With a single chop, his shoulder became dislocated and as he recoiled, I took advantage of the moment by using my left leg to kick him twice. There was no way a regular hitman would be able to take on a blow like this. He howled in pain as he suffered fractures in both his legs. Kicking once more, the gun went flying out into the corridor far away from us.

Not even bothering to finish him off, I ran off to the front of the woman's restroom and barged inside.

The door to the women's restroom had already been kicked open, so I rushed through the opening when all of a sudden my heart trembled. My mind saw the faint image of Wan Er; I could almost hear sounds coming from the image as well. Was this...was her using her mind reading abilities to warn me?!

I ducked automatically as a military knife swept past where my head was, cutting off a few strands of my hair. Punching out, I heard a satisfying "pow" as I saw another black suited foreigner. His stomach had taken my fist, causing him to fall over!

"Pa!"

Grabbing the dagger that fell from his hands, I raced to the side of the sink stands where Wan Er was whimpering. Behind her, a sturdy black special agent cocked a pistol to the side of her head. In fluent Chinese, he stated, "Kid, put down the blade or else the girl dies..."

Wan Er slowly shook her head, "Don't do it...Li Xiao Yao...don't do it..."

.....

My eyes went bloodshot as I held the army knife parallel to my chest. Immediately letting go, the knife fell to the floor!

"Hey!"

The moment the knife hit the floor, the black man lifted his gun at me. It fired by the time I moved to the side to dodge and I felt a burning sensation in my right arm. Gritting my teeth, I lashed out with my right leg!

"Bang!"

The army knife went flying and nailed the special agent in the neck, pinning him to the wall. The ceramic tiles behind broke into pieces as his blood splashed onto it.

Wan Er escaped from the dead man's grip towards my direction but as she noticed the blood flowing freely from my shoulder, tears began to flow just as freely from her eyes, "You...are you an idiot?"

I stared coldly at the special agent lying on the floor behind me. After confirming that there were no more remaining threats, I lightly pressed my head against Wan Er's shoulder and lightly smiled, "Everything's fine now. Call your old man and tell him to dispatch some people here."

Chapter 257: The Oracle

One phone call later, Wan Er held onto my arm as tears still flowed from her puffy red eyes, “Does it hurt?”

I shook my head, “It doesn’t.”

“Really?”

“Don’t shake it like that, I’m dying from pain actually...”

“...”

.....

Looking at my wound, it felt like the bullet had pierced through my muscle tissue but it fortunately didn’t nick an artery or any part of the bones, otherwise a trip to the hospital would definitely be needed. With this type of situation, all I needed to do was to disinfect and wrap up the wound. I already surpassed the Refined Body stage so the recovery of my muscle tissue was far faster than the ordinary person. This wound would take at most a week to heal completely from and leave behind only the smallest of scars.

“Don’t worry...”

Looking at Wan Er who was crying so much that I thought it was raining, I couldn’t help but feel a small sense of sorrow. With a great amount of effort, I lifted my injured hand and patted her shoulder, “Wan Er, I’m really fine, the bullet only hit the skin....did you know, in the days when I was deployed to Ethiopia, my hand was almost shot off but luckily I had a belt handy, and learned from the experience...”

Wan Er sniffed loudly as she stared at me hazily, “You’re still teasing me, stupid!”

I carefully leaned against the corner and laughed, “It’s really nothing to worry about. Come on, laugh for me, if you’re crying over something like this now, what will you be like when I suffer from an even worse injury in the future?”

Wan Er wiped at her tears, her red lips still faced me as her beautiful eyes still contained a complex expression. After what felt like an eternity, she said, "I don't know...do you? In the past, my father hired a bodyguard for me, but he was shot through the heart, But I...I didn't grieve over him like I did here...."

I laughed, "Perhaps...perhaps it's because I brought you to a few SS ranked maps? You're worried that if I die, you'll never have someone take you to places like Five Barbarian Desolate Tombs or Dragon Temple..."

"Wuu, you're still speaking..."

Wan Er's ripped open my suit and pressed against my wound with her hands in an effort to block the blood from flowing out. Her face was already white from terror at the sight. She grabbed at the western styled blouse she had on and gave it a tug, ripping a large piece of fabric away with such force that one of the buttons had popped out. A long strip of fabric floated from her body with the sweet fragrant of her perfume still sticking to it. Wrapping it around my shoulder like a professional, it seems like Lin Tian Nan did not fail to teach his treasured daughter a few emergency skills.

I laughed uncontrollably, "Why didn't you tear off your skirt instead? I... I would have liked to see it..."

Wan Er's beautiful face went red instantly, she glared at me and said, "That's enough from you..."

Laughing merrily, I realized how charming this beautiful woman was, so charming that I was willing to take a bullet for her. Or catch a grenade for her.

.....

At that moment, a sharp female cry could be heard from outside. I suddenly moved my body, and asked in a low voice, "Fei Er?"

Fei Er's beautiful face looked over from the doorway, "Li Xiao Yao...you guys are...why are there dead people here?"

I glanced over; the special agent I had broken the legs of had fainted.

His whole body was covered in blood; most likely Fei Er had thought he had already died. In a low voice, I said, "Fei Er, don't disclose this. In 10 minutes max, people will arrive and sort this situation out. Come here....."

"Ah?"

Fei Er looked as if she had been frightened out of her wits as she walked closer and saw my arm. "You...you were shot? Who are these people, they're foreigners, what would they be doing inside ZGTV?"

I laughed slightly, "There isn't really a why, they just wanted to come. Fei Er, don't ask any more questions; this situation has no relation to you. You are better off knowing as little as possible..."

"Okay..." Fei Er glanced at the black guy who had been pinned to the wall by the knife in his neck and almost fainted afterwards. Pointing at the body, she said, "Over...over there, there's a dead person, did...did you kill him?"

I nodded, "I didn't kill him, I was defending myself."

"Ah...ok..."

.....

Not long after, the corridors outside exploded into noise as I heard Lin Tian Nan's voice call out, "Seal off the scene immediately and come with me quickly, what if Wan Er has been injured, hurry up..."

The Qi in the air bubbled as the shadows of two young men appeared quickly. They must be middle ranking experts of the Royal Air level. They were definitely the personal bodyguards of Lin Tian Nan.

"Miss!" A bodyguard came flying by Wan Er's side in an instant before giving me a glance. He didn't look surprised at all from my wounds or maybe he was apathetic to me. The only person he cared about was Wan Er's safety. If her personal bodyguard had died, it would mean nothing to him besides the fact he would have to spend time and money looking for a new one.

After a few seconds, Lin Tian Nan and the public security officer

Captain Wang Xin came running into the restroom. Lin Tian Nan became terrified at the sight of all the blood on the floor as Wang Xin's eyebrows knitted together before calling out for a medic.

"Wan Er, are you alright?" Li Tian Nan flew over, supporting Wan Er's arms.

Wan Er nodded, "Father, I'm fine...."

Wang Xin walked up and asked: "Kid, hurt?"

I nodded my head with difficulty, "Yea, a bullet pierced my arm. Can you immediately prepare some things to disinfect it? Otherwise, it will be a problem if it gets infected...."

"Okay!"

Soon, a female medic walked up to me and helped me apply medicine on it, as well as re-bandage it. Afterwards, she held the removed, blood-soaked cloth, and tilted her head, asking, "This...where was this from?"

Instantly, Wan Er who stood on the side blushed a deep red without saying a word.

I coughed and stuffed the piece of cloth into my pocket, "Don't mind it...."

Li Tian Nan straightened his back, his expression serious. In a heavy voice, he said, "Everyone here, leave. Li Xiao Yao, Wang Xin, and Wan Er, stay; I have things to tell you. Bring that person down and don't let him commit suicide; he needs to be thoroughly interrogated."

Wang Xin nodded.

Soon, a group of people walked out. The bathroom door was also closed, leaving just the four of us inside.

There was a depressing atmosphere hanging in the air as Wan Er looked at my arm again. Pursing her red lips together, it looked like she was about to say something before changing her mind. She probably didn't know what to say to improve the mood, since it felt like it had froze over.

.....

“Officer Wang, what do you think?” Lin Tian Nan muttered, “These people aren’t Chinese, from their physical appearances, it seems they are from Nan Mei. For the Mei Guo Secret Service to have interest in my daughter, what are they planning? You’re familiar with the National Security Agency and even have access to their resources to the point of knowing more than they do. What are your thoughts on this?”

“If I’m not wrong about this then...” Wang Xin exhaled, “These people didn’t want to kill Wan Er, they wanted to kidnap and use her as a hostage so you would hand over the ‘Oracle System’”

“The Oracle?” Lin Tian Nan clenched his hands, “The Mei Guo people want my Oracle?”

“That’s correct...”

Wang Xin continued, “I’ve seen the information and even checked with the high levels of the government...”

I lifted my head, “Captain Wang, hold on, what’s Oracle ?”

“The world’s first global defensive system. It’s similar to the Aegis combat system...” Wang Xin looked at me with a serious expression, “The Oracle system is highly classified by the Tian Xin Corporation and was only created after 7 years of research. In terms of strength, the Oracle system beats the Aegis system, so that’s why the Mei Guo people urgently want it...”

TL: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Aegis_Combat_System

Lin Tian Nan gnashed at his teeth, “That’s why they want the Oracle?”

Wang Xin nodded, “The Oracle system is being reallocated on a warship from Shandong and another warship from Zhejiang by aircraft. As well as being protected by a cruiser of the Corvette class. The system has been fully encrypted and only Lin Tian Nan knows the secret code to it. So if my guess isn’t wrong, they are trying to get the encryption code...”

<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Corvette>

Wan Er's eyes reddened, "Just for the sake of the Oracle, they almost killed Li Xiao Yao...."

Lin Tian Nan dotingly looked at his daughter and said, "As long as you are fine, then I can relax. It seems Li Xiao Yao that brat is really quite good. He was able to fight two gun-carrying highly-experienced special agents and get away with only a light injury...."

"No...." Wan Er said in a slightly grieved tone, "If it wasn't for the sake of saving me, he wouldn't have been injured at all....."

Wang Xin replied, "Whatever, fortunately it's only a light wound. Otherwise, it might have affected his next actions. Li Xiao Yao is currently the backbone of our police force's special operations group; he definitely cannot be lost. Do you understand this, Mr. Lin?"

Lin Tian Nan chuckled, "I understand. Relax, he's an expert at the pinnacle of Royal Air. Truthfully, injuring him would be very difficult. The Mei Guo Ren would never in a million years imagine that China's martial arts could be so powerful. Moreover, they would never imagine that an expert that has extremely powerful martial arts would be protecting Wan Er."

Wang Xin laughed, "Do you still want to bring up the request about replacing Li Xiao Yao?"

"No...no need....." Lin Tian Nan laughed, "Wan Er, I will send you back and at the same time, buy some delicious things for you to eat to help relieve you from your scare...."

However, Wan Er shook her head, "No, first escort Li Xiao Yao to the hospital!"

Quite moved by this, I lightly laughed, "There's no need, Wan Er. This type of wound will be fine if I treat it myself; there's no need to go to the hospital. I don't want this to go public either. It's obvious at first glance that it's a gun wound, and the hospital will investigate it strictly."

"Fine..."

.....

After exiting, Fei Er was found waiting at the side of the building, her face pale, “Li Xiao Yao, Lin Wan Er...our interview still has around 40% left to complete. Should we finish it next time?”

“No need, we’ll just finish it today!” I said.

Wan Er asked me, “Are you still ok?”

“Yea.”

“However, your clothes’ sleeve is ripped....”

“No problem. I’ll face sideways during the interview or I can just wear another shirt....”

“Ok....” Wan Er pursed her red lips, “Later when we return, I’ll help buy you a set of clothes. Just count it as a compensation....”

I nodded, “Sure.”

Lin Tian Nan looked at me, and after pondering for a bit, he said, “The incident this time was handled by Li Xiao Yao extremely decisively. How about this: I will enter 100,000RMB into your card as the reward for resolving this matter. I must thank you for doing your utmost to protect Wan Er!”

“Thanks Boss!”

“You’re welcome....”

Chapter 258: Cang Cheng

I returned to the broadcasting studio again with my arm wrapped with gauze and blood splattered on my shirt. I tightened my tie and sat down next to Wan Er, using her body to hide my injured side.

The interview carried on and Fei Er was an expert at re-adjusting the atmosphere. Although there had just been a series of fights outside the broadcasting room that had claimed the lives of a few people, she still kept her cool. In high spirits, she finished the interview successfully.

By noon, the interview was over.

Looking at the edited product, Wan Er stuck out her lips, "Li Xiao Yao's shirt caught some blood, you can see it on here..."

Fei Er laughed, "Don't worry, it's a minor detail, we can say it came from paint..."

Wan Er nodded, "Alright then!"

As she spoke, she looked at me with fear as if I would slip down or something. Pulling my left arm gently as we walked out of the ZGTV building, she even took the initiative to drive the car herself. On the way back, we were followed by 2 black Passats, both of them hired by Lin Tian Nan. He probably had them protect us from the very beginning of our trip and would undoubtedly be more cautious after this event. After all, it wasn't just some small time robbers that were after his precious daughter but rather the secret services of international nations.

"Ding dong..."

Wang Xin walked up to knock at the car window. I slowly rolled down the windows and laughed, "Wang Xin, what's up?"

"It's like this,...." Wang Xin furrowed his brows, "Li Xiao Yao, does your injury majorly affect your movements?"

"Why?"

"Come to the office at 6 tonight...." Said Wang Xin with a serious

expression, "Tonight there will be an operation. If you don't attend, we won't be certain of success...."

"Ok, I've got it!"

"Thanks!"

.....

As the car slowly started, Wan Er stared straight ahead, saying, "Isn't Wang Xin the leader of the police? Why...why is he talking to you about some kind of duty?"

I quietly said, "Wan Er, I re-entered the Hang Zhou Police...."

"Ah...."

Wan Er suddenly braked the car and turned around to look at me, her beautiful eyes expressing shock. She bit her red lips and murmured, "Do you think you are still not in enough danger? You still want to attend a police operation; what if...what if something happens to you? What would me and Dong Cheng do then? Do you know how many people want to kill you?"

I lifted my head to lean against the chair and nodded, slowly replying, "Wan Er shouldn't worry about me. I know what I'm doing and I also know how dangerous of a situation I'm in. But...but I don't want to see innocent people die, I don't want to see those sinning criminals hide in the darkness and continue smiling in glee...My life is a sword, I can't...I can't just give up my duty for your's and Dong Cheng's sake...."

Wan Er's eyes reddened, tears pooling in her eyes, "If you die one day, I will hate you for eternity!"

I didn't respond to her.

.....

We returned to the academy and had lunch together with Dong Cheng. Although she had spent a long time questioning why my arm was injured, Wan Er and I kept our mouths shut. The less people there were that knew about this, the better; after all, the scene was also being cleaned up in

secrecy by Lin Tian Nan and Wang Xin. It was announced to the public that someone in ZGTV had slipped and fallen in the restroom, resulting in an injury. Whether or not the public would believe it was not important.

After lunch, I got back online and found myself back on the outskirts of Fire Stone Valley. By continuing to grind and gather ingredients to level my alchemy, I finally reached Lv 8. I didn't know if anyone else had reached that level yet but I didn't get any additional charm from the goal, so someone must have. That couldn't be helped though. For the sake of staying in the lead equipment and level wise, I had to give up on leveling my alchemy.

By 5 in the afternoon, a golden light surrounded the tiger as he leveled up to Lv 60. The stats he gained were amazing and I was feeling pretty fine at Lv 65 with 74% experience. However, I wouldn't be able to keep my title as Ba Huang City's leaderboard player at this rate. There were far too many thing going on in real life for me to concentrate on Destiny. I wouldn't be able to compete with Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior. Fortunately, my pet and sword were leagues ahead of theirs. At the very least, [Zhan Long] could compete with the other guilds without losing and people were slowly joining our numbers. We only wanted to recruit the elite players and not gather a mob of players like [Wrath of the Heroes] did; it was better to have nothing than something bad.

"Hou..."

The little tiger grew bigger as his fur turned golden. With a ferocious look, he roared loudly before rubbing at my arm with his head. The little fellow became quite a huge one and he was already almost at my height. But what was most gratifying were his stats—

【Flaming Tiger God】(Valkyrie Tier BOSS Rank)

Level: 60

Attack: 2400-3000

Defense: 1800

Health: 4800

Mana: 1560

Attack: ★★★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★★★★

Health: ★★★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★★★

Mana: ★★★★★☆

Skills: 【Flaming Claw】【Flame Armor】【Fierce Roar】【Blood Strike】
【Burstfire Raid】

.....

Although he had an attack of 3000, with the addition of Valkyrie Tier BOSS rank pets' hidden growth, his actual attack could go over 5000, so his attack wasn't inferior to mine. His defense of 1800 was enough to survive for him as well, even most of the heavy armor class players wouldn't be able to break through his defense. His health and magic were decent, but in total, the Flaming Tiger God was a complete killing machine. As long as I could control the tiger decently, he could sweep across the battlefield, invincible as he kills everyone.

“Ding!”

Yue Qing Qian sent me a message, “Brother Xiao Yao, I have to tell you about [Zhan Long]’s recent development!”

I laughed, “Alright, tell me~”

A few seconds later, Yue Qing Qian sent a long string of numbers, “The guild is currently at Lv 3 with 27% but in another 4-7 days we’ll most likely reach Lv 4. We currently have 975 people; almost all of our spots are filled. Our average level is 59.4, but other than that, this afternoon, we killed 4 Purple Tier bosses at Qilin Valley and got 5 Purple Tier items and 4 Gold Tier items. After being rolled away amongst the players, we counted the players and saw there are 477 people in the Zhan Long group while there are 498 people in the Valiant Bravery group. Another 47

people in our guild are within the CBN top 1000 as well, hehe, our group is starting to have a good amount of experts.”

I nodded my head in satisfaction. Opening up the chat, I said, “Yue Qing Qian, please help me find out the guild developments for [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], [Prague] and [Wrath of the Heroes]. We want to be informed of their activities at all times while also being on the lookout for sneak attacks on our members in Qilin Valley. [Flying Dragon] and [Vanguard] still hold a huge amount of hostility against us!”

Yue Qing Qian laughed, “Yea, [Vanguard] is currently patrolling around Fire Stone Valley in the north while [Flying Dragon] is in the west. They’ve been pretty quiet recently and haven’t caused any trouble yet, but they’re most likely scheming something. As for [Wrath of the Heroes]...it seems like they’ve changed up their ways big time. They’ve invited a few experts, like a Lvl 62 Wind Elf Archer Sonata, the Lv 63 Wind Elf Mage Heart of Fire, and even a Lv 62 Knight Drunken Cold Rain. All three of them joined [Wrath of the Heroes] and became team leaders, while Tyrant of Western Chu and Little Piggy are both working hard on trying to control the guild...”

“Hehe...” I laughed, “Let Liu Ying and Piggy run their guild; the more strong guilds in Ba Huang City, the better off it’ll be for us. In the struggle for power, we’ll have a strong chance to stand out amongst them. Are there any other problems?”

Yue Qing Qian thought for a second, then responded, “There’s still another problem. In Fan Shu City something huge had happened recently...”

“Oh? What happened?”

“A human Knight just came out from beginner village and bought a bunch of Devil tokens and then redeemed them to an NPC. Within 48 hours, he had jumped from Lv 10 to Lv 60 and then job advanced. Not only that but, he bought a Lv 50 Emperor Tier spear in Fan Shu City and a Lv 58 Emperor Tier shield. Those two items alone cost 320,000RMB and 190,000RMB. I heard Sister Dong Cheng say that you even know this

person...”

I furrowed my eyes together, “Damn, what person would spend that much money?”

“His ID is Cang Cheng while his real name is Wang Ze Cheng. People say that he also has a Japanese name but I can’t remember it at the moment. Brother Xiao Yao, do you really know this person? This type of RMB spending, do you want us to invite him to [Zhan Long]? If you want, I can go have some friends talk to him...” Yue Qing Qian said excitedly.

I hastily waved my hands in firm resolution, “No! Qing Qian, listen to me, get away from Cang Cheng. [Zhan Long] will never want anything to do with this type of person. Qing Qian, put him in our blacklists!”

Yue Qing Qian had some doubt, but she still nodded her head in compliance, “Alright, although I don’t know why, I’ll do as you say...Oh yea, just now, it updated to say that this Cang Cheng joined a guild...”

“Is it [Hero Mound]?”

“Ah, how did Brother Xiao Yao figure that out?”

I gave an indifferent laugh, how would I not know? Wang Ze Cheng wanted to get close to Wan Er so much that even his ID is similar to Cang Tong’s, Cang Yue’s, and Cang Lei’s. If he didn’t join [Hero Mound], then what guild would he join? Q-Sword wouldn’t know who Wang Ze Cheng was; he would only know of his strength but he would never have guessed that this guy is a walking time bomb!

.....

Noticing that I should be leaving, I got offline and hurriedly ate a lunch box before going to the studio. Matcha was surprised as I retrieved my sword and took the black bundle from under the bed. “Boss, what’s this long bundle for?”

I laughed, “Something fun...”

“Let me see then...”

“Nope.”

“Boss is really petty...”

I got up to leave after patting Matcha on the shoulder, “Be good and stay at home. I’ll be leaving now.”

“Okay, stay safe Boss.....”

“Yeah.....”

.....

Chapter 259: Open Provocation

Hangzhou, Xi Hu District police station

.....

As I walked there, a person wearing a beautiful uniform was waiting for me. It was Shen Bing, with her bright eyes and white teeth. She was the technology chief and was originally with me in the police. Nowadays, she was already a high ranking officer, while I... I didn't know what position I had. Maybe I'd be considered a senior traffic officer or an auxiliary officer, or some kind of supporting officer.

Shen Bing greeted me with a laugh, "Ah, the handsome brother has finally come back to visit us!"

I laughed slightly, "Sister Shen Bing, each and every time I see you, you seem to get even prettier..."

Shen Bing raised her eyebrows and laughed, "Oh, after a few years, have you finally learned how to talk to a lady? Oh right, do you still not know what mission Captain Wang called you out for?"

"Yeah, I still don't know..."

Shen Bing walked forward, her sweet scent lingering in the air. Whispering into my ear, she said, "This is top secret; even I don't know about it..."

I remained silent and watched her as Shen Bing placed her hands behind herself. Even now, she still resembled the beautiful woman she was when she first joined the police force. Laughing, she beckoned for me to walk with her, "Let's walk, there's no use talking about this. Come with me, your equipment for the mission has already been prepared..."

"Ok...."

.....

I entered the clothing section with Shen Bing and received a brand new uniform with the words 'Li Xiao Yao' on it and a silver badge with the

number 2921607 of the Xi Hu Hang Zhou Police Force. Currently, Wang Xin was the person in charge of Hangzhou Police Force's Special Operations group. He no longer participated in normal criminal cases; he was only in charge of some of the tougher incidents. I also knew that since he had asked me to return, the job was definitely not going to be easy.

After changing my clothes, I stood nice and tall with my new equipment. The crest on my chest emitted a mesmerizing silver glow. Shen Bing helped me put on my hat as if she was my very caring elder sister. "Alright, Li Xiao Yao is indeed the reputable handsome police officer of Hangzhou. Tsk, it's almost as if these clothes were made for you..."

I laughed and said, "Actually, everyone looks the same when they wear the uniform...."

Shen Bing shook her head, "No, that's not it. Captain Wang looks just like a bandit. If he was to wear this uniform, then he would look like a highly temperamental government official. Ai, don't say anymore..."

I nearly spat out blood from that last line, "You seem to be getting more and more valiant; you're even starting to joke about Captain Wang. Be careful, or else he will delegate you to the night watch shift. Working in those sections does not bode well for a woman's skin..."

Shen Bing pursed her lips, and said, "Eh, it can't be all that strict right? Why don't you shut your mouth for me or else I'll shut it for you..."

"Haha, dont worry. Where is Captain Wang?"

"He's in the conference room. Come with me and you'll see!"

"Alright..."

.....

"Kacha..."

As I opened the doors to the conference room, I saw over 20 Hangzhou officers sitting inside. Wang Xin was standing off to the side next to the

projector. Nodding at me, he said, "Go find a seat and sit down!"

"Yes sir!"

Shen Bing and I took a seat next to each other and listened to Wang Xin talk.

"Have you all heard about Blue Water Street yet?" He asked us.

A single male officer nodded, "Yes, that's Hangzhou's most "romantic" street. It is covered with KTV buildings, nightclubs, bars and theaters while also holding the title of having the highest crime rates and shady business deals. Just last year, over 374 accounts of aggravated assault occurred there, which averages out to almost a single crime a day. Not only that but, Blue Water Street is also where all of the underworld gangs of Hangzhou gather at. There are always crimes and tears to be held there and the infamous Blood Scythe Gang roams there for drugs, prostitution, or any crime at all. It's a shame we could never flush them out and uncover them..."

"Uncover them?" Wang Xin laughed, "Did you kids know that the boss of Blood Scythes regularly eat and drinks with the high level dignitaries almost every week?"

The male officer laughed powerlessly as he sat down, "I didn't know that..."

Wang Xin stated, "Just yesterday in the southern part of the city, the son of a wealthy merchant was killed at the bar. The killer dropped off the severed hand at his family door for the mother to pick up, leaving behind a note asking for 5,000,000RMB in exchange of the body."

"What?!" I started to tremble, "They're that brazen about it?"

Wang Xin nodded his head, "Correct! A week before this happened, we took part in the seizure of the prostitution ring at the nightclub; Maya International. The club was run by people in Blood Scythes and so that same day, 4 officers that were involved in the raid were killed in their homes by bullets through their hearts."

Every single officer there was horrified.

With a neutral expression, Wang Xin continued, “Don’t be so amazed over this, the battle between Blood Scythes and us isn’t something that happened in 1 or 2 days. The fact that they are asking for ransom for a merchant’s son this time means that they are directly provoking the entire SWAT team of Hangzhou!”

After saying that, Wang Xin clenched his hands and growled, “They treat human lives as grass. Since they are provoking us, then we’ll give them our response tonight. The mountains in the southern part of the city are where the transaction will take place. We won’t bring a single penny to them; instead, we’ll bring 25 SWAT officers armed to the teeth! Today’s orders are simple: shoot dead any evildoer you see!”

All of the SWAT members were moved emotionally, each person was raring to fight the injustice that was happening within their beloved city.

Wang Xin then said, “If the information I received is right, then they are already at the cliffside ready for an ambush. Therefore, we will have 4 teams ready to snipe them from afar. Li Xiao Yao, you will lead a team and scout out the area.”

I nodded, “Yes sir.”

“Good, I’ll say the rest on the road. Go to the warehouse to get your weapons and prepare to leave!”

.....

At the weapons warehouse, all sorts of sniper rifles were laid bare. One of them was the AWSM and as well as the German G22 model with a night vision scope attachment. This was the rifle I had used while in the army for long ranged assignments. Inspecting the magazines, I loaded the rifle onto my back, and then inspected a M9 pistol. Finally, two army knives slid into their holsters by my legs.

TL: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Accuracy_International_AWM

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Beretta_M9

At 7 pm, we took off right. Three ordinary cars rode off under the cover of the night.

My team had five members. Besides me, there were two scouts and two snipers. I was in charge of the long range killing as well as the close combat defense. In case the gang members get close, I would be the only one who could take them on.

Sitting in the car, my heart began beating slightly irregularly. The Blood Scythes had angered the police, meaning that they were prepared for a fight.

“If I were the gang members, I would have planted a bomb by the cliffsides, just in case the police got close...” A police officer smiled nervously.

Another officer narrowed his eyes, “Don’t worry, with our observational scans, we didn’t see any sort of explosive materials, you can feel safe about that.”

“Then why did they provoke us into action? In terms of our current technology, they don’t hold any advantages at all.”

“I don’t know...”

The two SWAT members stared at me, “Leader, what do you think?”

I stared outside the window and gave a small smile, “Even I don’t know. But whatever happens tonight, we’ll know. You guys...just have to be extremely careful...”

“Understood...”

.....

At 8 at night, the car stopped by the mountain ridge and a few SWAT members climbed out. We secretly slipped into the darkness of the night; we all had to enter the cliffside without a single sound.

In the distance, an abandoned factory that didn’t have a single ray of light emitting from it. It only had the illuminations of the night sky, leaving the ground deathly pale in color.

Breathing deeply, a group of officers all crawled into the patches of grass before the small sound from Wang Xin came from our radios, “Have

everyone scatter. The first group will charge in from the front, the second from the south, the third from the east, and the fourth group from the west...”

I nodded to myself and looked at the 5 people behind me, “Look for cover every 50 meters we advance and make sure you’re completely hidden!”

“Yes sir!”

Leaped into a bush 50 meters ahead. At the same time, a SWAT member held his hand out as he surveyed the area, “The infrared scans show no signs of activity...”

Without pausing, I moved forward 50 meters again. I was getting close now, there was only 300 meters left to go. From the direction of the broken wall, the cold air howled; it was the optimal time to strike at this moment.

“Still no sign of any life...” The lookout frowned. “What happened, were we just stood up?”

“It won’t happen, look there...”

Like a statue, a body lay within the desolate factory, dressed in a green shirt. If we were not wrong, it should be the son of the south city merchant. However, this body was obviously bait.

“How can there be no signs of life?” The observer clenched his teeth: “Could our infrared equipment be broken?”

“No!”

I closed one eye and spread out my Yi Hai to capture the location of every source of power. Soon after, I found them! In total, there were 17 sources of power. Although their life energies had been suppressed to the lowest levels, they were still unable to avoid my detection. Furthermore, within them, there were 5 people that had comparatively stronger energies.

.....

“Leader Wang!”

I lowered my voice and spoke into the communication device: “Tell everyone not to be too hasty. Trust me, the people waiting to ambush us in the factory are not normal humans.....”

Wang Xin asked in reply: “Then how should we proceed?”

“I will draw them out! Prepare the flares!”

“Roger!”

I lifted the sniper rifle and took aim at a rubbish pile of plastic goods in a corner of the city district. After attaching the silencer and loading the bullet, I spread out my Yi Hai to confirm the location of that energy before cocking the gun—

“Pu!”

A muffled sound echoed. From within the plastic trash, fresh blood burst forth and a man roughly around the age of 30 rolled out as he howled miserably before shouting out in anger: “They’re here! They’re here!”

.....

“Swoosh swoosh swoosh.....”

The figures hidden in the darkness scuttled out one by one as the sky was suddenly lit up by the flares, bathing the earth in the brightness that rivaled daytime’s. A total of 17 people nimbly advanced at an exceptionally fast pace across the walls as if they were wild beasts. Oppressive roars emerged from their mouths as they dispersed in all directions to charge at the surrounding ambush points where the special police were!

“So fast!”

The special police beside me clenched his jaw, muttering in a trembling voice: “What kind of monsters are these?!”

Sounds of bullets loading could be heard from Wang Xin’s side as he shouted the command: “Aim at your targets and fire to kill!”

.....

“Peng Peng Peng.....”

The sounds of guns firing reverberated across the field. The men in black on the ground moved rapidly, dodging and evading the bullets!

“Bang!”

With a loud bang, one of the men was hit right between the eyebrows, but after continuously rolling back for dozens of meters, he flipped back up with a trace of blood on his face. Under the starlight, he looked extremely malevolent and with a roar he charged back towards us!

Wang Xin’s voice started trembling: “To be able to endure a direct shot from a bullet, what manner of monsters are these?!”

“Keng!”

I sped forward as I unsheathed the sword on my back.

Chapter 260: A Scary Opponent

“Bastard!”

Wang Xin’s voice wavered as he said, “Use the submachine guns and sniper rifles to fire; everyone be careful and protect yourselves!”

.....

“Roar”

The closest person from our position, dressed in black clothes, pressed both hands onto the ground and sprinted towards us. Under the starlight, his face looked abnormal and hideous with blue, fishlike scales appearing in the region where his head connected to his neck. Bullets could not pass through this layer of armour, and furthermore, the scaled skin seemed to ripple and convulse, growing larger and larger and very quickly spreading towards his chest.

I saw this and hastily shouted, “Shoot for their abdomen and legs, quickly!”

A few special operation policemen from behind pulled out their handguns, and shot a round of bullets. Immediately, two of the people clothed in black heading towards us were hit. Blood spurted from their abdominal areas and legs, and bullet holes appeared. Their movement speed was greatly reduced, but they were still rushing towards us very quickly.

“What?” A special operation policeman gaped. “Shooting has no effect?”

Wang Xin loudly yelled into the comms, “Shooters, switch to blasting bullets; aim for their leg areas!”

.....

I took out a custom-made blasting bullet from my pack and loaded it into my handgun. I raised my hand and with a “bang”, the bullet took off. A hundred meters to the front, a person got hit and started limping. He walked a few steps and with “peng” sound, his right leg was blown to pieces. However, what was really scary was that this thing still kept on

going, using both hands to crawl forward.

“This.... what exactly is this monster? Does it not feel any pain or fear?”

A nearby special operations policeman was already filled with fear and said with a trembling voice, “What kind of monster are we fighting right now?”

I said with a low voice, “Wu Lei, remain calm. Aim carefully at the monster’s leg area and shoot blasting bullets; blow up their unprotected lower body and it will be safe. What is there to fear from crawling monsters?!”

Wu Lei nodded, took a glance and said: “Boss, there are two more coming.”

.....

“Shua!”

The sound of wind passed and a black shadow took advantage of the night lighting and appeared suddenly in front of me. He was an approximately 37 years old man, his face filled with fishlike scales. His palms were a little distorted and his five fingers were sharp, much like a lizard’s. With a “Puchi” sound, his entire arm went through the chest of one of the scouts in the group. The fresh blood that spurted out landed on my face, making me realize that everything that was happening in front of me was real; a special operations police officer had just been killed in front of me!

“Ah, ah...” The officer opened his mouth wide, fresh blood dripping from it. His eyes were filled with fear and resignation as he looked at me, “Xiao Yao, our opponents....what exactly are they?”

“Wu”

My mind suddenly went blank, and my arms involuntarily drew Qi that settled on my sword. With a stride I stepped in front of the monster’s body, brutally swinging the sword horizontally towards the monster’s arms.

“Kacha!”

Fresh blood splattered, and the monster’s whole arm was easily cut off. With the scout’s body, the arm fell to the ground. The wound was so serious that the scout did not have any hope of living.

The shadow of the sword flashed with a cold light under the moonlight. Tears swirled in my eyes. He was a living being who had talked with us about his girlfriend and received our blessings not long ago. But now, he would have to die humiliated in this icy barren wilderness.

“Ah...ah...”

Swinging the blade like lightning, I sent three consecutive strikes towards the monster’s wrists and legs, which were easy to cut. Listening to its screams, I swung my blade horizontally and sent his head flying.

.....

In the distance, screaming again and again, Wang Xin’s voice in the communication device became very bleak. “Quick...quickly retreat! We can’t kill these monsters...we can’t kill them...”

By my side, there was a muffled sound, Wu Lei’s arm holding the gun was suddenly torn off. It was yet another 30+ year old monster. His face, neck, and chest were all filled with fish scales, and he chomped on Wu Lei’s broken arm in bloodthirsty manner, following up by whipping out a kick. Immediately, Wu Lei’s whole body fell into the underbrush while his eyes were full of despair: “Xiao Yao, hurry up and leave, leave..... we can’t fight them.....”

I held Xiao Hei and trembled. Releasing my Qi: “I can do it! Please believe in me..... I can fight them! Captain Wang, bring your men and retreat from behind me. I’ll stop them... I can.. I can protect everyone....”

Xiao Hei emitted a sharp humming noise while I charged forward and heavily kneed the monster who had injured Wu Lei in the abdomen. His body fell back, yet he didn’t feel any pain. His expression was savage, and he roared angrily as he charged towards me. Lowering my arm, Xiao Hei’s luster was even more eerie under the starlight. Suddenly raising my arm,

my sword swept up in an ice-cold arc!

“Ka Cha!”

From the bottom to the top, I directly severed the monster into two bloody halves. Innards and fresh blood poured out onto the ground. The other three officers next to me furrowed their brows deeply and one of them almost vomited.

.....

In the distance, unsettling figures appeared as Wang Xin brought 12 officers charging through, relentlessly shooting at the crowd of creatures behind them. Even if they broke the creatures' legs, the monsters would still limp towards us.

“Hua....”

Wang Xin powered through, his face ashen. “Li Brat, how did things turn out like this...”

I pointed behind us, “There’s a broken piece of wall over there. Bring everyone there to shoot the creatures. Cover the wounded and retreat. Request the headquarters to ask for helicopter reinforcements!”

“Ok!”

The crowd of officers all began to look around for cover around the broken piece of wall. I held my gun and stood further away, catching a glimpse of underbrush, “Wu Lei, why haven’t you retreated yet....”

Wu Lei gripped his broken arm, his face pouring sweat, “Don’t...don’t mind me....you have to be careful...”

“Roar!”

From the distance, about a dozen creatures began to charge over all at once at shockingly high speeds. In less than 50m, they had already surpassed the advantageous range of a sniper rifle. I pulled out my handgun and shot out a few times in succession, yet I could only leave traces of blood on their legs and abdomens, unable to successfully kill them!

“Pa!”

Directly tossing my handgun, my right hand tightly grasped the blood-soaked Xiao Hei as my left hand reached down to pull out an army knife attached to my leg. The army knife gleamed with a pallid light under the starlight. Channeling in my qi, it became even more menacing.

The speeds of these creatures were faster than mine; there was no chance of being able to run away. The only choice left was to fight to death for the sake of helping my fellow policemen look for chances of survival.

“Sou!”

As the first creature swept past, I suddenly lifted my right hand horizontally, and with a “Katcha” sound, its head had already flown off with the quick movement of my sword. Moving in a small circle with my feet, the army knife flashed in my left hand. With a single movement, the knife stabbed itself into the monster’s heart, and with a second herculean force of strength, I stabbed the monster once more through its stomach. Blood poured out as I removed the knife, and as another monster came, Xiao Hei split that monster in two.

“Bang!”

My shoulder sagged and burnt as if on fire as I fell back two steps in exhaustion. My equipment were nearly ripped to shreds from the still visible 5 claw marks while blood was flowing freely from my stomach and leg from the monster’s attacks. The concentration of Qi within my body simply wasn’t enough to block the monster’s sharp claws....In the end, I was just a normal person, while these monsters were like the devils from the pits of hell who didn’t belong in this world.

“Ah...”

I shouted in fury and swung Xiao Hei twice more. Two more heads flew as I leapt up and kicked one monster to the side while I stabbed down at another’s head. Its brain, having suffered damage, caused the creature to whimper and immediately collapse. It looked like their heart and brain were their fatal weak points, no different from humans.

Wang Xin shouted, "Use the lights and aim at these creatures' eyes. Their eyes are definitely their weak point!"

"Bang Bang Bang..."

Blood burst forth as three monsters simultaneously lost their heads. Their eyes truly lacked protection and our SWAT team was full of expert marksmen!

"Destroy their cover!" In the crowd, a black-suited man in his 40s shouted. His body shot out like a bullet and crashed into the cracked wall. Instantly the wall shattered and the officers retreated one after another. It looked like some were even crushed under the rubble. Such a powerful offensive power was definitely not something a normal human could have.

Xiao Hei continued to dance around with a starry glow as I slaughtered one monster after another. At the same time, I became covered in wounds while my body burned with searing hot sensations. Luckily, my mind was able to keep me calm. As long as I still had the ability to think clearly, then I should be able to face them against the odds.

"Roar!"

A creature charged towards the bushes where Wu Lei lay miserably under a short tree. That creature's target was definitely him. It looked like this group of monsters did not have a specific mission, only to kill a few more special agents because they could.

"Ahh!"

Wu Lei's eyes were filled with despair as he retreated with a limp. However, since he had lost an arm, how could he possibly move well?

Facing imminent peril, I did not hesitate to throw Xiao Hei at the monster.

"Pu!"

The sharp sword directly penetrated the creature's chest and pierced into the heart. It shuddered in shock, only to slowly collapse onto the

ground. At the same time, three more of these monsters charged at me from behind!

“Swoosh!”

Hastily pulling out the military knife from the right sheath. I held both weapons in hand as I directly cut down one monster. Its head was immediately separated from its body as its blood splashed onto my body. In the meantime, the once clean set of clothes turned into a tattered mess.

With a snapping sound, the other monster suddenly bit down on the military knife in my left hand. I quickly used my right knife and sliced its neck off with two heavy swings. However, the 3rd monster swung its claws over me and searing pain shot through my wrist. My knife dropped to the floor as the monster looked at me with sinister eyes. It looked like a youth of 25 years old or so.

“You are being quite strong for a SWAT member. But if we took away your weapons, would you still be as difficult?” He jeered as he stared at me. With a killing intent, he brandished both his arms and dashed at me.

I took a step back and right leg kicked out for a precise shot, hitting the target right on his chin. My right fist contained a huge amount of Qi as I struck with it, shattering his bones into tiny fragments. Almost every bone in this monster had been broken from my overwhelming power. Pressing him against the wall, I punched with all my might, breaking both his body and the wall! Taking advantage of the moment, I punched at his face with another huge blow!

“Bang!”

Blood splashed out from his badly mutilated flesh, even the fish scale wasn't able to defend itself against my Qi concentrated fists!

With a series of explosions, I had already lost count how many punches I had given out. His head had already been broken into pieces, but I didn't stop punching him.

.....

“Pa!”

Wang Xin put a single hand on my shoulder, whispering softly, “Kid, that’s enough...”

I knelt down amongst the ruins around me, staring at the dead bodies of the SWAT members while crying to myself, “Bastards...these bastards...”

Chapter 261: The Paradox of the Shield and Spear

The sounds of propellers could be heard as I laid low within the ruins. Three military grade helicopters slowly approached, dropping many medics and special force soldiers, all of whom were wielding submachine guns as they swiftly sealed off the area. At the same time, a 50 year old began to approach. On his shoulders was an olive branch with 2 golden stars underneath, which meant that he was a Lieutenant General!

.....

The Lieutenant General looked around the battlefield and couldn't help but narrow his eyes. Walking up, he asked, "Who is the person in charge here?"

Wang Xin's face went pale as he stood to attention, "I am, Hangzhou's special division group leader, Wang Xin."

"Hello!"

The officer held out his hand to Wang Xin and said, "I am Sun Xiang, Lieutenant General of Nanjing's military district. I am in charge of the administration regions for the special division's operations. The events that transpired tonight must not be leaked to the public!"

"Of course, sir!"

"So tell me, what in the world happened here...in this lifetime of mine, I have never seen such a desperate battlefield like this one...."

Sun Xiang clenched his hands, staring over the wilderness around us.

Wang Xin followed behind closely, "The son of a merchant in Hangzhou was killed today and the killer wanted 5,000,000 RMB in exchange for the corpse to be returned. This was meant to provoke us, so we responded with 25 SWAT members to purge their numbers. We didn't realize the men waiting here to fight us wouldn't be human..."

"How are they not men?" Sun Xiang asked.

Wang Xin responded, "They had strength and vitality that were unmatched. Plus, their entire bodies were covered by mysterious fish scales that even bullets couldn't penetrate through. Their movements were extraordinarily quick and immediately killed 7 people while wounding another 12. Our damages were disastrous."

"Bullets weren't able to penetrate their skins?"

Sun Xiang crouched down and flipped over the dead body of one of the monsters. Seeing its skin, he gave a frown. Taking out a pistol, he fired once and sure enough, the bullet didn't go through. Frowning, he called out, "Bring a body back to the base and find out what makes up their DNA! The Nanjing base will provide additional men for any future operations. Wang Xin, the losses that happened today were far beyond your control, do not put all of the blame on yourself!"

Wang Xin didn't say anything.

Sun Xiang looked at the monster's body once more, "The bullet didn't even go through the outer skin, how could he have been beheaded? The cut was so nice and even, so this was done by a sword. How is this possible?"

Wang Xin lowered his voice, "The Hangzhou special division has a young expert with astonishing strength. His attacks completely ignored the defenses of these monsters."

"Oh? Who is this expert?"

I slowly stood in front of him, with my left hand still holding Xiao Hei, and my right hand saluting him.

"Young man, was this really done by you?" Sun Xiang asked.

"Yes sir."

"Not bad..." Sun Xiang's pupils flashed in satisfaction momentarily before saying, "I didn't know Hangzhou had their own Crouching Tiger, Hidden Dragon person, and you're so young as well. If we had more experts like you, hmph, what would we fear? Kid, what is your name?"

“Li Xiao Yao...”

“Ah...” Sun Xiang jumped.

“Sir, what’s wrong?”

“Its...It’s nothing...” Sun Xiang shook his head, “It’s just that...I had an old friend who spoke of that exact name before. But that happened a long time ago...”

Staring at the dead soldiers on the ground, Sun Xiang said, “Go ahead and give them a good burial, they were good people. Also, send a monster body to to the Tian Xin Corporation and have them help us identify the DNA. They’re experts in this field after all.”

“Yes sir!”

.....

11 at night, back at the Hangzhou police station.

After the 7 dead bodies of the SWAT members were transported back, each one of us was still racked with grief and indignation. The injured were still howling, but thankfully, they were all treated and bandaged already. It hadn’t been too long since Wu Lei’s arm was cut off, so the chances of replacing it weren’t low. My own body had plenty of claw marks, but luckily they hadn’t cut into my muscles or bones. However, plenty of scars would remain afterwards.

“Ah...”

Extending my shoulder, I stifled a groan of pain as the medicinal salve seeped into my wound.

Still applying the salve, Shen Bing raised her head to look at me, “Does it hurt?”

I nodded, “Yea...”

“Idiot...” Shun Bing’s eyes were red, “You were an idiot in the past, and you’re still an idiot even now. Why did you charge to the front and get hurt to this extent, wuu...”

I smirked, “Sister Shun Bing, if I wasn’t at the front, then all of the people we are familiar with would be dead. To receive a wound like this in exchange for our friend’s lives, I’d be happy to take this deal any day.”

Shun Bing chose not to answer and continued to attend my wounds.

I made a fist with my other hand and hung my head to look at the bloodstains on the floor. “I thought I was strong enough already to protect everyone. But with this experience, I know how lacking I am now. I could only stare blankly as Wu Lei and his men were attacked, killed. I...I failed to live up to everyone’s expectations...”

Shun Bing stood up and embraced my head into her chest. Whispering gently to console me, she said, “Silly kid, don’t think about it too much. Everyone has a limited amount of power, and you’re not Superman. You have already done all that you could to the best of your abilities; do you know that you’re the person everyone on the team strives to be? If it weren’t for you, none of us would have had the courage to fight the monsters...”

“But Xiao Lan and the others they...they all died...” After remembering Xiao Lan, I couldn’t help but start crying once more. I had known these very members since 2014, and they all had treated me as a brother, an equal. But just now I had watched them get massacred. Even though I murdered just as many of these monsters, that wouldn’t bring back my friends’ lives.

Shun Bing was shaking slightly, warm teardrops were dropping onto my shoulder as she cried and hugged me.

.....

4 in the morning. None of us in the police force were sleepy and instead sat down and stared blankly at each other.

“The autopsy reports have returned!”

Wang Xin ran into the room, his hands holding a document file. “We have information on these people down to the smallest details. There are teachers, workers, and even veterans among the monsters and all went

missing 6 months ago due to various reasons, like faking their deaths or just suddenly disappearing. All of them have the mark of the Blood Scythes on them but they're only a month old. Other than that, their DNA has indeed mutated; a good part of their DNA is still human but the other parts are almost lizard like, which is why they have scales that resemble those of fish."

"Were they able to identify who is behind this?" I asked.

"They weren't!" Wang Xin shook his head, "The people we're up against are more terrifying than we thought. 15 of the monsters have the letter "E" marked on them, while 2 have "D". They all seemed to have their genes strengthened artificially. This was confirmed by both the researchers at Nanjing and Hangzhou, but their genes were far too complex to figure out. So far we have been unable to find out the specific compositions of the DNA or sources of the DNA. So at the moment, the only thing we can do is to keep up with our defenses, and refrain from any more strike operations. Other than that, the higher ups have placed a huge importance on this case and these mutations. The official name for these mutations will be 'Artificials'..."

After saying that, Wang Xin exhaled again, "It is my belief that these Artificials will be our most problematic opponents in the future... Also, tomorrow the Nanjing military district will be sending over some elite special force soldiers to augment our task force. I can't convince them otherwise, so I can only say this to you all: 'Protect Hangzhou down to the last drop of your blood!'"

I nodded, "Yeah, protect Hangzhou..."

.....

"There's still one other matter..."

Wang Xin muttered, he grabbed a gun from the nearby officer, and then pulled out the scales of the skin of an Artificial. "Just a while ago, the Tian Xin Corporation's weapons department manufactured a new type of bullet and sent it to us. Don't be mistaken, this is indeed the Nanometer warhead spoken of in legends, which uses the heat generated from impact

to melt through the advanced armor of highly technologically advanced weapons. I experimented and found that the Nanometer warheads are able to penetrate through the skin of Artificials. Hmph, they have the shield and we have the spear. Starting tomorrow, the Hangzhou police force will swap out their old ammunition for the new Nanometer warheads. I don't believe that the Hangzhou force will be unable to grab Blood Scythe's stinger and pull it out from the underworld!"

The Spear and the Shield refers to the paradoxical tale of the Shield that can block all, and the spear that can pierce all. In other words, the immovable object versus the unstoppable object.

I gave a gentle laugh, "Captain Wang, when will we move out against the Blood Scythes?"

Wang Xin thought for a moment, then spoke, "We have to wait for the higher up's orders. The leaders of the Blood Scythes are all well known figures of society and they may have positions of high power. If we strike, we must eradicate them all in one fell swoop. Otherwise, we must think about the long term plan or risk getting even more casualties amongst our numbers. We have to wait for the new teammates to help fill our strengths again, or else fighting against these monsters will be impossible."

Looking at the Nanometer warhead in his hand, Wang Xin thought for a second, "We need a godly marksman as well..."

He looked at me, but didn't say anything.

I went silent for just a few seconds before saying, "Don't look at me, my marksmanship can only be considered second-rate..."

Shun Bing laughed, "What? You were Hangzhou's police force champion shooter for 2 consecutive years. Are you trying to make the rest of us marksmen look bad?"

Wang Xin smirked, "That's enough, Li Xiao Yao still has another assignment; you should return to the school now. Don't forget why Tian Xin Corporation was so generous as to give us such a large shipment of Nanometer warheads. It's because the special relations between you and

them. Also, I've been notified that you, Li Xiao Yao, have been promoted to vice-leader of the Hangzhou special division and will be able to issue out orders."

I nodded and thought of Wan Er and Dong Cheng back in Liu Hua Academy. I couldn't help but feel warm inside. After all this blood and death, I would be able to return to their sides. This was perhaps my sole motivation to move forward now.

.....

With a body full of scars, I made my way back to Li Hua Academy in a tired state and passed by the women's dormitories.

"Ding..."

My cellphone started to ring. Looking at the caller, it was Wan Er. I picked it up and said-

"Wan Er? How come you're still up, the sun's almost out..."

Wan Er's voice came through very gently, "I couldn't sleep, my heart felt empty inside because you weren't by my side..."

I raised my head and saw the curtains by a certain window be pulled apart. It was Wan Er standing up there and looking down at me. My bruises and wounds, although somewhat covered, were still easily seen by anyone that bothered to look.

All of a sudden, I really wanted to cry.

Chapter 262: Fight in the Courts

3 in the afternoon, after waking up from a dream.

Moving my shoulder, I immediately felt a pain tingle in my body. The wound from the bullet had been split open by the Artificial's claws, causing the wound to reopen. Medicine wasn't doing a good enough job in healing it either.

"Huu!"

I suddenly sat up and leaned against my bed. Looking outside my window, I saw a group of male students sweating it out on the basketball courts as they played a game, while another large group of female students were cheering them on.

I stretched my neck and sat against the wall comfortably and relaxed.

To my side, I heard Glasses speak to me, "Hey, Xiao Yao, when you were asleep, I happened to see your arm and all of the wounds on it. Where in the world did you go yesterday night to get injured this much...?"

Turning to answer Glasses' question, I stared for a second before saying, "Glasses, you shouldn't be asking these types of questions, it'll bring you no answers..."

Tang Gu's body started to tremble, "Xiao Yao...are you...are you connected to the underworld?"

"Pah, do I look like that type of person?"

"Probably not, you don't mix with the ** crowd and you're also pretty handsome. If anything, you'd probably have a girl delinquent by your side, not Wan Er. Her father wouldn't have let you get near her in the first place if you were."

I stood up and shook my arm. Besides the gunshot wound, the rest of the wounds were already all healing up. With another 3 or 5 days, I would once again be at my peak. Ever since the first encounter with the Artificials, my life became so much less secure; everyday was spent in complete anxiety as I prepared to be attacked.

.....

Going to the bathroom to wash my face, I then walked out of the dormitories to find some food to eat. Soon after, I found myself wandering around the sports field to try and stimulate my blood as well as my Qi flow. The sooner that my blood and Qi flow returned to normal, the better the benefits would be.

The cold refreshing breeze of Autumn blew past my face. I was wearing a new shirt and a nice black windbreaker on the outside, hiding all of my injuries from sight entirely. However, my face still had a single scratch that was visible to the naked eye; wounds from the Artificials were truly hard to recover from.

“You can do it! Wang Ze Cheng is soooo hot!”

The screams of female students could be heard from the side of the basketball courts but the name that was mentioned was one I could never forget. Quickly making my way over, I saw that it was an unexpected match between the chinese and computer departments. And one of the representatives for the chinese department was Wang Ze Cheng!

Wearing light blue sportswear, Wang Ze Cheng's entire body was already sweating. His handsome face was calm but firm and his eyes were icy cold in determination. He was practically taking all of the opportunities given to him and within 10 seconds he had already scored twice. At one point, he had even scored three points from a half court shot, an astonishing achievement that caused everyone around to applaud at once. Even the many girls were all shouting, “Wang Ze Cheng go!”

I calmly sat down onto the stone bench and watched the faraway basketball game with a tranquil expression.

.....

“Peng!”

Rushing to make a slam dunk, Wang Ze Cheng leapt extremely high, slamming the ball into the basket in a graceful manner. While he was in midair though, he had looked into my direction.

I looked at him as well without saying a word. By my side, many of the girls had shrieked loudly in approval.

“Pa....”

Gently falling to the ground, Wang Ze Cheng returned to his side of the court, though he had looked very cautious towards me now. The way he handled the ball was truly gorgeous but when the opposite team had the ball, he fouled them and, the ball flew at an angle towards me as if it was a bullet!

This! Was he purposely trying to hurt me?!

“Watch out!” A girl on the side shouted out as a warning, “Li Xiao Yao, watch out!”

I looked directly at the basketball and gathered Qi. A cyclone condensed in front of me, turning it away and with a “banh” the basketball flew backwards as if it had hit steel. I remained sitting, indifferently looking over at Wang Ze Cheng.

“Hey man, are you ok?” A male about 2 meters tall laughed as he looked at me, “Wang Ze Cheng didn’t do it on purpose, don’t take offense. It was just an accident...”

Wang Ze Cheng smiled, and with an apologetic face said, “Student Li Xiao Yao, I apologize, it wasn’t on purpose...I didn’t hurt you right? The basketball’s speed just now was a bit fast, so I couldn’t control it. Sorry....”

I stood up, looked at Wang Ze Cheng, and faintly smiled, “How would it? With such little strength, it wasn’t enough to even tickle. Student Wang Ze Cheng’s slam dunk was very skilled, no wonder so many girls like you.”

Wang Ze Cheng rubbed his nose, and laughed in embarrassment, “That...I really only like playing basketball, that’s all. I didn’t really want to change anyone’s opinion towards me....”

I smiled, “Yea, they were hired to act!”

A male on the side arched his brow, “Li Xiao Yao, what do those words mean? On what basis can you talk about Ah Cheng like that? Who are

you to talk like that?”

Saying this, he walked in front of me holding the ball and extended a hand to push my shoulders.

I slid backwards a step, drawing support from my Qi to push onto the back of the male student, immediately sending the student smashing into the ground. In such a difficult position, the battered student couldn't say I pushed him, since everyone around us saw that I didn't touch him at all.

Hurriedly bending over and supporting his arm, I “panicked in fear” and asked, “Fellow student, you...are you ok? How could you be so careless?”

This guy was clearly one of Wang Ze Cheng's followers and Wang Ze Cheng was furious. He absolutely did not think that I was such a good actor, “Fellow student Li Xiao Yao, are you up to play a game of basketball?”

I shook my head, “I can't, you guys continue playing, I still have other things to do...”

The moment I turned around, the male that had fallen got back up in anger. He raised the basketball and heavily threw it towards my back, “F*ck, go die, you bastard!”

“Sou....”

The basketball flew towards me at a rapid speed but I merely held up a hand without turning around. The ball stopped within the palm of my hands, and I sent it flying back towards the hoops in a single perfect motion. With a swishing sound, the ball fell through the net and to the ground; all without me even looking as I made the shot. Cool people don't look back after all.

The basketball hoop was at least 15 meters away from me and I had made a swish shot without even looking.

Everyone on the court was stunned. No one would have thought that I would do such thing and no matter how much Wang Ze Cheng tried to do thing, he was still a fake gentleman. However, I learned my lesson that the cruel reality was that – you had to look good to have a future. If you

were like Old K, your only hope would be to study all day.

.....

“Du du...”

The phone rang; it was Wang Xin’s number--

“Leader Wang, what’s wrong? Do you need me to return to the team?”

“That’s not it.” Wang Xin laughed, saying, “We’ve recently been doing inspection work for the most part; there’s virtually no danger involved. You should rest properly for a while and tend to your wounds first. Also, now that we have the Nanometer bullets in our hands, there’s nothing to worry about. Even if we do somehow face those modified people again, we won’t really be inferior to them anymore. We would definitely blow off their heads before they even got near us!”

I laughed, “Eh, then I reassured. Why exactly did you call me?”

“Protect Lin Wan Er properly...”

Wang Xin said sternly, “I only have one demand of you, which is to guarantee the safety of Miss Lin Wan Er. You’ve seen Tian Xin Corporation’s power. Their weapons will be able to let us turn around the current situation. Lin Tian Nan is some you can’t push on, even when the army first started cooperating with him, we had to compromise many conditions. You’ve met Lieutenant General Sun Xiang right? He has lost quite a few times to Lin Tian Nan; towards Lin Tian Nan, the army hates and loves him. Haha, however, Lin Tian Nan’s only weakness is his daughter. You have to protect Lin Wan Er in case the power behind the Artificials gets wind of Lin Wan Er’s relationship to Lin Tian Nan and the Tian Xin Corporation. Once Lin Wan Er gets kidnapped then we’d be in real danger.

I nodded, “I understand. From beginning until end, I will use my life to protect her. Don’t worry about that, Leader Wang!”

“Yea.” Wang Xin continued, “Do you need any hired hands? To tell the truth, Lin Tian Nan hired 27 people to lie low around Liu Hua University. All of them are experts and will help you protect Lin Wan Er. If you ever

need any more, you can tell me and the police can also hire similar personnel to provide assistance.”

I couldn't help but laugh, “Don't worry Leader Wang, this isn't a problem at all. You...can you help me investigate Booster Corporation's CEO Wang Ze Cheng's origins, and everything about him thoroughly?”

“Booster Corp?”

Wang Xin said with difficulty, “I'm afraid that this is a bit too difficult; I cannot investigate that company without permission!”

“Why not?”

“Because Booster Corp's influence is too deep. Their profit from last year was 7% of Hang Zhou's GDP. The old fellows above are all waiting for this GDP for promotions, so who would let you touch Booster? Once we start investigating Booster, I'm afraid we'll be investigated ourselves. You should understand the conflict of interest better than me.”

I clenched my fist, “Ha ha, I love this adorable world...”

.....

As I hung up the phone, I dialed Shen Bing's number—

“Hello?” Shen Bing chuckled, “Young handsome, didn't we just see each other very early in the morning? What, have you missed me again that soon?”

I was speechless, “Sister Shen Bing, is it possible that you're still half asleep?”

Shen Bing's voice sounded lethargic as she replied, “Hoho, you figured it out. I'm still on my bed. What's up, did you need something? A conscienceless fellow like you would never call me unless you've got a favor to ask.”

I smiled, “Yea, Sister Shen Bing, you have pretty much all of Zhejiang police's files; help me investigate inside information about Booster Corporation's Asia Division's CEO Wang Ze Cheng, the more detailed, the better. Also, investigate Booster Corporation as well.”

Shen Bing said in astonishment, “You brat, you’ve gone crazy. You want to touch Booster Corporation? This...this is too insane. Do you know how many people will try to silence you?”

I replied indifferently, “I know, but I need to do this. Sister Shen Bing, if it’s too difficult than don’t investigate. I will find another way to fix an investigation on Wang Ze Cheng. If you are discovered, then I won’t have a peaceful conscience anyways.”

Shen Bing laughed, “I guess you do have some conscience! Don’t worry though, Sister will find a way to use a trojan and bypass their investigations; just leave this matter to me! Sister’s reputation for being Hangzhou’s number one hacker isn’t for nothing!”

“Yea...ok!”

Chapter 263: New Source of Provocation

Finally, Lin Wan Er's phone call came at 5PM, and we agreed to meet below the girls' dorm.

Not long after, the beautiful figures of Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue appeared out of the front doors. I tugged on my jacket. Perhaps I was feeling a little chilly, or perhaps I was afraid of them seeing the scars crisscrossing over my body.

.....

"Xiao Yao?" Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head and looked at me, "You haven't been online for the whole day, what happened? Unless you don't even want to keep your [Zhan Long] guild..."

I faintly smiled, "Not a chance. [Zhan Long] is my lifeblood. I can't possibly give it up."

Dong Cheng Yue's gaze drifted downwards as she teased, "Oh? I thought your lifeblood is that..."

I lifted my fist and said, "Hey, you want to die?"

Dong Cheng Yue giggled cutely, "Okay okay. Spare me, young knight. Let's go, we're leaving campus for a bit..."

"Oh? What for?"

Lin Wan Er speedily walked beside me and pulled on my arm. She laughed as she explained, "What else? Let's go buy you some new clothes. Just think of it as something to make up for what you did for me yesterday."

"You don't have to do that, young miss..."

"Stop talking, let's go!"

.....

With two beautiful girls on my side, the security guard at the gate was stunned stiff. Looks of admiration, jealousy, and disdain were written on his face. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were Liu Hua University

Beauty ranking's first and second place. The fact that the two girls who made the campus' rich boys drool incessantly were both holding one man's arms at the same time was something unfair to the world.

At the Mei Luo shopping mall, in the Business district, Lin Wan Er picked an Armani specialty store and brought me two sets of clothes. One was a business suit and the other a casual outfit.

First I tried the casual outfit. Wearing a set of new clothes in front of the mirror, I was slightly unable to believe my own eyes. Clothes could definitely make a person. Lin Wan Er delightfully looked at me, "Looks pretty good. Let's go with this..."

The corners of Dong Cheng Yue's mouths curved into a smile while she lowered her head, seemingly unable to look at me. Her cheeks became flushed red.

"Dong Cheng, what are you doing?" I asked.

Dong Cheng Yue continued to lowered her head, "I... I can't look straight at you. Too handsome. I like it so much that I'm afraid that I will have an urge to hug you right in front of Wan Er..."

Lin Wan Er rolled her eyes and laughed, "It's fine. If you want to hug him, then hug him..."

Dong Cheng Yue continued to keep her head down, "No, I'm scared that my heart might beat too fast and go into epileptic shock..."

Me: "....."

.....

Lin Wan Er handed me a black suit and said, "Try this one as well. You'll be bound to attend some kind of formal events in the future so you ought to have a decent looking suit..."

I glanced at the price tag and took a deep breath. It was an 84000RMB suit. What kind of suit was this? Was it made out of gold threads?

"Wan Er..." I held onto the suit and was a little troubled. I whispered in her ear, "You know that I often get into fights with people, so my clothes

are easily damaged. This kind of clothing is too extravagant for me. If I do end up damaging it, I think I would die. Not only that, I didn't do anything to deserve this, so... I will be very embarrassed..."

Lin Wan Er looked up at me with her teasing eyes, "Oh? Why is your face so thin now, my Xiao Yao ge ge?"

My scruffy face blushed red.

Lin Wan Er reached out and pushed me inside the dressing room. Following behind me, she entered and locked the door. She stood gleefully with her arms crossed, while the ample 34D were in front of me. I nearly suffocated as I forgot to breathe. She paid no heed and said, "Change into the suit. I want to see if it fits you."

I was a little embarrassed, "Turn around..."

"I don't want to..."

"Why?"

"You've seen me once, so are you saying I can't watch you?" The beautiful girl blushed.

I was speechless. Slowly removing the casual jacket, there was a white dress shirt inside. Right as I took off the jacket, Lin Wan Er immediately cried in alarm, "Ah..."

"What's wrong, Wan Er?"

Lin Wan Er walked up to me and unbuttoned the top two buttons on my shirt. As a result, the wound on my chest appeared before her eyes. The claw wound on my shoulder was the most serious, because it looked the most wretched of all the scars.

As her soft hands gently touched the wound, Lin Wan Er's shoulders trembled. She looked up at me with bloodshot eyes, "What happened? Tell me...who injured you like this?"

My heart shook as I looked at her worrying face and I could not help but feel sorry as well. Shaking my head, I smilingly said, "It's alright. Doesn't even hurt anymore. Wan Er...don't look at me like this, I..."

Wan Er trained her eyes on me as tears dripped down her cheeks, “What do you mean it doesn’t hurt? You idiot... Don’t think I don’t know. My dad had called me this morning and told me all about what happened last night... I’ll...I’ll go beg Wang Xin and ask him to let you go. Don’t fight with those inhuman things anymore, ok? I don’t...I don’t want you to...”

As she spoke, she choked with sobs.

My heart ached, but I supported her shoulder and looked into her eyes. Earnestly explained, “Wan Er, this is my destiny. I, Li Xiao Yao, have dedicated my whole life to justice. For a lifetime, I’ve always wanted to fight for the weak. It doesn’t matter if I am a cop or a soldier, I still want to fight for the innocent people in the world. My abilities have destined me to always stand in the frontlines. It’s destined that I can’t enjoy a peaceful life.”

Lifting my hand, I brushed away the tears on her face while my heart ached.

Lin Wan Er’s body lightly shook and threw off my hand. Taking a step back, she looked me in the eye and said, “I don’t care what your destiny is, but you must promise me. No matter what you’ll be going out to do, you must come back alive...”

I took a deep breath and nodded, “Okay, I promise you. I will always come back to you alive, regardless of where and when!”

“Okay...” Lin Wan Er sat powerlessly down on the seat in the corner. Lowering her head to wipe off the rest of her tears, she said, “Change your clothes...”

“Yes...”

.....

After changing into the suit, I walked out of the dressing room with Lin Wan Er behind me.

Outside, Dong Cheng Yue stood fuming as she complained, “Great. You guys heartlessly left me outside. You two are truly loyal friends, sob sob...”

Lin Wan Er grasped Dong Cheng's hand and comforted her, "Don't be angry Dong Cheng...I just had something to talk about with Li Xiao Yao..."

"Don't you mean something to do?"

Dong Cheng Yue's mouth curved into a smirk, "Sigh... Just 7 minutes? What can I say for you, Xiao Yao? Only a short 7 minutes. Not even because taking off clothes and putting them back on would take at least 3 minutes. A mere 4 minutes... Can you really give Wan Er happiness in the future?"

My face turned green, "What 4 minutes? Why don't I understand what you're talking about..."

"Stop pretending!"

"...."

Dong Cheng Yue looked me over again and softly chuckled, "But I got to say, this outfit is actually pretty good looking. Don't move for a second..."

"Eh?"

Under my astonished gaze, Dong Cheng Yue walked next to me and reached out to hold onto my arm. Lifting up her heels, she intimately leaned onto my chest and gave me a peck on the cheek. At the same time, she raised her cellphone and snapped a picture. Looking down on her phone afterwards, she rejoiced, "Wow, I finally got the picture that I wanted the most..."

Lin Wan Er was speechless, "This fellow... so this is as far as you'll get in life?"

Dong Cheng Yue giggled, "Wan Er, if you don't want Xiao Yao in the future, remember to give me a call. I'll fly over as fast as possible to take him. This man, only you are allowed to take him from me. You have to remember that..."

Lin Wan Er was at a loss for words, "Okay, I'll do that..."

Nearby, the female clerk had a green face, "Wow, lady-killer, you are really lucky. To have two beautiful girls fighting for you..."

I looked at her and sighed, “You just don’t know if they could be vying for the chance to beat me when we get back!”

Clerk: “.....”

.....

After buying the clothes, the three of us dined at a nearby restaurant.

“Oh, that’s right. Do you two know anything about what Wang Ze Cheng is doing?” I looked up at the two girls before me.

Lin Wan Er asked in surprise, “About what?”

Dong Cheng Yue said, “I heard that Wang Ze Cheng’s ID is Cang Cheng. Looks like he wants to connect himself with Wan Er and I. For the last two days, he sent out several lackies to buy Devil Tokens to trade for large sums of experience. The price of Devil Tokens was pushed up to the ten thousands. I heard that Wang Ze Cheng spent a total of 11 million RMB to buy about 1400+ Bounty Tokens. He had almost bought out the whole market and finally raised himself to Lv 60 for the 3rd advancement...”

I nodded, “Not only that, Wang Ze Cheng joined [Hero Mound] and was said that Q-Sword would give him an important position. What are your opinions on this?”

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips, “I’ll hold back my opinion.”

Dong Cheng Yue was speechless, “That annoying fly Wang Ze Cheng. He just keeps trying to stay around our Wan Er...”

I laughed, “In any case, Wang Ze Cheng joining [Hero Mound] has no conflict with [Zhan Long], so I don’t really mind it.”

.....

Right at that moment, Lin Wan Er’s phone rang. After listening for a few seconds, she hung up while her face grew ghastly pale.

“What’s wrong, Wan Er?” I asked.

Lin Wan Er clenched her fist, “That was Q-Sword. He said he handed

[Hero Mound]'s First Division to Cang Cheng. Furthermore, Cang Cheng will be leading the First Division to settle in Ba Huang City in an hour. [Hero Mound] is starting their plan to expand to the other two main cities. He asked Dong Cheng and I to lead the main guild's team of 200 to accompany the First Division enter Ba Huang City. After which, we'll have to help them successfully settle down in Ba Huang City..."

"Bang!"

Dong Cheng Yue pounded her fist on the table in anger, "Is Q-Sword's brain dead? He let Wang Ze Cheng take charge of the First Division? And he wants to settle in Ba Huang City? Where...where did they decide to settle down?"

Lin Wan Er replied pensively, "Magic Tracking Forest. It neighbors [Zhan Long]'s Qilin Valley and probably takes about 10 minutes to travel between the two location."

Dong Cheng Yue looked at me and asked smugly, "Do you still think Wang Ze Cheng's First Division won't have conflicts with [Zhan Long]?"

"You...what do you plan on doing?" Lin Wan Er looked at me and asked.

.....

"Pa..."

Lightly placing my cup onto the table, I indifferently said, "Why would I allow anyone to run free in my backyard? If they want to station their base in Magic Tracking Forest, then they will have to pardon [Zhan Long] when it attacks Hero Mound's First Division!"

Chapter 264: Doesn't Look Like A Bad Person

7 at night, I finally got back online! In the game, I could rest my body and recover my wounds; it also allowed me to manage the guild after being away for so long.

.....

“Swoosh!”

Appearing in Ba Huang City, as soon as I got online, I heard a “Di” sound. It was Yue Qing Qian’s news, “Brother Xiao Yao, [Hero Mound]’s influence is already beginning to spread towards Ba Huang City; do you know about this?”

“Yea, I know!”

“What do you plan to do?”

“Let everyone continue to concentrate on grinding levels while sending a few Assassins and Archers to scout the boundaries of Qilin Valley and Magic Tracking Forest. Once [Hero Mound] makes any moves, we will immediately respond in kind!”

“Then, what about our more detailed battle plans?”

“Take the initiative to attack and occupy Magic Tracking Forest!”

“Hehe, I love this charm of brother Xiao Yao, I’ll go make arrangements now~~”

“Good.”

.....

I repaired my equipment and walked around in Ba Huang City. Hearing some shouts, I quickly walked over to the potion selling area and found a 50 or so year old uncle with a stall. His ID was “Head of Medicine King Valley” and was yelling: “Level 7 health potions, recovers 1400 health. Only 1 G each. Level 8 health potions, recovers 2000 health. 5 G each. If

you want them, come quickly; the materials are very expensive and there are only 121 Lv 7 potions and 20 Lv 8 potions!”

I walked up and asked: “Uncle, I’ll take 20 Lv 8 potions. How about a discount?”

Head of Medicine King Valley looked at me and was stunned: “Eh... why does this young man look so familiar? Oh, Ba Huang City’s number two player, Xiao Yan Zi Zai? The Guild Master of [Zhan Long]. Ah someone famous....”

I looked above me, dammit, I was only gone for one day and Jian Feng Han was first again... This guy probably also bought Devil Tokens, but the price for each level in Devil Tokens was way too high for us high leveled players and there weren’t many either way. Otherwise, we’d all be Lv 70 by now. He probably killed a few bosses.

“Uh... How much of a discount?” I continued to ask while smiling.

Head of Medicine King Valley laughed; “A top 30 CBN player, I’ll give you a 30% discount. 70 G for all of them. In addition, when I’m out in the maps, if [Zhan Long] friends could take care of me, it’d be great. As a solo player, I don’t want to get PKed every day...”

I smiled: “Alright, 70 G then. Thank you. However, why don’t you join [Zhan Long]? We need more people....”

He smiled: “Actually, [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Flying Dragon] have all invited me before, but

I declined all of them. Ba Huang City’s situation is way too complex and if I have the [Zhan Long] emblem, can you promise that I won’t get PKed by [Vanguard] or [Flying Dragon]? Yeah, that’s why for me, someone who goes into the most desolate places, a single player life is better. Once I get dragged into guild fights, then I’d be useless very soon...”

I smiled while nodding: “Ah, I’ll respect your decision. If you ever want to join [Zhan Long], all you need to do is find me. Can I add you as a friend?”

“Of course, it’d be an honor!”

.....

After adding Head of Medicine King Valley as a friend, I paid him 70 gold coins for 20 Lv 8 potions, the kind that recovered 2000 health, which was about half of my health. In addition, I bought a couple of Lv 7 potions. My mana potions were all Lv 7, they could restore 1000 mana, which was enough for a melee player like me. Of course, I wanted to make Lv 8 mana pills which would bring me riches, as well as more mana, during fights.

“Guild Master!”

A shout came from behind me. It was General Li Mu, General Wang Jian and their team. General Li Mu had the emblem of being an elder in [Zhan Long]. He would never accept being our Vice Guild Master but even though that was the case, everyone in [Zhan Long] knew General Li Mu’s position in the guild. He was pretty much a Vice Guild Master and was completely in control of the Valiant Camp.

“Yes!” I turned around to face Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi and Lian Po, “You’ve all arrived eh?”

“We have...” Li Mu crossed his arms and leaned against the city wall. “[Hero Mound] has sent their first division inside Ba Huang City and starting today, Ba Huang City will have some of [Hero Mound]’s players. How can we not treat this situation carefully? We came over to see exactly what area [Hero Mound]’s first division is trying to get their hands on.”

Closing his eyes, Wang Jian said, “I’ve heard that they are trying to get a foothold in Magic Tracking Forest, but I don’t know if that’s true or not.”

Lian Po said, “Magic Tracking Forest is where [Blood Contract] and its 200 players gather to train. If [Hero Mound] wants to enter Magic Tracking Forest, then they will definitely get into a fight with [Blood Contract]. Hmph, things will get pretty noisy soon; although Han Bei Song looks undisciplined, he is wild in nature. If he gets annoyed, then [Blood Contract] will be out for blood.”

I leaned against the wall and laughed, “We don’t need Han Bei Song to

make the first move. Magic Tracking Forest is right next to our Qilin Valley, and [Blood Contract] is an ally guild. We can endure this for now but if [Hero Mound] enters Magic Tracking Forest, then [Zhan Long] won't put up with it. If [Blood Contract] doesn't make a move, then [Zhan Long] will. And if [Hero Mound] tries to enter Qilin Valley, we will kill however many people that try to!"

Li Mu made a fist and smiled, "Guild Master's thoughts are exactly the same as mine. We can't be weak, this is a demonstration of power from [Hero Mound]. People have been saying that the first division's leader Cang is from the 'Cang' clan; he couldn't possibly be related to Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and Cang Lei, right?"

I shook my head, "There's no need to consider that. Wan Er and Dong Cheng might come over with the first division but once the first division starts a skirmish, the two of them definitely won't attack us. I have faith in them."

Wang Jian laughed, "Alright, if the two beautiful maidens Dong Cheng and Cang Tong don't make a move, [Zhan Long] will have a success rate of at least 60%!"

Lian Po couldn't help but be the rational voice, "You brats shouldn't look down on others, the first division of [Hero Mound] was established a week before we were and are already at a guild level of 4 with 3000 people around. The average number of players online at any given time is about 2000, while we only have 1000 people online at a time. The gap between our numbers is quite big...And, [Hero Mound] won't be like [Vanguard] and underestimate us..."

I nodded, "Yeah, what Lian Po said is correct. We must fight all out and join with [Blood Contract]. Together, our two guilds will crush the first division of [Hero Mound]!"

Bai Qi resentfully said, "I had thought that we, [Zhan Long], were already unrivaled. I hadn't imagined that....a mere division could pretty much make us suffer that much..."

I shot a glance at him and laughed, "Bai Qi, you're quite greedy. Don't

you know what [Hero Mound] stands for? They are China's second ranking guild for 6 consecutive years and their title isn't just for show. Our [Zhan Long] isn't all that bad, we have a foothold now at the very least. We definitely won't be as weak as we could be..."

Li Mu roared with laughter, "Of course. After the dissolution of [Valiant Bravery], I don't even want to have those memories again!"

Lian Po said, "In around another hour or so, all of [Hero Mound]'s first division will be in Ba Huang City. The first thing they'll do are to go and receive Ba Huang City's Buff, heal up and then go to Magic Tracking Forest. We all still have work to be done! Guild Master, you already know what to do, no need for me to remind you, right?"

I laughed gently, "Yeah, diplomacy before force. We'll do some investigating first. If anything, we'll be the righteous ones."

Lian Po laughed as well, "Yes, you truly are a smart Guild Master!"

"It's because I have you elders from Valiant Bravery that I can be rest assured. As they say, it is a treasure that one's family has an elder.

"You're ridiculing us..."

"I'm not, you're thinking too much!!"

"You definitely are!"

"Do you want to fight?"

"Forget it, I don't want to bother with the small fries..."

"....."

.....

After waiting for an hour, our group of people stood at the walls of Ba Huang City. In the distance, towards the direction of Fan Shu City, a group of players with golden emblems on their shoulder emerged from the forest; it was the color of Fan Shu City. The group of people were also wearing the same guild emblems with a blood red battle axe on them. Seeing this emblem would cause countless amount of players in the chinese server to panic, as it was the emblem of [Hero's Mound]. As the

guild name suggests, under the command of Q-Sword, [Hero's Mound] crushed the dreams of many heroic players who crossed their path. It was only because of this was [Hero's Mound] able to compete with the number one guild, [Legends].

Within the group, the Lv 61 fully equipped Knight Cang Cheng stepped forward. In his right hand was an Emperor Tier Piercing Mountain Spear and in his left, an Emperor Tier Soul Fortress Shield. If he put 2 stat points into toughness, 2 into health and 6 into strength every time he leveled, with his overpowered equipments worth at least tens of thousands of RMB, his defense should be at least 2500, beating that of [Vanguard]'s Fushen Thousand Blade, Don't Be Foolish, and Goodbye Tears.

Wang Jian moved closer and whispered: "Brother Xiao Yao, if I said Cang Cheng's defense is 2900, would you believe it?"

I nodded, "I believe it! All of his equipment pretty much focuses on defense. With Ba Huang City's, Jiu Li City's, and Fan Shu City's overpowered Emperor Tier equipment combined, having 2900 defense is pretty normal."

Li Mu gasped, "F*ck, 2900 defense, add that with a Knight's Defensive Stance and his equipment's extra buffs, it should be at least 6000 points of defense, who would be able to cut him down?"

The Emperor Qin's sword behind me emitted a light sound, and I smiled, "Don't worry, there's definitely a person that can cut him down!"

.....

At that moment, Cang Cheng led a group of people to approach us. I brought the four generals and a few dozen [Zhan Long] members to the city entrance. Cang Cheng glanced at me and suddenly a bright smile spread across his face, "Ah, isn't this Li Xiao Yao? You really are a high-level expert stationed at Ba Huang City; you're even Ba Huang City's number two player. To be able to meet you here is great. Later when we go offline, should we grab drinks together?"

I coolly laughed: "Sure, I'm game if you're paying!"

Amazed, Bai Qi whispered in my ear: “This Cang Cheng does not look like a bad person right?”

I could not help but laugh and say: “One must look deeply to determine one’s character.....”

Chapter 265: Who Can Break Through The Defense?

“Ah....”

Wang Ze Cheng shouted in shock as he saw the emblem on my shoulder, “It turns out...it turns out that you are the legendary [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master! Heavens, I never knew....Li Xiao Yao, you were actually so formidable in the game! [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master...I heard a few days ago you even defeated Ba Huang City’s number one guild [Vanguard]. So amazing....”

I remained calm and collected, “It was only luck.”

Behind me, General Li Mu narrowed his eyes, smiling, “Cang Cheng, you’ve brought along [Hero Mound]’s first division to Ba Huang City, isn’t this implying that [Hero Mound] is taking the first step to conquer the three main cities?”

“No, no it isn’t like that. You’ve misunderstood...” Wang Ze Cheng smiled as he explained, “Actually, the reason the first division has come to Ba Huang City is not because of conquering or anything. We’re pretty much an adventure team, with the goal of exploring the famous major cities and its deep mysteries. After all, [Destiny]’s map is really too large, there are still many things that [Hero Mound] doesn’t know about. Therefore, we came to Ba Huang City, to leave our mark here, that way we won’t have any regrets....”

Li Mu couldn’t help laughing, “Actually, leaving behind a corpse works too....”

As soon as Li Mu said these words, the surrounding players in Ba Huang City immediately all inhaled sharply; this was clearly a provocation! However, I approved of Li Mu’s words; battling was unavoidable. I could feel it in my bones that Wang Ze Cheng had actually come to Ba Huang City to fight us. I wasn’t an expert in playing with words; I only liked to use my sword to speak.

“This...I don’t understand your meaning....” Wang Ze Cheng looked towards the inner city, then said to the guild members behind him, “Let’s go, we should report to the city’s ruler....”

At this time, a Berserker behind Wang Ze Cheng carrying a battle axe shouted angrily, “Peh, who does [Zhan Long] think they are, daring to bare their teeth at us here? Dammit, we’ve been giving you face by nicely talking to you guys; did you really think that you were something?”

This guy wore the Vice Guild Master emblem. Walker in the Wind, the Vice Guild Master of the first division that was once the Guild Master of the first division. He was a third advancement Berserker and probably had decent equipment. Otherwise, he would not be as arrogant as he was.

Li Mu immediately unsheathed his sword, indifferently saying, “What, Walker in the Wind, do you want to taste some of my swordplay?”

Who was Li Mu; he was someone that was consistently ranked within Ba Huang City’s top ten experts. He definitely wouldn’t pay attention to the opposite party’s provocation.

Walker in the Wind roared in anger, throwing his battle axe towards Li Mu!

Li Mu smiled, slightly lowered his body and directly charged forwards with the blade of his sword!

“KaCha!”

1877 !

Walker in the Wind’s body shook, and more than half his health depleted; terror-stricken, he did not dare to move again. Li Mu leaned his body forward, his sharp sword directly charging towards Wang Ze Cheng’s neck. That fellow, he was obviously much more rash than I was; wouldn’t this be directly getting rid of [Heroes Mound]’s first division’s leader?

In that instant, Wang Ze Cheng smirked and reacted lightning fast. He suddenly pushed his shield forwards, and with a “bang”, sparks burst forth, sending Li Mu back a few steps. This knockback showed the

difference between Wang Ze Cheng's defense and strength to Li Mu's pure strength!

Using his right hand to lunge the spear forward, Wang Ze Cheng's [Flame Blade] went towards General Li Mu's chest. Li Mu's body was originally falling backward, causing him to be unable to dodge at all. He could only take the attack straight on!

.....

"Sha sha....."

My Purple Dawn Boots slid over the city's brick path as I walked forward. With the lift of my hand, Emperor Qin's Sword was already within my grasp. With a light flick of my wrist, the blade of Emperor Qin's Sword blocked Wang Ze Cheng's Spear. At that moment, a "Keng" rang out and I struck the spear away. I lifted my boots and kicked right at Wang Ze Cheng's abdomen!

"Bang!"

Wang Ze Cheng's in-game control was very good and he ducked to block my kick with his shield. His body was only slightly shocked, causing him to move backwards a step. The 2900+ defense was not just for looks!

I didn't give any signs of stopping and advanced forward. Fast as lightening, I slashed with [Wind Blade] aiming right at Wang Ze Ceng's shield. I wanted to see whether or not my attack could penetrate his defense!

Wang Jian, Li Mu and others all tightened their fists, waiting for the outcome of this slash.

.....

"Keng!"

Wang Ze Ceng immediately put up his shield, clutching it close to his chest. He entered into a defensive stance and activated [Heaven's Shield]. Third advancement Knights had this skill that drastically increased their defense power while decreasing magic damage by 70%. The only problem

with [Heaven's Shield] was that their speeds would be decreased by 50%, but that was nothing since Knights generally didn't need speed in the first place.

My blade grew cold as I slashed with a Lv 7 [Wind Blade] right onto [Heaven's Shield]!

"Keng!"

A gust blew over the grass and a green ray of light fell upon myself. The superior strike appeared and the strike blew Wang Ze Cheng several steps backward along with a very large damage number

2447 !

.....

"Crap!"

Wind Walker's face paled: "This...how could an attack give Boss two thousand damage to Boss' 2900 defense along with [Heaven's Shield]? This..... this Xiao Yao Zi Zai, is he even human?"

I smiled inwardly; they seemed to have forgotten that my Emperor Qin's Sword could decrease defense by 25%. If 2900 defense was decreased by 25%, how much could be left? On top of that, my 3700+ attack power was already above his 2900 defense! He might have been fully equipped with defense, but I was also equipped fully with attack. Who's afraid of who now?

Wang Ze Cheng retreated a few steps and stabilized his shield while he stood his spear up. He looked at me, saying with surprise: "Li XiaoYao, this must be a misunderstanding. Wind Walker, Li Mu, both of you should calm down a bit. We, [Hero's Mound], did not come to look for trouble....."

I lightly smiled, and raised Emperor Qin's sword, lightly saying: "Whether you came here looking for trouble or not, I want to make it clear, [Hero's Mound] can stay in Ba Huang City and [Zhan Long] will welcome you. However, if [Hero's Mound] wants to make this their Guild HQ right next to [Zhan Long] in Magic Tracking Forest, I apologize, but [Zhan Long] will never agree. If you guys take even one step in Magic

Tracking Forest, [Zhan Long] will definitely attack with all our might, even if we had to do whatever it takes. We will never let [Hero's Mound] come to Ba Huang City to threaten our guilds!"

That short speech had caused all of Ba Huang City's inhabitant give a standing ovation. It was clear, everyone did not have a good feeling about this foreign alliance with [Hero's Mound].

As I was talking, I stepped backwards, saying: "Li Mu, Wang Jian, lets make way, allowing them to enter Ba Huang City. We aren't tyrants, and we can't control the actions of other people."

Li Mu nodded: "Okay!"

.....

At this moment, another beautiful girl arrived. It was our Vice Guild Master, Yue Qing Qian. She blinked a few times and smiled: "Brother Xiao Yao, shall we post this on the forums?"

"Sure!"

I nodded, and went onto the chinese server forums and made a post-

【Fighting (Poster: Xiao Yao Zi Zai)】: Informing the leader of [Hero Mound]-Q-Sword!

"I heard CBN's rank two guild, [Hero Mound] has entered Ba Huang City. Of course, the players of Ba Huang City welcome them...the boundaries of the city are very large and each of the guilds have already occupied a training area as their base. In order to avoid conflicts with other guilds, [Zhan Long] has established themselves within the Qilin Valley. However, [Hero Mound]'s First Division insists on establishing themselves in the Magic Tracking Forest, right next to the Qilin Valley. There's a saying that goes: "If a stranger snores next to you, even if he is kind, you would not hesitate in killing him". With this, I hope that Guild Master Q-Sword can change the area of the First Division's establishment. However, if you insist on having the Magic Tracking Forest as the First Division's training area, I will see this as a challenge against us. With this [Zhan Long] will attack. I hope that Guild Master

Q-Sword will think twice about it.”

.....

In a flash, the post grew more popular. Not long after, Yue Qing Qian and Li Mu voiced their opinions with the post, causing it to grow even hotter. Anyone would be excited, since this was the precursor to a battle.

【1st Post (Player Yue Qing Qian)】: Right, [Zhan Long] isn't looking to provoke or bully anyone, but if [Hero Mound] wants to fight, then they'll get a fight!

【2nd Post (Player Li Mu)】: I truly hope that Guild Master Q-Sword will think twice before continuing on with his plan!

【3rd Post (Player Dancing Forest)】: Eh, judging from this situation, will there really be a fight?

.....

【11th Post (Player Yan Zhao Warrior)】: Ha...provoking [Zhan Long]? [Hero Mound] has chosen the wrong person to fight, [Zhan Long] is a hard bone to break...”

【12th post (Player Jian Feng Han)】: This.... Will there be something exciting to watch soon?

【37th Post (Player Cang Tong)】: I don't wish to see [Hero Mound] and [Zhan Long] to engage in any sort of battle....

【38th Post (Player Cang Yue)】: I too don't wish for this...

.....

【101 Post (Player Simple)】: If [Hero Mound] truly wishes to enter Magic Tracking Forest, then they really will provoke [Zhan Long] and [Blood Contract]. I simply cannot understand why Q-Sword would want something like that to happen!

【102nd Post (Player Wolf Totem)】: I've already prepared 1000 [Zhan Long] elites. Come if you want. The Magic Training Forest is an excellent PK location, the mad men of [Hero Mound] needs to know where they stand.

【103rd Post (Player Hero Ran Min)】: Let's fight then!

.....

【207th Post (Player Drunken Spear)】: Hehe, looks like something exciting is finally about to happen. The high and mighty Q-Sword against the tenacious yet unbending Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Hehe, I'm actually rooting for Xiao Yao Zi Zai this time. Hopefully Guild Master doesn't see this...

【209th Post (Player Soaring Dragon)】:

.....

We had waited for a whole half hour and Q-Sword had made no response to the hottest post on the forums. It seemed as though he had decided to hide from all of the controversy. At that moment, Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue both brought a few, hundred men teams. Within those teams there were quite a few that I recognized. In fact, they were all friends of the two girls and weren't necessarily loyal to [Hero's Mound]. When the time comes and the two girls say a single sentence, they will switch from bearing the battle axe of [Hero's Mound] to the Dragon Emblem of [Zhan Long].

"What is the situation like?" Wan Er asked as she lifted her daggers and gracefully walked over

I smirked, "Let's wait to see how Wang Ze Cheng will respond..."

"Sure, I'll just wait by your side...."

"Okay!"

.....

After a while, 1800+ players from [Hero's Mound]'s first division had arrived at Ba Huang City gates. Wang Ze Cheng lifted his Spear and Soul Fortress Shield as he grinned, thrusting the spear in the South West direction, yelling: "Let's set off! We'll follow the guild master's orders and advance towards Magic Tracking Forest. That undiscovered map will belong to us, [Hero's Mound]!"

"Keng!"

Li Mu had already unsheathed his sword, “Wow, do they really want to fight against our [Zhan Long]?!”

Chapter 266: Initiate the Attack

“General Li Mu, wait!”

I rested my hand on his sword’s sheath: “Ba Huang City is a public map, not our territory. Attacking here would be very harmful to us. Besides, we only have a handful of people.”

Yue Qing Qian’s eyes wandered into the distance: “By the look of things, Cang Cheng is set on becoming our enemy.”

General Wang Jian asked: “Then what should we do?”

“Go to Green Qilin Valley. There are no hopes for us to grind now. We’ll fight against [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division to the end!”

“Alright!”

.....

Yue Qing Qian and General Li Mu lead dozens of Zhan Long’s high level players towards Qilin Valley. Lifting up my sword, I faced Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue: “Well, there you have it, although Wang Ze Cheng appears to be polite and sincere, his actual goal in Ba Huang City was to destroy the relations between [Zhan Long] and [Hero’s Mound].”

Wan Er smiled: “Yup, I saw. Dong Cheng Yue and I will go with you to Qilin Valley. I want to see just what exactly it is that Wang Ze Cheng is scheming.....”

“Sure!”

.....

The two 100 men teams from [Hero’s Mound] started towards Qilin Valley. With my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I traveled side by side with Wan Er. I knew that the hundred’s of people in the teams were Wan Er’s friends and they would definitely not attack. Heck, if Wan Er were to just give one command, they would immediately defect to [Zhan Long]. With Lin Wan Er’s charisma, getting a hundred high level players to become our strength could be easily achieved.

After around an hour, with rippling winds, the spring like area of the Qilin Valley appeared in front of us. With many seasonal flowers and wild beasts, the Qilin Valley was an exceptional training area. It was only because of this was [Zhan Long] able become a Level 3 guild and approaching Level 4 in a such a short amount of time. This was our only weakness. If [Zhan Long] was a Level 4 Guild, with 3000 members, we would not have to fear [Hero Mound]'s First Division at all.

“Hua!”

At that soft sound, a beautiful shadow appeared in the air. It was our number one Mage, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, carrying her staff, while her shoulders carried the symbol of a team leader, she came over a smiled: “Boss, you finally arrived! Oh..... even Cang Tong, Cang Yue, those two beauties were brought over...Doesn't this hint that we won't be able to fight with [Hero's Mound]?”

Wan Er was unoffended as she said: “Thousand Suns beauty, you are misunderstanding. We are not part of the First Division group. This battle will still most likely start....”

“Uh....” Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands smiled: “Although I don't entirely understand, I somewhat get it. I will immediately go to the border of Qilin Valley to assign people to their proper places and prepare to meet [Hero's Mound]'s First Division in battle.”

I nodded: “Sure, go ahead!”

.....

Wan Er pointed at the distant forest and said “Dong Cheng and I will bring our people there to clean out the monsters. We'll keep an eye out on the map, but.....”

She pouted and said “But right now, we are still [Hero's Mound]'s Vice Guild Master, so we won't be attacking any members of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division. Just thought that I would explain this to you.”

I couldn't help but smile, “That's fine, you not attacking us is already our greatest support. Right now, Q-Sword is acting dumb and I don't want

you to have bad relations with [Hero's Mound]. Wan Er, if Q-Sword really attacks [Zhan Long], what would you do?"

Wan Er looked at me with her beautiful eyes and smiled "Dong Cheng and I will immediately take off our [Hero's Mound] emblem, come to Ba Huang City and join you. How about it?"

I clapped my hands together. "Alright, now this is the result I want. Now our [Zhan Long] will destroy [Hero's Mound]'s First Division without any mercy....."

"Ah."

.....

Jumping into the canyon, I summoned Flaming Tiger God. The tiger suddenly roared, and on top of its head were two large words "Cang Tong". Wan Er stood there in silence. With her snowy long legs, she stomped on the group and angrily said "Li Xiao Yao, you bastard. You really dared to use my name for your Flaming Tiger God. Ugh. Just you wait...."

I pretended that I did not hear her as I brought the Flaming Tiger God into the bush towards the rendezvous point where Old K, Fox and Matcha were at. Li Mu, Yue Qing Qian came as well. Right now, all the officers of [Zhan Long] were gathered under a tall tree.

"[Hero's Mound]'s First Division has started to enter the Magic Tracking Forest....." Yue Qing Qian reported.

Li Mu clenched the hilt of his sword, "Currently in the Magic Tracking Forest, there are about 100 [Blood Contract] members leveling. Han Bei Song is probably anxiously recalling the members who were leveling elsewhere to come to the Magic Tracking Forest to help... But [Crimson Contract] is a Level 3 Guild with only 1000 members. Their average level isn't as high as [Zhan Long], they definitely cannot hold [Hero's Mound] back. Just now, everyone saw when Guild Master and I attacked Cang Cheng. His equipment is very strong and his movements are not too shabby either. He is not weaker than Hang Bei Song at all."

Little Wolf smiled slightly while holding his dagger, “No Problem, There’s also us. How can [Zhan Long] stand still while their friends are being bullied?”

Old K asked, “When do we start attacking?”

“Let’s wait a bit first”

I looked at the map and said “The Magic Tracking Forest is a very complicated map, luckily for us, we are more familiar with it compared to the opponents. Send some Wind Elves to scout around. Gather our elite forces on the west side of the Qilin Valley and wait for command. If nothing goes wrong, the battle should start in half an hour. We have to destroy [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division in one go and show this Cang Cheng kid who’s boss around here.”

“Yeah!”

.....

Around 10 minutes later, the west side of Qilin Valley was filled with 800+ of [Zhan Long]’s elites waiting. It was the hottest time to get online right now so 879 of our 1000 members were online.

“Di!”

A message came from Han Bei Song “Sigh.....”

The long sigh showed how much he despised the situation. I smiled ” Han Bei Song, what’s wrong?”

“Nothing....” He replied with a voice of uncertainty. “I just brought 400+ player to the Frost Lands to fight with a 100 man squad from [Flying Dragons]. I didn’t think that something like this would be happening. It’s like going out with brothers to go grave robbing only to find your wife sleeping with a thief when you come back.”

I replied reassuringly, “Don’t worry. They haven’t slept yet. Don’t jump to conclusions too quickly. With [Zhan Long] here, [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division won’t be able to take over the Magic Tracking Forest so easily.”

Han Bei Song nodded. “Yeah. I have my people at the north side of

Magic Tracking Forest and you have yours on the east side. When [Hero's Mound]' First Division enters, we'll attack them from both sides and turn them all into corpses."

"Yeah, I was thinking of the same thing. How many people do you have right now?"

"Around 1100 that are online"

"Close enough. [Zhan Long] also has around a thousand members. The First Division that Cang Cheng brought has around 2000 members online. We will definitely not lose if our numbers are equal.

"Okay. My people will be ready in around 20 minutes."

"Alright. We'll be needing each others help when we attack."

"Ok!"

.....

A row of silver trees swayed around the borders of Qilin Forest and the Magic Tracking Forest. The wind blew softly as my Cloak of Disillusionment fluttered behind me. With my arms crossed in front of my chest and the server's number one weapon, the Qin Emperor Sword on my back, I looked into the distance "Little Wolf, what is the situation right now?"

Little Wolf replies "They already have around 1000 players enter Magic Tracking Forest to clear out the monsters and train. Brother Xiao Yao, should we start moving?"

"Don't be too hasty. Wait for them to all enter first."

"Okay"

Yue Qing Qian said "Boss, we need some man power in the south entrance as well. That way we'll trap them when they enter Magic Tracking Forest."

I couldn't help but laugh. "I would like to do that as well... But all of [Zhan Long]'s players are right here, a total of 800+ players."

“Actually....”

Beautiful Matcha was sitting on top of her trees rubbing her eyes and laughed: “Actually Boss, this is not all of our members. I forgot to tell you something.....”

“Eh? What is it Matcha?” I asked

Matcha jumped down and landed in front of me, holding her Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul and laughed: “In these 48 hours, I used [Zhan Long]’s name to recruit members from the four gates of Ba Huang City. Leading these members will be Dancing Forest. Right now they are in the south side of Magic Tracking Forest at a total of 1100+ members whose average level is 57.1. Not as high as the Guild Master’s and they did not enter the guild yet. Dancing Forest said that this battle will test the loyalty of these members towards [Zhan Long]!”

I was stunned. “This..... is this for real? Our [Zhan Long] still has 1100+ members extra?”

“Of course Boss....” Matcha said with a smile. “Why do you think I’ve been so busy these two days? I didn’t eat or drink and sat boringly outside the gates to recruit members. You think this is easy? I even made an excel spreadsheet with their contact information, level, equipments and etc. I’ll send you the file in a bit....”

I was overjoyed. I couldn’t help but put my arms around Matcha’s waist, hugged her, and lifted her up. While laughing I said “Great! With Matcha in [Zhan Long] we don’t have to worry about establishing ourselves in Ba Huang City now!”

Matcha blushed but did not struggle and whispered “Boss, everyone is watching.....”

I came back to my senses and hurriedly put her back down and said embarrassingly “Whoops, got excited for a bit and forgot.....”

Little Wolf laughed “No problem. Matcha already likes the boss, she wouldn’t mind at all.....”

Old K grinned “What would happen if I hugged Matcha for a bit?”

Fox shook his head “Die miserably.... Last night I went to the bathroom to take a piss, turned on the lights and saw Matcha in her towels after showering. Ugh.... She grabbed whatever she could and started throwing it at me. It was a fruit knife, good thing it didn’t hit me....”

My face twitched as I looked at Matcha: “Is this true?”

“Ah. It was reflexes...” Matcha smiled “But I didn’t intend to do it....”

“.....”

.....

At this time, a Wind Elf Archer flew here quickly and whispered “Guild Leader, there’s movement from [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division. A bunch of their players started rushing towards us assuming attack formation!”

“Ughhhh”

Li Mu squinting his eyes said “ These kids dare to initiate the attack?”

Chapter 267: 3 Pronged Attack

“[Hero’s Mound] has made the first attack...” I muttered to myself, “There are only two possibilities why. The first reason is that Wang Ze Cheng thinks too highly of himself and thinks that 2000 people are enough to fight against [Zhan Long]. The second reason is that Wang Ze Cheng understands himself and still has a hidden card, but what is [Hero’s Mound]’s hidden card?”

“No use wondering about that now, shall we attack them?” Old K was barely restraining himself from charging in.

I laughed, “Don’t be so hasty; although they took the initiative, we’ll take advantage of this and defend for now. We’ll exploit their frontline’s wide gap in between us and weaken them. After that, we’ll carve our way through to the players still hiding in Magic Tracking Forest.!”

“Okay, I approve of the Boss’ tactics!” Matcha smiled.

Li Mu pulled out his sword, “Alright, then lets do this!”

.....

Off in the distance within the swaying forests, players from [Hero’s Mound] charged from the bushes one by one. Passing through the foliage, I counted around 500 players, with most of them being the Heavy Armor class. There wasn’t a lack of elite players and with a glance, I saw 2 team leaders and 4 flagbearer commanders leading the groups. All four of them were the elites from the First Division of [Hero’s Mound].

“Keng!”

Unsheathing my Emperor Qin’s sword, I roared, “Line up! Prepare to defend while all the Archers prepare to shoot them dead! All Knights, activate your [Defensive Stance]s’!”

“[Multi Shot], [Pillar of Fire & Ice]’s, go!”

Li Mu roared as well, causing the Archers and Mages behind him to activate their skills at the incoming attackers, engulfing them all in gorgeous amounts of firepower. The remaining players that came out

from the assault were already losing their spirits with half their health left, so without further hesitation, I brought the tip of my sword up and yelled as I charged forward!

Right as I was about to make contact with the enemy group, the Emperor Qin's Sword trembled, as the symbolic 7 shooting stars flew out—the SS ranked skill [Seven Star Fragment Slash] was cast! Tearing apart the earth, dozens of players were swallowed up by the attack, scaring the other players with the numbers that rose into the air—

2871 !

3004 !

2774 !

5892 !

.....

Basically, every hit had done over 2500 points of damage; one of them had almost given 6000 points of damage from a superior strike. In a split second the area in front of me became like a vacuum, with players dropping dead, leaving their equipment and medicine behind when they died.

“Haaah?!”

One of the team leaders of [Hero's Mound] went purple in the face as the battle axe in his hand threatened to fall from his hands, “What...what kind of attack strength is this? What kind of expert are we up against?!”

The rest of [Hero's Mound] didn't see the terrible disadvantages of attacking me, and so they continued their assault by rapidly closing in on me!

“Peng peng peng...”

“Keng....”

Strikes against shields and armor were heard constantly as the players of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division continued to fight decently against my group. [Combo]s and [Flame Blade]'s were constantly being used and

even more [Blade Rush]’s were being cast by Swordsmen trying to break through our frontlines. However, the weapons of the Musketeers fired rapidly, shooting dead most of the ones that had tried to rush in. Fox stood with his gun raised, “Do these people really wish to be executed by our firing squad?!”

“Advance!”

After blocking the first wave, Li Mu and Wang Jian began their counterattack with the other 3rd class advanced Swordsmen. Old K was in the middle of the crowd of players, with his Twin Haunted Battle Axe already casting [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash] to pierce through multiple foes. Every so often, he would casually jump back to have Healers cast [Heal]s so that he would not have to fear death. Old K’s way of attacking wasn’t too strong but his mastery of [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash] was that of a battle master, which was enough. All of his enemies had fallen and experienced the taste of dirt!

The Emperor Qin’s Sword flashed, every single stroke practically doing over 3000 points of damage. This attack power of 3700+ was almost too cruel; the damage of this sword could easily be classified as unrivaled. Even the opposing Knights and Monks were being slashed apart with ease like melons; no one stood a chance. It was a terrifying thought for [Hero’s Mound] that after Wang Ze Cheng would be the only person that could withstand one of my attacks.

.....

Not even 10 minutes into the war and the [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division met a strong resistance, so powerful that our frontline defenses hadn’t even lost half our members yet! Around 400 dead corpses littered the ground and the faces of the survivors showed terrible expressions. One of the team leaders lifted his longbow and cried, “Mother f*cker, can we not even break a hole in their frontline defenses? Which idiot was the one that said [Zhan Long] wouldn’t be able to withstand even a single blow?! This was a fool’s quest, what...what should we do now?”

“Continue to kill, the Guild Master’s orders must be carried out. Even if

we all die, we cannot retreat even a single step!"

"Fine, onwards!"

Li Mu whistled on by, activating [Absolute Authority]. With a single chop, the Archer's head fell to the ground. His group had completely fallen to ruins now, while our own losses didn't even go past the double digits and all of them had already been revived. In a few minutes, the opposing 500 players had become corpses that littered the ground layer by layer.

"Hey..."

Old K lifted his battle axe and laughed, "[Hero's Mound]'s First Division, what was that about not being able to withstand a single blow?"

My eyes narrowed, "This isn't right, it went far too easily. Normally...a person as shrewd as Wang Ze Cheng wouldn't give his elite 500 players to us that conveniently, what kind of tactics is this?"

Li Mu asked, "Should we proceed to attack? According to the spies, the rest of their 1700 players are already in the interior of Magic Tracking Forest. Let us go in there to kill them, it's just a nice slab of meat waiting to be cooked!"

I exhaled, "Alright, connect with Han Bei Song, let [Crimson Contract] attack from the north. Dancing Forest will lead the 1100+ members of [Zhan Long] from the south and cut off their means of escape. We will attack from the front; the First Division of [Hero Mound] is over!"

"Good, onwards!"

.....

With Li Mu's command, the Valiant Bravery and Zhan Long camps charged in one by one into the forest. After moving through these woods, we would end up in the open areas within Magic Tracking Forest.

In the sky, Matcha flapped her wings as her beautiful eyes surveyed the ground below, "Boss, why do I feel that this peacefulness is not fitting this situation at all..."

I whispered to her, “Tell them to move slowly and have them send Wind Elves to investigate ahead so that we can avoid any ambushes!”

Li Mu raised his hand, causing 20+ Wind Elves from [Zhan Long] to fly into the air.

However, as these Wind Elves moved ahead above the forests, the sudden noises of arrows and gunfire began. The Wind Elves fell to the ground one by one; it was evident to see that there was an ambush waiting for us. Judging by the amount of firepower, the number of people wasn’t small either!

“F*ck!”

Wang Jian clenched onto his sword, “These [Hero’s Mound] bastards. Sure enough, the initial 500 players were just to spite us. How shameless of them, did they think this type of ambush would be enough to kill off our [Zhan Long]?”

“It’s not going to be just this...” I stated.

As expected, after a few seconds, a large flock of players approached from our south. Their levels couldn’t be considered low and there was no lack of 3rd class advanced players. I counted around 700 players, and their crests were all the exact same on their shoulders; it was the [Mass Burial] guild, Ba Huang City’s 17th guild!

“Onwards!”

Charging ahead of the others was a middle aged man with a scar on his fierce looking face. His hand carried an axe, labeling himself as a Barbarian Berserker. On top of his hand flickered his character information, explaining who he was –

Not Ordinary Lv 61 Golden Berserker

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Mass Burial

Position: Guild Master

.....

“F*ck, what situation is this? How did these people get here and why is [Mass Burial] fighting against us?”

Up ahead, a Lv 60 flagbearer Berserker from [Zhan Long] lifted his axe as he approached and roared, “Hey, friends! What is the meaning of this? There are no conflicts between [Zhan Long] and [Mass Burial], so why are you attacking us in this way?!”

Not Ordinary had a cruel smile on his face. He quickened his pace, and activated his innate skill—[Rampage]. His movements increased by at least 30% and with a simple sidestep, he activated [Flame Blade] and [Sky Shaker Slash] to completely devastate our own Berserker officer. His attack speed was almost alarming and when he activated his innate skill, it had shown that it ignores 15% of the enemy’s defenses!

My brain was in a frenzy, what kind of innate skill was this?!

“What is this situation?!”

Li Mu raised his sword and roared, “What is [Mass Burial]?”

I raised my Emperor Qin’s sword and growled, “Don’t worry about who, everyone from the [Zhan Long] group, follow me, and we’ll carve a path forward. Kill these bastards from [Mass Burial]!”

Old K, Fox, Yue Qing Qian, and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Fields charged forward with me, while Matcha dropped down from the sky as her [Phantom Ray Slash] hit Not Ordinary on his shoulder!

1528 !

Her attack power wasn’t bad, but all Not Ordinary did was abruptly swing his axe down with a “bang” and the shock sent Matcha backwards a few steps. The more frightening part was—dozens of people behind Not Ordinary began to activate [Rampage]s one by one. With their increased speeds, swords, daggers, and spears essentially all simultaneously attacked Matcha’s shield. Despite her [Phantom Holy Shield] she was forced back further and further while her health quickly depleted. Motherf*cker, what kind of attack power was this?

“Shua!”

+1050 !

I directed a Lv 7 [Heal] at Matcha as I used [Seven Star Fragment Slash] directly at the middle of the enemy group!

“Bang!”

4 players were killed while the rest were on the verge of death. Old K and Cang Lei immediately took advantage of this and charged in with the rest of the [Zhan Long] group. However, right before our eyes, these same players somehow all cast 【Broken Slaughter】s and 【Rampage】s, causing their movements and attack powers to increase drastically. Our men weren't able to defend against them, and soon after, our losses were equally matched; both of us were equally hurt!

.....

“Huacha!”

My sword chopped through another Swordsman's stomach as I followed up with [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. My Flaming Tiger God was using [Burstfire Raid] to kill, along with [Fierce Roar], killing dozens of people. Looking at our situation, it was almost favorable but I looked at [Mass Burial]'s leader, Not Ordinary, and roared, “Not Ordinary, what is the meaning of this?”

Not Ordinary laughed, his battle axe killing one of the Archers from [Zhan Long]. “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we are for sure enemies. I don't see you in a good light and really want to extinguish [Zhan Long], is that enough reason for you?!”

“Shua!”

With a single strike, Yue Qing Qian appeared behind Not Ordinary and immediately stunned him, then used [Twin Harmony Strike]!

1894 !

Standing above his dying corpse, the beautiful girl stood above the pool of blood and replied, “And how did you plan on extinguishing [Zhan Long] by yourself?”

.....

Looking at the scattered players from [Mass Burial], Wolf gnashed at his teeth, “Brother Xiao Yao, was this Wang Ze Cheng’s trump card?”

I shook my head, “I don’t know...”

The next moment, battle cries could be heard from behind us as [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division’s heavy armor players made a surprise attack from that sides, bringing [Zhan Long] to be sandwiched!

Matcha bit her lips in frustration, “Crap, [Hero’s Mound] hired 50+ Wind Elf Healers and already resurrected the players we just killed. How despicable, they sacrificed a level to box us in!”

I brandished my sword, knocking back a Knight. “This is the real side to Cang Cheng, a smart but crooked scum of a person!”

Chapter 268: Lin Wan Er's Decision

The leaves of the forest swayed in the air as a spear carrying player leapt out. He had expensive armor on with a shield that had an orange glow. This was the leader of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division—Wang Ze Cheng!

“Move on forward, step by step, use the scorched earth tactics!” Wang Ze Cheng held onto his Spear and laughed, “Archers, use your [Scatter Shot]'s while the Mages cast [Pillars of Ice & Fire]. The Musketeers should be casting [Bombardment]s, don't give them a chance to resurrect! Today, we will let [Zhan Long] know who the real rulers are! We will let them know that they are powerless to stop us from entering Magic Tracking Forest!”

The sounds of gunfire rang out as the frontline of [Zhan Long] fell to the floor dead, with no chance to resurrect, due to the heavy onslaught from the thousand long ranged players hiding throughout the forest. Wang Ze Cheng had fought nearly an entire battle with only long ranged players; this type of tactic was truly smart, but also extraordinarily brazen of him.

.....

“Boom...”

[Pillars of Ice & Fire] struck, causing Matcha to continuously retreat due to the consecutive blows. Her [Phantom Holy Shield] was protecting her, while her beautiful eyes stared at me with concern, “Boss, we're surrounded. At this rate, we'll all be dead soon; what should we do?”

I bit my lips in anger, “Don't worry, we'll first have to kill the people from [Mass Burial]. All of the players there are Berserkers and they don't have a single Healer. If they die, then they're gone. Let our Healers stay alive and have them cast [Resurrect] immediately after our members. No one should be treasuring their levels at this point since we can earn them back later. If we fail to protect this place, [Zhan Long] will lose its foothold in Ba Huang City!”

“Okay!”

“Shua...”

As the frontlines were constantly being revived, the [Zhan Long] group members had already 200 deaths. With their rapid resurrections, they picked up their equipment once more and continued to fight. After some time, the players from [Mass Burial] were getting fewer and fewer in number. Over 700 players had died already and [Zhan Long] was slowly regaining our rhythm again.

“Brother Xiao Yao, fight with me. We have to kill the Vice Guild Master of [Mass Burial]; he’s that Knight over there...” Yue Qing Qian’s voice came calling from the party chat.

I looked off into the distance. A Lv 61 Knight was standing in the middle of a crowd, killing people with his spear. His shoulder had the symbol of [Mass Burial] on it and above his name showed the ID: Bloody Blade. While fighting, he called out, “Don’t retreat even a single step, continue to keep up the attack. The Guild Master will immediately have our fallen brothers revive and our main mission is to cut off [Zhan Long]’s main core group! As long as we are here to bite at their heels, [Hero’s Mound] will quickly purge the other group of theirs!”

Yue Qing Qian held daggers in both her hands as she slunk downwards. She snuck behind Bloody Blade and then activated her ambush skill: [Gouge]+[Twin Harmony Strike], but Bloody Blade unfortunately had over 6000 health! A single swing of his spear sent Yue Qing Qian flying back with blood spurting out of her shoulder!

“Pa!”

With another stun and shearing off 1000 points of damage, I ran forward to take advantage of the opportunity. I activated my skill from a decent way away-[Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Huacha!”

The edge of my blade pierced through the vice leader’s stomach, causing a big number to float upwards-2329!

Bloody Blade let out a miserable cry as he fell to the ground while his fellow guild players paled. They probably hadn't expected that under such a brutal attack, [Zhan Long] would actually still be so fierce and lethal.

.....

“Sha...”

The forest leaves shuddered. In a flash, another group of high-leveled players came charging out of the forest, with a beautiful young lady leading. She carried an iron umbrella on her back and held an orange dagger in one hand. Her snowy white face made everyone initially believe she was an original inhabitant of the forests. With an elegant face, she stared into the distance, “Wang Ze Cheng, that's enough from you!”

That's right, the person that came was none other than Wan Er. By her side was Dong Cheng Yue, with another 200 elites from [Hero's Mound].

Wang Ze Cheng came up with his Piercing Mountain Spear and looked at Wan Er with shock, “What's wrong, Wan Er?”

Wan Er was angry, “Immediately renounce your attack on [Zhan Long]; [Hero's Mound] didn't plan on expanding our numbers in an area like this. Your actions are already in violation of our guild's original intentions. Not only that, but [Zhan Long] is a friend of [Hero's Mound], not an enemy. The only thing you are doing right now is forcing Q-Sword into a heartless and unfair situation!”

“Wan Er...”

Wang Ze Cheng bit his lips, “The honored Guild Master approved of me leading the First Division, and I, Wang Ze Cheng, has what it takes to lead it. This time, the Guild Master gave us orders to bring everyone to enter Ba Huang City's interior and then into Magic Tracking Forest. But once I got here, [Zhan Long] brazenly attacked us first, leaving me with no other options but to counterattack. I truly hope that you understand this situation; I had to fight, otherwise I would not be fit to be called the leader of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division...”

Wan Er's shoulders trembled in anger and she slowly lifted her daggers

as if ready to strike. “Everyone in [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division, listen up. Immediately withdraw from Magic Tracking Forest and Qilin Valley. Quit fighting; this is my order as [Hero’s Mound]’s Vice Guild Master: withdraw immediately!”

The group of players from [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division were stunned and they all seemed to have the faint intent to retreat.

Who would had thought that Wang Ze Cheng would suddenly stab his Spear onto the ground and exclaim, “Who dares to retreat? Don’t forget, I am the Guild Master of the First Division. I am carrying out the orders of Q-Sword and in [Hero’s Mound], is it Q-Sword that has the final say in things, or is it Cang Tong?! Everyone attack, eliminate [Zhan Long]! [Hero’s Mound] wants a fight, not a compromise, for we are not the weak!”

Upon saying that, the First Division immediately started to attack once more and completely ignored Wan Er.

.....

“So...be it then...”

Wan Er raised her Scarlet Edge, anger could be clearly seen upon her face. “Wang Ze Cheng, I may not be able to attack the guild’s First Division, but...but I can attack the players who are not of the First Division! Everyone, turn towards the east and face the players from [Mass Burial]. Kill them all without mercy!”

Dong Cheng Yue laughed merrily, “I’ve been waiting for you to say that. Everyone clear out, don’t give any of the players from [Mass Burial] any peace! Let them know the price of trying to bully our brother Xiao Yao...”

Dong Cheng Yue immediately flew up into the air with her staff out. The earth began to shake as a raging inferno began to erupt from the cracks in the ground and attacked every enemy within range of the attack. This was the skill she was most proud of—[Magma Lance]!

“Motherf*cker...” A flagbearer from [Mass Burial] cried. Charging ahead with his spear, he roared, “This little girl is trying to kill our brothers!

Everyone with me, let's get her!"

"Scum..."

Dong Cheng Yue narrowed her eyes and spread out her fingers. Immediately the sound of lightning crackled as she activated her [Chain Thunder] skill. It blew apart the charging invaders, damage numbers flying up above—

2761 !

2473 !

2249 !

.....

The flagbearer that had led the charge took on the brunt of the attack, taking him from 70% health to 0%. The ones that had survived were quickly taken out by a [Pillar of Ice & Fire], crushing the entire assault force. Behind Dong Cheng Yue, Wan Er flashed into the straggling players with her dagger and her slim body danced, almost as if a butterfly. Her dagger was flitting across the necks of multiple players of [Mass Burial] and one by one, each player fell to the ground.

The 200 players from [Hero's Mound] made a surprise attack and pretty much been cleared them out in 3 minutes. Most of the players from [Mass Burial] were already gone, while most of the players from [Zhan Long] that died against them had already resurrected.

I carried my bloodstained Emperor Qin's Sword and looked at Wan Er with a smile, "Wan Er, thank you, I love you to death..."

Wan Er sneaked a giggle as her face went red, but she didn't say anything.

Dong Cheng Yue said begrudgingly, "Xiao Yao, don't give your thanks just yet. Go and bring your Zhan Long group to fight against Wang Ze Cheng's main group. The Valiant Bravery camp is going to be eliminated soon, they're feeling pretty desperate right now..."

Wan Er lifted her head, a ray of light glinting off of her dagger. "Yeah,

you can let Dong Cheng Yue and I handle [Mass Burial]. We'll bring the rest of our hundred players to help you cut off the rest of the First Division as soon as we can!"

"Yes, I'll be going then!"

"Good!"

Carrying the Emperor Qin's Sword, I looked some distance away and commanded, "Onwards! Let us assist the Valiant Bravery group! Healers, prepare to use your [Resurrection] skill and bring back our brothers!"

.....

Emerging into the open space beyond the forests, the lush green grass had already been dyed a bloody red as Li Mu, Wang Jian and Bai Qi were still fighting bravely. At the start, there were 400 players from the Valiant Bravery group but now only 40 players were left to fight it out. The opposition was fighting it out with long ranged players, with some heavy armor players protecting them. With the entire Zhan Long group behind me, I hoisted my sword in the air and roared, "Qing Qian, bring a group to go kill the heavy armor players. The rest come with me, we'll go kill the long ranged players!"

"Sha..."

Entering the bushes, [Camouflage] hid me with my Flaming Tiger God following closely, as the two of us brought 200 players towards where Wang Ze Cheng was. All of them were assisting the long ranged players and around 50 of them were Knights and Monks, who were forming a defensive line around the Archers.

"Kill!"

Wang Ze Cheng pointed towards my direction, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai has brought his main force, everyone focus your fire on Xiao Yao's group! Don't kill Xiao Yao just yet, kill his men first so he can see how useless he is!"

My heart sunk, Wang Ze Cheng had evidently studied records of battles [Zhan Long] was in. He knew I had the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon],

and wouldn't be taken down by gunfire that easily. That's why he decided to kill the other players first, starting with Old K and Cang Lei.

In that case...let them pay the price for doing so!

The grass swayed in the wind as I dashed towards their vanguard. My body slunk forward as I activated [Blade Rush] and killed two Knights by my side, one of the strikes was a critical one!

4478 !

7142 !

In another few seconds, 2 more people dropped dead and I smoothly advanced without a hitch towards a nearby Archer and Mage group. My Emperor Qin's Sword trailed across the ground as I then activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], with my Flaming Tiger God activating [Burstfire Raid] into a group of players. [Flame Claw] and [Fierce Roar] took out even more players, resulting in the area in front of me being a clear spot. 50 players from the First Division had quickly become corpses!

.....

"My god..."

In the midst of a group, a beautiful Assassin girl whimpered in fear, "Li Xiao Yao's current strength, is he still a human anymore?"

My hand flicked, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

"Hua cha!"

The Assassin girl fell to the ground dead as a few Archers behind her also lost a lot of health to the might of the AOE skill: [Great Realm of Desolation]. As for killing her, I only had one reason—she was Ageless Beauty.

Chapter 269: Turning the Tides

“Don’t bother with Xiao Yao Zi Zai, continue attacking! Bring a group of Healers to focus on healing me!”

As Wang Ze Cheng yelled his commands, he lifted his spear and rushed at me. With a thrust of his spear came a [Flame Blade]. My arm shook as the spear hit me, dealing 724 damage. Wang Ze Cheng’s defense was 2900+ and his attack power was not low either. His collection of OP equipment, in addition to his Emperor Tier spear, was really too powerful.

Retreating a few steps, I spread my hands and launched one of the Mohist Five Scrolls attacks—[Black Tortoise Realm].

Shua!

A pool of water was created within a large area. Ripples immediately formed underneath Wang Ze Cheng’s feet—obstructing his movements and therefore slowing him down. At the same time, I once again used two God’s Army Cards. Casting them in the air, the God’s Army Cards activated and directly enveloped the distant area that the group of Healers were in. A cloud of blood densely covered the area as the transparent Swordsmen began to attack the players from [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division indiscriminately.

The third scroll of the Mohist Five Scrolls—[Seven Stars Teleportation]—continued to activate. Seven points appeared on the ground. I stood on the first point with cold eyes, filled with killing intent. I had to kill Wang Ze Cheng first, but his defense was too high, and I wasn’t sure if I could kill him. I had to kill him within one chain of attacks, or else all those Healers behind him would easily be able to continuously heal him.

I dashed forward, and one of my regular attacks pierced Wang Ze Cheng’s armor.

“Keng!”

1714!

My arms felt numb. 2900 defense was too much; it actually caused a

mild rebound effect. But Wang Ze Cheng was not that well off either, as he stumbled back a few steps. The effect of my Emperor Qin Sword's unique effect had reached +200% bonus attack. Wang Ze Cheng felt my bloodlust, and in fear, he raised his shield and retreated.

My heart felt calm. The effects of [Seven Stars Teleportation] activated again, and with a "Shua" my body disappeared and reappeared behind him where he was full of openings. The Emperor Qin's Sword launched the concentrated attacks, [Combo] and [Strength of a Thousand Men], at the same time. Under the bombardment of attacks, Wang Ze Cheng's health dropped below 2000. This was with the many Healers healing him. If it weren't for these Healers, he would've died twice already. With my 1% stacks, his 2900 defense was considered trash.

"Ah....."

Wang Ze Cheng staggered forward a few steps, his back heavily injured. With an angry look, he thrust his Spear backward. At the same time, he activated [Heaven Shield] and the Knight's third advancement skill [Cleansing Wind].

+1794 !

[Cleansing Wind] recovered 30% HP. This skill was the first step of a Knight's path to survive in long battles.

"Roar!"

Flaming Tiger God appeared behind Wang Ze Cheng, and it activated [Burstfire Raid], followed by [Fierce Roar] and [Flame Claws]. With three consecutive attacks, Wang Ze Cheng's 2900 defense was easily broken through, leaving him with barely 1000 HP.

Chance!

I quickly ran over and waved my hand, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

3824 !

Regrettably, before [Great Realm of Desolation] was activated, Wang Ze Cheng drank a health potion and was healed 3 times. He was still not

dead! Motherf*cker, the harmony of my skills and attacks were still not at the master level yet; this was a major flaw. If a master like Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han was fighting, perhaps Wang Ze Cheng would have already become a corpse!

.....

Wang Ze Cheng quickly retreated with a pale face, his whole body covered in cold sweat, “What terrifying attack power! Healers, keep healing.....”

I didn’t hesitate and charged towards a group of Archers and Mages, continuing my killing spree. For every other player I killed, [Zhan Long] would suffer one less death.

Behind me, the members of the Valiant group had already revived. Li Mu lifted his sword and started killing as well. Qing Qian hurriedly asked, “Li Mu, what are we going to do about those [Hero’s Mound] players behind us? There’s no one blocking them!”

Li Mu shook his head, “Don’t worry about it. The [Hero’s Mound] members are intercepting them....”

“Wait. What?!”

“Ugh, I’ll tell you about it later...”

.....

I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], pushing back a few people and stopping their attacks. I quickly retreated, along with Li Mu, Old K, Fox, and the others, and commanded the Flaming Tiger God to attack. Pets leveled up much faster than players did, and after they died, they could be summoned again after 10 minutes to continue battling. If I died, there was a chance that others could pick up my equipment, which would be a major loss.

Looking behind me, I finally understood why Li Mu and the Valiant group were able to revive.

In the open area of the forest, a pair of snowy white legs moved. Wan Er

held her Scarlet Edge as she flew around, ferociously looking at the surrounding players. With 100 [Hero's Mound] members behind her, she landed in the area between [Zhan Long] and [Hero's Mound]'s First Division, slaughtering members of [Mass Burial] on the way.

“Cang Tong!”

[Hero's Mound]'s First Division Vice Guild Master, Wind Walker, growled with an angry look, “What's the meaning of this? Bringing members of the main guild here to block us... Don't forget, you are [Hero's Mound]'s Vice Guild Master. If we lose this battle, [Hero's Mound] will lose face, and you'll be the one responsible for it!”

Wan Er looked at him and sneered, “And what of it? So what if you're part of [Hero's Mound]? Who gave you the right to barge into Ba Huang City and start bullying people? Also, the one that you're bullying is my friend, Li Xiao Yao....”

After saying that, Wan Er turned around and commanded, “Everyone listen up and form a defensive line. We are members of [Hero's Mound], so we will not attack our own members.... However, the ones who try to cross this line will become our enemy. I, the Vice Guild Master of [Hero's Mound], command all of you: Those of you who attack us will be seen as traitors, and will be dealt with by the guild!”

“Bang bang bang.....”

A group of third advancement Knights dropped their shields on the ground. The thirteen golden shields in front of [Zhan Long] became an iron wall, protecting us from harm. The group of main guild players did not fear the First Division players at all. This was because everyone knew that the stronger players were all part of the main guild while the First Division were full of sub players who were not qualified.

Wind Walker trembled with anger and pointed at Wan Er, “You're outstanding! You are really great, Cang Tong. You're clearly favoring outsiders. Who do you take Q-Sword as, by standing on Xiao Yao Zi Zai's side? Do you think you're worthy of Q-Sword's trust? He handed you command of the whole [Hero's Mound] guild. Do you have any

conscience?”

Wan Er's beautiful face was calm and said, "I've been in [Hero's Mound] for a month. I recruited 700+ elite players, helped [Hero's Mound] reach Level 4 quickly, single-handedly reorganized the 4th, 7th and 11th sub-squads, and captured 4 S-class maps along with 12 A-class maps. My conscience? Even if Q-Sword was here, I would've done the same thing. I don't care about [Hero's Mound]'s future, but you guys want use Xiao Yao's guild as a stepping stone? In your dreams!"

Wind Walker took a deep breath, "I've recorded everything that you said. When Q-Sword comes online, I will send it to him. Hmph, let's see what you can say about it now."

Wan Er couldn't help but laugh, "I'm a free player. What can Q-Sword do to me? Don't provoke me, or I will break my promise: I will leave [Hero's Mound] right now and bring all my people to join [Zhan Long]. You want to try me? Wind Walker, I know you're Wang Ze Cheng's lackey; come fight us if you want. I'll show you the difference between the powers of the players from the main guild and the powers of the players from the First Division. I'll teach you guys a good lesson!"

"Keng!"

Next to Wan Er, 21 Elite Swordsmen unsheathed their blades and pointed them towards the First Division. Behind them, Dong Cheng Yue brought a group of Mages and Healers over, in a state of mutual hostility.

"Gulp....."

Wind Walker swallowed, not having imagined that things could have possibly developed to this point. Next to him, a Knight whispered, "Brother, listen to me for a bit.... Cang Tong and Cang Yue are the most important people to Q-Sword. It was because of them that [Hero's Mound] was able to attract so many elite players. You need to think carefully. In Q-Sword's eyes, who's more important? You or Cang Tong? Truth to be told, it's possible that the ruthless Q-Sword would abandon the whole First Division in order to keep Cang Tong in the guild. Do you guys want to become Q-Sword's and [Hero's Mound]'s prey?"

Wind Walker didn't say anything, and tightly furrowed his eyebrows. He stood there like an idiot, neither attacking nor retreating.

.....

"Boss...."

Matcha flew down from the sky with a sweet smile, "I see them. Reinforcements have arrived...."

"Huh? Really?" I laughed.

"Mhm. Look on the south side....."

.....

It was true. In the southern forest, sounds of movement could be heard. From the forest, a beautiful Archer appeared. It was the Third Advancement Archer, Dancing Forest! Holding a longbow, her mouth curved upwards and smiled, "We finally caught up. Advance! Slaughter them all! Put all of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division onto your blacklist!

Behind Dancing Forest were 1100 unofficial [Zhan Long] members. Most of the members were at least Lv 60, and a few of them were Swordsmen in their third advancement. Wielding their blades, they directly charged through and killed off the opposing side's group of Archers. With the arrival of 1100+ players, Wang Ze Cheng's jaws drop in shock. This was indeed a great change in numbers!

In the north, similar sounds could be heard. Han Bei Song led 1000+ players charging towards the battlefield. This was indeed a change of tides for [Zhan Long]!

.....

"This..... This....."

Wang Ze Cheng held his Spear and angrily said, "Why haven't our scouts reported this?"

One squad leader said, "Guild Master, we can't hold on. We only have 1000 members left, while [Zhan Long] has 700. In addition to the reinforcements from Han Bei Song and Dancing Forest, they have a total

of 3000 players, which is 3 times our amount. We're completely overwhelmed."

Wang Ze Cheng eyes became cold. "Retreat! Tell the members of [Mass Burial] to fall back for a chance to revive. Everyone else, retreat with me!"

.....

"You kids still want to leave!?"

Old K roared. With his Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe, he jumped into a group of people and activated [Whirlwind Slash]. I followed up with [Seven Star Fragment Slash] while Flaming Tiger God went around killing everyone using [Fierce Roar]. We slaughtered people with astonishing and incomparable power. Combined with Han Bei Song's and Dancing Forest's forces, the Magic Tracking Forest became a battleground filled with blood.

In the end, only Wang Ze Cheng and a handful of people were able to escape. Running far away, they disappeared into the forest.

Chapter 270: 3 Way Power

After the utter defeat of [Hero's Mound]'s First Division, Li Mu continued to lead his Valiant Bravery players forward, and they killed anyone in their way. 500 heavy armor players from the First Division were killed, while the long ranged players were killed after being surrounded by [Zhan Long] and [Crimson Contract] combined. The flames of war shook both the forests and the heavens with their noise, and in just half an hour, the previously tranquil Magic Tracking Forest became a purgatory of battle.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao...”

Wolf clutched his daggers in one hand while extending his other to point at the men we had surrounded, “The First Division of [Hero's Mound] still has 400 players left resisting. They are unable to return to Ba Huang City; what should we do? Send them a message to scram, or....?”

I looked at Wan Er, who returned my look with a smirk, “Let's go with your favorite method...” she said.

I nodded, “Wang Ze Cheng is too shrewd. The fact that he brought a group of players from [Hero Mound] to lead an expedition in Ba Huang City, shows that he has already completely infiltrated the ranks of the guild. Whether he goes on the offense with people or money, in actuality, the First Division of [Hero's Mound] doesn't even belong to [Hero's Mound] anymore. In any case, if they dare provoke us again, then we won't let them justify themselves...Wolf!”

“Yes, I'm here...”

“Order everyone to kill every member of the First Division, and then guard their bodies for 10 hours. However many reinforcements come, kill them all; this is how [Zhan Long] fights!”

Wolf laughed, “Alright, this method is my favorite one as well!”

General Bai Qi was equally excited. He swept his cleaver around, and

with the other heavy armor players from [Zhan Long], killed all of the long ranged enemies, quickly scattering the opposing players. With every hit, General Bai Qi was able to kill one of the 400 long ranged players, while suffering almost no losses himself. The saddest part was that none of the enemies could surpass the 3rd class advanced Mages. The Mages leapt around all over the place, every single one of them causing chaos and confusion, as the swords and battle axes of the enemy began to chip and break away.

.....

Clearing the battlefield was a merry process; Wolf and Old K were running around everywhere, while I was by Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Han Bei Song's sides, watching from the distance.

"Guess what Q-Sword's reaction to this spectacle will be when he gets online..." Wan Er laughed.

"He'll be murderous..." Dong Cheng Yue chuckled as well. "[Hero's Mound] is the number one guild in Fan Shu City. For the First Division to suffer from a devastating defeat after entering Ba Huang City while the Guild Master, Wang Ze Cheng, escaped with a few dozen players as the rest are killed, no guild would be able to take this, [Hero's Mound] included."

Han Bei Song lifted his sword, "This is what Wang Ze Cheng has started, so he should suffer the consequences; for him to suddenly want to enter Magic Tracking Forest, and then challenge both of our guilds..."

Yue Qing Qian chuckled, "Perhaps Cang Cheng just wanted to test us. He probably hadn't imagined that [Zhan Long] would be so determined to defend Qilin Valley...or maybe he just wanted to bully [Crimson Contract]?"

Han Bei Song wiped at his nose angrily, "Hey, the beautiful Yue Qing Qian isn't giving us enough face. Is [Crimson Contract] really the type of guild that everyone wants to bully? If Cang Cheng really wants to bully us, then...then he has to at least give us a warning first..."

Suddenly, Wan Er's beautiful eyes opened wide, as she turned to look at

me.

“What happened, Wan Er?”

“Q-Sword got online!”

“Ah, then what...”

“He’s angry of course...”

“And so?”

“He’s ordering every single online leader, as well as the 2-5th vice leaders, to come to him. He says he’s coming over to Ba Huang City; do you understand why?”

I held onto the hilt of the Emperor Qin’s Sword and said, “Oh man, Q-Sword is being impulsive. Does he want to come over and bully [Zhan Long] and [Crimson Contract] to death?!”

Han Bei Song said, “I have a suggestion...”

“What?”

“Let’s escape and hide in Ba Huang City for 2 days until Q-Sword’s anger passes. Then we’ll come out...”

I sighed, “That will be the last resort. For now, everyone should first rest up, and wait for Q-Sword to come and say something. I doubt that Q-Sword is like Jian Feng Han; after all, his long ranged players have been destroyed by [Zhan Long], there would be no benefits from continuing to fight.”

Han Bei Song nodded, “Then I’ll first go contact the other 3 guilds and get some more help. If we were able to fight against [Vanguard], then we’ll be able to fight against [Hero’s Mound]. After all, what are a few levels in comparison?”

“Okay!”

.....

After an hour, Misty Cloud brought his [Misty Palace] over, while Sword Reborn and Fighting in Blood brought their own guilds to Magic Tracking

Forest. The tiny forest now held over 6000 players from 5 big guilds, as everyone waited for Q-Sword and his men to arrive.

Finally, after around 10 pm at last in the far horizon, a crowd of Fan Shu City players approached like a tide. Nearly 12,000 players from [Hero's Mound]'s official guild were descending upon Ba Huang City. The entire Wild Butterfly Plain was covered with players. With the plains right next to the Magic Tracking Forest, we couldn't let them enter, or else we would no longer act passively!

Swords in hand, the 1900 players from [Zhan Long] rushed out from the forest onto the plains. Misty Palace and Han Bei Song's men were also walking out from the forests, forming a defensive perimeter. With our difference in numbers, it was imperative that we maintained this perimeter. There were no shortcuts in this area. Those who tried to attack were looking for death.

.....

“Keng!”

In the distance, Q-Sword unsheathed his sword and stood in his fancy battle armor, showing off his heroic spirit as the wind blew his cape up. No one could deny that he looked like an experienced veteran, and it was no wonder that this man was called China's most perfect man, as well as the first ranked battle master. With just one glance, anyone would feel that Q-Sword was not an ordinary man.

Behind Q-Sword, Sword Tears and elder Jian Han were present. They were people who had accompanied Q-Sword through countless battles during the past years. Now that they had joined, the amount of terror they both could unfold was unimaginable.

The Emperor Qin's Sword stuck by my side as I strode out in front of the crowd to meet Q-Sword and the other experts of his guild. Even though I did not look at them directly, I could not help but feel a sense of dread. But my Emperor Qin's Sword has already killed many people, and the effect had boosted my strength by 200%. So if Q-Sword and I ended up fighting, then victory would have a good chance of being in my grasp!

“Li Xiao Yao, long time no see....” Q-Sword smiled.

I also nodded with a smile, “Yea, long time no see. However, I hadn’t imagined the next time we’d meet would be in this type of situation.”

Behind Q-Sword, Jian Han angrily said, “Your [Zhan Long], combined with [Blood Contract], decimated our First Division here. Moreover, you’re guarding the corpses for 10 hrs; is this how you, Li Xiao Yao, greets people?”

I took a deep breath, “Uncle Jian Han, if it were you or Q-Sword, I definitely wouldn’t do something like this. However, [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division leader is Cang Cheng, the Wang Ze Cheng I know. I won’t say anymore about his identity and background, but to allow such a person to become First Division’s leader, I must tell Q-Sword this: your First Division is already done for; it’s no longer yours....”

Fear flickered within Q-Sword’s eyes as he spoke, “Xiao Yao, what do you mean by that? I...I went to watch a horse race with my third uncle in the afternoon, and didn’t expect to come home to such a situation like this. What exactly happened? I had thought Cang Cheng was pretty decent, and could manage a big guild. So when I gave him the First Division, I didn’t think there would be so many problems...”

Behind Q-Sword, his sister Sword Tears carried her sword and said, “Brother, don’t bother with idle chat from Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Right now our men in the First Division are stuck in Magic Tracking Forest and their bodies are being guarded. All we need to ask Xiao Yao Zi Zai is if he’ll let our people go or not...”

Q-Sword nodded, “Xiao Yao, you heard her; will you let our people go? Otherwise I’ll be forced to make the announcement to my guild...”

I laughed, “This isn’t the right question to ask. The real question is: are you still determined to occupy Magic Tracking Forest? Magic Tracking Forest neighbors [Zhan Long], not to mention that it’s originally under [Crimson Contract]’s control. Right now, if [Hero’s Mound] wants to occupy Magic Tracking Forest, then this is clearly declaring war...”

“Ah?” Q-Sword was startled, “I...I didn’t say to take over Magic Tracking

Forest. I only told Cang Cheng to enter Ba Huang City and find a nice training ground...”

“So it really was Wang Ze Cheng’s plan!” I gritted through my teeth.

At that moment, Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue both came walking back. Q-Sword saw them both from the corners of his eyes and helplessly asked, “Wan Er, Dong Cheng, can you two please tell me what type of situation I have on my hands? Why is it that Wind Walker is telling me that you two had fought against our own members?”

Wan Er frowned, “Q-Sword, if you really trust us, you don’t even need to ask. If you don’t trust us, then the both of us will leave [Hero’s Mound] immediately. It’s that simple.”

Q-Sword coughed, “If you have something to say, then say it...”

Han Bei Song lowered his sword, “Guild Master Q-Sword, first answer me this; why did you bring so many people to Ba Huang City?”

Q-Sword faintly smiled, “It’s really nothing, just me preparing myself. If people were really trying to bully my members, then I will have to respond with force. But looking at this situation, it seems like it was because I hadn’t had a proper handle on things.”

“Guild Master!”

Behind Q-Sword, a Lv 64 Wind Elf Archer slowly floated down to the ground with his longbow in hand, “We’ve found a large group of players heading our way from the southeast; they all appear to be Yan Zhao Warrior’s men...” He whispered.

“Eh?” Q-Sword wrinkled his eyebrows, “Why did that old man come here?”

Over the horizon, a group of densely packed players came marching by with Yan Zhao Warrior at the front.

.....

Sword Tears stated coldly, “There are at least 10,000 players, what is [Prague] planning?”

Q-Sword clenched his teeth, "I'll go find out!"

After saying that, the Guild Master of [Hero's Mound] moved on over to within 40 meters of Yan Zhao Warrior and his group. With a smile, he said, "Guild Master Yan Zhao, it's been a long time; have you been well? Why have you brought out so many people to Wild Butterfly Plains? A training exercise?"

Yan Zhao Warrior pumped his fist and laughed, "Not at all; I heard that [Hero's Mound] was about to fight a war, so I brought my players to engage in it. To uphold the honor of Ba Huang City..."

Yue Qing Qian giggled beside me, "Why do I feel like uncle has suddenly become cuter recently?"

Han Bei Song laughed as well, "Cunning old man, he clearly wants to uphold [Prague]'s own honor in Ba Huang City. With [Hero's Mound] trying to enter Ba Huang City, of course [Prague] would be affected by it..."

.....

Cleanly resolving the initial matter, Q-Sword faced me once more, "Xiao Yao, if you let me revive the First Division, we will immediately pull out and return to Fan Shu City, how about it?"

I nodded, "Deal!"

Q-Sword took out a city scroll, and in the next moment, the densely packed Wild Butterfly Plains was enveloped in a bright glow, as the 10,000+ players all were transported back to Fan Shu City.

Yan Zhao Warrior laughed and pointed to the south, "Tornado, bring our men over to train..."

Tornado nodded, "Okay!"

.....

Chapter 271: City of the Ancients

Wild Butterfly Plain, sunset.

The entire group of people just stood there, despite the fact that it was already ten o'clock at night.

"Is that all [Hero's Mound] is going to do?" asked one of [Blood Contract]'s vice leaders, Who's Blue.

Han Bei Song grimaces, "Not necessarily...."

I sheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword and smiled: "Doesn't matter; Ba Huang City, Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City were fated to be the three chaotic war zones. Where there are men, there are wars, and this saying holds true especially in this cold virtual reality game, where a lack of battle actually makes the game boring. I don't know if [Hero's Mound] will give up like that, but I do know that Wang Ze Cheng definitely won't give up so easily."

Matcha blinked a few times, "Furthermore... Q-Sword's attitude was very ambiguous; he didn't say how he was going to deal with the First Division. On top of that, [Hero's Mound]'s First Division has already settled down. They'd be unwilling to return to Fan Shu City even if we wanted them to. There will be battles in the future; today's was definitely not the last."

Wan Er stood by my side as she lightly smiled, "I'll go back to Fan Shu City to ask Q-Sword and find out exactly what his thoughts are on these events. If he's truly trying to provoke [Zhan Long], Dong Cheng and I will leave [Hero's Mound] in a heartbeat, bringing along with us the players loyal to us back to Ba Huang City. If not, then Dong Cheng and I will stay in [Hero's Mound] for the remaining 24 days...."

"24 days, so long...." I murmured.

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Okay okay, it really isn't that long. I've been counting down the days..."

Dong Cheng Yue smiled at us, then tilted her head at me: "Boss, if Wan

Er and I join [Zhan Long], what kind of positions would you give us?"

I mused aloud, "Wan Er and Yue Qing Qian can be my Vice Guild Masters, Dong Cheng can be an elder; though I apologize, you went from a boss at [Hero's Mound] to only an elder at [Zhan Long]...."

Dong Cheng Yue blushed, and said with a mischievous smile, "Alright, seems like it's even harder to succeed in [Zhan Long] than in [Hero's Mound]. At least in [Hero's Mound] I could pass off as a Vice Guild Master. Wuwu, Boss has to look after me more, and spoil me a bit....."

Old K's face turned green, "What...what kind of attitude is that? 'Spoil her more', what does that mean? Why can't I understand that?"

Wan Er was also speechless, "Alright alright, Dong Cheng, stop messing around. Look, you even made Xiao Yao's face red...."

I lifted my head, "Oh, no that's from being in the sun for far too long....."

On the side, Matcha cautioned, "Hey, we should stop talking about these meaningless things. One hour ago, it was officially announced that tomorrow morning from 9-12, they will be conducting maintenance. At the same time, every major city will have a new city....."

"A new city?" I was shocked, "What does that even mean?"

Matcha chuckled, "Actually, it doesn't exactly count as a city; it's a 'City of the Ancients'. At least that's what this version is called. Every month, every major city will create a new City of the Ancients, and within each of these, there will be many different monsters to engage the players in siege battles. There will be a total of 10 different monster mobs, and players will compete to be the first to get within the city walls, as well as kill the strongest boss, for the chance to get the best reward. Also, there's 100% chance that that player will get a City of the Ancients 'God of Commerce Badge'....."

"God of Commerce Badge?" Wan Er was also surprised: "Sister Matcha, what is a God of Commerce Badge?"

Matcha waved her hand and smiled: "It's really simple. People with God of Commerce Badges can apply for a piece of land from the city's ruler.

This piece of land can then be used to open up a booth. These are the rumored player booths, where the popularity of a seller is dependent on the fortuity of the city. Looks like.... the first player to open a store in Ba Huang City will definitely be successful. At the moment, Ba Huang City has close to 2,500,000 players.... Everyday everyone is spending 1RMB, which means a player can earn 2,500,000 RMB in profit....”

“Tomorrow at 12?” I asked.

“Yup!” Matcha firmly nodded, “Therefore, our [Zhan Long] has to defeat this City of the Ancients. We don’t have any other options, hehe, Boss, do you agree?”

I strongly agreed, “We have to defeat it!”

Dong Cheng Yue was puzzled, “Why?”

Tears flowed down Wolf’s cheek as he said, “Because we’re too poor. Excluding [Blood Contract], [Zhan Long] the only guild in Ba Huang City that doesn’t give a monthly income to its main guild members. Our treasury is basically empty, and our players’ resources and equipment budget is practically 0. Every time our guild goes out of the city, the potions come out of the players’ pockets and not from the guild. If we continue this way, I’m afraid many of the players will revolt.....”

General Li Mu stood at one side and said, “Speaking of being poor, our Valiant Bravery is the poorest group in [Zhan Long]. Many of our brothers are bare butt naked, waiting to buy pants to wear. Even the monthly credit card bills are hard to pay! Let’s not talk about others, but [Prague], [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], and [Wrath of the Heroes], all give their top 1000 players expense cards to use!”

Wan Er was expressionless, and she slowly said, “Looks like... [Zhan Long]’s victory over the City of the Ancients really is necessary. Well, all I can do is wish you guys a victory tomorrow. Get the God of Commerce Badge from the hands of [Prague], [Flying Dragon], and [Vanguard]....”

Dong Cheng Yue patted my shoulder: “Young man, rest early, and start preparing early tomorrow morning....”

I nodded, and turned around to talk to the crowd of people, “Qing Qian, Li Mu, you two separately command the Zhan Long group and Valiant Bravery group to restock on potions, and repair all equipments before logging off. Get online tomorrow at 12pm tomorrow; [Zhan Long] will be the first to find the City of the Ancients and get that God of Commerce Badge. Even if we don’t get the badge, at least for this City of the Ancients event, we’ll be the ones that reap the most benefits!”

Yue Qing Qian smiled and nodded: “Got it, Brother Xiao Yao!”

Li Mu made a fist: “Leave the logistics of Valiant Bravery group to me, don’t worry about it Boss!”

“Ok, then lets all rest up early!”

“Okay!”

.....

Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue both took out a [City Return Scroll] and ripped it to shreds. Originally, I probably should have been worried about Wan Er’s plight with [Hero’s Mound]; after all, as its Vice Guild Master, she had actually helped [Zhan Long], she even organized a restraining team against the First Division. To an average person, this was a very serious situation, however, Wan Er, with that Fan Shu City girl’s personality, was very strong, and she did not buy Q-Sword’s story. Thus, I did not have to worry about her at all.

I took out a [City Return Scroll], activate!

“Shua!”

Returning to Ba Huang City, I repaired my equipment, and for the last time, I replenished my Lv 7 red potions and pills. With my red and blue pills fully replenished, all I had left to do was to wait for the event to start tomorrow. The God of Commerce Badge was another new concept; it looked like Ba Huang City’s resource and power struggles would reach intensify to the climax. Before, [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon] were at the top of the competition. However, now that a wildcard like the God of Commerce’s Badge had appeared, the victor could not be

predicted, and who called the shots in Ba Huang City was dependent on who could fight all different kinds of battles and rise to the top!

For [Zhan Long] this battle represented our guild's future; whether we are able to rise as the Kings of [Destiny] or whether we would fall into the depths of history. This was our chance, maybe our only chance. Thinking about this, my blood started to pump, as I began to feel my youthful impulsiveness. Who has never dreamed of dominating the world?

I have had such a dream before, except that it was defeated.....

.....

After getting offline, it was 11 at night. Looking at my phone, I saw that I got a message from Wang Xin: "Li Xiao Yao, if you aren't busy tonight, can you come to the office? I have something for you to see!"

The message came from half an hour ago, mm, I could go out!

Spreading my Yi Hai out, I made sure there wasn't any suspicious qi nearby. I put on the suave outfit that Wan Er had purchased for me, and went out. Passing by the bottom of the girls dormitory, everything was calm. There were a few relatively stronger qi's near the bathhouse and gym, all of which were familiar, as they were from the hidden bodyguards sent by Lin Tian Nan. As for the 40 year old bodyguard downstairs, he was a retired veteran that I recognized. His skills were pretty good, and dealing with anyone that was Royal Air level was not a problem.

Heading straight out of the campus, I lifted my qi as my boots rhythmically hit the ground. My body was light as I maintained an even breath, and jogged through the night onto the street. Not even 10 minutes later, I reached the Special Operations Unit of the Police. The sentry recognized me and nodded, "You've arrived!"

"Yup!"

In a flash, I entered the deep building, and stopped in front of a lit up conference room. Opening the door, I saw Wang Xin and a few other leaders surrounding a table. On top of the table was a map.

.....

“Leader Wang!” I said as I walked up.

Wang Xin smiled, “Li Xiao Yao has arrived; you should recognize the people here, they are all fundamental players in Hangzhou Province’s Special Crimes unit. This is Li Xiao Yao, the face of our special operations unit.”

A team leader who looked around 50 years old turned his head over to look at me, and smiled: “Hello Face, we have heard about you before, but we’ve never had the chance to actually meet you. You are indeed young and handsome, it’s no wonder that so many of the police force’s young women have pined over you for many years.....”

Embarrassed, I said: “You’re over-exaggerating. What’s the situation?”

Wang Xin pointed at the materials on the table, and said: “Come see for yourself. Lately, we’ve confirmed a few cases committed by the Blood Scythe. Also, the mastermind of Blood Scythe has finally appeared...”

I scanned over the gory pictures of the crime scene. Soon after, I spotted an evidence folder, and took it out to look at it—

Blood Scythe’s Boss: Kui Fan, Han Zhou Province, 34 years old, Used to be a mercenary on the China-Myanmar border, After 4 years of hard work, he finally returned to the Mainland, and on Hangzhou’s Feng Yue Street and Blue Water Street, he battled out his own territory. He opened 5 bars and 3 nightclubs with his hands clean of any blood or crimes, as he was very close to an unknown high official.

.....

“Kui Fan....” I furrowed my brows and said: “Why haven’t I heard of this name before.....”

“Yup, that’s the tricky part, none of us have any idea as to how we should investigate him.” Wang Xin said.

“Then what should we do?”

“We can only wait for him to trip up.”

“Isn’t that too passive?”

“We don’t have a choice....” Wang Xin grudgingly smiled, “From yesterday until today, I took 7 phone calls telling me to stop looking into Blood Scythe Gang’s recent activities. Hmph, thank goodness Sun Xiang is in the military to support me, otherwise I would’ve already lost my position as the head of Hangzhou’s Special Operations Unit.....”

I grunted, “Those bastards..... Blood Scythe’s people have harmed so many innocents; aren’t those lives as well?”

Chapter 272: Death of the Seven Knights

“Young man.....”

One of the captains smiled and patted my shoulder, “You are still too soft. A commoner’s life means nothing compared to the benefits of thousands of people. You’ll slowly understand. As for us...haha...we can only give our best efforts.....”

I nodded, “Yea!”

.....

Although we stayed until dawn, we were still unable to figure anything out, as everything about Blood Scythes seemed so mysterious. Police intervention would be too susceptible, which restrained Wang Xin from being able to act. As for me, I couldn’t help at all, and could only spend 24hrs waiting for orders.

After Shen Bing helped me change my bandages again, I returned to Liu Hua University at 2:00AM, and fell into a deep sleep.

It was already around 10:00am when I woke up. I got up and called Wan Er to arrange to have lunch together at 11:00AM. I then cooled myself with a cold shower to keep myself calm for the impending great challenge of the game. The God of Commerce Badge was carried by the final BOSS in the City of the Ancients, and it was desired not just by [Zhan Long], but all the guilds of Ba Huang City. Whoever’s fists are harder will be the one who gets it!”

After breakfast, it was 11:45AM. I returned to the dorm, and went online!

....

“Shua !”

I appeared in Ba Huang City and immediately received a message from Wolf saying, “Brother Xiao Yao, we have prepared. We’re awaiting your commands outside the north gate of Ba Huang City. ”

“Alright. I’m on my way now! ”

With a wave of my hand, the Flaming Tiger God emerged from a golden hexagram with a growl. It instantly snuggled around me like a kitten and purred contently, its behavior not quite matching its mighty physique.

Time was precious. After I rushed out of the city, I saw from afar, Yue Qing Qian, Wolf, Matcha, Li Mu and the others, standing there. I could also see the hundreds of [Zhan Long] ‘s elite players waiting there. Almost all the guilds’ players had set off together, just for the City of the Ancients!

I came forward and asked, “Have the coordinates refreshed yet? ! ”

Yue Qing Qian shook her head, “They’re still not confirmed!”

Wolf answered, “It should be soon. Ba Huang City’s forum is in an uproar. Nobody knows the exact coordinates of the City of the Ancients, and many guilds have already dispatched people to search each map individually.”

Li Mu smiled, “No worries. After the City of the Ancients refreshes, 10 waves of monsters will be out for slaughter. We will have plenty of chances. Even if someone else finds it first, that doesn’t mean that they will be able to slay the final boss and obtain the God of Commerce Badge...”

I nodded and smiled, “Yup, stay calm. ”

Just then, the ground suddenly shook and shook, causing millions of birds to fly out from Ba Huang Forest. The north was entirely bathed in a golden glow; something had happened in the forest. Looking from afar, a towering shabby ancient city appeared in the heart of the forest, around 1000 metres away from us, just within our sight. Lucky! Just as we had suspected, the City of the Ancients was near Ba Huang City!

“Ding! ”

System Notice: “Greetings Player. You have appeared within 2000 meters of Ba Huang City’s [City of the Ancients]. Before the City of the Ancients is attacked, players in the surrounding area will not be able to

revive. Please cherish your life, as you only have one!”

.....

“F*ck!” Li Mu looked around, “When the City of the Ancients appears, we can’t revive, so does that mean..... that we can’t use the human wave tactic on this map?”

Wang Jian laughed, “This type of map is more fun, right?”

Old K clenched his fist and laughed, “Right, it’s more exciting this way.”

“Exciting my ass.....” I gave him a glance. “I’ll be beyond thankful if you just manage to survive just a bit longer; don’t go jumping into a group of mobs and getting killed. We still need your strength when it comes to the last BOSS!”

Holding his Haunted Twinblade Battleaxe, Old K laughed, “Don’t worry Li brat, I won’t go down so easily. Look, I’m already Lv 61.....”

“Okay.....”

“Brother Xiao Yao.....” Yue Qing Qian whispered by my side.

“What’s wrong, Qing Qian?” I laughed

Yue Qing Qian blinked and then smiled, “This is a chance for us to establish ourselves..... the City of the Ancients is a large-scale event. The amount of experience obtained from these monsters is far superior than those gained from average monsters. We have to call all of our guild, since all the experience we earn here will turn into experience for the guild as well. Maybe this City of the Ancients will help us finally break through into becoming a level 4 guild. Today, [Zhan Long] will rush to level 4 and fill up all 3000 member slots. Then we will have enough confidence to back up our words!”

At ease, I patted her shoulders, “Yeah. We have to work hard and break through to level 4 today. Let’s move out!”

Li Mu raised his sword into the air, “Brothers, move out! Don’t break the formation!”

A group of people rushed forwards. In less than 10 minutes, the 850+

members of [Zhan Long] were in front of the City of the Ancients!

.....

Lifting my head to look at the city, I could see why this was called the City of the Ancients. The city walls were full of battle scars. Due to weathering and eroding, the many catapults were full of damage as well. The gates were also full of sword marks. The majestic city walls were 50 meters high, with many elite archers on top. With superior armor and golden looking arrows, these archers gave off a frightening feeling.

In the city, there were some Ba Huang City players approaching us on the map. Because the gates hadn't opened yet, the first wave of monsters had not appeared.

Li Mu furrowed his brows, "Xiao Yao, what do we do? Do we storm in, or....?"

I looked at the elite archers on the city walls and said, "Right now, we can't clearly determine the NPC's level, so we shouldn't act rashly. We'll move to the northern part of the City of the Ancients. There, we'll position ourselves about 50-100 meters from the gate and wait for the monsters to come out. Right now, nobody has attempted to besiege the city yet, so we shouldn't either"

"Okay!"

A large group detoured to the northern gates. There were not many players here. Since the southern gate was facing Ba Huang City, occupying this position would do us only good and no harm.

"Knights and Monks, go to the front line. Prepare a line of defense!" I commanded.

Including Matcha, the group went forward, and with their shields, they formed a defensive line. In the rear, we had musketeers and archers. This was the standard formation.

"Brother Xiao Yao, we're not being too cautious, are we?" Wolf looked at the city and laughed.

I shook my head, “No, I feel like those elite archers are very strong. We might even suffer heavy losses to them. Moreover, being a bit more cautious is not a bad thing. We only live once on this map; we should cherish our lives.”

“Yeah, you’re right!”

.....

After a few minutes, a huge group of players arrived. Many guilds and individual players came to build up their defenses. The closest group of players were from [Flying Dragon], players like Soaring Dragon, Fierce Tiger, Black Tortoise, Drunken Spear and Mu Tian. [Flying Dragon] had over 5000 players, and they had vast amounts of fame and power behind them. The dense mass of players occupied over 300 meters of field, meaning that over 50% of the northern area had been filled up. It looked like each and every single one of them wanted to play an active role in the upcoming battle for City of the Ancients.

Besides those from [Flying Dragon], countless smaller guilds and teams that could not be differentiated from each other, were lined up. Fortunately, [Zhan Long] had a 3 meter gap on both sides, separating us from the others.

“For us to end up going in the same direction as [Zhan Long]...” Fierce Tiger clenched his battleaxe with a look of disdain, “They only have 800 people, who knows how long they can last? Hehe, I hope they don’t die too quickly, otherwise they’ll become a joke.”

Drunken Spear whirled his spear and said, “Don’t belittle them too much, Xiao Yao Zi Zai has always emerged victorious when he has taken command. [Vanguard] and [Hero’s Mound] both had their attacks thwarted by [Zhan Long]; a guild like that should have our respect, not out contempt. I propose...that we should get close to [Zhan Long], maybe even have a collaboration...”

Soaring Dragon waved his hand in anger, “No need; as long as Drunken Spear protects us, we will be fine!”

Drunken Spear rubbed at his nose in exasperation, “Alright, relying on

me isn't bad either. Let's work hard and hope that we get the God of Commerce Badge. We cannot let [Vanguard] or [Prague] get their hands on it first!"

"Yea, ok!"

Mu Tian lifted his own spear and looked at the city, "Eh? Why hasn't the first wave of monsters come out yet; are they stuck or something? Did the city block them in? It's already 12:30, shouldn't they have technically come out by now? If not, then let's have a group of players enter the city and investigate the monsters are inside. Perhaps the activation conditions only occur when people enter the city?"

Soaring Dragon's staff emitted dense rays of bright light. He anxiously nodded his head and said, "Sounds good. Send some of the faster, but more tanky knights to enter the city."

"Understood!"

.....

After a few minutes, 7 knights came forward with spears and swords in hand. [Flying Dragon] was the biggest force currently defending themselves around the City of the Ancients, as well as the most say in things. So while countless players looked on, the 7 knights entered the city with a prideful arrogance.

"Shall we knock?"

"Yes!"

One of the players charged forward and struck at the iron doors with his shield!

"Keng!"

The door reverberated with a loud gong similar to that of a grand clock as a knight said, "It looks like...like theres no response?"

"That's not right, I swear there's some movement inside..."

"Eh?"

The 7 players quickly raised their heads, only to discover an entire row of NPC archers with longbows in their hands. In the next second, the sounds of bows being drawn and arrows being fired filled the air continuously. The golden arrowheads quickly pierced through the knights' battle armors, drawing blood. One by one, shocking damage numbers flew up from the knights as they fell down in a spray of blood looking like porcupines, not a single one managing to escape—

“2837 ! ”

“2981 ! ”

“3004 ! ”

“2785 ! ”

.....

“F*ck!” Soaring Dragon shook his fist in the air and roared, “What level are those NPC archers? How can they have such high damage?”

Drunken Spear stated, “They have to be Lv 70 at the very least...”

Soaring Dragon was speechless.

.....

Seeing the 7 corpses, I laughed, “Ai...I can't even look at this sight...”

Wolf and Li Mu laughed with me.

Right at that moment, a creaking sound was suddenly heard as the iron gates began to open. A dense mass of monsters began to pour out from within; at last, the City of Ancients had officially started its first wave!

Chapter 273: Shameless Durability

“Here comes the first wave!”

Wolf pointed with his short dagger and commanded the other Assassins, “Every Assassin should prepare to attack. Have the heavy armor players form a defensive line and don’t rashly try to fend off the monsters by yourself. The more damage you do over time, the more experience you’ll get!”

This was the basic idea behind fighting. Two Knights would provide defense while the Assassin would strike from in-between. Relying on this tactic, the amount of damage that could be consistently dealt was extraordinarily high. The way distributed experience was quite fair; DPS, support, and healing were considered in the distribution. For example, if a Healer were to increase the attacker’s damage by 10%, then they would receive the same amount of experience as the attacker. Even in the later stages of the game, they would not be fall behind in experience from the war.

Yue Qing Qian lifted her dagger and stood silently by my side. She smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, when the monsters arrive, you mustn’t go too far forward. Otherwise, I’ll lose you as my shield.”

Matcha chuckled, “Don’t worry, Sister Matcha will be your shield!”

“Okay then!”

.....

From inside the city, another wave of monsters came pouring out. They looked to be a group of small fiends holding blunt spears, but they were actually just a bunch of ugly dwarves that were exceptionally quick. They didn’t even reach a meter high and were wearing flax spun clothes. While they ran, they chattered noisily, “Come quick, the humans have come! I saw a lot of silk wearing women; rumors say that women that wear silk don’t have saggy breasts! This is great! Let’s go, let’s go! Plunder and rob these human girls and use our strong bodies to subdue them!”

My mouth twitched as I heard them, “What kind of lines were set for these monstrous animals...”

Dancing Forest laughed, “These short gourds want to subdue the females with their strong bodies? What a joke, they’re only one meter tall, and those are maybe 3 centimeters at most. If they want to use 3 centimeters to woo the women, I can’t even ridicule them any more....”

I shot a glance at her, “Aren’t you ridiculing them a little too much already?”

Matcha giggled, “Enough of that, you guys shouldn’t be talking about stuff that isn’t suitable for children to hear. Look, Qing Qian’s and Yue Liang’s faces are both turning red...”

Sure enough, Yue Qing Qian’s and Yue Liang’s 17 year old faces were already bright red, and were unable to meet our gazes. However Old K and Bai Qi laughed heartily; to them, conversations like these were child’s play!

“I have the monsters’ data!”

Li Mu came flying back after scouting out the monsters and simultaneously shared the monsters’ stats within the guild. As expected, the monsters in this City of the Ancients weren’t a joke. Their levels were abnormally high, and their stats were also a lot stronger than monsters of most maps. Furthermore, according to the system’s world map, the City of the Ancients was marked as SSS-ranked, which was equivalent to a large-scale SSS-rank quest!

【Sinister Goblin】(Phantom Tier Monster)

Level: 66

Attack: 1450-1900

Defense: 1100

Health: 14000

Skills: **【Stick Sweep】【Heavy Chop】【Sinister Howl】**

Description: Sinister Goblins are a part of a race that is known for its

rapid breeding rates. Goblins originally branched away from the ancient human race and have lived their entire lives underground. After finally discovering the City of the Ancients above ground, they immediately occupied it and became the primary defenders of the ancient city.

.....

“F*ck...” Wolf’s eyebrows creased, “The City of the Ancients seems to lack humans, and the very first monster we see are Phantom Tier Lv 66 with attacks of 1900; do they want to scare people to death with such high attack? The frontlines had better be prepared; Phantom Tiers with 1900 attack actually have around 3000 attack in total!”

Matcha lifted her shield as she observed the distance, “As for our defensive method... Heavenly Tower Shield, receive the damages from the first wave! Mages, Archers, Musketeers, prepare to fire!”

In the air, countless arrows, spells, and gunfire exploded within the chaos of the monster wave. Although the Sinister Goblins were high in level, in comparison to the might of the long ranged players of [Zhan Long], they were powerless. With Thousand Suns Over Snowy Fields taking command, there wouldn’t be a difference in power between the two groups. If she joined with Dong Cheng Yue, then Ba Huang City would fall to their might.

“Buzz....”

The Emperor Qin’s Sword emitted a low hum as I shook my blade. Activating [Seven Star Fragment Slash], I immediately swept away a group of monsters; the 1100 defenses of the goblins stood no chance. With my strength, the amount of experience I would be earning would be far greater than the rest of my players. With satisfaction, I watched the chain of numbers fly up–

3321 !

2987 !

3001 !

.....

“Eh...” Li Mu let loose a [Skyshaker Slash], “The Guild Master’s AOE move is too imbalanced. It has a range that’s just as big as the damage, it’s a shameless move...”

Yue Qing Qian lifted her dagger and struck at a goblin with [Twin Harmony Strike], “Brother Xiao Yao’s strength is a good thing, at least our [Zhan Long] won’t be feeling too pressured under the monster’s attacks...”

“Right!”

General Wang Jian slashed at a monster and laughed, “This isn’t only an occasion that calls for killing monsters, but also an occasion that requires focusing on defense. Look, all of the other players and guilds are having a rough time holding the monsters back...”

.....

While fighting, I turned around to look at what he was pointing at. Sure enough, the dense masses of Sinister Goblins were already swarming the defensive zones near the city walls. They smashed on multiple players’ shields with their clubs, shouting, “Hand over your never sagging women!” With the concentrated skills of [Stick Sweep] and [Heavy Chop], the players from the smaller guilds weren’t able to take any more hits from them. Many of the Knights’ shields had already broken, and could only rely on the rear guard to help repair their items. Although the front lines were still holding out, in the blink of an eye, over 1000 players had died to the hands of these Lv 66 Phantom Tier monsters.

This was inevitable. None of the players had ever seen a Phantom Tier monster at Lv 66 before, and at least 90% of the people here didn’t even know there was a tier higher than Elite Monsters, the new realization rendered them speechless. Then there were the players who hadn’t even reached their third class advancements. Thus, they didn’t have sufficient defenses, and suffered the extreme pain of the monsters’ attacks. Both the Monks and Knights similarly couldn’t hold out against the 1900 attack powers of the goblins.

“Keng....”

A wooden club smashed down, nearly killing a Lv 59 Knight 10 meters away from me. He retreated with his shield in hand, his face ashen, “No good, with 3 goblins attacking me, there’s no way I can survive this. Who can substitute for me?”

Dancing Forest came forward, her longbow raised, “Shall I?”

“Don’t be so reckless to die...” Old K muttered as he stepped ahead of Dancing Forest.

I wasn’t too optimistic about this situation. With a wave of my hand, I summoned the Flaming Tiger God. The tiger came dashing out from the glowing hexagrams in the sky, and began to attack with [Burstfire Raid]. Growing in size, it slashed at the monsters with its four large talons, causing a large string of numbers to fly out. Dashing into a crowd, it unleashed a [Fierce Roar], killing hundreds of Sinister Goblins in the blink of an eye.

“Dear god...” Bai Qi held his battleaxe loosely as his eyes popped out in surprise, “Is the Guild Master’s pet really a pet? Even the strongest Mage wouldn’t beat his pet in terms of burst damage right?”

Matcha answered him, “It’s a Valkyrie Tier BOSS pet that’s already past Lv 60, what do you think? If it didn’t have a huge amount of damage, would it really be a Valkyrie Tier BOSS pet then...”

Bai Qi sucked in a breath of air, “It’s fortunate that this tiger pet belongs to the Guild Master then. If Jian Feng Han or Soaring Dragon was its owner, then I’d hate this pet to death...”

Wang Jian chuckled, “Don’t worry, Jian Feng Han will get a pet as strong as this sooner or later. For the meanwhile, we all need to work harder. As long as we grow strong, we won’t fear anyone else!”

Li Mu nodded, “Yea, after this we should back to the Fire Stone Valley. We should find plenty of high leveled pets there. Although Valkyrie Tier ones probably won’t be there, most of them should at least be Purple Tier, and there may even be a few Emperor Tiers. Anything is better than my Bronze Tier Giant Wasp...”

“Hehe, we’ll go after the City of the Ancients and focus our energies on getting better pets!”

“Yes!”

.....

It turned out that my Flaming Tiger God had a motivational effect on everyone around us, not bad. It had also given me a generous amount of experience. If nothing unexpected happened, then as long as I didn’t die by the end of the 10th wave, I would reach Lv 68. Leveling past Lv 60 was rather difficult, as everyone knew. Even the number one player, Fang Ge Que, was only Lv 67, showing how hard it was.

“Crash...”

The deaths of all of the Sinister Goblins also led to a massive amount of equipment being dropped. However, a single look at them all showed that most of the items were only Green, Bronze or Silver Tier, nothing of interest. The first wave of monsters shouldn’t be dropping good equipment just yet. <Destiny> had planned this from the very beginning after all.

After striking back from our defenses, [Zhan Long] stood motionless but victorious. The other guilds had already died many times and I counted over a thousand casualties. There were many players from Lv 40 to 50 that hadn’t known the dangers of coming here and didn’t expect the first wave to be full of Lv 66 Phantom Tier monsters. Therefore, many met their ultimate demise and went back empty handed.

However, the treasure still tempted people enough to lose their reason, and many others were still joining in. Everyone began to charge towards the gates of the city, only to be shot down like prey by the NPC archers.

.....

After defending the place for nearly an hour, a huge pile of dead corpses had formed in front of us. The Sinister Goblins had pretty much all been killed. Yue Qing Qian and Wolf were organizing people to sweep across the battlefield and collect all of the equipment so that we could distribute

them later. This had to be done, otherwise the equipment would have disturbed the order of our guild if everyone decided to go on a crazy looting spree. It can be said that nothing was more important in a large guild than order. Which was needed to maintain the guild's stability.

“Ai...”

Li Mu looked at the sword in his hand and growled, “This battle is far too fierce. In just one wave, my weapon is already down 27%. In 2 more waves or so, I'll have to go back and change my equipment...”

Old K said, “Likewise, my equipments are down 31%. Killing monsters is always like this....”

I looked at my Emperor Qin's Sword, and laughed hard at the two.

Li Mu's mouth twitched in annoyance, “Get lost, what a shameless durability...”

Chapter 274: Through the Clouds Slash

With the Emperor Qin's Sword on my shoulder, I smiled: "Too bad there aren't many PK fights here, or else I could trigger my Emperor Qin's Sword's [Kill For Blood] effect. Yesterday, during the group battle at Magic Tracking Forest, I added 221% to my weapon's attack power. It was too awesome! Haha..... "

Note: [Kill For Blood] With each kill, the weapon increases 1% attack power. Adds the damage done by the weapon, instead of the one dealt onto the player.

.....

Li Mu, glanced at the [Flying Dragons] that were not far off and said with an evil smile, "Actually, you could go there to pick a fight and kill some people in [Flying Dragons]. Then, the weapon damage would grow, and the probability of seizing the final BOSS would also increase. Tsk tsk, honestly, your Emperor Qin's Sword is seriously omnipotent. If it killed 1000 players, 1000% weapon damage would be added, and your attack power would be 20000? Cang Cheng, with 2900 defense, would probably die in one strike....."

I continued shouldering the Emperor Qin's Sword and replied, "Nah. Respecting life is an attitude towards life. It also wasn't easy for others to level up. As long as they aren't the enemy, I won't willingly kill them."

Behind me, an Archer helplessly interrupted, "Guild Master, your sword is jabbing me....."

"Oh. Sorry, Brother....."

"It's alright. Just promote me to senior leader and I will forgive you."

"Go away. You dare threaten me, a minor leader? Discharged....."

"Brilliant leader, don't fire me. I planned to use this position to pick up ladies. Based on the fact that I'm a 34 year old who's still not married and goes on blind dates daily, please forgive me. I will repay you with loyalty and devotedly serve [Zhan Long]..... "

“.....”

.....

Matcha’s beautiful lips quirked up slightly. She had already gotten used to these shameless conversations from the different kinds of people in the [Zhan Long] guild. While staring off into the distance and carrying the Glass Spear of the Dragon Soul, she uttered, “Each wave will have one BOSS. We don’t know which gate the first wave’s BOSS will come out from either. Wuwu...I hope it’s where [Zhan long] is located. That would be good.....”

“I am afraid it’s the opposite.....” Li Mu answered with his fist clenched. “Newest update. A Purple Tier goblin leader BOSS appeared south of the City of the Ancients. [Vanguard]’s 17000 main players are defending there. If nothing unexpected happens, that BOSS will definitely fall in the hands of Jian Feng Han. A Purple Tier BOSS would definitely be killed in five minutes max.....”

Holding his war axe, Old K laughed in high fighting spirit, “Li brat, should we bring some people over there to snatch this boss?”

“Nah.....”

I calmly explained, “It’s just a Purple Tier BOSS, we won’t benefit anyways. [Vanguard] also has about 20 times more people than we do. Let’s just wait here quietly and concentrate on slaughtering monsters. I’ve already checked: a wave of monsters increases our guild’s level up progress by 5%. After we slay 9 more waves of monsters, our guild will rise to Level 4. This is more important.”

Old K nodded, “Alright, we’ll listen to you!”

After less than three minutes of resting and waiting, the system bell rang in the air. As expected, Jian Feng Han had killed the BOSS—

“Ding!”

System notification: Congratulations to player Jian Feng Han, who successfully killed the first boss of the [City of the Ancients] in Ba Huang City. He was rewarded +1 Charm, 5% experience in his current level, and

receives the S rank Skill book【Through the Clouds Slash】!

.....

“So sad.....” Matcha chuckled bitterly as she held the spear, “I thought it was only a Purple Tier BOSS, so the results would be simple. It actually also rewarded charm stats and an S rank skill book. Er.. let me check..... [Through the Clouds Slash] is an AOE skill book. It’s great for Swordsmen and Knights to learn, and it has a 20 meter attack range. Now Jian Feng Han’s attack stats will be even more perfect.....”

Li Mu was jealous to death, “A Swordsman that possesses an AOE skill is a perfect Swordsman. So far, in [Zhan Long], only Guild Master is a perfect Swordsman....Wang Jian, the others, and I don’t even count. So sad.....”

I smiled, “Stop bullshiting. It’s just a BOSS. There will be 9 more major BOSSes in the City of the Ancients. Keep working hard. A BOSS will definitely come out from here, the north gate, and we will seize it then.....”

“And fight against the [Flying Dragons]?” Li Mu questioned with a smile.

I laughed as the Emperor Qin’s Sword in my hands flashed, “Yup. Why should the current [Zhan Long] yield to to [Flying Dragons]? Let’s fight. I wouldn’t want the [Flying Dragons] to acquire skill books to strengthen our enemies.....”

“Alright!”

.....

Around 10 minutes later, the gate of the City of the Ancients slowly opened, and a blood-colored flood flowed out. This time, it was a troop of dwarf warriors clad in blood red armor. These Lv 67 Dwarf Berserkers were just skeleton warriors. These lifeless beings that had been dead for years, rushed into the battlefield with war axes, coming to give us experience!

“Defend! The levels of these monsters are higher and their attack is

even greater!”

I swung the Emperor Qin’s Sword and bellowed, “Don’t try to attract the monsters to the front of our camp. Let them come looking here in hostility by themselves, and we’ll kill them when they approach. Don’t allow the Dwarf Berserkers to assemble in front of us. We won’t be able to handle them!”

The crowd nodded. [Pillars of Fire and Ice] flew into the air, as [Zhan Long] continued to maintain the advantage of higher damage output. Compared to [Zhan Long], the nearby [Flying Dragons] seemed more conservative. Although they definitely had the advantage in numbers, they only dared to attack after they had arranged five rows of defense. But this was also why they could hold their ground!

“Kengkengkeng.....”

The Dwarf Berserker brandished his war axe and struck the Knight’s shield. Immediately, more than ten people in the [Flying Dragons]’s first line of defense died. The Healers almost couldn’t keep up with their healing. Soaring Dragon’s face turned slightly pale. and he thundered, “Hold it. All third advancement Knights use [Heavenly Shield Wall] now and hold your ground!”

Black Tortoise faintly replied, “Leader, we only have 7 third advancement Knights. There’s no point in giving us this specific command.....”

Soaring Dragon’s face turned green, “Damn. You should have told me that earlier.....”

.....

Not far away, [Zhan Long]’s large group of people burst into laughter. Although [Flying Dragons] had more people, [Zhan Long] did better in the area of developing talented people.

Li Mu questioned as he struck out with a [Skyshaker Slash]. “Eh. Who’s our statistician? Let’s see how many third advancement players we have?”

“It’s me.....”

Matcha said as she waved her hand, causing a [Phantom Ray Slash] to slice through the monsters. “The leveling progress of [Zhan Long] is advancing well these days. Our guild has a total of 117 third advancement players. Among these players, there are 19 third advancement Swordsmen, 14 third advancement Knights, 21 third advancement Mages, and 11 third advancement Berserkers. The rest are of other professions.”

I asked with a smile, “What about our [Heavenly Shield Wall]?”

“Wanna see?”

“Show me.....”

“Ok!”

Matcha suddenly moved her shield and roared, “Complete Shield Wall!”

Instantly, the 14 Knights in the front line all raised their shields. Buzzing sounds burst forth as shields magically appeared, grew larger, then solidified and froze in front, forming a metallic wall before [Zhan Long]’s camp. This was the effect of the shield wall, the skill that the third advancement Knights were all proud of. This [Heavenly Shield Wall] formed by a group of Knights was impregnable; even the elite forces wouldn’t be able to destroy it instantly. Of course, if a group of third advancement Swordsmen used [Blade Rush], which could thrust through any obstacles, then even the shield walls would not be able to defend against it.

The Dwarf Berserkers’ war axes clashed against the shield wall. Not much damage was caused; it was totally enduring. The difference between third advancement Knights and second advancement Knights could instantly be recognized. Levels meant everything. With the support of advanced skills and resistibility, even those with weak equipment could resist.

“Roar.....”

Flaming Tiger God raged through the monsters. With 1800+ defense, it had around the same defense as middle or high level Knights, and with its ability to recover through [Blood Drain], it had no problems keeping its

health up. Also, the three main skills, [Flame Claw], [Fierce Roar] and [Burstfire Raid], could focus on targeted killing. It immediately cleared a path within the swarm of monsters. As a group of Dwarf Berserkers charged towards the tiger for blood, I controlled and activated the skill [Flame Armor] !

Pieces of flame armor appeared around the little tiger, one by one. All of the Dwarf Berserkers' attack damages decreased to about 200. The defending effect of this [Flame Armor] was even better than my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. It was also why the tiger could charge through monsters as if the area was deserted.....

Experience kept rising like crazy. Not long after, someone had even received a Devil Token, and was beyond ecstatic.

After nearly an hour, numerous carcasses of the Dwarf Berserkers lay beneath the city. The battle was at its end. The second wave of monsters had been blocked by us, and [Zhan Long] hadn't really suffered any losses either. We had replaced a few groups on the left side; it was too easy to die when group members did not have good teamwork.

"This time the BOSS should be coming to our side right?" While holding her staff, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands flew up to look into the distance. Suddenly, her eyes widened, and she chuckled, "Boss, the BOSS is really coming out of the north gate. It's really the BOSS, a Lv 67 Purple Tier BOSS..... "

I stared into the distance. Sure enough, among the swarm of Dwarf Berserkers, a brawny dwarf holding a black war hammer strode out. With a rotten body covered by armor, he looked distantly with bloodshot eyes and roared, "For the glory of the war hammer tribe, we will never yield to the shameful humans. We will never be slaves again. KILL. Kill all of the humans!"

Finally, about 100+ monsters led by the BOSS rushed toward us. With our [Zhan Long]'s position just in front of the gate, we were the first to face them. Of course, the BOSS would naturally be ours.

.....

However, just at that moment, within the nearby camp of the [Flying Dragons], Soaring Dragon waved his hands and bellowed, “Fierce Tiger, bring our first team to steal the BOSS. This King Of The Berserkers is ours. No one else can take it away!”

“Brother Xiao Yao!” Wolf also panicked, as he raised his dagger and looked towards me.

Wordlessly, I lifted the tip of my Emperor Qin’s Sword and bellowed. “I will go below the city and attract the BOSS here. Li Mu and Matcha, prepare men to assist me!”

Almost at the same time as me, Fierce Tiger led a troop of a hundred men, and darted below the city. 100 yards below the city was still within the elite NPC archers’ attack range. Despite knowing this, nobody cared, for the sake of going after the BOSS!

.....

“Quick. Draw the BOSS’ aggro! Wind Elves Archers, attack from afar!” Fierce Tiger yelled, as he ran with the war axe in hand.

“Shua shua.....”

Two Wind Elves flew up at the same time. Unfortunately, before they even reached the sky, they were shot down by the Lv 70 elite archers defending the walls!

Chapter 275: Ten Way Blade

As our boots crossed the line of fire, everyone ran for their lives, hoping that they could be the first to see a BOSS and lead it back to their own battle camps. Every BOSS that was killed had a game-wide system notification, so that the players not only got the drops but, more importantly, got the bragging rights for killing it. Due to those extra benefits, [Flying Dragon] also desperately wanted to capture the BOSS!

More than 50 players from [Flying Dragon] entered the range of the Archers practically at the same time as me. Raising my head towards the city walls, a rain of arrows flew straight at us. I immediately raised my hand and [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] rose from the ground to surround my body. Right as [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] encased me, my body shook as I was struck by a dozen arrows. When my health fell below 50%, I hastily cast [Heal] and as it continued to drop, I gulped down a Lv 8 potion!

+1050 !

+2000 !

Once my health was almost full, I looked around to find bloody bodies scattered around. Of the dozen players from [Flying Dragon] that Fierce Tiger brought over, the arrows killed over half of them. But, as before, there were still a few Swordsman under the protection of their party who had rushed towards the BOSS, immediately raising their swords to activate skills!

312 !

344 !

351 !

Those were sorry damage numbers, and they were far from breaking the BOSS' defense, but it was still enough to aggro the boss over!

As I locked onto the BOSS, I waved my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

2544 !

There was a substantial break in the defense, and more than 77% of the aggro moved onto me. A Berserker roared and lifted his battle axe, charging straight at me. I turned around to run, and at the same time, I heard a yelp of pain behind me. Sixty of the people Fierce Tiger had brought over had become hedgehogs, and only thirty or so people desperately retreated as they ran for their lives!

I felt a chill behind me as another round of arrows shot straight at me. I couldn't just withstand that!

My body dipped as I activated [Blade Rush]!

“Whoosh”

Five numbers appeared in the air, along with many MISSES. At the same time, I stepped out of the range of fire, and the NPC archers on the wall no longer targeted me. Behind me was Fierce Tiger, bringing around 20 people who were chasing after him, one of who's face was red with anger as he yelled, “F*ck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you didn't think that you could just waltz in here and claim the BOSS as yours, did you?”

“Hong!”

Raging with flames, Fierce Tiger hurled his battle axe, activating the third advancement skill, [Battle Axe Throw]!

I came to a running stop and turned around just as a big MISS flew above my body. The time it took to activate [Battle Axe Throw] was fairly long, making it easy to dodge.

“Kill!”

I ducked as it brushed past my body, and my sword stabbed a Knight in the chest with [Wind Blade]!

3122 !

At the moment of the instant kill, there was a system notification: Congratulations! You killed a player and your weapon【Emperor Qin's Sword】's attack power has been raised by 1% until you log out!

.....

Using [Haste], I rushed towards our battle camp. Li Mu, Matcha, Song Han, Yue Qing Qian, and the others also brought a team of [Zhan Long]'s elite and charged towards us. On the other side, Drunken Spear also brought a group of [Flying Dragon]'s players to come at us. This was truly a guild duel for the BOSS. There was no way to avoid it. Since [Zhan Long] and [Flying Dragon] were old enemies, any sparks now could easily start a war.

My eyes flashed and I shouted, "Matcha, Thousand Suns, bring people here to kill the BOSS. Li Mu, bring the Valiant camp to kill [Flying Dragon]. I'll join as well!"

"Okay"

General Li Mu laughed aloud. The players of the Valiant group had a deep seated hate for [Flying Dragon]. This time, they were fighting [Flying Dragon] under [Zhan Long]'s banner; their hatred for each other was completely understandable!

Soaring Dragon lifted his staff, and locked an [Indigo Sea Arrow] onto Li Mu.

2665 !

A third advancement mage was very strong against heavy armor users. It was too terrifying!

Li Mu chugged down a potion and continued to advance. He ran in a zigzag to avoid being locked onto by spells. However, the opposing Archers began to launch a barrage of arrows, stopping the leaders of the Valiant Bravery Camp from advancing.

"Here I come!"

The Emperor Qin's Sword shook as I ran over to Li Mu's side. Waving my sword, seven shooting stars formed and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] was cast, aimed towards [Flying Dragon]'s Mages and Archers. In that instant, a row of damage numbers appeared---

3177 !

3319 !

2974 !

.....

At the same time, Emperor Qin's Sword's unique skill increased to 11%. With my blade, I killed another 10 people in one go. I continued to advance under the protection of my Flaming Tiger God. I started targeting flying opponents and three of them fell. Under the effects of the Pardon Card, I did not have to worry about anything.

Behind me, a large number of Valiant group players arrived. Under the command of General Wang Jian, they started to resist against [Flying Dragon]'s attack!

“Boom!”

In the middle of an explosion, Old K used [Whirlwind Blade] and killed a dozen players. With [Savage Jump Slash] he took out a few more mages. After chugging down a potion, he attacked back with [Skyshaker Slash], but such attacks were a bit too brazen. Cang Lei also lifted his battle axe. Charging in with his [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall], he sent a few shielded players flying. His innate godly strength was practically a BUG in battle.

Unfortunately, Old K's weapon did not have a lifesteal effect. Otherwise, he would be the most terrifying death god on the battle field!

The Emperor Qin's Sword shook as it emitted a sound. It hadn't even been three minutes, but I had already killed off 47 people. At the same time, the Emperor Qin's Sword's attack increased by 47%. In this situation, the more I battled, the stronger I became, while the more [Flying Dragon] battled, the weaker they became!

“Drunken Spear, aim at Xiao Yao Zi Zai and kill him off quickly!”

Fierce Tiger was yelling from far away, his battle axe raised. He had already lost the courage to fight with me himself.

.....

“Bang....”

Drunken Spear’s spear pierced through a [Zhan Long] Swordsman, and continued his advance forward, piercing through the armor protecting my arm--

1482 !

That guy, his attack had gotten better again! With his feet planted firmly on the ground, he activated [Scorching Spring]. It was a direct hit, and I was left with only around 20% health!

With my blade shivering, I quickly ran towards him. While he was pulling back his spear, I jumped and landed a flying kick on his knee. His body buckled, and I immediately activated [Fierce Ice Blade] at his waist, giving him no time to defend against it!

“Shit!”

Drunken Spear groaned as my blade directly hit his body, dealing 3718 points of damage!

“God, how is his attack so high?!”

With his arms pressed against the ground, he jumped back quickly and yelled, “Quick, lock all your [Heal]s onto me. If you don’t want me to die, do it quickly!”

I waved my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. Drunken Spear’s eyes were filled with despair, “Please don’t. Please don’t kill me.....”

A line of numbers flew. His luck was not bad....

+1426 !

+1378 !

+1421 !

4271 !

Unfortunately, he was able to escape! With a ‘Pa’ sound, a [Scatter Shot] struck me in the chest. For a brief moment, I was stunned, and I was

forced to stop chasing after him. If I was to advance, I would probably end up being the one killed.

I quickly retreated. As I looked into the distance, cutting down any approaching [Flying Dragon] players.

.....

“Motherf*cker....”

Soaring Dragon gritted his teeth: “How is Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s attack so high? He almost killed Drunken Spear in a few seconds. This doesn’t even make sense. This is too.....”

Black Tortoise pondered aloud, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s sword is the number one ranked Emperor Qin’s Sword, a Valkyrie Tier weapon. It has a unique effect that raises 1% weapon attack for every kill. It looks like it has raised by at least 50% already. If not, it would have been impossible to damage Drunken Spear this much. What a shame, Drunken Spear was focusing all his damage, but he was still unable to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai in that moment. With that unique effect, Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s strength will become greater and greater..... Boss, unless we can kill him and send him out of the Ancient City now, it is best if we do not fight against him. Truth to be told, right now, we can’t beat Xiao Yao Zi Zai.”

Soaring Dragon folded his arms, “I know. We shouldn’t act rashly and should change up our tactics. Have all the mages stand in the front and aim their [Pillars of Fire & Ice] at Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I don’t believe that with over 100 mages casting [Pillars of Fire & Ice], we won’t be able to kill a mere Swordsman. He’s human, not a god!”

Black Tortoise nodded, “Mhm!”

At that moment, a system message appeared: [Zhan Long] had slayed the second BOSS.

“Ding”

[System Notice]: Congratulations to Player Strawberry Matcha for successfully killing the second BOSS in the【City of the Ancients】(Ba Huang City). As rewards: Charm +2, Experience + 10%, and the S-Rank

skill book【Ten Way Blade】!

.....

“We got the BOSS!”

I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and yelled, “Ceasefire!”

As expected, the players of [Zhan Long] stopped. With mutual understanding, [Flying Dragon] stopped as well. Everyone was considered smart; there was no point in battling anymore, and immediately ceased fire. On the battlefield, there were 400+ dead [Flying Dragon] members. [Zhan Long] did not lose much in comparison; since I was tanking in the front, only around 50 members were killed.

Soaring Dragon gritted his teeth, “F*ck, it really was stolen....”

Drunken Spear raised his spear, “We never had the chance to steal it anyways. We had nobody that could contend against Xiao Yao Zi Zai, how would we possibly steal it....”

Black Tortoise’s eyes grew cold, “In my opinion, we shouldn’t stop fighting. We should just directly kill all of [Zhan Long], or else we won’t be able to take the next BOSS either!”

Drunken Spear shook his head, “No, that would make it even worse. If [Zhan Long] is attacked, [Blood Contract], [Ruined Bones], and their allied guilds will come to help. With the five allied guilds, even [Vanguard] was taken down; [Flying Dragon] is not much stronger than [Vanguard]. Even if we did beat the five guilds, we would not have many members remaining. How would we survive the next 8 waves? These monsters are already very strong, and the ones in the later waves will be even stronger; everyone has witnessed it. We should be setting our sights more towards the long term.”

Soaring Dragon laughed, “Ha. Drunken Spear is right. Our initial goal was to gain experience and obtain the God of Commerce Badge. If we can’t get the God Commerce Badge, even if we stomped [Zhan Long], it wouldn’t be considered a victory!”

.....

[Zhan Long] held its formation.

Matcha happily held a green skill book. With a wave of her hands, the details of the skill book appeared--.

【Ten Way Blade】(S Rank) : Call forth three sharp blades around the target and continuously damage the target over a period of time. Required Level: 60. Required Class: Assassin.

Chapter 276: Dark Raider

“Ah, an Assassin skill

With the Emperor Qin's Sword in hand, I smiled, “To summon blades surrounding a target and dealing AOE damage over time, this is a great assassination skill, especially in close range. Assassinations will also be possible with this [10 Way Blade] attack, which increases your strength tremendously.”

Li Mu grinned, “Our guild has no shortage of assassins. Sister Matcha, how will you handle this skill book?”

Matcha blinked, and smiling towards the two sisters Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, said, “You two are so strong already, let's give this to Wolf. He is [Zhan Long] studio's top Assassin, though his current strength is too weak, so...don't take offense okay?”

Yue Qing Qian chuckled, “Ah, no problem! My sister and I will rely on our own strengths to obtain new skills!”

“Great!”

In a flash the [10 Way Blade] Skill book was transferred over to Wolf.

“Shua”

A ray of light signified that Wolf successfully learned it. Trying it out, a “Ding” sound rang out as three sharp blades suddenly appeared and floated around Wolf. I could only imagine what the pain those that ventured too close would feel.

.....

“Alright! The second BOSS has been conquered. Everybody get ready for the third wave of monsters!”

I quickly examined our rear guard, and found that it was lacking the most people, so I called out to Matcha, “Call up our 1100+ member reserve force, we might need them later. Besides, taking this opportunity to gain some experience isn't bad for them either!”

Matcha nodded, "They are just outside the quest area watching. I'll get Dancing Forest to bring them over!"

"Okay."

A few minutes later, the Archer Dancing Forest led the whole party over; on every member's shoulder floated an image of a ferocious dragon – the emblem of [Zhan Long]. With 1000+ people behind her and a longbow in hand, Dancing Forest asked, "Guild Master, how will you organize this group of people?"

I directed them towards [Zhan Long]'s left flank, "When the third wave comes, our left flank won't be able to hold them off and will be completely wiped out. Dancing Forest, you guys will be over there and take some Monks and Knights from the main guild. With the Monks and Knights tanking up front, we should be able to hold for at least 3-5 waves. The experience here is so plentiful; even if some die, they will not lose out."

Dancing Forest nodded, "Ok, I understand!"

.....

Right at this time, the north gates slowly opened as the third wave of monsters marched out. It was a group of ugly orcs waving swords, halberds, axes, and other weapons. They rode on huge wolves, covered by heavy fur that exuded an overpowering stench. The roar of the orcs echoed loudly across the battlefield, sending a shiver down every player's spine; the difficulty of the monsters seemed to have increased again!

"Every person hold your defensive formations!" Matcha loudly commanded.

The front group of Knights hunkered down with raised shields. From afar, the dense mass of monsters marched closer, the thunder of their roars splitting the sky. At the same time, I was able to obtain the stats from the closest orc; compared to the previous wave, these monsters were truly much stronger!

【Dark Raider】(Phantom Tier Monster)

Level: 68

Attack: 1650-2140

Defense: 1120

Health: 19000

Skills:【Heavy Strike】【Flame Blade】【Cruel Shock】

Description: Dark Raiders are ancient orcs that conquered the wolves and made them into their own mounts to loot human civilization for food and weapons. These Dark Raiders have been summoned by the evil forces of the ancient city to become the basic guardians. Dark Raiders' quick movement speed and brutal attacks have left many human armies trembling in fear – be cautious when dealing with them.

.....

“Be careful!” I loudly shouted, “Their attacks have upper limits of 2140 and their healths are almost 20000. They know [Heavy Strike] and [Flame Blade]; the third skill Cruel Shock may be AOE. Healers, be prepared to use group heals indiscriminately on the front line, otherwise we won't be able to hold them

Darling Duck lifted her staff, “We know, Boss.....”

“Hou, hou

The first group of Dark Raiders arrived. Raising their axes and swords, they landed heavy blows, slicing and chopping at the frontline tanks' heavy armor and shields. The damage from [Heavy Strike] and [Flame Blade] was terrifying, fatal numbers appeared one after another --

1726!

1337!

1937!

.....

Some people even sustained 2000+ points of damage, truly frightening! Fortunately Darling Duck and other Healers prepped group heals for the

front line, otherwise, we would have had many casualties for sure. However, some had bad luck and died from receiving multiple critical hits.

“Keng, keng keng

Grinding against the heavy shields, the battle axes of the Dark Raiders riding on their huge wolf mounts created long red sparks. The various high level attacks left [Zhan Long]’s front line continuously shaking; we could only struggle to fight back. Old K jumped in, activating [Whirlwind Blade] and [Savage Jump Slash], while Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang also charged in with their skills.

Wolf continuously slashed at the Dark Raiders in front of him and with a wave of his hand, [10 Way Blade] was activated. Suddenly the sharp blades surrounding Wolf started to slice through enemies. 1500+ damage numbers flied up and two Dark Raiders cried out, completely unable to withstand the damage, and fell down.

“Hong!”

My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Great Realm of Desolation] swept through the front monsters. The latter skill’s AOE effect dealt massive damage to the surrounding Dark Raiders as well. My Flaming Tiger God roared mightily, once again thriving in the midst of the monsters. Bounding forward with [Burstfire Raid], he lifted his head and roared, showing his true colors with the death of more than a dozen Dark Raiders.

“Pa ta....”

A pitch-black card dropped on the ground; I reached over to pick it up. The card had the image of a wolf’s head and looking at the description, I was secretly pleased – it was really good stuff –

[Dark Raider Card]: Increases user’s attack by 10% and attack speed by 5%, Requirement: Level 60, Duration: 120 minutes

.....

Not far off, General Wang Jian also found a [Dark Raider Card], amazed

and stuttered, “This.....”

I grinned, “General Wang Jian, the Swordsman class relies on attack and attack speed. Do not hesitate to use this; it would be best if the whole front line has this aggressive buff effect. This will be very useful for us; 10% increased attack and 5% increased attack speed would boost our damage output considerably.”

“Mhmm!”

General Wan Jian reached out, activated his card as I did the same. [Dark Raider Card] and [Pardon Card] belonged to different categories so the effects could overlap. Waving my Emperor Qin’s Sword around, I could easily feel the increase in attack speed. This should be good enough, since with my current mana pool, I definitely could not continuously use my 7 main skills. One of the main uses of this card would be to rely on normal attacks to quickly cut down melee monsters; only noobs would activate this effect and still use skills.

A short time later, my inventory was quickly filled with seven [Dark Raider Card]s. Wolf, Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, and Old K all received found such cards and received card’s buff effect. [Zhan Long]’s frontline all had Dark Raider heads above us, it was very spectacular.

On our flank, screams rang out. The defense of the players that once held that position could not withstand the Dark Raiders’ fierce offense. The crushing effect of one battle-axe toss left the group trembling, this was the [Cruel Shock] skill! The skill’s effect had a range of three meters and suddenly 4 players in front of it were killed from 2000+ damage. With no more than 1500+ defense, there was no way they could have survived.

“Dancing Forest!”

Looking into the distance, I commanded, “The opportunity has come, bring up the reserves to quietly patch up the formation!”

“Alright!”

Dancing Forest laughed and waved her hand. The Monks and Knights carried their swords forward and slowly filled in the positions. In less

than 10 minutes, the backline Healers, Swordsmen, Mages, and other classes got into position, and [Zhan Long]'s 100 meter long front line had been reinforced with 1000+ reserve players. In addition, the main guild pushed quite a few heavy armor players over there, so the defense there was not questionable at all.

.....

“A BOSS has appeared.....”

Towards the end of the third wave, Yue Qin Qiang noticed on the east side, “There is a Dark Raider King riding a wolf near the east gate. Should we head over to steal the BOSS?”

“There is likely no need...” I frowned, “How many guilds are there at the east gate?”

“That area is [Prague]'s and [Wrath of the Heroes]'s defensive positions. Also [Hero's Mound]'s First Division is there, Cang Cheng and about 2000+ players....”

As soon as Yue Qing Qian finished speaking, General Lian Po laughed, “If I'm not wrong, there will be a dogfight. Cang Cheng and his [Hero's Mound]'s First Division have entered Ba Huang City without establishing anything. They must be very anxious for a BOSS to appear; they will definitely try to steal it. [Prague] is a strong veteran guild and certainly will not miss this event. [Wrath of Heroes] restructured itself under the new steady and fair governance by Tyrant of Western Chu so they have a number of expert players. The emergence of the Dark Raider King will certainly lead to conflict between those three main guilds.”

I nodded and smiled, “Mhmm, [Zhan Long] will stay here and rest. The fighting in the east has nothing to do with us; besides it's only a Purple Tier BOSS. Do not be too anxious, wait until an Emperor Tier BOSS appears before moving out.”

Yue Qing Qian grinned, “Ah, listen to Brother Xiao Yao. Whatever you say shall be!”

.....

After a few minutes, General Li Mu proclaimed with a glint in his eyes, “Sure enough, the Dark Raider King incited conflict! An altercation has arisen between [Hero’s Mound] First Division and [Wrath of Heroes]!”

Seeing there were only a few Dark Raiders left near us, I sheathed my sword and grinned, “I shall go over to watch the action!”

General Wang Jian and Wolf both stepped forward, “Brother Xiao Yao, we will be your protectors and go with you!”

My mouth twitched, “If you also wanted to watch, tell me directly...we’ll have to move quickly and stealthily over there and back. Once the BOSS dies, immediately head back in order to return in time for the 4th wave!”

“Yup!”

Beneath the City of the Ancients, us three players traveled quickly as smoke and dust billowed around us. There had only been three waves so far, but the outskirts of the City of the Ancients were littered with corpses. Even the system interface had displayed a distressing message—

Player Death Toll: 113,227

Chapter 277: It's Not That Simple

The wind whistled through the battlefield; the area around the ancient city was devastated. There were bodies littered everywhere and broken weapons scattered around. For the sake of a [God of Commerce Badge], the entire fighting force of Ba Huang City had been mustered and sent here.

East of the [City of the Ancients], a wiry raider, clad in black, charged through the crowd of people, killing everyone in his path. He held a long battle axe dripping with blood, as he swept through the crowd, leaving nothing but 2000+ damages in his wake: Dark Raider King, a Lv 68 Purple Tier BOSS. Although Purple Tier BOSSes weren't very special anymore, a Lv 68 BOSS was just too strong; all of the players felt hopeless when facing against it.

.....

"Knights, Monks, create a defense formation! Block the people from [Hero's Mound]!"

Within the crowd, Piggy carried his gun, and on his shoulder, was the Vice Guild Master banner of [Wrath of the Heroes]. Dark Raider King was in [Wrath of the Heroes]' battle camp, but Cang Cheng was only 20 meters away and charged quickly towards the BOSS. He used AOE skills one after another, and left entire groups of players dead. His equipment was just too strong. Along with having the strongest defense in Ba Huang City, he also possessed an attack power that could not be underestimated.

"Can't you defend any longer?" Liu Ying asked as he stood amongst the crowd, holding a sharpened blade, his eyes filled with rage and killing intent. "Cang Cheng, that scum of humanity, let's not talk about stealing other people's wh*res, but you also dare to steal our Purple Tier BOSS? As if I would let you! Mages, prepare to set fire to that bastard and kill him. Who cares if he has a high defense, he'll still die if he doesn't have a high magic defense!"

Behind Tyrant of Western Chu, the Lv 63 Mage Heart of Fire lifted up

her staff and gracefully took her stance as a [Pillars of Ice & Fire] burst from her staff, swallowing a group of [Hero's Mound] players. Immediately after, she turned around with a bluish purple arrow rising from her left hand and shot it right at Cang Cheng. The speed and control of the arrow was truly one of a kind!

“Bang!”

“2612 ! ”

Cang Cheng's health fell as he awkwardly backed away a few steps. In the process of his retreat, another arrow buried into his chest with a “Pa”, as a [Scattered Shot] stunned him. It came from the Lv 62 Archer Sonata, who pulled his bow back for another shot. Sonata's lips parted into a smile, “Cang Cheng, go die you scum!”

“Whoosh!”

Sonata's body began to give off a golden glow, and the mirage of an ancient god appeared above his head as a golden arrow materialized in the middle of the air and flew straight at Wang Ze Cheng's abdomen. It was [Shot of the Archery God], and was an Archer's third class advancement skill. Not only could the skill could bypass most defenses, it could also raise the attack power by 200%. It could even be said to be an Archer's sure kill skill!

“1940 ! ”

Regrettably, it still wasn't enough to kill Wang Ze Cheng. Sonata grinded his teeth, “That scum is truly hard to kill.”

Behind him, Heart of Fire raised her staff to activate [Dimension Leap], and shot another [Indigo Sea Arrow], along with a [Pillar of Fire & Ice].

“Uh.....”

Wang Ze Cheng woke up from his daze and immediately activated [Cleansing Wind], recovering 30% of his health. His boots hastily lifted from the ground, and with a “Pa” sound, he pushed away, retreating a couple of meters. Heart of Fire's [Indigo Sea Arrow] resulted in a MISS, but [Pillar of Fire & Ice] hit, and his health dropped to a sliver.

Thankfully, he had a group of Healers behind him to add health, and within moments, his health was full again.

“Motherf*cker..... Even that won’t kill him....” Sonata picked up his long bow, his eyes filled with killing intent. The fact that they didn’t succeed this time, meant that the next time would be even harder to kill Wang Ze Cheng.

Liu Ying picked up his sword and swept past, killing a Swordsman in the process, and said under his breath, “Sonata, Heart of Fire, don’t fight too much, our goal is the BOSS. We’ll just let that scum Wang Ze Cheng live a few more hours. You guys stay here and defend against [Hero’s Mound], I’ll go kill the BOSS!”

Sonata nodded, “Sure, Guild Master be careful! Let Drunken Cold Rain go with you, since his defense is 2400+, high enough to block a Purple Tier BOSS’s attacks!”

“Alright!”

.....

Within the crowd, the Lv 62 Knight Drunken Cold Rain stood tall, his shield blocking all of the Dark Raider King’s attacks, while his iron spear left bloody marks on the eye of the King’s mount. He had his target locked solidly onto the BOSS, and with his 2400 defense and 6000+ health, he could steadily tank the BOSS, while Liu Ying and Little Piggy dealt damage. [Wrath of the Heroes]’s strategy was fairly simple: they blocked out [Hero’s Mound] and kill the BOSS this round.

In the distance, [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division players saw through their strategy, but were helpless against it. In that short amount of time, they couldn’t charge over, as the enemies they were dealing with were Sonata and Heart of Fire, two experts who were definitely not going to let them pass. If any of [Hero’s Mound]’s experts wanted to break through, the consequence would likely be instant death by an [Indigo Sea Arrow].

.....

Standing a fair distance from the battlefield, I watched the fight

between [Hero's Mound]'s First Division and [Wrath of the Heroes], and further in the distance, [Prague]. I couldn't help but smile as I said, "Looks like [Wrath of Heroes] is no longer what it was in the past. With the addition of the three experts, Heart of Fire, Sonata, and Drunken Cold Rain, they were actually able to push back [Hero's Mound]'s First Division."

Wang Jian grinned, "That's right, if it was the old [Wrath of the Heroes], they probably would've already been defeated singlehandedly by Cang Cheng himself, not to mention the rest of the First Division."

Wolf said, "Looks like the Dark Raider King is already in the bag for [Wrath of Heroes], the only thing we don't know is who will kill the BOSS?"

"With the charm reward....." Wang Jian smiled, "It would not be unexpected that Tyrant of Western Chu would be the one to kill it right?"

My eyes turned cold as I said, "Well that will depend on what Liu Ying can even achieve..... Assuming he really is the one to kill it, then [Wrath of the Heroes] is only so much. If he spends time to train other people, then [Wrath of the Heroes] can potentially become even greater..."

"Yup!"

A few minutes later, the BOSS's health had dropped to the bottom and something beyond my expectations happened. Tyrant of Western Chu, Liu Ying, retreated a few steps, waved his hand and said, "Drunken Cold Rain, aggro the BOSS, Heart of Fire come kill it. These 3 points of charm will go to you!"

Heart of Fire nodded, and after a chain of spells, "Whoosh", the Dark Raider King cried out in pain as he fell to the ground, dropping a lot of equipment. At the same time, a bell rang through the field.

"Ding!"

System Announcement: Congratulations! Player Heart of Fire killed [City of the Ancients: Ba Huang City]'s third BOSS, and has earned +3 Charm and 30% experience, as well as the S-rank skill book [Flaming

Hailstorm]!

.....

“Heart of Fire killed the BOSS....” I murmured.

Wang Jian picked up his sword, “Brother Xiao Yao, lets go back. [Flaming Hailstorm] is an AOE spell, and it’s fated that Heart of Fire will learn it. This is a Mage that rivals our Thousand Suns Across Snowy Lands. In the future we’ll have to pay more attention; [Wrath of the Heroes] is definitely not what it used to be. The Eastern Gate has truly been amusing, to think that not only did [Hero’s Mound] First Division and [Prague] fight, but also that the rising [Wrath of the Heroes] also joined in. Very amusing....”

Wolf questioned, “Why didn’t [Prague] do anything?”

I scanned the area, “Its very simple; [Prague] has too many people. When Yan Zhao Warrior commanded them to get into formation, the guild members themselves took up 50% of the front line at the Eastern Gate. This also means that just [Prague] by itself will swallow up 12.5% of the three waves of the [City of the Ancients] monsters. This is an extremely crafty uncle; he already knows what the most profitable situation would be. Once [Prague] acts, they will definitely get the greatest reward.... Let’s go, we have our own battle to return to.”

“Okay.”

Wolf picked up his dagger and sheathed it, talking while he was running, “Brother Xiao Yao, if [Prague] is so calculating, will....[Zhan Long] and [Prague], finally battle against each other in the future?”

I thought for a moment, “Not necessarily.... In reality, every guild’s growth is different. [Hero’s Mound] and [Vanguard]’s structures are conquest based and relying on their battle powers to dominate the cities. [Prague]’s attitude, however, is completely different. Yan Zhao Warrior aims for a win-win situation, allowing the guild to slowly grow stronger. If nobody bothers them, then they won’t bother others. By that philosophy, [Prague]’s reputation will eventually travel to all four corners of the world. That is Yan Zhao Warrior.”

“Damn....”

Wang Jian took a deep breath, “If that’s true, then Yan Zhao Warrior, that old bastard, is the smartest person in Ba Huang City?”

I laughed, “It’s not actually that easy. Ba Huang City’s social hierarchy is too complicated, and its strength is scattered. Even if [Prague] doesn’t want to get involved, they still get embroiled in conflicts. On top of that, <Destiny> is a game that is very sophisticated, and contains all types of power struggles. Just this [City of the Ancients] event has all of the 2 million players in Ba Huang City fighting over a [God of Commerce Badge], forcing [Prague] to participate in the struggle, since missing out on this opportunity would make them fall behind all of the rest.”

“Do we have a chance of getting the [God of Commerce Badge]?”

“I’m not sure, we’ll just see as we go. First, we need to reach our goal of raising our guild to Level 4. This is the more practical goal!”

“Yeah....”

.....

When we three returned to [Zhan Long]’s battle camp, the north gate had just started to open. It was time for the fourth wave, one filled with crawling centipedes. They were all Lv 69 Phantom Tier monsters with very high attack, but low defense and health!

“Keep your positions! The things in front of you are glossy white opportunities for experience!” Old K said as he pumped his battle axe to encourage everyone.

Bai Qi said, “You might as well say glossy white thighs to get them even more energetic!”

Matcha was speechless, “.... Just concentrate on killing the monsters!”

I returned to my position in the formation with Yue Qin Qian guarding at my side. She grinned and said, “It seems that I feel the safest beside Brother Xiao Yao.....”

“Boom!”

[Seven Star Fragment Slash] cut through the crowd of monsters. Along with Flaming Tiger God's ranged attack skills, my experience bar soared. Yue Qing Qian's beautiful smiling eyes turned even sweeter, "Wah, to be with Brother Xiao Yao, there's simply more than just a safe feeling..."

I smiled back, "Oh... 'simply more'.... this makes me think of an allusion....."

"What allusion?"

Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, Yue Wei Lian, and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, the four beauties all came over, their faces expressing curiosity. It seemed very different to them that their Boss was actually going to cite an allusion.

I grinned, and said: "That allusion is.... hehe... about the differences between the English and Japanese languages. If you're on the subway, and a pervert cops a feel of you, you will quickly protest. Using English you say, 'STOP', and maybe the person will actually stop, but if you say 'Yamatte', he might not just stop at touching....."

(TL Note: Yamatte sort of means stop in japanese)

"....."

The beauties all grimaced: "Boss, you're too much...."

Chapter 278: The Second Magma Lance

After nearly an hour of fighting, the fourth wave of Centipedes finally fell to our formation. Phantom Tier monsters dropped not only Gold Tier equipment but also generous amounts of Devil Tokens. Whether they were turned in for experience or sold for gold, the rare Devil Tokens were always good. For the most part, the Devil Tokens and equipment dropped were quickly split within the small groups; there was no need to hand them over to the guild. This way, each person would be more motivated to continue fighting.

The Centipede Card was able to ignore 10% of the target's defense. Though it was inferior to the Dark Raider Card, many players that lacked high-tier cards were more than happy to make use of it. Musketeers and Archers in particular; ignoring 10% of a target's defense would raise their damage output to a whole new level!

.....

“Keng!”

With the Emperor Qin's Sword propped on the ground, I laughed while looking at the the rest of the centipedes in the distance, “Heavens bless us, please let the fourth wave's BOSS come to where we are, or else it would be too embarrassing!”

Lifting her spear, Matcha soared in the sky and smiled, “Boss, you can basically give up. I just got the news that the fourth wave's Boss is a Dark Beetle, a Lv 69 Emperor Tier BOSS. It refreshed nearby the South Gate. Jian Feng Han and a bunch of [Vanguard] members are guarding there, so we don't have much of a chance..... ”

“The South Gate?” I mused. “I think Han Bei Song's [Blood Contract] is also defending there. I don't know if there will be a conflict between them and [Vanguard], but if there is a conflict, [Blood Contract] will suffer.....”

Li Mu held his sword and said, “Emperor Tier BOSSes are not that easy to kill. Even if [Vanguard] has many members, it will still take them 10-15 minutes to defeat the BOSS. Should we bring players to the South Gate?”

I pondered and then shook my head, “No, guard our own position; it’s just the fourth wave. Let’s be patient; the best stuff will be at the end. Starting from the seventh wave, if there’s an opportunity, we will try and take the four remaining BOSSes!”

“Ah, alright!”

.....

As predicted, after a short 15 minutes, the system bell tolled—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations! Player Simple successfully killed the fourth BOSS of the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City), and has earned +4 Charm and 30% experience, as well as the S-rank skill book: [Magma Lance]!

.....

“Damn. [Magma Lance]!” I said as I clenched my fist.

“Guild Master, what’s wrong? What’s so special about [Magma Lance]? Is it unique, or what.....” Asked Dancing Forest.

I gritted my teeth and replied, “Dong Cheng Yue—Cang Yue also learned this [Magma Lance] S-rank skill. It has a fierce attack power. Simple will definitely take the time to master it and become even harder to deal with. She will become a top tier heavy firepower Mage in group battles, and she won’t be causing just a little damage to us. If Jian Feng Han properly utilizes this firepower and gives Simple extra protection, [Vanguard]’s group battle power will be extremely terrifying.”

Dancing Forest pressed her red lips together and laughed, “Here if we face the group that Simple is in, we will target her area with [Scatter Shot], and then Guild Master can just dash in and kill. No matter how strong they are, their health is limited. After the shield is broken, death is a Mage’s final destination. This fact will never change.”

I nodded, “Yup, I hope so! Prepare yourselves to greet the fifth wave. I hope the fifth wave’s BOSS will spawn at our location, or at the very least,

be be near us!”

Li Mu smiled and asked me, “Guild Master, I feel that... Although this [City of Ancients] final reward, [God of Commerce Badge], is very precious, every BOSS will drop a S-rank AOE skill; these skills are just as important. In such dire times, we must also fight for the BOSSes. Such skills can make or break a player. Our [Zhan Long] may never be able to compete numbers wise with guilds like [Vanguard] or [Prague], so we can only search for new ways to transcend. Aren’t the [City of the Ancients] BOSSes’ skill books the answer?”

I took a deep breath and smiled. “Li Mu, I know what you mean..... Alright. Li Mu, you choose a squad of Knights and Monks with high defense and health. Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, Matcha, Dancing Forest, and I will help and together we will form a BOSS assault party. Once a BOSS appears, we will immediately go and seize it while there is still a chance. True, enemies are all around us, but taking S-rank skill books from their hands is what we should do. When it’s time to be tough, [Zhan Long] will never be gentle.”

“Yeah, that’s what I’m talking about! As long as you approve, Valiant Bravery camp will attack at any time!”

“Okay! ”

.....

“Long, long, long.....”

The iron gates slowly opened, and the fifth wave bounced out. This time the monsters were relatively unique. It was actually a group of Jiangshi with sigils marked on their faces and clothed in Qing Dynasty era robes and officials’ boots. “Pa, pa, pa,” they skipped out. Their arms were rotten, and the skin on their fingers was peeling until the bones underneath were visible. Plus, their dark black fingernails were extremely sharp, and had blood dripping from the tips.

(TL note: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jiangshi>)

(Jiangshi are known to jump around to travel)

“Oh boy.....” Old K grinned. “This is just like those Jiangshi movies. Only...we aren’t sure how to attack them yet....”

Wolf laughed lightly, “Everyone, hold your breath so that the Jiangshi won’t know where you are.....”

Matcha actually froze and stood still holding her breath until a breath bar appeared over her head, indicating imminent suffocation.

“Pa.....”

I patted Matcha on the shoulder, unable to withhold my laughter. “Stop holding your breath. Prepare to strike. These Jiangshi are Lv 70 Phantom Tier monsters that have extremely high attack. All main players defend more positions, and don’t let your teammates die in the fight. Healers, do your best to heal all players located at the front in position!”

“Shua!”

A glowing light enveloped my body. It was Darling Ducky’s Lv 7 BUFF skill. It raised 14% of my defense, which meant it added 285 more defense. The whole team was now much different; after the BUFFs, the difference was as clear as night and day.

Li Mu said with a frown, “I can’t read the stats of the Lv 70 Phantom Tier monsters. Guild Master, you are already Lv 66. Please share the stats of the Jiangshi, or else everyone will suffer losses.”

“Okay!”

With a wave of my hand, the stats of the leading Jiangshi appeared in the guild channel.

【Ancient Jiangshi】 (Phantom Tier)

Level: 70

Attack: 1850-2340

Defense: 1180

Health: 24000

Skills: **【Sinister Stab】【Taxing Bite】【Severe Poison】**

Description: 【Ancient Jiangshi】 A group of dead people from the ancient times. Their corpses were stored in the Huai Mu Grooves and their souls lingered after absorbing negative Qi, becoming insensible Jiangshi with highly poisonous claws. They are driven by bloodlust and feared by numerous human armies. Please deal with them cautiously.

.....

“2340 damage..... ” Li Mu spoke in a quavery voice. “Everyone, be careful. Fighting with these Jiangshi will be extremely painful.”

“Okay,” Old K nodded.

I held up the Emperor Qin’s Sword and glanced at the effects of this godly weapon. [Kill for Blood] was at 87%, which meant the weapon damage was raised 87%. Great! Thanks to the brief duel just a while ago, my attack power was definitely the first in Ba Huang City now. When comparing the efficiency of slaying monsters, no one would even be close to mine.

“Roar..... ”

The swarm of Jiangshi with a rancid odor jumped towards us.

“Wu...”

Matcha frowned and lowered her eyes.

I quickly shouted, “Those who can’t bear the smell, turn off your sense of smell and attack immediately!”

I personally kept my sense of smell on; it allowed me to immerse myself in the game completely, as an expert would do. This smell wasn’t even that bad; during my time as a mercenary, my battles in the jungles and woods would be filled with the smell of dead bodies 24/7 to help disguise ambushes. So, this smell was almost normal to me.

Seeing a large horde of Jiangshi approaching rapidly, I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and tumultuously swung out [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Numerous extremely terrifying damage numbers flew up —

4237!

4661!

4983!

10004!

.....

“Wow, ten thousand damage..... Xiao Yao’s attack power is truly f*cking astronomical. His damage is actually up to ten thousand. I don’t even dare to think..... how much attack does he have to achieve damage of this level?”

Wolf calmly replied, “I estimate at least over ten thousand attack? ”

“Crap, My attack strength is only about 6000”

“Keep working on it..... ”

As a row of swords and shields lied at the foremost of the battlefield, the assaults of the Jiangshi were arriving. As soon as they approach the shields, the Jiangshi immediately moved their arms to stab and attack. With a “Papapa”, one of them instantly left a bloody hole on the chest of a heavy armor player. Even a single blow had 2000+ damage—it was far too strong!

“Motherf*cker.....” Old K waved his battle axe, rotating it around where he stood, causing [Whirlwind Slash] to sweep through the monsters with damage not inferior to anyone else’s, already killing some Jiangshi with his skill. He was truly brave, worthy of being the number 1 Berserker of [Zhan Long]. With Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian and Wolf being the “Smart commanders”, and Old K, Dong Cheng Lei and Bai Qi being the “Brave commanders”, we had the perfect match that could place us against [Vanguard] without flaws!

“Roar....”

A bloody Jiangshi howled before rampaging towards Old K. With its gaping mouth, it bit down on his neck and held on. Old K’s face turned green as poison kicked in; this was the effect of [Severe Poison]–

“500 ! ”

“500 ! ”

“500 ! ”

.....

A chain of damage came flying out as Wolf was alarmed, “Healers, heal Old K! Don’t let him die because of poison...”

Old K retreated while gnashing at his teeth, “Careful, whenever the Jiangshis’ health go below 10%, they will start to use [Severe Poison] to try and kill you. Try to kill them in an instant once their health is just above 10%, and don’t let them bite you. Otherwise, you’ll lose 5000 health in 10 seconds; that’s too much pressure on the Healers.....”

Despite the warnings, the front line still had [Zhan Long] players continuously falling victim to the poisonous attacks. Finally, at the fifth wave, we had begun to suffer from a severe loss of players. The front line had already lost dozens of people in the matter of 10 minutes. Very soon, we would have a shortage of heavy armor players, which would become a major issue.

Of course, compared to [Zhan Long], the rest of the players on the northern wall were even more scattered than before. Now, there were only groups of 10 or less fighting together. The Jiangshi had completely overwhelmed the players, ruining their tempos.

.....

Seeing that the whole area was covered with Jiangshi, Dancing Forest swallowed hard, “Damn...such a terrifying fifth wave. I can’t even imagine how the next five waves can be fought....”

Chapter 279: Against the Sky

“Boss....”

The surprise from the Jiangshi made Matcha retreat backwards a few steps, her shield in hand. She looked back at me and quickly asked, “Bring your tiger out, or else we won’t be able to defend against them!”

“Sure!”

I lowered my body and charged forward a few meters, raising my hand to cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash], while I silently ordered the Flaming Tiger God to kill from behind. Stepping upon flames, the tiger pounced, knocking a group of zombies to the ground. Although their attack power was great, their health and defense was so low compared to my and the tiger’s attack power that killing them was like cutting melons and vegetables.

“Ta...”

A card dropped; it seemed to be the first Jiangshi Card within the vicinity of the area. I picked it up to inspect it: 5% chance of poisoning the target. This was definitely fitting for a war of attrition. I directly gave it to Fox; as a long ranged Musketeer, his attack speed made his chances of poisoning others was a slightly higher.

.....

Basically, the front line comprised of me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha, and others. All of us had to hold back the attacks from the monsters within 3-5 yards of us; this was also for the sake of protecting the members. [Zhan Long]’s Healers’ output and meat shields were extremely coordinated, and their defenses endured the attacks from the Jiangshi. However in the distance, [Flying Dragon]’s members had not been as fortunate as us. Drunken Spear and Fierce Tiger were at the front lines blocking left and right, however, they were still unable to hold back the Jiangshis’ invasion. Tons of players died in battle; the casualties were disastrous.

Looking in the opposite direction, there were idle players that had been reduced to the Jiangshis' objects of massacre. 3% of the defensive line in the whole northern part of the city had already been breached, which only increased the difficulty in killing the monsters.

40 minutes later, Li Mu's group went slaughtering through the Jiangshis running on the grassland, while I led the Zhan Long group to stay back to guard and defend against the scattered Jiangshis. This [City of the Ancients] was just like a large killing area with numerous monsters dashing out and we killed them nonstop!

"Hong!"

As the [Seven Star Fragment Slash] fell, my experience skyrocketed. I glanced at my profile: Lv. 66 47%. I visually estimated that I would probably be Lv 67 during the sixth wave. The generous experience stats in the [City of the Ancients] was beyond my imagination. Of course, the effect of the Emperor Qin's Sword's skill [Kill for Blood] was actually the most important. The effect of raising 87% of the weapon attack was too powerful, directly causing my output to greatly exceed everyone below the city.

.....

After 10 minutes, Wang Jian ran over with his sword raised and yelled, "Brother Xiao Yao, about 500 meters from us in the western side of the city, a BOSS refreshed. Are we going to charge through and forcibly take the BOSS?"

"Of course!"

I sheathed my sword, and said in a low voice, "BOSS assault team, follow me to the western part of the city and draw the BOSS back to kill it. Li Mu, lead everyone so that they are prepared to support us at all times. Watch out for [Flying Dragon]'s sneak attack, Soaring Dragon isn't some kind of faithful person; at any moment, he could launch a sneak attack behind us."

Li Mu nodded, "Understood!"

A group of people lifted their weapons as they charged over. I was at the very front, and the Flaming Tiger God by my side roared without restraint. Our group of people ran along the edges of the NPC firing range. Throughout the whole trip, a large number of Ba Huang City's players watched us, yet not a single person dared to obstruct us. [Zhan Long]'s members all had emblems on their shoulders, that fierce dragon head symbolizing [Zhan Long]'s glory. We were the people who had managed to strongly shake up [Vanguard] and directly confront [Hero's Mound]; who would dare to provoke us?

After a few minutes, the hundred people group reached the western wall. In the distance, it could be seen that a blinding halo of light surrounded the vicinity as it refreshed for a BOSS. It was a giant about 3 meters tall, however it's body was slim, and did not resemble that of a giant's at all. Soon, the refresh finished, and it was revealed to be an enormous Jiangshi called "Frozen Corpse King", covered in armor, with a blade in each hand. Snow fell around its body, giving people a frosty feeling. Lv 70 BOSS, it seemed like this really wouldn't be simple after all.

The BOSS stood right below the city, around 70 yards away from the city walls. Perhaps deterred by the elite archers on the wall, not a single person from the group of players below the city dared to charge; they only watched from a distance.

The Emperor Qin's Sword in my hand trembled, "I'll go first, you guys provide support!"

I suddenly charged over. The moment I neared the BOSS, I waved my palm, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

"3217 ! "

Under such a powerful attack power, even an Emperor Tier BOSS could not endure it. The Frozen Corpse King roared in fury, and directly charged over with its longsword raised. It even cursed at me, "You worthless brat, taste my blade as I cut you into two pieces. I want you to experience exactly what fearing death feels like...."

Quickly, my body raced forwards. Even if I was arrogant, there was no

way I was crazy enough to solo a Lv 70 Emperor Tier BOSS. After all, even though my attack power had been raised, my defense hadn't changed; it would definitely result in death!

"Brother Xiao Yao, over here!"

In the distance, Yue Qing Qian waved her white arms. Over there, a group of [Zhan Long] players were currently waiting for me.

But suddenly, a group of people rushed out from the crowd!

"Peng!"

After a fierce collision, a [Zhan Long] Archer was knocked back a few steps. Someone darted in front and slashed the Archer with a war axe. With a face full of fierce-looking scars, he laughed, "You dare to steal the BOSS from us, [Mass Burial]? Aren't [Zhan Long]'s people being a bit too arrogant? You're definitely just seeking your own deaths. Brothers, charge forward, and exterminate this hundred people group!"

The person who had just arrived wasn't just anyone, it was [Mass Burial]'s Guild Master, Not Ordinary, his face completely masked. As soon as [Zhan Long] had appeared, he had begun to express a severe enmity, after all, [Mass Burial] was [Hero's Mound]'s First Division's ally. He also shared an unclear relationship with Wang Ze Cheng.

.....

"Defend!" Wang Jian lifted his sword as he bellowed, "[Mass Burial]'s players all have the two innate skills [Broken Slaughter] and [Rampage]. Everyone be careful!"

I held my sword horizontally as I ran backwards, yelling, "Dancing Forest, shoot the BOSS from afar to draw it away from here and towards our position. Qing Qian, Wang Jian, abandon defense, and bring people to follow me. We'll go sweep through [Mass Burial], and show that group of bastards exactly who's in charge here!"

Rushing forward, the sword in my hand dipped down, and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] struck down on the [Mass Burial]'s group. A chain of damage numbers immediately flew up. Utterly amazing—

“4193 ! ”

“4427 ! ”

“4717 ! ”

.....

Instantly, the squad of Swordsmen and Knights were killed within a second. The players of [Mass Burial] were all heavy armor types, and originally thought to be impregnable. However, they had never imagined that their defenses would be ignored under my attack power. Even Wang Ze Cheng couldn't shield against the attack power after the use of the skill [Kill For Blood], so how could these people be any better?

“F*ck....”

Not Ordinary's face was ashen, “What kind of f*cking attack power is this? Is Xiao Yao Zi Zai still a human? Brothers, charge! Use [Flame Blade]s to cut him down!”

I dashed forward, slaughtering left and right with my sword and succeeded in dodging a few of the opposing side's [Flame Blade]. I ducked, and my sword suddenly moved, slashing across the crowd. At the same time, two God's Army Cards in my palms, one in each hand, disappeared. Soul Army activated, A cloud of blood filled the sky, while swords fell down, also producing damage numbers greater than 4000. The attack power of Mohist's Five Scrolls was related to my attack power; the higher the level of Emperpor Qin's Sword's [Kill for Blood], the greater the damage Mohist's Five Scrolls could inflict!

“Roar....”

Flaming Tiger God arrived along a path of fire, and immediately made the players of [Mass Burial] cower. By my side, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian, Wolf, Matcha and the others attacked in unison, instantly causing about 200 party members of [Mass Burial] to collapse. [Mass Burial] couldn't defend against our fierce assault!

I looked back and saw Dancing Forest rushing towards the [Zhan Long]'s position with the BOSS behind her. Li Mu had already led a large

squad of reinforcements there; if nothing unexpected happened, the BOSS would be ours!

“Killing off Not Ordinary qualifies as completing our task!” Yue Qian Qian said in the group channel.

I nodded: “Qing Qian stun him, let me kill!! ”

“Ok!”

Using [God’s Dance], Yue Qing Qian’s darted forward. Her dagger flashed, hitting Not Ordinary square in the chest, stunning him!

I broke out in laughter and with a palm, I used a long range attack— [Great Realm of Desolation] !

“Peng! ”

The sharp dagger pierced through his body and Not Ordinary softly fell down. His brutal [Broken Slaughter] and [Rampage] skills couldn’t save him. Large damage numbers flew up from his head. Up until the moment he had died, he never realized how he had fallen so quickly.

“5257 ! ”

.....

Waving the sharp sword again, I swung out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Facing the players of [Mass Burial] that were discouraged by the amount of slaughter, I quickly turned around and shouted, “Retreat, don’t get involved with these people!”

The group of [Zhan Long] players left the battle one by one. The opposing side did not pursue; their Guild Master was already dead. Bloody Blade and the others’ faces had turned red in anger, but had no more intention to fight.

I glanced at the levels of the Emperor Qin’s Sword [Kill for Blood]. Yup, it had risen again —127%. Seriously omnipotent!

.....

Within [Zhan Long]’s field, the Frozen Corpse King roared continually.

Every slash brought out the effect of [Ice Splits]. Our Knights and Monks were constantly cut until the pain rendered them speechless. The Frozen Corpse King even possessed a ranged skill; it was extremely terrifying. At least ten of [Zhan Long]'s player had died from this trick.

Li Mu saw my return and immediately held out his sword, and shouted: "Those in front, go back. Let Guild Master and Matcha become the tanks. Spread further out, don't cause unnecessary casualties. Old K, lead the people in the third party, and stay around to prevent the sneak attack of other enemies towards our guild!"

"Shua! "

I had already sprinted out and took the place of a dead Knight. With my Emperor Qin's Sword, I used [Strength of a Thousand Men], and quickly attracted the aggro of the BOSS. In addition, every strike of mine would cut off a chunk of the BOSS' flesh, making the surrounding [Zhan Long] members yell in excitement.

Darling Duck and the other Healers quickly locked their Heals onto me. Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands brought the long ranged players to deal damage. Approximately a total of 40+ Healers locked their [Heal]s onto me. With my 2000 defense and 4000 health, it was hard for me to die even if I wanted to. Because my level was high and my resistance capabilities was strong, it was impossible for the BOSS to kill me in an instant.

Time flowed slowly. While I was killing the BOSS, I paid attention to every detail and every movement. [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Wrath of the Heroes] had all commanded people to come and watch, but none of them had made any actions. [Zhan Long]'s 1000+ men had the BOSS surrounded. For now, nobody was willing to steal this opportunity. Offending the rising [Zhan Long] for the sake of a BOSS was something that nobody desired to do. Of course, that excluded guilds like [Mass Burial].

.....

In less than 9 minutes, the BOSS had only a bit health left. The Emperor

Qin's Sword grew brighter and killed it with one last strike.

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations. Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai successfully killed the fifth BOSS of the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City). He has received as rewards: charm stat +5, 50% of his current experience, and S rank skill book- [Against the Sky]!

.....

Chapter 280: Wanderer's Bow

“Shua!”

A golden light shone down as the BOSS died, granting us all an ample amount of experience. With the additional 50% experience, I was boosted to Lv 67. At the same time, Jian Feng Han became ranked number 1 amongst the players from Ba Huang City. It was a shame that I was second in the rankings, as I didn't receive as much experience.

“Huacha...”

Under everyone's gazes, the Frozen Corpse King shattered to pieces, leaving behind a heap of equipment that was worthy of being dropped by a Emperor Tier BOSS. Three equipments were dropped in total: a bow, leather leg guards, and a crystal clear necklace. Striding over, I picked up all three items and waved my hand over the first item. The attributes of the bow immediately came up over the chat for everyone to see. We all fought to kill for this, so it was only natural for them to see it—

[Wanderer's Bow] (Emperor Tier)

Attack: 1000-1295

Agility: +50

Attack: +48

Endurance: +45

Additional: Increase user's long ranged attack damage by 15%

Additional: Increase user's bow related skill damage by 30%

Special Effect: When attacking, there is a 1% chance that the target will become confused and will not be able to move for 3 seconds.

Required Level: 64

.....

“What a strong attack stat for a bow...” Old K gasped in admiration.

Turning to face everyone with the Wanderer's Bow shining in my hand,

I smiled, raised it up, and said, “Wanderer’s Bow, a bow with extremely high damage, as well as the potential to stun and a level requirement of 64. Currently, in [Zhan Long], our highest level Archer is Dancing Forest at Lv 62. Our second highest level Archer is Free Time. In my opinion, we don’t need to roll for this, and let Dancing Forest use it for now. Of the 14 Archers that participated in killing the BOSS, everyone will be reimbursed 500G from the guild treasury. How does that sound?”

Li Mu made a fist, “Aye!”

Yue Qing Qian sent out a PM: “Hehe, Brother Xiao Yao has quite a few tricks up his sleeve. This move will not only have Dancing Forest stay on our side, but will also satisfy the other high level Archers. Beautiful. A worthwhile Guild Master must use both a kind heart and a logical mind. With complete equality, there would be no way for us to raise the true experts. Uncle Yan Zhao always taught that to me and Wei Liang.”

I smiled as I replied, “Yup. In all honesty, I don’t really like playing politics, but just now I was only balancing out the gains. I felt like Wanderer’s Bow should go straight to Dancing Forest, that way [Zhan Long] can at least produce a first rate Archer, right?”

“Yup! Keep it up!”

After directly handing Wanderer’s Bow to Dancing Forest, the girl was so excited she nearly cried. She picked up the bow and said: “Thank you, Guild Master. You’re too nice; you’re like a brother to me....”

I didn’t reply.

.....

Afterwards, it was time to decide the second equipment. They were leg guards with jagged edges. The guards were glossed, letting everyone know that it was not an ordinary equipment. Once I reached out and brushed my hand over the leg guards to display their attributes, everyone was shocked. This time our luck with killing the BOSS was truly amazing-.

[Fierce Thunder Leg Guards] (Emperor Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 340

Strength: +50

Stamina: +47

Intelligence: +44

Additional: Increase user's magical resistance by 15%

Additional: Increase user's defenses by 10%

Required Level: 64

.....

“F*ck, Emperor Tier leg guards.....” I was almost drooling. Looking at my own leg guards, they were still the Leg Guards of the Beast, a Gold Tier equipment, which was rather embarrassing to admit. Therefore, I lifted up the Fierce Thunder Leg Guards, and said, “There were five tanks total who participated in the battle: Me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and Dong Cheng Lei. Us five will roll, and whoever rolls the highest will get the leg guards!”

Li Mu furrowed his eyebrows, said, “My leg guards are already a Lv 57 Purple Tier. Guild Master, I believe, your leg guards are only a Lv 55 Gold Tier? Why are we even rolling, you’re the main tank who killed the BOSS. These leg guards should belong to you. We’re all brothers, so this kind of small thing is no big deal. Don’t worry, we won’t think too much of it!”

I activated the ROLL system on the spot, and smiled, “No, I won’t cheat you of your equipment. Let’s ROLL! Only Li Mu’s leg guards are much better than mine, the others don’t look all that impressive. Nobody should get the short end!”

When I threw the dice out and the dots appeared, I was shocked—1 point!

F*ck, such a bad hand!!

In the end, the Fierce Thunder Leg Guards were ROLled away by Dong Cheng Lei. The dumb kid took the leg guards and walked up to me and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, my leg guards are Lv 60 Purple Tier. Yue just

helped me get them from Fan Shu City. You can use these leg guards, since you need them more!”

I pushed them away, “No need, Lei, you should use them for yourself. With these, you’ll be even harder to kill. We still need to rely on you and Old K to be the main assaulters. Don’t say anything more, or else Brother Xiao Yao will get mad....”

Dong Cheng Lei naively rubbed his head, “Alright, then I’ll use them for now. If Brother Xiao Yao ever needs them, just ask me....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Dumb kid....”

.....

Continuing on to the third equipment, a necklace. Looking at the stats, everyone’s interest had dried up. It was Lv 64 Gold Tier necklace. It could raise MATK+10% so I gave it to one of the guild’s Mages.

“Boss, what about your skill book? [Oppose the Heavens] right....”
Matcha smiled as she patted my shoulder.

TL Note: We’ve changed the skill name [Against the Sky] from 279 to [Oppose the Heavens]

Once I heard Matcha’s words, I finally remembered it, and opened up my bag to take out a blood red skill book. After waving my hand over it, I was speechless– an S level skill book that was for someone else, what a debacle!

[Oppose The Heavens] (S Tier) : When the user has received a life-threatening hit or his/her health has fallen below 20%, the player will get 7 seconds of impenetrable defense. On top of that, for 7 seconds, all of the players cooldowns will be renewed. When the 7 seconds are over, and the player was not killed, then their attack power will be raised 10% for 10 minutes. The skill’s cooldown is 30 minutes. Level Requirement: 60; Charm Requirement: 2; Class Requirement: Berserker

.....

“F*ck, this skill really can rebel against the gods!” Li Mu was stunned,

he couldn't believe his eyes, "Is this springtime for Berserkers? Why is there a skill book like this? I don't believe in love anymore...."

Darling Duck smiled: "Guild Master wasn't planning on giving the skill book to you anyway, if he did, it would've been a last resort. Whether or not you believe in love wouldn't have helped you....."

Matcha smiled as she asked, "Boss, are you giving this skill book to Old K or Lei?"

Dong Cheng Lei slapped his leg and said, "No need, I already got this pair of leg guards. It'd be too embarrassing if I asked Brother Xiao Yao for more gifts. This [Oppose the Heavens] can go to Brother Old K!"

I nodded and gave [Oppose the Heavens] to Old K, and said, "Take care of this skill. If your health falls below 20%, use up all of your skills. In those 7 seconds, you can renew all of them. You can use [Whirlwind Blade] and [Savage Jump Slash] one more time. After those 7 seconds, you have 3 seconds to use [Savage Jump Slash] to retreat backwards. Old K, you don't have to study those really complicated battle maneuvers. If you just practice this combo of skills really well, you'll be an unstoppable god on the battle field!"

Old K reached his hand out and waved it over the book, successfully getting the skill. He nodded and said, "Yup, I definitely will not waste this skill book!"

I looked up into the distance, and said in a stern tone, "Okay, we've split up all of the drops. Clean up the battlefield and prepare for the sixth wave of monsters to attack! The past five have been savage, so everybody be careful when dealing with this wave!"

.....

A rumble sounded throughout the map as the gates of the [City of the Ancients] opened up. This time, there wasn't a river of monsters flowing out, but rather an organized army of soldiers, clad in light armor with long bows on their backs. They marched out of the city, and created a formation right in front of us. Motherf*cker, this time we're fighting an army!

Looking into the distance, I could see the stats of the monsters. They were undead archers that had died many years ago but still had impressive names-

[Five-Colored Magical Archer] (Phantom Tier)

Level: 71

Attack: 1810-2240

Defense: 1000

Health: 22000

Skills: [Precise Shot] [Eagle Eye View] [Seven Arrows]

Introduction: Five-colored Magical Archers, this group of people used to be well known figures of a Wind Elf tribe. However, for the sake of their own greed, they betrayed the other gods, and were finally cursed with bodies that would rot, and broken wings that would disappear. They became extremely violent and wanted to use the bows in their hands to rebel against all of the unfair laws between Heaven and Earth. They are extremely bloodthirsty, and whenever a human army smells their scent in the wind they cower. Please be extremely cautious when you are battling them

.....

“Their attack power is not as high as the Jiangshi..... but the attack power of the group as a whole, is a completely different scenario. Once they target any one person, he/she will probably be in for it....” Li Mu stated, “We must defend as we attack; if one rashly rushes out, he/she will likely die a very nasty death.”

I nodded, “I was thinking the same thing....”

“Alright, I’ll give the order....”

Li Mu raised up his longsword and yelled out, “Strengthen the defense formation, don’t fight on your own. Everyone must stay in their original spots. Once the monsters advance, we’ll use long ranged attacks and break through their defense. Most importantly, our defense formation is

the priority. Healers, buff everyone!”

.....

“Pa pa pa....”

The Five-colored Magical Archers began marching towards us, and in front of every militia stood a lieutenant NPC, a Purple Tiered BOSS. They each waved their long bows, yelling out: “The time for killing has come! Five Colored Magical Archers, it is time to conquer the lands under the heavens!”

“Keng, keng keng...” [Zhan Long]’s front lines all planted their shields into the ground. Every Knight took cover behind the shields, holding their breaths as they watched the enemy in front of them.

“They’re coming....” Song Han lifted his dagger as he hid behind Matcha.

I gripped the Emperor Qin’s Sword and smiled, “Ranged warriors get ready, use projectiles so that you can increase the attack range by 20%-50%, even though the attack power will decrease by a lot...”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Fields flew up and waved her staff, as [Pillar of Fire & Ice] imprinted on the crowd of Five Colored Magical Archers, provoking all of them. That group of Archers all advanced forward, bringing with them the entire front line. In the next moment they stopped in the distance, around 30 meters away, and lifted up their bows to shoot. Normal arrows and [Seven Arrows] all hit against the shield, “ding ding ding”.

“Damn, how do we deal with this....” At the frontlines, Matcha’s health was slowly falling to around 50%, her face already ghostly pale. If she’s already at this state, then the other Knights must be suffering to no end!

.....

“I can’t go on any longer, Guild Master.....” One of the Knights yelled out in pain. His shield was covered in a mass of arrows, and he fell onto his knees. The Healers were unable to keep up with healing him; the attack from the monsters was just too fierce.

Chapter 281: The Unstoppable Three

“Shua Shua.....”

Two God Army Cards slowly rotated in my hands. As I clenched my hands, a red cloud appeared above the group of Five Color Magical Archers' heads. Quite a few swords started to descend and dealt over 4,000 damage. Currently, my attack damage was quite high because of [Kill for Blood].

However, this meant that I attracted a lot of aggro. Soon, an overwhelming amount of arrows rained down from the sky, all locked onto me.

“Be careful, Brother Xiao Yao!” Yue Qing Qian screamed.

I waved my hands and activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. After constantly attacking and being attacked, my rage points were already full. As [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] was blocking the attacks, I yelled, “Nearby Healers, heal me now!”

“Peng peng peng....”

My armor was continuously being damaged. These arrows were very strong. In fact, they were not like arrows at all; it felt like I was being struck by iron spears.

My body trembled a bit. With my original defense and the heal numbers interweaving with the damage numbers above my head, I still somehow miraculously held on. This also allowed [Zhan Long] to hold its grounds.

“Should we charge in now?” Wolf asked.

“Don't!” I replied. “Wait a bit longer. If we randomly charge right now, we will break our own formation. If the main tanks and Healers get too far from each other, it will easily lead to unnecessary deaths....”

“Ai. Your call, Brother Xiao Yao!”

.....

However, on the other side, [Flying Dragons] started to move. Soaring

Dragon waved his hands and said “All members, charge. Break the NPC archers’ formation. We can win!”

The very ground shook as 4000 members of [Flying Dragon] charged in!

The Five Color Magical Archers lifted their longbows and started shooting all over. Being hit by the arrows, the [Flying Dragon] members fell to their knees and died. A group of them turned and ran away. Drunken Spear clenched his teeth, “With this kind of assault, wouldn’t everyone die? Our formation broke already. What should we do?”

Soaring Dragon pointed his staff, “Continue attacking; the deaths are inevitable. We must defeat this wave!”

.....

Compared to the damages of [Flying Dragon], who had advanced on the army, [Zhan Long] had suffered few losses as we had defended in our original spots. After defending for 60 seconds, the Five Color Magical Archers’ formations began to tighten. The situation that I predicted was starting to happen. The monsters in the rear began pushing the monsters at the front right towards us!

“Maintain the formation, and slowly attack!”

I lifted up Emperor Qin’s Sword, and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. My little tiger pounced out giving long ranged support. The Five Color Magical Archers had no way to defend. Within the blink of an eye, a whole crowd of them died. Of course, the damage they inflicted on the tiger was also great, and the only way to stay alive was to steal health from the enemies.

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and others all raised their swords to advance. Wolf and Yue Qing Qian’s priority was to stun the enemies. At the same time the people in the frontlines were being killed off, we would quickly rush in and kill that group of Five Color Magical Archers!

Six golden hexagrams appeared and my Lv 7 [Combo] killed two archers. With a “pada” sound, a card dropped, which I directly passed to Dancing Forest. The Five Color Magical Archer card could raise long-

range attack power by 15%, and attack speed by 5%. This was a card specifically meant for Archers and Musketeers. The first card was given to Dancing Forest, and the second card was given to Fox. This kept others from saying I only took care of people from my studio.

Fox, along with 50 Musketeers lifted their firearms and began to fire from the rear. With a series of bangs, the firepower burst out in front of our eyes, and the Five Color Magical Archers died very quickly, and they fell into a disarray from our counterattacks!

“Fox, the right side can’t hold any longer. Use [Bullet Screen]!” Wolf yelled. On that side, a group of Knights had already been shot to minimal health.

“Yes, coming!”

The cannons in Fox’s hands transformed into guns, and with a ‘bang’, a [Bullet Screen] covered the Five Color Magical Archers and obstructed their visions, making them unable to target any players. They could only stand there dumbly; as long as their AI’s weren’t smart, monsters could easily be oppressed!

Although it was difficult to hold our position, [Zhan Long]’s main party did not suffer heavy casualties; only around 100 people died. However, the other guilds suffered a lot more. The sixth wave’s Five Color Magical Archers killed at least 300+ members of other guilds, losing about half their people from this single wave.

.....

The one who suffered the most was [Flying Dragon]. Soaring Dragon had underestimated the opponent and took the initiative to attack. As a result, there were many dead bodies of [Flying Dragon] members on the battlefield. Although their attack was merciless, the Five Color Magical Archers were just as merciless. In less than 30 minutes, at least 2000 [Flying Dragon] members were killed. Soaring Dragon’s face turned purple.

“Boss.....Attack, don’t just stand there.....” Black Tortoise said after he bombarded with his firearms.

Soaring Dragon's face twitched and said, "Our losses..... how can they be so heavy? We lost more than 70% of our heavy armor players. This.... What kind of event is this? An event to massacre all players?"

Black Tortoise lightly said, "This is clearly our loss. Boss, look at [Zhang Long]'s side, their main group sustained almost no major losses. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, General Li Mu and Yue Qing Qian, are all clever people; they know how to effectively use a formation. This is something worth learning from them. Don't lose your spirit; continue the attack. We should kill this wave first. I will continue to call reinforcements from [Flying Dragon] in Ba Huang City, and we should be able to organize nearly 2,000 people to rush over to the rescue. However, they will have slightly lower levels."

Soaring Dragon was disappointed, "No need, don't let them come over. Their average level is only Lv 55; for them to come over to kill Lv 70+ Phantom Tier monsters, wouldn't we just be sending them to their deaths? I'm no bastard, I won't let our men die such humiliating deaths..."

"Then.....all right....." Black Tortoise said.

.....

Zhan Long Faction.

Li Mu smirked, "Xiao Yao, do you see it? This wave of monsters completely wiped out half of [Flying Dragon]'s players, leaving them with less than 2000 members now. Moreover, they're all scattered. On the other hand, our main group still has 600+ people, my division still has 700+ people, and the rest are all elites. Now it's us who control the North, and [Flying Dragon], who have the same number of people as us, are by no means our equal."

I nodded my head: "Yes, don't let your guards down!"

As I said this, I scanned the area. In front of us, the Five Color Magical Archers had basically been wiped out, whereas in the distance, there were streams of Magical Archers killing off all of the Ba Huang City players on the plains. There was chaos everywhere.

"Those are all basically extra experience and equipment. What should

we do, should we go kill them?” As she looked into the distance, Yue Qing Qian smiled: “They’re all small groups of Five Color Magical Archers; they’ll be easy to kill, and we won’t receive too many losses.”

I nodded, “Yea, leave 300 people behind as guards. As for the rest...each team leader will bring about 100 people with them to kill the monsters. It won’t be long before [Zhan Long] will become a Level 4 guild!”

“Alright!”

.....

Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, Old K, Dancing Forest, and the others were out to gain experience. I stayed back to watch where the BOSS was going to spawn. However, I was disappointed; there were no movements on the north side. Around 30 minutes later, Matcha appeared next to me and said, “Boss, this wave’s BOSS spawned near the southern gate near [Blood Contract]. However Han Bei Song only has about 500 people left. I’m not sure if he can take the BOSS from [Vanguard]....”

I clenched my teeth and said, “Matcha, do you want to come to the southern side with me? If necessary, we will use all our power to help our allies. That kid Han Bei Song must have it hard.....”

“Yes, I’ll accompany Boss over there!”

.....

With 127 stacks on my Emperor Qin’s Sword’s [Kill for Blood], I rushed over with Matcha following me in the air. As long as I looked up, a beautiful female Knight with snow white thighs could be seen. However, I felt a bit guilty about it, so I didn’t look up anymore.

Even if I switched angles to look up, it was still the same thing.....

By the time we had arrived, [Blood Contract] had nearly 400 people surrounding the BOSS: the Duke of the Magical Archers, a Lv 71 Emperor Tier Boss that was extremely cruel and violent. Han Bei Song hacked away at the monsters surrounding the BOSS. Who’s Blue and Red concentrated their heals on him; without them, Han Bei Song would’ve died ages ago.

“Guild Master, you guys go kill, I’ll hold them back!”

A bit further, [Blood Contact]’s Vice Guild Master, Sheltering Guest, lifted his axe and charged towards [Vanguard]’s players. In [Vanguard]’s formation were Don’t be Foolish, Goodbye Tears, and North Pole as the three leaders.. Jian Feng Han sat in the back commanding the members to kill the Five Color Magical Archers. Their losses were pretty heavy as well, and they couldn’t concentrate on the BOSS at all. It seemed like Jian Feng Han didn’t care much about the BOSS; he had only sent the three leaders to stop [Blood Contact]. With this, [Blood Contact] would lose their strength to fight the next wave.

“Go!”

I yelled as I carried the Emperor Qin’s Sword and charged forward. I activated the alliance attack mode and with a swing of my sword, [Seven Star Fragment Slash] landed onto a group of [Vanguard] members.

“BANG!”

“4277 ! ”

“3871 ! ”

“3792 ! ”

“4921 ! ”

.....

“Motherf*cker....” Don’t be Foolish lost 3000+ health and quickly retreated with an ashen face, “Holy shit, Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s attack is too strong. With one strike, he dealt 3000+ damage against my 2400+ defense. This... this person is impossible to break through... I’m retreating first....”

North Pole raised his staff, “How can our number one Knight retreat, get back up there. I’ll get the Healers to heal you.”

“Heal me my ass.....” Don’t Be Foolish said with an ashen face. “Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s S Rank [Strength of A Thousand Men] can burst me down in one shot. What are you going to heal? Since we obviously can’t get this

BOSS, there's no point to die in vain; I still want the experience from the next wave. I don't care anymore, I'm retreating. If you want to charge, you can use your [Mana Shield] to try and block Xiao Yao Zi Zai's attack...."

North Pole clenched his teeth, "Monks, hold on for a bit. Protect me and Don't Be Foolish as we retreat!"

When they looked back, Goodbye Tears had flown off as fast as lightning, disappearing into the distance without even a trace of his shadow. The wind carried his words, "Bye. I'll wait for you guys at the base...."

North Pole: "F*ck. He ran away pretty quickly."

Don't Be Foolish, "Let me go with him...."

.....

Chapter 282: Triple Blood Strike

No one from [Vanguard] wanted to attack [Blood Contract]'s area. Holding her Glass Spear of the Dragon's Soul, Matcha coldly laughed, "Boss has become the one man guard that even ten thousand men wouldn't dare to pass."

I glanced at the Emperor Qin's Sword; its attack had risen by 154% after killing 20+ people. No wonder Don't Be Foolish, Goodbye Tears, and North Pole had all retreated. Emperor Qin's Sword's original attack power was already outstanding, and now that it's at +154%, nobody wanted to face it. At this moment, even if Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han were there, they would probably still be scared to fight against me. Nothing could resist this kind of power. No matter how good his game mechanics were, he would die by a single touch from this sword. There was no way he would possibly be able to hold out against me.

.....

Within the mob, the Magical Archer Duke raised his longbow. With a "Shua", the arrow shot straight through the crowd, piercing through members of [Blood Contract] and forcing dozens of members to drop to their knees. The Emperor Tier BOSS' area of attack was enough to kill a few mid-elite players within seconds. Hang Bei Song's movements were not bad; he ducked as he used [Blade Rush] and successfully dodged the BOSS' attack, forcing a MISS to appear. If he hadn't dodged, he would have definitely died, or at least been heavily injured.

Sheltering Guest looked at me, hesitated a bit and said, "Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai, thank you for your help. [Blood Contract] owes you a big favor. If the BOSS ends up being killed because of us, we will do our best to repay you, thank you!"

I silently nodded.

Matcha laughed and asked, "Boss, should we go and help Han Bei Song kill the BOSS? The BOSS still has 47% health remaining."

I shook my head, "No need. If they can't even handle an Emperor Tier

BOSS, [Blood Contract] shouldn't even be here competing with [Vanguard]. They might as well have just run to the north side and grouped up with [Zhan Long] long ago....

In the distance, Han Bei Song heard this and couldn't help but start laughing, "Zi Zai is right. If [Blood Contract] can't even kill this BOSS, how can we even consider conquering the world? Don't worry, we can handle this BOSS by ourselves. We just need Guild Master Zi Zai to suppress the crowd for a bit!"

"Yup. Sure!"

I held my sword and stood there with my Flaming Tiger God by my side. It rested its head on my shoulder and purred. Above its head was quite a pleasant name – Cang Tong. Matcha saw this and asked: "Boss, you.... you already bagged Cang Tong, the beautiful Miss Lin? Wolf and the others had said that you were inseparable from her....."

I smiled a bit: "That.... That is for work. I can't help it. Besides..... what do you mean by bagged.... she and I live in different worlds. The distance between us is too great....."

Matcha blinked a few times as she looked at me, "Are Boss and I in the same world?"

I smiled, " That... probably not..... "

"Oh..... "

Matcha looked slightly disappointed, and smiled, "Boss is a unique person, just like those pioneers of Shennongjia, impossible to completely understand. Hmm.. must be that.....

(TL: Shennongjia = some place in China?)

"Does this count as you praising me?" I was speechless.

"Hehe, I guess you can consider it praise."

.....

While talking to Matcha, I looked around. Jian Feng Han had appeared with a large group of [Vanguard] players to watch as the BOSS' health

dropped down to 32%. It was already too late to come and steal it. Moreover, I was standing in front of [Blood Contact]'s line of defense alone. With the bloody Emperor Qin's Sword glowing in my hand, along with its [Kill for Blood] effect, and with that majestic sword full of killing intent, it made people afraid to fight against me. Even Jian Feng Han didn't dare to spit on the ground to provoke me. In this [City of the Ancients], you only had one life. If you died, you would get kicked out of the map. Jian Feng Han's ultimate goal was the [God of Commerce Badge]. Right now, the most important thing was to preserve his power until the last wave. Jian Feng Han was a smart person, so he naturally understood such obvious reasoning.

Carrying a staff, Simple stood 30 yards from me and was already within the attack range of my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Great Realm of Desolation]. However, she was extremely calm and smiled as she asked, "Xiao Yao, can I ask you something?"

I flashed a smile: "Beautiful Simple, please ask. I will answer if I can."

"Uh, your Emperor Qin's Sword..... How many times has it's attack been raised from killing people?"

"154 times, raising its attack by 154%. Is there something wrong?"

"No there's nothing wrong....." Simple smiled. "Thanks for telling me."

"No problem, go bring [Vanguard] and prepare for the 7th wave. It will definitely be even more dangerous..."

"Yup. Thanks!"

.....

Jian Feng Han clenched his teeth, but didn't say anything. It was clear that he was only good at battling and tactics. All of the diplomatic matters were left to his sister, Simple. In fact, Simple was one of the most important figures in the guild. Everything outside of the guild was taken care of by her. This was a reality: behind every successful man, there was always an expert making plans in the shadows, and behind Jian Feng Han, was his sister. Simple raised her brother to success to the point where it

could almost be considered too much kindness.

Simple was the mastermind who made the plans that the little brother would put into action and gain recognition for.

Because of my existence, the true nature of Jian Feng Han had slowly been exposed to the players of the world. Even the golden reputation that Simple had built for him was damaged little by little. Simple had been extremely worried about this, and had desperately wanted to recover [Vanguard]'s name. Although it has been extremely difficult, she has apparently not given up, since she had remained so courteous towards me just now.

Behind us, the sounds of battle finally stopped and the Magical Archer Duke was now trembling. After enduring Han Bei Song's [Blade Rush] and [Combo], the BOSS roared loudly, as it fell to the ground with tons of equipments exploding out of its corpse. Following the defeat of the BOSS, a system announcement came up.

“Ding”

[System Announcement]: Congratulations to player Hang Bei Song for successfully killing the sixth BOSS of the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City). Awarded Charm +6, Experience points +60%, as well as the reward, S-Ranked skillbook: [Triple Blood Strike]!

.....

I narrowed my eyes, “What kind of effect does [Triple Blood Strike] have?”

Sheltering Guest quickly laughed, “This skill gives three consecutive attacks; the more damage it deals, the more it raises the attack power (i.e. if 40% of health is left, then the attack would rise by 60%, if 30% of health is left, the attack would rise 70%) Even if there is only 0% of health left, as long as you are alive, the three attacks will deal 200% of the original damage.”

I was stunned, “Damn, this attack is 100% stronger than [Combo]. In front of [Triple Blood Strike], a Swordsman's [Combo] is weak as f*ck!”

Sheltering Guest smiled, "Definitely! With skills like [Combo], killing players with cloth and leather armor will be easy. Even when dealing with [Reflect], this would be useful. That's right, Guild Master Xiao Yao, your attack is very high, so you have to watch out for other people using [Reflect], since you could pretty much kill yourself with one hit....."

I laughed, "Don't worry, my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] is a long range attack. On the other hand, [Reflect] can only reflect physical attacks. For the most part, I don't use close combat skills for PKing. Even if I did, if someone used [Reflect] on me, I could easily dodge it."

"Okay. That's fine then!"

"Matcha, let's go back to our camp . The seventh wave of monsters is coming....."

"Mhm. Okay Boss~"

.....

Once I brought Matcha back to [Zhan Long]'s area, Han Bei Song had already learned the [Triple Blood Strike]. His luck was not bad. After learning this skill, Han Bei Song's attack power had gone up by quite a lot. This would be good too, since it could finally put some fear into Jian Feng Han. Otherwise, [Blood Contract] would be like a soft persimmon, something that can be messed around with.

"What's the situation?" Li Mu asked.

"Just look at the System Notice and you will know..." Wolf laughed, "Brother Xiao Yao probably pushed back [Vanguard] and then helped Han Bei Song kill the BOSS, right?"

I shook my head, "No, I only killed 20 something [Vanguard] players, and then they all ran. No one wanted to fight against Emperor Qin's Sword..... As for the BOSS, Han Bei Song's people killed it themselves. I didn't help at all..... Right, what's our current situation like here?"

Yue Qian Qing smiled, "In general, everything is going well. [Zhan Long] killed at least around 25% of the Multicolored Magical Archers in the north. The guild gained a ton of experience points. There were also

quite a few of drops as well, including Gold Tier armors that can be sold for quite an amount. Since Phantom Tier monsters can drop Gold Tier armor, this is a great bargain.”

“Yea, that’s great. How much more until the guild levels up?”

“Most likely...after killing all ten waves, we’ll definitely reach Level 4. If only we had less casualties earlier on.....” Yue Qian Qing was concerned. “Right now, combining our main group and the support from outside, we only have around 1100+ people. I’m worried that we can’t survive the next four waves.”

“Don’t worry.....”

I looked into the distance and saw that a group of Ba Huang City players were advancing. These were the people who had watched from the distance. Now that a chance had come, they had come and made the northern part of the city a sea of people. The troops were all packed together; even though we didn’t know how strong their defense was, they looked pretty strong in numbers.

.....

“It’s coming.....”

With a creak, the giant doors slowly opened again. The sun was currently setting and when the doors opened, all that could be seen was a vast section of red colored earth. In the core of the flames were upright humanoid turtles. They seemed exactly like Ninja Turtles. With their blazing bodies and their nimble sharp claws, they came charging right out.

“There there....”Li Mu couldn’t help but laugh: “The Ninja Turtles came. This brings me back to my childhood days.....”

I lifted my sword and laughed, “Prepare for battle. They’re Lv 72 Phantom Tier monsters. Maybe this will help you wake up from your childhood dreams!”

“Keng Keng Keng.....”

In the front lines, a group of heavy armor players pulled out their swords, ready to take on these Lv72 monsters. At the same time, I looked at the stats for these “Ninja Turtles”——

.....

【Blazing Tortoise】(Phantom Tier Monster)

Level: 72

Attack: 1920-2040

Defense: 1500

Health: 40000

Skills: [Tortoiseshell Defense] [Flame Burst] [Gravity Slam]

Introduction: Blazing Tortoise. A sea creature that lives in underground lava seas. Its body temperature is very high and contains a large amount of Flame Sprites. When the Blazing Tortoises arrived at the [City of the Ancients], they forced the lower level monsters to leave. Since then, they’ve become the mid-level guardians of the city, creating chaos amongst human troops. Please be careful when fighting them!

Chapter 283: I'm Willing to Grow Old Alone

“Such high defense! They really do have turtle shells?!”

Li Mu held his sword and shouted, “Everybody, be cautious! This Blazing Tortoise has a skill called [Flame Burst]. It must be powerful, so pay special attention, or you might get burned to death..... ”

Matcha moved her shield while loudly commanding, “Prepare [Heavenly Shield Wall] to defend!”

“Keng keng keng.....”

One after another, a row of Knights smashed their shields into the ground. The [Heavenly Shield Wall] instantly descended as the herd of Blazing Tortoises rushed towards us. Right before they reached us, they activated their [Gravity Slam] skill and their bodies curled into a spiky offensive shapes!

“Peng peng peng..... ”

Under such severe impacts, our shield wall quickly lost 7 to 8 people along the flank. Only Matcha had stats high enough to endure. With one hand holding onto her shield, and the other holding her spear, she continued to defend the front lines. The attack of the Blazing Tortoises weren't extremely high, so they were not much of a threat to Matcha.

“Attack!”

Li Mu waved his sword, and suddenly a [Skyslaker Slash] burst forth!

“Ding.....”

His sword slid along the turtle's shell, unexpectedly leaving only a trail of red sparks. Their defense was truly formidable; even Li Mu's attack of almost 6000 could only deal less than 1200 points of damage. Stunned, he cried out, “Ah...what kind of perverse defense is this??”

.....

Wolf grinned and raised his daggers, [Twin Blade Harmory] !

“1771!”

In reality, faced with monsters that had high defense, perhaps Assassins would have higher damage output.

As the herd of Blazing Tortoises smashed against our frontline, the sinister bastards glared at us, howling, “Oh, damn! The blood of these adventurers is so sweet. I will wrench their heads off and guzzle their fresh blood!”

Yue Qing Qian flashed a wry smile, “This dialogue is really terrifying.....”

I smiled and lifted up my Emperor Qin’s Sword, attacking with [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. With a “hong” sound, the attack landed, immediately causing numerous damage numbers to drift up. Motherf*cker, as expected, the effect of 154 stacks of [Kill For Blood] was unbeatable –

“3778!”

“4001!”

“3762!”

.....

Wang Jian was stunned, “Is there really that big of a difference between Brother Xiao Yao’s attack and Brother Li Mu’s attack? This is too ridiculous; [Seven Star Fragment Slash] is an AOE skill, it shouldn’t do as much as the single target [Skyshaker Slash].....”

I carefully replied, “Yea, the actual difference of attack isn’t that big. It’s just that the [Kill For Blood] effect of the Emperor Qin’s Sword had reached 154%. Plus, Emperor Qin’s Sword ignores 25% of the target’s defense. 75% of Blazing Tortoise’s defense is about the same of that of a normal Knight. Thus, breaking their defense isn’t really a challenge.”

Li Mu felt relieved, “Ah, I see now. Though, looking at Gentle Touch’s attack, I do feel better... ”

Nearby, Gentle Touch's [Skyshaker Slash] fell and took out 700+ health points of a Blazing Tortoise. His face turned green, "Leader Li Mu, what do you mean? Are you making fun of me? I..... I quit..... "

Li Mu roared with laughter, "Young man! Don't be so impulsive, I was just kidding. Keep up the good work! All the Mages at the back, turn your damage output to the maximum! This wave of Blazing Tortoises all have armored defense. We can only rely on your magic damage to kill them. Front line, I won't require you to kill monsters, guarding the front line is good enough! "

Numerous fireballs and icicles rained down upon the Blazing Tortoises, causing them to scream in pain as their health fell rapidly.

"Shua! "

A Blazing Tortoise whose health had dropped below 50% immediately activated the skill [Flame Burst], and a ring of flame instantly shielded its body. Nearby Berserkers with less than 20% health were actually burned alive in one hit and dropped dead.

"F*ck! "

Wang Jian knit his brows and asked, "This isn't good. [Flame Burst] causes 500 points of fire damage every second. It's extremely painful, and even drinking a health potion won't be able to help. What should we do? "

I murmured, "Keep increasing the damage output! Just kill all the Blazing Tortoises nearby so you won't be burned. Everyone, do your best! Healers, don't be stingy with your mana, put your whole effort in healing..... "

.....

"Roarr! "

With a fierce roar, Flaming Tiger God rushed up to the frontline howling. It was already at the extremely high level of 65, and its attack was 3250. [Burstfire Raid] roasted a whole herd of Blazing Tortoises. After following up with a combination of other skills, the healths of the Blazing Tortoises immediately began to drop. Seeing each tortoise receive

an average of 3000+ damage, I knew for sure Flaming Tiger God was not much weaker than me at all.

Only a few seconds later, Flaming Tiger God retreated with low health, similarly unable to endure the battle; the damage from [Flame Burst] was too high. Leaving the healing range of the Healers would very likely result in death. It was times like these that really showcased the importance of Healers. It was a good thing that we managed to survive the previous 6 waves of monsters. [Zhan Long]'s Healers didn't suffer many casualties, and their formation remained mostly intact. This was also one of our guild's advantages in later stages of long events.

Despite our best efforts, the front line players died continuously and even Matcha had to activate [Holy Shield] to survive. Fortunately, the burning effect of the Blazing Tortoise couldn't stack; each player could only be burned once per second. Otherwise, our formations would have definitely collapsed!

“Huacha! ”

I used [Blade Rush] forward once and immediately turned around. As I slashed my way back like a tornado, I activated another [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. This method of attack was skillful and effective; a large herd of Blazing Tortoises had already turned into corpses under these attacks. At the same time, there was a “pata” sound as one of them dropped a fiery red card. I picked it up and looked at it; its effects weren't bad at all--

【Blazing Tortoise Card】: Increase the user's defense by 10% and HP limit by 5%. Level Requirement: 60. Effect duration: 120 minutes.

.....

I immediately threw it to Matcha. There wasn't much point in her pursuing a higher attack, so why not improve her resilience? That way, she could become [Zhan Long]'s front line protector.

Healing myself, I recovered 1050 health points.

Dancing Forest pulled back her longbow as she stood in the rear. With a

“pa”, a Blazing Tortoise in the distance was stunned by a [Scattered Shot]. The tortoise behind it kept ramming against it, but couldn’t get past it at all. Watching this filled Dancing Forest with hope, as she lifted her longbow up and gave a loud command, “Every Archer use [Scattered Shot] and aim 5 yards ahead of the front line in order to trap the Blazing Tortoises within our attack range! That way our front lines won’t suffer too much damage!”

A group of Archers followed her command, and naturally, it worked! This managed to reduce fire damage the tanks took by more than 50% and much pressure was lifted off the Healers. The rest of the teams copied the tactic to stabilize their positions, making sure they wouldn’t break formation again.

One by one, the Blazing Tortoises died by my blade and my experience kept rising exponentially. Opening up the rankings to look, I had finally overcome my hurdle; I was finally Ba Huang City’s number one. No matter how strong Jian Feng Han was, his Flaming Cloud Sword was no match for my Emperor Qin’s Sword. Jiang Feng Han had no hope of returning to the top, especially since the ability [Kill for Blood] was just too OP. My usurping of the throne was inevitable.

Lifting my sword, I looked into the distance; the plains had once again plunged into chaos. [Zhan Long] and [Flying Dragon] barely got by the seventh wave of Blazing Tortoises; the newly arrived reinforcements had been wiped out. The damage that the Blazing Tortoises dealt in close combat was just too horrifying. Without enough skilled Healers to give support, there was only one fate: death.

.....

“Kill faster....” I frowned, “The pressure on the north side of the [City of the Ancients] is just too much. We need help from everyone to decrease the pressure.....”

“Okay!”

Matcha picked up an armor that one of the Blazing Tortoises dropped and smiled: “A Lv 64 Gold Tier armor, it’s almost on the same level as a

Lv 50 Purple Tier armor. So strong.....”

Bai Qi slapped his leg and said, “Ha, my leg guards were just replaced. Hehe, the stats were much stronger than my original Lv 47 Purple Tier leg guards, adding an extra 9% physical defense and 7% magical defense. Low level Emperor Tiers are about that good...”

Matcha chuckled, “If the armor doesn’t add more than 10%, then don’t show it off. Look at how Boss’ Purple Tier Divine Fireguard Helm has 27% magic defense and 12% physical defense. Compared to Divine Fireguard Helm, your Gold Tier equipment is basically trash that can’t even be looked at...”

Bai Qi helplessly smiled, “ F*ck, please don’t compare me with Guild Master. At this current stage in Destiny, he holds the first rank godly weapon and not only is he ranked the first on the Ba Huang City Rankings, he is also ranked 27th on the CBN Battlemaster Ranking Chart. With a person like this..... I am under a lot of pressure ...there’s definitely no way I could compare! ”

Matcha chuckled, “He even has many pretty girlfriends. Look, the beautiful Cang Tong is Boss’ girlfriend-to-be and Cang Yue is the backup. Don’t you feel inferior?”

Bai Qi smiled wryly, “If I don’t meet the right girl, I’d rather be alone for the rest of my life.....”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands burst into laughter, “So this is the pace you’ve been aiming for in your life?”

My mouth twitched, “Can you guys concentrate on slaying the monsters? The BOSS will be out soon, so stop teasing your teammate..... ”

.....

During the first 40 minutes of the seventh wave, Li Mu suddenly muttered, “This is bad. The new BOSS has spawned.....”

“In which direction? ” I inquired.

“West! ”

“Who’s located in the west? ”

“A few guilds, [Mass Burial], [Ruined Bones] , [Misty Palace] and [Winds of Battle], but they don’t have many people left..... ” Li Mu grinned. “The guild [Mass Burial] is very peculiar. Their members all possess the two talents [Broken Slaughter] and [Rampage]. Their Guild Master must have enabled cheat plugins.....”

Yue Qing Qian blinked, “Not Ordinary was already killed by me and Brother Xiao Yao. He wouldn’t be cheating so brazenly, right?”

I held up my sword and laughed, “Stop chatting. Form an assault party of 100 men to advance to the west and seize the BOSS. Even if we can’t take the BOSS, at least kill the remaining members of [Mass Burial] before returning to our camp. [Mass Burial] is an ally of Cang Cheng. In the future, our guild definitely will battle the first rank guild, [Hero’s Mound], so it’s more beneficial to us if we eliminate [Mass Burial] now.”

“Agreed. Let’s set out!” Wang Jian smiled.

.....

Under my command, [Zhan Long]’s assault party of 100 people rushed towards the west. While the large amount of Blazing Tortoises and players were still slaughtering each other on the plains, we had already begun our operation to assault the BOSS.

A few minutes later, we arrived at the west side of the [City of the Ancients]. The BOSS was in the middle of the large, chaotic crowd. The crowd was in complete chaos with members of [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle], and [Misty Palace] all fighting fiercely. There were even a few players from [Vanguard], [Prague], and a few other guilds that could be seen in the distance. It was pandemonium, but that was exactly the situation I had hoped for!

“Go! ”

In front of us were about 200 players of [Mass Burial] and with my sword in hand, I roared, “Attack the players of [Mass Burial] first! Kill them without mercy! Don’t leave a single one standing! CH-

ARRRRRRRRRR-GE!! ”

Chapter 284: The Dilemma of [Hero's Mound]

[Mass Burial]'s Bloody Blade carried his battle axe and commanded loudly, "Archers use your stun; Knights form a shield array to block the BOSS's attack! Two teams flank from the left and right to push the people from [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle] aside! Our only chance is to occupy the place the BOSS wants to attack!"

.....

"Hong!"

The wind started picking up all of a sudden, and Old K's [Whirlwind Blade] cut right into [Mass Burial]'s party, killing a group of Archers and Healers in one shot. At that moment, it was as though the pot boiled over, as [Mass Burial]'s players suddenly raged, "F*ck, [Zhan Long]'s players also came. Turn around and kill our way back!"

Sadly for them, it was too late for anything, since Li Mu, Wang Jian, and I all charged forward. We lowered our bodies and pulled out our swords in sync; all three of us penetrated into the crowds at the same time. With two [Skyscraper Slash]s and my [Seven Star Fragment Slash], the entire rear end of [Mass Burial] was demolished by us. The Flaming Tiger God kept roaring while its sharp claws tore at multiple people. Raising its head, it gave a [Fierce Roar], crippling everyone in range, including Bloody Blade and many heavy armor types!

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Yue Qing Qian, and Matcha all activated their skills, while [Zhan Long]'s elite players all advanced. Each and every one of them was very skilled, many were even within the top 100 on CBN's player rankings, whereas [Mass Burial]'s players at most had two high-tier skills that they currently had no way of using. Within 5 minutes they were completely destroyed by us!

.....

"Puchi!"

I pulled my blood-soaked sword from Bloody Blade's chest and the Emperor Qin's Sword began buzzing in my hand as the blade began spinning, shaking all of the blood off. At the same time the death count increased once again and after that round of killing, the Emperor Qin's Sword had already risen to 177% of the sword's original attack. Hehe, if this keeps up I will be able to even go against the Gods of heaven..

Looking at the crowd of people from a distance, a gigantic monster screeched. It was a heavy-armor tortoise BOSS, with the body of a tortoise and the head of a snake. Its body was encircled by spheres of lightning, wind, and fire and each movement lead to a torrent of thunder and lightning. This was none other than the monster of ancient legends – the Dragon Tortoise*!–

“The Dragon Tortoise BOSS still has 91% of its health! How is it this hard to fight, its been so long....” Yue Qing Qian said as she pointed her dagger into the distance.

I murmured, “It's probably because its the 7th and last wave. The BOSS's stats have probably been raised a lot. Besides, [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle], and [Mass Burial] aren't that good at killing monsters. They've basically been PKing each other instead of killing the Dragon Tortoise, while the Dragon Tortoise has already killed so many.....”

“What should we do now?” Li Mu said as he started at Vanguard, “[Winds of Battle], [Ruined Bones], and [Misty Palace] don't have many members left. The total number of survivors can't be more than 1500. [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], [Prague], and [Hero's Mound]'s First Division have all sent scouts over, so we should get ready, or else this BOSS's fate won't cross paths with our own.”

I inhaled deeply and said: “Li Mu, do you support killing people or killing the BOSS?”

Li Mu ground his teeth and raised his fist as he yelled: “Kill people! The BOSS is just standing there, we can kill him at any time, but the more enemies we kill, the less there are. If we act now, we might be able to finish them off quickly. Besides, we might as well grab onto this

opportunity to get rid of them, just kill one when you see one!”

Lian Po grunted and said, “You youngsters have such rash thoughts, but I have to agree! [Prague] has always protected the middle, we don’t need to attack them first. [Vanguard] has too many people, so we can’t deal with them in a short amount of time either. Looking at the situation, we should definitely attack [Heroes’ Mound]’s First Division, especially since Cang Cheng has been eyeing [Zhan Long] for so long. Now that First Division only has around 500 people, we should kill our way through and beat them up. Every time we see a player, we’ll kill a player!”

I nodded my head resolutely, “Alright, everyone spread out for battle. Get 200 people to come over and attack [Hero’s Mound]. This time we’ll be on the offense and take this chance to destroy Wang Ze Cheng!”

“Yea!”

A few minutes later, as the wind whistled through the plains, 200 of [Zhan Long]’s members ran to meet up with us. We immediately turned around and charged at [Heroes Mound]’s First Division. The BOSS still had 87% of its health, so we had plenty of time!

.....

“Guild Master!”

In the distance below the [City of Ancients], Wind Walker carried his battle axe and dashed towards the north. His whole body trembled as he violently yelled, “There’s a group of [Zhan Long]’s people on the north side and they don’t seem friendly!”

In the crowd, Wang Ze Cheng stabbed one of [Misty Palace]’s members as he frowned and shouted, “Turn the direction of attack and have the defense formation advance. [Zhan Long] only has 200+ people, they can no longer oppose us on equal footing! The Mages will be our main force and we’ll set fire to those low level players; just wait for my command!”

We had both reached a mutual understanding and didn’t need to exchange any words: the battle had started!

.....

“Advance!”

Li Mu carried his sword as he charged forward. With a twist of his sword he activated [Absolute Authority], killing one of [Hero's Mound]'s Knights in one hit! Then his body spun around and he sidestepped in a perfect S shape, dodging a Berserker's [Skyshaker Slash]. Turning around, he dodged another [Skyshaker Slash] and cut the Berserker down with a normal attack.

“Checkmate, General Li Mu!”

Wang Ze Cheng shouted as he plunged his Transparent Spear straight into Li Mu's chest!

“1198 ! ”

Li Mu retreated a few steps as ice and fire constantly roared under his feet. Truly, it seemed like a checkmate situation!

“Bang....”

Suddenly ramming into him with my top speed, I pushed Li Mu back a dozen meters, knocking him out of the enemies' attack range. I quickly turned around, activating [Seven Star Fragment Slash], directly attacking the group of Mages!

“Hong!”

The players from [Hero's Mound] were indeed skilled and at least half of the Mages jumped backward, causing MISSes to appear. Then, they quickly activated more [Dimensional Leap]s to jump back into formation. Waving their staffs, more [Pillar(s) of Fire and Ice] and [Chilling Wind Spell] magic circles appeared under my feet. A few people were even locking their [Indigo Sea Arrows] on me. Did they mean to aim for an instant kill?!

With a slight smile, I took out three [God's Army Card]s and dissolved it in my hand. In a flash, a colossal compass fell from the sky and imprinted on the ground the constellation of the seven stars; it was the third scroll from the Mohist Five Scrolls, [Seven Stars Teleportation]!

I stepped back a step and my feet immediately began to slide as the glowing magic circle began to move, transporting me through time and space. “Shua” I instantly disappeared from my original spot. Under my feet appeared multiple MISSES as I dodged all of the attacks from the Mages and teleported myself into the middle of the enemy’s party. While I tore through three Mages with [Blade Rush], I cast a hexagram to summon the Flaming Tiger God to my location. It pounced out into the crowd and lifted its head, letting out a [Fierce Roar]!

“Om.....”

The [Fierce Roar]’s shock wave rocked the crowd, causing multiple players to die, including the Mage that Wang Zhe Cheng relied on, who had already killed close to 30 people. Behind me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Dong Cheng Lei all killed their way through the crowd. Although [Zhan Long] didn’t have as many people, their morale was far greater than [Hero’s Mound]’s.

.....

I used another [Seven Stars Teleportation], teleporting to another part of the crowd and used Emperor Qin’s Sword to take even more lives. Wang Ze Cheng evaded the Emperor Qin’s Sword’s blade by avoiding the fight and commanding a group of Archers from the rear, yelling, “Use [Scattered Shot], stun Xiao Yao so he has no way of teleporting! That way, we can kill him. What kind of skill is that, how can there be such a BUG?!”

I was being cornered by a group of people trying to kill me and the [Zhan Long] players outside of [Hero’s Mound] defense formation were starting to get nervous. Dong Cheng Lei waved his battle axe and “Bang!” a dozen people were knocked out of the defense formation as he roared in rage, “There’s still me, Brother Xiao Yao! Everyone, get the f*ck out of my way!”

The battle axe carried a fierce fire, “kakaka”, and he hacked down dozens of people. That bastard was too brutal!

“Checkmate, Cang Lei!”

Wang Ze Cheng picked up his spear and yelled out, "Fire!"

Magic began to cluster, but Dong Cheng Lei could have never understood what a S-shaped evasive maneuver was, and at that moment, his body was swallowed by the magic. He yelled in pain and knelt to the ground, dropping his helmet.

"F*ck!"

Old K and Li Mu raged, waved their swords, and charged forward!

I opened up my palm and [Black Tortoise Realm] fell upon the defense formation. Simultaneously, [Soul Army] wrought destruction on the formation, giving [Hero's Mound]'s First Division no way to concentrate their forces to kill. Besides, [Seven Stars Teleportation] could be used up to 100 times, which was more than enough times. I had godly attack and recovery power, enough to take on their division on my own.

The Emperor Qin's Sword was constantly hacking away at people and [Kill for Blood] kept stacking as the number of players from [Hero's Mound] First Division fell left and right. It got to the point where whenever I charged, their people avoided me like the plague. Nobody was willing to face me!

.....

"Guild Master....."

Wind Walker spat at the ground and raged, "It...it seems we're starting to lose. Xiao Yao Zi Zai's attack power is just too brutal and nobody in [Hero's Mound] can stop him. His path is too unpredictable, so none of our Archers can target him. What should we do?"

Wang Ze Cheng picked up his Transparent Spear, his face twisted by rage, "Let's just leave and guard the South Gate!"

"Alright!"

A group of [Hero's Mound] players heard Wang Ze Cheng's command and immediately retreated. Unfortunately, before they had gotten far, Wind Walker suddenly yelled, "What the f*ck!?"

Behind [Hero's Mound], a team of organized shields made a defensive formation that stretched a hundred meters. It was [Prague]'s members guarding the area! Yan Zhao Warrior had his heavy sword in his hand and loftily looked at the group of [Hero's Mound] people.

.....

“What are you doing, Yan Zhao Warrior?” Wind Walker roared.

Yan Zhao Warrior wryly smiled, “Oh its nothing, just that this is [Prague]'s territory. We're only here to guard it and to prevent anyone from crossing. If [Hero's Mound] wants to pass through here, please travel along the [City of Ancients].....”

Wind Walker was in a fit of rage, “If we walk alongside the city, we'll be killed by the NPC Archers! Aren't you just forcing [Hero's Mound] players to die?”

Yan Zhao Warrior lifted his arm and said, “Whether or not you want to die, I don't care! All [Prague] players, heed my command. Shoot anyone who tries to break through our defense, and don't show any mercy!”

.....

In front of [Hero's Mound] was [Prague], behind was [Zhan Long], to the left was the BOSS, and to the right was the trap-filled city walls. In that moment, [Hero's Mound]'s First Division's 300+ people were forced into a dilemma.

“Shasha....”

Transparent Spear stabbed into the ground and Wang Ze Cheng's eyes turned cold as he yelled out, “Follow me, we'll walk around the city walls. I'll attract most of the damage, so Healers keep my health up!!”

* Originally Dragon Turtle, which is wrong, since Turtles live in water, while Tortoise live on land

Chapter 285: Who Gets It?

Carrying the Soul Barrier Shield, Wang Ze Cheng resolutely led the squad to rush under the city. As soon as they entered the shooting range of the strong NPC archers located on top of the city, numerous arrows immediately darted down. However, Wang Ze Cheng possessed 2900+ basic defense. As the arrows left trails of red sparks on the shield, each arrow only produced about 100 damage number, thus making the effect of the [Heavenly Shield Wall] even stronger. Although arrows were everywhere, through ceaseless healings of the 20 Healers following Wang Ze Cheng, they amazingly persevered!

“F*ck..... “

At [Prague]’s camp, the jaw of the Vice Guild Master, Wind Walker, dropped at the sight and he muttered, “Cang Cheng’s defense is seriously superb. I see why everyone claims he’s the Knight in Ba Huang City with the best defense. His reputation is true.....”

Yan Zhao Warrior grasped the blade, and ground his teeth, “Hmph!”

“Guild Master. Should we still kill him?” Inquired [Prague]’s elder, the Lv. 63 Swordsman, Heavenly Hero.

Yan Zhao Warrior calmly replied, “A promise can’t be taken back once it is made. As long as Cang Cheng doesn’t approach our defense, we won’t kill him.....”

“Yes!”

.....

Seeing that Wang Ze Cheng would soon be leading 300+ players of the first rank guild [Hero’s Mound] across [Prague]’s camp, Li Mu clenched his fist and asked, “Should..... should we just sit and watch Cang Cheng leave? [Hero’s Mound], the first rank guild, still wishes to eliminate [Zhan Long]....”

Lian Po flashed a crooked smile, “Hmph, maybe it’s better if we let him go. He’s just a homeless dog.....”

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and held the sword in my hand as it glowed brightly.

“Xiao Yao, what are you doing?” Lian Po questioned in astonishment.

I stared at Wang Ze Cheng in the distance and answered coolly, “I will never have mercy on a person like this. You guys wait for me here, I will return after I slay Wang Ze Cheng.”

“You..... Alright.....” Lian Po helplessly replied.

Yue Qing Qian chuckled, “I just admire this character of Brother Xiao Yao. Brother, let’s go. I will accompany you there!”

“Okay!”

Dashing there with her blade in hand, Yue Qing Qian activated [Absolute Step], and her speed became faster than mine. Both of us quickly arrived near [Prague]’s defense, which we needed to break through in order to reach Wang Ze Cheng’s attack range.

“Freeze!”

Heavenly Hero lifted his sword and roared, “[Prague] reorganize your troops. [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Vice Guild Master, Yue Qing Qian, please stay away. I hoped you two are able understand our difficulty!”

“What difficulty?” Yue Qing Qian glared with her beautiful eyes and uttered coldly, “Brother Xiao Yao. I will help you dash across! ”

The beautiful Assassin used [God’s Dance] for support and suddenly smashed against the defense. Waving her arms, she used [Twin Blade Harmony] and thrust the between the gaps of the shield wall. With a “Shua” sound, she forced back a few of [Prague]’s Knights. Yue Qing Qian stared emotionlessly, “Don’t stop me, or else don’t blame me when I retaliate later!”

Immediately, a group of [Prague] players were dumbstruck; they were all veteran players from [Prague], so they naturally understood the

extraordinary strength of the beautiful female Vice Guild Master, Yue Qing Qian. Once she said those words, quite a few of the members already started to back off.

Yet, Heaven's Hero kept his sword raised and resisted. With a sweep of his sword, "Keng" it collided with Yue Qing Qian's dagger. The precise amount of strength put in jolted Yue Qing Qian, and abruptly pushed her back a few steps, spinning as she was flung backwards!

"Pa....."

I quickly flew forward, catching the beautiful female Vice Guild Master in my embrace, while seizing the opportunity to brandish my Emperor's Qin Sword and aim a [Wind Blade] towards Heaven's Hero. He trembled with fear as he too, raised his sword to use [Skyshaker Slash] to meet my attack. Had he gone crazy, trying to contest me in strength?!

"Peng!"

Energy swirled and raged about as a shock wave surged forth with the two of us as its epicenter. I dashed forward a number of meters while Heaven's Hero was thrown up into the air with his sword, and they both raggedly fell into the crowd. In regards to our current attack power and strength, mine were at least 50% higher than his; thinking of competing with me based on strength was a fool's dream.

With Yue Qing Qian in my embrace, I pointed the tip of my sword and yelled in a low voice, "Whoever dares to make a move of Yue Qing Qian will be declaring war on I, Li Xiao Yao. If you don't believe me, go ahead and try it!"

Yue Qing Qian snuggled into my chest with a red face, not saying a single word.

Yan Zhao Warrior's voice sounded out from behind me, "Relax, let Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Yue Qing Qian go. Li Xiao Yao, leave quickly; if you dally any further, Cang Cheng will bring his men and leave the firing range of the NPCs!"

The shield formation immediately moved apart. I looked towards Yan

Zhao Warrior with gratitude, before putting down Yue Qing Qian and leaping over, buffing myself with [Haste] as I looked towards [Hero's Mound] in the distance. Humph, Wang Ze Cheng must be killed, else [Zhan Long] would never be able to establish itself in Ba Huang City. I had to tell Q-Sword not to use the First Division to probe us out; if he dared to, then he would have to give up on [Hero's Mound]'s main division's ruling position in Fan Shu City and come to Ba Huang City to duke it out with [Zhan Long]. What was there for us to fear?!

.....

“Shasha.....”

My Purple Boots kicked up the grass and dirt as I rushed near. Soon after, [Hero's Mound]'s people had already detected me. A female Archer pulled back her bow, and shouted, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai has come, this is bad!”

“Sou!”

A [Scattered Shot] flew towards me, but I suddenly paused and greatly dropped my speed. The arrow flew straight past my nose, causing a huge MISS to fly over my head. I also felt excited; having been in the game for more than a month now, I was already accustomed to all the operations in the game. My ability to manipulate the controls had greatly increased. As long as I focused on battle tactics, my overall PK abilities were not any less than Q-Sword's or Jian Feng Han's.

“Protect the Guild Master!”

A group of [Hero's Mounds]'s Knights began to form a defense to protect Wang Ze Cheng, who had receiving the NPCs' arrows and only had 50% health remaining. It was precisely because he was screening this way that his guild members had not been immediately killed!

I slid towards the defense, and suddenly lowered my body, [Blade Rush]!

“Kacha!”

Piercing through the defense, the tip of my blade trembled, and I directly sent a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] in Wang Ze Cheng's direction.

At the same time, a group of Healers were also along my line of attack, killing multiple birds with one stone.

“Hong!”

“4273 ! ”

“5001 ! ”

“4727 ! ”

“3019 ! ”

.....

A chain of damage numbers flew up. Wang Ze Cheng had lost 2019 health; as for the Archers and Healers, they had been instantly killed!

“Ah!”

Seeing his health drop so much, Wang Ze Cheng’s face grew ashen. He was smart enough to realize that his current terrain was completely out of his control range. Besides, my second attack was approaching!

Extending out my five fingers, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

Three images of my Emperor’s Qin Sword appeared and abruptly pierced through Wang Ze Cheng’s body, causing a huge damage number to fly up, while also one shotting the person who possessed 2900+ basic defence power. What could I say, even though he had 2900+ basic defence power, at this moment, I possessed almost 8000 points of basic attack power. This difference was too overwhelming!

“4478 ! ”

As the damage points flew up in the air, both of Wang Ze Cheng’s knees fell weakly to the ground, and he gazed at me with hatred, “Li Xiao Yao, you’d better make sure you remember this moment!”

I returned my sword to its sheath and coldly replied, “I never remember the times when I kill noobs.....”

I turned around and left, leaving the players of the [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division an incomparably respectful view of my back. They did not

dare to chase after me, since even their iron-like leader had been dispatched; the rest of them would not be even worth mentioning.

Miserable howls echoed in my ears. Having lost Wang Ze Cheng's ability to draw away and tank the firepower, a huge group of [Hero's Mound] First Division's players had completely become easy targets for the strong NPC archers atop the city walls; only a few dozen people managed to escape, while the rest could only turn into corpses under the city walls. It was unfortunate that no one dared to pick up the dazzling golden ring that had been dropped by Wang Ze Cheng in fear of being killed..... although [Prague] had the strength to obtain this ring, even the shrewd Yan Zhao Warrior would not exchange the lives of players for equipment, as this would harm the trust within the guild.

.....

Returning to the front of [Zhan Long]'s camp, I looked to the side and saw the BOSS had 7% health now. However, there weren't really any guilds attacking it. There was only a group of smaller guilds recklessly attacking while also being massacred by them. For an Emperor Tier BOSS to not die after this long, it was truly hard to kill it. But if [Vanguard] and [Prague] were added into the equation, then it would take no more than 10 minutes to finish this fight.

"Guild Master, do we attack the BOSS now?" Li Mu asked.

I looked at the Dragon Tortoise's remaining health and shook my head, "There's no need to rush, let's not move out for now...but come with me for now and approach the BOSS. Prepare yourself for now, there will definitely be a lot of people ready to attack at this opportunity, but we still have an advantage..."

"What advantage?" Old K asked.

Yue Qing Qian laughed, "Brother Xiao Yao has the superiority in attack power. The Dragon Tortoise only has 3000 Defense, but if you add the tortoise shell, then it'll have over 15,000 defense! If you look at the Archers, they can only attack the smaller units; when the BOSS's health drops, then within Ba Huang City, only Brother Xiao Yao could

immediately end the life of the BOSS. That is our chance!"

I nodded my head and laughed, "Yea, the Dragon Tortoise has 700,000 health, so 1% of his health is around 7000. I estimate a single [Combo] and [Great Realm of Desolation] would be able to do a cause enough damage to it. If we wait for the BOSS to drop to 3% health before we move out. then it'll be a definite success! Li Mu, Wang Jian, Qing Qian, Old K, you guys help me get rid of all the distractions like [Vanguard], and [Prague]. They won't let us kill the BOSS easily..."

"Okay!"

A group of people were rapidly approaching; it was our 50 players from [Zhan Long]. They were around 40 meters away now; any closer, and they would be in the Dragon Tortoise's range of attack, which would become a spectacle too horrible to watch.

Not too far away, the Guild Master of [Misty Palace], Misty Cloud, hacked away at the Dragon Tortoise's shell and yelled, "Xiao Yao, why aren't we attacking?"

I looked off into a distance, "Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior haven't made their moves yet. Be careful, and don't let them mount sneak attacks!"

Misty Cloud immediately lifted his battle axe and laughed, "Forget it, even I'm not that foolish. When it reaches 2% health, we'll even risk our lives to charge forward and get the last hit..."

.....

An endless sonata of players screaming played in my ear as countless of players started to die. At the same time, the Dragon Tortoise's* health was getting lower and lower. [Vanguards]'s men did not hold back as Jian Feng Han lifted his own sword up. However, the 13 Eagles stayed behind; This was their strategy: a group of heavy armor players would lead the charge and use [Skyshaker Slash] to bring the BOSS to 2% health.

7% !

6% !

5% !

When the BOSS's health reached 5%, I growled out, "We can't afford to wait anymore, charge in! Misty Cloud, you lead the assault. Let's see who can land the final attack!"

"Okay!"

In the distance, Jian Feng Han raised his Flaming Cloud Sword, "13 Eagles, attack!"

Yan Zhao Warrior's lowered his sword, "Forward!"

TL Notes:

* Originally Dragon Turtle, which is wrong, since Turtles live in water, while Tortoise live on land

Chapter 286: Meteor Shot

Players from all around started rushing to us. The Dragon Tortoise, realizing death was approaching, raised its head and roared. Suddenly, the ground was covered with numerous icicles, as they burst forth from the ground with “Papapa” sounds. As expected, this creature exerted its utmost strength just before its death.

Blocking the icicles’ damage, I, Li Mu, Misty Clouds, and the others, dashed towards the forefront, shortening the distance between us and The Dragon Tortoise!

“Attack! ”

From the side, a crowd abruptly rushed towards us. They were [Vanguard]’s Thirteen Eagles led by Fallen Wolf. Fallen Wolf raised his battle axe and smashed it down, depleting 1700+ health from Misty Clouds.

“Go die!”

The young [Misty Palace] Guild Master was furious. He bellowed and struck the stomach of Fallen Wolf with his shoulder, and roared, “Cold Eyes, use [Scattered Shot] now! ”

A cold arrow darted out from nowhere and rapidly hit Fallen Wolf’s chest, successfully stunning him. The Archer was Cold Eyes, the Vice Guild Master of [Misty Palace], a Lv 63 Archer. It looked like he had at least a single Emperor Tier item; most likely it was that bow!

“Hei! ”

Misty Clouds coordinated himself with the attack, and approached with his battle axe. He slashed it down through the air, landing a hit on Fallen Wolf. In shock, Fallen Wolf helplessly retreated, quickly reaching for a health potion. Unfortunately for him, Misty Clouds had already hurled his axe at Fallen Wolf’s head!

“Bang!”

“2218!”

It was a one-hit kill. One of the four elders of [Vanguard] had been killed, just like that!

In the front, Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Feng Han, and others had started to attack the Dragon Tortoise!

“Ha!”

Jian Feng Han activated [Through the Clouds Slash] and sent it flying through a group of [Zhan Long] players. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K wiped the blood off themselves, and Li Mu yelled in rage, “Jian Feng Han, do you have no shame? Taking advantage of us and killing people!”

My voice dropped, “Rush in and charge!”

“Okay!”

Wang Jian, Li Mu and I, the three third job advanced warriors, used [Blade Rush] to break through [Vanguard]’s Thirteen Eagles. Old K used [Savage Jump Slash] onto the BOSS. With a miserable cry, the BOSS was left with 3% health.

I slid forwards and directly attacked the BOSS. With my high attack power, I managed to push the BOSS back a half a meter. The Emperor Qin’s Sword surged as I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men] and [Combo] together!

A row of damage numbers appeared. The BOSS only had 1% health left, so it was almost dead. This was it!

With one hand on the turtle shell, three swords appeared in the air and pierced through the shell, dealing a large amount of damage. At the same time, the sound of the system announcement was heard.

“5184 ! ”

It was a critical hit or else it wouldn’t have killed it. The Dragon Tortoise’s defense was higher than Cang Cheng’s!

With a miserable cry, the BOSS of the seventh wave died. A wave of relief passed through me as I heard the sound of the system notice.

“Ding”

[System Notice]: Congratulations to Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai in successfully killing [City of Ancients]'s seventh BOSS. Reward: Charm +7, Experience +70%, SS Rank Skill Book [Meteor Shot]!

.....

Without time to look at the reward, I waved my sword and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] at the group in front of me. Someone had come to steal my drops!

“Bang”

Two of [Vanguard]'s Thirteen Eagles were immediately killed by me. At the same time, I stepped forward and pulled an item out from the Dragon Tortoise's corpse: a bloody ring with a red glow. Suddenly, my shoulder suffered a heavy blow, and Jian Feng Han shoved me away to pull out an armor from the BOSS's body. Yan Zhao Warrior activated his combo skill [Peerless Strike] on the corpse, and found a shining spear!

Doing whatever they wanted was not ok!

Emperor Qin's Sword flashed, and a [Wind Blade] was sent flying towards Jian Feng Han's neck!

“4121 ! ”

Jian Feng Han went from full health to being in critical condition. His face ashen and activated [Corrupted Wolf Edge] while retreating.

“2761 ! ”

“That hurt a lot!”

My body shook. From within the [Prague] camp, a Swordsman came rushing out. It was the Vice Guild Master, Heaven's Hero. He lurched, suddenly piercing through my body with his sword!

“1772 ! ”

Motherf*cker, this trash wanted to kill me!?

I activated [Heal] on myself and drank a Lv 8 health potion. At the same time, I grasped a God's Army Card and activated [Black Tortoise Realm].

Shock appeared on Heaven's Hero's face, as he retreated after failing to kill me, yelling, "Cover me!"

I raised my hands and smiled, "You asked for your own death!"

[Great Realm of Desolation]!

"4763 ! "

It was a one hit KO. Heaven's Hero at most only had 4000 HP, so he could not take on my [Great Realm of Desolation]! At this time, I came to realize how OP my Emperor Qin's Sword was. I was able to completely dominate the stage; even if all these top players surrounded me, I could still outplay them all!

.....

I quickly retreating back into the protection of the [Zhan Long] camp. Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao were looking at us from a distance, as I stood in the line of defense by the alliance of [Zhan Long], [Ruined Bones], [Misty Palace], and [Winds of Battle].

"Haha....."

Yan Zhao Warrior suddenly laughed. Spear in hand, he said, "Why so serious? It's only a single BOSS. Come on, Jian Feng Han, show me and Xiao Yao Zi Zai a smile."

Jian Feng Han raised the corners of his mouth slightly, "It's nothing, [Vanguard] can afford to give this one up. After the seventh wave's BOSS, there are still three more, however... [Zhan Long] only has around 1000 players and [Prague] only has around 3000 players left. [Vanguard] still has a powerful army of 8000. I wonder who'll get the last laugh....."

I couldn't help but laugh and said: "Numbers don't really matter. Look at [Flying Dragon]; with their 5000+ players, in the end...they were reduced to 1000 players during the sixth wave. Having more people means nothing. Jian Feng Han, you should keep your 8000 people army safe. Don't let them all die in the next three waves...."

Jian Feng Han gritted his teeth, "Thanks for telling me. I will!"

Simple lifted her staff and said, “Han, don’t talk so much. Let’s go back to the southern side; the eighth wave of monsters is about to come. Don’t bother with Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Yan Zhao Warrior here. Their base is closer than ours.....”

Jian Feng Han nodded.

.....

Matcha walked over with her bloodstained spear in hand, and smiled: “Boss, Boss, look at the loot you got. What’s the ring like?”

I pulled out the ring that I got from the BOSS, a bloody sword-shaped ancient ring. With a wave of my hands, the stats appeared in front of everyone. Everyone was shocked——

[Bloody Spirit Ring] (Emperor Tier)

Strength: +50

Stamina: +48

Intelligence: +45

Bonus Stat: Increase Health by 1200

Bonus Stat: Increase Defence by 200

Bonus Stat: Increase Magic Resistance by 18%

Special Effect: Lifesteal, turn 10% of attack damage into health.

Required Level: 67

.....

“F*ck.....” Li Mu said, his eyes wide. “An Emperor Tier ring.....Aren’t the stats on this ring a bit too OP? Along with so many stat boosts, there’s a 10% lifesteal as well.....”

Wang Jian smiled, “This ring is definitely a treasure that players can only dream of. Brother Xiao Yao, if you were to sell this ring, Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han would shell out over 1000W RMB to buy this. Do you believe that?”

With a “Pa” sound, I equipped the Bloody Spirit Ring on my left hand and laughed, “10% lifesteal, I like this ring too. Why would I give it to those two people? [Zhan Long] is not lacking in money. It’s better to be stronger!”

“Mhm!”

I looked at my stats; this ring brought such a big change!

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Night Watch)

Level: 67

Attack: 2846-3782

Defense: 2236

Health: 4845

Mana: 2306

Charm: 87

CBN Ranking: 26

.....

Defense over 2200 and health almost 5000, a great combo of high health and high defense. After PKing so much, my CBN rankings went up by one, from 27 to 26. Being in the front meant that it was harder to go up in ranks. I wondered how much longer it would take for me to reach top 10 in the Chinese server. After all, those that reached the top ten were pretty much legends.

Afterwards, I pulled out a red skill book from my bag. With a wave of my hands, the details of the skill book left all the Archers in a daze—

[Meteor Shot] (SS Rank): After focusing divine energy into the longbow, Meteor Shot is released for 100 meters in front of the user. Causes massive destruction as if a meteor has hit the ground. Job Requirement: Archer. Level Requirement: 60. 200 Strength needed. Consumes 3 Charm Points to learn.

.....

I lifted the skill book and asked Dancing Forest, “Little Forest, do you meet the requirements? Do you have at least 200 strength? If you have it, the book is yours.”

Dancing Forest smiled, “Wanderer’s Bow gives 45 strength, and I invested a bit of stats into strength as well. Every time I leveled, I added 1 point of strength. When adding that to all my armor, I’m still missing 3 points. But I’m at 99% exp, so after I level, I’ll add three points into strength, and it’ll be enough.”

“Ok, take it.....”

“Thank you, Guild Master!”

“Don’t leave the guild after taking it.....”

“I won’t. I’m not that type of person.....”

“Okay.....”

In the end, Dancing Forest didn’t wait until she leveled up; instead, she borrowed a wristband from Fox that added strength, and learned the skill. After returning the wristband, and equipping her own equipments, she pulled back her Wanderer’s Bow and aimed at the city wall in a distance. A ray of light began to gather, and with a “Pa”, the ray of light flew 100 yards straight into the wall.

“Bang!”

The arrow accurately hit the wall, leaving destruction in its wake. The skill was powerful, and it had good range as well. It seemed like our [Zhan Long]’s attack power had been raised a level again. With this, Dancing Forest had secured her position as [Zhan Long]’s number one Archer.

Chapter 287: Ancient Demon Blade

I looked behind me; after the continual battles, [Zhan Long] only had about 900 main members and substitute members combined. Yet, we had to rely on such few people to defend the final three waves of monster attacks. We also had to depend on such few people to slay the last BOSS and seize the God of Commerce Badge. Well, everyone was going after this God of Commerce Badge. To whom the first player shop in Ba Huang City would belong to, was extremely important to the large guilds, since the second God of Commerce Badge would only appear a whole month after that. A month was enough time to build up the popularity of the first shop. Once the reputation spread, profits would naturally pour in from all sides.

.....

“Creak....”

The heavy metal gates slowly opened. The eighth wave was coming. However, it was not the scene of millions of monsters dashing out in unison like we had imagined, but huge figures that were least 10 metres tall. The Lv. 73 mini BOSS level monsters —Mountain Giants !

These monsters were the definition of hideousness. Their faces seemed to have been soaked in soy sauce jar for few hundred years, as they were covered in mucus. Their hands held stone cones full of thorns, and they roared angrily as they stomped the ground, making it seem like an earthquake had occurred. “PengPengPeng”, they bolted towards the multitude of players, waving the stone cones at the same time, and thundered, “Foolish humans, how dare you all challenge the servants of God. Come! Accept the verdict of the Gods!”

“Watch out!”

Li Mu gripped his sword tightly and murmured, “These are the Purple Tier mini BOSSes; their stats are weaker than the actual BOSS’s, but their attack power is still very strong, so be careful!”

The Mountain Giants dispersed, and headed towards the horde of

players located north of the City of the Ancients. Probably about 12-15 monsters appeared before [Zhan Long].

Raising the Emperor Qin's Sword, I shouted, "Tanks, go up to the front and draw their aggro. Long ranged players, attack!"

I rushed out as the Emperor Qin's Sword struck above the ankle of the Mountain Giants with a [Combo], causing numerous damage numbers. My attack power was now practically able to ignore any defense—

"2128 ! "

"2343 ! "

"2211 ! "

"2108 ! "

.....

The Mountain Giants swung its stone cone, and with a "PengPeng" sound, continually hammered it twice on my shoulder armor, causing an intense pain. Each attack took away 1200+ health points, but it was still bearable. Before the Healers behind me began healing, the Emperor Qin's Sword moved, and instantly used a [Wind Blade] + [Combo] on the mini BOSS. As the fierce attacks were being made, large amounts of health were being absorbed. The effect of Bloody Spirit Ring was too OP—

"4431 ! "

"+443 ! "

"3679 ! "

"+368 ! "

.....

I cast a glance at the Emperor Qin's Sword; the weapon attack for [Kill For Blood] had raised to 227%. Motherf*cker, no wonder it was so powerful. If I attacked continuously, I could kill these Purple Tier mini BOSSes alone without the need of healing. In fact, Lv. 73 wasn't a level that was a lot higher than mine, so I could endure.

With around 150,000 health, the first Mountain Giants crashed to the ground after being mauled by me, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, and the others took about two minutes to fell one. I lifted my sword and darted towards the opposite side to give way for Yue Qing Qian as she cleared the battlefield. The little girl found a pile of equipment under the feet of the giant. She chuckled excitedly and exclaimed, “Brother Xiao Yao, there are two Gold Tier and one Purple Tier equipment! The mini BOSS actually gives Purple Tier equipment!”

I burst out in laughter, “Well, the mini BOSS is also Purple Tier. However, the percentage of the Purple Tier equipment appearing is just smaller. I don’t want it. You decide the distribution of these equipments!”

“Okay..... ” Yue Qing Qian obediently nodded and quickly distributed the drops.

Within the city, more and more Mountain Giants started flowing in and surprising us. It turned out that the eighth wave was not as easy to defeat as we had imagined. The pressure on [Zhan Long]’s frontline was increasing, and people were continually dying from the mini BOSSes’ stone cones, especially the two classes, Knights and Berserkers. Because they had extremely high attack power, they attracted the monsters’ aggro, but their defense stats weren’t necessarily able to withstand the strikes of the Mountain Giants. This resulted in a river of blood flowing below the city.

However, the Mountain Giants in [Zhan Long]’s camp still fell, one by one. In comparison to us, [Flying Dragons]’s camp was pathetic. The 7 Mountain Giants stood for ten minutes, slaughtering numerous players, before dying. Further away, the team combined by the idle players were even more miserable. Thousands of people surrounded one of the giants, but a single strike from the giant still took the lives of many. The average levels of those players were only around Lv 56, 18 levels lower than the Mountain Giants’s. Considering the difference in stats, they couldn’t possibly defend against the BOSS’s attack, even if they had awesome equipments.

Screams of pain were heard constantly. It was entirely a war of attrition.

Fortunately, the experience and drops of the Mountain Giants were extremely bountiful. During the final three waves, the death of each Mountain Giant could almost bring a jump in experience. In addition, the drops were extremely good, about a 5% chance to get a Purple Tier Equipment and for me with my 87 Charm Points, With about 40 minutes, 20 Purple Tier Equipments dropped and I placed all of them into the guild since a guild is not a one man party.

.....

“Ka Cha!”

Cutting a Mountain Giant’s toe, Li Mu’s brows furrowed: “After this wave, I need to head back to the city to repair my equipment. This sword only has 4% endurance left....”

To the side, General Wang Jian said: “Mine only has 7% endurance. The rate at which these swords loses endurance is too quick...”

Ran Min jumped up startled: “What, I just realized that my axe has 1% endurance. In a few minutes, I’d be fighting bare handed with Mountain Giants! Li Brat, you?”

I looked at my Emperor Qin’s Sword and smiled: “Sorry but Emperor Qin’s Sword has the ability to never lose endurance.... So I probably still have 100% endurance.”

“Dammit....”

“.....”

A few minutes later, Yue Qing Qian said: “The boss of the eighth wave has appeared!”

“Where?”

“To the south. [Vanguard] currently has 5000+ people guarding it. We probably won’t have a chance unless Xiao Yao brother wants to charge in with the whole guild and lose a couple hundred members. The losses would be a little great in that case.”

I nodded: “Then let’s not consider it, this wave 8’s boss is [Vanguard]’s.

All those that have endurances below 20%, go back to your city and prepare for the ninth and tenth waves!”

“Okay!”

.....

Little Wolf, Yue Qing Qian, the General family and a bunch of damage dealers returned while I held my sword and defended our grounds, killing the Mountain Giants that came out of the city.

As a result, before this wave ended, a beautiful ring sounded in my ear –

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations, your guild [Zhan Long] has leveled up, becoming a Level 4 guild and a new guild boost [War Fortress] has been granted. All members gain 5% hidden defense and there can be a total of 3000 players in Zhan Long!

.....

“Great!” Ling Xiao Wu raised her Wanderer’s Bow and laughed, “Guild Master, our guild finally has 3000 people!”

I nodded, “Let’s recruit people now. Put half of the unofficial guild members into the Zhan Long camp and the other half into the Valiant Bravery Camp. They need the guild buffs.”

“Ok!”

To my side, the unofficial Zhan Long members quickly joined Zhan Long. The powerful dragon head emblem linked together in a sea as Zhan Long’s member count quickly rose to 1500+. After this battle, Zhan Long should be able to grow by another 700 and then with the power of Matcha and Yue Qing Qian, we can get to 3000 within 3 days.

Not long after, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Yue Qing Qian, the people who were repairing their equipments, returned. At the same time, the system notification sound rang through the air. Finally, the eighth BOSS had been killed. Moreover, the player to beat it was Simple, [Vanguard]’s Vice Guild Master—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations to player Simple for successfully killing the eighth BOSS of the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City). Rewarded Charm +8, Experience raised by 80%, and the SS-skill ranked book, **【Ancient Demon Blade】**!

.....

“F*ck, where did the Ancient Demon Blade come from?” Li Mu gritted his teeth.

Matcha stared off into the distance, and after her inspection, replied, “There’s a type of Lv 65 Mage that can learn this SS-ranked skill. It summons the Ancient Demon Blade to attack a target within a 30 yard perimeter attack range. The attack’s power is correlated to the Mage’s attack power, and is equivalent to an extremely powerful magic AOE skill.....”

Wolf curled his hands into fists, “This means...that woman, Simple, is now a lot more terrifying...”

Old K clapped his hand on Wolf’s shoulder and laughed, “Last time you were PKed by her. Hasn’t Little Wolf already been scarred by her? Just hearing the names Simple and Mu Rong Yun makes you piss in your pants...”

Wolf glared at him, “Pfft, am I that type of person? Just you wait and see, there will come a day where Simple will run away like the wind at the sight of me....”

Fox chuckled, “We’ll wait for the day you become the powerful then. But first, you need to add some points in stamina. Otherwise, you’ll be killed in an instant by Simple’s magic. At this rate, she’ll never run away like the wind from you.....”

“Yea, I know....”

Assassins chose the 7 Agility, 1 Strength and 2 Endurance method to distribute stat points in order to increase their output damage and health. Wolf was a professional assassin, and so he naturally didn’t add all of his

points into agility. An Assassin like that was too fragile, and lacked power as well. It made it more unlikely to be able to pick up weapons and equipment that had higher requirements as well.

The battleground did not need any clearing; the piles of Mountain Giants corpses were gradually being cleared. After battling eight waves, [Zhan Long] now had 700+ players left. Our numbers were extremely low, and it was hard to say if we could still endure the following 2 waves.

.....

A group of people stared at the great doors in the distance, but as time passed, the metal doors still did not open, puzzling everyone.

“F*ck, it can’t be that there isn’t a ninth wave?” Old K lifted his axe.

“No, there’s definitely one....” Li Mu said.

“Then how it’s been 20 minutes, and yet it still hasn’t appeared?”

“Maybe it needs some preparations? Flights have delays, and even emergency firetrucks aren’t always timely. So what if these monsters are a bit late?”

“.....”

.....

It was at exactly that moment when a sharp caw could be heard from above the city’s walls. An enormous shadow appeared; it was a giant warhawk. On its back was a warhawk knight, carrying a spear and wearing a golden set of armor. These were the ninth wave’s monsters! The warhawk knight swept over the city walls, and directly charged towards our camp. Behind it, a dark cloud of other warhawk knights had appeared!

“Eh...”

Li Mu sharply inhaled, “Why do I feel like this is such a shitty situation....”

Chapter 288: Dragon Knight – Peilin

“Doesn’t that mean that we’re in deep trouble....”

I gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword tightly and yelled, “Guard your positions! We’ll get into a defensive formation! All Archers get ready to use [Scatter Shot]! We’ll stun the Warhawk Knights, then finish them off! Everyone be careful and don’t get insta-killed by these monsters!”

“Jie Jie....”

TL Note: Sound made by the Warhawk Knights

Wave after wave of weird braying sounds echoed as the first Warhawk Knight dived down, with a thrust of its spear, it stabbed right into the chest of one of the Knights on the ground! A large damage number appeared as the Knight was actually lifted up into the sky! F*ck, this kind of strength is way too unfair!

Wang Jian leapt up, his sword poised to strike. “Bang!” the blade cut into the Warhawk Knight’s back, bringing both the hawk and the person falling onto the ground. Old K and a few others immediately rushed forward to kill him.

At the same time, the Warhawk Knights began to fly towards us en masse; every one of them was capable of dealing highly fatal damage. Within 30 seconds, at least 20 of our people had been killed!

Since the monsters were Lv 74, 7 levels higher than mine, even I had no way of finding out their skills and stats. I only knew that these bullsh*ts had an extremely powerful attack power, as well as the ability to create a sacred shield to protect themselves. They also used a rapid fire skill to attack.

.....

“Shashasha”

Dancing Forest lifted her Wanderer’s Bow as she quickly flew backwards in retreat. Taking aim, she fired a [Scatter Shot]. “Pa!” – one of the Warhawk Knights fell to the ground, without skipping a beat,

Dancing Forest immediately pulled back her longbow again as starlight gathered on her bow. With a “Shua!” sound, [Meteor Shot] launched into the air. Like a river of stars, it tore through the night skies. The stars hit everything within a hundred yards, penetrating a dozen or so Warhawk Knights. This caused huge damage, and also destroyed their flying capabilities, causing them to drop like flies.

So it was like this.....

I quickly raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword, aimed it at the sky, and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], causing another group of Warhawks to drop to the ground. I closely followed that skill with [Great Realm of Desolation], giving fatal damages to each of them. That one attack had caused 12,144 damage, making everyone beyond shocked, as it took over 50% of the Lv 74 monsters’ health. These numbers were completely unheard of!

“Boss is too OP....” Matcha chuckled.

Yue Qing Qian lifted her dagger and stunned one of the fallen warhawk warriors, while she smiled and pointed, “Our losses like this are too great. If all of the Knights and Monks surround us and form a circular shield formation, once the warhawk warriors descend into the center, we can all kill together and we won’t suffer from heavy losses.....”

I nodded, “Yeah, Yue Qing Qian is right. Let’s do this!”

Quickly, all of [Zhan Long]’s 200 heavy armor players formed a big circle, like a scene of a wrestling ring; inside, long range and melee attacks rained down onto the monsters, killing them. The Healers stood at the border, constantly healing any players that received damage, thus keeping the situation stable!

This proved that although Yue Qing Qian was young, her expertise in the game was extraordinary. The iron shield defense plan allowed [Zhan Long] to steadily defend the North Gate, whereas on the other side, [Flying Dragon] had already begun to break apart. Fierce Tiger, Black Tortoise and others retreated one after another; only Drunken Spear remained there, brandishing his spear, as immovable as a mountain!

“Bang!”

Using [Rock Piercing Thrust], Drunken Spear dispatched a group of Warhawk Knights before activating [Heavenly Shield Wall]. Immediately “Ding Ding Dang Dang” – four Warhawk Knights successively smashed against the shield. With a jolt of his arm, Drunken Spear knocked back the few Warhawk Knights. He then lifted his spear and instantly killed one with a stab, before closely following up with [Scorching Spear]. This chain of attacks turning to defense and then defense back to attack, flowed beautifully and naturally like flowing water.

“Guild Master!”

Drunken Spear yelled out: “Quickly let the brothers form two teams and defend behind me, and then slowly form up into a circle just like [Zhan Long]’s. We need to protect our survivors. Mages, don’t just randomly attack. When the Guild Master sets a target, everyone attack together! We’ll kill them one by one. There aren’t that many Warhawk Knights; if we can just withstand them for a minute, then we’ll be able to hold our ground!”

Soaring Dragon nodded, and immediately [Flying Dragon] began imitating [Zhan Long], forming a smaller model of the iron shield wall defensive formation. Sadly, there were too few people; only 200 people remained after the last round of Warhawk attacks. The great [Flying Dragon] that had close to 7000 online players had actually been cut down till they were left with just these few people, it was unbelievable. This [City of the Ancients] update not only hides a great reward, but also brought an indescribably destructive force!

.....

“Motherf*cker.....” Li Mu looked into the distance and murmured: “To think that [Flying Dragon] had managed to attract a talent like Drunken Spear, it really makes no sense. He’s calm, yet courageous. People with those qualities are far too few, not to mention the fact that Nature Knight is a hidden class with both defensive and attack capabilities. There’s barely a handful of people like that in Ba Huang City. People say that

Cang Cheng is now Ba Huang City's top knight, but when I look at Drunken Spear, all I can say is that he is far greater than Cang Cheng!"

I nodded, "Agreed. Drunken Spear has definitely surpassed Wang Ze Cheng in terms of battle strategy and teamwork; that is without a doubt true. However, since Drunken Spear's cousin is Black Tortoise, there's nothing else we can do. We just have to admit that blood is thicker than water. Luckily, Drunken Spear doesn't have any particularly vengeful feelings towards [Zhan Long]; maybe in the future, we'll have the chance to fight against mutual enemies side by side."

"Yea!"

.....

Time passed quickly. [Zhan Long]'s circular formation was like a magnet, attracting Warhawk Knights from all directions, and then killing them one by one. Although our losses were extremely heavy, the experience gained was very ample. Furthermore, they had a high chance of dropping Gold Tier equipment and even Soul Gems, which were the most important.

Soul Gems could strengthen armor and weapons, and currently the highest someone has raised an equipment to was +7, which was my Emperor Qin's Sword. After it had been strengthened to +7, its defense and damage had risen 35%. This was a very objective problem; for rich people like Jian Feng Han, Wang Zhe Cheng and Yan Zhao Warrior, basically all of their equipment had been strengthened to at least +5. This implied that even if they used equipment with stats similar to others, they would have an additional 20% equipment stats. This was an incredibly significant difference.

In the northern part of the [City of the Ancients], over 70% of the Warhawk Knights had fallen before [Zhan Long]'s defense formation, and everyone's levels had risen quite a bit. After this battle, Ba Huang City's rankings had completely changed; the players who had killed the most number of BOSSes could also achieve the highest level. Now, the fight for Ba Huang City's number one spot was between me, Jian Feng Han, Simple,

and Yan Zhao Warrior.

.....

We were already 50 minutes into the 9th wave, and the northern part of the [City of the Ancients] appeared to only have a few scattered Warhawk Knights; most of them had been killed, while the number of players had also decreased quite a bit. The number of players combined in the northern part of the [City of the Ancients] was less than 50000, while the total number of remaining players remaining in the event was also looking just as bleak --

Players that have died in Battle: 1242773

Remaining Players: 175997

.....

“Looks like everyone suffered heavily.....” Li Mu said as he looked at the total numbers, then smiled, “There are only 170,000 players left in the [City of the Ancients]. I don’t know what [Vanguard]’s losses are like, but didn’t Jian Feng Han boast about his 8000 elite forces? I wonder how many of those 8000 are left after rushing to battle....”

Yue Qing Qian laughed, “Give me a few seconds to go look it up....”

“Sure!”

Indeed, within two minutes, Yue Qing Qian came back and chuckled, “The results are in: [Vanguard] currently still has 2200+ players, [Prague] still has 1700+ players, [Wrath of Heroes] has 500+ players, [Flying Dragon] has 174 players, [Blood Contract] has 71 players, [Misty Palace] has 114 players, [Mass Burial] and [Winds of Battle] combined have 56 people left in total, and [Zhan Long] has 600+ players left. Hehe, only these guilds are still alive...”

Li Mu couldn’t help but laugh, “Looks like few of the big guilds remain; currently most of the 170,000 players outside of the [City of the Ancients] are either solo players or small teams whose battle powers are extremely limited. I’m even getting a little worried; can those people get past the 10th wave? Furthermore.... the 9th wave BOSS hasn’t even appeared

yet....”

I gripped the Emperor Qin’s Sword and looked into the distance and smiled, “Right now... why don’t we just wait for the 9th wave BOSS to appear? It’d be great if it spawns in our direction; after all, we still have 600+ people left....”

“As you wish, Boss....”

Matcha picked up the Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul and flew into the air, as she pointed in the sky and smiled, “The 9th wave BOSS has come right in our direction...”

“Oh?”

Everyone looked up as well, only to discover multi-colored light coming from the sky and a flying object, except this time it wasn’t a Warhawk Knight, but a firebreathing dragon covered in crimson red scales. A man covered in blood red battle armor proudly stood on his back, and in his hand was a dragon spear. He coldly looked down upon the ground and with a voice like thunder, yelled: “Ignorant people, how dare you defile the [City of the Ancients]! Come, let I, the Dragon Knight Pei Lin, show you what complete annihilation really means!”

“F*ck.....”

Li Mu lifted his head, “This sh*thead doesn’t seem easy to deal with, everyone be careful!”

I rushed forward to get closer, but failed to see the BOSS’s attributes. Instead, I could only see extremely vague stats —

[Dragon Knight – Peilin] (Emperor Tier)

Level: 74

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Revolving Dragon Spear] [Silver Dragon Assault] [Fire Dragon’s

Descent]

Introduction: Dragon Knight Pei Lin was originally a Dragon Knight from the Ancient times. Pei Lin had an unusually high amount of insight and experience, such that he could communicate with dragons. He can ride any dragon besides the Dragon God, and thus he was known as the man closest to dragons. However, his thirst for strength pushed him to the dark side, and he brought along with him his fire dragon partner to serve in hell. In the end, he became one of the strongest guardians of the [City of the Ancients].

.....

Wolf asked, "How do we kill him?"

I said, "Let everyone spread out. Matcha and I will be the tanks. Let's do our best to decrease our losses. Li Mu, take some people to defend our surroundings. [Vanguard]'s and [Prague]'s people will most likely try to come and steal the BOSS, so we must prepare for that."

Li Mu nodded, "I got it, are you.... are you sure you can defend against this BOSS that can talk?"

"Don't worry, the Sinister Goblin from the first wave could also talk; didn't we also completely destroy that BOSS...?"

"That's true....."

.....

"Little Dance!" I rushed forward with my sword, and stood in the an open area by myself as I yelled out, "Little Dance, use [Meteor Shot] to draw the BOSS here, and I'll kill him!"

(TL Note: Little Dance is an affectionate name for Dancing Forest)

Dancing Forest nodded then drew her longbow back. With a "Shua!", a [Meteor Shot] sped into the sky, directly hitting the Fire Dragon's abdomen, yet only bringing out 781 damage. It was clear that the BOSS had a scarily high defense.

"Are you looking to die?!"

Dragon Knight Pei Lin grabbed the dragon's horns, making the enormous dragon descend, diving straight towards Dancing Forest!

Looking for an opportunity, I judged the Dragon Knight's speed and angle of descent and quickly opened my hand --

[Great Realm of Desolation]!

Chapter 289: Drunken Sword Style

“3782 ! ”

As usual, the Emperor Tier BOSS lost a great amount of health from my [Great Realm of Desolation]. Dragon Knight Pei Lin roared in fury, his eyes filled with rage as he looked at me. He urged his enormous dragon to charge in my direction, his dragon spear surrounded by the power of dense winds. He raised the spear above his head and slashed downwards at me!

“Bang!”

“2218 ! ”

I retreated several steps as the Dragon Knight’s dragon spear emitted a powerful wind that surrounded its body; it was the first skill, [Dragon Spear Revolution]! Even as an AOE skill, it had made even me lose so much health. If that skill had hit other people, they would not have necessarily been able to defend against it.

“Everyone be careful!”

I flashed the Emperor Qin’s Sword and charged forward, activating multiple attacks; at once, [Strength of a Thousand Men] hit the BOSS and “Pi pi pa pa” sounds could be heard as the attacks made contact with the fire dragon’s head. At the same time the first attack hit, [Lifesteal] activated, giving me a large amount of health—

“1127 ! ”

“+112 ! ”

“1324 ! ”

“+132 ! ”

“1458 ! ”

“+145 ! ”

As my sword struck, a loud “bang” sounded out. Emperor Qin’s Sword had accumulated so much hidden power from obtaining levels through

killing people, that on the fourth strike, it had forced both of the BOSSes, dragon and person, to retreat several steps. Emperor Qin's Sword began to vibrate, as the winds wrapped around the sword, displaying its power as it came down upon the fire dragon's head, drawing blood—

“4138 ! ”

“+413 ! ”

Exploiting the spoils of war, the effects of my 10% lifesteal had clearly appeared. After one [Heal] there was practically no need for Healers to give me any more heals!

“Archers, aim [Scatter Shot] at the BOSS and indiscriminately attack!” Dancing Forest lifted her Wanderer's Bow and quickly sent out the command as she pulled her longbow to shoot a [Scatter Shot]. What was surprising was the fact that it stunned on the first shot!

I took the opportunity and struck three times, while summoning my Flaming Tiger God simultaneously. The little tiger roared angrily, and pounced on the Dragon Knight, while activating the [Flame Claw] and [Fierce Roar] together. Man and pet attacked in unison, and we firmly locked the BOSS's aggro onto us.

“Hahaha.....”

After the continuous severe strikes, the Dragon Knight Pei Lin was not angered, but instead, he laughed boisterously. His eyes reflected his intention to kill, and suddenly waved his Dragon Spear. Instantly, the energy of an enormous silver dragon enveloped around the tip of the spear. The handle of the spear swayed slowly and abruptly swung forward, immediately sending the energy charging towards me. This was the power of the skill [Silver Dragon Assault] !

I slanted Emperor Qin's Sword in front of my chest, but still couldn't block the attack from the skill. Feeling an intense pain on my chest, [Silver Dragon Assault] pierced through my body, bringing out an enormous damage number—

“3127!”

“Quick, heal brother Xiao Yao!” Yue Qing Qian hastily shouted while shrieking out loud, “Be careful!”

[Silver Dragon Assault] did not just attack me alone, but penetrated my body and shot in a straight line of attack on the plains behind me. Immediately, more than ten [Zhan Long] players were injured simultaneously. Among those players, nine had been instantly killed. Only Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Matcha, and a few other people survived with their [Mana Shield] and high health defense. The chain of damage numbers was extremely astonishing—

“4677!”

“5012!”

“4788!”

.....

Li Mu lifted his sword and bellowed, “Everyone spread out in battlefield formation. Damn it, the [Silver Dragon Assault] skill from this BOSS can strike 100 yards; that’s about the same as beautiful Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot]. A single touch results in death, so avoid standing in a straight line behind Guild Master and the BOSS, or else you’ll get killed!”

Before Li Mu finished his sentence, Dragon Knight Pei Lin abruptly thrust his spear into my shoulder, inflicting about 1700+ damage. He retracted the spear and immediately raised his arms as runes surrounded his body. With a trembling deep sound, he howled, “The Giant Flame Spirits asleep in hell. Awake! Use your fiery power and wash this filthy ground; restore the authority of the enormous dragon in earth! I, Dragon Knight Pei Lin, plead for —[Fire Dragon’s Descent] ! ”

“Shit!”

I was stunned as I watched, then roared out: “Damn it, he cast an AOE attack so soon! Everyone back off, and Healers, make sure you focus on healing me!”

I stomped my foot on the ground, the force of the impact sending dirt flying outward from beneath my foot. Again, the Emperor Qin’s Sword

brought [Strength of a Thousand Men] upon the BOSS's body, yet was unable to break the BOSS's magic. I immediately struck out my fist and cast [Binding Chains]!

“MISS ! ”

The attack was dodged again! This [Fire Dragon's Descent] would definitely activate like this!

Without any other choice, I opened my fist and activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]!

Strengthening my protection, both my defense and resistance were both elevated greatly. At the same time, I summoned the [Black Tortoise Realm] and the [Soul Army]. [Black Tortoise Realm] could decrease the moving speed of the Dragon Knight, and [Soul Army] could continuously bombard the Dragon Knight. It was a very effective move!

Raising my head, I could feel the heat from the blaze as a fire dragon descended from the sky, and fire enveloped the area around me. It felt as though my body was covered in lava, constantly burning me. But it was not over, as the fire dragon kept smashing the ground, with nonstop “Bang Bang Bang” sounds ringing in my ears. It was an area attack with a range of around 30×30 yards. Besides me, there were two other Swordsman who had been instantly killed. [Fire Dragon's Descent] had multiple attacks, giving me a total of 5 hits. My body was covered in fire light and damage numbers——

“1627 ! ”

“1737 ! ”

“1791 ! ”

“1674 ! ”

“1800 ! ”

.....

I gulped down Level 8 health potions, directly adding 2000 health. At the same time, the instant heals of Darling Duck and a few Healers

behind me had also landed, and were able to raise my health to above 40%. The Emperor Qin's Sword waved, and [Combo] + [Wind Blade] instantly extracted back about 600 health points. Through the power of the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], I blocked the attack of the BOSS!

"F*ck....."

General Wang Jian grinded his teeth as he said, "This BOSS is so ferocious. It is just an Emperor Tier BOSS.... and yet Brother Xiao Yao still lost so much health even after activating [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]! Too ferocious....."

Wolf's eyes were sharp as he said, "The BOSS from the [City of the Ancients] is supposed to have a 15% increase in stats compared to the BOSSes' outside of the city. 15% increase is basically raising it another level. For Brother Xiao Yao to have such a hard time fighting is also to be expected. However.... Brother Xiao Yao! If the BOSS uses [Fire Dragon's Descent] again, do you have enough rage to activate special skills still?"

I knocked away Pei Lin's Dragon Spear with my sword, sweeping it at him, "I'm almost there. When the BOSS lost 5000 health, my rage raised 10 points. The cool down for [Fire Dragon's Descent] is at least 3 minutes and that is more than enough time for me to replenish my 100 points of rage. This should be just enough to use special skills. Besides, I just have [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] as my special skill, so it won't be a problem!"

"That's good. Then killing this BOSS is more likely!" Wolf made a fist and smiled, "Not for the sake of anything else, this BOSS must be killed by Brother Xiao Yao, just to get a SS tier skill book and +9 points of charm!"

I smiled, "The situation might still change. If needed, anybody from [Zhan Long] can come to kill this BOSS!"

"Yea!"

Yue Qing Qian squinted at the distant battle and chuckled, "[Shield of the Crimson Dragon] truly is useful. It greatly increases your defense and it only needs 40 points of rage. After Brother Xiao Yao suffered that attack, the amount of Rage that he built up is already enough. This

Dragon Knight Pei Lin is doomed, since this special skill can be used an unlimited amount of times! What a great BUG.....”

Beside me, Matcha held up her spear and smiled, “How else do you think the Drunken Sword Style was formed?”

“Eh....” Yue Qing Qian’s beautiful eyes widened, “Sister Matcha, to be honest, I don’t even know what the Drunken Sword Style is. Tell me; it looks like you know about it.”

Wolf, Old K, and the others nodded as well, expressing their interest.

Matcha helplessly smiled and explained “Drunken Sword Style is a PK style created by a certain Chinese player in the later stages of [Conquest]; buying quality wine from an NPC as high tier wines could increase rage. Thus, although his equipment could only count as average, every piece of equipment could use special skills: attack, defense, recovery and curses. The skills for these four main properties all had an increased duration effect, resulting in a situation with unlimited special skills. He could basically just waste away any high level players in solo fights. It was rumored that even Jian Feng Han had suffered a crushing defeat by the hands of the founder of the Drunken Sword Style in their first fight. Lacking the recovery from heals, as well as the means to kill the other party, Jian Feng Han could do nothing but watch as his life was slowly whittled away.....”

Yue Qing Qian’s eyes widened, “Sounds like this Drunken Sword Style is very effective....”

Wolf: “Sadly, it seems like [Destiny] has yet to be impacted by that style...”

“Why is that?”

“Well, in the first place, there’s no wine that does that, at least none that people have discovered. Also, there are far too few of [Destiny]’s special skill equipment, and only people like Brother Xiao Yao have a special equipment with a skill like [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. As for other players.... I have basically never seen it before, not to mention special skills that could increase attack and recovery....”

“Alright....”

.....

Dragon Knight Pei Lin kept on raging, and 5 minutes later, the second [Fire Dragon's Descent] came. My Rage was already at a full 100 points, and without hesitation I activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and beautifully withstood the attack from [Fire Dragon's Descent]!

10 minutes later, as the Dragon Knight Pei Lin cast his third [Fire Dragon's Descent], his health had already fallen to 15%, and he was doomed to die within 3 minutes.

Suddenly, in the distance there came a burst of turmoil!

Li Mu's eyes flashed as he yelled, “Boss! [Vanguard] lead a group of players here to steal our BOSS! What should we do?!”

I gritted my teeth and said, “Matcha, come here and be the tank. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Dancing Forest, and Fox, you guys help Matcha kill this BOSS. The remaining 15% should be gone within 5 minutes, so the BOSS shouldn't have the chance to cast another [Fire Dragon's Descent], which Matcha should be able to defend against! Li Mu and Wang Jian, bring the Valiant Bravery Group and charge with me! Let's go deal with the people from [Vanguard]!”

“YEAH!”

Matcha rushed forward as I stopped my attacks, and once Matcha had dealt close to 10,000 damage, Dragon Knight Pei Lin finally shifted his target, allowing me to rush towards the battle in the distance with my Emperor Qin's Sword raised high. Li Mu brought close to 200 people along with us as we rushed over. Seeing as [Vanguard] has come looking for trouble, then we had to just go and grant their wishes!

.....

“Bang!”

A black demon soldier started raging in the midst of [Zhan Long], causing a chain of damage numbers, all greater than 3000. 20+ of [Zhan

Long]'s players had fallen. It was [Ancient Demon Blade], Simple's SS tier skill. As expected, Jian Feng Han, Fushen Thousand Blade, and the others had appeared at our frontlines. A [Through the Clouds Slash] swept out from Jian Feng Han's blade, killing another dozen [Zhan Long] players!

Fushen Thousand Blade roared, "Players of [Vanguard], your duties are to kill your way through [Zhan Long]'s defense and to take the 9th wave BOSS!"

.....

I did not say another word, as the [City of the Ancients] was not meant to be an honorable fight. This time, in the midst of battle and chaos, there was no need to lecture on the values of morality and honor. This was a fight for oneself, a fight for the sake of becoming stronger!

"Ka-Cha!"

Suddenly, my sword slashed through 4 of [Vanguard]'s players. With the Emperor Qin's Sword in my hand, I used [Seven Fragment Slash] to kill another 11 people. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian and Wolf also rushed forward, greatly improving [Zhan Long]'s defensive formation, as well as our damage output!

"Let's kill them back!"

My eyes swept the area as my voice became louder and I shouted, "Prepare to assist! Let's insta-kill Simple!"

Chapter 290: Dragon Knight's Knee Guards

Opening my hand, I revealed three [God Army Card]'s revolving in my palm. "Shua!" they rocketed into the sky, and a large Seven Star Constellation imprinted itself into the ground, its movements completely under my control. With another "Shua!", the imprint sunk into the ground, and nobody but I could determine every stars' position. At the same time, [Black Tortoise Realm] activated right under Jian Feng Han's feet, significantly slowing down his speed!

"Che...."

Jiang Feng Han raised his Flaming Cloud Sword, while he activated [Corrupt Wolf Edge], instantly cutting down one of our Knight's health by a half. He then started retreating with his Rock Spirit Fighter; however, Wang Jian and Yue Qing Qian both charged after him. Despite Jian Feng Han's arrogance, he was not so prideful to think that he could defend against the two elite players, Wang Jian and Yue Qing Qian, under the effect of [Black Tortoise Realm].

Simple made an "oh" sound, and carried her staff as she retreated. At the same time, she waved her arm, casting an [Indigo Sea Arrow]. It shot right through the chest of an Archer beside me, inflicting 3271 damage, an instant kill!

As Li Mu watched, his heart turned cold, and he murmured, "Simple... is too merciless!"

As I cut down one of [Vanguard]'s players in front of me, I nodded and said, "Yea, watch the tempo of my attacks, and be prepared to rush forward and instantly kill Simple at any moment. Only you guys can break her 70% physical resistance [Mana Shield]; that way I can use [Great Realm of Desolation] to kill her!"

"Alright!"

Twisting his body, Old K gave a shout as he slashed into the crowd with

[Whirlwind Slash], sweeping a group of [Vanguard] players into the air. At the same time, he activated [Savage Jump Slash], killing a few Mages that had attempted to flee, his body being splattered with blood. That ass had actually become a killing god; just the sound of his Haunted Twin Blade Axe could scare [Vanguard]'s players.

Raising my hand, [Soul Army] activated, enveloping the enemies. I continued to advance as Emperor Qin's Sword danced around, killing dozens of [Vanguard]'s players in my path. Behind me followed 4 Healers, all of whom were [Zhan Long]'s finest, enough for me to survive in this space. The most important factor was my recently obtained Blood Spirit Ring that had a 10% lifesteal effect; adding onto that my 4845 HP and my 2236 defense, I was too strong. On top of that, my passive skill was already Level 7, which raised my defense by 7%. Because of this, few of my opponents were able to break through my defense with physical attacks.

.....

“Now!”

In the distance, Jian Feng Han teleported away from the [Black Tortoise Realm]'s area of effect, as he abruptly ran with his Flaming Cloud Sword. His entire person seemed to cut into [Zhan Long]'s front line like a flash of lightning, as he activated [Exposed Point] with his Flaming Cloud Sword! “Pa Pa Pa!” The sword sliced into Old K, directly attacking [Zhan Long]'s deadliest, and most vulnerable, killer on the frontlines.

“Sister Yun, [Ancient Demon Blade]!” Jian Feng Han yelled.

Old K's health had almost hit rock bottom from the continuous attacks, even a few Healers couldn't keep it up!

I hastily shouted, “Use [Oppose the Heavens]!”

As Old K fell backward to retreat, his entire body shuddered. He waved his hand, and a blood red light covered his entire body, allowing him to enter a state of immortality. All of his skill's cooldowns had been swept away, as he cast [Whirlwind Blade] + [Savage Jump Slash] right at Jian Feng Han. At the same time, [Ancient Demon Blade] fell upon him, bringing out a big MISS, giving no harm to Old K. Simple probably hadn't

imagined that Old K would make such a move.

“1736 ! ”

After [Savage Jump Slash], Jian Feng Han's health only had around 30% left. I saw the opportunity and hurriedly raised Emperor Qin's Sword, activating a long range attack, “Go die!”

Jian Feng Han shivered and swiftly drank a potion, raising his health by 2000 points. He quickly retreated at the same time, as he yelled, “Someone, come shield me!”

Beside him, Don't Be Foolish picked up his spear and rushed forward, activating his defense skill, taking the hit for Jian Feng Han!

“Hong!”

“4217 ! ”

Don't Be Foolish retreated with his life, his face a ghostly pale, “F*ck..... it seems Xiao Yao Zi Zai's attack is even higher than last time. How many people did that sh*thead kill for his increase in power to be so potent?”

“[Blade Rush]!” I said in a low voice.

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and a few other third advancement Knights darted forward, slaughtering the bloody [Vanguard] players. Along with Old K's furious attacks, [Zhan Long] turned the tables. Over 200 people courageously continued forward, while Jian Feng Han, and Simple could only helplessly retreat. After continuously sacrificing about a hundred people, Jian Feng Han also understood that this trip to the north side of the [City of the Ancients] was doomed to fail.

“Han, you guys go. I will take the rear!”

Fushen Thousand Blade lifted his steel blade and stood firmly in the grass. He clenched his teeth and bellowed, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai , isn't your attack power very high? Come! If you have the guts, try and take my 6000 health!”

My speed suddenly exploded, and I could almost see the fear in the eyes of Fushen Thousand Blade. The Emperor Qin's Sword pierced through his

chest, with a [Fierce Ice Blade] shaving off over 700 of his health. The defense of this guy must at least be 2500, and he had a squad of Healers behind him; no wonder he dared to cover for them, and even challenged my attack strength. Unfortunately, Fushen Thousand Blade probably didn't know that my basic attack today could already inflict more than 8000 damage.

“Peng!”

Both person and blade fell to the ground. I held up a fist at Fushen Thousand Blade's face, and he immediately paled. His heart even momentarily skipped a beat, as he knew exactly what my next move would be!

[Great Realm of Desolation]!

“8764 ! ”

With an excellent blow, the overlapping effect of a fatal strike appeared. Although the Healers behind Fushen Thousand Blade were trying to restore him to full health, he had been instantly killed with one hit. My attack power had been too high, to the extent where even instant heals were useless.

.....

I picked up a necklace dropped by Fushen Thousand Blade, which increased Toughness by 47, Stamina by 45, and Intelligence by 42. I directly tossed it to Wolf, requesting that he give it to Matcha when he would see her. A necklace that increased Toughness was extremely suitable to players with high health and defense.

Jiang Feng Han looked back, only to see the scene of Fushen Thousand Blade being instantly killed. His heart trembled, as he tightly curled up his fists, and roared, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai! XIAO YAO ZI ZAI!!!!!!”

Mu Rong Yun calmly said, “Han, go. Leave here. We still need to defend against the tenth wave of monsters. Command everyone to retreat. Don't be killed in vain. Each person that Li Xiao Yao eliminates will raise his weapon's attack by 1%. Unless we are able to kill him instantly, we won't

be able to defend against this person. For now, it would be better if we avoided him!”

Jian Feng Han nodded and raised his sword, “Retreat! Head towards the south side of the [City of the Ancients]!”

.....

[Zhan Long]’s people wouldn’t give up this opportunity to hunt and slaughter them. An elite party led by me, Yue Qing Qian, Wolf, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and others, chasing them for almost 800 metres. We only stopped our pursuit after forcing the players of [Vanguard] to the east of the city. On the way, the bodies, equipments, and potions of the [Vanguard] players were seen everywhere, which we completely swept clean.

In the distance, Soaring Dragon, Drunken Spear, and other members of [Flying Dragon] had eliminated the last Warhawk Knight. Their expressions were indescribable, as they watched, stupefied, the scene of [Zhan Long] hunting down [Vanguard] —

Soaring Dragon spoke in a trembling voice, “[Zhan Long] is so.....so terrifying. They actually chased after [Vanguard]..... That’s..... That’s [Vanguard] you know.....

Drunken Spear frowned, “It’s mainly because the Emperor Qin’s Sword in the hands of Xiao Yao Zi Zai is too frightening. Jian Feng Han doesn’t even dare to compete with Xiao Yao Zi Zai. That...that is really an imbalanced sword. [Vanguard] was probably ruined by that sword this time. Their successes and failures are all due to the very same reason: if Jian Feng Han had not cheated Xiao Yao Zi Zai for a heavenly sword, [Zhan Long] would probably not be hunting down [Vanguard] right now....”

Black Tortoise calmly replied, “The things that happen in this world can’t really be explained clearly. Many people said that Jian Feng Han swindled Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s heavenly sword, but consider this carefully: [Vanguard] contributed people and labor. Why should the best loot be given to an outsider? I watched the video of that battle. In fact, Jian Feng

Han was not entirely at fault, Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Li Mu were too aggressive.....”

But Drunken Spear laughed with his eyes full of meaning, “No. I don’t think that is aggressive. That is a bottom line principle that strong people should have. Jian Feng Han has already angered elites like Xiao Yao Zi Zai and General Li Mu. A scholar prefers death to humiliation. If it was me, I would turn against him and might even be more extreme.....”

Black Tortoise: “ Alright, Little Flower, I admit that what you’ve said makes sense.....”

“Bro, dont call me Little Flower! That was something from so long ago.....”

“Alright, Little Iron Spear.....”

“Just call me Little Flower.....”

“”

.....

Retreating with the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I checked the number of stacks that [Kill For Blood] had. It was already a terrifying 303%. This hunt had killed many people; thousands of [Vanguard] players had been chased and slaughtered at the north side of the [City of the Ancients]. No wonder Jian Feng Han’s look had become so unsightly. The all-powerful [Vanguard] had actually been hunted down and killed. This was a humiliation that he could not bear.

Who hasn’t suffered humiliation? Wasn’t I also hunted down in different maps as well? From [Wrath of the Heroes] to [Valiant Bravery], [Flying Dragon], and [Vanguard], who hasn’t wanted to kill me? But why does this matter; these small debts would all be returned by me, one by one. A strong person must have a grateful heart, and thank all those that had previously humiliated and looked down on me.

.....

Right at that moment, a system notification sounded throughout Ba

Huang City. The 9th wave BOSS had already been killed by our [Zhan Long]'s beautiful Matcha –

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations to Player Strawberry Matcha for successfully killing the 9th wave BOSS of the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City). Rewarded Charm +9, Experience 100% increase, as well as the SS-ranked skill book: [Grip of the Firefox]!

.....

I was at a loss, and asked in the guild chat, “Matcha, what kind of skill book is [Grip of the Firefox]?”

Matcha said nothing, and just showed everyone the stats —

[Grip of the Firefox] (SS Tier): Summons the claws of the Firefox, which results in a fiery claw that attacks a target 20 yards from the caster. The damage is dependent on the user's agility and strength. Requirements: Level 65+ Assassin, 3 Charm

.....

“Awesome.....” Old K wryly smiled, “An Assassin skill book, what do you plan to do with it?!”

Matcha gave a dimpled smile, “No need for debate, Wolf already took the [10 Way Blade] skill book, so this [Grip of the Firefox] will go to our Vice Guild Master, Sister Yue Qing Qian. She can trade me a pair of Purple Tier armor boots for it....”

“Alright.....”

I asked again: “Matcha, did the BOSS drop anything else?”

“Yup! Boss, there's an armor for you!”

“What?”

Matcha then shared the stats of an equipment. It was something I desperately needed: a pair of crimson red leg guards to replace the embarrassing Gold Tier leg guards that I was still wearing — [Dragon

Knight's Leg Guards] (Emperor Tier)!

Chapter 291: Battle of the City Wall

[Dragon Knight's Leg Guards] (Emperor Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 390

Strength: +51

Stamina: +48

Intelligence: +45

Additional: 19% increase in Magic Defense

Additional: 10% increase in Physical Defense

Special Skill: [Dragon Knight's Recovery] once activated will recover 10% of health every second for 7 seconds. Uses 60 points of Rage

Level Requirement: 68

.....

"How is it, Boss?"

Matcha held the pair of Dragon Knight's Leg Guards and laughed, "It's a Lv 68 equipment, and you're the only player in the guild that's Lv 68. Besides, you alone did 85% of the damage to the BOSS's health. This pair of Emperor Tier leg guards undoubtedly belongs to you. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and I both agree that there's no need to roll for it. Besides.... the tanks that fought this BOSS were just you and I, and if you don't take it, I'll cry...."

I almost teared up at that. I reached out to take the Dragon Knight's Leg Guards and said, "Thank you, Matcha....."

With her hands behind her back and her innocent look, she smiled, "Don't mention it,"

Me: "....."

Reaching out, I put on the Dragon Knight's Leg Guards, changing out the Leg Guards of a Beast. My attack power decreased slightly, but my

survival skills raised another level, especially with the special effect [Dragon Knight's Recovery]. Within 7 seconds I could recover 70% of my health; this was clearly an equipment that I needed. Perfect, with [Dragon Knight's Recovery] + [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], although these two special skills would use up all of my rage, they would also substantially increase my survivability.

Looking at my stats, my defense had increased quite a bit—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Knight Watch)

Level: 68

Attack: 2864 – 3803

Defense: 2407

Health: 4955

Mana: 2676

Charm: 87

CBN Battle Ranking: 26

.....

My defense had finally exceeded 2400, almost equivalent to Fushen Thousand Blade's level. Now I didn't have to worry about someone instakilling me, since there wasn't anybody, excluding myself, that had such a frightening attack. 2400 defense was definitely enough to fight against elite players like Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior, and with my special skills, even if I fought them one on one, I still had some likelihood for victory.

To top it all off, my mana is now 2676. Most other tanks don't even have 1000 mana while I have over 2000. The quality of my equipment was very clear, and with my [Great Realm of Desolation], [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and [Wind Blade], I could finally display the extent of my abilities without restraint. I just needed to bring along high quality potions, and I could basically use high level skills endlessly.

"Did the BOSS drop any other equipment?" I asked Matcha.

Matcha laughed, “This 9th wave BOSS dropped quite a few good items; there were a total of 4 equipments: 3 Emperor Tier and 1 Purple Tier. There was also a pair of Emperor Tier leather boots that Dancing Forest ROLled away. The Emperor Tier ring which increased agility and range was taken by Fox, while Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands managed to ROLL the Purple Tier equipment. There were a few Soul Gems that were ROLled away as well, but nobody is willing to use them since the Soul Gems are too precious. Since we don’t really have any good armor, weapons, or shields, we can’t bear to use the Soul Gems yet....”

I chuckled, “Yea, that’s true... Report how many remaining players we have, as well as our losses”

“Sure!”

Matcha followed behind me, and as we strolled below the city walls she smiled and said, “Currently [Zhan Long] still has 347 people, but they are all elite players. Just now in the 9th wave, we lost over 400 people and our losses were great. But compared to us, [Flying Dragon]’s, [Vanguard]’s, and [Prague]’s losses were much greater. Many of their mid-ranked players had died, and now all that’s left are the few top players in their guilds.”

I lifted my head I looked up towards the [City of the Ancients], then looked at the foot of the walls. As before, there were still some people who guarded the place, unwilling to give up. I smiled and said, “Looks like the [God Commerce Badge]’s temptation is too great, seeing as nobody is willing to give up and retreat.....”

“Yup, the God of Commerce Badge’s value is immeasurable and everyone understands that.....”

“Hehe, that’s right!”

.....

Below the city walls, there were around 20,000 players creating a formation, awaiting the last wave of monsters. This time, the last wave’s BOSS would carry the God of Commerce Badge here. This was our greatest interest.

After waiting for 30 minutes the great gates had still not opened.

“Uh..... what’s the situation? Is it possible that the 10th wave was a lie?” asked Yue Qing Qian.

I shook my head, “I don’t know what the situation is, lets just keep watching for now....”

“Okay.....”

In the distance, [Flying Dragon]’s people were getting impatient. Soaring Dragon waved his staff at the sky and yelled, “F*ck..... this is too nerve-wracking! The God of Commerce Badge isn’t all make believe is it?”

Drunken Spear wryly said, “Guild Master, don’t be too impatient, we haven’t reached the end yet. There doesn’t appear to be anything happening in any of the four sides of the city. When the BOSS appears, everyone will know, so don’t worry. The last BOSS might even be a Valkyrie Tier BOSS, and will take a while to kill. We’ll have our opportunity, it’s just that.... we have too few people. We have less than 100 people present, how can we steal the BOSS? Even if the BOSS came to us, we might not have the ability to kill it now.....”

Soaring Dragon’s face turned grim, and didn’t say anything.

.....

After another two minutes, Matcha closed her wings and descended to the ground. She pointed towards the east and said, “Boss, it seems that..... there seems to be the sound of hoofbeats coming from there, but I don’t know what’s happening....”

“Oh?”

I looked over along with everyone else, but only saw a cloud of dust on the plains. A mass of human soldiers appeared, their flags flying in the wind. It was the insignia of Ba Huang City. The NPC army had finally arrived. In front of the mass of people stood a fierce man with the face of a noble. He walked up while carrying his battle axe and shouted, “Ba Huang City’s 5th Team has come to fulfill their order to attack the [City of the Ancients]! All bystanders, get out of the way!”

“F*ck..... Ba Huang City’s NPC Army has also come to steal the glory?”
Li Mu said.

“Yup.”

I nodded, “Nobody make a move, let’s see what happens first. It’s possible that the last wave isn’t monsters, but rather, the fact that we have to fight our way in. The last BOSS should be waiting for us inside the city walls.”

As the war drums beat, the eastern side of the [City of Ancients] had over 100,000 NPC soldiers forming a frontline to prepare to attack the city. Rows of soldiers put up their ladders, and pushed over war chariots filled with weapons to besiege the city. The thick crowd of NPC archers shot down a dense rain of arrows, knocking down most of the NPC soldiers. However, they all refused to retreat, and the ones still alive climbed over the bodies of fallen soldiers to continue charging towards the walls.

On top of the wall, one of the guards picked up his longbow and bellowed, “Quickly reinforce the wall! D*mmit, Ba Huang City has begun to attack. Looks like those noble old geezers don’t just have the ability to hide behind their defenses, but can also attack! Send out some monsters, and kill everything that can move! Ba Huang City is ours; the real capital is [City of the Ancients]!”

A great number of NPC archers began moving around the top of the city wall. The eastern wall had already become a sea of fire, but the NPC Army kept building [Sky Ladders] to the top of the wall, desperately trying to get in. Sadly, none of the players had learned how to build tools of war, and only players with Level 5+ guild players could learn those construction skills. Currently, the highest level guild in Ba Huang City was Level 4, demonstrating the long road ahead.

.....

Standing below the city walls, Li Mu raised his head and said, “80% of the strong archers on our north side have been drawn away. How about it? Should we begin our attack?”

I wet my lips and said, "Let's not rush yet, we don't have any of the tools necessary for invading a city. We don't even have [Sky Ladders]. How are we supposed to climb a 50 meter wall?"

"That's true...."

Yue Qing Qian pointed and said: "Brother Xiao Yao, look over there..."

"Oh?"

Everyone looked over together and discovered that the NPC army from Ba Huang City had begun to hold their shields over their head as they marched forward towards the walls' defense. They positioned the [Sky Ladder]s against the wall, and started to climb upwards. One of the NPC officials with a beard that covered his face began waving his battle axe as he gave a whooping laugh, "You idle adventurers, now is the time to vow loyalty and devotion to the our sacred union. Attack! Once all of the creatures in this [City of the Ancients] have turned to dust, you will have successfully guarded your homes! Valiantly go forth and never retreat!"

"Should we attack?" Yue Qing Qian asked as she looked at me.

I looked at the number of NPC's on the wall and gritted my teeth, unable to make a decision just yet.

Beside me, Wang Jian said, "Brother Xiao Yao, we don't even know what the BOSS inside the city is even like. Maybe by going in earlier, we'll reap some benefits?"

I took a deep breath and said, "I'm just worried... that we have too few people. We only have 347 players left, and although they are our strongest players, I'm just afraid that I'll be making everyone suffer unnecessary losses."

Bai Qi smiled, "Guild Master, you don't have to be so worried. Seeing as we joined [Zhan Long], we'll always trust in your leadership. Don't worry, even if we're annihilated, then it's because we ourselves weren't strong enough; it would have nothing to do with your command. I also support attacking the wall. If we reach the walls sooner, then we'll have the rare opportunity to raise [Zhan Long]'s reputation!"

I made a fist, “Alright then, in that case, we’ll immediately attack the walls! Knights, take your shields and advance! Swordsmen and Berserkers will form the second line, while Healers form the third line. Mages and Archers will form the fourth line. Split up to climb the ladders up the city walls. First defend well, then begin clearing out all of the monsters on the walls!”

“Alright!”

.....

I tightened my grip on the Emperor Qin’s Sword and advanced. My defense was already 2400+, greater than most of the Knights and Monks. Actually, I was the most suitable person in my guild to stand in the front and block the arrows!

One group rushed past 100 yards to the bottom of the walls and Matcha said, “Allowing Boss to take all of the damage alone could kill you. Despite your high defense, it’s not Wang Ze Cheng’s. Let’s do it this way; Boss and I will advance into the net of fire and divide the damage between us. After that, everyone else can advance!”

“Alright!”

Matcha and I were well coordinated as we both advanced into the range of the archers. At the same time, a rain of arrows came from the city walls, and the two of us slowly advanced, our bodies constantly covered in light from the heals. Along with us came many of Ba Huang City’s players; the only difference was that Matcha and I could withstand the attack and not die, whereas the other players did not have our luck; the ferocity of the archers’ attack had basically killed everyone!

“Pa!”

Firmly gripping the [Sky Ladder], I exerted strength with my foot, and climbed upwards with a “tu tu tu” sound. The fifty meters were quickly scaled, and I turned and stepped onto the city wall. I immediately activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and my Emperor Qin’s Sword danced, using its full power!

Chapter 292: Extinguisher of Hope

“Hong!”

[Seven Star Fragment Slash] crashed against the city walls, causing great damage, and leaving a shocking crevice on the bricks of the wall. This was the effect of the fragment slash which was powerful enough to raze NPC buildings. Normally, this aspect of the skill wasn't of much use, but during wars against cities or nations, this skill was unexpectedly handy.

My health points suffered from the hits of the fierce arrows, as the densely packed arrows pierced my Nebula Armor. My health decreased to about 1000 points in a blink of an eye. Darling Duck and a few other Healers behind me had not yet mounted to the city walls; I could only rely on myself !

With a wave of my sword, a [Wind Blade] was released, causing an enormous damage number to pop up in front of the chest of an NPC archer. The fatal strike effect appeared, in addition to the 10% health extraction. Two numbers popped up —

“10993!”

“+1099!”

The 10% health extraction was too powerful. Using another Heal with a wave of my hand, and gulping down another Lv 8 health potion, my health was restored. The [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] clanked and cried with a buzzing sound. The 40 archers before me had to be killed, otherwise I wouldn't be able to hold on for much longer!

“Roar Roar.....”

A fierce golden tiger appeared beside me. The Flaming Tiger God dashed out howling, and used [Burstfire Raid], leaving a large sea of fire on the bodies of the archers and revealing the spirit of the King of the beasts completely. It raised its head and used [Fierce Roar], causing more widespread damage. Waving its sharp claws at the same time, it

summoned a protective shield, and pieces of [Blazing Armor] emerged around the fierce tiger. The [Blazing Armor] defended most of the assault and also enabled the Flaming Tiger God to fight a protracted war!

Behind me, a beautiful figure leaped up the city walls. It was Yue Qing Qian; her slender fair legs, adorned with a pair of boots, gently landed on the ground with a “Pa”. With a wave of her dagger, she was enshrouded by flames, as the image of a charming fiery fox emerged above the beauty. The next moment, Yue Qing Qian opened her palm, magically transformed it into a fiery fox’s huge claw, and began to slaughter her way through the monsters!

“Hong!”

With a 20 yard attack distance, the archers that were within the area that [Grip of the Firefox] covered were struck, one by one. Each received about an average of 3500 damage. This was pretty much the limit of present stage Assassin players. Yue Qing Qian was ranked the top Assassin in Ba Huang City; only Wan Er from Fan Shu City was probably only one that could be considered stronger than Yue Qing Qian.

.....

Once my cooldown had ended, I again used [Seven Star Fragment Slash], then activated Mohist’s Five Scrolls above the city walls; [Soul Army] and [Black Tortoise Realm] wrought havoc among the monsters. With that, Yue Qing Qian and I already controlled the situation above the city. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Wolf, and others, darted up the city walls and brandished their blades, slaughtering through the swarm of monsters. Next, Darling Duck led our Healers up the city walls. [Zhan Long] firmly stood on top of the city.

I commanded Wang Jian, Li Mu and the others to continue assaulting the archers around us. I then stood on the city walls, scanning everything within the city. There were no high buildings or pavilions as we had imagined, only severely weathered ruins within the [City of the Ancients]. At the center of the city was an altar. The totems carved on stones in this area were corroded over time into pillars of rock. At the middle of the

altar, a warrior, holding a sword and clothed in black armor, was seen standing there. He held his head up and gazed at the sky indifferently with a cold smile. From a distance, only his name was seen, and the stats remained blurry—

[Extinguisher of Hope – Li Qing] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS)

Level: 75

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Li Qing was the Chief General of the Ancient Radiant Empire. He controlled the million military of the empire, and won every battle, conquering three-fourths of the mainland. A powerful existence that was called the God of War by the people. However, a natural disaster descended on the land, and plague and death swept through the earth. The Radiant Empire fell apart in a flash, and people died one after another. The Commander-in-Chief led the last army in search of an oasis that was suitable for survival. With no result, he could only guard the Ancient imperial city while awaiting his death. His despair and hatred had nowhere to be expressed. In the end, he sold his soul and fell into darkness in exchange for the reappearance of the imperial city. That imperial city is the [City of the Ancients].

.....

“My God, the last BOSS is a Lv 75 Valkyrie Tier.....”

My mouth twitched, “This Extinguisher of Hope should be the final BOSS. It is Valkyrie Tier as expected.....”

Matcha chuckled, “Boss, the tenth wave doesn’t seem to have monsters; only this Li Qing is guarding the city. How about...we go down into the city and meet him now? [Zhan Long] still has about 300 people. If we cooperate as a team, there’s still hope to slay the Lv.75 Valkyrie Tier

BOSS.”

“Just checking, approximately how much health does a Lv. 75 Valkyrie Tier BOSS have?”

“1 million, I presume..... The actual attack is probably around 12000. Boss, how much is your defense? Can you block a 12000 attack?”

I swept my eyes over my stats and replied, “Basic defense is 2400 points, and equipment adds 14% more. There’s another 7% from ignoring attack damage, and some other defensive buffs for another 14%. Altogether, it’s increased by 35%, so my actual defense is around 3240.....”

Matcha couldn’t help but open her small mouth and laugh, “This..... 3240 points of defense strike by 12000 attack will be extremely painful. The ordinary attacks probably inflict 3000 damage in one attack, so you might die instantly if special skills are added. Still want to fight?”

“Fight! We must fight!”

I clenched my fist and said: “The three main cities of the Chinese server have so many extraordinary guilds. [Legend], [Hero Mound], [Vanguard], and [Prague] all have a strong financial support. [Zhan Long] does not have a decent financial support, so we must take the first God of Commerce Badge. This way, we will have the capital to laugh at the whole world. Self-sufficiency is absolute.....”

Matcha nodded, “Alright, how should we attack?”

“Let others attack first, as we have too few people. Be patient. We’ll only have a chance if we strike midway. The main thing is..... is it certain that the God of Commerce Badge will be on this BOSS?”

“Probably.....” Yue Qing Qian pointed at the shoulder of the BOSS and said, “There’s a golden badge emblem there. If I am not mistaken, it should be the God of Commerce Badge. This proves that the BOSS carries the God of Commerce Badge.”

I pondered this for a bit, then said, “Let’s watch for a while, and talk after we clear all the elite archers on the city wall!”

“Okay! ”

.....

Soon after, the NPC army's attack on the city proceeded smoothly. Towers on the city walls were torn down. A single man was seen dashing up the city walls; he cleaved a ten meters deep tunnel into the wall with one strike of his war axe. With the war axe in hand, he arrogantly roared in anger, “Li Qing, you are an old ghost that had died off for millions of years. You actually had the face to lead these decayed scums of the [City of the Ancients] and come disrupt the order of the Ba Huang City!?”

Within the city, Li Qing raised his head and flashed a smile, “Young man from the later generations, do you think these mobs that you led will be able to conquer the [City of the Ancients]? Hahaha, today, I only need to kill all of you and use your blood as an offering to the dead. In 12 hours, I will be able to use the power of your souls to summon more infernal undead soldiers to come conquer this place. Ba Huang City belongs to me, Li Qing, and is the dominion of the [City of the Ancients]!”

“Bullshit!”

On the city walls, the warrior raised his war axe and roared, “Into the city! Kill Li Qing and mount his head on the city gates of Ba Huang City. Use the curse of the Holy Priest to trap and lock his soul. Quench it daily and torture it constantly. Let this guy really experience endless despair!”

At this time, everyone finally saw the NPC name of the one in charge of commanding the army of the Ba Huang City—

[Slaughtering Storm • Luo Lie]

Introduction: The younger cousin of Duke Luo Lei of Ba Huang City. He possesses impressive martial prowess, and has won every war he has fought. Commanded the Army of Ba Huang City to conquer south to north and pacified the entire territory of Ba Huang City. In the end, he was bestowed the title of Heavenly General of Ba Huang City, and given command of the military forces within the entire territory of Ba Huang City.

.....

“So he was actually the little brother of Duke Luo Lei.....” I flashed a smile, “Wonder if Luo Lie is stronger or the Extinguisher of Hope in the city is stronger. I’m eager to watch. Let’s wait until Luo Lie weakens the Extinguisher of Hope to 1% health, and then we will join in and fight.....”

Yue Qing Qian smacked her lips and giggled: “Big Brother, what kind of attitude is that.....”

Below the city, a myriad of Ba Huang City military forces entered the city. With the cavalries in lead, a few thousand horsemen brandished their spears and dashed towards the heart of the [City of the Ancients]. From a distance, spears were hurled, and with “shuashua” sounds, flew towards Li Qing. The tip of the spears were suffused with a cold glow and surrounded by a force, seemingly infused with battle qi or similar forces. These cavalries were probably also the elite forces of Ba Huang City.

The moment before the spears descended, Li Qing suddenly raised his head. With a face full of pride, he roared angrily, “Arrogant posterity, I will let you know and experience what my decimating power is like!”

“Weng! ”

The air seemed to have frozen. The numerous spears struck the chi defense condensed by Li Qing as “PengPengPeng” sounds bursted forth; all the spears ricocheted off. Li Qing darted out and leapt ten meters into the air, as he brandished his sword glowing with electricity. It split the earth apart with the crashing of thunder. He then cross cut the squad of cavalries and immediately sending severed limbs and stumps of the horsemen and their horses into a mad dance, and fresh blood filled the ground. Those elite horsemen were completely covered in thick, dense armor, yet those armors were unable to protect them. Li Qing’s assault was far more powerful than what they could have imagined.

Li Qing stood majestically in the sky in his battle robe, accompanied by the sound of the wind. As he opened his left hand, power condensed in his palms and he abruptly bellowed, “All of you, die! [Heavy Earth]!”

“Peng..... ”

The earth suddenly trembled, as an approximately 100×100 yard area of the ground in the city sank down with a loud bang. A sea of flames erupted, and numerous elite horsemen were deeply trapped inside. They wailed endlessly in misery as they awaited their deaths!

.....

“This..... ”

With a murderous look, Luo Lie roared, lifted his war axe, and commanded, ” Archers, keep advancing. Use your metal arrows and penetrate this body of Extinguisher of Hope. Kill him! ”

The swarm of archers flowed into the city, lining up into formation. They raised their bows and aimed at Li Qing; under Luo Lie’s command, millions of arrows shot out in unison!

“Sousousou.....”

The direction of the arrows in the sky was true, but were all reflected away when they approached Li Qing. Li Qing’s special ability was probably nullifying long-ranged attacks; extremely terrifying!

“You all are seeking death.....

Flashing a smile, Li Qing placed the sword in the sheath behind his back. Raising his arms evenly, he shook his left hand once and muttered, “Earth”. An energy in the shape of a piece of green rock flowed into his palm. Shaking his right hand once again, he muttered “Sky”. Immediately, numerous star energies slowly appeared .The next moment, Li Qing pushed forward with both of his hands, and with a sinister look, he roared in laughter, “Go die, ants. Take this! [Heaven and Earth Seal]! ”

.....

“Hong! ”

The heaven and earth combined. The attack left crimson bloodstains on the mangled earth it slaughtered through, and several thousands of archers were all mutilated beyond recognition!

Chapter 293: Your head is mine

“Dammit..... How high is this BOSS’ attack.....”

Matcha’s mouth widened in shock, “Those NPCs from Ba Huang City aren’t in a battle, it’s a massacre.... This version of the [City of the Ancients] is way too unreasonable. How can the last BOSS be so strong? Who can kill something like that.....”

Li Mu carried his sword over and said: “Let’s wait for now, see what the situation is like..... whoever attacks right now will become cannon fodder!”

I nodded, “Yup, lets just watch for now; we shouldn’t stick out like a sore thumb, we’re not taking that risk.”

.....

“Bang.....”

In the distance, another city gate had collapsed. The [City of the Ancients] was officially broken as players from all directions began flooding into the city. Logically, with over 70,000 players killing one BOSS should not be a problem, however nobody was an idiot and none of the players were willing to be the first to attack.

Within the city walls, Ba Huang City’s Chief Commander Luo Lie picked up his battle axe, his eyes full of arrogance as he began laughing: “Did you think killing a few weaklings will defeat Ba Huang City’s bravest? Keep dreaming! Let me show you what Ba Huang City’s true finest really means!”

Luo Lie violently waved his battle axe and yelled out, “Crimson Archers, attack! Use iron chains to hang the souls out of these ancient monsters!”

Once the city gates opened, dozens of knights dressed in crimson red flew out, even the horses were dressed in armor, their iron hoofs beating against the ground. Besides the fact that every knight carried a sharp blade, on their backs, they carried long bows made of pure steel with black bow strings of unknown material!

“Bows!”

Once the general gave his command, a group of crimson archers each grabbed their longbows and drew their arrows. Instead of feathers, however, crimson red chains the size of a fist were connected to the end of the arrows trailing over their shoulders. The scene was truly awe-inspiring, enough to scare everyone watching!

“Raise your [Vengeance]!”

With another shout, 28 armored riders began roaring, emitting energy from their arms then directing that [Vengeance] to the arrows on their long bows.

“Release!”

28 heavy iron arrows shot out, creating a magnificent painting of battle. The tips of the arrows brought a crimson charge that penetrated through Li Qing’s Qi wall. “Pu pu pu” the arrows impaled his armor as black blood began to seep out from the wounds. The iron horsemen began to encircle Li Qing, binding him like a doll in chains. In addition, the chains had thorn-like spikes that cut into his skin, making this [City of the Ancients] general suffer endless pain.

“Hahaha.....”

Luo Lie picked up his battle axe and jumped off of the city wall. With a “Pa!” he sat onto a black battle ox and commanded it to move forward as he yelled, “Li Qing, did you really think you could dominate the world with your undead warriors? Now you should understand, Ba Huang City’s Magic & Martial Academy has already produced talented outstanding warriors. With them around, you’re fated to die!”

“Ahhh.....”

Li Qing kept howling in pain as his sword kept emitting lightening. His eyes turned cold as he glared towards Luo Lie. The corners of his lips curved into a cruel smile as he said: “I have suffered hundreds of thousands of years of endless despair. I have suffered hundreds of thousands of years of tortuous pain. I have already lost all ability to feel

pain. Seeing as these knights are your blood and sweat, then.... I should raise the temperature for them. I don't suppose you will mind?"

As he said that, Li Qing roared and from sky a violent bolt of thunder struck Li Qing but it appeared to have been summoned by Li Qing himself, as the bolt flowed through the chains, shocking the knights who held the chains!!

"Pa Pa Pa...."

As a result of the violent thunder, the group of archer riders had been burnt to dust and the more experienced ones had been burnt into charcoal as they fell from their horses. Indeed, he had raised their temperatures. Of course, for the ones who did not have enough experience and had been directly struck by the lightening, they had immediately been annihilated, without a single trace of their bodies left; even the horses had disappeared.

In that moment, Luo Lie was unresponsive as he watched the dust floating off the ground. His entire body shivered as he said, "This... this is impossible..... they, they were Magic & Martial Academy's geniuses! How....How could this be?!"

As he was talking, Luo Lie raised his head, his eyes an angry red. His battle axe began gathering fire, and once the fire's [Vengeance] was full, he yelled in anger, "Li Qing, I'm taking your sh*tty life!"

"Bang!"

The air vibrated with rage as Luo Lie jumped from his mount. His entire person seemed to be pulled from the sky as he raised himself and lifted his axe, creating an elegant arc, cutting straight at Li Qing!

"Ahhhhh...."

Li Qing smiled, smoothly raising his long sword to block. With a "Keng!" the fire and lightning clashed, the dust rising all around them creating a storm. The two warriors' clash intensified the atmosphere around them, causing the entire [City of the Ancients] to tremble!

"Get down!"

Luo Lie roared, and waved his battle axe a second time. Using all of his strength to strike downwards, Li Qing was no longer able to withstand the attack. Li Qing's body began sinking as he fell onto the altar!

“Oh God of War in heaven. Grant me the ancient power, Flame devours the dark. I, Luo Lie summoned in the name of justice—[Raging Flame Spirit Wolf]!”

“Hong” was heard as the fire exploded outwards, and an image of a fierce wolf's head emerged above his war axe. Luo Lie slashed down with a bang, the overwhelmingly attack directly striking towards Li Qing's head. It seemed that the First Rank Hero of Ba Huang City was really starting to fight for his life!

“Go die!”

Li Qing shook and hastily lifted his sword. He pressed on the blade and lightning surged as thunder roared while he howled angrily, “Come. Let me see how powerful your Ancient Martial Secrets is, and whether or not it is better than mine!”

Flames blotted out the sky and the land, as Luo Lie almost used up all his energy. Li Qing lifted his sword, and thunder and lightning interweaved into an enormous web to defend against Luo Lie's Ancient Martial Secrets!

“Hong! ”

The air around the defense zone seemed to have frozen. A deafening concussion echoed in my ears. In the sky, Luo Lie stood majestically, with airstreams spiralling beneath his feet as he slowly descended! The altar had already been split into ruins by Luo Lie's strike. A deep huge pit appeared within the city walls. In the middle of the enormous pit, Li Qing was kneeling down with his sword in hand. His long hair was flying, and his arms hung down in despair as blood flowed down to the tip of the sword.

.....

“Hu.....hu....”

Luo Lie panted heavily, while the war axe trembled slightly in his hand. He bellowed, “Extinguisher of Hope, Li Qing. Is that all you’ve got? Haha. You are unworthy of your reputation as the dominator of the [City of the Ancients]..... ”

“Pada..... ”

Black drops of fresh blood splashed in the dirt. Li Qing tightened the hand holding his sword, and suddenly stood up. He yanked the blade out of the ground and despite having a face full of burnt flesh, his expression was unyielding as he roared in laughter, “Young man from the later generation, if you only possess only this little ability, then I..... then I can only kill you now; because I feel —very bored! ”

Luo Lie trembled as a dense mass of infantries behind him dashed forward and screamed, “Protect Commander-in-Chief! Everyone charge, and protect him. Kill this demon in the [City of the Ancients]! ”

.....

“Pa! ”

A light step on the ground was heard, as Li Qing darted forward as quick as lightning, and slashed his blade horizontally!

“Keng! ”

The first strike. The war axe in Luo Lie’s hand was unable to block the attack, and it flew out of his hand, dropping in the distant wilderness. The shock had caused Luo Lie’s right arm to bleed profusely, as he looked in shock at Li Qing.

Nearby, Li Qing watched Luo Lie and wryly smiled: “Ba Huang City is mine.... and your head is as well!”

“Ah? What!!!”

Luo Lie had slightly trembled, and felt only a slight chill around his neck. In the next instant, his head had already been cut off by Li Qing’s sword. Li Qing grabbed the dismembered head and raised it up high as he roared out, “Ba Huang City ants, look closely Your Commander-in-Chief

has already been beheaded! Leave immediately, or else you'll also become our sacrifice!"

"What!?"

The squad of NPC soldiers from Ba Huang City stared with their eyes widened and jaws dropped. They exclaimed in cold shock. " Luo..... Lord Luo Lie actually got killed! Lord Luo Lie got killed! Heavens, that is a demon. He actually killed the powerful Lord Luo Lie!"

Within seconds, hundreds of thousands of Ba Huang soldiers scattered. To think that there was no one willing to fight against Li Qing!

Li Qing stood within the city and laughed.

A system notification sounded as an announcement appeared in the sky

"Ding! "

[System Announcement]: As the [Extinguisher of Hope•Li Qing] has killed the Commander-in-Chief of Ba Huang City [Slaughtering Storm•Luo Lie], Ba Huang City has now issued a warrant. The player that kills Li Qing will be given extremely generous additional rewards!

.....

"Everyone, advance!"

South of the city, there was a loud shout from within [Vanguard]'s army, as First Division's leader, Leafy Gentlemen, yelled out, "Now is the time! First Division, advance with me! Let's destroy Li Qing and get that God of Commerce Badge!"

With that command, close to 400 people began to flood the city walls, running straight at Li Qing.

"F*ck....."

Li Mu's eyes turned cold as he said: "Does Jian Feng Han want his First Division to test the BOSS out?"

Yue Qing Qian nodded, "Probably. Plus, the [Vanguard]'s First Division still has so many people, as well as an organized formation. They

definitely do possess the strength to challenge this BOSS! Brother Xiao Yao, what should we do now?”

With a heavy voice I said, “Everyone, get off the city walls and create a formation north of the city. We’ll be ready to welcome the BOSS. Hmph, a Lv 75 Valkyrie Tier BOSS isn’t something I believe that [Vanguard]’s First Division can kill!”

“Oh. Alright! ”

.....

Soon, more than 300 members of [Zhan Long] had assembled in the city. Shield formation at the front, DPS behind them and Healers at the back. We were prepared for battle.

In the distance, Leafy Gentlemen had already initiated the attack. Arrows fell like rain upon the BOSS’s body, but Li Qing’s defense was too high; the arrows were only like minor itches. He slaughtered his way through the group of people, cutting right past their defensive formation in the shape of a cross. Nearly 50 people had been trapped in a sea of fire. On top of that, he activated another [Heaven and Earth Seal], and after a few more consecutive attacks, hundreds of people from [Vanguard]’s First Division had perished!

“Scattered Shot!” Leafy Gentleman yelled.

“Pa!” From the dozens of [Scattered Shot]s, one had stunned the BOSS. Leafy Gentleman had a beyond average aggressiveness; he took his sword and rushed forward, slashing at Li Qing’s neck as he yelled, “I don’t care if you’re a Valkyrie Tier or not, I will definitely kill you without fail!”

Chapter 294: The Death of the Palace Siblings

“Poof!”

Flames burst out from Leafy Gentleman's slash. Li Qing was really impervious to attack; after receiving such a powerful attack from an expert, Li Qing only took 784 points of damage. At the same time, the attack drew aggro from the super strong BOSS. Li Qing reached out and grabbed the blade by its neck and evilly grinned, “You're looking to die!”

A sudden left punch went straight into Leafy Gentleman's abdomen, sending him flying away like a ball being kicked.

“2789 ! ”

Leafy Gentleman's body rolled a distance 10 meters before he stopped. He weakly stood up while wiping the blood coming from his mouth, “What a strong BOSS. Actually inflicting so much damage with his bare hands.....”

A team captain said, “Leader, we can't fight this BOSS, we..... we should be more cautious.....”

Leafy Gentleman refused and replied, “No, even if we died, the First Division has to lower the BOSS's health to below 10%. At 10% health, Guildmaster Jian Feng Han can definitely kill it. Right now, [Vanguard] has the most players remaining. The chances of us getting the God of Commerce Badge is very high. Taking the initiative is the first step to success!”

The team captain gulped and said, “Okay. I will lead our brothers to continue our attack!”

.....

In the city, a large group of [Vanguard]'s First Division rushed to attack. The BOSS's skills all had cooldown times, and Li Qing had a heavy armor type defense. He could pretty much ignore the attacks from Archers and

Musketeers, but Mage attacks were still extremely painful.

Observing the battle from the distance, Matcha looked at me and said, “Boss, after Li Qing was attacked by a group of NPCs, he only has 22% health left. [Vanguard]’s plans are very obvious; they want to kill the BOSS in an instant so that it is guaranteed that they alone get the God Commerce Badge.”

I nodded, “Yeah, but that’s not a problem. The BOSS still has 22% health. [Vanguard]’s First Division won’t be able to handle it easily!”

“Yea, moreover.....”

Matcha laughed, “Moreover, [Prague], [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes], and other guilds won’t just sit there and watch Jian Feng Han take the God Commerce Badge. Also since the BOSS is super strong, the final fight will definitely be very chaotic.”

“Yea.....”

.....

Time slowly passed by. Before long, [Vanguard]’s First Division’s players were almost all killed. There were only a few members left. When there was almost no one left by Leafy Gentleman’s side, the BOSS’s health had already dropped to 11%. Looking at the situation, Leafy Gentleman grabbed his sword and said to the two Vice Guild Masters, “Let’s go, it’s our turn now that the mission has been accomplished. We brought the BOSS’s health down to 10%. After finishing this, 20% of the First Division will be moved to the main guild. This is our reward after all the hard work we’ve done!”

The two Vice Guild Masters nodded, “Guild Master, why must you do this...after those fellows enter the main guild, won’t they then also ridicule the First Division as a reserve division? The main guild’s members will never see us on the same level as them. If you do this...”

Leafy Gentleman wryly smiled and said, “Whatever, I don’t care how others see me. I just know that from the day they joined the First Division, they became my brothers, so naturally, I’ll do what’s best for them. How

they see me is unimportant! Advance!”

Raising his sword to advance, the two Vice Guild Masters attacked from a distance. With a “Pa Pa”, they hit away at Li Qing’s health!

“ARGH!”

The sharp swords slashed wounds on the BOSS’s neck. Within moments, Leafy Gentleman activated [Combo] and [Skyslaker Slash], the two skills with high damage outputs. With a twist of his body, he arrived right next to Li Qing and attacked him again. His pet wolf roared as it bit the BOSS’s leg multiple times for the sake of shredding away the BOSS’s 10,000 health. Leafy Gentleman was truly putting his life on the line!

“Looking to die!”

Li Qing roared in anger, as his lightening covered blade made a great sweep. “Ka Cha”, it cracked open Leafy Gentleman’s armor, and fresh blood seeped through it as it caused 3987 damage. [Vanguard]’s First Division leader’s health had dropped to the bottom within moments. Leafy Gentleman gulped down a potion, and grabbed the BOSS’s blade as he jumped up into the air with his combat boots, his left foot kicking straight at Li Qing’s neck wound.

Unfortunately, Li Qing didn’t feel any pain at all. The corners of his mouth slowly turned up into a cruel smile, as he violently grabbed his opponent, throwing Leafy Gentleman straight at the ground. Dirt and dust flew everywhere and Li Qing thrust his sword forward. “Pu Pu”, lightning seeped into blood, as [Vanguard]’s First Division leader died in the hands of the BOSS.

“Everyone, die!”

Li Qing proudly raised his head, and his body swept over as his sword stabbed straight through the two Vice Guild Master’s chests, insta-killing the two. At the same time, he activated [Heaven and Earth Seal] and 7 of [Vanguard]’s First Division’s most advanced players in the distance died.

But at that moment, Li Qing’s health was only at 10%. Leafy Gentleman had indeed completed the task that Jian Feng Han had given him!

.....

“Bang!”

Bai Qi swallowed hard and said, “[Vanguard]’s First Division.... completely annihilated.....”

Li Mu nodded and murmured: “Leafy Gentleman..... is so f*cking headstrong. Too bad he’s our enemy; Jian Feng Han is too fortunate to have an assistant like him. What a pity for Leafy Gentleman....”

Matcha squinted into the distance, “Isn’t it [Vanguard]’s turn to advance? Seeing as the BOSS’s health has already been whittled down to 10%, Jian Feng Han shouldn’t have any patience left!”

I smiled and said, “Not necessarily.....”

“Why?” The puzzled girl asked.

I smiled and said, “It’s simple. Jian Feng Han just sacrificed his entire First Division to bring the BOSS’s health down to 10%, but that doesn’t mean the BOSS is reserved for [Vanguard]. Other guilds can also kill the BOSS....”

“That’s true....”

.....

As if to prove my point, in the distance, one of the guilds from Ba Huang City couldn’t wait any longer. One of the members raised their long swords and yelled out, “[Epic] brothers! Advance with me!”

F*ck, to think it was [Epic]?!

Amongst the crowd, I was astonished to see Palace Decree and Palace Soul! To think the two blacksmith siblings weren’t forging, but rather fighting!

[Epic] had probably not fought in the earlier battles, thus preserving most of their guild. There were around 700 people altogether. It was a Level 3 guild and thus wasn’t as popular, so they didn’t even have the maximum number of people.

“Aren’t those the ones who helped Brother Xiao Yao create Emperor Qin’s Sword, Palace Decree and Palace Soul?” Yue Qing Qian asked in surprise,

“Yep.” I nodded.

“Oh my, to think that their guild, [Epic], would begin fighting the BOSS..... Mm, we should give them a moment of silence. I fear Jian Feng Han is ready to make his move, and [Epic] is not the kind of guild to be able to go against [Vanguard].....”

“Yup, that’s right.....”

In the distance, Jian Feng Han’s eyes turned cold. He violently unsheathed his Flaming Cloud Sword and pointed it at their direction, yelling out, “[Epic], what’s the meaning of this! You want to publicly steal the BOSS that we had killed 90% of? Bullsh*t! Brothers, attack! Attack from the right flank and annihilate [Epic]!”

A group of third advancement close combat players at [Vanguard]’s frontlines had their blades unsheathed, shining in the sunlight. The first attack had clearly gone forth under Jian Feng Han’s command as he struck with a [Through the Cloud Slash] in the distance. The Lv 4+ [Through the Cloud Slash]’s attack was extremely high, killing [Epic]’s Archers in the back row; their screams of anguish were unending. Don’t be Foolish, North Pole, and Goodbye Tears all brought out their individual teams to attack, massacring everyone.

“The Palace siblings are in danger.....” Yue Qing Qian said.

I immediately sent a message to Palace Decree, “Your Guild Master’s decision to attack was not a smart move. [Vanguard] will definitely choose to attack you guys first, what will you do?”

Palace Decree quickly responded and said, “Don’t worry, we’re just here to have fun. At most we’ll just lose a level, it’s not that big of a deal.....”

“Alright.....”

.....

“Di” I received another message. This time it was from [Prague]’s Guild Master, Yan Zhao Warrior, “Xiao Yao, now is the best opportunity. If you attack [Vanguard] from the north and [Prague] attacks from the west, in addition to [Epic], with the strength of our three guilds, it is definitely enough to destroy [Vanguard]’s 1000+ members. What do you think? If you agree, reply with a 1!”

“11 ! ”

“What do you mean by responding with two 1’s?”

“Because one 1 is not enough!”

“Then let’s go!”

“Let’s go!”

Indeed, at the critical moment, Yan Zhao Warrior showed no mercy. He knew that although [Prague] was strong, and that there was an obvious difference in power between [Vanguard] and [Prague], he had no choice but to find allies with enough strength to obtain the ultimate goal, the God of Commerce Badge. Currently, the only guild with that much strength was [Zhan Long]. [Zhan Long] still had 300+ elites; besides, we had already declared war on [Vanguard]. There was no one more suited than [Zhan Long]. On top of all of that, Yan Zhao was an incredibly shrewd person, so he must have known that my Emperor Qin’s Sword’s [Kill for Blood] was already around 300%. This was a situation that had to be taken advantage of. Moreover, besides me, there was no one who could completely oppose Jian Feng Han and his sister.

.....

“Keng!”

I unsheathed Emperor Qin’s Sword and scanned its stats. I had stacked the [Kill for Blood] effect 303 times. I smiled and shouted, “Everyone from [Zhan Long], immediately start advancing! Follow me to the north to attack [Vanguard]. We don’t have any other goal but to kill everyone with a [Vanguard] insignia; don’t leave a single person standing!”

Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Old K had been waiting far too long for that

command, and laughed uproariously. They picked up their weapons and advanced with me. As I rushed forward, I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and the small tiger also growled its excitement. He brought with him the ferocity and terror of the king of beasts, his claws carrying a violent fire as he pounced on the crowd of [Vanguard] players!

“Bang!”

Jian Feng Han violently thrust his sword forward as the Lv 61 Knight, Palace Decree, retreated multiple steps, his health already at the bottom. As he looked to the north, he suddenly smiled and said, “Haha, [Zhan Long] has made their move! Hehe, [Vanguard]’s time of happiness has ended!”

Jian Feng Han’s eyes turned cold as he cruelly smiled and said, “That won’t change the fact that I will kill you!”

With that slash from the Flaming Cloud Sword, the [Corrupt Wolf Edge] had eaten up Palace Decree’s last drop of health. This number one mining expert knelt to the ground and miserably cried out, “F*ck, to think his attack was so high..... Zi Zai, avenge me.....”

“Brother!”

In alarm, Palace Soul raised her sword to attack when, unexpectedly, from not far away an Indigo Sea Arrow hit her!

“Bang!”

“3871 ! ”

The only person in Ba Huang City that could bring out a damage number like that was Simple. Jian Feng Han’s sword flashed, a [Through the Clouds Slash] swallowed Palace Soul. And with that, the Palace siblings were killed by [Vanguard].

Chapter 295: Valley of the Gods

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai is coming again!”

Goodbye Tears waved his staff, his eyes filled with bloodlust, “Should we run or not!?”

North Pole gritted his teeth and said, “Run if you’re a sh*thead! The God of Commerce Badge is right on the Extinguisher of Hope’s body; don’t you dare run away. Even if you have to harden the skin on your head, you have to advance! Don’t be Foolish, we’re relying on you. [Heavenly Shield Wall] and whatever else you might have, activate it all! We have to stop Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I’ll go contact the Vice Guild Master to come. With her magic, even Xiao Yao Zi Zai can’t be too fierce!”

Don’t be Foolish picked up his iron spear, his face a ghostly pale, “You want to make the frail me go and fight against the unstoppable Xiao Yao Zi Zai? You bastards have abandoned face, didn’t you say you liked me? So much for that... like me my ass..... “

.....

“Take your stance and prepare to defend!” One of the Knights yelled as he drew his sword, “The Guild Master has given his command: the back row must prevent [Zhan Long] from advancing! He will bring reinforcements soon!”

“Die!”

Before the Knight could even finish his sentence, Li Mu had already skewered him with his blade. Immediately after, he turned around and activated a [Combo] with [Absolute Authority] creating a storm of attacks. The Knight gave a cry as he fell to the ground and died. Wang Jian also waved his sword as he activated a [Combo] as well, followed with [Skyshaker Slash], pressuring a handful of Swordsmen to retreat. Once Old K’s [Whirlwind Slash] activated, [Vanguard]’s defensive formation had been effectively destroyed.

“Be careful. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is coming! ” An Archer carrying a bow

gazed terrifyingly and uttered, “Long-ranged attackers, back away. Don’t get struck by his ranged attacks.....”

Unfortunately, it was already too late. I activated [Haste] and closed in speedily, and slashed out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with a wave of my hand. Ten thousand plus actual attack exploded and instantly killed the Archers and Musketeers. In addition to a [Fierce Roar] from the Flaming Tiger God, [Zhan Long]’s attack immediately caused at least 50+ members of [Vanguard] to die in half a minute!

“Bang Bang Bang” The sounds were endless. A whole row of shields fell to the ground, all of them belonging to [Vanguard]’s elite Knights and Monks. [Zhan Long]’s frontline had penetrated their defense, however we were still being pushed back. With the exception of a few people like Li Mu and Wang Jian, almost nobody was able to break through the third layer of defense, especially since there were some third tier players whose [Heavenly Shield]s were too strong to penetrate with any blade.

“Spam your fire and bombard them!”

With Fox’s command, a dozen of [Zhan Long]’s Musketeers lined up and raised their guns. In the next moment, the air was filled with a barrage of gunfire, covering the entire field. A group of [Vanguard]’s close combat players quickly died off. Yue Qing Qian laughed and as she raised her hand, and a magnificent firefox’s claw appeared. “Shua” the elegant claws slammed into the mass of people, and with the support of the gunfire, they had killed 20+ people!

“D*mn”

A group of [Vanguard] players had already become disarrayed, “Are [Zhan Long] members even human? What kind of skills are those? Oh Yue Qing Qian..... her [Grip of the Firefox] is so fierce....”

“.....”

.....

In the distance, [Prague]’s Yan Zhao Warrior also brought Tornado and Luo Mu to initiate the attack on the east side of [Vanguard]. Within ten

minutes, [Vanguard] was on the verge of collapse; however, within those ten minutes, Jian Feng Han and Simple managed to annihilate [Epic]'s 1000 people at the cost of 300 or so people of [Vanguard]'s main guild.

“Break through their defense and kill!” Fox commanded.

But, at that moment, a group of people suddenly attacked from behind. A bright [Indigo Sea Arrow] speared through Fox's chest, followed by the roar of fire and ice. With that, our [Zhan Long] office's number one Musketeer fell to his knees, dropping his weapon as well!

“F*ck, they killed brother Fox!” Wolf roared as he rushed over with his dagger.

The opponent was a Mage that was floating in the air. He was around 30 years old, with an air of arrogance. Written above his head was—

Lu Dong Bing Lv 64 Gold Mage

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Valley of the Gods

Position: Guild Master

.....

“It's [Valley of the Gods]!”

Yue Qing Qian bit down and said, “Ranked 11th guild in Ba Huang City, [Valley of the Gods] has come. What bullshit is this?!”

Yue Wei Liang said, “Sister, [Valley of the Gods] made an alliance with [Vanguard] the other day!”

I gripped my Emperor Qin's Sword and cursed, “Motherf*cker, no wonder Jian Feng Han seemed unworried. To think that he already knew that he would have an ally help..... how many people does [Valley of the Gods] have?!”

Matcha flew up, her beautiful eyes scanning the area, “They probably didn't join the previous waves, since they still have 1500 people. There are too many, I'm afraid we can't take them....”

Li Mu held his sword up: “What should we do, our flank has suffered damage. Xiao Yao, we need to immediately think of a plan!”

I raised my sword and rushed towards [Valley of the Gods] and said, “Let [Prague] deal with [Vanguard] first. Our entire force will go back and kill everyone in [Valley of the Gods]!”

“Alright!”

Wolf rushed forward as well, and with the flick of his daggers, he killed two Archers. His synchronized use of his two daggers and his [Gouge] skill was perfected. Indeed, battles could mature a person. At this moment, Wolf, as one of [Zhan Long]’s four elders that had been forged by many fierce battles, had already surpassed his past self and achieved a new echelon. To be more specific, he has entered the ranks of the elite, and had begun to follow the tracks of Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang.

.....

From within the [Valley of the Gods] guild, the Guild Master, Lu Dong Bin, waved his staff and cast multiple spells upon the crowds of [Zhan Long] players. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and the others withstood the barrage of spells and rushed forward. As soon as this happened, a [Savage Jump Slash] cut through the crowd of people, followed by a desperate [Whirlwind Slash]!

“Kill Old K!”

Lu Dong Bin roared. Behind him, a Lv 64 Swordsman rushed forward; it was the Vice Guild Master of [Valley of the Gods] – Heaven’s Rebel. He was a young man around 25 years old, slightly ugly, but his PK ability was not inferior. He immediately hit Old K’s armor, creating sparks from the clash!

“1945 ! ”

Old K retreated two steps, immediately receiving more damage from a [Pillar of Fire & Ice]. Nearing the end of his health, he bit down and yelled out to activate [Oppose the Heavens], receiving 7 seconds of immortality as he raised his battle axe to cut Heaven’s Rebel with a [Skyshaker Slash]!

“2132 ! ”

“F*ck.....” Heaven’s Rebel was slightly shocked as he had never expected Old K to have such a high attack. The sword in his hand flashed, activating a [Combo], but every hit gave a MISS. His opponent’s [Oppose the Heavens] couldn’t be broken within the 7 seconds!

“Shield Old K’s retreat!”

I began attacking from the flank, using [Seven Star Fragment Slash], [Soul Army], and [Black Tortoise Realm] all at once, using all of my highest skills to maintain [Zhan Long]’s upper hand. Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Bai Qi all rushed toward Old K, but his [Savage Jump Slash] had brought him too far into the crowd, and he couldn’t retreat within that moment.....

Lu Dong Bin’s eyes held a strong killing intent as he said, “Wind Elves, fly over there and use [Scatter Shot]! Kill Old K!”

A dozen Wind Elf Archers launched into the air holding their bows. [Zhan Long]’s long range attackers couldn’t kill them in the spur of the moment, and as a result, after the 7 seconds of [Oppose The Heavens] had passed, Old K was immediately hit by a [Scatter Shot]. He became stunned, making my heart grow cold. It was over!

Lifting my hand, I cast [Heal] from a distance!

“+1050 ! ”

Unfortunately it was too little, and Lu Dong Bin took advantage of Old K’s stunned state to summon an [Indigo Sea Arrow]!

“Bang!”

“2876 ! ”

.....

Old K cried out and fell to the ground. He had finally been killed after his mass slaughter of players.

In the midst of the battle, Bai Qi was focused on. Without any time to react, he also fell to the ground. Very soon, the brothers of [Zhan Long]

began sustaining heavy casualties. Before the last battle had even begun, the us that had already received so much damage still faced such a powerful opponent. Maybe this was fate; after all, we already knew that opposing a sovereign like [Vanguard] could very well result in death. At the same time, we had had the dream of rising victorious amongst the corpses of [Vanguard]’s players!

[Valley of the Gods]’s Guild Master, Lu Dong Bin, continuously waved his staff, constantly casting [Pillar of Fire & Ice]. This put a lot of pressure on [Zhan Long]’s members; after all, this guy’s talents laid in killing. He had already spammed [Pillar of Fire & Ice] and killed Old K, Bai Qi, as well as a dozen other [Zhan Long] core players.

The dagger’s point in Wolf’s hand began to grow, and as he rushed forward, he activated [Absolute Step] and said in the party chat, “To destroy the bandits, you must first kill their leader. Our first priority should be to instantly kill Lu Dong Bing. Sister Thousand Suns, give me some support!”

Wolf kept charging forward as his dagger flashed and shot forward.

Lu Dong Bin’s reaction was unnaturally fast, and with the touch of his staff, his entire person disappeared from his original spot as his [Dimensional Leap] successfully activated. At the same time, he cast a [Pillar of Fire & Ice] from his original spot and he yelled out, “Explode!”

“Bang Bang Bang.....”

A chain of explosive sounds followed, and Wolf weakly fell to the ground in the midst of smoke. Although his resistance wasn’t low, the opponent’s bombardment was just too great. At least 20 people received such serious damage, to the extent where only 200 more damage could kill any one of them.

.....

As Yue Qing Qian started getting anxious as she watched, and began waving the dagger in her hand, “How..... how are we suffering so many losses?!”

I gritted my teeth and said, “Thousand Suns, help me kill Lu Dong Bin!”

As I said that, my entire body shot forward, and with a sweep of my sword, I knocked away a few Knights that were trying to block my path. I lowered my body and activated [Blade Rush], appearing right in front of Lu Dong Bin. I turned and blocked his pet, swiftly bringing my blade down!

“Shua!”

“MISS ! ”

Just as I had predicted, Lu Dong Bin’s strength was enough to rank him as one of Ba Huang City’s top ten Mages, and he fully understood the essence of [Dimensional Leap].

But, right as Lu Dong Bin was about to use [Dimensional Leap] again, the three [God Army Cards] appeared in my hand. “Shua!” [Seven Stars Teleportation] activated and the constellation’s size and location came under my control. At this moment, I dove into the light and moved with the constellation!

“Shua!”

Emperor Qin’s sword stabbed forward and Lu Dong Bin’s face went cold, “F*ck, what kind of skill is this!?”

His body disappeared again; it was the third [Dimensional Leap]!

My palm opened up as I targeted the distant Lu Dong Bin, and once my hand closed, [Great Realm of Desolation] activated!

“Bang!”

Three Emperor Qin’s Swords began shaking the [Mana Shield], and within seconds, Lu Dong Bin’s health hit the bottom. Shocked, he tried to retreat, but an [Indigo Sea Arrow] hit him out of the blue. Even more fatal was the [Meteor Shot] that broke through the ground. The two skills had been aimed right on this [Valley of the Gods] Guild Master!

“Eh.....”

After a desolate cry, Lu Dong Bin slowly fell to the ground. As his last

bit of health disappeared, he dropped a staff. Unfortunately, it was picked up by a person from his own guild. Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands had joined together and activated their long ranged attacks, long surpassing his ability to defend.

.....

“F*ck, our Guild Master died.....”

[Valley of the Gods]’s Vice Guild Master, Heaven’s Rebel, picked up his long sword, his face a cold mask. But before he could recover from his shock, Li Mu and Wang Jian had started attacking. From the distance, Lian Po activated a [Scatter Shot] aimed right at Heaven’s Rebel’s chest!

“Bang!”

The stun had succeeded!

Li Mu and Wang Jian were very experienced in their skill activation, and with a [Skyshaker Slash] + [Combo], they cut down [Valley of the Gods]’ Vice Guild Master!

The nearly 1000 people in [Valley of the Gods] lost both their Guild Master and their Vice Guild Master at once. Under [Zhan Long]’s strong assault, they had already been scared out of their wits. It seemed that they had never before encountered such a valiant battle where they had to fight with their lives on the line.

Chapter 296: A Hundred Plans

“Attack! Let’s end this battle quickly!”

Raising the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I stood at the center of [Valley of the Gods], killing everyone in sight. With my 10% [Life Steal] effect, my opponents had no way of killing me, while I could maintain my breakneck pace of attack. As I evaded the Archers and Mages from the other side, I ascended into an entirely new realm as I had my world-dominating Emperor Qin’s Sword, and my pet, Flaming Tiger God.

“Hong!”

My sword’s qi flowed into the crowd of people, leaving a bloody field in its path. With just one stroke of my sword, I took 17 lives. Turning around, my sword danced again, activating a Lv 7 [Combo] and killing 3 more players. The two close-combat skills’ were now on full cooldown, so I couldn’t use them for another six seconds. Thus, I swung my sword and used normal attacks to massacre the people around me. I continuously dealt above-average damage, causing the players in the [Valley of the Gods] to howl in pain as they died.

.....

“F*ck....” Dancing Forest said as she lifted up her long bow. Her elegant brows raised as she smiled and said, “Our Brother Xiao Yao is practically a killing god. To think that [Valley of the Gods] would meet such an opponent, how unlucky.....”

General Wang Jian also raised his sword as he rushed in, and with a wave he cut down a few half dead players and laughed, “Emperor Qin’s Sword’s [Kill for Blood] has too many stacks. There’s no one on this battlefield that is his equal! Little Dance, use [Meteor Shot] and reinforce Boss; he’s too deep into the enemy’s territory!”

TL: Little Dance is referring to Dancing Forest

“Okay!”

With a lift of her hand, Dancing Forest shot out a [Meteor Shot] and a

bright shooting star shot into the group of people, creating a straight path of critically wounded players. Yue Qing Qian picked up her dagger, and with a smile, she raised her hand and elegantly placed the last hits. [Grip of the Firefox] shook the crowd of people, killing a whole group of [Valley of the Gods] players.

Matcha then lifted her spear and led a group of elite close combat players to push the enemy back. Needless to say, she was the most strategic player in all of [Zhan Long]. Her understanding of battle formations and square formations far surpassed anyone on the field. Thankfully, we had her leading the advance, and our losses were cut by at least a half. Otherwise, how could a mere 300 tired soldiers beat 1000 healthy ones?

.....

“Always take care of the BOSS’s health, who’s killing it right now?!” Someone from my group yelled out.

Matcha solemnly said: “There’s still 7%. For the moment the dozens of people in [Crimson Contract] and other remnants of guilds and players are surrounding it with severe losses.....”

“Oh? [Crimson Contract]? You mean Han Bei Song’s guild?”

“Yup. There’s also people with Misty Clouds and Sword Reborn. But, from the looks of it, they don’t necessarily have the strength to kill the BOSS. Li Qing is too strong, and his recovery is extremely fast too.”

“Alright, then let’s finish off [Valley of the Gods] quickly!”

“Got it!”

.....

The battle lasted 17 minutes and finally, for an unknown reason, someone yelled out, “Our Guild Master is already dead! Why are we still sacrificing ourselves? I’m not fighting this meaningless battle. If [Vanguard] truly thought of us as allies, then they wouldn’t have just left us here to offer our necks to Xiao Yao Zi Zai as he kills us with his Emperor Qin’s Sword. That’s bullsh*t!”

At that moment, a group of people started to yell out in protest as well, and the remaining 300+ people began to run away. In the blink of an eye, they had scattered. The grandiose 1000+ player [Valley of the Gods] had lost 700+ corpses to [Zhan Long]'s massacre, and had thus retreated from this [City of the Ancients] battle. Indeed, some people were happy and others were sad about this event. [Valley of the Gods] had gotten practically no experience or drops before they had so pathetically retreated. They had definitely lost more than they had gained.

“Pu!”

I pulled my Emperor Qin's Sword from a Lv 61 Knight's chest and blood spurted out. His eyes widened as he died, shocked that he had suffered such a fate even with [Heavenly Shield] activated. In truth, he had no other way to go, for Empror Qin's Sword currently had so much attack that even I wouldn't have been able to withstand its power. The [Kill for Blood] effect had reached 447 stacks, meaning that it was currently at 447% of its strength. My attack could actually surpass 20,000; the thought of it was just too scary.....

.....

“How many people are left for us?”

I turned around, only to find out that there were not many players from [Zhan Long] left. Besides, of the people left, they were all battered and tired. Blood had dyed the field red as corpses were littered everywhere. There were people from [Valley of the Gods] as well as [Zhan Long]. Li Mu picked up his bloody sword and gulped as he said, “Guild Master, we have 39 people left. We had been attacked from the front and the back and lost too much....”

Wang Jian made a fist as he said, “[Zhan Long]..... we've lost 2200+ people. To think that once we'd battled our way to the [City of the Ancients], we'd only have 39 people left. This [City of the Ancients] is practically a slaughterhouse, everywhere you look is like a cemetery. It's just too merciless.....”

I murmured, “Without the [God of Commerce Bade], our operation is

not yet over. Let's continue. All 39 people, follow me to kill the BOSS. There's not much of the BOSS's health left....."

"Okay!"

Holding my Emperor Qin's Sword, even I was tired from all of the killing. The hardest part was walking over all of the bodies; my Purple Dawn Boots were soaked in blood. Even the corpses had not been despawned yet. This was a game, and yet it made one feel as though this was more real than reality. Even our noses had been stung by the sharp odor of blood, a smell that I had once been accustomed to. Now, I had finally relived that experience.

Looking into the distance, [Prague]'s battle with [Vanguard] was nearing its end. Amongst the high piles of corpses stood less than 200 people. They had battled too fiercely, and the two great guilds had mutually destroyed each other. The guilds had practically forgotten how to defend, and had basically went from 3000 players to 200.

"Tsk...."

Yan Zhao Warrior stood amongst the bodies, carrying his chipped sword. He wiped away the blood trailing from his lips and looked at Jian Feng Han, who was only a few meters away. Yan Zhao's eyes lusted for battle as he said, "I never would have thought that this [City of the Ancients] would actually make us fight to this degree....."

Jian Feng Han gripped his sword and pridefully stood up in a ditch of blood, the corners of his mouth twitched upward as he coldly smiled, "You should've predicted this earlier; what I did not expect was that the aloof Yan Zhao Warrior would actually get [Zhan Long] to help battle [Vanguard]. Hmph, if [Zhan Long] had not appeared, [Prague] would've already been defeated. What rights do you have to say that you're our rival?!"

Yan Zhao couldn't help but smile, "That's right, if Xiao Yao had not appeared, what kind of a situation would Ba Huang City have ended up in?"

Behind Yan Zhao, one of the team leaders, Luo Mu, gripped his sword

and cursed under his breath, “Guild Master, we still have 117 people left, that’s more than [Vanguard]’s survivors. Just attack! Kill Jian Feng Han in a breath and then victory will be ours!”

Tornado, however, lifted his staff and shook his head, “That’s no good.....”

“Why?” Luo Mu asked, puzzled.

Yan Zhao’s mouth twitched and said, “There’s... there’s...”

.....

“You mean Xiao Yao Zi Zai?! Hahahaha.....”

Jian Feng Han suddenly raised his head and laughed, his entire body shook as he supported himself with the Flaming Cloud Sword. His eyes were full of disdain as he looked at Yan Zhao and he roared, “Because there’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai and his [Zhan Long], [Prague] has “annihilated” [Vanguard], and yet still doesn’t have 100% certainty of getting the [God of Commerce Badge], is that right? This is why Yan Zhao is not willing to take any action. You didn’t think that [Valley of the Gods] would lose to [Zhan Long]; even more so, you did not expect Xiao Yao Zi Zai to survive that battle, is that what you had calculated? Allies, what allies, hahahaha..... Pei!”

TL Note: Pei is the sound of him spitting at them

Yan Zhao just silently stood there, his face an emotionless mask. It was clear that Jian Feng Han had guessed correctly.

In reality, I understood Yan Zhao’s reasons. Everyone had taken every action necessary for this [God of Commerce Badge]. What was a small thing like betraying [Zhan Long]? Rather than betraying an ally, it was more accurate to say that from the beginning, we had been using each other; it was something that both I and Yan Zhao understood. At any critical moment, we would do the same, since that [God of Commerce Badge] was just too precious. It was something everyone needed!

.....

Both pairs of eyes stared at the BOSS Li Qing's health. There was still 5% left. Misty Clouds had taken advantage of the BOSS's MISSED [Heaven and Earth Seal] and waved his battle axe, activating [Skyshaker Slash] before quickly retreating after the attack hit. Han Bei Song then picked up his longsword and activated [Haste], rushing to the BOSS's side. His sword flashed, and "keng keng keng", the three waves resulted in three bloody slashes. This was immediately followed by a [Combo]. Once he finished his attack, he ran, just as elegantly as Misty Clouds.

"Are you looking to die?!"

Li Qing roared in anger; his body was covered in wounds and the sword in his hand was chipped. He had been constantly battling up to now; having gone against the NPC's and players, he was even more tired than everyone else.

"The BOSS doesn't have much health left. When are we going to act?!" Li Mu asked.

Matcha said, "5% is 50,000 health left; this Li Qing's base defense should be above 7000. 50,000 health is extremely hard to finish off in a short amount of time. Of our Mages, we only have sister Thousand Suns and a few others; our firepower is nowhere near enough....."

I raised Emperor Qin's Sword and said, "It's getting close, let's prepare to rescue Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song!"

"Okay!"

.....

On the other side, [Vanguard] had also begun to move. Jian Feng Han raised the Flaming Cloud Sword and led a few dozen people as they rushed forward. He yelled out, "Everyone be on standby, prepare to attack at any moment!"

[Prague]'s people also began rushing over, as everyone was waiting for the BOSS's health to drop to 2%. With 20,000 health, there was still the possibility of instantly killing the BOSS; anything more than that would be an endless battle, and anything less than that would yield a high

chance of someone else taking the [God of Commerce Badge]. It was all dependent on how each Guild Master decided to act.

.....

As time slowly passed by, the three big guilds all waited for the perfect moment. Additionally, unidentifiable players from unknown guilds and teams began coming in. The BOSS has been constantly fighting, and up until now, there was no way of determining which of the three great guilds would end up with the [God of Commerce Badge]. Everyone held their breaths, waiting for the end result!

“Keng!”

Jian Feng Han suddenly unsheathed his sword and yelled out: “3% health left, Attack!”

A group of Knights rushed forward with their shields raised, while the Mages and Archers followed closely behind. Finally, the first person to give in to the pressure was [Vanguard]. Jian Feng Han had finally decided to make his move!

.....

“Now!”

On the other side, Yan Zhao Warrior also unsheathed his sword and yelled out, “[Prague], kill Li Qing! Now is the time!”

Luo Mu picked up his sword and rushed forward, yelling out, “Guild Master, I’ll lead some brothers up front!”

“Careful!”

And right at that moment, [Vanguard]’s defensive formation suddenly scattered. In the back, Simple held an [Indigo Sea Arrow] in her raised hand and immediately shot it out, penetrating straight through Luo Mu’s chest. With a wave of her staff, [Pillar of Fire & Ice] activated and Luo Mu’s entire body shook. Just like that, he weakly fell to the ground—

“3287 ! ”

“2471 ! ”

.....

With that arrow interwoven with magic, [Prague]'s 30 heavy armor type players that had rushed forward before had all died in the blink of an eye. Nobody had imagined that [Vanguard] would advance not for the sake of fighting the BOSS, but rather to catch [Prague] off guard, and kill their last hope of survival.

Chapter 297: Three Wounded and Defeated

“F*ck, retreat quickly!”

Tornado raised his staff in extreme anger as he watched his own teammates get killed right in front of him. He bit down on his lip and cast [Dimensional Leap], and with [Mana Shield] activated as well, he arrived at the front. He cast [Indigo Sea Arrow] + [Pillar of Fire & Ice] at the same time, targeting one of [Vanguard]’s Knights. Immediately, he leapt back to his original spot, but during that instant, he noticed that a person was chasing after him; it was [Vanguard]’s Guild Master, Jian Feng Han!

“Die!”

The action of unsheathing his sword and waving it was incredibly smooth, and with a [Through the Clouds Slash], he had covered Tornado’s [Mana Shield]. Tornado was known as Ba Huang City’s 2nd-ranked Mage with the toughest [Mana Shield], and even a dent couldn’t break it. But his pupils dilated as he realized Jian Feng Han had really came for him. The blade suddenly shifted 5 yards, and the Flaming Cloud Sword raised, activating [Corrupt Wolf Edge]!

A wolf head appeared as the attack fell; this time, Tornado’s [Mana Shield] finally broke, and the attack even took 400+ health from him. He had no other choice but to pathetically retreat. Within three seconds after the [Mana Shield] broke, there was no way he could put it up again; he could only use [Dimensional Leap]. Unfortunately, the Rock Spirit Fighter attacked Tornado’s body, and at the same time Jian Feng Han rotated his body and activated [Whirlwind Blade]!

“Pata.....”

Tornado weakly knelt to the ground; just like that, he was killed!

“Shua!”

A shadow passed by on the ground; it was Yan Zhao Warrior. The uncle’s face was filled with rage, and the sharp blade in his hand sliced

right into Jian Feng Han's abdomen, bringing out 1798 damage. With another violent shove, his blade broke through Jian Feng Han's hip, bringing out another 1644 damage. He turned his body again, and Yan Zhao did not waste a single breath as he activated [Peerless Strike]!

Nobody could've ever imagined that at this moment, to this that [Prague]'s uncle Guild Master would be so bold and unwavering, landing three consecutive attacks on his enemy. His killing intent was too much to contain; Jian Feng Han had to die.

The first attack from [Peerless Strike] was a stab. The moment the blade was not even 10 centimeters from Jian Feng Han's back, Jian Feng Han unexpectedly activated an S ranked skill – [Exposed Point]. His first strike was also a stab. His body, under the control of the skill, shot forward 2 yards, successfully bringing out a MISS from Yan Zhao's first strike. As his foot stepped onto the dusty ground, his body twisted, causing his armor to look as if it danced as one with his body. He then beautifully dodged [Peerless Strike] and left its range, successfully causing the next strikes to MISS!

“Shua!”

As quickly as possible, Jian Feng Han gulped down a potion and left Yan Zhao's attack range. His lips parted into a cold smile, “Yan Zhao, you have truly lost this time. The God of Commerce Badge is not fated to fall into [Prague]'s hands. Goodbye, I'll leave [Prague] at least some of its pride; there's no need to leave the ending to be so gloomy. I won't command people to chase you guys down.....”

Yan Zhao Warrior's face was a deathly pale, and received a [Pillar of Fire & Ice] from Simple behind him. The pain made him retreat momentarily, before he quickly activated [Haste] and rushed forward. Looking at the status of [Prague] once more, they had lost 30+ of their elite close combat players, and only had the support of their long ranged players left. There was no way they could kill the BOSS. Only Jian Feng Han's tanks could attack, since [Prague] had actually lost everything.

.....

“Beep!”

A message came from Yan Zhao Warrior, “Xiao Yao!”

“Yes, Uncle?”

“Today, [Prague] will admit its defeat. Take care, [Zhan Long]!”

“Got it!”

.....

Closing my inbox, I lifted the Emperor Qin’s Sword and threw myself forward, yelling, “2% health left, now is the time! If our close combat doesn’t kill Li Qing, then we can give up on dreaming for the [God of Commerce Badge]!”

I thrust the tip of my sword forwards, but it didn’t hit the BOSS. Instead, it cut through Don’t Be Foolish’s body!

“3983 ! ”

“Motherf*cker....” Don’t Be Foolish quickly retreated and yelled out, “A normal attack gave me 4000 damage?! Xiao Yao Zi Zai has already become a god! People come quick! Anybody, come block him!”

Not too far away, Jian Feng Han cut down Misty Palace’s Guild Master and yelled out, “This is the last stretch. Don’t Be Foolish, don’t you guys dare retreat. You have to hold back Xiao Yao Zi Zai a little longer, sister Simple is coming to help you guys!”

“Alright!”

Behind Don’t Be Foolish, a handful of Healers had already healed him, and soon he was at full health again. With the thrust of his shield, he activated [Heaven’s Shield], as his right hand pushed his spear forward: [Flame Axe]!

“464 ! ”

My body barely shook; such a low attack couldn’t break through my defense. Below my feet a “bang” sounded out, as a white colored light exploded with the activation of [Strength of a Thousand Men]! The combo

would immediately kill him!

“Bang Bang Bang.....”

As the Emperor Qin’s Sword clashed with the shield, sparks flew. Finally the [Wind Blade] broke Don’t Be Foolish’s shield, bringing the fatal blow as well!

“9472 ! ”

Don’t Be Foolish’s eyes widened, “Dammit.”

With a thud, he fell to the ground. [Vanguard]’s number one Knight had died, just like that. Behind him, Goodbye Tears’ face was wet with tears, “Brother, how did you die so quickly!?”

Wang Jian raised his sword and said, “I’ll go kill Goodbye Tears; everyone else, rush forward with Guild Master. Surround the BOSS! That BOSS will end up with us in the end!”

Goodbye Tears raised his staff, raising a shield around him. Angrily, he blocked Wang Jian’s attack, but at the same time. he was pushed back by Wang Jian’s strength. As he gave up on being on the offense, he cursed and said, “Healers, keep me alive. This guy’s attack is too strong!”

Three Healers simultaneously cast [Heal]s on him.

But as Wang Jian saw this, he lowered his body with a grunt. Both of his legs increased his jump power, as his entire body seemed to melt into his blade’s glow. “Ka Cha”, he penetrated straight through Goodbye Tears’ body. His blade trembled, and with a [Skyslayer Slash] + a normal attack, he cut down two Healers. He quickly chased after the last one, sending out a [Flame Axe] to kill him.

“Bang!”

Goodbye Tears’ abruptly let his shield fall to the ground as he roared with a pain-filled breath, “Wang Jian, now that you’ve come, don’t even dream of leaving! Mages, gather fire and kill him!”

Wang Jian immediately rushed forward, and with a “Bang!” his blade hit against the shield. His sword shattered again and struck right into

Goodbye Tears' chest, as he yelled out, "F*ck off, good b*tches don't block other people's roads!"

Blood dripped from the corner of Goodbye Tears' mouth, as he leaned his staff against Wang Jian's shoulder and murmured under his breath, "Not a chance. After killing my brothers, you'll have to pay the price!"

I quickly rushed forward, but didn't make it in time. The [Pillar of Fire & Ice] had already consumed Wang Jian's body. In the end, when the general died, his sword had stabbed through Goodbye Tears' chest once again, and the two people had knelt to the ground at the same time, as they watched each other die and melt away into a white light.

"What great brothers we are, dying together....." Goodbye Tears said as he wryly smiled.

Wang Jian's handsome face also twitched as he said, "That's enough from you, who's your brother. Go die...."

"You go die too then....."

And in the end, the two elite heroes fell to the grounds of the desolate plains, becoming cold bodies.

.....

"Little Dance, be careful!"

TL: Little Dance refers to Dancing Forest

Not too far into the distance, Dancing Forest's body leaned over, as three of [Vanguard]'s Knights waved their swords at her. They had already gotten close, and nearby there was only Li Mu, who was currently rushing over to help!

As Dancing Forest retreated, she also drew back her longbow and activated [Shot of the Archery God]!

"Bang!"

"3122 ! "

The third advancement Archer's deadliest skill had penetrated one of

the Swordsmen, mortally wounding him. It was followed up by a normal attack, thus killing him. The other two had already activated [Skyshaker Slash] and [Combo]!

Li Mu lifted his sword and rushed over, “Little Dance, use [Crystallize]!”

Dancing Forest’s shoulder jerked, and in that moment a brilliant light seemed to cover her whole body. Her beautiful face seemed to be preserved in a crystalline state, and her body seemed to freeze in that moment. It was the Archer’s third advancement’s greatest skill, [Crystallize]. A big MISS dropped, as for an entire second, all types of attack would fail, allowing Archers to escape at any critical moment.

A chain of MISSes flew by, as the two Swordsmen’s attacks had failed. One of them switched targets, and hit Li Mu!

“Keng!”

Li Mu’s reaction was so fast that it was shocking; he had knocked away the enemy’s blade. Then he carried his body forward as his knee guards knocked into the opponent’s chest, his blade activating [Blade Rush] mid-air. With a twist of his body, he killed another!

“Die!”

As his combat boots moved forwards, he kicked at the third Swordsman’s ankle with a “Keng!” . Li Mu had ingeniously used his slip to continue his attack, as he fell forward with a [Flame Blade], giving out another insta-kill!

.....

“Brother Li Mu, be careful!” Dancing Forest yelled out from behind him.

“Bang!” General Li Mu suffered a blow. From behind him, Jian Feng Han had revealed his arrogant face, driving a sword through Li Mu’s chest with a smile, “You can go die now, General Li Mu!”

Li Mu went into furious state. Before he could turn around, his shoulder went cold, as he was hit by a [Scatter Shot], effectively stunning him! Suddenly, Jian Feng Han, along with his sister and others, came around

from the BOSS's side to attack!

The [Indigo Sea Arrow] was extremely bright as it pierced straight through Li Mu's abdomen. Our Healer, Darling Duck, had been chased down by a few of [Vanguard]'s players, and thus Li Mu had no choice but to fall to his knees and die!

Yue Wei Liang and Dancing Forest both gasped as they activated their skills at the same time. Jian Feng Han stepped backward and his lips widened into a bigger smile, "[Zhan Long]'s top level players are only so-so....."

"Hong!"

The entire earth seemed to shake as numerous lances of magma bursted from the ground. It was Simple's [Magma Lance]! And in that moment, Yue Wei Liang, Dancing Forest and Matcha suffered high damage. Yue Wei Liang and Dancing Forest had been instantly killed, whereas Matcha still had 50% of her health left!

.....

"Ka Cha!"

I cut down one of [Vanguard]'s swordsmen as I saw everything happen less than 40 yards away from me. Although I had killed at least 20+ people, all of [Zhan Long]'s elite had already been killed by [Vanguard]. Especially with Simple, that woman was just too scary, to think that she killed half of our 39 people!

"Matcha, use [Phantom Holy Shield]!"

I cried out to her as I lifted my sword.

Matcha hurriedly activated [Phantom Holy Shield] and suddenly something flashed before her. Jian Feng Han had activated [Haste] and rushed over. The dust had yet to settle under his feet as he coldly said, "[Zhan Long]'s elders are just a bit too useless, aren't they?"

Activating multiple moves, Matcha quickly retreated, her health quickly disappearing. In the end, she knelt down in a pool of blood. Raising her

head she looked in my direction and said, “Boss..... you can do it.....”

I could only feel helpless as I watched all of my people get killed one by one. The Emperor Qin’s Sword shook in my hand as I glanced around the battlefield. I decided to give up on Jian Feng Han and went after Simple. If this Mage woman didn’t die, then we wouldn’t have a single shred of hope left.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao.....”

Not too far away, a shadow appeared. It was Yue Qing Qian moving stealthily on the side lines. She softly said, “I’ll support you and help kill Simple!”

“Ok!”

As I broke through their defense, I killed a dozen people. The opponents had no way of stopping me. Simple raised her staff and said, “Han, come here quickly! Xiao Yao Zi Zai is coming!”

Jian Feng Han ended up rushing towards a different direction, as he said, “Sister Yun, defend yourself for now; I’ll go kill Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands first!”

.....

Chapter 298: Never Willing to Submit

“Sha Sha.....”

Her feet stepped into the dust as she backed up. Maybe she had somehow sensed that Yue Qing Qian was going to launch a sneak attack on her, but Simple continuously retreated backwards. However, she was still not as fast as Yue Qing Qian. Suddenly a blood colored light flew out from behind Simple. The attack passed the [Mana Shield], and directly stunned Ba Huang City's number one Mage!

“Pa Pa Pa...”

The dagger was extremely fast and within seconds, she had activated 3 skills, continuously attacking the opponent's [Mana Shield]. Simple recognized that something was wrong about the situation, and the moment the stun effect disappeared, she cast [Dimensional Leap]!

“Shua!”

She had teleported right in front of Yue Qing Qian, the sound of a tiger's purr came from beside her. Simple's eyes grew cold as she murmured, “Damn.....”

The Flaming Tiger God's [Flame Claw] hit Simple's shoulder from behind, decreasing the [Mana Shield]'s toughness even further!

Under such extreme circumstances, Simple could only use her second [Dimensional Leap]. She disappeared from her original spot, and reappeared 20 yards away. I, on the other hand, had picked up my sword and ran over, opening up my hand as I yelled, “[Great Realm of Desolation]!”

Before Simple could regain her balance, she seemed to have sensed that I would use [Great Realm of Desolation] to instantly kill her. Now that my attack was so high, one [Great Realm of Desolation] would break her shield and kill her.

“Shua!”

In her last [Dimensional Leap], Simple waved her hand and sent out an

[Indigo Sea Arrow] to block my path as I rushed over. Although I could easily dodge the arrow, I was too intent on killing her, and called [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to continue advancing. My entire body trembled from losing 2564 health. With one [Heal], I pulled it back up. At the same time I had predicted the distance: 21 yards, it was enough!

With the twist of my body, the Emperor Qin's Sword brought the strength of a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] straight towards Simple! Simple could only widen her eyes; this time there was no way of dodging this attack. Besides, Yue Qing Qian had also opened her snow white palm and "Shua!" [Grip of the Firefox]'s strength had seeped through. Against two AOE attacks, along with the fact that her [Mana Shield] only had 23% durability remaining, she was doomed to die!

"Hong!"

"2127 ! "

"3389 ! "

The two damage numbers flew out, and Simple's [Mana Shield] broke. In that moment, she fell to the ground with a cry, and died. She didn't drop any equipment, but dropped some Lv 8 pills.

.....

"Bang!"

An [Indigo Sea Arrow] struck my chest, bringing out 2457 damage. I lifted my head to look; it was North Pole, [Vanguard]'s second best Mage. Although his magic attack wasn't as strong as Simple's, it was still very frightful!

Picking up my sword, I chased after him. I had to kill this guy, or else he'd give the BOSS the last attack, and very likely steal the God of Commerce Badge.

North Pole started retreating as he shouted, "Block Xiao Yao Zi Zai for me, we can't let him get near me.... Hurry! Use [Scatter Shot] to kill him. Once we kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, there will be no one to compete with [Vanguard] for the God of Commerce Badge!"

A group of Swordsmen and Musketeers rushed over. However, with a [Blade Rush], as well as a Mohist Five Scrolls' [Soul Army], 4 of the Swordsmen fell to the ground. My speed greatly increased, and I caught up to North Pole. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword, its point expanding!

“Bang!”

The [Mana Shield] twisted, its durability dropped to 71%. North Pole was stunned and said, “F*ck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, that trash, how much attack does he have?! To think that he could break my shield to this point with two attacks.....”

Unfortunately, he had been wrong; it wasn't two attacks to break his shield, but rather two killing attacks. The second attack was a [Fierce Ice Blade]. “Pu chi”, it skewered his body, bringing out 2579 damage, instantly killing him! North Pole cried out as he fell to the ground. Behind him, 7-8 [Vanguard] players had been shocked into a daze, basically turning into statues. No one was willing to continue attacking!

.....

I looked back and scanned Li Qing's Health. There was only 1% left. Motherf*cker, our chance had finally come!

With my sword raised, I rushed straight at Li Qing. At the same time, in the party chat, Yue Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao, Jian Feng Han is going to kill the BOSS. I'll go block him for you for 5 seconds. You have to hurry, basically all of our people have been killed for the sake of this God of Commerce Badge. If we don't get that God of Commerce Badge, then everyone would've died in vain....”

“Got it!”

My distance from the BOSS was around 70 yards, a 5 second journey!

Jian Feng Han brought his pet, Rock Spirit Fighter, and rushed towards Li Qing. His eyes carried battle intent, as he laughed, “Extinguisher of Hope, in the end you're still [Vanguard]'s, isn't that right?!”

His long sword trembled and suddenly struck the BOSS's back!

“Shua!”

A dagger appeared out of thin air. Yue Qing Qian had taken the chance to block Jian Feng Han’s attack!

“Keng.....”

Fire burst forth, and Yue Qing Qian retreated multiple steps. “Bang!” an attack struck Li Qing’s back. Her mouth dripped four drops of blood; in terms of strength, she was beyond far from Jian Feng Han’s level!

Her dagger dropped slightly, and Yue Qing Qian’s delicate feet then rushed forward, activating [Gouge]!

Jian Feng Han saw everything happen and slipped, coincidentally evading the attack. He raised his Flaming Cloud Sword and brandished it right at Yue Qing Qian, as he yelled, “Yue Qing Qian, f*ck off. You can’t stop me!”

“Cha!”

His sword fell upon Yue Qing Qian’s shoulder, bringing out 2978 damage. Yue Qing Qian’s body fell forward, and yet her palm supported her, and her snowy legs swept across the ground. “Pa!” she had kicked Jian Feng Han’s body, shaking him, but not tripping him completely. At the same time, Yue Qing Qian’s [God’s Dance] and [Absolute Step] activated, and her elegant body flew forward from the force. She raised her hands, [Twin Blade Harmony]!

“2415 ! ”

Jian Feng Han shivered, as though sensing that this [Zhan Long] Assassin beauty Vice Guild Master had the ability to kill him. His body lowered, as his killing skill was coming. [Blade Rush] + [Corrupt Wolf Edge] was activated from an extremely close distance!

“MISS ! ”

“3129 ! ”

.....

“Wu wu.....”

Yue Qing Qian's health had been emptied within seconds. The [God's Dance] had dodged Jian Feng Han's [Blade Rush], but had been unable to evade the [Corrupt Wolf Edge]. After all, her health and defense hadn't been that great.

Watching Yue Qing Qian feebly lay on the ground, my heart jerked. Even her back-up dagger had been dropped. It was a Lv 65 Purple Tier equipment, with stats not inferior to an Emperor Tier equipment!

Bending over, Jian Feng Han turned around, his hand weighed the dagger. He looked at me and smiled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, this is the finale you wanted, isn't that right?"

I suddenly strode forward, getting closer to him!

Jian Feng Han's eyes turned cold as he said, "Everyone, use your maximum output on him!"

Unknowingly, all of the players around Li Mu had been killed; even Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Misty Clouds, and Han Bei Song had all been killed by Jian Feng Han himself. Yan Zhao had taken his crippled dozens of [Prague] players and started fighting with the retreating [Valley of the Gods] players. Around the BOSS, there were only 50+ people, and they were all [Vanguard]'s players!

.....

Flash after flash of skills was practically telling me that this time, our operation with [City of the Ancients] as our final goal, had failed. We had truly lost.....

But my heart remained unresigned. Using [Haste], I flashed towards the BOSS. At the same time, Jian Feng Han also picked up his Flaming Cloud Sword to meet me. His reputation as a battle elitist was not just a name, as he was the only person with the courage to face a person who held such fearsome attack like me.

"Shua....."

My combat boots slid through the dust in a C shape. Jian Feng Han had cleverly stopped by sticking his blade into the ground, and causing an

unnatural change in his pace. This was a perfect use of his brilliance. With that quick turn, he had successfully dodged my desperate [Wind Blade]!

In the instant we passed each other, Jian Feng Han waved his arm, and pushed himself backwards. His Flaming Cloud Sword had already impaled my Nebula Armor!

“1988 ! ”

I maintained my unnatural calm as my Purple Dawn Boots stepped into a deep spot in the dusty plains. My body quickly stopped and my Emperor Qin’s Sword swept behind me!

“MISS ! ”

Jian Feng Han’s body had ducked, exquisitely creating a MISS out of that attack. His combat boots suddenly kicked at my right leg.

I saw everything vividly; my left foot sunk into the plains, giving me strength. Once I had accumulated enough strength, my right foot suddenly lifted up and also kicked forward, testing our strengths. In terms of strength, who was afraid of who!

“Keng!”

Jian Feng Han’s entire body shook as he rolled backwards, falling face down into dirt. He was utterly humiliated.

.....

“Shua!”

“+1050 ! ”

Giving myself a [Heal], I turned around and rushed straight at the BOSS. Li Qing’s health was at 0.5%; it was extremely dangerous!

“Hong!”

Raising my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I locked onto the BOSS, as well as all of the [Vanguard] players around it. With all of the strength in my body, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

Dust flew everywhere, as a dozen of [Vanguard]’s close combat players were killed! Flaming Tiger God also roared and bit those surrounding the BOSS. I took this chance to release some more attacks!

“Bang Bang Bang.....”

Receiving my chain of attacks, Li Qing began to shake violently. He did not have much health left!

Changing my perspective, I saw that behind me, Jian Feng Han had come to attack once more!

At that moment, my heart beat shockingly fast. I had determined Jian Feng Han’s speed, and his attack would undoubtedly be [Exposed Point]. Jian Feng Han only had a few skills that he could use to instantly kill me!

S-ranked combo, [Exposed Point], the first move was a stab!

“Peng!”

Under my feet, my qi had suddenly surged, and as Jian Feng Han watched, I also activated a skill, [Strength of a Thousand Men]. The first form was also a stab, and I rushed forward 3 yards, beautifully creating a MISS from [Exposed Point]’s first attack. Even if Jian Feng Han had been beaten to death, he would have never believed that the method he had used to deal with Yan Zhao Warrior would be used against himself by me.

My body slightly dipped and I used a [Blade Rush] behind me!

“2718 ! ”

Jian Feng Han cried out in shock, but I had already activated my attacks behind him. He only had 50% of his health left, and with the Emperor Qin’s Sword he had no choice but to die!

“Shua!”

With a shake of his shoulder, Jian Feng Han activated another attack to bounce back. He desperately hoped that he could pull against the crazy tide with this attack, and possibly kill me.

Unfortunately, Jian Feng Han had underestimated me. Having crawled my way up to the top in [Destiny] for a whole month, my reflexes and decision-making skills had already long surpassed that of the old me. The sword hilt hit his shoulder, inflicting 1029 damage, and using up his one chance to counterattack. At the same time, the Emperor Qin's Sword was surrounded by snowflakes, and a [Fierce Ice Blade] directly pierced through his chest!

“3961 ! ”

A perfect attack; [Vanguard]'s Guild Master was finished!

.....

At the same time, the [Fierce Ice Blade] had passed through Jian Feng Han's body and directly hit Li Qing, taking away the last bit of his health. With a miserable cry, Li Qing's tall body fell, dropping many things!

“Pa!”

Reaching out, I suddenly grabbed something. It was a golden badge, steadily clasped in my hand. I held the God of Commerce Badge right next to Jian Feng Han's face. He did his best to try and look at the God of Commerce Badge, his eyes crimson with anger. Yet he died, completely powerless.

Seeing Jian Feng Han's unresigned look, I murmured, “There's no such thing as fate in this world. There's only a heart that refuses to submit. [Vanguard]'s time as Ba Huang City's king has already passed!”

Chapter 299: Magical Spite Armor

“Ding!”

[System Announcement]: Congratulations to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai for defeating the [City of the Ancients] (Ba Huang City) final BOSS, (Extinguisher of Hope-Li Qing). Rewarded with +15 Charm, 150% experience based on current level, and the SSS-ranked skill book, [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]! Congratulations to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai in becoming the final MVP player for the Ba Huang City [City of the Ancients] event, +7 bonus Charm! As a perfect end to the [City of the Ancients], the city will become a safe region for 1 hour. No one will be able to initiate an attack and 10 hrs from now, the cities will be removed.

.....

“Shua shua!”

My level increased by two, meaning I had finally reached Lv 70. I was the first player in Ba Huang City to reach Lv 70!

Stepping forward while holding the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I growled softly, “Get lost!”

“Bang!”

Blasting away the other players who were rushing to steal the BOSS’s loot, I bent over to pick them up. Three pieces of equipment had burst out of Li Qing along with a God of Commerce Badge, but no soul gems or pardon cards had been dropped!

After swallowing a health potion to recover health, I glanced at the dropped item. It was Jian Feng’s Emperor Tier Leg Guards, however its stats weren’t any better than my Dragon Knight’s Leg Guards. I threw them into my inventory; I could give them to Old K of Li Mu later. However, it was probably better to prioritize Old K, since although he has explosive strength, his health was too poor.

“Drip drip...”

A drop of blood rolled down the Emperor Qin's Sword before falling onto the sand. The [City of the Ancients] quest had finally come to a conclusion. The city was littered with corpses, and next to the broken remains of the walls lay the bodies of many players. There were even more corpses littered outside of the city. The [City of the Ancients] had been invaded by nearly a million players from Ba Huang City, and now many of their corpses were buried. So while some players received quite a few rewards, many others had lost too much.

.....

"We...we really lost?" A flagbearer Archer from [Vanguard] said as he stood there with a blank stare, barely able to maintain a grip on his bow. "[Vanguard] actually lost to [Zhan Long]..."

I lifted my Emperor Qin's Sword wordlessly.

Amidst the people, a blood-stained Yan Zhao Warrior's face was plagued with fatigue as he walked up to me. He looked at me and smiled, "Congratulations, Li Xiao Yao. In the end, [Zhan Long] is the winner of the [City of the Ancients]"

My mouth twitched as I said, "Thank you... But the price [Zhan Long] paid was too high. Other than me, everyone else died....."

"In order to crown a king, 10,000 corpses must be paid. It's something inevitable!"

"Next time, it won't happen!"

Clenching my fists I said, "I'm just not strong enough yet. Just wait until the day [Zhan Long] becomes strong enough; next time, my brothers will survive with me until the end!"

Yan Zhao Warrior said nothing.

.....

At this moment, Yue Qing Qian's voice came from the guild chat, "Congratulations, Brother Xiao Yao. You got the [God of Commerce Badge]! Brother Xiao Yao is the most powerful; I love you the most!"

Matcha also said with a smile, “Boss is really cool, to have actually taken the [God of Commerce Badge] from Jian Feng Han!”

Li Mu smiled, “This is the result of working together as [Zhan Long]. It seems that...the only person left from [Zhan Long] was Guild Master?”

“Yea,” Yue Qing Qian said. “I was the last one to die, leaving Brother Xiao Yao to be the only one left in the [City of the Ancients].”

Wolf laughed, “Brother Xiao Yao, what did the BOSS drop, won’t you show us?”

“Yea.”

I scanned through my bag. The three pieces of equipment that I got were in a corner of my bag. Of them, there was a pair of twinkling orange battle boots, full of a dignified glow. Beside it was a completely black armor, giving off a faint indigo glow. Lastly, there was a battle hammer, full of killing intent. The hammer was covered in needles, looking extremely fierce. With just one look, I could tell that it was the type of hammer that would either kill or cripple the opponent with just one smash. First, I raised up the battle boots, and reached out to open up the stats. The stats were then projected onto the chat, making everyone pretty much drool —

[Divine Battle Boots] (Emperor Tier)

Armor type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 400

Strength: +52

Endurance: +49

Agility: +47

Additional ability: Increases user’s defense by 16%

Additional ability: Increases user’s magic defense by 26%

Additional ability: Increases user’s movement speed by 11%

Required Level: 70

.....

“Wow it increases movement speed by 11%, and defense by 16%. These boots are really domineering, they have such overpowered high defense and magic resistance....” Sister Matcha chuckled.

“Lv 70 boots...Congratulations, Brother Xiao Yao!” Yue Qing Qian said.

Li Mu quirked his mouth, “Boss sure is lucky...”

I replaced my boots of Purple Dawn Boots with the Divine Battle Boots and said, “There’s no other Lv 70 around, so I’ll be taking it instead of ROLLing for it...”

Wang Jian chuckled, “But the stats on these boots are truly insane!”

“What is this, these are even more insane....”

I wryly smiled and took the black armor out. After sharing the stats, Wang Jian, Li Mu, Old K and Matcha, and the whole group of tanks almost fainted —

[Magic Spite Armor] (Valkyrie Tier)

Armor type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 570

Strength: +70

Stamina: +68

Agility: +65

Additional ability: Increases user’s defense by 20%

Additional ability: Increases user’s attack by 15%

Additional ability: Increases user’s life by 1200 points

Additional ability: Magic Spite, any forms of magic attack have a 30% chance of missing

Required Level: 70

.....

“F*ck!”

Old K pounded on the ground, “This Magic Spite Armor is simply crazy; its stats are f*cking insane. I’m at a loss for words, the craziness has to stop...”

Wolf laughed out loud, “Old K used three “crazy”’s to express his resentment. This Magic Spite Armor is really amazing...”

Li Mu was speechless, “20% defense increase, 15% attack increase, 1200 life, and a 30% to miss magical attacks, exactly how insane is this Magic Spite Armor!?”

My hands trembled as I held the armor in my hands. It was a Valkyrie Tier, probably the world’s first Valkyrie Tier armor. Tsk tsk, this [City of the Ancients]’ last BOSS was as impressive as expected!

I put it on; the Magic Spite Armor was a glossy black that gave off a ferocious air. It changed a small soldier like me, from an unreputable town like Dragon City, to look like I was a killing god from hell. Looking at my stats after I had obtained two OP equipments, my eyes nearly rolled out of their sockets—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Night Watch)

Lv: 70

Attack: 2914 – 3878

Defense: 2824

Health: 6545

Mana: 2696

Charm: 109

CBN Battle Ranking: 22

.....

After sharing my stats in the guild chat, a string of exclamations immediately ensued—

Old K: “F*ck, a Swordsmen with 2800+ defense, is that even a

Swordsman?! Tell me, is a person with 2800+ defense and 6500 health still a Swordsman? Isn't that on the same level as a Monk??"

Matcha chuckled, "Boss's stats truly make people accept defeat, there's no way people cannot admit it...."

Li Mu laughed out loud, "Wang Ze Cheng probably feels like his own 2900 defense is number one in Ba Huang City still, but looking at it now, even without his shield, Boss almost surpasses him!"

Yue Qing Qian giggled, "Brother Xiao Yao, have you noticed how after going through this [City of the Ancients] operation, you have gone from rank 26 to rank 22 on the CBN Rankings? At this rate, you'll be able to enter the top ten within 3 months, and at that point you'll be respected as Master of this generation....."

I smiled, "Yup!"

Afterwards, we decided the fate of the third equipment, the Lv 70 Emperor Tier hammer. After much discussion, we decided to give it to Dong Cheng Lei, since we couldn't just keep handing equipment over to Old K. Otherwise, people would say that we were just shielding our weaker spots.

.....

Finally, I took a skill book out from my bag. It an SSS-ranked skill book that had been awarded to me after I had killed Li Qing. After sharing it in the guild chat, there was another collective gasp from everyone. After this City of the Ancients operation, [Zhan Long]'s knowledge of the extent of equipment and skills had been substantially expanded—

[Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] (SSS): Materializes the strength of an ancient dragon. It gives off a loud roar, and raises the attack and defense of all allies within 10 yards of the caster by 40%. Mp Cost: 100, Duration: 30 minutes, Cooldown: 20 minutes, Lv Requirement:70, Class Requirement: Swordsman, Knight, or Monk, 10 Charm will be consumed.

.....

“A 40% increase in attack and defense.....” Li Mu swallowed hard, “This skill defines what shameless truly means. This skill is crazy, it’s even a thousand times crazier than the Magic Spite Armor!”

I said, “Next time we go out to grind, you guys can also get the 40% attack and defense BUFF.....”

Li Mu raised his eyebrows and smiled, “This [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] skill’s design is actually pretty reasonable. Seeing as it is a 3S’s ranked skill, it must have some incredible effects. This 40% offense and defense buff.... is incredibly awesome.....”

Everyone: “.....”

.....

“Shua!”

This SSS-ranked skill had used up 10 Charm, but its effect was completely worth it. From now on, whenever I went to grind, it would be a breeze, especially with my Emperor Qin’s Sword [Kill For Blood] as well. Yup.... Looking at all of Ba Huang City, there’s practically no one who would be willing to duel with me. It’s possible that when after we raised the number of [Zhan Long] members, we could start becoming famous outside of Ba Huang City.

I took out the [God of Commerce Badge]. This golden, shiny badge was [Zhan Long]’s [City of the Ancients] operation’s most glorious reward. Yup, now we could go to the city’s ruler and apply to open a shop!

Return to the city!

“Shua!”

I appeared inside Ba Huang City and repaired all of my equipment and armor. Then I took the badge and happily rushed towards the palace where Duke Luo Lei was waiting for me!

“Beep!”

I received a message from the beautiful little miss Lin Wan Er, “Congratulations! You’re treating me to a meal~~”

I couldn't help but smile, "Wan Er....."

"Whats wrong....."

"I miss you....."

"Too fake! Say it again!"

"I want you to treat me to a meal....."

"There you go....."

I was speechless. Then I asked, "Wan Er, who got Fan Shu City's [God of Commerce Badge]?"

Lin Wan Er proudly smiled and said, "Dong Cheng and I helped attack, while Q-Sword picked up the badge. This was all within our calculations, but our losses were too severe. In the end [Hero's Mound] was only left with less than 400 people....."

"Thats nothing, [Zhan Long] only had me left....."

"Alright, this girl admits defeat. When can we get offline to get a midnight snack?"

"Wait for a second, I'll go request a shop first."

"Alright, Dong Cheng and I'll wait for your call!"

"Ok!"

.....

Having obtained the [God of Commerce Badge], I made my way over to Duke Luo Lei's house. "Pi da pi da."* I handed the [God of Commerce Badge] over to Duke Luo Lei to inspect. I bowed, "Great Duke Luo Lei, I wish to apply to buy a plot of land in Ba Huang City and build a player-run shop. I hope you can approve my request!"

(*TL Note: Sound of footsteps)

Luo Lei looked at the [God of Commerce Badge] and said, "This is truly a treasure from the ancient times. Alright, I'll allow you to open up a shop in Ba Huang City. But, young warrior, you need to pay a certain amount in order to buy the land....."

“Oh? How much?”

“Shua!” There appeared the costs for buying a piece of land. In bold letters, the book had a number written in it—

2,000,000 RMB

.....

“F*ck my life! 2 million, are you ripping me off?!”

I roared out into the night.

Chapter 300: One Second Hero

I silently thought for a while and then logged off. Where could I possibly find 200WR? It wasn't like I could just find Dong Cheng Yue, hug her leg, and beg for her to give me her silk stockings to cover my head so that I could rob a bank, right?

Fraud! Incomparable fraud!

After I suffered every possible torment and endured all sorts of hardship to obtain the [God of Commerce Badge], I hadn't imagined that I would be dealt such an evil blow by the game company! And by 2 million, this kind of large number... is too sinister!

.....

At night, a cool breeze flowed beneath the female dormitories. Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were both wearing new dresses, waiting for me.

"Congratulations, Guild Master Xiao Yao!" Dong Cheng Yue laughed from far away.

"What is there to be happy about?" I asked.

"Humph, Ba Huang City's sole [God of Commerce Badge] was won by you, and you still ask what there is to be happy about?"

"Okay then, it's my treat. Where do you want to go eat?"

"At this time, where else can we go? Let's go to the second dining hall for a midnight snack....."

"Alright....."

Not long after, the three of us were sitting in the quiet dining hall. The dining hall of Liu Hua University was very luxurious, and was in no way inferior to five star hotels. I sat there clenching my fist, as the problem of 2M kept circling around in my mind.

"What's the matter? Why so depressed?" Lin Wan Er tilted her head and looked at me.

I smiled, "It's nothing....."

“There is definitely something, and it is an unhappy something.....” Dong Cheng Yue also tilted her head and looked at me, smiling, “Why don’t you say it out loud and let me and Wan Er have a laugh?”

I gave her a look, my gaze moved down and landed on Dong Cheng Yue’s silky pair of legs, and I couldn’t bear to move away again.

.....

My gaze gave Dong Cheng Yue goosebumps and she reached out a hand to pull down her skirt: “Brother Xiao Yao, you are acting beastly. What is wrong with you?”

I was troubled and wrinkled my nose, “ Do you guys know? If the God of Commerce wants to buy a plot inside the city, he has to pay a total sum of 2 million RMB all in one lump....”

“I know that....” Wan Er smiled, “So it turns out you were distressed over this matter. I might as well tell you...after you buy a plot, building a shop will cost at least 700,000 RMB, hiring NPC sales clerks will cost about 100,000 RMB, and basic operating funds should be at least 1 million RMB. To open just one player shop will cost about 4 million RMB...”

My despair deepened, “Where would I get this kind of money? I feel like I was trolled; I worked so hard to obtain the [God of Commerce Badge], but in the end I have no way to establish my own shop...”

Wan Er smiled, “Well, you could sell the [God of Commerce Badge]. You could sell it for 10 million RMB to Jian Feng Han and he would probably buy it without hesitation.”

“Really?”

“Of course.....You going to sell?”

“Never!”

“Hmph.....”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes gazed into the open sky and after she thought for a while, she said, “Actually, you could find business partners to cooperate with you to open a shop. You could provide knowledge about

both the [God of Commerce Badge] and the game, and your partner would provide the money. This way, you can have a win-win situation. There are plenty of rich players in Ba Huang City. I heard yesterday there was a pair of Emperor Tier boots for sale, and the moment it was listed, somebody bought it immediately with the insanely high sum of 2 million RMB without blinking an eye.”

My heart skipped a beat, “This method... is it okay?”

Dong Cheng Yue laughed, “You don’t need to look further, Xiao Yao, we can partner up! I’ll provide the 4 million. As for my partnership reasons, I don’t care about the profits, I just want you ah, as long as you stay with me”

Lin Wan Er coughed, “Enough from you..... If it is like this, I would prefer if I worked with him.....”

Dong Cheng Yue pursed her red lips, “Wu wu, Wan Er started protecting what’s hers, I don’t think I could ever love again...”

Seeing the two girls to start arguing in such a fashion, not to mention two of the most exquisite ladies in the nation, the group of boys from the far end of the dining hall immediately came over to spectate. Suddenly my head started to ache; it looked like I was taking liberties with two ladies at once.

.....

I took out my cellphone and called Fox—

“Li Brat, what’s up?” Fox laughed, “Congratulations on getting the Magic Spite Armor and Divine Battle Boots, hahaha~~~”

I was speechless, “Fox, stop fooling around, I need to talk to you about the [God of Commerce Badge]...”

“Alright, what’s up with the [God of Commerce Badge]?”

“Okay, the situation is like this. Although we managed to obtain the [God of Commerce Badge], setting up a shop still requires a huge sum of money, at least 4 million RMB. We don’t have that kind of money, so we

need to find a business partner. Help me search Ba Huang City to see which players would be reliable partners. We will provide people and the badge, while he will provide the money, and afterwards we will split the profits.”

“Alright, got it! I’ll get it done as soon as possible!”

“Good, remember the opposite party must be reliable!”

“Aye!”

.....

As a result, I didn’t even finish my meal before Fox called, “Li Brat, I found them. There is a total of three people willing to supply 4 million RMB to [Zhan Long] to build a shop. The specifics require you to discuss face-to-face with them, what time will you come online?”

“I’ll be there in 10 minutes!”

“Great, I’ll be in Ba Huang City’s armory shop. I’ll arrange for them to meet you in order!”

“Alright!”

I hurriedly took the two ladies back to the female dormitories and quickly returned to my own room to get online!

“Shua!”

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City wearing the Divine Battle Boots on my feet and Magic Spite Armor on my body. Carrying the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I practically flew over to the armory shop. The moment I entered the shop, I saw a fat Lv47 Archer sitting on the side with a greedy look on his face—

“You must be Xiao Yao Zi Zai?”

“Indeed.” I nodded, “Greetings. Are you willing to partner with [Zhan Long] to build the first player-run shop in Ba Huang City?”

The Archer nodded and smiled, “Yes! Ba Huang City’s first player shop will have unbounded possibilities. A businessman’s sensitive sense would

not miss this great opportunity.”

I got straight to the point and asked, “Tell me, what kind of profit percentage are you looking for? After we finish constructing the shop, how much do you want?”

He raised his hands and showed nine fingers, “This much!”

“9%?” I asked.

“No, 90%!” The fat on his face were jiggling, “4 million RMB is not a small sum; you can’t just say give me the money and get it. Me getting 90% is not unreasonable.”

I smiled, then walked up to the Archer. I reached out and grabbed his collar, raising his fat body and coldly said, “90%? Did you think [Zhan Long] was some dumbf*ck? Get out of my sight or else I’ll make it so you will never see the daylight in Ba Huang City again!”

The fatty was shocked, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what..... what is the meaning of this?! Even if a business deal fails, it shouldn’t affect our friendship. Let us calmly negotiate.....”

I sneered, “When you shamelessly said 90%, where was the friendship there? Our [Zhan Long] was basically completely annihilated in order to obtain this [God of Commerce Badge]. Are you saying that our levels are less than your 4 million? Don’t even mention 4 million, even if you paid 40 million, don’t even dream of getting 90%. Our [Zhan Long] won’t break our backs for a person like you. Get out. Don’t let me see you again!”

The fatty staggered out and ran out of the armory shop. He had been scared silly by my anger.

Fox walked in and asked, “How..... how did it end up like this?”

I softly said, “This douchebag wanted 90%. I can’t PK within Ba Huang City, otherwise, based on my personality, he would’ve left as a spirit.....”

Fox made a fist and said, “Pei, 90%? What nerve he has..... Just wait here for a second, I’ll get the next one to come.....”

“Alright!”

Not long after, a thin Lv 55 Knight entered. From the looks of it, the businessmen in the game weren't really high level players, which made sense since their original intent wasn't to play the game, but rather to take this business opportunity to make money in this artificial world.

Looking at the thin person, I courteously said, “Hello, I am Xiao Yao Zi Zai.....”

The thin person was extremely concise and said, “Guild Master Zi Zai, you don't have to say any more. I want 70% of the profit. If you agree then nod, if you don't, then I shall leave.....”

I nodded and said, “Goodbye, I won't send you out!”

The third one was normal compared to the others. He was a sturdy young man, a Lv 59 Mage. In his hand, he carried an iridescent purple staff that looked to be a Purple Tier weapon. When he walked in, he smiled and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Ba Huang City's number one! Hello!”

I politely smiled and said, “Hello. Tell me your price?”

The young man said, “I'll give 4 million to help [Zhan Long] start its store, but I want 80% of the profit. Of course, if you don't like the price, we can negotiate!”

“30%, and I'm not doing any more than that.....” I said as I stubbornly held up three fingers.

The young man shook his head and said, “Nevermind then, 30% is too little. I don't even know if I'll get my investment back.....”

I thought about it and said, “Then how about 40%.....”

“That's still too low. at least 60%, that way I can make sure that I won't lose money from this.”

“Nevermind then.....”

“Okay, well when you think it through you can contact me then.”

“Okay!”

.....

This time the business deal was friendly, as we shook hands as farewell.

Fox walked in again, his brows furrowed, "This one failed too?"

"Yup...." I gritted my teeth and said, "He wanted 60%. These people are just too crafty. Isn't this basically asking for [Zhan Long]'s blood? We definitely can't agree. I'd rather wait. What if..... If I sell Emperor Qin's Sword, we'd definitely get 4M....."

"No! We can't!"

Fox urgently shook his head and said, "Li Brat, you're the symbol of [Zhan Long], and right now the Emperor Qin's Sword is your emblem. If you sell Emperor Qin's Sword, then you're basically breaking your signature move. You definitely can't do that. Let's just wait, there will definitely be someone to work with us....."

"Aye....."

After a period of feeling dejected, I suddenly heard a message—

"Beep!"

[System Notification]: Player [One Second Hero] has requested to add you as a friend. Do you accept?

.....

Who was that? Even though I added a lot of friends everyday, this was the first I had received today.

I'll just accept, and see what happens!

After I accepted the friend, the other person sent me a message, "Hello Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai! I heard that [Zhan Long] is looking for a partner in business so I came, since I know that you guys definitely need me!"

"Who are you?"

"Let's meet on Ba Huang City's North Gate Bridge, how's that sound?"

"Alright!"

.....

Walking out of the armory shop, Fox, Wolf, Old K and Matcha were all there. The four practically all said at the same time, “What happened?”

I waved my hand. “Let’s go, come with me for a trip!”

Even though they didn’t know why, the people still followed me.

From on top of the East Gate Bridge, we slowly arrived. There was a lone player standing on the bridge. Dressed in extremely fine armor of the Knight Style and carrying a brightly shining spear, a few words floated above his head—

One Second Hero LV 62 Golden Knight

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: None

Position: None

.....

Seeing me walk over, One Second Hero took the initiative to come forward, hand reaching out with a smile, “Hello Guild Master Zi Zai, I am One Second Hero. I’m Chen Yong Jie, from Fujian. I do some business in the north. I hope I can work together with [Zhan Long]!”

Chapter 301: Start of Construction

“Hello Yong Jie!”

I extend my hand for a handshake, saying, “How did you know [Zhang Long] was looking for a partner?”

One Second Hero grinned, “My friends that were kicked out of the armory shop by you were embittered and came complaining to me. After I soundly scolded them for being idiots, I came by myself to find you.”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Ah...so it was like this. Alright then, what are your intentions for cooperating?”

One Second Hero stepped forward, his eyes shining like a flame and said, “I’m not only about business. It is because I like Destiny as a game that I am willing to invest funds, and my partners are chosen by their character. Only because you guys are [Zhan Long], and because you are Xiao Yao Zi Zai, am I willing to partner....”

After his speech, he raised one finger and announced, “I have invested 4 million dollars and will require at least a net profit of the same amount. “

Surprised, Fox exclaimed, “100%? That too harsh....”

One Second Hero’s face turned green, “Is 10% fine then?”

“10%?” My heart fluttered, “For real?”

“Yes.” One Second Hero firmly nodded, “10% would be able to cover most of it, but.... I won’t be earning much. I am only willing to cooperate with this condition because I have another request. If you can’t agree to it, I will not partner with [Zhan Long].”

Hugging the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I smiled and asked, “What is this condition?”

One Second Hero pondered out loud, “Hmmm.. it is very simple. Allow me to join [Zhan Long] as a member. Though, I will need a position...ah, a team captain should do. A guild can have up to 10 team captains including me. So, let me join [Zhan Long] to be a team captain, then our

partnership is complete.”

I narrowed my eyes at him wordlessly.

“What’s wrong, Guild Master Zi Zai? This tiny condition is not acceptable? I...I am a diehard [Zhan Long] fan! I watched [Zhan Long]’s fight at Arctic Fox Forest three times, honest!”

I smiled, “You can’t become team captain. All our team captains have gone through harsh tests; Yue Wei Liang, Dancing Forest, and Old K, these people can all work independently. As a new member of [Zhan Long], you can’t be given the position of team captain. How about this, you can hold the flag. The best I can do is let you be a flagbearer, nothing more....”

One Second Hero pondered for a bit, then lifting his head, he nodded, “Acceptable. If I must carry the flag then I shall carry the flag. After the guild grows bigger, the flagbearer will also be considered as an important position, and nobody will dare to bully my friends....”

I let out a sigh of relief, “Ah....”

.....

A few seconds later, [Zhan Long] successful added this Lv 62 third advancement Knight. Actually, Chen Yong Jie’s basic game mechanics weren’t bad and could be considered well-equipped. Third advanced Knights could use [Heavenly Shield Wall]; I put them under Matcha’s command. They also counted as part of our frontline shield formation, and were quite useful.

After joining the guild, One Second Hero raised his eyebrows and smiled, “ OK, its done! What are you waiting for, lets go! I will accompany you to Ba Huang City’s ruler to buy a plot of land. I have to record all expenses so my shareholders will not ask about anything.”

“Alright!”

Our group of players started marching up the snow-white steps of Ba Huang City. As I walked, I turned around and asked One Second Hero, “Yong Jie, do you want to sign an online announcement of our

partnership?”

One Second Hero laughed and patted the emblem on his shoulder, “Guild Master, you and I are good friends and now I am a member of [Zhan Long], not to mention a flagbearer. There is no need to sign such an agreement, even if it was the 4 million dollar donation to the guild. In my years of hard work, I have realized no amount of money can buy a group of loyal brothers. The fact that you let me join [Zhan Long] is the greatest confirmation of our agreement.”

I could not help but smile, “Alright, but you have to raise your fighting capability. I checked the CBN battle network leaderboard and among Lv 62 Knights, you are only ranked at 1173479th place. That is rather low right? You should at least be among the top 100000....”

Embarrassed, One Second Hero scratched his head, “This...is because I rarely participate in PKing. I used to play with a few friends, but after we were PKed by [Flying Dragon] in Ba Huang Forest several times, they switched maps. I just joined [Zhan Long], so it will take a few days to get them all over here, is that okay? Their equipment is all pretty good and among them is even a third advanced Swordsman....”

I nodded, “Good, [Zhan Long] is always seeking new players; your friends are our friends. I trust in everybody’s strength!”

“Mhm, great!”

.....

We arrived in front of Ba Huang City’s ruler, Duke Luo Lei, and I submitted the God of Commerce Badge once again. This time Duke Luo Lei proceeded to extend his hand to take the required sum, “Young warrior, it seems you were able raise the money!”

I grinned, “Yup!”

One Second Hero quietly performed a few actions on the side and then looked at me, “Boss, I have transferred the 4 million RMB...”

“Great!”

The task's requirements were instantly fulfilled, and suddenly a large map of Ba Huang City appeared before our eyes. It clearly outlined the price of every plot of land in Ba Huang City. The one I wanted to buy was the most expensive, the plot next to the northern city square's pharmacy and equipment shop. If we opened a player-run shop with prices for medicine and equipment cheaper than the NPC prices, we'd be able to take over all the business of the NPCs and become kings!

"Ding!"

[System Notification]: Congratulations, you have bought Ba Huang City's plot #1 with 2000000 RMB. The funds have been deducted from your bank card!"

.....

"Did you get it?" Sister Matcha asked.

I nodded, "Yup, plot #1. It's right in Ba Huang City north gate's liveliest area."

One Second Hero laughed, "Indeed, Boss is quite wise. This map's southern half is all occupied by player districts. The north side is the real wilderness, filled with monsters. 80% of players traveling from Ba Huang City will go through the north gate; opening a shop at the north gate is the best choice. In the future, control of Ba Huang City's economy will fall in our hands."

I nodded, "Yes, its very good..."

One Second Hero continued, "Lets go! We need to go to our plot to set up shop..."

"Ok!"

We traveled back to the north gate and sure enough, the abandoned residence originally next to the pharmacy had been razed. The plot wasn't too large, about 100 square meters, but opening three or four store fronts would be no problem. Actually it seemed that 2 million RMB plots were quite cheap. If we were in Beijing's San Huan district with only 2 million RMB, we wouldn't be able to buy a single 100+ square meter plot!!

Next to the empty lot, a burly barbarian carrying a pole looked at me and yelled, "You must be the owner of this plot, right? Do you need to hire workers? My men can build the best and most affordable house!"

I raised my head and looked at him him, "Affordable? How about resistant? Can your house withstand a magnitude 6.0 earthquake?"

"It can!"

I pulled out the Emperor Qin's Sword, "If it fails to stand, I will chop you to pieces!"

The brawny barbarian thumped his chest, "Fear not, if the house falls, I will personally chop up my own body!"

I grinned, "In that case, proceed with construction...."

Constructing a store cost 700,000 RMB and took 30 minutes to complete, so everybody just waited on the side.

.....

Carrying his spear, One Second Hero smiled, "To kill himself if his building can't withstand an earthquake, hehe. If all building developers were like that, public safety would increase by 50%...."

I laughed and leaned the Emperor Qin's Sword on a wall, "Dirty bribes that lead to sloppy work will have its consequences. To have a resistant house in such a place would be the devil's work...."

One Second Hero looked at me and after a long while muttered, "Whatever, I will continue to work in the coal mining business and not meddle in real estate. I won't do things that will screw up my children...."

I smiled, "That is not to say it's impossible. Actually ... I've always had the dream to earn a lot of money to set up my own construction firm under my personal supervision. I want to set up buildings for various schools and strictly examine each brick and nail. I will not strive to make a profit, nor act like a man without morals."

One Second Hero raised his fist and laughed, "If it is like this...Boss, in the future, I will keep working with you! You can take care of the

construction and I'll be responsible for the finance; can we stay as partners?"

I nodded, "Alright, if that day truly comes, I will accomplish my dream no matter what!"

"Yup!"

.....

Not long after, the building was finished. Since the store had a total of three store fronts, we could sell three different kinds of merchandise. Inside, we had no NPCs, so we had to hire clerks ourselves.

A group of players walked by towards the hero's tavern ahead. Actually, there weren't any real heroes inside hero's tavern, only a group of PC drinking adventurers.

"Hua!"

Emperor Qin's Sword parted the entrance curtain and I walked in first. The overwhelming stench of alcohol immediately filled my nostrils. There were even some people smoking tobacco, and directly opposite sat several burly dwarves drinking beer. A hard-edged fancy axe lay on top on the table. A dwarf held a beautiful pale girl in his arms, molesting her, while burying his face into her breasts. It looked as if nothing could convince him to turn away from the pleasure.

"This...what is this place.....?" Sister Matcha furrowed her brows.

I smiled, "This is Ba Huang City's nightclub. Let's go over and check out the NPC staff members..."

"Alright!"

We walked over to the young man with slightly curled hair, wearing a blue uniform. With the guest register in his hands, he smiled and greeted us, "Guests, what do you require?"

I bluntly asked, "I require the services of some pharmacists, alchemists, and equipment appraisers. Is this okay?"

"Of course!"

The young man waved his hand and a register of members appeared in front of us. It was a list of pharmacists available for hire—

Flying Card (Basic Tier) : Alchemy Skill LV-6, Economic capability 68, permanent commission costs 800 gold coins

Handsome Da (Purple Tier) : Alchemy Skill LV-8, economic capability 82, permanent commission costs 2100 gold coins

Misty Forest (Bronze Tier) : Alchemy Skill LV-7, economic capability 71, permanent commission costs 1100 gold coins

Freya (Purple Tier) : Alchemy Skill LV-8, economic capability 87, permanent commission costs 2450 gold coins

.....

I narrowed my eyes, “There’s a total of 10 on this current list. The best seems be to Purple Tier with drug mixing skill at level 8, so the pharmacist would be able to create level 8 pills for our shop. Should we buy this one?”

One Second Hero shook his head, “Don’t do it Boss, level 8 pills no longer make much profit. If we want to make pills, we have to make higher level ones. It seems that it costs 500G to refresh the list so go ahead and refresh;we have to get one with at least skill level 9!”

“Alright....”

I gritted my teeth and spent 500G to refresh. Suddenly a “Ding” was heard. [System Notification]: Please note, Epic Tier pharmacist [Ai Ze La] as appeared in your list!

Chapter 302: National Beauty

TL: Pharmacists produce health potions.

Ai Ze La (Epic Tier) : Alchemy LV 10 , Economic Capability 99,
Permanent Cost 42000G

.....

“F*ck.....”

My eyes widened, “I got it! I got it!”

One Second Hero gripped his hand and anxiously asked, “Boss, what kind of an pharmacist did you get?”

“An Epic Tier!”

Reaching out, I waved over the party chat and the Epic Tier pharmacist’s stats were shared. At that moment, Song Han, Matcha, and Fox were all stunned. Matcha blinked a few times and said, “I just looked it up, the Economic Capability implies the amount the NPC can produce in a given time. The higher the Economic Pace, the more he can produce. Boss..... we can’t miss this Epic Tier hero level alchemist opportunity. Let’s permanently hire him?!”

“But it’s so expensive. Right now the exchange rate is 1:5, and this hero is more than 200,000 RMB, so costly.....”

“No problem.” One Second Hero picked up his spear and said, “Let’s buy him. I’ll pay for the cost of the NPC shop assistants as well. Boss, we should build it well. Think about the profits we can get from this. Right now, in Ba Huang City the best alchemists can only produce Lv 8 potions. If we suddenly come out with Lv 10 potions, then the price will definitely be higher and our net profit will definitely be shocking. We can get 200,000 RMB back before the week is over and to top it off, it’s a one time payment for a permanent shop assistant.

As he was talking, he then emphasized one more point, “I’ll give you the money to hire an NPC. I know that [Zhan Long] doesn’t have a lot of money right now. I’m not just doing this for [Zhan Long] but also for the

10% profit!”

“Alright!”

I reached out, and “Ding”, the Epic Tier pharmacist Ai Ze La appeared behind me. His hands rested at his side as he respectfully said, “Owner, do you have any commands?”

I let him stand on the side and continued refreshing the NPC list. My luck was pretty good and after refreshing 5 times, another Epic Tier pharmacist appeared, it was time to hire him!

My hand shook a little. How is this a game? This is practically a game of money! Within 10 minutes, I had 10 Epic Tier hero level pharmacists and I had spent a total of 2.7 million RMB, it was almost a little crazy. Chen Yong Ji, on the other hand, seemed fairly calm. He leaned on his shield and stood at the side and smiled as he said, “Continue. This shop can use another 10 alchemists. Mana potions are also in high demand!”

I nodded and continued. I spent another 2.9 million RMB for our shop to have 10 Epic Tier alchemists who could all produce Lv 10 pills. To think, once they start working, we’ll get a fortune in profits!

Afterwards, we permanently hired another 3 smiths and 3 equipment appraisers. Those didn’t cost much since the smiths were only 1000G each. The appraisers were slightly more expensive, around 5000 each since the Epic Tiers could produce without needing to pick medicines or hunt to produce health or mana potions, thus they were naturally more expensive since they didn’t require any capital.

.....

Bringing along with me a line of people, I returned to [Zhan Long]’s shop. Afterwards I set out the potions onto a counter and began preparing a counter for items. On another counter I prepared a place to repair and create weapons. Everything was set!

Ten of the hero level alchemists obediently stood in front of the counter and began working when I, the shop owner, commanded them to and I could see the progress of their work. One of them had an Economic

Capability of 100 and took 120 seconds to make one Lv 10 red potion, which was a quality potion that could recover 3000 health in a gulp. Within an hour, the total was around 280 of those potions and within a day they could produce 6,720 bottles. Every potion was at least 20G, which would earn us 134,400G. If we were to convert that at the current rate then it would mean that we could earn 672,000 RMB in a day. Damn, we could earn back the money used to hire the shop assistants in 8 days!

When I thought up to that point, I began to get excited. But, after scanning around the shop, I became discouraged again. To think that I had to pay a 50% income tax. That meant that 50% of the money would go to the city officials. Motherf*cker, I knew there wasn't anything as good as this. Of course the game officials !

.....

"How much should we sell our Lv 10 potions for?" I asked

One Second Hero took a deep sigh and said, "Normally, people won't use Lv 10 potions unless they were PKing outside of the city or fighting with a high level BOSS, but since Ba Huang City will probably have a lot of guild battles in the future, it would be extremely uncommon for players to have those potions before alchemist players rush to Lv 10 so it can be a bit more expensive. We can just lower the price in the future."

"20G?"

"Yea, sure. That price is not too high and not too low. It's very reasonable!"

"Alright!"

And thus, I set the price of all red potions to 20G each. It was a little underhanded, since it was around 100RMB to drink a potion and ordinary players couldn't afford to spend that much, but this type of medicine was never meant to be given to ordinary players. We were selling to the high-end players, it was to get the money of people like Jian Feng Han and Simple. For someone like Jian Feng Han who has a high paying job, it would be a shame to his reputation as the war veteran of the generation if he didn't bring 50 bottles of Lv 10 potions. As for Simple, a high level

Mage like her requires a lot of mana, and Lv 10 potions are just what she needs. Simple Mu Rong Yu is the little miss of Mu Rong Real Estate and naturally does not lack any money. On top of that, there's people like Wang Ze Cheng, Flying Dragon and Li Ying; We were going to get our profits from people like those.

.....

Once I finished up there, I set down the prices for the blacksmiths, which was basically 15% cheaper than refining at an NPC shop. That way we would get 20% of the profit and the rest would go towards taking care of the shop, which, as usual profited the system. In reality, the amount we were earning was relatively a lot. Everyday there's a lot of people who need to repair their weapons and our shop was even right next to a medicine shop. Earning money like this wasn't too bad.

Finally, it was time to set up the appraisers.....

I fished out an equipment. It was the Emperor Tier leg guards that Jian Feng Han dropped, Ottoman Battle Knee Guards. They had 17% Magic Resistance, 7% Physical Resistance, and added 500 points to the user's Health. All in all, it was pretty good. Besides, it also had the [Ottoman Glory] special effect that gives 10 minutes of 5% increase in attack. If I didn't already have my Dragon Knight's Leg Guards' [Dragon Knight's Recovery] special effect, I would've switched to this pair of Ottoman Knee Guards.

As I thought about it, I told Old K, "Originally I was planning on giving you or Ah Lei these knee guards, but.... our shop needs to establish its reputation so I'm planning on using these leg guards to become our eye-catcher. We can sell it in the store and whoever gives the highest price in 10 hours can have it. Hope you don't mind Old K....."

Old K slapped his chest and laughed as he said, "If you didn't treat me like a bruh, then I would actually mind. The grand scheme is important and it's not like I don't have a pair of leg guards. Put it up for auction!"

"Okay!"

I then put the Ottoman Leg Guards on the shelf. I looked towards the

appraiser, it was a 20 year old girl with flaxen hair and a pair of clever and clear eyes.

“Can you appraise this?”

“Ok.....”

The girl touched the Ottoman Leg Guards and blinked a few times, saying, “This is around.... based on the game’s current development, this pair of leg guards’ price is 200,000G. I suggest we start auctioning at 150,000G, that way we might sell it for more profit. Owner, is that ok?”

I nodded and said, “Yup, we’ll auction it like that!”

“Alright owner!”

“Pa Ta” Our first equipment on sale was put onto the shelf and it was very highly rated. I took another pile of equipment and threw it over. Song Han and Matcha also brought out a few equipments out to be sold at our auction. When the auction is over, we would receive 10% of the money as transaction fee and the rest would be returned to the players. This was actually just an ordinary auction and thus we had to rely on our popularity to get better equipment to sell. It was because of this that I brought out Jian Feng Han’s Ottoman Leg Guards, which held some emotional significance, especially since Vanguard’s Guild Master had dropped it.

When the appraiser took the equipment, she also needed to be paid. It was part of the shop’s income tax. I threw in 1M RMB, which should be enough to use for a while. Besides, the Lvn10 red potions had already gotten set up and will bring a large amount of profits soon.

.....

“Boss.” Matcha smiled and said, “Any plan can succeed with an Eastern Wind. Now that [Zhan Long]’s first shop has been set up, we’re still missing the name. Have a go at it, why don’t you choose the name?”

TL: Eastern wind is an idiom that refers to when Zhu Ge Liang waited for an Eastern Wind to complete his plan and destroy the enemy’s troops, in here it refers to the fact that the last piece/factor is missing and with it

the plan would be complete.

I thought about it and smiled, “What would be a good name to call it?”

One Second Hero said, “[Zhan Long] Little Shop?”

“That’s too conventional.....” Matcha shook her head, “What about the [Treasure Bowl]

I shot a glance at Matcha and said, “How is that better? Otherwise we can name it ‘I Like Grapes’?”

“Boss, you’re too much.....”

At that moment, Fox squinted at me and said, “How about we call it ‘National Beauty’? On one hand it describes our OP skills and equipment for sale that are godly items that can defeat a nation, and on the other it’ll refer to our [Zhan Long]’s beauty team. When Lin and Dong Cheng beauty joined [Zhan Long], we were able to bring together at least 5 of the most beautiful women in three great cities, a feat that can only be described as a National Beauty.....”

I gasped and said, “The other names were too boring. Let’s use National Beauty, what does everyone think?”

“Yup, not bad!” Song Han and Old K said, laughing.

And thus, I entered the two words, National Beauty. Soon, the nameplate in front of the shop had the words “National Beauty” written in two big majestic words. It could even be said that these two words made Ba Huang City even more beautiful.

.....

For the final step, I fished out 5000RMB, and had an advertisement made for our store. After a few minutes, a chain of system notifications sounded throughout the sky of Ba Huang City –

“Ding~!”

System Notification (The words of Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai) : Ladies and gentleman of Ba Huang City, please pay attention. The guild [Zhan Long] has opened the store [National Beauty] at the Ba Huang City’s North

Gate. Inside, there are a number of treasures that are being sold, among which are Lv 10 health potions at 20G as well as cheap equipment refinement and high level equipment auctions! Also, [National Beauty] is currently selling a few pieces of OP equipment, one of which is the Emperor Tier Leg Guards – [Ottoman Leg Guards] from: Jian Feng Han. The bottom price is 150,000G, and after 10 hours, it will be sold to the highest bidder. There are more OP equipments waiting to be picked by you. Don't miss this opportunity, come and check us out!

Chapter 303: Ou Yang Luo Yan

When the announcements stopped, I brought out a team of [Zhan Long]'s people to look from the distance. Indeed, within a few minutes, a large crowd of people had already gathered in front of the small shop, National Beauty. Quite a few people were aiming for the Ottoman Leg Guards; after all, Emperor Tier equipment were currently considered super high class, especially heavy armors. The stats were exceptionally good, a definite winner among the top heavy armored players.

.....

I set the settings such that 10% of National Beauty's profits would be directly transferred to One Second Hero's account. The most important thing to do as a person is to keep one's promises; no matter how great that 10% was, I could not have any selfish thoughts. After all, he had given us coal in a blizzard when we needed it most.

TL: "gave us coal in the blizzard" is an idiom referring to how they had been given help when they most needed it.

"Someone has already made an offer for the Ottoman Leg Guards...."
Matcha wryly smiled, "170k G...."

I nodded, "Just keep waiting, there'll definitely be someone who'll give a higher offer. Nowadays, Emperor Tier equipments are high in demand....."

"190k G....."

"211k G....."

The price kept rising and suddenly, Matcha's small mouth widened and she gasped, "Boss..... this... this suddenly became 500k! This is way too ridiculous. I don't know who bought it, but I don't think there'll be a higher offer...."

The other players couldn't figure out who had offered this price, but since I had the power of a shop owner, I was allowed to see behind the scenes of the auction. I scanned the information; the 500k G was no one

but Wang Ze Cheng. That bastard was actually planning on becoming an RMB player to the end!

“If this keeps up, Cang Cheng will probably have an entire suit of Emperor Tier equipment.....” One Second Hero said as he coldly laughed.

I gripped Emperor Qin’s Sword and smiled, “No matter, even if he has an entire suit of Emperor Tier equipment, the end result will still be the same. We can cut him down anytime we want without needing to greet him.....”

Alright.... Guild Master, you’re very formidable....”

.....

We continued to watch National Beauty’s operation; the Lv 10 red potions were especially popular, and almost every one sold out the second it was made. Given their ability to immediately recover 3000 health, they were too domineering, and especially necessary for Main Tanks to use when fighting BOSSes. The potion was practically equivalent to a high level Healer using a Lv 7 [Heal] 2 times; it was a life saving medicine!

Standing at the marketplace in Ba Huang City’s North Gate, I relished the feeling of money flowing in from National Beauty. One Second Hero also wore a big smile and said, “Looks like my investment can will be returned within three months, and that’s a conservative estimate. This National Beauty will bring in at least 20M in profits. Congratulations, Guild Master! You’ve hit the jackpot!”

I smiled and said, “Don’t congratulate me!”

“Why not?” He asked, puzzled.

I contemplated for a moment and said, “I will be transparent about all of National Beauty’s finances. The [God of Commerce Badge] didn’t come from just my own efforts, this National Beauty belongs to all of [Zhan Long]. 10% of all of the revenue will go to you, and the rest will go into [Zhan Long]’s treasury. I won’t take a single cent and everyone can watch over me to make sure I don’t.”

One Second Hero widened his eyes and said, “Boss..... The world is not

fair to selfless people. You can't not take a single cent. Even though the [God of Commerce Badge] had been won by everyone, but.....but in the end, you had fought the most. Without your courage, the [God of Commerce Badge] might've ended up in the hands of Jian Feng Han.....”

I smiled and said, “[Zhan Long] has been a dream of mine and my brothers. The greatest reward for me is to see [Zhan Long] rise up, got it?”

“Alright.....”

One Second Hero laughed out loud and said, “Looks like there are truly different kinds of people in this world. The fact that Xiao Yao Zi Zai was able to rise up so quickly isn't some miracle, but rather an inevitable outcome.”

Matcha proudly stuck out her 34Cs and smiled, “Although Boss is very talented, Chen Yong Jie should still stop praising him. Otherwise, he'll get arrogant. And once this guy gets arrogant, then the rest of [Zhan Long] is screwed.....”

Cheng Yong Jie rubbed his nose and said, “Beautiful Matcha, I know. In the future, when I join [Zhan Long], you must take extra care for me. We're both Knights, but you're still a bit stronger than me.....”

Matcha's ego inflated as she looked towards me and said, “Boss, did you see that? There's someone who called me very strong....”

I glanced at her, then reached out and patted her shoulder as I smiled and said, “Then everyday you should go to the practice area to train your spear's stab, and make sure that at least 90% or more of your stabs are critical hits. Then I'll admit that you're strong. Otherwise, if even your [Phantom Ray Slash] misses how do you expect me to endure it?”

Matcha's face flushed a bright red as she said, “Alright, I will!”

At that moment, there was suddenly a beep, and there was another invite ——

“Beep!”

[System Notification]: Player [Ou Yang Nuo Yan] has requested to be

your friend, do you accept?

.....

“Ou Yang Nuo Yan?” I hesitated for a second, then accepted. It was a Lv 51 female Archer.

“Beep”, there was another message. Ou Yang Nuo Yan had already sent a message saying, “Hello, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I am Ou Yang Nuo Yan. I’m one of the officials from [Destiny]’s Chinese sector. It’s like this: tomorrow I will be coming to Hangzhou from Beijing. Please tell me your address, so I can come over.... to discuss something with you.....”

“Official?” I was puzzled and said, “Beautiful Ou Yang, what’s the actual reason you’re looking for me?”

“About that.....” Ou Yang Nuo Yan’s face appeared to be a 20 year old beautiful miss. She seemed a bit hesitant as she pursed her lips and said, “It’s hard to explain right now. Either way..... Tomorrow morning at around 11:30am, I will arrive at Hangzhou. Where are you? Let’s schedule a place to meet. Don’t worry, I don’t have any ill intentions.....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Of course I’m not worried. You’re a little girl, what could you possibly do to me? Alright, I’m currently in Hangzhou’s Liu Hua University. Let’s schedule a place to meet; how about the Dio Cafe outside of the university’s east gate?”

“Ok, I’ve written it down. Then.... we’ll meet tomorrow? My cell phone number is 139*****, how about yours?”

After I also gave her my cell phone number, she went offline. It looked like she really was an official. She didn’t say much else to me, as though she was afraid that she would give away some of some secrets of the game.

.....

At around 1am., I brought my Flaming Tiger God to Firestone Canyon for a walk. My main goal wasn’t to grind levels, but to practice my skills. Seeing as I was the first player to reach Lv 70, bringing up my skills to Lv 8 was an absolute must. The higher the skill’s level was, the more distinct

its effects were. This was especially true for skills like [Seven Star Fragment Slash] or [Great Realm of Desolation], which require higher skill levels to increase their attack powers.

At around 2am, Wan Er sent a message saying, “Go to sleep piggy, tomorrow morning we have the Sociology class. If you dare to skip this class, then you’ll fail for sure. Remember, 9:00 – 11:00, and you can’t be late. Don’t forget to pick me and and Dong Cheng up tomorrow morning.....”

I replied, “Yup, go sleep now. I’ll go back to the city!”

“Okay!”

After the beautiful mistress’s face faded, I also went offline and took a shower. After getting onto the bed, I maintained my Yi Hai to keep my guard up, then gradually went to sleep.

.....

By the time I awoke, the sun had already risen, and it was 8am sharp. I rolled out of bed and quickly washed up. After that, I ran straight towards the girls dorm and waited for less than 5 minutes before Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue came down. They both wore the uniform + a short skirt, but Wan Er’s was a rosy red, whereas Dong Cheng Yue’s was a violet blue. The two charmingly stood there, just like a pair of beautiful twins. Moreover, the two girls were as close as sisters, so much that they even made me a little jealous.

“Let’s go! To the dining hall?” I asked.

Wan Er looked at me and smiled as well, “Looks like your mood is pretty good. It looks like with the grand opening of your [National Beauty], business has been going well, right?”

“Not bad.....”

I glanced at the message on my phone, “Yesterday, someone made an offer of 650k G for the pair of leg guards.....”

Wan Er began to giggle and said, “I know, that’s the Ottoman Leg

Guards that were dropped from Jian Feng Han, right?”

“Yup.... even you know about it?”

“Of course. Seems like Wang Ze Cheng was the one to buy it. Such an injustice.... Jian Feng Han probably even had some suicidal thoughts. To think that the equipment that he dropped was auctioned off at your National Beauty, that hit is just too cruel.....”

“Yup, his suffering is my pleasure.”

After we ate breakfast, we went to the classroom. As rumored, it was a very strict course. Practically all of the students had attended that day; everyone had gathered in the lecture hall. I followed the two misses and sat in the third row, then silently dipped my head and inwardly prayed that the teacher wouldn't ask a question, especially not to me. Otherwise, I would use my glare to finish him off!

.....

After a whole morning had passed, it was soon nearing 11 o'clock. I glanced at the time and got a bit apprehensive.

“What's wrong?” Wan Er looked at me.

“I have to go out soon to meet someone.”

“What kind of a person?”

“A woman.....”

At that moment, Wan Er's pretty face became serious, “Oh? Who?”

I smiled, “I heard she was one of the game's officials. Her name is Ou Yang Nuo Yan, and is flying out from Beijing to see me. She said she wanted to talk to me about an extremely important matter. Even I don't know what kind of a person she is.....”

Dong Cheng Yue took out her phone and with a “pa pa pa” she looked up the name. Her face was full of shock as she showed me the search results. At that moment, even I was dumbstruck—

Oh Yang Nuo Yan: 20 years old, [Destiny]'s Chinese Sector's Director,

One of [Destiny]'s four biggest stockholders, Ou Yang Nuo Feng's daughter.

.....

"Damn....." Dong Cheng Yue's small mouth dropped, "[Destiny]'s Chinese sector's CEO is so young. One top of that, she's got such an awesome father..... Why, why is she looking for you? Did she fall for you? Or are you fooling around with her....."

I was speechless, "Originally I didn't know her either, alright? She just suddenly found me and said she wanted to talk business. It should be something related to the game."

Wan Er gripped her fist and firmly said, "Alright, Dong Cheng and I'll walk with you and go meet her later...."

"Okay....."

.....

Class ended not long after. I brought the two misses under the jealous glare of a group of male students through the school yard, and went to the second floor of Dio. I found a big table to sit at, and within 5 minutes, a "di di da da" sound of footsteps could be heard. All I could see was a beautiful girl wearing a suit and high heels walk over. In her hands, she held a folder of documents, and behind her was a man who was also dressed in a suit.

I stood up, and once she saw me, she walked straight towards me. She reached out her hand to shake mine and smiled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, hello, I am Ou Yang Nuo Yan....."

"Hello....."

Ou Yang Nuo Yan looked beside me and couldn't help but be surprised, "Oh, These two are.... I know! They are Fan Shu City's Cang Tong and Cang Yue, right? You guys are extremely famous characters on [Destiny]. To think that you guys are together with Xiao Yao Zi Zai....."

Wan Er blushed and said, "What do you mean by together....."

Dong Cheng Yue also blushed and said, “Yup, we are together indeed....”

I awkwardly coughed and asked, “Beautiful Ou Yang, for what do I owe this visit?”

Ou Yang Yan smoothly took a document out of her folder and lightly smiled. She concisely said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, not long ago you created an Emperor Qin’s Sword that has the [Kill for Blood] skill. After careful examination, we discovered that a bug appeared on [Destiny]’s system, as we didn’t create any restrictions for the [Kill for Blood]. A total of 5147 players have complained about your Emperor Qin’s Sword, and have requested that we take away this sword. Of those complaints, a few came from Jian Feng Han, Simple, Flying Dragon and other famous people in Ba Huang City.....”

“Take away Emperor Qin’s Sword?”

I slammed my hand against the table and coldly said, “That’s not possible.....”

Chapter 304: Compensation

“Why can’t we?”

“Why is it not possible?”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan also stood up, her eyes looking straight at me, “Emperor Qin’s Sword [Kill for Blood] hasn’t gone public. This has already broken the system’s balance. Just based on that point, you’ve already gotten an impressive reward from the City of the Ancients, and I won’t argue with you over that, but the Emperor Qin’s Sword can’t continue like this. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are number one amongst China’s elite. I hope that you understand the situation the company is in. We’re determined to protect the balance and fairness of the game. Neither the number one Swordsman, Jian Feng Han, or the number one Mage, Simple, have no way of fighting against your Emperor Qin’s Sword; that fact itself already demonstrates the problem.”

Behind Ou Yang Nuo Yan was a young male who wore a suit. He smiled and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just give up. Our CEO even personally came to Hangzhou for you, why don’t you give her some face?”

I thought about it, then nodded, “Ok, but I’ll only accept weakening the Emperor Qin’s Sword. I won’t accept returning the sword. This equipment came from my blood and sweat; I definitely won’t just give it to you because you said so.”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan let a sigh of relief and smiled, “Alright, then we’ll just weaken the Emperor Qin’s Sword!”

I sat down and politely motioned for her to sit too, “Come, let’s sit down to continue this discussion.....”

“Alright!”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan ordered a cup of coffee and wryly smiled as she opened up the folder and glanced through, “Our game’s engineering team has said that the Emperor Qin’s Sword is a Valkyrie Tier weapon, so its original attributes are already extremely strong. The best upper limit for

[Kill For Blood] is 50%, which means that after you kill 50 people, the [Kill For Blood] will not increase anymore....”

“What?”

I was stunned and said, “That gap is just too much. You have to give me something in return.....”

“What, you also want some compensation?” The black suited young man glared at me.

I glared right back and said, “What, does the gaming company want me to pay for a mistake that they made? Doesn’t [Destiny]’s company take pride in its reputation as being the most perfect game? Would a perfect game require a weak player to give up a weapon that had already come into his possession? I must be compensated, or else I’ll spread this news around, then invite a few writers to write out the story of this BUG into a 24 chapter book that will be spread throughout Tianqiao, Beijing. Then I’ll see how you guys would survive.....”

“This.....” Ou Yang Nuo Yan’s mouth twitched, and her beautiful eyes looked at me as she said, “It looks like Li Xiao Yao is definitely not a normal person. Alright then, compensation it is. We’ll weaken the Emperor Qin’s Sword and give it an upper limit of 50%, and we’ll give you 2 million RMB as compensation. This money will be transferred to your bank account in one hour. Does that satisfy you?”

I shook my head and said, “No, I don’t want a monetary compensation. I want a compensation through the game....”

“Oh.....?”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan slapped the table and stood up, glaring at me, “You bastard, don’t get too ahead of yourself. Exactly what kind of compensation do you want?”

I thought about it for a second then said, “Give the Emperor Qin’s Sword the ability to improve, and.... can be bound to the player so that it can’t be dropped.”

“Huh?”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan's mouth widened as she said, "That..... that isn't exactly suitable. In the set rules for [Destiny], only the Divine Tier and Epic God Tier swords have the ability to never be dropped. But for your Valkyrie Tier, no, it can't be done....."

I looked at her, and smiled, "What's wrong with that? You're the CEO of the Chinese sector. You have at least this much power. Hmph, such a simple fact..... even an elementary school student knows this much. Don't try to trick me!"

Ou Yang Nuo Yan gritted her teeth and said, "Alright then..... I'll give your Emperor Qin's Sword the ability to get stronger and never be dropped. But the most the sword can advance to is Saint Tier, no more than that!"

I said, "Nope, I want the kind that can advance to Epic God Tier....."

"That can definitely not be done. It can't be higher than Saint Tier; it can only advance once. Otherwise that will break the balance of the game....." Ou Yang Nuo Yan's voice began to tremble. It looks like she was starting to get emotional; her cheeks were turning red, and she had already lost her original composure as the CEO of [Destiny]'s China Sector.

Wan Er smiled as she looked up at Ou Yang Nuo Yan and said, "Beautiful Ou Yang, how about the highest advancement being Divine Tier? Otherwise, this guy, Li Xiao Yao, will definitely keep bothering you until he's satisfied. You have no idea, once when he was at the supermarket, he was able barter a 5 RMB/pound chicken to be 10RMB for a 3 pound chicken. He's especially sketchy when it comes to bartering. Sometimes even Dong Cheng can't take it....."

Although she was badmouthing me, I still gave her a grateful glance. A Divine Tier sword was second only to one, and it had four additional attributes. It was practically a godly weapon! Assuming that the Emperor Qin Sword's final advancement was a Divine Tier, hehe, then I'd have hit the jackpot!

.....

Ou Yang Nuo Yan bit on her lip, then hesitated for a while. Finally she looked at me and smiled apologetically, “Then..... please wait a moment, I’ll make a call to Central and ask. If it is okay, then we’ll just go with Beauty Cang Tong’s request....”

I nodded and smiled, “Yup, thank you Nuo Yan.....”

“No problem, you almost killed me.....”

“Haha.....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan turned around and pulled out her phone as she lowered her voice to talk for a bit. After a while, she turned back around and nodded as she smiled and said, “Yup, Central has agreed to the changes for Emperor Qin’s Sword. [Kill For Blood] will be limited to 50%. Also.... it can advance two times, and be bound to the player, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Is that enough?”

I nodded, then cautiously looked at Ou Yang Nuo Yan’s elegantly attractive face and asked, “For the second advancement, can I skip a stage of the advancement....”

“You’ve got enough.....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan glared at me, “If you skipped a level to advance, wouldn’t that mean that it’d advance to an Epic God Tier anyway? Hmph, the number of Epic God Tier equipments have been limited on the servers, how could we let you get one so easily? Besides, there were originally only a handful of Epic God Tier swords. Don’t even think about it, even I don’t have that kind of power.....”

I let out a laugh and said, “Alright, then I’ll just thank you beautiful Ou Yan for your help. This noon.... how about I invite you for lunch, are you willing to honor me with your presence?”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan nodded and said, “Alright....”

On one side, the black suited young man said in a low voice, “Chairman, this afternoon you still have a meeting.... the flight has already been scheduled. Besides, your father has already said that he doesn’t want you getting to know any of the players, since he’s afraid this might warrant

some misunderstandings.”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan looked up at the young man, then suddenly laughed and said, “Do I seem like the type to come out and relax with people like Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong and Cang Yue all the time? Besides, if you don’t say anything, my dad won’t know. Ok, it’s settled. Change the flight to 2:30, I want to eat lunch in Hangzhou..... Don’t you go tattling, or else you’re doomed for sure”

The young man helplessly nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll do as you say, since you’re the boss....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan proudly smiled and looked towards us, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the apples of his eyes, how about you take me out for lunch?”

I pointed at the street across from the store and said, “How about Xiang Wei Gan? It’s a famous local restaurant. Their cooking skills are definitely top notch.....”

“Alright, since you’re the host, I’ll follow your arrangements!”

“Yup!”

.....

After going down the stairs, I accompanied the young [Destiny]’s China CEO, and entered Xiang Wei Gan. I chose a VIP room, then I, Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Ou Yang Nuo Yan fit perfectly around one table. The young government officials were extremely reserved; they probably never had the chance to eat with a CEO in Beijing before, and were all so nervous their ears were burning.

To break the ice, I raised up my juice cup and smiled, “Come, lets make a toast.....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan chuckled and said, “Sure.....”

Following that, I said, “Ou Yang Beauty seems to be around 20 years old right? How amazing..... for someone so young to already have become [Destiny]’s Chinese branch’s CEO. Look at the two next to me, they’re also 20 years old but are still just girls, who always ditch class and by the

end of the week have to remediate at least three classes. Just thinking about their futures makes my head ache....”

Wan Er blushed and lightly punched me as she said, “Bastard, when have I ever had to take remedial class? Hehe, watch me get 7 A’s, that will scare you to death.....”

Dong Cheng Yue added, “Exactly, Brother Xiao Yao, you’re such an ass. How could Wan Er and I skip classes? We’re definitely getting 7 A’s. Unlike other people who are fated to get 7 Z’s.....”

With that tantrum from the two girls, Ou Yang Nuo Yan’s subjects began to laugh. The atmosphere in the room felt much less tense.

“I’m really not that much.....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan laughed and said, “When I was really small, I learned management with my father. I’m sitting in this spot because he was one of [Destiny]’s founders, and plus.... these beauties, Cang Tong and Cang Yue, are not simple girls. Lin Wan Er has clearly experienced much in her life, and has so much popularity in Asia. On top of that, Cang Tong’s father is Lin Tian Nan, haha, I don’t need to say much else; everyone already gets it. How can a game’s sector match with an empire? As for beauty Cang Yue.....”

Dong Cheng Yue looked down and said, “I beg you, don’t say it. I don’t have that big of a background. Wu wu, I’m just the neighborhood girl....”

Ou Yang Nuo Yan gave a short laugh and said, “Yea right, if you count as a neighborhood girl, then that’s one neighborhood full of little miss perfects.....”

I looked at the table full of dishes and said, “Let’s just hurry up and eat, I’m dying from starvation.....”

“Alright, Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s paying, so we have to eat a lot!”

.....

And thus, we ate while talking about [Destiny]. Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were both extremely clever girls, and managed to steal some

secrets about the game from Ou Yang Nuo Yan. Although Ou Yang Nuo Yan had been extremely careful, she still ended up leaking quite a bit. Even her cheeks had started to glow red, knowing that her opponents were much more cunning than herself.

At around one o'clock, we sent Ou Yang Nuo Yan and her group of people out of downtown Hangzhou.

I brought the two girls out to the streets and began to head back.

“Beep beep.....”

My cell phone suddenly started to beep; it was a call from Wolf—

“Brother Xiao Yao, something’s happened!”

“What’s wrong, Little Wolf?”

Wolf anxiously said, “That motherf*cker, [Wrath of the Heroes] is trying to take our Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands back!”

Chapter 305: Tang Xue's First Love

“What exactly happened?”

Once I heard that there was someone who wanted to steal Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, I panicked. She was our number one Mage. In addition to Dancing Forest and Lian Po, the three of them made up [Zhan Long]'s Big Three Mages in terms of firepower. If Thousand Suns was taken, there would be a gaping hole in our Mage team. Since Dong Cheng Yue won't join for another ten or so days, it would be extremely hard for us to get by for the next week. Besides, Thousand Suns was one of us; what right did [Wrath of the Heroes] have for taking her?

Wolf heavily said, “Brother Xiao Yao, [Wrath of the Heroes] has been very empiric lately. They have been stealing elites from other guilds, no matter the costs. In addition to Sonata, Heart of Fire, and Drunken Cold Rain, they've also taken a dozen or so of CBN's top 5000 players from Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City. They've finally moved on to steal from the guilds of Ba Huang City. His first target is probably to steal our [Zhan Long]'s Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. This wouldn't have originally been a problem, but..... but he brought a person. It seems he was her first love in real life... I'm so worried!”

I asked, “Where's Thousand Suns right now?”

“Ba Huang City, Butterfly Forest. Come quickly;. I'm here with Old K, Fox, and Matcha!”

“Okay...”

.....

After I hung up, Lin Wan Er blinked a few times as she looked at me and having guessed most of it, asked, “There's someone who wants to steal [Zhan Long]'s Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands?”

“Yea....” I made a fist, “It's [Wrath of the Heroes]'s people. It won't be strange if it was Little Piggy's idea..... motherf*cker, Little Piggy is indeed quite a character, committing all of [Wrath of the Heroes]'s crimes. To

think that he found Thousand Sun's first boyfriend in real life. I don't even know what we should do now. Besides, we're only her guild in the game, compared to her lover, it's obvious who's more important....."

Wan Er kept smiling, then turned around and slapped my shoulder, "I guess it's time our Brother Xiao Yao showed off his charm. Thousand Suns isn't that old, how charming can her boyfriend be? You're Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Ba Huang City's Number 1....."

Dong Cheng Yue wryly smiled and said, "That's right, that's right. Brother Xiao Yao is undefeated! You need to show off your smooth charm and steal Thousand Suns back. Wan Er and I will become [Zhan Long]'s sooner or later, but we don't want to join a guild whose main players have been stolen....."

I nodded, "Yup, I'll do my best. I just really don't know how I should keep Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands....."

Wan Er rubbed her lip, then chuckled, "Honesty. There's really no other better way. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands is a smart girl, she'll definitely realize that everyone in [Zhan Long] truly want her to stay....."

"Yea, I'll go and try. You two should also go back... there's still 17 days until you two join [Zhan Long]...

"Okay!"

.....

I ran straight to my room and quickly got online!

"Shua!"

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City. With the Emperor Qin's Sword on my back, I rushed straight out of the city and ran towards Butterfly Forest. At the same time I scanned the stats on my Emperor Qin Sword. The agreement from this afternoon had been completed, and the sword's stats had already been changed. I couldn't put my finger on it, but I could tell that the strength of the sword had definitely been extremely weakened. The 500% [Kill for Blood] that I had gotten at the City of the Ancients would never happen again. I knew, however, that in the future,

the sword still had a ways to grow to its strongest, especially since it could advance tiers twice. This implied that for a very long time this sword would remain one of the strongest. Even now, the Emperor Qin's Sword was already extremely strong. Once it evolved, it would become even stronger and still be superior. This was a good thing.

[Emperor Qin's Sword+7] (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1400-1850 (+490-648)

Strength: +70

Endurance: +68

Magic Attack: +65

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 17%

Additional: Neglects 25% of the target's defense

Bonus: Will never break/dull. Using this sword will never dull the sword

Bonus: Has a 10% chance of dealing a strike with superior damage

Bonus: Bound to the player Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Cannot be dropped. Can Evolve

Special Skill: [Kill for Blood]. For every player that is killed, the weapon's attack will increase by 1%, Cap: 50%, The effect will reset when the player goes offline

Description: In the ancient times there lived an emperor that was both kind and known to all under the heavens. His saber was named Long Quan but in the midst of a fierce battle, it snapped in half. The broken pieces were then buried into the ground, staying there for countless generations. At last the broken sword has been unearthed and still contains the vast powers of the emperor. This sword would be known to the future generations as the king of swords and after the previous owner of the sword as Emperor Qin's Sword.

Requirement Level: 65

.....

As expected, after the sword evolved, even the required level would rise. Yup, it was truly exceptional!

Now that I looked again, my base attack was 2914-3878, and with all of my equipment, my attack had been raised by a total of 44%. The sword raised 10%, plus the 7% from the [Kill for Blood]. In reality, I could raise my attack by 111%, and at my highest peak, my attack would be around 6148-8182. Compared to the 500% increase I had from the [Kill for Blood] it was miniscule, but even at my present state, I was still amongst the elites. I definitely had enough to kill people like Wang Ze Cheng, Jian Feng Han, and Don't be Foolish, and make their lives difficult.

After a few minutes, a forest of butterfly bushes appeared in front of me. It was my destination, Butterfly Forest!

Around 200 people had gathered in the middle of the forest. Half of them were from [Wrath of the Heroes], whereas the other half were from [Zhan Long]. All of [Zhan Long]'s officers were there, as well as Liu Yin, Piggy, Sonata, Heart of Fire, and Drunken Rain from [Wrath of the Heroes]. All of the experts were present, and both sides nervously gripped their weapons!

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai has come!”

In the distance, Little Piggy's eyes turned cold as he looked in my direction and said, “Let's see what he says!”

Unhurriedly, I walked forward. I raised up my palm and a summoning circle was formed, as my Flaming Tiger God appeared behind me. He softly roared and shook his shiny, crimson and gold fur. He displayed the demeanor of the King of Beasts and followed beside me. It looked as if the beast was accumulating his strength, ready to attack at any moment.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Wolf picked up his dagger and walked up to me and said, “You've finally arrived!”

I nodded and walked to the center between the two guilds, only to find

that Thousand Suns stood there as well with her staff in hand. She was covered in quality Mage gear and had enough power to put her in the top 3 Mages of Ba Huang City. Even [Flying Dragon]'s Guild Master, Soaring Dragon, was ranked below her. This was also one of the reasons that [Wrath of the Heroes] wanted to steal her.

In front of Thousand Suns there was a young Swordsman who was around 24 years old, Lv 62, ID: Dawn Hero. He was covered in a purple glow and looked to have at least 4 Purple Tier equipments. He could even be considered a mid-high level player. He stared intently at Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and lovingly said, "Little Snow, I know that I was in the wrong at first, I shouldn't have left without a word. By the time I had finally realized what I was doing, it was already too late. For the past 2 years since then, I have been looking all over for the world that had you in it....."

Yue Qing Qian softly said, "Don't use such cliché words, they all sound so fake....."

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands silently stood there. Her eyes were swollen and red, as tears welled up in her eyes while she looked at Dawn Hero. Her voice shook with emotion as she said, "Did you know how much I loved you back then? For you, I was willing to give up everything. Whatever dreams I had, I would give it all up just to be with you. I.... I even became a waitress and a cashier for you. I did all of the dirty work, but I didn't regret any of it, because I loved you. But..... but the day that you disappeared, my heart died along with you....."

Dawn Hero's face was full of grief as he said, "Little Snow, you....."

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands looked up as a tear rolled down her cheek, and she said, "You shouldn't have appeared. You shouldn't have pulled at the heart that used to love you. That just won't work. The one I loved was the old you. But that you has already died, and the one standing in front of me is an entirely new you who has experienced completely different things. You are now a complete stranger to me."

Dawn Hero raised his sword and said, "But now that I've come back, I

want to make things right. Give me another chance, I'll do whatever I can to make you happy. I know that you're not happy in [Zhan Long], especially since Xiao Yao Zi Zai only cares about his own people. He only cares about people like Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, and Old K. They.... they've never treated you as their own....."

"Shut up!"

Old K lifted his battle axe, walked forwards, and roared, "We've always thought of Thousand Suns as our own sister. What right do you have to criticize us? Bastard, as someone who left her before then suddenly appeared before her again, what kind of sh*t do you call yourself? Would a good man be able to do something like that?"

One Second Hero also picked up his spear and angrily said, "That's right! You're a disgrace to the word Hero that's in your ID. Are you even fit to have it?"

Dawn Hero also became agitated and said, "You!"

.....

"Sha sha....."

My Divine Battle Boots brushed against the grass as I slowly walked forward. I pulled out the Emperor Qin's Sword behind me. "Pa!" I stabbed it into the grass between me and Dawn Hero. I stood beside Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and levelly said, "I am [Zhan Long]'s Guild Master. Tang Xue was invited by me to our guild. I, Li Xiao Yao, can't promise anything else, but I can boldly say to the entire world that for the rest of my life, I will not let [Zhan Long] turn its back on Tang Xue. For the rest of my life, I will never let Tang Xue suffer any injustice or grievance. Anyone who wants to bully her would have to do it over my dead body! Whether it is in a game or if it is in real life, I and [Zhan Long] will protect her. She's our Tang Xue, she's our friend!"

"Guild Master....."

Thousand Suns over Snow Lands' staff fell to the ground as her eyes filled up with tears and she mumbled, "Boss I'm sorry, I made you do

something so hard..... II ...”

I turned around to look at her and smiled, “Little Snow, I respect your choice. Whether you leave [Zhan Long] or stay here, you’ll always be my friend, that’s all there is to it....”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands stood there, and motionlessly stared at me. Suddenly she smiled as the Flaming Tiger God rubbed against her leg. A small flame wrapped around the two of us. She looked up and blinked her large eyes at me. She completely let go of her staff, and with a bang, the fire began to rise to the sky and the earth seemed to shiver. Her gaze become more resolutely and she loudly said, “From the day I joined [Zhan Long], I had made them my friends, and I had made Xiao Yao Zi Zai my Guild Master. He’s always been just like a brother, like a geyser of trust and strength to me. His strength, his courage, his charm and his loyalty are all my conviction. I, Tang Xue, am one of [Zhan Long]’s people, and until they don’t want me anymore, I will never leave them!”

One Second Hero clapped his hands and laughed: “Alright! There’s our [Zhan Long]’s team leader!”

.....

Tyrant of Western Liu Ying’s face turned dark, and he said nothing.

Little Piggy quickly ran to Dawn Hero and softly said, “Dawn, you can come back now..... It’s time to lessen our losses. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands doesn’t love you anymore, you’re already in the past.”

Dawn Hero gripped his long sword and yelled out, “No, it can’t be.....”

Chapter 306: I Miss you

“Little Snow!”

Dawn Hero rushed forward a few steps and suddenly grabbed onto Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ hand and said, “I won’t let you stay in [Zhan Long] by yourself. I’ll definitely keep you by my side, I.....”

Thousand Suns’ beautiful eyes reflected her disgust as she said, “We already have nothing to do with each other, go away.....”

“No, Little Snow, let me explain.....”

.....

“Pa.....”

A strong hand grabbed onto Dawn Hero’s shoulder. Li Mu’s eyes had turned cold, with just a little strength he pulled Dawn Hero’s hand away and coldly said, “Back off. Tang Xue is one of [Zhan Long]’s people. Just try and touch her.....”

“What.... what kind of sh*t are you?!”

Dawn Hero suddenly became furious. He abruptly unsheathed his long sword, and swung it down towards Li Mu’s shoulder.

“Sha sha.....”

My Divine Battle Boots brushed against the ground, and I suddenly appeared in front of Li Mu. I raised my right arm, and a “Bang” resounded as the other party’s sword collided with my shoulder armor. The Magic Spite Armor glowed a faint indigo color and greatly decreased the strength of the attack. At the same time, a 571 damage number flew out. As expected, Dawn Hero’s attack was not low.

My body slightly dipped, and I lifted up my leg to throw a fierce kick at him!

“Bang!”

“1427 ! ”

Dawn Hero cried out in pain as he was kicked into his chest, sending him sliding backwards in the grass 5 meters away. With a whimper, he knelt to the ground. Although his armor wasn't bad, mine was still far superior; my strength was light years better than his.

I looked at Dawn Hero and indifferently said, "Tang Xue is now one of [Zhan Long]'s people. If you dare touch a single strand of hair on her head, then I'll make sure you won't even be able to take a step into Ba Huang City. If any guild wants to cover for you, then I, as well as [Zhan Long], will pull you and your guild out of this city. I, Li Xiao Yao, am faithful on my word. If you don't believe me, just try to test me!"

"You!"

Dawn Hero's face paled, and he weakly stood up. The sword in his hand began to shake as he said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, don't meddle in other people's affairs. This wasn't even a problem to begin with!"

I bit down and reached to pull out my Emperor Qin's Sword. I glanced over at Liu Ying and Little Piggy then roared, "Liu Ying, if you don't control the people in your guild, don't blame me if I teach him a lesson!"

Liu Ying gritted his teeth and tightly gripped his knuckles, "Dawn, come back!"

Little Piggy rushed over and reached out to grab Dawn Hero's wrist, and said a hushed voice, "Give up, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands is no longer interested in you. You're not the boy from the past, and she's not the naive little girl from the beginning either. Everyone matures and becomes strangers. Give up on this woman, she doesn't love you...."

Dawn Hero's eyes were red and swollen as he said, "Little Piggy Brother, but I.... but I...."

"Don't say anymore, let's go. I know Xiao Yao Zi Zai's character very well; he really won't have any mercy when he fights...."

"Then.... then alright...."

.....

All of the people from [Wrath of the Heroes] turned around and began to go to their own practice grounds. Liu Ying picked up his sword and looked at me as he said, “Li Xiao Yao, this was a small misunderstanding. I hope you don’t take this to heart.”

I wryly smiled and said, “How could I, Liu Classmate? I know very well what kind of a person you are. When the time comes that we have to fight, I’ll do my best not to say much.”

“Ok.....”

As I watched the people from [Wrath of the Heroes] leave one by one, I also sheathed my Emperor Qin’s Sword and looked at Thousand Suns next to me. I lightly smiled and patted her shoulder as I said, “Tang Xue, you should think more openly about this. In any person’s life, who hasn’t loved a few scum...”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands nodded and said, “Yea. Guild Master, I’m so sorry. I didn’t think that I’d bring so much trouble to the guild.....”

I laughed and said, “It’s nothing. Just think of this as a guild practice drill. Besides, you’re one of us. Your business is everyone’s business. Not to mention it was [Wrath of the Heroes]. In reality, we’ve already declared our guilds to be enemies; it’s just that now, Tyrant of Western Chu already knows that he’s not our equal. Once [Wrath of the Heroes] actually rises up, then the first one he’ll want to deal with is [Hero’s Mound]’s First Division, and then it’ll be our [Zhan Long].....”

On the side, Lian Po wryly smiled and said, “Looks like... our Guild Master hasn’t gotten drunk on victory yet. Indeed, that’s the reality of the situation. The more talented a person is, the more hate they’ll receive. [Zhan Long] is the same; the stronger we are, the more jealous hatred we’ll get. The only way to deal with it is to become stronger, so strong that others would tremble and acknowledge their defeat. That’s the only way [Zhan Long] will never fall on the Chinese server.....”

“Yup, Uncle’s right!”

I looked towards Matcha, “Next, what plans does the guild have?”

Matcha was one of [Zhan Long]'s four elders, and her position was the same as Wolf's or Li Mu's. There was a lot of events that she had organized, and she was equivalent to almost half of a Vice Guild Master. She looked through the calendar, then lifted her head and smiled, "There are 7 strategic goals today. Of those, there are 4 that are Purple Tier BOSSes, and 3 Emperor Tier BOSSes. We've already sent people over to fulfill these tasks. Afterwards, we'll disperse in Green Unicorn Valley to grind levels and complete quests. Recently there's a branch of NPC corps from Ba Huang City that are stationed in Green Qilin Valley, and they give a lot of experience. Also....."

Matcha contemplated for a second, then said, "There are also quite a few players that aren't from [Zhan Long] that have been entering Green Qilin Valley to grind. Boss, what should we do about this?"

I waved my hand and said, "Green Qilin Valley's so big, and the monsters respawn quickly. They could just be working on a quest. Solo players and groups under 100 people can enter as they please, but players from big guilds are restricted, especially [Hero's Mound] and [Flying Dragon]. If any players from those guilds try to enter, then kill them all!"

"Yup, got it....."

.....

With nothing to do, the group of [Zhan Long] people went to grind levels and increase the guild experience. Presently, we were already a Level 4 guild. Our players were split up into: Guild Max: 3000 people, Guild Members: 2977 people, Online Members: 2218. It looked like [Zhan Long] was really starting to rise up in Ba Huang City. We already had over 2000+ people, and it was only mid-day. In the afternoon or at night, perhaps we'd get over 2500 people online. Like this, [Zhan Long]'s 2500 elite could go out to battle at anytime. That was true battle power. Even [Vanguard] and [Prague] couldn't ignore our existence anymore!

I picked up the Emperor Qin's Sword and brought my Flaming Tiger God through Ba Huang Forest. This time, our destination was—Dragon City. It had already been a long time since I went to find my master, Frost.

I had been extremely busy recently, so she should have some quests to give me.

The Flaming Tiger God played around as it walked through the forest. Sometimes it would leap, other times it would crawl, and sometimes it would even get ready to pounce. Its two ears would sometime twitch, demonstrating that besides its imposing looks, it also had a few points of cuteness as well. On top of its head, the two words Cang Tong were extremely clear. Looking at them, I unconsciously smiled and couldn't help but open my friend list. Seeing Cang Tong Beauty's ID was lit up, I sent a message, "Wan Er....."

"Yes?" Wan Er replied, "What's up?"

"I miss you...."

"Too fake!"

"Really....."

"Then come to Fan Shu City to see me....."

"I'm too busy....." I smiled into the phone.

Wan Er's picture showed a slight lovable mischievousness, "Hehe, everyone's been saying that if you really miss a person, no matter if there was a thousand mountains and a million rivers to cross, you'd still go to meet her. That's enough to show that you're lying. You don't actually miss me...."

"But, we just left each other 30 minutes ago...."

"Eh....." Lin Wan Er began to blush and said, "Ah, it seems to be that way..... Wu, I'm not talking with you anymore. Dong Cheng is pulling me really hard. I need to do my work; you're already Lv 70 and I'm only Lv 69, so I've fallen behind....."

"That's no problem. These days I'll just be doing a few quests and wait for you. Good luck on grinding! It's also getting close to when you and Dong Cheng join [Zhan Long]....."

"I know, I've been prepared at every moment....."

“Yup, good.....”

.....

Just as I was turning off my communications, Wan Er's picture looked at me. Her large eyes fluttered for a moment, while her lips turned upwards as she smiled at me. Watching it made my own heart flutter. Too bad the moment passed too quickly. I didn't have enough time to relish the moment, but at the same time, I was too embarrassed video call again. I could only regretfully make a fist and said, “Stupid hand, why'd you close it so quickly!”

I climbed mountains and crossed rivers, and not long afterwards, I finally arrived at Dragon City. With my sword on my back, I stood at the bottom of the city wall. Before I needed to say anything, a rope was thrown down for me. I grabbed onto it and lightly climbed to the top. My level had increased quite a bit and thus my strength had also increased. A simple task like climbing, had become easier than before.

“Pa!”

I softly landed on the pile of snow within the city wall. On one side, a Dragon City soldier rushed over to welcome me. He held one hand over his chest and said, “Mr Xiao Yao Zi Zai, are you here to see Ms. Frost?”

I was slightly puzzled. It seems as though since Frost had taken me in as her student, my position in Dragon City had also risen. Although I was still just a Dragon City Night Watch, my status was vastly different from that of a normal Dragon City soldier.

I nodded and said, “Yes. Where is Frost?”

The soldier pointed towards the East and said, “Ms. Frost is in that observation tower. Every night at nightfall, she stares into the distance by herself. No one dares to disturb her. Mister, how about you wait for a bit?”

I shook my head and said, “No need, I'll go look for her!”

“Alright!”

.....

I braced myself against the wind and sleet as I climbed up the tower, step by step, to the high observation deck. The observation deck's area was extremely wide, and there were piles of snow everywhere. In the midst of the blizzard, a lone body stood on one side of the observation deck. Under her feet was a deep abyss, but she didn't seem scared at all. Behind her, the wind danced, revealing her snowy white legs while her battle boots glowed a faint silver. The wind revealed a sword at her hip amidst her battle robe, safely sheathed away. Her long locks flowed with the wind. The scene evoked a strong sense of a traveler's nostalgia and grief.

“Sha sha....”

My Divine Battle Boots stepped across the snow as I arrived beside Frost. I turned around to look at her. Snowflakes had landed on her long eyelashes as she blinked into the distance in the curtain of night; there was only darkness.

“Frost, what are you looking at?” I asked.

Frost continued to look into the distance, then softly said, “I'm looking... looking North of Dragon City. I'm looking.....looking at the direction of where our soldiers are guarding, and watching.....watching the possibility of all of them being killed. When will they appear, and when will they start to attack Dragon City? Exactly when will the war between the Seven Great Kingdoms start?

I stared blankly, “But I don't see anything...”

Frost smiled, “There will come a day when you can see it.”

Chapter 307: This place is too big

“How long has it been since we last met?” Frost softly said as she looked into the distance.

I thought for a moment, “Around half a month.”

“Half a month huh.....” Frost let out a sigh and her lips twitched into a smile as she said, “Time passes so quickly. It’s almost as though I haven’t seen anything else but the revival of Dragon City. “

I glanced around, and noticed that there was a bandage wrapped around her shoulder. There was even quite a bit of blood on it and thus I asked, “That..... who gave you that wound?”

Frost tilted her head and looked at me, “Oh, its nothing. I was just shot by an arrow. It was at a fight a week ago in the east part of the wilderness. Our reinforcements were attacked by a group of cowardly Thorn people. They were covered in sharp thorns, so they were hard to deal with, and there were over ten thousand of them....”

I asked, “Then how did you guys win against them?”

Frost smiled, as her beautiful eyes carried a hint of ruthlessness as she said, “We led them into a desolated valley, then burned them all to the ground. That way, they wouldn’t be able to cause any trouble for Dragon City’s Reinforcements....”

I shivered and said, “That.....”

“Is that too cruel?” Frost turned around and smiled at me, her eyes completely cold, “For the sake of the rise of Dragon City, I’ve already sold my soul. For the sake of Dragon City, I’ll do whatever it takes, even if it means that I have to become a cold-blooded killer. I’m willing to do anything.”

I fell into deep thought and sat down on the side of the observation deck. My Emperor Qin’s Sword lay across my lap as I looked into the distance.

Frost looked at me and said, “What, do you think I’m too lowly for you

now? Do you.... do you want to leave me now?"

I said, "I won't."

"Why not?"

"Because I've said before: if you accept me, then I'll use my life to protect Dragon City and protect you. That will never change in this lifetime."

"That will never change in this lifetime.... never change in this lifetime....."

Frost knit her brows together and said nothing more. She just stood at my side.

.....

A few minutes later, Frost suddenly became alert. Her battle boots softly treaded on the snow as her body slowly drifted across the ground. Her beautiful eyes carried her battle spirit as she said, "Who is it! Get out here right now!"

"Frost, it's me!"

From the air, a grey silhouette softly jumped down. It was a young general that carried a sword, clothed in an exquisite armor. His pair of deep black eyes reflected a playful look within them.

The person who came was none other than Luo Lin, Dragon City's Earl, and our true commander.

Frost quickly knelt to the ground and said, "Mr. Luo Lin, please forgive your underling for being so disrespectful!"

Luo Lin nodded and said, "Please rise, it's no big deal!"

Frost said, "Mister, aren't you discussing important matters in the main hall? Why..... why did you come to the observation deck all by yourself? It's extremely cold here, you should go back....."

Luo Lin laughed and said, "Frost, did you forget that I had also started off as a scout like you? In the past, there were numerous cold nights when

we had to go out into the sea of snow and kill violent beasts. What's this little observation deck count as? I came out in the middle of the night to work out my bones and muscles, as well as to clear my head a bit....."

Frost was stunned, "Mister, is there anything worrying you?"

Luo Lin nodded and said, "Yup, just this afternoon, one branch of Dragon City's cavalry was attacked in the Ba Huang Wilderness. Seven people were killed and we lost nine of our battle horses. Even the team's leader, Aike, died in battle. He was a boy that I had brought from the town, and I was feeling a little guilty...."

"What?!"

Frost made a fist and angrily said, "Who dares to attack our recon cavalry troops?"

Luo Lin took a deep breath and said, "It was Ba Lin's Unsullied Cavalry under the Wolf Clan's Soul Devourer City's duke in Ice Ridge Mountain!"

"The Unsullied Cavalry?"

"Yes." Luo Lin's face was heavy as he said, "Unsullied Cavalry. It's a rare type of land based army. Every Unsullied soldier must be an orphan, and on the day they are born, they must be castrated. That way, they'll lose all of their desires and will become stronger. Ba Lin that old bastard dug out a few wolf dens from outside of the city, and obtained over a thousand ice wolf cubs. He's trained those ice wolves to become mounts, and has thus created a formidable Unsullied cavalry. They don't feel any pain, and they only follow the orders of Ba Lin. Legend has it that whoever has Ba Lin's sword can command that branch of one thousand Unsullied!

Frost's beautiful eyes glowed, "Mister, you mean that...."

"Exactly!" Luo Lin waved his fist and smiled, "Dragon City is now facing danger from both the North and the West, so we need to quickly rebuild our strength. I plan to assign every soldier that is above rank 7 to attack the Soul Devourer City, kill Ba Lin, and steal his sword. That way, I can command the one thousand Unsullied soldiers and turn them into Dragon City's army, which would follow only Dragon City's orders!"

Frost narrowed her eyes and said, "Mister, is obtaining the Unsullied really that pressing of a matter?"

Luo Lin nodded and said, "Our battle with the Dark Dwarves had resulted in many losses. The three great cities can't assign any more elite battle students to join the ranks of Dragon City. The recruitment posters that we've posted in each city have been ripped within minutes of being put up. There's no other way, we can only choose the path where we will gain more soldiers, and what better way is there than to obtain the Unsullied? Plus the ice wolves are extremely sturdy and they run extremely fast, which gives them a great impact force. They're the best way to deal with the Dark Dwarves."

"But..... If we assign so many soldiers to Soul Devourer City, we'll definitely receive many losses. Instead of that...."

Frost's clear eyes brought out her battle intent as she said, "How about you just let me go? I can sneak into Soul Devourer City without a sound, kill Ba Lin, steal his sword, and bring the Unsullied army to Dragon City. Mister just needs to send down the rope....."

"You..... can you really do it?"

"May master please have trust in me!" Frost knelt to the ground.

Luo Lin grunted and suddenly looked towards me as he said, "Then I'll leave this to you, Frost. You are our Dragon City's Dragon Knight Lieutenant. You are also my most trusted general. Why don't you bring your student along, maybe that little brat can help with something?"

"Huh?" Panic flashed through Frost's eyes and she said, "Mister, it can't be done. He.... his experience is too little. Soul Devourer City's King Ba Lin is extremely cruel. If something goes wrong....."

I stood up and softly said, "Frost, don't say anything more. I'll go with you. I don't want you to go to that sort of a place by yourself anyway!"

Frost made a fist and lowered her voice as she said, "Idiot, you'll die!"

I picked up my sword and said, "I won't. Besides, even if I die, it should be enough in exchange for your chance to live....."

“You.....”

Frost gave a deep sigh, then smiled and said, “Alright. Pack up your things and set off with me!”

“I’m ready whenever you are.....”

“Then....” Frost looked up at the sky. A snowflake fell onto her cheek and she said, “Then let’s leave now, while the sun isn’t up yet. We’ll go to Soul Devourer City and take the power to command the Unsullied!”

“Alright!”

.....

“Ding!”

[System Notification]: You have accepted an SS level quest [Seize the Authority]!

Quest Details: Head to northwest of Ba Huang City to Soul Devourer City, assisted by [Frost – Magnificent], and kill the city’s King Ba Lin. Also take his sword and give the authority to command 1000 Unsullied to Dragon City’s Duke Luo Lin. After this quest is complete, you will receive an extremely generous reward!

.....

Awesome, an SS quest. The experience and equipment would be extremely good. Not to mention the fact that there’d at least be a +5 charm increase. However, there was a condition that Frost couldn’t die, or else everything would be over.

As I stood on a side of the observation deck I said, “Should we climb the long way down from the side?”

“No need....”

Frost walked up to me, then wrapped a hand around my armor and said, “Hold on tight!”

“Ok!”

Reaching out, I hugged onto my beautiful teacher’s perfumed shoulder.

At that moment a delicate fragrance wafted towards me. I didn't even have time to enjoy the smell before Frost suddenly rushed down the city wall. Her shoes stepped upon miniature cycles of air flow, and just like a snowflake dancing in the air, she landed at the bottom of Dragon City. Although it wasn't actual flight, it was not too different from the experience.

The two of us steadily landed onto the ground. Frost looked at me and smiled, "You can let go of me now...."

"Oh, sorry..."

I quickly let go. Frost then smiled and said, "There's no need to apologize. Shall we head out?"

"Yup!"

I began running into the distance, following Frost, even though she had purposely walked a bit slower to wait for me. Her battle robes flowed behind her. Running with such a beautiful teacher was quite an enjoyable experience!

After half an hour, we could see a black city in the distant plains. Behind it was the towering Ice Ridge Mountain. This city was practically parallel to Dragon City, able to survive the harsh conditions of the environment. It was clear that the city's master had the means to complete such a feat.

"Be careful!"

Frost immediately rushed before me to shield me. Her hand seemed to grasp the air and "Pa!", she had grabbed onto an arrow that was shot in my direction. The arrowhead was even releasing a cold glow; it was absolutely terrifying!

I scanned the area. The attack had come from the bushes, where a soldier was riding a great white wolf. This was the legendary Unsullied, a Lv 75 Phantom Tier monster! I reached out and activated [Binding Chains], and "Pa!" I bound the giant wolf to the ground. I opened my hand again and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Bang!”

“3517 ! ”

Frost lifted her sword and walked over, “Make it quick, don’t let this create too much sound!”

I waved my Emperor Qin’s Sword and activated a [Combo], taking away another chunk of the Unsullied’s health. With a small wave of Frost’s sword, “Ka Cha”, the soldier’s head had flown off. Blood spurted everywhere, and the body even jerked a few times.

.....

I looked towards the city and Frost gave a deep sigh as she said, “Let’s kill another Unsullied. We can put on their clothes to infiltrate the city. Otherwise there’s no way we can penetrate the center to get to Ba Lin.”

“Ok.”

As we walked forward, there was another Unsullied that was beheaded by Frost. I pulled on its cloak and helmet. Since the Magic Spite Armor was already black, it was already similar enough to the Unsullied outfit, so I didn’t need to cover anything. As for the wolf mounts, there was no need. My level was not high enough to ride any mounts. The settings for players and NPCs were different. For a Lv 75 mount, players had to be Lv 100 to ride it; there was no such thing as fairness.

.....

“Shua.....”

Black robes flew behind Frost, revealing the entire set of Unsullied armor she was wearing underneath. She looked at me and I looked back at her.

“What’s wrong? Does something not look right?” She asked.

I pointed towards her ample chest and said, “That’s..... too big....”

At that moment, Frost’s cheeks grew red. However, she quickly regained her calm and said, “Don’t worry, I’ll use a chest plate cover to cover it up. People most likely won’t notice, don’t worry....”

Chapter 308: Like a Lamb in a Tiger's Den

Under the curtain of the night, I stood at the edge of a thorn brush covered in black robes with my glossy Emperor Qin's Sword in hand. There were only a hundred or so meters between me and the Soul Devourer City. If I went any closer, I would definitely be seen by one of the archers that stood guard. Although I wore the clothes of the Unsullied, I still wasn't sure whether or not the NPC monsters would be able to recognize me.

"Look over there...."

Frost pointed towards the west and said, "There's a group of people coming...."

I looked over and indeed, there was a caravan with four big carts filled with supplies. There was also equipment, food, and even women. A group of wind elf women were caged in the middle of a cart. Their wings had been broken, and their bodies were covered in blood. Terrified, they could only watch and wait, unsure of what awaited them as they cried through the cloths that covered their mouths.

"They should go die....."

Frost made a fist and bit down as she said, "These dirty aristocrats..... to think that they would capture the wind elves in Ba Huang City to take advantage of their bodies....."

I furrowed my brows and said, "Frost, remember what Luo Lin said before? Weren't the Unsullied within Soul Devourer City castrated from birth to prevent these types of desires?"

"That's right." Frost's eyes carried killing intent as she said, "But Ba Lin that old f*cker is still healthy. Besides, he has four sons, and has some under-the-table connections with the aristocrats in Jiu Li City. He goes around selling beautiful wind elves, human, and moon elf women to get gold. For the sake of money, Ba Lin became a fiend. He is the tyrant that rests near Ba Huang City, with an army at his hand and a greed without boundaries. Even Duke Luo Lei can't control him."

I tilted my head as I looked into the distance and said, “What are we waiting for? We should hurry over and mix into the crowd....”

“Huh? How do we mix in?”

“Just follow my lead!”

I reached out and took Frost’s hand and pulled her out of the brambles. Frost struggled for a second, then obediently let herself be pulled by me. She dipped her head to hide her burning cheeks, but I didn’t pay any attention. I focused on the escorting Unsullied that sat on their ice wolves as they wordlessly proceeded.

“Hey!”

Suddenly, a halberd wielding Unsullied reigned in his mount and commanded it to rush over. He raised his halberd and yelled out, “Those two people over there, where did your mounts go?”

I looked at the Unsullied and on his shoulder was an insignia with a C on it. He was probably some kind of ranked military leader. Thus I made an angry face and said, “Don’t mention it. When we were at the eastern wilderness scouting, there were a few barbarians that mounted a sneak-attack on us. Our ice wolves were killed. Thank god we were good at running, or else we’d have lost our lives as well....”

The lieutenant’s eyes flashed coldly, “What? Damn, those barbarians appeared again in the eastern wilderness? Hmph, we need to report this to His Majesty, Ba Lin. The appearance of those barbarians will definitely bring some kind of catastrophe to Soul Devourer City.”

I nodded while looking at the carts and said, “Mister, you’ve gained quite a bit this time, not bad. There are so many women and supplies.....”

The lieutenant laughed and said, “Of course. We looted Green Qilin Valley’s three towns and brought everything from their blacksmiths and storages back. Look, there are 24 women in these carts, and of them there are actually 17 virgins. Haha, King Ba Lin likes virgin wind elves the most! This time he’ll definitely reward me heavily!”

I smiled and said, “Congratulations mister. Why don’t we enter the city

together?”

“Yup, alright!”

.....

I reached out and pulled Frost’s hand, bringing her with me to follow behind the caravan. There was a freezing cold air completely enveloping Frost’s fist. It was her special ice-related combat skill. The leader’s words had made the incredibly righteous Dragon Knight Lieutenant extremely angry, to the point where I was starting to think that Frost would take off his head at any point.

I tightly held her hand and softly said, “Frost, don’t be impulsive..... our goal is Ba Lin’s sword, not this small caravan leader.....”

Frost grinded her teeth, her beautiful eyes revealing strong killing intent, but she finally nodded and replied in a low voice, “After I kill Ba Lin, I’ll free every young girl that has been imprisoned to become mere property.”

I smiled and said, “Even if you didn’t say that, I would’ve done it!”

“Alright...”

.....

The caravan made it to the city walls. The lieutenant then gave a secret signal to the guards at the top. The plan had indeed worked, and we easily snuck into the city. Once we entered, we found out that it wasn’t just big, it was spacious. On top of that, the buildings were extremely simple. There weren’t any merchant shops, just a smithy, a refinery, a practice area and a place where big machines of war meant to attack city walls were cast. It was basically a city built for the sole sake of battle. The city only existed because they had looted the places around it under the command of Ba Lin. Most of the Unsullied would sweep over the Ba Huang Plains like locusts corroding the borders of Ba Huang City, filling the area with desolation and hunger!

“You guys, just wait right here. I’ll let King Ba Lin know of the barbarian situation!” The lieutenant spurred on his wolf as he turned around to yell

at me and Frost.

I panicked and asked, “Mister, you aren’t going to take us with you to meet the emperor?”

“Pf! What kind of status do you have that would let you meet our emperor? Go back to where you guys were supposed to be and leave the report to me!”

“Mister....”

“What’s wrong?!” When he saw that I was still persistent, the lieutenant swept his halberd and rested its point on my neck. He coldly laughed, “Bastard, as an Unsullied, you need to learn obedience. Obey my commands, and if you dare say another word of defiance, or else I will immediately send you to an early grave, you useless worm!”

I suddenly opened up my hand and grabbed onto the long handle of his halberd. My cold glare stared right into his eyes. Motherf*cker, if anything, I could just fight him here and kill my way into the castle, no big deal!

“This bastard wants to rebel!”

The lieutenant couldn’t pull his halberd back and gave a shout. A group of Unsullied around us all pulled out their swords, pointing them straight at me and Frost.

“Wait....”

Frost suddenly yelled out. She pulled off her head guard in front of all of the Unsullied, instantly revealing her incomparable beauty to everyone present. Even the cloak that covered her fragrant shoulder lightly fell to the ground, taking with it a ribbon that revealed two ample and moving peaks. Her silver armor and white cloak, the clothing of a heavenly beauty, appeared before the group of Unsullied. This was something that I believed none of the Unsullied have ever seen before.

“Gu Dong....”

The lieutenant sharply gulped. His eyes were full of desire as he said,

“To think that there was actually such a enchanting woman on this planet. Why....why did she appear within the city?”

As he was talking, his gaze grew cold and he said, “Men, bring this woman to my room and pretend as though you have never seen her before!”

I couldn't help but coldly laugh and say, “Mister, your bottom half is already useless. No matter how hypnotizing this woman is, you wouldn't be able to use it anyway.....”

“You!”

On one side, a bandit said in a low voice, “Mister, for a woman of such high quality.... if the king finds out that you hid her for yourself, even if you died ten times over, it wouldn't be enough....”

The lieutenant shook as he said, “Men, take these two to meet the king!”

“Yes sir!”

Under the escort of the Unsullied soldiers, Frost and I walked up a flight of steps towards the castle.

Frost walked by my side and she tilted her head to look at me, and whispered, “If I knew it was that easy before, would there have been any need to beat around the bush so much?”

I was speechless, and finally said, “That's true. It's almost like getting a taxi during rush hour. If a beautiful girl lifts her skirt to reveal her thighs, she can easily get a taxi.”

Frost was puzzled and said, “What's rush hour?”

“Even if I tell you, you wouldn't understand....”

“If you don't tell me, of course I wouldn't understand!”

“It's..... it's a certain period of time, like when all the sentries of Dragon City begin changing guards. It's that point when there's a lot of movement in the city and too many people to get around easily....”

“Oh, it's like during the period of changing guards.....”

“Yup.....”

.....

In the distance, the laughter of girls traveled to our ears from a castle that was similar to a flourishing palace. When Frost and I reached the palace’s platform, there was a thin transparent curtain that blocked our view—

On top of the giant throne, an obese Ba Lin lay atop it, with two flirtatious wind elves in his embrace. One of them held a silver platter and plucked grapes to feed to Ba Lin, while the other softly massaged him. Ba Lin’s hands rubbed against their butts, his eyes half-closed in pleasure.

“Your majesty!”

The lieutenant knelt before the throne and said, “We found an exceedingly beautiful woman outside of the city and have brought her here; do you want to see her?”

Ba Lin opened his eyes and suddenly noticed Frost. At the same time his entire body shook and he sat up saying, “Gods, such a beauty.... Hurry.... hurry up.....”

The lieutenant was puzzled, “Your majesty, hurry up and do what?”

“Hurry up and remove her armor, I want to see her body....”

“Yes!”

.....

“Shua Shua!”

Rays of frosty light began revolving around Frost’s body as she began raising her strength. “Bang!”, the ropes that bound her broke. She raised a hand and smiled, “Ba Lin, today is the day of your death, did you know that?”

“Keng!”

In the distance, the sheathed sword flew out of its bindings, scaring the

guard that held onto it. All he could do was watch as the sword flew into the throne room, into Frost's waiting hand.

I also quickly changed my equipment, allowing the Emperor Qin's Sword to appear in my hand. With a wave of my hand, the Flaming Tiger God appeared from a summoning hexagram and jumped out beside me. He roared, scaring all of the surrounding Unsullied soldiers; they looked as if they had never seen such a fierce beast!

.....

"Damn it!"

Ba Lin slammed his hand down and stood up as he bellowed, "This woman has godly strength. Give me my sword and battle robe. Today I'll break this flower. That bastard is also pretty strong. Unsullied, gather together and mince him!"

Chapter 309: Frost's Ultimate Technique

“Pa... ”

Scarlet red boots stepped onto the solid ground. Frost held her sword and rushed straight towards Ba Lin like a flash of lightning, immediately swinging her sword out sharply. The blade was surrounded by a thick mythical ice energy. It would certainly be difficult to deal with her attack.

“Damn it...”

Ba Lin growled furiously. Unable to equip his armor in time, he pushed the two maidservants aside. Raising an arm, he shouted, “[Demon Shield]!”

A black energy condensed into a shield. A “Peng!” was heard as Frost’s sword hit the shield. The two people became the epicentre of a shockwave that knocked a group of Phantom Tier Unsullied soldiers several meters back.

I firmly stood still. While lashing horizontally, I activated a few God’s Army Cards in my palms, and Black Tortoise Realm caused a quagmire to form under Ba Lin. Frost was seen as an ally and wasn’t affected at all. She stood atop the boggy area of land like it was solid ground. At the same time, the summoned Soul Army enveloped my surrounding area, preventing the Unsullied from rushing in indiscriminately!

.....

“Kaka... Even though you might be a Heavenly ranked being, you’re no match for me!”

Ba Lin’s eyes flashed coldly. His left palm released a powerful attack as he murmured, “Little b*tch, you may be strong, but you shall be an obedient pet of mine on the bed tonight! Don’t worry, I won’t kill you. I will savor each and every inch of your skin, giving you ****, making it impossible for you to ever leave my side!”

(TL: Author-san actually wrote ****)

“Peng!” A loud explosion was heard. Ba Lin’s attack was ruthless,

knocking Frost back far away.

“Wuwu...”

Frost held her right arm in pain. The bandaged injury had reopened, and fresh red blood flowed out. Ba Lin’s strength was overwhelming, this much was confirmed.

Taking advantage of the time Frost used to catch her breath, Ba Lin equipped an extremely sturdy fire-red armor. He also grabbed a flaming red battle sword from a subordinate. This sword was Ba Lin’s saber . At the same time, he took his controlling staff from the Unsullied as well. They would only listen to the command of the owner of the staff, so our main target this time was to snatch this staff away from him.

“Ka ka...”

Ba Lin licked his lower lip, grinning evilly. “You’re not even a match for me with my bare hands. Now, that I’m wielding my battlesword, how could you possibly defeat me? I really don’t want to damage such a beautiful figure. Come! Obediently lay on my bed, and I will forgive this disobedience. You will become Soul Devourer City’s heiress!”

Frost didn’t reply. A beautiful grin masked her face as five of her fingers open widely, causing a surge of cosmic energy to accumulate around her sword. The next moment, Frost once again rushed towards Ba Lin. Her sword sliced through the air in a perfect arc, trailing with cosmic energy, and forcefully hit Ba Lin’s sword. Frost murmured, “[Cosmic Blade]!”

“Keng!”

Sparks flew. Although Ba Lin used all his might to defend himself from the attack, this amount of cosmic energy still phased through Ba Lin’s sword and hit his shoulder! With a “Peng! “, blood flew everywhere. The thick armor could not withstand the [Cosmic Blade]’s power, and with one strike, Ba Lin had taken heavy damage!

“Pa pa pa...” The war boots thumped against the ground as he was pushed backwards. Ba Lin suddenly halted his body’s movement. He was shocked to see such tremendous damage to his shoulder, and he said

frostily, “You... I didn’t expect you to know the ancient technique, [Cosmic Blade]. Dammit! It couldn’t be... you’re... you’re the legendary Dragon Knight Lieutenant of Dragon City — Frost • Magnificent?”

Frost raised her longsword and flatly said, “Don’t you call my name with your foul mouth. It’s a blasphemy to my honor. An inglorious beast like you isn’t even suitable to live on this planet. Go die!”

Ba Lin only laughed in response, “Interesting, interesting!. I’ve toyed with flame spirits deep in the forest, Ba Huang City’s wealthy heiresses, and even petite lightning spirits. But, never with the legendary Dragon City’s King Luo Lin’s strongest warrior—Frost! Today your luck is so good. I will break your limbs and slowly play with you!”

Ba Lin’s expression began to turn wild. Muscle from his entire body buffed up as his Qi started to circulate at tremendous speeds, and his blade shrieked. All of a sudden, raging flames spat out from his longsword. Ba Lin growled, “Taste the power of death! Dragon City dares to get involved in my town, that Luo Lin bastard’s too naive! Sending you here just spells your death! Today, I will make it so that you will no longer be able to belong to Dragon City!”

The longsword slashed thrice in succession. “Keng keng keng”, the three hits shook Frost’s sword. The pure force and energy released even caused the bricks from the ground to shatter and protrude, as if gravity had lost control. Even Frost’s defense collapsed from the incredible impact of the three downward slashes. The last attack even forced her back several meters. “Peng!” Frost slammed onto the brick wall!

“Await your doom!”

Ba Lin jumped up high. With his sword wrapped by raging flames, it suddenly released a biting attack!

The approaching fiery sword reflected in Frost’s eyes. She raised her hand, causing ice crystals to spin around her as she yelled, “[Frost Armor]!”

“Sha sha sha...”

Tiny shattered pieces of ice slowly condensed around her, rapidly forming a protective layer of ice-cold armor that enveloped every part of her body. This was an armor made entirely from the ice element.

“Peng!”

Ba Lin’s attack landed on the ice, momentarily shaking her protection and creating a crack.

Frost spread her arms and the blade in her hands floated in midair; it was the ability of controlling weaponry. The next moment, she pushed her hands forward in a quick and swift motion, causing her sword to fly right into Ba Lin’s chest. It collided with his chest piece, and a loud “Keng!” emanated through the air while sparks flew from his armor. The fierce lion decor on his chest instantly shattered into a million pieces!

“This... “

Ba Lin retreated multiple steps, coughing out blood. The rage in his eyes grew fiercer, “What kind of skill is this? To be able to freely control weaponry. Hmph, this... what ancient skill is this then? I’ve heard that Luo Lin got lots of lost treasures from excavating dragon tombs. It looks like the rumors are true; people from Dragon City really depend on grave robbing to set up start up!”

“I won’t allow you to insult King Luo Lin!”

Frost retracted her hand and softly muttered, “ [Razor Rotation] ! ”

The longsword acted, flying around in the air as if it was alive. Suddenly, with a tail of elegance, it gloriously cut into Ba Lin’s back, causing blood to spray everywhere. Frost was untouchable at this point, and she controlled her weapon to attack Ba Lin ruthlessly, dropping the BOSS’s health to 40%. Frost’s attacking power was too overwhelming.

.....

“Archers!”

Behind me, an entire group of Unsullied quickly acted. A line of archers drew their bows, aiming at Frost. One of the knights shouted, “Aim... Kill

Frost! Make this trespasser from Dragon City become a porcupine!”

“Sou sou sou...”

Arrows speed through the air towards Frost. Unable to dodge such a huge amount of arrows, Frost turned around and raised a hand. She collected energy to form a cyclone, shifting the trajectory of the arrows, and causing them to drop down onto the floor under her feet.

“Die!”

A fearsome amount of heat rushed towards Frost from behind, and she took the full brunt of the hit. Her silver armor cracked and blood splattered. I felt a surge of killing intent from the bottom of my soul, and I rushed forwards, pointing my sword at Ba Lin. [Seven Star Fragments Slash]!

“Bang!”

Ba Lin retreated many steps back. I went forwards, slightly able to see a hint of helplessness in Frost’s eyes. I hugged her and activated the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]! Behind me, a dense barrage of arrows showered on the Magic Spite Armor. In a flash, I had pretty much become a real porcupine! I immediately drank a Lv 10 potion, recovering 3000 health. Along with a [Heal], I fully recovered!

My Flaming Tiger God growled. [Burstfire Raid] managed to break into the Unsullied soldiers’ formation. Combined with a [Roar], all of them were at half health! The Soul Army started to wreak havoc. The several dozens of NPCs would start dying soon.

“Kill Ba Lin first!”

Frost resisted the pain on her back and stood up desperately. Another [Cosmic Icicle] formed on her sword, in addition to another [Cosmic Blade]. This time, Frost was putting everything she had into this one strike, even the possibility of being hit by the other party’s attack!

“Peng!”

The cosmic energy attack hit Ba Lin on his shoulder once again. Blood

sprayed like a fountain; it was truly a tragic scene. However, Ba Lin raised his boots again, gathering energy to throw a kick that resulted in Frost knocking into the wall behind her, completely destroying it.

“Wuu... ”

Frost lightly fell onto her knees on the cold bricks, covered in blood wounds and injuries. She grasped her sword tightly with one hand while looking at me. “Help me... help me delay him for just 5 seconds!”

“Yes!”

Wielding my sword, I rushed forwards. I used a [Blade Rush] after my [Binding Chains] missed. Turning around, I used a [Wind Blade], drawing 27% of the aggro. Unfortunately, it wasn't enough. Ba Lin still targeted Frost!

Frost quietly knelt in her position, a dense ancient power gathering around her body. The power of the dragons were slowly arising; Frost was clearly casting another ancient magic. Furthermore, it took a lot of time to cast. If the skill got interrupted, it would be wasted!

Using a [Haste] buff, I abruptly stopped in front of Ba Lin. He immediately swung his longsword at me, “Get lost!”

“Peng!”

I felt an intense pain on my arm. I was knocked back around 10 meters and immediately lost 3120 health. After using a [Heal], a white glow appeared under my feet. [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

Under the flurry of attacks, Ba Lin whimpered backwards. Finally, a [Combo] did the job!

Behind me, I heard Frost's voice, “Get down... ”

I responded immediately. Dropping down onto both my knees, I clambered onto the ground. Directly above my head were the roars of dragons. Frost held up her sword; atop the tip of the sword, many images of ice dragons appeared. Plainly, Frost said, “[Decimating Ice Dragon], go!”

.....

“Hong hong hong...”

An ice dragon formed by an incomprehensible amount of smaller ice blades surrounded Ba Lin. His health kept withering, hitting rock bottom in a flash!

However, a group of Unsullied also rushed forward. Frost, on the other hand, collapsed on the ground after releasing the [Decimating Ice Dragon]. For the time being, she had lost the ability to continue the battle.

Quickly dashing towards Ba Lin, I immediately waved my Emperor Qin's Sword!

“Kacha!”

A giant, fat arm dropped onto the ground, and Ba Lin dropped dead at the same time. His arm had been completely cut off by me. I bent down and reached for his sword; this was the quest item. Holding it up high, I raised my voice and said, “All the people of Soul Devourer City, stop fighting and heed my command!”

.....

The group of Unsullied troops were overwhelmed with shock. At a loss, they stood there unmoving and said, “Our king... our king is dead, our king was killed...”

“Pa...”

The first soldier knelt down on one leg. Soon after, the rest of the soldiers followed, showing their respect and loyalty. An entire group of Unsullied eventually knelt down in front of me. My guess was right, whoever owned this sword would be able to command the Unsullied!

Chapter 310: You love him?

Looking at the powerful sword that had blood from Frost. This was the exact sword that left a deep wound on Frost's back!

"Wuu...wuu..."

Frost rested in the corner of the wall. Struggling to support her own weight, she sat up. She stared at me blankly and said, "Did we... kill him?"

I nodded. Raising the sword, I replied. "He's dead. Now the entire Soul Devourer City is ours!"

Frost smiled. "Oh. Wonderful... simply wonderful..."

"What now?"

"Order all the Unsullied troops to defend the city. Don't allow any outsiders to enter. Any trespassers would be killed! Let's go back now and give the sword to King Luo Lin. He will be the one to decide the fate of this Soul Devourer City."

"Yes!"

.....

I put the longsword away and put Ba Lin's Sword into my bag. I walked over and assisted Frost by holding her shoulder. She still had fresh blood on her arm and she was weak and frail. Perhaps a drawback from using the ancient technique, was that Frost would be severely weakened. Her entire body leaned into my embrace. When I reached to catch her waist, I felt a warm and moist sensation. The cut on her back is too deep! The blood is flowing like a river.

I hurriedly took out some Lv 10 health potions and spread it on top of the wound. Desperately I said, "Frost, we need to stop the bleeding. If not you'll lose too much blood..."

Frost faintly smiled and shook her head. "No, it's no use. There was a curse on Ba Lin's sword. It's a curse cast onto the soul and so my injury can't be healed by normal medicine."

I started to panick. “Then... now what?”

“Bring me to...”Frost’s face leaned into my shoulder as she weakly said, “Bring me to Greenleaf Spring. The spring water, along with some medicinal herbs that are found there would be able to do stop it...”

“Okay!”

I lifted Frost and carried her in a princess hold. Then with my beautiful teacher in my arms, I raised my head and shouted at the Unsullied troops. “You guys wait here. Unless there’s someone using the power of the sword to command you, don’t act carelessly. Protect the city and kill all trespassers!”

“Yes, my lord! ” responded the Unsullied.

.....

Carrying Frost, I hurried out of Soul Devourer City with my Flaming Tiger God closely following us. For now, he’s our vanguard, clearing out all the monsters in our way. Frost was unconscious. I couldn’t dash like I normally do.

Greenleaf Spring was at the border of Ba Huang Forest and didn’t even take 20 minutes to reach. Upon arriving, the water from the spring was crystal clear, flowing towards the canyon in a distance.

“Wu...”

Letting her down, Frost slowly awakened. Her pale face looked at the forest around Greenleaf spring. “Don’t help me wash my wounds just yet. Search around for... a kind of medicinal herb...”

“How does it look like? What is it called?”

“Seven-Leafed Grass. Each has 7 leaves on it and on each leaf has 7 veins. If crushed, it would emit a pungent smell. There’s certainly some in this place. I’ve treated my wounds here once before.”

“Alright..... ”

Carrying Frost, I excavated the surrounding bushes for the herb. Almost immediately, I found a Seven-Leafed Grass. It was sitting peacefully in

front of the bushes. I asked Frost. "Is this the one?"

"Yes! Pull out the roots as well..."

"Ok!"

I unsheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword to gently dig out the plant. A Seven-Leafed grass appeared in my hand along with its roots. I dug out another dozen or so. This should be enough. After that, I carried Frost to the spring again and set her onto a giant green stone at the side of the water. She let out a soft sigh as she sat down. I wasn't sure if her face was pale because of the fatigue or from the pain of her wound.

Nevertheless, I crushed all the the Seven-Leafed Grass until it turned to paste. A strong acrid smell emanated through the air.

Frost slowly said, "Help me unequip my armor..."

"Okay..."

I put down my Emperor Qin's Sword and carefully removed her chestpiece. The back of it was cut open along the wound. When I removed the armor, Frost couldn't help but let out a cry. "Wuu...wuu..." It was clear that the pain was unbearable. But at the same time, when her chest piece was removed, her assets seemingly popped out as if they were alive. They were plump and firm ... Damn, this beautiful teacher's figure might be enough to challenge Lin Wan Er's.

"Dang..."

I put aside he battle armor. Frost laid down on her side, hinting to help her unequip her leg guards as well as those on her waist. I carefully complied. The moment I took off the armor, I could see her smooth round buttcheeks as well as two snow white thighs. This sight is simply too alluring!

I strengthened my focus and calmed my mind.

Lying atop the green stone, Frost shut her eyes. With only a thin silk blouse, her beautiful figure could almost be seen clearly. Blushing, she softly said, "Help me clean my wounds now, and then apply the

medicine...”

“Yes!”

I helped her up. Frost instinctively leaned into my embrace. Holding her like that, I scooped up some water with a hand and cleansed her wound. The blood was thoroughly washed off, revealing a 40 centimeter long wound. It was so deep, her bone could be slightly seen. It was really painful to see. For the sake of Dragon City, Frost really gave it her all.

Continuing to wash the wound, I could see the crystal clear water flowed along her back all the way to her snow white derrière. I could have gone mad from the sight! I quickly chanted a buddhist mantra to prevent myself from losing control and avoid getting murdered by Frost later.

“Amitābha...”

After cleaning the wound, I started to apply the medical dressing. The moment the Seven-Leafed Grass’ juices touched her wound, Frost stretched her pale arms and grabbed me, squinting and letting out soft moans. Clearly the pain from this medicine was agonizing, to the point where Frost had two lines of tears pouring down from her eyes, wetting my neck. Frost didn’t even weep when she received the cut, but she’s shedding tears now.

“Is it painful? You cried...” I couldn’t be sure.

Frost opened her eyes. “I...I don’t know...”

I began, “Actually... you didn’t have to be so desperate in the first place. Was it worth it? What if you were accidentally killed by Ba Lin? Then what?”

Frost had a determined look in her eyes. “I pledged my soul to Dragon City since long ago. Even if I die, I do not regret it!”

“If you really died, then what would I do?”

“You could find another master. For example... Vice team leader Su Ke...”

“No. I recognized you as my master. The one and only... “

“Ah?”

Frost, still in my embrace, looked straight into my eyes. The decisive look in her eyes diminished slightly. Then, she lowered her head and sighed. “Dragon City is like a lone canoe drifting in the vast open sea. I don’t even know where it will drift off to, how could I easily promise you... I can only say that, I will not die so easily...”

I lightly pat her shoulder. “Yeah. I know... The bandage is done...”

“Ok!”

.....

Frost sat on the green rock to rest for a moment. The bleeding stopped and blood was starting to return to her face. She picked up her longsword beside her and stood up. Smiling, she said. Alright. Let’s return to the city and complete the quest!”

I peeked at her sword and noticed that there were two words carved deeply in the blade—Severing Beauty!

“This sword is called Severing Beauty?” I asked.

Frost nodded. “Yup. This is a very sharp sword. It’s past is unclear, but I hired a very experienced blacksmith from Jiu Li City to recast this blade and engrave ‘Severing Beauty’ to be its new name.”

“Your name also has a ‘Hua’, why did you use ‘Severing Beauty’? ”

TL: Her name has the same character as the blade, ‘华’ which can mean a flower, splendiddness, elegance, tradition, etc...

Frost smiled and replied. “Because this sword is destined to be stained with blood. My sins are too heavy so the final person to be cut down by this blade would be me— Frost Hua.

I was speechless. ”Nevermind. Treat it as if I never asked... ”

Frost giggled and said. “Okay then, treat it as if I never said anything as well... ”

The two of us felt too awkward to say anything at that point. Frost knew

that I could not be by her side forever, and I also knew that I was just a player. I had no power to change the course of such an important NPC's fate. Perhaps Frost's destiny was already decided from the start, and whatever I did would not change the outcome.

.....

Dragon City.

As before, it was freezing cold. But even though Frost had a severe injury, she still walked up the flight of stairs by herself. Holding the Emperor Qin's Sword, I followed closely behind whereas Ba Lin's sword was held by Frost.

The main gate opened, and a large sandbox was placed in the middle of the basilica. Luo Lin was standing beside the sandbox, with a worried frown. The moment he saw us walking in, he immediately greeted us, "Frost, you guys returned! The mission... is it complete?"

Frost raised the sword, "This is Ba Lin's sword. I present it to King Luo Lin... "

"Yes!"

Luo Lin held the sword with one hand and smiled, "Wonderful! With the support of all the Unsullied from Soul Devourer City, Dragon City's power will rise dramatically! I'm going to Soul Devourer City to use the sword's power and command them to protect Dragon City!"

"Milord..."

Frost's eyes blinked, "Actually, I have a better idea... "

"Oh, what's that?"

Frost said in a deep voice, "The Unsullied are people who have lost their freedom since youth. They yearn to be released and not be chained once more. After studying their spirit, I found that there was no pure evil. This sword is cursed and can be used to curse others. These Unsullied soldiers were cursed by this. So, I suggest... that you destroy this sword right in front of all the Unsullied. Give them respect and their freedom. Only like

this would they become true warriors of Dragon City, defending it with all their might, and becoming complete human beings.”

Luo Lin nodded in agreement, “Yeah, you’re right. Thank you. I’ll head off immediately! Frost, you stay here and take command. Let Su Ke and Da Lin prepare more food. These Unsullied troops will soon take residence in the city, so we need more supplies. Furthermore, the mounts of the Unsullied are Snow Wolves. It’s necessary to increase the supply of meat for them.”

Frost smiled, “Yes, milord. As you wish!”

Luo Lin raised Ba Lin’s sword and dashed away, vanishing into the night. This action was leagues further than what Frost would have done.

.....

Looking at Luo Lin’s back as he left, I leisurely said, “Sacrificing so much for him, was it worth it?”

Frost shrugged. “I don’t know. He’s a very highly respected brother, as well as a very highly respected teacher to me. Not to mention, he’s my revered king! For him, I would do anything!”

I turned around to face her and asked, “You love him?”

Frost gaped, “I... I don’t know, don’t ask me..... ”

Chapter 311: Zhan Long Hall

With a “Ding” I obtained the experience and gained +5 charm. For an SS-ranked quest, the charm increase was the most alluring, since charm was a precious wealth for players. It was an everlasting advantage, In contrast to equipment, which could be exchanged for newer, better ones at any point in time, charm and skills were priceless because they could never be used up and could never be changed.

I looked at my stats. Not bad, I had 104 points of charm. I had to keep up the good work.....

.....

Turning around, I looked at Frost who was behind me and said, “So, just like that, you’re going to command Dragon City?”

Frost nodded and said, “This is my home; I’ll never leave. I know that you’re an adventurer from Ba Huang City and that you have many friends from there. I don’t wish to become your burden. Go, it’s time for you to go to where you belong. It’s just that.....”

She lowered her head to look at Severing Beauty, and said in a voice that I could barely hear, “You must always come back to visit me.....”

I silently nodded, then turned around to leave. I fished out a City Return Scroll and a bright light covered my entire body as I was transported back to Ba Huang City with a flash of magic. “Shua!” my Divine Battle Boots steadily stepped onto the bricks of Ba Huang City. Nearby, my National Beauty’s doors were open, and over a hundred players surrounded it. Some were buying potions and others were picking out equipment.

As I entered the small store, an appraising NPC beauty beamed at me and said, “Master, you’re back!”

“Yup.”

This beautiful NPC had welcomed me like that because I had appointed her as National Beauty’s NPC store manager. She had a stronger and better AI than all of the other NPC’s.

As I talked with the store manager, I scanned through yesterday's revenue and noticed it was extremely profitable——

Profit from Potions Sold: 123720 G [50% City Tax Included]

Profit from Equipment Refinement: 87672G [50% City Tax Included]

Profit from Equipment Transactions: 142881G [Tally of the seller's revenue and 50% City Tax Included]

.....

After I calculated the currency, I noticed that we had earned 1,750,000RMB in one day. That was way beyond what I had imagined we would earn. Today's business shouldn't be too bad either. Thus, I took out 1M RMB, then sent a message to Fox, telling him to come over.

Within a few minutes, Fox appeared inside the city. I gave the 1M RMB to him and said, "From now on, our [Zhan Long] high ranking officials will receive wages. The top 1000 members of the guild will get 2000RMB every month, and the next 1000 members will get 1000RMB every month. Like this, there wouldn't be any worries about being at the bottom, and they can rest easy as they grind their levels and equipments.

Fox was stunned and said, "That's around 3M of expenses, right? Are you sure?"

I nodded and smiled, "I'm sure. It should be enough with the revenue we're getting from National Beauty. If we need to want to expand our guild, we need to consider this. Besides, I have another pretty good plan. Why don't you call over the other important officers of the guild so we can properly plan for the future, with the ultimate goal being to develop [Zhan Long] further?"

"Alright, where should we meet?"

"Let's meet in the Great Sage Hall. That place is relatively quiet, since there are only a few chanting monks....."

"Yup, I'll immediately let everyone know. Why don't you head over first?"

“Alright!”

I picked up my Emperor Qin’s Sword and ran straight towards the Great Sage Hall. At the Great Sage Hall, I sat at a wooden table in the corner and looked towards the distance. Within three minutes, a beautiful Wind Elf flapped her wings to descend. She picked up her long spear and gracefully walked in with a big smile, saying, “Boss, long time no see!”

I nodded and said, “Matcha, come over here and sit!”

“Alright....”

After another few minutes, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu, and Wolf all arrived. Old K, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Mountains, and Fox immediately followed. Almost all of [Zhan Long]’s team leaders and elders had gathered. The group sat in wooden chairs around a candlestick. The girls suddenly started looking at me, fluttering their eyes as Yue Qing Qian asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, what’s wrong? You pulled us out of training to talk about business....”

I smiled and said, “Yup. There are some important things that I wanted to discuss that has to do with how [Zhan Long] should grow in the future. Fox should first talk about the subsidy.”

Fox politely coughed and said, “It’s like this: Guild Master has already planned out that all of [Zhan Long]’s players will get a salary. The top 1000 players will get 2000RMB a month and the next 1000 players will get 1000RMB a month. Those are the basics. Aside from this, Li brat seems to have some other plans?”

I nodded and said, “Yup, I want to create a new plan and incite the [Zhan Long]’s top players ambition....”

“What kind of plan?” Li Mu smiled as he asked.

I thought for a second, then said, “Let’s create some rules for a Hall of Fame. It’ll basically be [Zhan Long]’s place of honor, where only those that have been fundamental to some achievement can enter. Anyone who enters this Hall must state what their achievement is or what they did in a battle, or else they won’t be allowed to enter. This way, the guild can

form a positive competitive environment. What do you guys think?"

Yue Qing Qian clapped her hands together and said, "It's not a bad idea, I support Brother Xiao Yao....."

Wang Jian was speechless and finally said, "Whatever Brother Xiao Yao says, I'll always support him."

Wolf laughed out loud and said, "Truthfully, Guild Master's idea isn't bad. Every guild in the [Destiny] network has a special forum. Currently, our space only has a few random posts. With Brother Xiao Yao's plan, we can create a thread for this on [Zhan Long]'s forum."

Dancing Forest smiled and said, "I have a web designer friend, we can invite him to help us change the forum a bit and attract some more popularity. That way it can become a more popular environment where players can interact..."

I nodded and said, "Alright. Since nobody has any disagreements, then it's set. The only problem now is what we should call it. Does anyone have any suggestions?"

Li Mu said, "Zhan Long Hall of Fame?"

"Are there any other suggestions?"

Yue Qing Qian said, "Stage of Stars?"

Yue Wei Liang's broke out into laughter and said, "Sister, what is that...."

Matcha blinked a few times then said, "Temple of Heroes!"

Old K was shocked, "Matcha's name is extremely good, it has a very dominant feel.... it's just, the dominance is almost too much. If we call all of our top players in [Zhan Long] as the Temple of Heroes, other guilds might have a lot to say. For example, saying that [Zhan Long] might only think of our own people as heroes. Jian Feng Han and Cang Ceng those assholes will definitely say something like that....."

Dancing Forest couldn't help but smile and said, "If it's like that, then why don't we make it simpler? How about we call it Zhan Long Hall?"

“Zhan Long Hall.....Zhan Long Hall.....”

I chanted it a few times, and nodded, “This name is pretty good. Little Dance isn’t just an flat-chested little sister.....”

Dancing Forest stuck her chest out. I glanced over and continued to say, “36C, alright, you don’t need to show off, we get it....”

Yue Qing Qian was speechless.

Wolf smiled and said, “Then we’ll just call it Zhan Long Hall?”

“Yup, let’s just call it Zhan Long Hall!”

I muttered to myself, “We need to make sure that only the people who have contributed to the rise of [Zhan Long] can enter Zhan Long Hall. But Zhan Long Hall can’t just be empty in the beginning. What do you guys think?”

Yue Qing Qian said, “Isn’t that obvious? Currently, the only one qualified to enter Zhan Long Hall is Brother Xiao Yao. Based on your impulse to create this guild and thus becoming the founder, you have the qualifications to and must really be the first person to enter Zhan Long Hall. We, as well as the 3000 people in our guild, will never object with that fact.”

Li Mu nodded and smiled saying, “Yup. Guild Master is undoubtedly the first person in Zhan Long Hall. In my opinion, you are indeed the only one fit to enter Zhan Long Hall right now. Every time we battle, you’re always first in the front line to rush forward. Not only that, but you’ve also killed the most out of everyone. Especially in the City of the Ancients, when we had to compete against super guilds like [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon] to get the [God of Commerce Badge], it was [Zhan Long] that ended up winning, all because of you. It’s completely justified for you to be the first to enter.....”

I rubbed my chin and said, “Alright. Then I’ll be the first to enter Zhan Long Hall, the reason being that I’m the founder of [Zhan Long]. Just like that?”

Wolf nodded and said, “It must be like that!”

Dancing Forest picked up her Wanderer's Bow and stood up, the swaying of her two peaks catching the eyes of every male player. She wryly smiled and said, "Then how about this: Brother Xiao Yao should give me the power to edit and moderate [Zhan Long]'s forum for the moment, and I'll have my friend help us create a better version of it. They should be here soon. The basic form should come out within 30 minutes. After that, we can take a few days to slowly change it. Brother Xiao Yao, does that seem ok?"

I looked at her and said, "Why is it that even you are calling me Brother Xiao Yao?"

Dancing Forest smiled and said, "It makes me seem very delicate...."

"That's enough from you. You're only one year younger than me. Qing Qian, Wei Liang, quick, show your respect to Auntie Little Dance...."

TL: Little Dance = Dancing Forest

Dancing Forest was speechless.

.....

Time flew by extremely quickly, and soon, [Zhan Long] released the news about its salary. Everyone began dancing and celebrating. That afternoon, the amount of experience the guild gained increased by over 20% more than usual, mostly since experience and admin level became the deciding factors for salaries.

Close to an hour later, I opened up our website for [Destiny] and suddenly noticed that there had been some changes. Now, there was a fierce, golden, eastern dragon that was coiled around the navigation bar, and the words [Zhan Long] were boldly written across the top. Behind the two words was Zhan Long Hall, written in small golden words. Clicking on it I saw—

1. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Qualification: [Zhan Long]'s founder, current Guild Master
2. Unoccupied

3. Unoccupied

.....

As expected, there was just me.....

But the appearance of Zhan Long Hall would definitely attract many of the elite players to compete amongst each other, which was a good thing. Soldiers that didn't want to become generals were not good soldiers. If Yue Qing Qian, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf, and Thousand Suns all utilized their full potentials, [Zhan Long] would practically be unstoppable.

Moreover, Zhan Long Hall was fated to become a legend, and would become a true Hall of Heroes in [Destiny]. Every one of our names would be permanently inscribed into [Destiny]'s monument. I was confident that we would achieve all of this!

.....

I was very complacent with what had been accomplished so far for a long while. At around 5 o' clock in the afternoon, a call came through the game from Wang Xin—

“Li Xiao Yao!”

“What's wrong, Captain Wang?”

“Yea. For the investigation into Blood Scythe, we've run into some trouble.”

“What's the situation?”

“We sent out two young officers to infiltrate Blood Scythe's Curtain of the Night Bar. In it, we found some evidence that Blood Scythe was involved with the synthetic human case. Actually, we were hoping to catch a live Artificial, but the plan failed. This afternoon when the two officers left the department, they were both hit by a car with a Shanghai license plate, and received critical wounds, resulting in comas. There must be some kind of mastermind behind that attack. Besides, this isn't the first time that Blood Scythe has been selling black market goods in Curtain of the Night Bar. So tonight, we need to assign two people to go

and investigate, and they must be people who aren't easy to suspect. I want you and Shen Bing to act as a couple and go to the Curtain of the Night Bar, and grab some evidence back."

I was stunned and said, "You want me and Sister Shen Bing to act as a couple and go to a bar? Is she okay with that?"

"Oh....."

Wang Xin wryly smiled and said, "Oh, she's happy to death...."

I was speechless.

Chapter 312: Wan Er Is Jealous!

7PM at night, drinking in the cafeteria.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were both wearing dresses as they quietly sat in front of me. They sucked through their straws and gave me a blank stare. After about five minutes of silence, Wan Er finally asked, “You promised to come to Fan Shu City to see me and Dong Cheng, why did you change your mind? I was planning on bringing you to see the five wonders of Fan Shu City....Green Antelope Cliff, Twilight Moon, Leaping Fish Stream, etc. are all very interesting.....”

I nodded guiltily, “Actually I really wanted to see the sights of Fan Shu City, but I really have something important to do today.....”

Dong Cheng Yue asked, “What’s so important that’s making you so nervous? Also, who are we waiting for? If you don’t tell me, I’ll die of frustration.....”

I chuckled, “We’re waiting for my colleague. She’s going on a mission with me tonight. We’re going to test the waters with some criminals.”

Wan Er lifted her eyebrow in displeasure and asked, “What kind of people are you going against?”

“I don’t really know who they are either... Anyway, the less that you two know, the better.”

“Where’s the location?”

“In a nightclub.....”

“Heh....” Wan Er narrowed her eyes, “You aren’t be going there to pick up girls, right? Dong Cheng and I are bored to death playing [Destiny] for the whole day, and yet you aren’t even bringing us with you to a nightclub....”

Looking around, I spotted an obscure sentry smoking nearby. I edged closer to Wan Er, put my hands on her shoulders, and said, “When I’m done with this mission, I’ll definitely have fun with you....”

Wan Er's face turned red as she nodded slightly, "Okay."

Dong Cheng Yue rested her head on her arms: "I can't bear to watch this anymore. Stop being all lovey dovey in front of me....Also, didn't we agree to go to Xixi Wetlands? We've been delaying it for so long, the place has probably dried up already....."

I replied, "We'll definitely go to the Wetland. Don't be impatient. Haven't I been really busy lately? Now that [Zhan Long] has stabilized with Yue Qing Qian, Li Mu, Matcha, and the others, I have more free time. I promise that after this mission, I'll bring you girls out to play...."

"Okay, you promised...." Wan Er looked at me with a hint of worry in her eyes and said, "But.... don't be like last time. I don't know who you're going up against, but they must be really scary right?"

I firmly nodded, "Yea. Don't ask too much...This is a top secret mission."

"Okay....."

.....

Before long, an enchanting figure finally walked over from the darkness. It was Shen Bing. With her white dress, her decent face, and good figure, she looked like a beautiful elf at night.

"Wow, there are two little beauties....."

Shen Bing laughed and walked over. Looking at Wan Er and Dong Cheng, she joked, "I'll be borrowing Li Xiao Yao for tonight, I hope the two beauties won't get mad....."

Saying that, she walked towards me, grabbed my arm, and gracefully attached her body to mine.

.....

Wan Er's eyes widened. She looked at me with her eyes full of disbelief. Her eyes became misty almost as if she were about to cry. She turned around and refused to look at me anymore. Ai, could this little miss possibly be jealous?

My heart felt conflicted; I couldn't tell whether I was happy or

disturbed. I pulled Shen Bing away, “Sister Shen Bing, don’t joke around....”

I walked towards Wan Er, rubbed her shoulders, and softly said, “Wait obediently at school for me to come back. I’ll be careful. Also.... Sister Shen Bing likes to joke, I’ve been with her for quite a while now. Don’t start getting jealous.....”

Wan Er crushed the paper cup in her hand and she whispered, “I’m not....”

I looked at the spilled drink on the floor, “F*ck, really? Miss, you’ve even spilled it all over me”

Wan Er pulled out some tissues and helped me wipe the spilled drink off my shirt and smiled, “It’s a promise then. This time, after you finish your mission, you have to bring me and Dong Cheng to Xixi Wetlands. You can’t go back on your words. It’s best if you bring us tomorrow.....”

“Okay, I promise you!”

“Okay! Come back early. And be careful.....”

“Alright.....”

.....

After bringing Wan Er and Dong Cheng back upstairs, I left with Shen Bing. She drove a red sports car, which was a special model from the police department. Only when there’s a special mission would they use this car. Of course, it was usually only used by beautiful female officers. The last time it was used was when an undercover beauty participated in a high profile dinner.

We waited in the car for a while until it was nearly 9. Then, Shen Bing drove out of the school with a roar. We drove straight to Blue Water Street with the wind rushing past us. It was about 9:50 when we arrived, just when the nightclub started to get lively. After we parked the car, Shen Bing grabbed onto my arms and smiled: “Hey sweetheart, we won’t be able to pass off as a couple with the way you’re acting.”

I had no choice but to move my hands towards her waist. It didn't feel too bad. Shen Bing glanced at me and said, "Hey, don't look so reluctant. I am very sought after, got it? Who knows how many of those rich kids want to be in your place but don't have a chance. Look at yourself, you look like you ate a raw bullfrog....."

I gagged a bit: "Sister, please don't put such vivid images in my head...."

Shen Bing laughed and pulled me into the nightclub. We got some normal seats, along with some beer and snacks costing 700RMB.

With the thumping sounds of the bass by my side, I spread my Yi Hai, confirming that there were no special practitioners in the nightclub right now. Aside from the normal people, there were a few youngsters who were very arrogant, but they were at the level of local thugs at best.

Shen Bing got closer to me and wrapped her arms around my neck and asked into my ear, "How is it? Confirmed any information?"

I shook my head, "Nothing. Within 3 kilometers, there are no Artificials. I don't feel any special energy."

Shen Bing replied, "That's not surprising.....They don't have any reason to bring a secret weapon such as Artificials into their own business area. Moreover, our goal this time is not the Artificials, but a list."

"Oh? What kind of list?"

"According to the analysis, Artificials were originally normal people. It was only after they were injected with something that their DNA started to mutate. These people were usually people who went missing after being involved with these kinds of predatory places. In this nightclub, more than 10 robust men disappeared without a trace. We need this list."

"How do we find this list?"

"The nightclub's owner, Dong Feng, has it in his possession. According to sources, he'll be here tonight, along with some guy named Drug Lord."

"Drug Lord?"

"Yea. In Hangzhou, he is accounted for more than 40% of every kind of

illegal drugs sold, so he was named the Drug Lord. No one knows his real name. All of the drugs sold by this nightclub are usually obtained from him. Dong Feng values this person greatly, so tonight, he'll accompany the Drug Lord personally and negotiate business with him."

I narrowed my eyes, "In other words, If we can take down Dong Feng, we can get our hands on the checklist?"

"Maybe...." Shen Bing blinked and chuckled in my ear, "Our mission today is to secretly arrest Dong Feng while no one knows and....."

"And what?"

"And...Brat, don't breathe into my ear, I'm getting excited....."

"Enough....."

.....

Shen Bing laughed, lifted a cup, and downed all the beer in it. She looked at me and said, "Hey, there's a worker paying attention to you from behind. He must be one of Dong Feng's men. Don't be too awkward; act more natural. We came here to have fun tonight, so don't let others get suspicious....."

I nodded and grabbed Shen Bing by her waist and drank a cup of beer. Shen Bing got closer to me and with her red lips, she quickly kissed me and laughed, "I got you....."

I was stunned and lowered my head.

"It can't be your first kiss right?"

"No....." I made a fist, "My first kiss was taken away by a carp....."

"A carp? How?"

"The year I was 17, I was following the old man to train in the wild. At that time, I got hungry and jumped into the river to catch a fish. I ate it raw and gave it my first kiss too....."

"Uh. Okay....."

.....

The music started getting more wild, and the youngsters around us started to get more high. There were a few girls selling their performances in the stage. The whole place was completely turned up. I calmly drank my beer while accepting Shen Bing's playful gestures. At the same time, I also kept my Yi Hai spread out. At 11:30, my eyes lit up, and I whispered into Shen Bing's ear, "Careful, I feel 3 special powers quickly approaching. They should have come by car....."

"Ah....."

Shen Bing lightly said, "Darling, you can feel these people's special powers, but how about yourself? I heard from Wang Xin that when you go all out, you also release a very strong special power. Can't they catch your presence too?"

I laughed, "Don't worry. Everyone who is Royal Air level or above can hide their energy. Unless I'm battling with someone, others won't be able to detect me. Of course, if their degree of cultivation is higher than mine in general, they will also sense me. Otherwise, I can feel their energy while they cannot feel mine."

Shen Bing serenely said, "Then do you think there are people stronger than you?"

"There are. But those kinds of experts would not be in the drug dealing business. Don't worry!"

"Ah....."

.....

Not long after, a group of people walked into the nightclub, all dressed casually. The boss looked kind of familiar; he had 3 knife scars on his right cheek. But.... But I couldn't remember where I'd seen him before!

"That's Dong Feng....."

Shen Bing pretended to be drunk, as she coquettishly hugged me, seizing the opportunity to whisper into my ears.

I didn't pay any mind to her charming attitude. My eyes swept across

the group; behind Dong Feng were two bodyguards. From the unperturbed and cold looks in their eyes, they were most likely Artificial. As for whether or not Dong Feng was one, I thought it was likely he was, but I wasn't very sure.

“They're going upstairs.....” I said.

Shen Bing whispered, “Ah, that's not a problem. We'll go to the bathroom and go straight up to the second floor. We'll settle this issue up there!”

“Okay!”

However, at this moment, a hand was placed on Shen Bing's shoulders. An obscene voice laughed, “Hey, isn't this chick pretty nice? How about you come play with us for a bit?”

Chapter 313: Capturing the Drug Lord

I looked up to find a heavily built man who looked to be about 35 years old. He had a menacing aura and a pair of lustful eyes. He was currently looking at Shen Bing's back with desire in his eyes. In a nightclub, it was not rare to find people like this.

Shen Bing turned her body and pushed his hand off of her, "Who are you?"

The man tipsily smirked with an arrogant expression, "You don't know me now, but you'll get to know me. How about we be friends?"

Saying that, he crept his hand towards her again.

Unable to bear it any longer, I blocked his hands as my brows furrowed and said, "Hey bro, she's with someone today. I'm really sorry....."

The drunk man angrily yelled, "Kid, get out of here, who the f*ck do you think you are? You....Don't you recognize this Brother Kun? I....I always get the women I want. Get the hell out of here!"

A youngster behind the man tried to stop him, "Brother Kun, don't make a scene. Let's go back to our table and try to sober up a bit first."

However, Brother Kun shrugged him off and continued to reach his hand towards Shen Bing.

My eyes flashed as I thrust out an arm with a surge of qi. "Bang". "Brother Kun" flew back at least 3 meters and crashed into the wall. He dropped onto the floor and started vomiting. The youngster behind him turned purple and quickly went to help, no longer daring to cause problems for us anymore.

The instant the disturbance was over, the onlookers immediately dispersed.

.....

Shen Bing continued to laugh as she put her arms around my neck, "You're not afraid that being impulsive might cause us problems tonight?"

Hehe.....”

I laughed as well, “Not really. But even if it might cause us problems, I can’t just let others touch sister Shen Bing right in front of me. You’re just as important as the mission. We’re doing this in the name of justice. If you sell yourself out, then what kind of bullsh*t justice are we serving? There are some things that I will definitely not allow....”

“Good.....” Shen Bing smiled sweetly and pressed her whole body against me. I could feel both of her well-developed breasts pushed tightly against me. Even though they were not that big, I practically stopped breathing from their touch. Shen Bing whispered into my ear and laughed, “This sister is starting to like you more and more. Whatever am I supposed to do?”

I glared at her and unhappily said: “Sister Shen Bing..... don’t get too into it, we’re only pretending to be a couple. We’re still colleagues.....”

“I know. Little brat doesn’t even want to give me space in my fantasy. Not romantic at all. Or.....” Shen Bing chuckled seductively into my ears, “Or are you still thinking about Miss Lin Wan Er?”

I shuddered wordlessly.

“Wow, I was right. You’re turning all red.....”

I helplessly replied, “How about we hurry up and go finish the mission.....”

Shen Bing shook her head, “Don’t be impatient, the ‘Drug Lord’ still hasn’t arrived yet. We’ll wait until he and Dong Feng go into the private room before we move. We’ll kill two birds with one stone. Even if Wei Fan uses his influences to bail Dong Feng out afterwards, we can use the Drug Lord’s drugs as an excuse to keep him. Remember, when we enter the room, take the drugs to use as evidence of the exchange.”

“Okay, got it!”

.....

At midnight, finally, a skinny man along with two others entered the

nightclub. They looked around a bit, then went upstairs. There were some bouncers there but after exchanging some words, they went through.

“That’s the Drug Lord.....”

Shen Bing’s face was red as she looked at me and laughed, “Your sister is drunk. What now?”

I gritted my teeth, “We’re on a mission right now, you’re not kidding me right? Then I’ll send you out. You can go home yourself..... and I’ll finish the mission alone!”

Shen Bing chuckled, “I’m kidding, dummy. We’ll start in 10 minutes. I’ll go to the bathroom first and you come over in three minutes. We’ll meet up in the walkway towards the east side of the bathrooms.”

“Okay!”

.....

Ten minutes passed quickly. Shen Bing stood up and walked towards the bathroom. I drank a cup of beer, walked around a bit, rolled up my sleeves and walked to the bathroom as well.

On the east side of the bathroom. Shen Bing looked drunk, and was lying down on a sofa. On the side, a rich youngster was flirting with her.

I walked towards her and reached my hand out. Shen Bing grabbed it and stood up. She smiled at the youngster, “I’ll contact you later, handsome brother.....”

The youngster swallowed his saliva and left.

Shen Bing got closer to me and whispered, “On the right side, there’s a safety door. I’ll go upstairs first and lure the guards away. You run upstairs and go towards the southern side and you’ll see three rooms. They’ll be dealing in the middle room. You must finish this within 30 seconds. Don’t kill anyone; knock the guards out, then grab Dong Feng and the Drug Lord and jump out the window. We have someone outside waiting with the license plate A***001. Go straight to the car and leave. Got it?”

I took a deep breath, “Wow! 30 seconds to knock out 5-7 guards. On top of that, take away Dong Feng and the Drug Lord silently. Sister Shen Bing, I’m a cop, not superman.....”

She looked at me meaningfully and laughed, “Hehe, and you’re a normal cop? Get ready, I’m going up to distract them. Directly kick the door open later, okay?”

“Yes!”

.....

Shen Bing acted drunk with a red face and went up the stairs. She held onto the handles seductively to sell herself some more. When her high heels touched the top floor, she said with a sweet feminine voice, “Hey handsome, I dropped my phone into the toilet. Come help me get it, thanks.....”

“Beautiful, what are you holding in your hands then?”

“I’m talking about my other phone, my Nokia.....”

“Okay!”

The door opened and the youngster followed Shen Bing to the bathroom. I quickly ran upstairs to the middle room. I pressed against the door and could hear people talking—

“Brother Drug Lord, 400RMB a pop is too expensive. I can’t do more than 300!”

“Sigh, Boss Dong, don’t be like this. If I sell this stuff in Nanjing, I can get at least 350. If this isn’t good enough, we really can’t do this business anymore!”

“Fine then. I’ll let you sell it around here. But give me 10% of it, How about it?”

“7% ! ”

“Deal!”

.....

I've already confirmed them. Without further thought, I charged into the room with my fist covered with qi, and suddenly attacked.

“Bang”

The door exploded, and the guards in the room started to attack. I dodged three attacks and struck them in the back of their necks, knocking them out before they could even make a sound!

“Who is this brat!?”

An Artificial roared in anger, as fish scales appeared on his face. This was a D-Class Artificial. After confirming his target, he directly pulled out a gun!

I clearly saw the movement, so I charged towards him, disarmed the gun, and kned him in the chest. I lifted my arms again and this time, with full force, I struck the back of his neck and he fell unconscious. Even if he was an Artificial, he would still get knocked out if I went all out!

With the gun in my hands, I turned around and kicked the Drug Lord, knocking him out. He was an ordinary person.

“Get rid of him!”

The second Artificial had already pulled out his gun and shot at me!

“Bang!”

The gun was equipped with a silencer, but unfortunately, his aim was ordinary. I dodged the bullet and ran towards him. I gave him an upper-hook in his lower jaw; the scales all split apart, and in one hit, he was unconscious!

There was only one person left in the room: the confident Dong Feng sitting there. The three knife scars on his face quickly became covered in fish scales and he cried softly, “Who exactly are you?!”

I didn't say anything, and instead charged at his abdomen. At the same time, I threw him over my shoulder and sent him crashing into the ground, and he lay there in a miserable state. Although he really was an Artificial, his original battle skills were only so-so. He was too inferior to

possibly respond to my speed.

I grabbed a bottle of wine and poured it onto Dong Feng's eyes. He began to yell out and couldn't open his eyes. That way, he couldn't see who I was anymore!

I lifted him up, and repeatedly punched him until he fainted!

Looking at his face, I finally understood why he looked so familiar; he was from [Destiny]. Moreover, he was [Mass Burial]'s Vice Guild Master, Bloody Blade. That third advancement Knight was actually the nightclub's boss!

After picking up the drugs from the table, I lifted Dong Feng and the Drug Lord with each arm, and jumped down from the second floor. I gathered revolving streams of qi beneath my feet. With a "Pa", I landed on the floor and ran forward in the dark. There was a car parked in front of me, an Iveco van. The trunk was already open, so after I dumped the two unconscious people into the car, I quickly got in myself.

"Drive, let's go!"

The officer's voice was familiar; impressively enough, it was Shen Bing. I was surprised, "Sister Shen Bing, you're really fast....."

Shen Bing laughed, "Not as fast as you. Did you finish the mission?"

"Yeah."

I reached into my pocket and took out the drugs and said, "They were exchanging this stuff. Is this enough evidence?"

Shen Bing laughed, "Yeah, this is enough. This time Dong Feng and the Drug Lord will be forced to face the consequences. Even if Wei Fan tries, he probably won't be able to bail them out this time!"

I nodded, "Also Dong Feng might have seen my face, So.... My identity might be exposed. What do we do?"

"Uh...Be a bit more careful then?"

Shen Bing commanded the driver, "Little Hai, drop Li Xiao Yao off over

there. Take a taxi back later! I left my car at the nightclub, and someone will get it tomorrow.....”

I was speechless, “I want reimbursement for the taxi fee.....”

“Pa!”

A red bank note was slapped in front of me. Shen Bing laughed, “Then this will be your reimbursement. You can use the leftovers to treat your darling Wan Er to some midnight snacks. Is sister generous enough?”

“How is this being generous?”

“Bah. Your sister here is giving her favorite kid to another girl. How is this not generous enough? Do you want me to get you guys a hotel room and send both of you in there? Then walk downstairs compliantly to get you guys “The Sixth Sense” and send it up myself? Is that the only way to be generous?”

I was speechless.

Chapter 314: Meeting Yue Qing Qian For the First Time

Around midnight, I returned to Liu Hua University and stood in front of the girls dorm. I gave Wan Er a call, and after a few rings the call went through. However, I was met with the sound of a monster's roar. Clearly she was in the game—

“Wan Er, I've returned to the university.”

“Alright, Dong Cheng and I are grinding levels. Where are you?”

“I'm at the bottom of the girls dorm.”

“Just give me a sec, I'll be offline soon and then we can get a snack. I've got something to tell you....”

“Okay!”

.....

Not long after, the two girls snuck down the stairs. Curfew was at 12, so the two girls were breaking the rules, but they probably didn't really care.

Wan Er jogged over, then carefully looked at me. After she finished making sure I was all in one piece, she asked, “How was it? Was your task successfully completed?”

I nodded and said, “It went without a hitch. Let's go and eat something!”

“Yup.”

Ten minutes later we arrived at the Midnight Bite, a small on-campus restaurant. There we ordered twenty lamb kabobs, twenty veggie kabobs and two roast oysters each. Looking at all of the piping hot and delicious food, I was speechless. I looked over at the two girls and said, “Aren't you girls afraid of getting fat from eating like this?”

Wan Er forcefully pried the cap off the bottle of beer, then looked up and said, “Not really. No matter how much I eat, I won't get fat.....”

“What about you, Dong Cheng?”

Dong Cheng Yue stuck her chest out and said, "It's not a problem for me either. Eating this much is nothing. Besides, even if I get fat, all of it goes to my chest, so I need to eat more to catch up to Wan Er....."

I looked at the two girls' chests, then laughed and said, "I'm afraid that'll be very hard....."

Dong Cheng Yue cried, "Wuwu, go die, you won't even support me one bit....."

I poured out a cup of beer and said, "Why should I support you? There's nothing in it for me if I do...."

Dong Cheng Yue smiled and said, "Says who? If you encourage me, your reward would be knowing two beautiful girls with 34D's. Don't you think that's already worth a fortune?"

The corners of my mouth twitched and I said, "That's enough from you....."

The nearby uncle's eyes bulged as he overheard our conversation; he almost started drooling. Wan Er, on the other hand, just kept calmly eating; she was already used to Dong Cheng Yue's odd personality.

"Why don't you tell me now? Wan Er said that she had something important to tell me. I hope it wasn't just to take you guys out to eat and fatten your breasts?"

"No!"

Wan Er chugged the rest of her drink, "Thirty minutes ago, [Destiny] released another game-wide system announcement. Their first Chinese Server tournament will officially begin. I've heard that this event will be named the 'Rise of the Heroes' Tournament. It's also being called the Heroes' Tournament. Players from the three big cities will be competing against each other and in the end, the top three will be the victors. I heard that the rewards will be extremely generous!"

"Players from all three of the major cities will compete against each other to claim the top three spots. The rewards are rumored to be extremely great."

I couldn't help but smile, "Oh? What are the specifics? One-on-one, or a group melee?"

Dong Cheng Yue laughed, "The Rise of the Heroes event will be a one-on-one fight, so some have dubbed it the World of Mages, Swordsmen, Assassins, and Archers.* Which is not unreasonable given that third advancement Mages have the ability to use [Dimensional Leap] three times. It's extremely possible that they'll be the winners of the tournament. Of course, it also depends on their opponents. Right now, you are a top Swordsman; only a few Mages would be able win against you, right?"

*Gamer Note: Non-dps classes are often bad with 1on1 fights.

"One-on-one....."

I muttered to myself, "This is a great opportunity. When does it begin?"

"The preliminaries will begin in three days at noon, and you can start signing up tomorrow. By the way, the registration fee is 1G....."

"That isn't too expensive; it really is a good chance...."

Wan Er smiled at me and asked, "A good chance for what?"

"Rise of the Heroes is a great opportunity for anyone, especially me. No matter how strong I am, the only name I have made for myself is 'The Dark Horse of Ba Huang City'. Even though I have defeated Jian Feng Han before, nobody thinks that I am better than him since he has such an established reputation. So, if people see me defeat a lot of experts at the tournament, they will no longer doubt me, and I'll become a star overnight!"

Wan Er's beautiful, mesmerizing eyes looked at me as she smiled, "Good luck! Dong Cheng and I are in the same situation since we need to prove ourselves at this tournament as well....."

I nodded and said, "It's too bad that you two are still part of [Hero's Mound]. Otherwise, you would be able to participate under [Zhan Long]'s insignia."

“It’s alright, we’ll defect soon enough.....” Wan Er pursed her lips, then smiled and said, “Hm.... I heard that on the [Zhan Long] forums, there’s a new page called ‘Zhan Long Hall’. And you, the founder, are the only person on the page. If Dong Cheng and I join [Zhan Long], how do we get inducted into the hall?”

I couldn’t help but laugh and said, “Our lady Cang Tong actually cares about superficial things like that?”

“Of course I care.....” Wan Er pouted and said, “I.....I can’t be beaten by Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, or Matcha, now can I?”

I resisted another laugh and said, “Alright, good luck to you Wan Er. There are a lot of ways to join Zhan Long Hall. You just have to do something big and noteworthy. For example, you could lead troops into triumphant victory, or kill an extremely difficult BOSS. You could even try getting a high rank in some big competition. Each time you rise above and beyond, you can try to apply to join Zhan Long Hall. You can show your worth in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament as well. If you represent [Zhan Long] and are able to claim one of the top three spots, then I don’t see any problem with having you inducted into Zhan Long Hall. However, you do need Yue Qing Qian, Li Mu, Wolf and myself to agree before anything happens.”

“Alright.....” Wan Er looked down at the barbequed meat on her plate. Then she smiled and said, “Then I’ll work hard and get a good ranking in this tournament. If I do well, can I go straight into Zhan Long Hall when I join [Zhan Long]?”

“Sure!”

“Alright! It’s a deal!”

“Yup.” I reached my hand out and gave Wan Er a high five, but our hands didn’t separate. Instead, she grasped my hand, and I returned the squeeze. Her hand was slightly cold.

“Hm....?”

Wan Er looked up at me, her eyes full of innocence and naïvety, as

though she couldn't see the dark side of the world. Her face turned into one of surprise as she said, "You bastard, why aren't you letting go? Dong Cheng, he's taking advantage of me....."

Dong Cheng Yue was wrestling with her oyster when she said, "Brother Xiao Yao is taking advantage of you? Uh..... Meh, I don't really care. Wan Er, you should be happy instead....."

Wan Er was speechless.

.....

At that moment, my cell phone rang. The call came from Yue Qing Qian--

"Hello? Qing Qian?"

"Brother Xiao Yao!"

"What's up? Why are you calling me so late at night?"

"Of course it's for something important. Tomorrow, my mom, sister, and I are coming to Hangzhou. I was wondering if you had time to take me out to play? You said before that you'd take me to Xixi Wetlands park....."

I was delighted when I heard her news and quickly said, "Alright. It just so happens that, Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and I were planning on going to Xixi Wetlands. Why don't you bring Wei Liang over too?"

"Yup, then..... how about we meet in front of Xixi Wetlands' front gate at 1pm?"

"Alright, we can call each other when the time comes!"

"Yup! What color do you like girls wearing?"

"Blue!"

"Got it, then I'll wear a pink dress!"

"Alright...."

.....

After I hung up, I explained the situation to the girls, and they

cheerfully agreed to the outing. The two didn't feel threatened since they were both twenty year old beauties, whereas Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang were seventeen year old lolis. Thus, they would never lose in real life; they had at least that much self confidence. After all, these two were known as Liu Hua University's most beautiful girls. Heaven knows how inflated their egos were in regards to their appearances!

On the next day, I went to grind my skills in Firestone Canyon until 11. After that, I got off to eat. I immediately got back on to register at 12 o'clock!

Ba Huang City was bustling with activity, as an NPC registrar for Rise of the Heroes spawned in each of the big cities. The guards were all dressed in colorful clothing, as though there was about to be a wedding. Crowds gathered around them; there were too many players that wanted to register in the afternoon. I also saw quite a few familiar faces: Li Mu, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, and Jian Feng Han were all among the people waiting to register.

(TL Note: Chinese weddings are traditionally very colorful and filled with red outfits, as it is thought to bring good luck. Same applies for big events like tournaments and competitions.)

In the sea of people, Han Bei Song, who was carrying his longswords, was being pushed around like a stray wave. He did everything in his power to hold onto Who's Blue so she wouldn't be swept away. He then, when he was sure she was securely by his side, pushed forward and yelled out, "Hey Guild Master Xiao Yao, you also joining Rise of the Heroes?"

I nodded and said, "Yup, how can I miss such a big tournament? I heard that the rewards are also great...."

Han Bei Song's face hardened as he said, "Damn. If you participate, then my ranking will definitely fall a spot. I was planning on aiming for the top 16. I just hope that we don't meet before the last 16 rounds, or else dying at the hands of a comrade is just not right!"

"Don't worry, it wouldn't be that heart-wrenching!"

"Yup, then I'll see you at the top 16....."

“Haha, then I wish you luck on making your way to the top 16....”

“Thanks! I can tell you truly mean it.....”

“Your hearing’s really good.....”

“Get out!”

.....

Finally, I used my superhuman strength to push my way to the NPCs and took out 1G to register. The candid uncle laughed and said, “Alright, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Congratulations on becoming one of the participants of the Rise of the Heroes Tournament. Good luck, and may you uphold the honor of Ba Huang City!”

Registering was a success, time to go offline!

I ran straight for the girls dorm, where Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were already waiting. The three of us drove the TT and went straight towards Xixi Wetlands.

At 12:50, we made it to Xixi Wetlands and parked our car, and then walked together to the front gate. There were a lot of visitors today, and among all of the people coming, there were quite a few pretty women. But with Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue by my side, those women all paled in comparison. I gained a lot of attention, especially from other young male visitors, who all seemed to want to kill me.

I was a little nervous and said, “Qing Qian said that she changed her appearance in the game a bit, but I don’t know what she looks like in real life.....”

Wan Er lightly smiled and said, “She must be really pretty. See, isn’t that her over there?”

I looked over and discovered a girl in a pink skirt and white shirt. She was extremely cute, with delicate cheeks, long hair, and slender legs. One glance was enough for me to tell that she would grow up to become a great beauty. I also noticed that she carried a cucumber and was “Ka cha ka cha” biting it. When she looked over, her slim eyebrows suddenly

raised and she said, “That.... Why hasn’t Brother Xiao Yao come?!”

I shuddered and said, “F*ck, that Qing Qian, what’s up with that cucumber!?”

RP Notes:

What is the use of a cucumber?

smash gege head!

Chapter 315: The Poetically Beautiful Qing Qian

I finally decided to walk right up to them. Once I stood right in front of Yue Qing Qian, she stared at me in shock. Her beautiful eyes carried her pleasant surprise along with a small fraction of embarrassment. After a few moments, she carefully asked, “Are you..... Brother Xiao Yao?”

I stuck my hand out with a smile and said, “I’m Li Xiao Yao, my ID is Xiao Yao Zi Zai. And you are?”

“I.....” Yue Qing Qian stuck her hand out as well to shake mine. Her face was bright red as she said, “I’m Nan Gong Yong Cun, ID Yue Qing Qian. Brother Xiao Yao, you’re just as handsome as you are in the game.....”

I rubbed my nose awkwardly and said, “Not really, I just didn’t change my appearance..... Qing Qian, are you hungry? You were gnawing on such a big cucumber in the middle of the street.....”

Yue Qing Qian made a big smile and said, “Cucumbers can be used to beautify yourself. It’s good to eat a lot... um....”

She tilted her head to look at the two beauties next to me, and said in a stunned voice, “Woah, those two.... are Cang Tong and Cang Yue? Wuwu..... to think that Brother Xiao Yao has such beautiful girls with him.....”

Wan Er reached out and said, “I’m Cang Tong, Lin Wan Er!”

Dong Cheng Yue also stuck her hand out and said, “I’m Cang Yue, Dong Cheng Yue!”

Yue Qing Qian shook each of their hands and said, “I must have great luck today, meeting Fan Shu City’s two most beautiful women. Brother Xiao Yao, you should’ve told me earlier.....”

“Oh, that..... I forgot. Oh right, where’s Wei Liang?”

“She went to buy some drinks, she should be coming soon.....”

“Ok!”

Nearby, someone called out “Big sister!” A girl wearing a pink dress similar to Yue Qing Qian’s appeared. On top of that, the two looked exactly the same. As expected, they were identical twins in real life!

“Ah.....” Yue Wei Liang looked at me, and the drinks in her hand fell to the ground. “This.... this is Guildmaster Brother Xiao Yao? How handsome, just like in the game....”

I nodded and smiled, “Good afternoon, Wei Liang!”

Yue Qing Qian suddenly smirked mischievously and started tugging my arm as she said, “Brother Xiao Yao, turn around and don’t look. How about we play a game?”

“Uh, a game?”

Although quite a few people stopped to watch what the four pretty girls around me were doing, I wasn’t disheartened yet. I turned around; behind me, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang whispered a few times. After a few seconds, one of them laughed and said, “Alright, Brother Xiao Yao, turn around!”

When I turned around, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang stood there coyly, looking at me. They giggled in unison and asked, “Can Brother Xiao Yao still guess who’s Qing Qian, and who’s Wei Liang?”

“This.....”

I muttered to myself, then walked closer. Amongst the two of them, one held a drink while the other held a cucumber, but it was definitely not that simple. Then, I stood in front of the two and stared into their faces. I smiled and tapped the left girl’s shoulder and said, “This is Qing Qian, without a doubt.....”

Yue Qing Qian’s beautiful eyes widened as she said, “This.... How did Brother Xiao Yao tell Yue Wei Liang and I apart with just one look? Even our uncle wouldn’t be able to tell the difference between the two of us instantly.....”

I pursed my lips and said, “Although you switched the things you were holding, Yue Qing Qian, you can’t change that smell of cucumber in your

mouth. Aren't you underestimating my intelligence a bit too much?"

Yue Qing Qian burst into laughter and said, "Alright, Brother Xiao Yao is just too amazing! When should we go in? Mama said that Yue Wei Liang and I have to return to the hotel by 6, or else she'll come looking for us....."

I turned around towards the ticket booth and bought 5 tickets. Afterwards, I gave one to each girl, and the five of us entered the newly opened Xixi Wetlands.

There were quite a few people inside the park. Perhaps because of the fact that it had just rained, the grass on either sides of the road were partially submerged. The smell of musty autumn mud filled our noses, enchanting us all. We had all been immersed in the game for a whole month, so going to a park like Xixi Wetlands was a rare chance to relax. Thus, we thoroughly enjoyed the chance to get outdoors.

On the rivers of Xixi Wetlands, there was a sightseeing boat, but we decided to not ride it. Instead, we walked along the banks as we talked about the game—

Yue Qing Qian said, "Brother Xiao Yao, do you know about the Rise of the Heroes event?"

"Yup! I registered before coming. How about you and Wei Liang?"

"We've already registered." Yue Qing Qian smiled and said, "The hotel my sister and I are staying at is right beside this park, so it's really close. That's right, now that Brother Xiao Yao has the Emperor Qin's Sword, the Magic Spite Armor, and the Flaming Tiger God pet, you're pretty much all set. I think that it's a great opportunity for you. If Brother Xiao Yao can fight up to the top four, it will be an immense boost to the morale of our guild!"

I nodded and smiled, saying, "Not just for me, it's the same for you and Wei Liang. You guys need to do everything in your power to get a good rank. If 3-5 of [Zhan Long]'s elite players end up in the top 15, then [Zhan Long]'s name would be renowned throughout the world. After all, [Zhan Long] is only well known in Ba Huang City. There are probably very few

people outside of Ba Huang City who have heard of us.”

Wan Er toyed with a piece of grass in her hand and wryly smiled, “That’s not true. [Zhan Long] is already pretty famous in Fan Shu City. At least, everyone knows that [Vanguard], the third biggest guild on the Chinese Server, has a thorn in its eye; that’s [Zhan Long], whose guildmaster is Xiao Yao Zi Zai, ranked 22nd on CBN. That pretty much sums it up.”

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled and said, “Yup, Xiao Yao’s strength has improved by leaps and bounds. It has exceeded everyone’s expectations and that’s something that I can vouch for!”

Yue Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao is the strongest, and he’s very smart as well. From all the videos of his battles that I saved, I can almost guarantee that in every battle he’s been in, from the battle in Green Qilin Valley against [Wrath of Heroes] to the battles in the City of Ancients Brother, Xiao Yao’s skills and battle tactics have been constantly improving. Brother Xiao Yao has already transformed from a normal expert to an elite master. He’s not far from the apex of elite players, but he just lacks the opportunity to make the last jump.....”

I was amazed and said, “What kind of a jump?”

Beside me Wan Er smiled, revealing her cute dimples. She began explaining, “Every expert has one battle that propels them to fame, an instance that reveals their strength to the world. For example, 4 years ago, Jian Feng Han became famous with one victorious battle in a game called [Conquest] at an NGL World Tournament, securing his place as [Conquest]’s number one. Another example is that five years ago, Fang Ge Que had successfully invented a way to combine ice and fire magic in battle and accomplished the impossible when he defeated the player known to be the Lord of the game, ‘Shen Lin’, with only 1 HP left. That battle made him renowned throughout the world. From then on, all of the players in China remembered the ID ‘Fang Ge Que’, and he became a legend. As for you, maybe you also need that one victory in order to reach the peak of fame like Fang Ge Que, Q Sword, or Jian Feng Han!”

Yue Qing Qian's jaw dropped as she said in astonishment, "Wa, Sister Cang Tong's an expert on game history! Amazing!"

Wan Er started to blush, "Not really. I'm just a typical fan of games, so I happen to know a lot about the recent achievements of expert gamers."

Dong Cheng Yue teased, "Actually, there's more. In the legends of the top gamers of [Conquest], Wan Er and I have made our marks on history as well. In the 2016 WGL World Tournament, a beauty with the ID 'Yue Tong' made her debut. After participating in that competition, she represented the honor of her class, and became the symbol of Assassins by defeating the Battle Demon, 'Yue Yun'. With that one battle, she became the role model of all Assassins in the whole China server. Hehe, I'm right, aren't I?"

Wan Er's face turned several shades redder and muttered, "That, that..... Good men don't brag about their past achievements....."

I couldn't help but smile and tease her, "Well, you aren't a good man....."

Wan Er brandished her fist and lightly punched me, "Asshole, now you only help Dong Cheng and not me....."

I grabbed her wrist and said, "Not at all, I'm very happy to help you. But, you have to treat us to a meal tonight. How about it?"

"Wu....." Her wrist was held tightly in my grasp, and her face turned bright red, "Alright, alright, I will if you just let go. Qing Qian and the others are all watching, I.... I will....."

I awkwardly released my grip and said, "The weather is very nice today....."

Wan Er also looked up and replied, "Yea, the sun is so strong...."

Drops of rain began falling onto the beautiful little miss's cheeks, as though the sky was mocking us for saying such an obvious lie.

.....

As we chatted while walking, the drizzle became heavier, turning into a downpour. I brought the girls to find a place to hide from the rain. After

some searching, we all went to the pavilion of a teahouse and sat down. A waitress came over to pour some tea for us, and we carefully sipped from our cups, savoring the tea's aroma. At the same time, I noticed that there was a famous poem carved into the wall. On it were two lines of text—

The river flows into another as the scent of moonlight floats through the air.

.....

“The river flows into another as the scent of moonlight floats through the air.”

I recited the poem under my breath, then looked over at Yue Qing Qian and smiled, “Qing Qian, I feel like these two lines, when shortened, happens to be your ID in [Destiny]....”

(TL Note: Qing Qian's name is in the first line of the poem)

Yue Qing Qian blinked at me a few times then laughed and said, “Stupid Brother Xiao Yao, this is from Bei Song's Last Seven Lines. Wu.... At the time, I was too young, so I didn't fully understand the meaning of the poem. I just took on the name since I thought Yue Qing Qian sounded pretty nice. Afterwards, my sister chose the name Yue Wei Liang....”

I couldn't help but smile in admiration and said proudly, “Hm, that's really nice. To think that our [Zhan Long] was full of extraordinary people. Our members are all dignified, profound, ambitious, and extremely well-cultured.....”

Yue Qing Qian's face flushed, and she said, “What are you saying to yourself, I can't understand you....”

Dong Cheng Yue face palmed and said, “Brother Xiao Yao is such an idiot.....”

.....

Not long after, the rain finally came to a stop, and everyone continued to meander around the wetlands park. The sky began to darken, so we left the park. With Wan Er paying, we went to a famous restaurant nearby

and had a hearty dinner. Afterwards, we sent Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang back to their hotel. They were only staying in Hangzhou for a day, and were flying back tomorrow. We didn't exchange many goodbyes; instead, I made sure to remind them to work hard at the Rise of the Heroes Tournament, and help [Zhan Long] demonstrate our strength by advancing to the top ranks!

Chapter 316: I'll Raise the Flag with you!

I spent the next three days almost entirely inside the game. I killed quite a few Purple Tier BOSSes and finally grinded my level up to 71. Raising my level after 70 was extremely hard, but since I had already raised all of my skills to Lv 8, I had already achieved my main goal. Rise of the Heroes comprised of one-on-one fights, so each individual's skills were critical. For example, at Lv 7, my [Combo] attacks 4 times, but at Lv 8 it attacks 4-5 times, with a high probability that there are 5 attacks. This made it more unbeatable.

The Flaming Tiger God had also been raised to Lv 71. It had 2840-3350 attack, 2130 defense, and with [Flame Armor], its defense had increased to over 4000. The chances of the Flaming Tiger God being injured while this skill was in use were very low, unless it was attacked by a high level player like Jian Feng Han. Thus, the tiger now had the ability to survive independently. In addition to that, its attack range was terrifying. This little tiger would be my major ace in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament!

Based on the rules of the tournament, every time someone participated, all of their BUFFs would be wiped; this implied that I wouldn't be able to use the [Kill for Blood]'s 50% increase. My base attack would only be 3885, unable to rise any further.

....

On the third morning, I went online at 9 o'clock, since the tournament was going to start at noon.

Carrying the Emperor Qin's Sword, I stood in front of Ba Huang City's North Gate plaza. In the distance, National Beauty was crowded with buyers looking to buy our products. After flipping through the details, I saw that close to 11M RMB was exchanged from selling yesterday's equipment. Of that, 90% was given to the players that were selling their equipment and only 10% went to the store, but that was still quite a decent amount. All of the funds went to [Zhan Long]'s treasury, which currently stored more than 5M RMB. As the days went by, [Zhan Long]'s

time of fortune was also nearing.

With a “beep”, I received a message from Matcha, “Boss, [Zhan Long] has advanced all the way to a Lv 4 guild with 17% experience. How’s that? Impressive, right? We’re only 83% away from becoming a Lv 5 guild.....”

I opened my inbox and replied, “Yup, impressive. Keep it up! Also, how’s our [First Division]’s set-up going?”

Matcha’s eyelashes fluttered as she smiled and said, “Yesterday, as we were looking for a Guild Creation Tablet, [Prague]’s Windy Walker obtained one and was willing to sell it to us. I discussed the price with him and we settled for 200,000RMB. If Boss just agrees to the exchange, then [Zhan Long’s First Division] should be done setting up. Also, we haven’t decided on the Guild Master for the [First Division]. Boss, who do you think it should be?”

TL Note: We are changing the format of the First Division guildnames, from this dayforth it shall be [Guildname’s First Division]

I thought for a second, then said, “[Zhan Long: First Division] will be the strongest division outside of our main guild. The Guild Master needs to have a certain amount of prestige and needs to be someone we’re very close with.... Do you have any suggestions Matcha?”

“Actually, the best person to be the Guild Master of [First Division] is General Li Mu. His reputation is definitely high enough, and he’s bros with you and Wolf, so you don’t have to worry about trust. It’s just that he’s the boss of the Valiant Bravery Group, so his position can’t be easily changed. What do you think, Boss? Who’s a good choice to be the Guild Master?”

I muttered to myself for a long time before I said, “Let’s give it Wang Jian then. He’s got a good head on his shoulders, and his strength isn’t far behind Li Mu’s. Moreover, he’s Valiant Bravery’s trump card. What do you think of him becoming the Guild Master?”

Matcha smiled broadly and said, “Yup, not a bad choice. Are you going to tell him then?”

“Yep!”

.....

Opening my phone, I called up Wang Jian—

“Brother Xiao Yao?” Wang Jian chuckled and said, “Why do you have the time to talk? Don’t you have to prepare for the Rise of the Heroes Tournament?”

I wryly smiled and said, “Wang Jian, we’ve already created [Zhan Long: First Division]. It’s Ba Huang City’s 119th guild. Cough, right now, all we’re missing is a strong and capable Guild Master. Matcha and I discussed it, and we felt that you were the most suitable candidate. You... are you willing to lead the brothers of [Zhan Long: First Division] to make their mark on Ba Huang City and become a great guild?”

Wang Jian was stunned and gasped, “This.... Brother Xiao Yao, I’ve never thought of myself as a Guild Master. I’m afraid that I don’t have the capabilities to become one. You know that I would rush to the frontlines of a battle without a single complaint, but if you want me to lead or command an army, I’m afraid that I won’t be competent enough.....”

“No problem. How would you know without even trying?” I patted my chest and said, “When I first created [Zhan Long], I had never thought that I would be a Guild Master either, but hasn’t everything turned out well thus far? We’ll just settle it like this, and you will be our [First Division]’s Guild Master. Matcha will contact you and give you the Guild Creation Tablet, as well as the funds necessary to create a guild. We’ve also prepared 1000+ people to join; you just have to take care of inviting them to the guild and leveling the guild up.”

Wang Jian chewed it over for a bit before finally nodding with a smile, “Okay. Since Brother Xiao Yao thinks so highly of me, I won’t disappoint you! But..... I need around 50 of Valiant Bravery’s brothers to go with me and keep up the front, or else it’d be very hard to rush levels with just some noobs.....”

I nodded and said, “Yeah, that’s not a problem. Then it’s set!”

“Okay!”

.....

Like that, I stood on Ba Huang City’s plaza. Not long after, Matcha handed the Guild Creation Tablet and funds to Wang Jian. After a few more minutes, a guild named [Zhan Long: First Division] was created; its Guild Master was Wang Jian. He had a few of [Zhan Long]’s experts as the Vice Guild Master, elders, and team leaders. As expected, it was Ba Huang City’s 119th guild. Now that everyone’s levels were getting increasingly higher, the Guild Creation Tablets weren’t very hard to obtain, especially since Gold Tier and Purple Tier BOSSes were all over the place. Ba Huang City was already in a situation where 119 big and small guilds struggled for power. Super guilds like [Vanguard] and [Prague] had already made 3-7 divisions. [Zhan Long]’s growth rate was actually relatively slower.

However, there was no need to rush. I just wanted quality members. Being like [Flying Dragon] or [Wrath of the Heroes] who only wanted a large number of players for bragging rights wouldn’t do. [Wrath of the Heroes: First Division] had close to 1000 people, whereas [Zhan Long]’s main guild only needed to send 100 of our elites to eliminate them all!

Wang Jian stood in the plaza to invite people. On his shoulder was the insignia of [Zhan Long: First Division]. Li Mu laughed as he picked up his sword and strode over, saying, “Brother! Congratulations on becoming Guild Master!”

Wang Jian’s face was full of helplessness as he said, “Don’t tease me, boss. Brother Xiao Yao had only entrusted the position to me because it was a critical moment. Did you think I would have readily left the main guild?”

Bai Qi clapped a hand onto Wang Jian’s shoulder and chuckled, “Do it well. We’re going to miss you over at the main guild. Besides, when the [First Division] rises up, he might assign someone else to become the Guild Master and when you come back to the main guild, you will still be our popular team leader.....”

Yue Qing Qian pursed her red lips and said, “What are you talking about? How is a team leader as popular as a Guild Master?”

Li Mu laughed, “A team leader of [Zhan Long] is different. Look at One Second Hero, that bastard. He’s been asking to become a team leader everyday, but Guild Master is totally ignoring him.....”

In the distance, One Second Hero leaned against a wall and felt a shiver. Lifting his head, he muttered to himself, “Why do I feel like people are badmouthing me behind my back?”

Li Mu teased, “Brother, don’t misunderstand. We aren’t badmouthing you behind your back. We were saying it in front of your face!”

One Second Hero lifted his arm to pull out the spear on his back. It glinted coldly in the light as he said, “Looks like you don’t love me anymore! Brother Li Mu, don’t bother wasting your words anymore, and pull out your sword! I’m going to raise the flag!”

And thus, [Zhan Long]’s second best Knight and second best Swordsman began dueling in the arena. One minute and twenty-one seconds later, One Second Hero knelt to the ground. Although his attack and defense were pretty good, One Second Hero’s maneuvers were still incomparable to Li Mu’s. Thus he was defeated by the continuous damage from [Icy Spear], which whittled away at his health. Even after drinking a Lv 10 potion, the damage could not be repaired. By the time Li Mu had won, he still had 44% of his health left, enough to show that he was truly superior.

The two bastards gave a great opening scene; the area began to fill with the sound of clashing blades. It was Old K v.s. Song Han, Yue Qing Qian v.s. Thousand Suns, Matcha v.s. Dancing Forest, Yue Wei Liang v.s. Wang Jian. Each had their winners and losers, and the environment for competition was better than ever. It allowed the members to warm up right before the Rise of the Heroes Tournament, as everyone and their opponents were compatible in terms of strength.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao!” Wolf picked up his dagger and walked over with a

smile, “Today at 12, the Rise of the Heroes Tournament will officially begin. The three big cities will be participating, and over 7M people will be present. In other words, you’ve got to win 22 times in a row to seize one of the top spots..... and the top 32 will be selected today. Tomorrow will be the fight to determine the champion. Today, however, you will have to fight around 17 rounds. It’s a test of stamina, so you need to eat more for lunch.....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “You guys are the ones that need to eat more. My body’s fine; there’s nothing wrong with it. Besides, my appetite is great..... Little Wolf, you need to step it up and work on getting into the top 32. If you just get into the top 32, then you’ll basically be qualified as one of the top Assassins on the Chinese Server.....”

“Eh, top Assassin.....”

Wolf waved his dagger, then laughed out loud, “I don’t even dare to have that big of a dream; the number of expert Assassins is just too high. My equipment, pet, battle tactics and skills aren’t even top notch. Last night, when I was practicing with Yue Qing Qian, we dueled 17 times. I only won 4 of those rounds, and I was only able to win because I had landed some critical hits in succession.....”

I clapped him on his shoulder in encouragement, “All in all, I wish you the best of luck and hope that you’ll be among the top 32 in tomorrow’s tournament!”

“Yeah, I’ll do my best. You too, Brother Xiao Yao, you must also get into the top 32. Within [Zhan Long], the only one who wields an incomparable strength worthy of the champion title is probably you.....”

I nodded and said, “Yup, I will do my best. However..... we’ve only established ourselves in Ba Huang City; this Rise of the Heroes Tournament is for the entire country. Jiu Li City’s and Fan Shu City’s elites will appear. This isn’t any minor challenge; there are too many experts amongst the three great cities.....”

“Yea, let’s all do our best in these battles, and leave with no regrets!”

“Alright!”

.....

At 11 o'clock, I went offline and took the two beauties to go eat some Korean cuisine. Wan Er's and Dong Cheng Yue's cheeks had become flushed from the spiciness of the food. They had no choice but to participate in the Rise of the Heroes competition burning hot!*

(Editor Note: Pun intended. Literally implying their sexiness)

I stood below the girls' dorm, watching as Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue headed up the stairs.

"Rise of the Heroes, let's work hard and make it into the top 32!" I whispered into the distance with a smile.

At that moment, Wan Er suddenly stopped in her tracks and turned around. She jogged over to me and gave me a hug as she sweetly chimed, "Here, let me give you some encouragement....."

I was stunned. Not far from us, the secret bodyguard uncle who was previously sipping his tea calmly, "Pu" spat his tea out onto the bushes when he saw the young miss hugging me.

Wan Er's lips widened into a smile. She let go and patted my chest, "Hurry up now! Good luck!"

"Yup."

I stood there stunned; the warmth of her two mounts still lingered on my chest from when she had hugged me. Suddenly, my heart started beating violently. Happiness rushed through my chest, and I felt like all of my efforts would not go to waste.

Chapter 317: Chopped up and fed to the dogs!

It was noon when I logged on!

“Shua!”

At 11:45, I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City, and immediately received a notification:

System Notification: The [Rise of the Heroes] Tournament will start in 15 minutes. You have already registered. Do you want to enter the tournament area?

After accepting, my body was transported away by magic into an illusionary space. At the same time, a message appeared: Player [Yue Qing Qian] invites you to join waiting room 27719. Do you wish to accept?

After accepting again, I entered into Qing Qian's room. The maximum number of people that could be inside was 20!

The Yue twins stood nearby as Matcha, Wolf, and the others each came in. Qing Qian then gave me the power to invite and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, bring the two beauties Cang Tong and Cang Yue here. If you don't, they'll probably beat you offline later.”

I wordlessly invited them. With a “Shua Shua”, two rays of light appeared and the two beauties entered the room. The 20 people limit was reached already. Most of the players were the core members of [Zhan Long]; actually, Wan Er and Dong Cheng counted as one of us as well. Even Q-Sword couldn't do anything about it; this was the advantage in being intimate closely to someone.

.....

“It's going to start soon. This is so exciting. This is [Destiny]'s first large scale tournament event...” Qing Qian made a fist and nervously laughed.

I glanced at her, “Don't be nervous. Listen to me. Just use [Sneak] + [Ambush] continuously and use [God's Dance] to avoid the attacks. Then

use [Gouge] and [Twin Blade Harmony]. With your strength, you'll probably reach the the top 64 easily.....”

Wan Er held her Emperor Tier dagger in hand and her umbrella on her back. Her leather armor was tightly wrapped around her body, revealing her 34D breasts and curves. She looked at the countdown and laughed, “Heh. We don’t even know who our first opponent is, nor what kind of tactics we should use to win. Aren’t you being a bit ridiculous.....”

I squinted at her and said, “You’re the one panicking.....”

Old K lifted his battle axe and joked, “Beautiful Wan Er, if you meet our Xiao Yao in the first round, would you show no mercy and send him home?

Wan Er smiled, “No way! How can I let my Brother Xiao Yao lose in one round? If I meet him, I’ll forfeit. But..... if I somehow meet you in the first round, I won’t be showing any mercy and slaughter you. It’ll feel good, you know. With your defense, my [Twin Blade Harmony] and my dagger’s armor penetration ability, I will definitely deal more than 3000 damage to you.....”

Old K shuddered and walked back a few steps, “Li Xiao Yao, control your miss better.....”

I blinked, “You even said she was my miss, how am I supposed to control her....?!”

Dong Cheng laughed, “Okay now, all of you are just teasing our Wan Er.....

Dancing Forest nonchalantly said, “It was obviously the miss here bullying the weak and teasing our number one Berserker Old K.....”

“Is Old K weak?” Wang Jian stared at him.

Li Mu nodded, and looked at Old K, then back at Wan Er, and said, “Don’t judge how strong he is based on his [Whirlwind Blade] and [Savage Jump Slash]. Compared to Cang Tong, he wouldn’t even have the chance to be scared. In front of Cang Tong, he is incomparably weak.”

Wang Jian: “.....”

.....

After a few minutes, the countdown finished. “Ding” the screen in front of us started to show the battle information—

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Night Watch] vs Dawn of Heroes [Lv 66 Gold Swordsman]

Cang Tong [Lv 70 Gold Assassin] vs Xuan Xiao Yu [Lv 63 Gold Swordsman]

Cang Yue [Lv 70 Gold Mage] vs Run Fast Bunnies [Lv 57 Silver Mage]

.

Yue Qing Qian [Lv 69 Gold Assassin] vs Alluring Snow [Lv 65 Gold Mage]

Little Wolf [Lv 67 Gold Assassin] VS Running Snail [Lv 61 Gold Berserker]

Strawberry Matcha [Lv 65 Phantom Knight] vs Liquor [Lv 67 Gold Knight]

.....

Looking at the screen, I took a deep breath and said, “Aside from Matcha, none of us should have any problems. Matcha’s opponent is at a higher level and is an expert from Jiu Li City.....”

Wan Er looked at the screen and said, “Matcha, be careful. Since this is the qualification round, the system is using the Best of One rule, so you can’t lose a single round. If you win, you move on. If you lose, you’re eliminated. That Knight should also have high defense, but if you use [Phantom Ray Slash] in a battle of endurance, you’ll win. If you use [Holy Shield] and [Phantom Holy Shield] to double your defense, he won’t be able to break through.”

Matcha nodded, “Mhm, I got it!”

One Second Hero looked at the screen and laughed, “To be honest, Guild

Master has the most luck. To think that you will be meeting Dawn of Heroes in the first round, someone you already know: [Wrath of the Heroes]'s captain, Tang Xue's old acquaintance...."

Thousand Sun Over Snowy Lands said lightly, "I don't know him. One Second...you've said enough...."

One Second Hero's face turned green, "One Second... Don't call me One Second...."

Yue Qing Qian smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, will you show mercy?"

I thought about it and said, "I'll finish him in One Second...."

One Second Hero completely collapsed, "Can you guys not say "One Second" any more? I'll treat you guys to a feast later. We can even go to Golden Leopards....."

Everyone laughed.

.....

The system notice started to count down. I held my breath. Everyone was extra nervous, especially since the Rise of the Heroes Tournament was [Destiny]'s first tournament; moreover, it was a Best of One tournament. We couldn't afford to make any mistakes.

"Shua!"

The battlefield was a 100×100 arena with green tiles on the ground. There were four poles at each corner of the arena. There were also three flags with pictures on them: a battle axe, a short sword and a wolf's head. Each representing their respective city: Ba Huang City, Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City.

At the same time I entered the arena, I received a system notice.

"Ding!"

System Notification: Please be aware that due to the rules and limitations of the tournament, you are unable to use the following skills: [Black Tortoise Realm], [Soul Army], and [Seven Star Teleportation].

.....

F*ck. This is what it means to be truly weakened. They actually banned me from using my special PK skills from the [Mohist Five Scrolls]. If I couldn't use [Black Tortoise Realm], and [Seven Star Teleportation], then I'd be even more pressured when I faced high level Mages. Heck, I'd probably be killed from being kited. This sucked. If I met a skilled player, I could probably only rely on my Flaming Tiger God and my double [Blade Rush] to kill.

In front of me was Dawn of Heroes. Standing up, he picked up his sword, his face full of resentment as he stared at me and said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I still owe you for taking Tang Xue from me!"

I didn't say anything, looked around at the flags and sighed, "Ah. This is a caveman's drawing, no wonder why it looked so familiar....."

Dawn of Heroes became even more infuriated, "You motherf*cker. Who do you think you are? Aren't you the one who relied on [Valiant Bravery]'s people to start a guild? Bah. I'll let you know what happens when you steal my woman. Don't think that Tang Xue will be safe if she's in [Zhan Long]. I know her in real life; I can find her there too."

At that moment, the countdown reached 0!

I was filled with killing intent and immediately rushed over as I slid the Emperor Qin's Sword from its sheath. I stopped right in front of him to test his blade.

"653 ! "

What kind of attack was this? This wouldn't be a problem for me.

My body dipped as I thrust my blade forward. I automatically moved forward 2 yards, turned my body around, and used [Wind Blade] on Dawn of Heroes. It dealt 2765 points of damage. "Kacha", my sword went through his chest with a normal attack, dealing another 1987 points of damage. Naturally, Dawn of Hero's life bar quickly emptied as he looked at me with dismay.

My eyes grew cold as I looked at his kneeling form and said, "Dawn of

Heroes, if you dare touch Tang Xue in real life, I'll chop you up and feed you to dogs. Go ahead and try!"

"Ka....."

After pulling out my blade, a bell sound appeared.

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, You have defeated Player [Dawn of Heroes]. You have successfully moved on to the next round of the tournament.

.....

With a "Shua", I was sent back to the tournament waiting room. I was the only one there; the others were all still in battle. The screen in front of me showed twenty smaller panels each broadcasting our battles. On one of them, Wan Er was dancing with her umbrella and knocking away Xuan Xiao Yu's sword. She closed her umbrella and lifted both of her daggers, skillfully flicking them as she activated [Twin Blade Harmony], killing Xiao Yu with a single stab.

In another panel, Dong Cheng's [Magma Lance] was raging in the arena, quickly finishing her battle as well.

After winning their fights, everyone came out one by one. Only Matcha remained in the arena. She was facing an experienced Knight and it had already been nearly two minutes. Both Knights were using [Cleansing Wind] to continuously to replenish their health, so it was hard to determine the outcome of the battle.

.....

"Uhhh....."

Yue Qing Qian facepalmed, "Sister Matcha misfired her [Phantom Ray Slash] again.... I can't bear to watch this anymore...."

I laughed, "This is the real Matcha. However she's already trying her best. Liquor's movement and anticipation aren't bad. It's already impressive that she's been able to keep up with the pace....."

Wan Er put her head down and checked the rankings, "Liquor's CBN Ranking is 1722. It seems like it'll be pretty hard for Matcha to win."

Little Wolf held up his dagger and with a stern face, said, "Sister Matcha is still lacking in her aim and is not that experienced with it yet. If she was, she would've destroyed that Liquor guy already."

Old K clenched his fists, "Come on Matcha!"

.....

On the screen, Liquor activated [Flame Axe] and [Skyshaker Slash] at the same time, while Matcha used [Phantom Holy Shield] and [Heavenly Shield Wall]. She then sent her Illusionary Butterfly to attack and activated [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] at Liquor. Finally, Matcha used her own [Flame Axe] and [Skyshaker Slash] and combined with the Illusionary Butterfly's magic attack, she wiped out Liquor's remaining health. She had won!

"Shua!"

As the last one to exit, Matcha's win was the most challenging. Her entire face was flushed and she was breathing heavily. Her 34C breasts bounced up and down and said, "This guy actually asked me for my phone number. While he was taking down my phone number, I took the opportunity to attack him continuously and killed him...."

I was speechless.

Little Wolf gave a thumbs up, "Wow. There really is a knife above the word lust. Brother Liquor died unjustly...."

[TL Note: The chinese character for lust (色) looks like it has the character for Knife (刀) on top of it.]

Yue Qing Qian laughed, "Sister Matcha, you didn't actually give him your own phone number right?"

Matcha laughed, "I gave him Old K's phone number....."

Old K shuddered, "That works too....."

Chapter 318: Just a Bit More.....

The first round of the tournament was over. In a few minutes, the second round would begin!

This time it was easy.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Thousand Mile Landscape [Lv 59 Gold Mage]

.....

A Mage who hadn't achieved his third advancement yet meant that he didn't have [Dimension Leap], and thus posed no threat against me. I already had an extra 119% magic resistance, and so an average Mage wouldn't be able to beat me at all, let alone a Lv 59 Mage. My victory was secured this round!

“Shua!”

Upon entering the arena, I glanced at the 40 year old Mage. Holding his staff, he gazed at me and smiled, “Aiya. I didn't think that I would meet an expert from the CBN Battlemaster Ranking Chart. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, ranked 22. Sigh, It seems like I won't be advancing any further in this Rise of the Heroes event.....”

I laughed lightly, “No problem. Don't falter and do your best. Even if you lose, lose without regrets.”

“Ah, I hope you can give your all too.....”

“Okay.....”

The system began counting down and once it reached 0, I rushed forward. My opponent immediately cast [Ice Cones] as he retreated; “Pa Pa” the [Ice Cones] that had landed on my chest only slowed me down by 7.3%. Most of the effect was cancelled out by my magic resistance. The more frightening part was that both of the attacks resulted in MISSES. This was due to the my Magic Spite Armor's special effect that had a 30% chance of making magic attacks miss!

After recovering, I stepped forward with my Divine Battle Boots, lifted my Emperor Qin's Sword, and used a normal attack on the uncle.

The uncle was startled and quickly blocked the attack with his staff. Judging from his action, his battle sense was not bad at all. He's probably played other games before as a Knight or spear-wielder. Sadly, he was a Mage right now.

"Keng!"

Sparks flew in all directions. I had attacked lightly but the uncle still flew backwards. "Bang!" He landed against the edge of the map and was stunned.

I waved my hands, [Great Realm of Desolation]; time to finish the battle!

"4427 ! "

An extremely large number appeared. The uncle got what he wanted - a quick finish. He was defeated in a few seconds. The system notice promptly informed me that I had advanced to the next round.

After leaving the arena, I continued in triumph all the way until the 12th round. I didn't encounter any difficult opponents at all; the strongest opponent had been a Lv 64 Swordsman - one of [Vanguard]'s thirteen eagles. However, against my Emperor Qin's Sword, he stood no chance and was killed by my [Blade Rush] and Lv 8 [Combo]. Even my pet dominated his; Flaming Tiger God killed his Hornet in one hit.

"Shua!"

After returning to the waiting room, Qing Qian stood next to me and smiled, "Looks like everyone has been pretty successful so far. No one in our room got eliminated right?"

"Not yet...." Li Mu held his long sword and smiled, "After this, if we win 5 more rounds, we'll be in the top 32. Let's get as many [Zhan Long] members in the top 32 as possible. Awesome!"

"Mhm. Let's do this guys!"

.....

—

Soon, the matchups appeared on the screen again. Some people were happy, while some were not so fortunate. There were going to be some problems this round.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Night Watch] vs Don't be Foolish [Lv 67 Gold Knight]

Fox [Lv 65 Gold Musketeer] vs Fang Ge Que [Lv 73 Spiritmaster]

Dancing Forest [Lv 66 Gold Archer] vs Jian Feng Han [Lv 70 Gold Swordsman]

.....

"Fml, this really is a long shot....." Fox held his gun, his face turning green, "Did I win the lottery? To..... To actually meet Jiu Li City's strongest Fang Ge Que. What is this....."

"Fox kneeling....." I gave him a reassuring pat on his shoulders, "Don't worry, there will probably be another tournament in around half a year; you'll get your chance then. Even so, losing at the hands of Fang Ge Que isn't embarrassing at all. He's not only the strongest player in Jiu Li City, but also the strongest player in [Destiny] with a CBN Battlemaster Ranking of 1. The real strongest of the strong....."

Wan Er was sitting in the corner resting. With her slim figure and snowy white legs showing, she laughed, "Actually Fang Ge Que is a rarity among all Mages. Rumors have it that he has already created 4 Rank S and above custom skills. Custom Skills! Who knows what Fang Ge Que did to accomplish that. But he's been nicknamed the King of Games, King of Mages, King of [Destiny], etc. This is really a tragedy for uncle Fox. I hope you can last 10 seconds against him....."

Fox hung his head, "This is hard. Musketeers don't have magic shields or high vitality, only a skill for playing dead.....[One Second Miss]. It is similar to an Archer's [Crystallize]. At least I can guarantee that I will survive for one second."

Speechless, I could only say, “Good luck. My opponent is Don’t be Foolish. We’ve fought before. He should be wiping his tears right now.....”

Dancing Forest cried, “Wuwu, how come you guys aren’t wishing me good luck. My opponent is Jian Feng Han. Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh! I don’t want this kind of opponent. If only I were pitted against uncle Fox instead. That would be much better.”

Fox’s face turned all purple, “Looks like I’m as soft as a persimmon; everyone wants a piece of me right?”

Dancing Forest smiled, “You’re already so old, I don’t want to touch you...If I had to touch someone, I’d rather it be Little Wolf or Wang Jian. They’re young, tall and handsome.....”

Little Wolf and Wang Jian laughed while Fox’s face turned an even darker shade of purple.

.....

Very soon, the thirteenth round will begin!

“Shua!”

Entering the arena, I saw Don’t be Foolish standing in front of me with his spear in hand. He wiped his tears and said, “I really have rotten luck. To f*cking meet you here.....”

I laughed, “It’s fate.....I’d have to thank you for this opportunity. If I get into the top 32, I’ll remember you.....”

“Inhuman. Let me stab you a few times.....”

“We’ll just have to see about that!”

“.....”

The system clock started to count down.

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle Start!

I shot forward like an arrow. Against a Knight without high attack like him, I didn't have to worry at all. With my 2800+ defense, even if I wanted him to kill me, he wouldn't be able to. Moreover, I also had a Lv 8 [Heal] that could recover 1200 health; this would be an easy win.

Seeing me lift my sword, Don't Be Foolish activated [Heavenly Shield Wall], and held his position, waiting to defend against my attack.

I lowered my Emperor Qin's Sword and rushed out to attack the Knight's body, dealing 1982 points of damage. Without the stacking effect of [Kill For Blood], I couldn't kill him as easily. After I got within 5 meters of him, with our backs against each other, I quickly turned around. This was where the player's reaction and attack speed came into play. With his back still facing me, I had already activated my Lv 8 [Combo]. Don't be Foolish turned a second too slow and received five consecutive attacks —

“871 ! ”

“904 ! ”

“887 ! ”

“924 ! ”

“1001 ! ”

In the middle of the attacks, Don't Be Foolish cast [Cleansing Wind] to recover 30% of his health, narrowly avoiding death. At the same time, I felt a chilling sensation on my arm; his Ice Mantis pet had attacked me!

“Roar!”

Flaming Tiger God rushed forward, and grabbed onto the Ice Mantis' head, subsequently dealing out 3102 damage. It then activated [Fierce Roar], killing both Don't Be Foolish and his Ice Mantis at the same time. The two large numbers appeared, signifying that I had won my 13th round.

“Shua!”

After returning to the waiting room, I found Fox in front of me. I stared at him and he stared back.

“F*ck. How were you so fast?” I asked.

Fox rubbed his nose and muttered bitterly, “Actually I don’t know what happened either. Before I could activate [Bullet Screen] or even blink, Fang Ge Que’s magic had already hit me, dealing 4100+ damage. It was too brutal.....”

“A single spell dealt 4100+ damage?” I asked.

“Yeah!” Fox nodded.

My palms got sweaty, “Damn, how terrifying is this Fang Ge Que.....”

Wan Er appeared beside us and calmly said, “I watched the replay of their battle. That’s one of Fang Ge Que’s custom skills—[Ice Rock Blast], an SS-ranked skill. When used, the ice locks onto a target and attacks instantaneously. That’s why Fox was instantly killed before he knew it. I checked through Fang Ge Que’s recordings and all his battles, except one, had ended the same way. The exception was a Knight at full health. After using [Ice Rock Blast], he cast an addition [Pillar of Fire & Ice] to finish him off....”

I was dumbstruck, “Fang Ge Que actually made SS custom skills?”

“Aiya. Why would I lie to you? Would you give me candy if I did?” The beautiful miss teased.

I pursed my lips, “If I can enter the top 32 in this Rise of the Heroes event, I’ll buy you candy.....”

“Okay, you promised. I’ll be waiting.....”

“Mhm.....”

.....

I shifted my gaze back to the screen; Qing Qian had enlarged Dancing Forest’s battle with Jian Feng Han. On the battlefield, Dancing Forest used the Wanderer’s Bow to continuously kite Jian Feng Han. A [Meteor Shot] directly pierced through Jian Feng Han’s body!

“1672 ! ”

“Ugh, Come on, Little Forest....” Old K clenched his fist.

I was also beyond nervous. On the screen, Dancing Forest was at full health and and Jian Feng Han only had 25% health left. After drinking a potion, he recovered back up to 80% health. This was a Lv 10 potion; he had definitely bought it from our National Beauty.

However, Jian Feng Han was only at a disadvantage for a while. After sacrificing 75% of his health, he had finally caught up to Dancing Forest. Waving his Flaming Cloud Sword, he activated [Through the Cloud Slash].

Dancing Forest reacted with unwavering confidence. Using her [Crystallize] skill, she turned into a crystal, forcing Jian Feng Han’s [Through the Cloud Slash] to miss. After the effects of [Crystallize] wore off, Jian Feng Han activated [Blade Rush] and slashed Dancing Forest, depleting more than 50% of her health. He quickly turned and activated his custom skill—[Exposed Point]!

Dancing Forest could not react fast enough and was instantly killed!

.....

Another one was eliminated.....

Dancing Forest was sent back to the waiting room. She stomped her feet in anger, “Just a bit more and I would’ve gotten him. Arghhhhhh!”

I comforted her, “Try harder next time.... It’s already the 14th round. After four more rounds, we’ll be in the top 32. Everyone give it your all!”

Chapter 319: Babel Buddha

The fourteenth round was about to begin. On the screen, our opponents' usernames appeared. Now that we had made it to the 14th round, all of our opponents from here on out would be from the top 500 experts in the CBN Battlemaster ranking charts, instead of the weak opponents in the earlier rounds. In order to get to the top 32, we would have to use all our strength. This reward was a special honor that no one was willing to give up so easily.

On the screen, the pairings were shown.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Night Watch] vs Babel Buddha [Lv 69 Wind Swordsman]

Cang Tong [Lv 70 Gold Assassin] vs Returning Taste [Lv 67 Gold Mage]

Strawberry Matcha [Lv 65 Phantom Knight] vs Mu Xuan [Lv 70 Ice Flame Mage]

.....

Li Mu looked up at the screen and gulped, "She's finished! Matcha is actually being matched against Jiu Li City's number one beauty, Queen Mu Xuan..."

"Queen Mu Xuan?" I asked, "Who's that?"

Li Mu clenched his fist. "Mu Xuan. Her history as a gamer is amazing. Ever since she started playing as a teenager..... Just looking at the guild ranking list, her guild [Appearance Association] is ranked 7th in all of the guilds in China. Aside from Fang Ge Que, she's the number one in Jiu Li City. Rumor has it that she's fought with Fang Ge Que three times, where she won once and lost twice!"

"Only a 33% win rate. She shouldn't be that great, right?" Little Wolf sneered.

Li Mu laughed, "Little Wolf, you don't understand. Fang Ge Que's win rate is at 92%; look at the CBN if you don't believe me. Even Jian Feng Han only has a 17% win rate against him..."

“Ah?” Little Wolf gasped in surprise, “Damn, is he really that strong?”

I took a deep breath, “Even so...Matcha should fight with all she’s got. You might have a chance if you use your Illusionary Butterfly’s [Illusionary Vines] to root and limit her mobility. Don’t worry about breaking her defenses for now, just use your ordinary attacks. Wait until her [Mana Shield] has about 10% durability left, then use [Illusionary Vines] once more to restrict her. After that attack with [Skyslaker Slash] and [Phantom Ray]. Finally, use a [Combo] to kill her!”

Matcha rubbed her eyes, “Yea, I got it Boss...”

.....

Li Mu looked at the big screen again, and continued, “Boss should be more careful around his opponent as well. Babel Buddha is also a reputed expert. He’s been quite the character in CBN’s top 100 players and as [Judgement]’s Vice Guild Master. He has the special class of Wind Swordsman, and is reputed to be extremely agile. You should be careful of how he controls the battle, since he’s an expert in manipulating the flow of battle. It is because of his skill that [Judgement]’s Guild Master, Ye Lai, has been raising him to become a top expert.”

I nodded, “Got it, I’ll be careful.”

“Let’s do our best to win this, guys!”

.....

“Shua!”

I entered the arena and in front of me, a youth clad in green armor stood there smiling; his cape fluttered behind him, giving him a valiant air. In his hand he held a long sword. His arm proudly displayed an armband with the guild emblem of [Judgment] etched on it. He was the Vice Guild Master of [Judgment] - Babel Buddha.

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it’s time.” Babel Buddha exclaimed with a smile.

I laughed as I raised my hand and unsheathed my Emperor Qin’s Sword, “Ah, the Vice Guild Master of [Judgment]. How are you doing? I didn’t

think we would be meeting so early in the tournament. It seems like only one of us will be able to leave here alive today.....”

Babel Buddha smirked and moved his palms slightly. Flickers of blue wind energy surrounded his armor and boots, increasing his speed and attack power. He leered at me and declared, “My Guild Master told me that if I defeat you, he’ll treat me to the most expensive restaurant in Yangzhou. For the sake of this meal, I must defeat you... even if your CBN Battlemaster ranking is higher than mine.”

I couldn’t help but laugh. I lowered my Emperor Qin’s Sword and spoke with audible clarity, “I carry the ambitions of [Zhan Long] on my back, so I can’t lose here. Sorry, but you won’t be able to have your feast. No matter, if we get the chance, I’ll treat you instead!”

“Okay!”

Babel Buddha laughed, “Such confidence! So this is the rumored Xiao Yao Zi Zai that’s driving Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior crazy in Ba Huang City. I’ve been waiting for an opponent like you!”

“No need to wait, we’ll duke it out in 7 seconds.”

“Okay!”

The system continued to count down.

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle start!

“Pa!” At the same time [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] took effect, I rushed forward. Babel Buddha did the same, with his long sword in hand. We were both wise and chose not to summon our pets, since pets were more effective in landing the killing blow and not at the beginning of the battle. The first strike was always used to test the waters. Once my Emperor Qin’s Sword parried his, I rotated my body, throwing a kick right at him!

Babel Buddha was not slow to react either. He lifted his knee and blocked my Divine Battle Boots, forcing me back a step while he was forced back three. Even though he was being overwhelmed by my strength, he had an advantage in speed. With a slight delay, he immediately turned towards my right and attacked me. After parrying his first attack, a six star hexagram appeared and his Lv 7 [Combo] landed on my Magic Spite Armor!

“729 ! ”

“771 ! ”

“732 ! ”

“790 ! ”

Sure enough, an expert's attack strength was different from a regular player's. Even with my 2800+ defense, he had dealt around 3000 damage! In that same instant, with a wave of his hand, he yelled, “Fang Bear!”

Along with a fierce roar, a giant red bear was summoned and attacked me with its purple-tinted claws.. F*ck. Isn't this a stun skill? This guy plans to finish me now?”

Through the sparks emitted, I chose to advance instead of retreating. I sensed the opportunity and activated [Blade Rush], but Babel Buddha's reaction was too fast. “Huacha! Huacha!” He simultaneously activated [Blade Rush] as well, causing us to swap positions. Right as I turned around, I activated a Lv 8 [Combo]. He managed to dodge the first attack, but not the remaining four!

“MISS ! ”

“1284 ! ”

“1236 ! ”

“1301 ! ”

“1221 ! ”

.....

“Damn!” Babel Buddha looked at his depleted health bar and quickly retreated. He waved his hands and activated [Evading Winds].

“Shua!” He disappeared into thin air. A few seconds later, he appeared 20 meters away, where he drank a Lv 10 Potion to recover 3000 health.

I rushed towards him while restoring 1200 health with [Heal]. Under his master’s command, the Fang Bear blocked my path. I laughed and started sliding. “Bang!” I collided straight into the Fang Bear, pushing it back 3 meters. I then struck the ground and activated [Binding Chains], immobilizing the bear.

“Sh*t.....”

Babel Buddha was startled. He quickly lifted his sword and rushed forward with a [Skyshaker Slash]!

I couldn’t bear the brunt of this attack without retaliating, so I retreated. With a wave of my hand, a six star hexagram appeared, accompanied by a roar. Flaming Tiger God was summoned, and it used [Flame Claw] on Babel Buddha. This was the killing blow; there was no way he would survive this attack!

“Heh!”

Despite the dire situation, Babel Buddha was actually laughing! With a slash of his blade, wind energy surrounded his body, “[Wind Pulse]!”

“Hong! Hong!” Rapid winds surged around him.

A burst of wind shot out. [Wind Pulse] had a range of 10 meters. Being within range, Flaming God Tiger and I were both affected by it and entered a stunned state. Who would’ve thought that this Wind Swordsman, in addition to his escape skill [Evading Winds], also possessed a crowd control skill like [Wind Pulse]?. This was too unfair!

While I was stunned for 1.5 seconds, Babel Buddha rushed forward and activated [Skyshaker Slash] and [Flame Blade] - both of which were high damaging attacks.

“1783 ! ”

“2019 ! ”

Looking at the damage, a feeling of horror welled up in me. Good thing I used [Heal] and had over 6500 health. If not for these, I really would've died!

After recovering, I lifted my Emperor Qin's Sword. “Peng!” Blocking his third attack, I kicked him with my Battle Boots and sent him back a few steps. At the same time, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

”Boom!!”

“2718 ! ”

Babel Buddha's face turned purple as he watched me activate [Great Realm of Desolation]. Along with Flaming Tiger God's [Burstfire Raid] and [Fierce Roar], he was sent flying into the air like a leaf, and finally dropped to the floor in a lifeless heap.

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations. You have defeated player [Babel Buddha] and will successfully advance to the next round of the tournament!

.....

“Shua!”

I returned to the waiting room with Wan Er and Dong Cheng already there. They were able to defeat their opponents in a short time. In the screen in front of us, Li Mu, Matcha, and the others were still engaged in battle!

Li Mu was at 87% health with his pet still alive, while his opponent had only 12% health left and was without his pet. The victor had already been decided. I went ahead and enlarged Matcha's match.

On the screen, Matcha was shown fiercely chasing a Mage while being continuously slowed by her opponent's Ice Flame Magic. The Mage's ID was Mu Xuan. She looked to be around her early twenties and had a charming appearance that could stop the hearts of people. Her body was

even better than Wan Er's, her robe unable to cover everything. With her long hair and her pair of long, snowy legs, she was simply too beautiful.

I furrowed my brows, "This isn't good. Matcha is being dominated. This isn't going so well..."

One Second Hero lifted his spear, "Hey...That Mu Xuan's legs are really white....."

I stared at the screen with a quizzical expression, "What you're saying is true.... but don't you feel that that's the wrong problem to be paying attention to?"

In the arena, Mu Xuan continuously used [Ice Cone] to slow Matcha down and laughed, "Little sister, you look really gorgeous. How about you join our [Appearance Alliance]? My [Appearance Alliance] was made for sisters like you. What's so great about that stinking man's guild? Come and join us instead! With your beautiful body, you will definitely be promoted to be a captain!"

"Wuuu....."

Matcha didn't say anything. Instead, she lifted her shield enhanced with [Holy Shield], and thrust her spear forward, activating [Phantom Ray Slash]!

"Shua!"

Mu Xuan easily used [Dimension Leap] to dodge it. It looked like she was just toying with Matcha.

Chapter 320: Quick Kill

“Hua.....”

Matcha tried to move forward but was immediately slowed by Mu Xuan's [Ice Cone]. Queen Mu Xuan wasn't in a hurry to kill Matcha, so she only used one spell at a time to slow her down. Matcha did her best and used both her potions, as well as [Cleansing Wind]. But as before, it could not stop her health from draining away. In the blink of an eye, Matcha was left with only 20% health.

“Wuwu.....”

Matcha could not do anything about Mu Xuan's magic; she had neither a Swordsman's [Blade Rush], nor a mount, and she could not move as fast as a Mage. She was being completely dominated. In that moment, she seemed to have come to a decision. Not far from the battle, her Illusionary Butterfly began to flap its wings, and activated [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]!

“Shua!”

Green vines appeared from the ground and wrapped themselves around Mu Xuan's snowy legs. Startled, she asked, “Huh? This.....is this a disabling skill? It can actually penetrate [Mana Shield]?”

Matcha seized the opportunity and moved forward, using her shield to knock Mu Xuan's pet leopard away. She activated [Heavy Strike] and [Flame Axe] right onto Mu Xuan's [Mana Shield]. “Pa.” The [Mana Shield] shattered. Matcha then followed up with [Skyshaker Slash]. This was her only chance!

“Bang!”

Matcha's spear vibrated the air and landed on Mu Xuan's shoulders, inflicting a long cut. Fresh blood gushed out and a large damage number appeared!

“2817 ! ”

It was surprising how a Mage like Mu Xuan was still alive even after

taking 3000 points of damage. She calmly waved her staff and activated [Indigo Sea Arrow] and [Pillar of Fire & Ice], engulfing Matcha's beautiful body.

“2615 ! ”

“1928 ! ”

“Ahhhhhh” Matcha cried out as she slowly fell to the ground. In the end, she wasn't able to kill Mu Xuan. It's a shame that [Skyshaker Slash] didn't produce a critical hit, or Mu Xuan would've been eliminated in the 14th round.

.....

“Shua!”

Matcha returned to the room and angrily stomped her feet, “Wuwu, I actually lost.....”

Little Wolf lifted his dagger and said, “It's normal to lose against Mu Xuan. She is number two in Jiu Li City, and the Guild Master of a guild in the top 10. Losing is extremely normal....”

I nodded as well, “Yeah. Matcha's done very well already. There will probably be more tournaments in the future.....”

“Okay.....”

At that moment, the final results of the tournament appeared. There were only 10 of the 20 people in the room left in the tournament. This, however, was already an impressive feat. Out of the total 7M people in the tournament, we had managed to have 10 of our own survive through 14 rounds. It could even be considered a miracle, since there were only 256 people left; the rest had been washed out. It was so miraculous that I feel as though Old K, Wolf, and the others must have had incredible luck to have not met any extremely strong opponents and survive until now.

Nearby, Old K carried his axe in one hand as he waved his other in front of him. I couldn't contain my curiosity and asked, “Old K, What are you doing?”

“I’m praying.....” He grinned.

“Praying for what?”

“Praying that I don’t meet an expert from the CBN Battlemaster Ranking Charts. What else would I be praying for? If I get someone like Jian Feng Han or Simple, I’ll kneel to the ground for sure.....”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “Okay. I wish you good luck.....”

Very quickly, the screen appeared again with our matchups for the next round. I couldn’t help but be nervous. My opponent wasn’t much but, Cang Lei and General Bai Qi’s opponents were pretty strong....

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Stray Toad [Lv 67 Musketeer]

Cang Tong [Lv 70 Gold Assassin] vs Vicissitude Human [Lv 66 Gold Mage]

Cang Lei [Lv 67 Gold Berserker] vs Mu Xuan [Lv 70 Ice Flame Mage]

General Bai Qi [Lv 68 Gold Berserker] vs Lu Chunyan [Lv 70 Gold Swordsman]

.....

General Li Mu raised his head to look at the screen and said, “I feel like.....things are going to go to shit.....”

“How so?” Little Wolf asked.

Li Mu stated, “Nothing good can come out of going against Mu Xuan. Ah Lei probably won’t be able to break her [Mana Shield] in one hit, while Mu Xuan can probably one-shot him with her spells. After all, Ah Lei doesn’t have the defensive skills Matcha has, like [Holy Shield] or [Cleansing Wind]. His strength is also limited; [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall] can hold for at most a few seconds. On the other hand, Bai Qi’s opponent is Lu Chun Yang.....F*ck, he’s an old rival.”

My eyes widened, “Lu Chun Yang. Isn’t he one of the founding members of [Legend]?”

On the side, Matcha nodded and said, "Yea. Fang Ge Que, Lu Chun Yang, Xuan Yuan Feng, and Chang Sheng Jue are the four godly experts of [Legend]. Lu Chun Yang is a master in fencing, and is regarded as one of the very best fencers. It's said that he is a sword master in real life too, and isn't inferior to expert level players like Jian Feng Han or Q-Sword. He has a 46% win rate against Jian Feng Han and a 41% win rate against Q-Sword; you can just imagine how strong he is....."

I pursed my lips and looked at Bai Qi, "Okay..... good luck Bai Qi. Destroy him....."

Matcha lightly smiled. She was not too depressed after her loss and had started to help us scout our opponents online. She looked at me and said, "Boss, your opponent is Stray Toad, a Musketeer. The fundamental reason he won in his previous rounds is pretty simple; he would use his [Blinding Shot] skill to blind his opponent. After that, he would use his Elite Illusionary Butterfly to immobilize the opponent and then kill them, bringing him to the 15th round."

I groaned, "This kind of opponent..... maybe it'll be better if I use my Flaming Tiger God to kill his Illusionary Butterfly first....."

Matcha smiled, "Boss, don't worry. [Blinding Shot] uses a red guideline, so you have about 0.3 seconds to react and dodge the bullet. If you can just avoid the [Blinding Shot], he'll definitely lose. With [Blade Rush] and your attack power, you can finish him in one hit!"

I nodded, "OK. Got it!"

.....

As [Zhan Long]'s tactician, Matcha prepared battle plans for each of us. After explaining them to Old K, Little Wolf and the others, we were all transferred to the arena. Time to battle!

"Shua!"

I entered the arena for the 15th round. Stray Toad stood in front of me with his pistol raised, and his Illusionary Butterfly hovering next to his shoulder. With an earnest expression, he exclaimed, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

“What’s up?” I asked.

“You’re definitely going to lose.....”

“Oh really?” I laughed. He was obviously taunting me. Either he was trying to get me to lose concentration, or he was trying to make me underestimate him. No matter which one I fell for, he would still profit from it.

When the timer reached zero, I immediately activated [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] and [Haste]. With the Emperor Qin’s Sword in my hand and my defense and attack buff, I rushed forward.

“Sha sha sha.....”

Stray Toad immediately retreated a few steps and steadily lifted his gun with both hands. “Bang!” A red line flew straight at my body; it was [Blinding Shot]’s tracker. His actions were really too fast!

I stomped on the ground and in one swift movement, dodged the bullet, causing a huge MISS to appear. At the same time, I wildly charged towards my opponent. As Stray Toad tried to escape, I activated [Blade Rush] and appeared in front of him. My sword stabbed forward, activating [Wind Blade]!

“3217 ! ”

He didn’t die! It seemed like he was a Musketeer that had added stats to Vitality!

Stray Toad stared at me and cried, “Great hero, have mercy on me!”

“Pa” He fell to the ground and entered a fake death state, turning my attack into a MISS. His skill at faking deaths was very polished; it was almost admirable.

I stepped back a few steps and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Boom!”

After ‘reviving’, he fell limply to the floor again. The battle had only taken 3 seconds!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have defeated Player [Stray Toad], and successfully advanced to the next round!

.....

After returning to the waiting room, Matcha stood next to me. “To instantly kill your opponent...Boss is in good shape! There are only two more rounds until you reach the top 32.”

I nodded and looked at the screen. Little Wolf, Li Mu, and Wang Jian were still in battle. Their opponents were not considerably strong, but they weren’t exactly weak either. It wasn’t easy for them to instantly finish their battles. Old K used [Whirlwind Blade], followed up by [Savage Jump], to send his opponent into a daze. His opponent’s health was quickly halved; he was clearly at a disadvantage.

I was going to watch Cang Lei’s match against Mu Xuan, but I noticed that he was already standing next to me. He had lost the round in 7 seconds.....

Scratching his head, Cang Lei forced out a laugh, “Brother Xiao Yao, I can’t beat that big-breasted lady. Her magic attack is too high. One of her fireballs dealt 2000 damage to me.....”

I nodded and smiled reassuringly, “Don’t worry. Getting to the 15th round is pretty impressive already.....”

“Thanks Brother Xiao Yao.....”

.....

Shortly after, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wan Er ,and Dong Cheng all finished their battles. At the same time, the battle between General Bai Qi and Lu Chun Yang was starting to heat up. Lu Chun Yang was very skillful in tactical-style fighting. He would attack Bai Qi several times, but retreated whenever Bai Qi’s health decreased. He was not in a hurry to kill his opponent, and fought by observing his opponent’s cooldowns very carefully, including the cooldowns of his potions. When Bai Qi’s potions were on cooldown, he would attack Bai Qi directly. It was obvious that

there was a significant gap between the two when it came to battle tactics.

“Damn.....”

Wang Jian clenched his fists, “Bai Qi is being overpowered by his opponent.....”

Li Mu frowned, “Lu Chun Yang is too f*cking OP. It’s normal for Bai Qi to be overpowered....”

Yue Qing Qian looked around and said, “This isn’t going too well. We only have 8 people left in the tournament.....”

“It’s not a problem...” With her Scarlet Edge in hand, Wan Er nodded and smiled, “The people who are already in the tournament are the top 128. Even if we lose, we’ll still get rewarded. I’m almost certain that we’ll level up at least once, and maybe get some Charm points on top of that. That said, everyone has performed pretty well so far.”

A few minutes later, the screen displayed the matches for the next round –

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Jian Tan [Lv 69 Gold Swordsman]

Cang Tong [Lv 70 Gold Assassin] vs Goodbye Tears [Lv 67 Gold Monk]

Yue Qing Qian [Lv 69 Gold Assassin] vs Cyclone User [Lv 68 Gold Mage]

Chapter 321: Real Skills

“Eh, these pairings.....”

Wan Er crossed her arms in front of her chest, lazily leaned against the window and smiled, saying, “I honestly don’t have the heart to kill that Buddhist Monk Goodbye Tears. I heard he was one of [Vanguard]’s Big Three.....”

(Editor Note: Buddhist Monk is used in a mocking way and literally means Bald Donkey)

I nodded, “It wasn’t easy for him to enter the top 128, so do show him some mercy.....”

Yue Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao, your opponent isn’t that weak either. Jian Tan is one of [Hero’s Mound]’s top sword experts. I heard that he’s mastered controlling the flow of the battle.....”

“Jian Tan.....”

I looked up at the big screen and said, “I’ve met this person before in real life. He’s a very honorable man, but relies too much on brute force and doesn’t understand the importance of flexibility. Such an opponent won’t be hard to deal with.”

“How do you plan on fighting him?” Dong Cheng Yue asked with a smile.

I thought for a moment before replying. “First, I’ll lower his guard by showing him a bit of weakness. Then I’ll use my [Binding Chains] to disable him. I should be able to make it out alive; my 6500 health gives me a high chance of surviving so there’s no need to fight so hard.”

“Yup.” Wan Er said, “Qing Qian, your opponent is Tornado, Ba Huang City’s second strongest Mage. He’s also pretty hard to deal with, so you should be careful. The first attack is most important, since you need bring down his [Mana Shield]’s durability to at least 50%. After that, you need to find the opportunity to insta-kill him, while staying alive yourself. [Sneak] and [Hide] must be used.

Yue Qing Qian chuckled, “Don’t worry, sister Cang Tong. I can deal with this!”

“Ok, that’s good then. Everyone, let’s get into the top 64!”

.....

“Shua!”

I was teleported to a giant martial arts arena. Jian Tan stood there with an imposing aura like an immovable mountain. Arms crossed with his sword against his chest, he was clad in a bright suit of armor with his battle robes flowing in the wind. It was exactly this stern uncle who had guarded the doors of [Hero’s Mound], allowing Q-Sword to command [Hero’s Mound]’s legion of players without any worries.

“Little Xiao Yao, we meet again!” Jian Tan smiled, “I didn’t think I would meet you in the top 128. Even though I know I may not have even a 30% chance of winning against you, I won’t give up. You’d better not underestimate me; I can kill you easily if you let down your guard, and that wouldn’t be any fun.....”

I smoothed out my expression and chuckled, “No problem. I won’t underestimate you. Uncle Jian Tan also doesn’t need to hold back; let’s fight with everything we’ve got! I also want to learn exactly what the fighting strength of an elder from [Hero’s Mound] is like. Let’s see if it’s really as formidable as the legends say....”

Jian Tan unsheathed his sharp sword. With a wave of his blade, he indifferently said, “Prepare to battle!”

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle start! This was the battle that decided the top 64; victory was the only option!

But before I could get on the offensive, Jian Tan attacked first - just as I expected. Lowering the tip of his sword, he activated [Haste] and rushed

over, sticking close to the ground. Suddenly, he roared and his longsword became a streak of light, aimed right at me!

I shifted my stance and unsheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword in order to withstand the violent attack. Before I could shake off his sword, Jian Tan unexpectedly withdrew. Suddenly, his left leg swept out with a fierce power. With a "Keng", I blocked the incoming strike with my leg, and slid backwards several meters from the force of the attack. The tip of my sword cut into the ground as I slid.

"Li Xiao Yao, why aren't you retaliating?"

Jian Tan fiercely slashed his sword forward again, forcing me to further retreat a few more steps. His face was full of rage, "Are you looking down on me? Is that why you won't fight? Alright then, I won't let you have the chance to retaliate. You will taste the bitterness of defeat here!"

As he was talking, Jian Tan raised his longsword again, and finally activated a skill. [Skyshaker Slash]!

I raised my arm and blocked his attack!

"Bang!"

"1729 ! "

What an intense strike! However, it wasn't over; Jian Tan lowered his body again and activated [Blade Rush]. His entire body was bathed in light as he sped forward 5 meters, his sword piercing my body!

"987 ! "

Unfortunately for him, my defense remained sturdy, and as before, it protected me from most of the damage dealt. I felt a chill from behind as my heart dropped. This feeling was too familiar: it was a [Combo]! To think that Jian Tan also had a [Combo]. As expected, he really did live up to his reputation as an expert!

I quickly turned around and raised my Emperor Qin Sword in front of my chest, supporting the sword's blade with my left hand. At the same time, I used a [Heal] to raise my health by another 1200! However, Jian

Tan's pet flew right at me as well. I summoned my Flaming Tiger God, and it quickly attacked with a [Flame Claw]. The little tiger instantly tackled the giant wolf and they both began fighting each other.

“Ha! [Combo]!”

Jian Tan roared again as air began to gather around his feet. An A-ranked [Combo] began to activate, dealing three consecutive attacks. “Pa Pa Pa” it penetrated my defense. Three more attacks came, one after another, adding up to a total of 6 strikes! I only felt pain coursing through my body. Motherf*cker! Jian Tan's power and angle of attack can truly be considered first rate!

“427 ! ”

“414 ! ”

“478 ! ”

“521 ! ”

“525 ! ”

“740 ! ”

After he instantly inflicted 3100+ damage on me, he finally stopped attacking. He had already exhausted his best possible moves in order to burst me down, but I still had 2500 health remaining!

After downing a Lv 10 potion to recover 5500 health, I spread my palm, and with a “Pa” sound, slammed it into Jian Tan's chest. He froze for a moment, before iron chains broke through the stones underneath his feet, instantly immobilizing him. At the same time, I shouted, “[Strength of a Thousand Men]!”

The concentrated attacks surged forth, bombarding Jian Tan's chest without any obstruction. Damage numbers burst forth one after another

—

“1127 ! ”

“1231 ! ”

“1312 ! ”

“1234 ! ”

“2236 ! ”

The final [Wind Blade] attack had practically sliced Jian Tan's body in half. He abruptly fell to his knees, and stared at me, his eyes wide open?. He hadn't imagined that he'd be insta-killed by a single [Combo].

After getting rid of Jian Tan's pet as well, I received a notice:

System Notification: Congratulations, you have defeated Player [Jian Tan], and have successfully advanced to the next round of the tournament!”

.....

“Shua!”

I was delivered back to the waiting room. There, I discovered that only the previously eliminated players like Matcha, Dancing Forest, and Dong Cheng Lei were present. I was the first victor!

Dancing Forest said, “Guild Master, congratulations on your win!”

I nodded, “But of course, winning is one of my many talents!”

I hastily looked up to check how the battles were progressing, only to notice that General Li Mu was using the combo [Absolute Authority] to overpower his opponent. Wang Jian and Wolf all came out victorious as well. Yue Qing Qian was still in the midst of battle, as Tornado was casting one [Pillar of Fire and Ice] after another, taking control of Yue Qing Qian's possible attack routes. Our beautiful Vice Guild Master tried to break through the magic many times, she could only continue to dodge, narrowly escaping instant death!

“It's almost time....” Yue Wei Liang clasped her hands tightly together as she anxiously watched the screen.

“Time for what?” I asked.

Yue Wei Liang pursed her red lips, “[Absolute Step]'s cooldown. Once it

ends, it'll be time for Sister's next attack, and Tornado will be kicked out.....”

I stared at the screen. Tornado's [Mana Shield] still had 7% durability left. With Yue Qing Qian's perfect control, it wouldn't be surprising for a normal attack to be able to break the shield. As long as her attack went smoothly, Tornado would be pretty much finished!

“Shua!”

The power of the wind gathered around her small feet, [Absolute Step]!

Yue Qing Qian quickly rushed forward. With her extreme speed, she weaved in a series of zig-zags to dodge the [Indigo Sea Arrow] and [Pillar of Fire & Ice] that were aimed at her. Her dagger suddenly flashed, directly striking her target!

“Bang!”

Aside from the shield being broken, her target had received 700+ damage.

Yue Qing Qian's beautiful eyes flashed, and she drifted behind her opponent. Raising both her arms, she cast [Twin Blade Harmony]. This was an extremely smart move; a strike towards one's back could never be blocked. Moreover, the back is considered a weak point.

“3047 ! ”

After that single attack, Tornado cried out miserably as he fell to his knees. Yue Qing Qian's explosive power was indeed abnormally strong!

“Beautiful!”

One Second Hero gave her a thumbs up as he laughed, “Too graceful. That's exactly how an Assassin should attack a Mage. That was really an educational battle....”

Dong Cheng Yue shot a glance at him and smiled, “Even if you praise her like that, Gua Gua still won't love you. The one she loves is Brother Xiao Yao...”

One Second Hero's body shook, “I don't want her love. Actually...the

person I like is Darling Duck....F*ck, that was too blunt...”

Dong Cheng Yue grumbled, “Idiot...”

Yue Qing Qian walked over with her dagger in hand and asked, “Sister Dong Cheng, why do you call me Gua Gua?”

“Because you like eating cucumbers....and Gua Gua sounds nice. It’s both intimate and easy to say...”

(TL Note: Cucumber in Chinese is ‘Huang Gua’, so the ‘Gua Gua’ is taken from the last part of cucumber.)

Yue Qing Qian responded, “That....”

.....

The only fight that had not ended was the battle between Wan Er and Goodbye Tears. Goodbye Tears stood in the arena with his staff in hand, but he was unable to detect any trace of Wan Er within the arena. He could only wait for the cooldown of his potions to end. At the same time, he firmly planted his feet into the ground and loudly yelled out, “[Golden Defense]! [Diamond Body]! Ha, Cang Tong, hurry up and get out here. I challenge you! Since I need to enter the top 64, there’s no way I’ll ever retreat. It’s time for you to display your real skills!”

“Shua!”

A blood red light flew towards Goodbye Tears’ back. The ambush had succeeded, and temporarily stunned him!

Wan Er didn’t hesitate at all. Her twin daggers danced in the air. “Pa pa pa”, she cut the opposing party’s health by nearly 2000 points. The instant the stun effect had subsided, Wan Er swung her hands in an arc in front of Goodbye Tears, beautifully stabbing him. Goodbye Tears was stunned once more, and the dagger glowed. After a piercing attack, Wan Er flashed behind her opponent, and suddenly backstabbed Goodbye Tears. She raised her snow-white arms, [Twin Blade Harmony]!

“2916 ! ”

The instant the attack burst out, Goodbye Tears fell to his knees. Even

Monks with 2400+ defense and 7000+ health wouldn't be able to escape Wan Er's deadly pursuit.

"Plop..."

Goodbye Tears was unable to stand, and was forced to stay kneeling. He gazed at Wan Er and said, "It's as I said before, this is Cang Tong's true skill. I'm sincerely convinced of your strength, and I'm ready to concede. Could you possibly give me your phone number?"

Wan Er indifferently looked at him and recited a phone number. With that, Goodbye Tears cheerfully died.

.....

Outside, Old K shuddered. He raised his battleaxe and said with a discontented expression, "Why...why was my phone number given away again?"

Wan Er appeared back within the room, and she giggled, "I won! I've entered the top 64! If I win one more round tomorrow, then I can be part of the top 32! This is great...really great..."

Old K said, "Great my ass...why my phone number..."

Chapter 322: Bai Li Ruofeng

“Everyone, keep fighting well.....”

Little Wolf said, “After one more round, we’ll be in the top 32. It was my dream to make it this far. I, Song Han, have never been so close to reaching a dream.....hehe, if at least 5 of us make it into the top 32, I’ll be treating tonight. We can have a Hunan-style Feast. How about it?”

Old K laughed, “Yeah! Actually, I’ve been waiting for this moment!”

Little Wolf looked closely at Old K and said, “Old K, how come you haven’t been eliminated yet?”

“What the f*ck do you mean.....”

I looked at the screen and said, “Our opponents in the next round are also in the top 64. Don’t be careless; it’s the last round for today. Who knows what kind of opponents we’ll face.... but I hope we don’t face each other. I also hope we won’t be pit against Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, and all those scary opponents....”

Dong Cheng laughed next to me, “Why do I feel excited all of a sudden?”

I looked at her, “Why?”

She smiled, “Because Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han and the others are considered legendary figures in the game, and we get to be on the same stage as these people. That means we have a chance to create a new legend. Isn’t that exciting? Have you thought about...what would happen if you won the Rise of the Heroes Tournament?”

I was shocked, “This...I haven’t really thought about it. Me as the winner of the tournament? That’s too hard. How many experts do I have to beat to reach that godly stage?.....”

Wan Er looked at the screen and said, “Maybe you will. As long as you don’t meet Fang Ge Que early, I think you have a 40% chance of becoming the champion. Your Emperor Qin’s Sword, Magic Spite Armor, and Flaming Tiger God are terrifyingly strong. In addition, with your 6500

health, you could just stand there, let them smack you continuously for a long time and still not die....”

Yue Qing Qian smiled wryly, “I just pray that we don’t meet our own people. With others, I can use 100% of my strength, but against you guys, I can only muster around 50%.....”

“Yeah. Let’s hope we don’t get paired up with each other....”

At this time, the screen finally lit up and the pairings for the last round appeared—

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Bai Li Ruo Feng [Lv 71 World Archer]

Cang Tong [Lv 70 Gold Assassin] vs Immortality Codex [Lv 69 Gold Healer]

Yue Qing Qian [Lv 69 Gold Assassin] vs War Tent [Lv 67 Gold Swordsman]

.....

Looking at the matchups, Matcha’s face turned purple, “This is bad! Really bad!!”

“What’s wrong?” I asked.

“Boss, your opponent.....”

“Bai Li Ruofeng?”

“Yeah”

“71级弓箭手嘛.....有什么，我们要在战略上藐视对手，战术上重视对手.....”

“A Lv 71 Archer....what of it? We should show contempt to the enemy’s strategy but place importance on the enemy himself in our tactics.”

* [Editor note: this idiom means to downplay your enemy to boost your morale and confidence while not actually underestimating them]

“That’s not it, Boss.....”

Matcha was at a loss; she didn't know what to say. Instead, she waved her hands and a bunch of data appeared. Looking at it, the others and I were shocked—

Bai Li Ruofeng [Lv 71 World Archer]

City: Jiu Li City

Guild: [House of Prestige]

Position: Guild Master

Biography: From Xiamen. A descendant of the Bai Li clan. He has very high gaming talent and has defeated many peak level experts. He created [House of Prestige] in November of 2013. Since then, he led [House of Prestige] to become the 4th rank guild in China and 2nd rank guild in Jiu Li City.

Strength: CBN Battlemaster Ranking number 4. He is preceded by Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword and Little Demon. He has original insight in the usage of an Archer's hit and run kiting tactic.

.....

"F*ck....." Old K clenched his fist, "Xiao Yao Brat has such good luck. It's as if you struck a hornet's nest, seeing as you have to battle against the 4th ranked peak expert...."

Matcha looked at me and smiled, "My beloved boss, do you still think your opponent is a pushover?"

Gulp.....

I swallowed, "Can I change my opponent.....?"

"Not possible!"

I gripped the hilt of my sword and straightened my chest, "So what? It's better that they let me fight this 4th ranked elite. I want to see exactly what the abilities of a peak-level expert are like."

Wan Er stood next to me and said, "This time you'll have to give it your all..... Bai Li Ruofeng is indeed very strong. I've met him 7 times in other

games, beating him only three times, and losing the other four. His kiting abilities are extraordinary. You need to use your Flaming Tiger God when you have a chance. Then maybe you'll be able to insta-kill him....."

"Got it!" I nodded firmly.

Looking at the screen, Bai Li Ruofeng's name was glowing. Dancing Forest said with some regret, "Actually, Bai Li Ruofeng is my idol; after all, he's the best Archer-class player in all of China. But right now he's my Boss's opponent so.... good luck, Boss. Destroy him! It's regretful to say this, but between [Zhan Long] and [House of Prestige], only one of the two Guild Masters will enter the top 32!"

I laughed, "Don't worry. I'll go all out and leave no regrets!"

.....

At this moment, the system started transferring players to the arena!

"Shua!"

I appeared at a place familiar to me. It was my 17th time here today. My opponent was a refined expert, clad in a set of leather armor; in his hands held a frosted floral bow. Bai Li Ruofeng gazed at me and laughed, "I knew that advancing from the top 64 into the top 32 would mean that I would have to duel against an expert. However, I didn't expect to meet [Zhan Long]'s Guild Master, revered as the man who turned Ba Huang City upside down - Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I'm really in luck!"

I peered at him silently. Bai Li Ruofeng's gaze made me feel uncomfortable. It was the kind of look the strong would give towards someone who was weaker. He probably didn't even think of me as a worthy opponent. But then again, I was only among the top few hundreds on the CBN Battlemaster Ranking Charts half a year ago and have only just achieved a ranking of 22. Especially in the Master category, climbing the ranks was a very difficult feat. The difference between the 4th and 22nd rank was too great. Someone like me would not be considered strong to him at all.

Quietly, I summoned Flaming Tiger God. The little tiger purred softly

next to me while activating its buffs from [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]: attack and defense +40% for 30 minutes. All the buffs would be used to face this Guild Master of [House of Prestige]!

He licked his lips and laughed, "Don't be so nervous. It's only the Rise of the Heroes Tournament. Our friendship comes before the tournament's results. No matter who wins or who loses, we can still be friends."

I lowered my sword and smiled as well, "Ah, you're right. Friendship is always number one. Well, I hope you don't hold back at all, or else you'll regret it."

"Of course!"

Bai Li Ruofeng waved his hands, and his bow appeared. At the same time, he summoned his pet; a giant engulfed in flames: Flame Beast. It had both high defense and health. I'd heard rumors about this pet, but had never seen one before. It had been mentioned on the forums before that this was an Emperor Tier BOSS pet; I didn't think that it would be in Bai Li Ruofeng's hands.

The air around us seemed freeze as I scanned the area. On the south side of the battle field, stood a stern NPC soldier clothed in bright armor. In the distance, was a huge, towering tree. The autumn breeze brushed past as leaves danced around the arena. Bai Li Ruofeng stood sternly on the other side of the arena; not a single muscle on his face twitched but I could feel him concentrating on every movement in the vicinity. It was to the point where he would even notice the flow of every leaf. This Archer must have had shockingly good insight or he wouldn't be recognised as an expert Archer!

The system started the countdown, making my heart race in excitement. This was the real deal; the most important battle thus far—

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

As soon as the battle started, Bai Li Ruofeng came at me!

I retreated immediately, backing out of Bai Li Ruofeng's attack range. We were 40 yards apart from each other; this was both our lifelines that had to be cherish otherwise i would die a miserable death. the contenders in the top 64 were not weak at all, thus relying on my 2800 defense wasn't feasible; especially against an Archer which was considered an assassination class. Experts in this class would usually pursue equipment that ignored defences. My 2800 defence is practically nothing against a master Archer.

“Shasha.....”

My Divine Battle boots smoothly stepped across the stone floor of the game's battle arena. Bai Li Ruofeng pulled his longbow. “Pa.” A cold gust of wind followed the arrow as it flew towards my chest.

“Bang”

I sensed the danger and immediately stopped in my tracks, causing his attack to MISS. My heart inwardly screamed danger; that arrow had just barely grazed past my nose, it was really too dangerous!

“Heh!”

Bai Li Ruofeng laughed and lifted his bow again. “PaPaPa”. Three arrows shot out, [Triple Arrow]!

He knew that not probable that all the arrows would hit, so he shot them from three different angles. I knew this as well, so I did not retreat, but rushed forward instead. I dodged the arrow flying towards my head and allowed the other two to hit. Activating [Haste], I rushed in to attack!

“MISS ! ”

“734 ! ”

“801 ! ”

Looking at the damage, even an idiot could tell that Bai Li Ruofeng could easily break my defense!

Flaming Tiger God let out a roar as it separated from my side and changed it's direction. Together, we effectively flanked the enemy from

both sides.

However, Bai Li Ruofeng commanded his Flame Beast and it rushed towards Flaming Tiger God. I began to grow anxious; he clearly intended to kill Flaming Tiger God first so I'd have to fight alone.

[Burstfire Raid]!

The tiger's body suddenly grew larger!

But Bai Li Ruofeng was unaffected, and easily shot the escaping Flaming Tiger God with a "Pa!". It was [Scattered Shot]! The angle of release and the speed of the arrow was perfect. There was absolutely no way the Flaming Tiger God could have dodged that!

.....

The Flame Beast roared and attacked the Flaming Tiger God. Bai Li Ruofeng then shouted, "[Electric Star Shot]!"

"Shua!"

Lightning surrounded his body, increasing his attack speed. "PaPaPa" He shot three arrows at Flaming Tiger God. Fortunately, the Flaming Tiger God's defense was high; it would've been insta-killed otherwise!

With [Haste], I ran and found a suitable angle to unleash my attack from. With a sweep of my sword, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

Bai Li Ruofeng had anticipated this strike and with a sneer, he activated [Crystalize], just barely dodging the attack.

After the duration of [Crystallize] ended, we were less than 5 yards from each other. This time I activated [Great Realm of Desolation] in hopes of instantly killing him!

Unfortunately, Bai Li Ruofeng saw through my attack and calmly took three steps back, causing [Great Realm of Desolation] to miss. His movements and reaction speed were so fast, that he gave me absolutely no time to use [Binding Chains]!

I lowered my Emperor Qin's Sword and used [Blade Rush]. I was close enough for my attack to land!

“Kacha!”

I rushed forward, quickly appearing right in front of him. My Emperor Qin’s Sword stabbed at his neck like a thorn!

.....

“Hmph?”

Bai Li Ruofeng coldly sighed. A wave of energy gathered under his feet, and a violent gust of wind energy exploded in between us. This exploding radiance seemed all too familiar — it was [Combo]!

How did an Archer like him learn a [Combo]??!!?!?!?!?

Chapter 323: The Strongest Revealed

“Hong!”

The violent wind formed a protective wall, making it impossible to take even one step forward; the wind also inflicted 1102 damage. As Bai Li Ruofeng retreated another step, he pulled his longbow back; “Pa” the shot dealt another 900+ damage. I raised my longsword and relied on my [Haste] to rush forward a couple yards, bringing my Emperor Qin’s Sword down upon him!

“Shua.....”

Bai Li Ruofeng’s third attack was actually a long-distance jump, and using that he retreated 20 yards. He simultaneously raised his longbow and shot an arrow that penetrated the whirlwind, smashing into my chest!

“1626 ! ”

The fourth attack was intending to kill, hitting its target with a shocking speed. The arrow had penetrated my chest before I could even react and brought out another high damage number—

“2122 ! ”

Watching it, I felt my heart turn cold. My high health had already dropped to the bottom. What kind of a person was this Archer? To think that he could wound me so critically with just normal attacks!

On top of that, the data I gathered before had not shown the level of understanding that Bai Li had of his [Combo]. It looked as if the first attack was a new addition that was made specifically to deal with me. Finally, the system showed me the details of his combo—

[Lightning Tempest] S-ranked: Gathers the power of a raging storm into a single blow that pierces the winds and deals critical damage. Combo make-up: [Condensed Storm] > Attack > [Backward Jumpshot] + [Wind Piercing Strike] > [Mortal Burst Shot]. Completes within 1.9 seconds.

.....

I drained another health potion and cast [Heal] again, regaining 4500 of my health. Controlling both sides of the battle, I had my Flaming Tiger God break free from the battle with Bai Li Ruofeng's Flame Beast. With a roar, Flaming Tiger God pounced forward with [Burstfire Raid] and raised his claw to cast [Blood Drain]. At the same time, I raised my hand, activating [Binding Chains]!

Bai Li Ruofeng quickly moved, dodging the [Binding Chains], but not the [Blood Drain]!

“2177 ! ”

“+2177 ! ”

After draining a large amount of health, the Flaming Tiger God roared again, raising its neck as it activated [Fierce Roar]. Within the short 0.5 seconds cast duration, Bai Li Ruofeng's pet attacked again and activated [Fierce Stomp]. “Bang!”, the Flaming Tiger God's [Fierce Roar] was interrupted as it became temporarily dazed!

That motherf*cker Bai Li Ruofeng is countering my every attack!

My Divine Battle Boots ferociously tread on the path along the walls of the arena as I rushed at my opponent. At the same time, I controlled the other side of the battle and commanded the Flaming Tiger God to activate [Flame Armor] after he awoke from his daze. With a roar, a thin layer of fire began encircling the small tiger's body, decreasing the damage from Bai Li Ruofeng's pet to around 200 points, barely making it through alive.

Gazing upon my skill bar, I was delighted to discover that my [Seven Star Fragment Slash]'s cooldown was over and without another word, turned around and found the perfect casting angle. I raised my hand and cast [Seven Fragment Slash] from a distance, enveloping both Bai Li Ruofeng and his pet!

“Urgh!”

Bai Li Ruofeng coldly grunted. Miraculously, he managed to command his Flame Beast to dodge at the same time, each to opposite sides, bringing out two big MISS from my [Seven Star Fragment Slash]; not even

one hit landed! My mind went blank. F*ck, is this what an expert in maneuvering is like? What kind of a demon has that reaction speed? Moreover, controlling two different maneuvers at the same time in that split second?

Despite the shock, I didn't miss single a beat. Immediately I spread my palm; three Emperor Qin's Swords materialized, aimed at my target – [Great Realm of Desolation]!

Bai Li Ruofeng had seen this coming and bit down, scoffing, “[Great Realm of Desolation]? Keep on dreaming! You want to kill someone with a skill that has a cast time of 2 seconds?”

“Bang!”

With a loud sound, Bai Li Ruofeng jumped backwards, dodging the skill completely. But in the next moment, the three Emperor Qin Swords penetrated Bai Li Ruofeng's pet, while my Flaming Tiger God simultaneously went in for the kill and activated [Flame Claw]. The Flame Beast cried out pitifully and finally fell to the ground, lifeless –

“2817 ! ”

“1928 ! ”

.....

Bai Li Ruofeng was beyond shocked, “F*ck me, that's too underhanded! To think that you would trick me!”

While talking, he waved his longbow, swiftly launching an arrow straight into my chest. It was a [Silencing Arrow]! I couldn't use any skills for 2.5 seconds! At the same time, Bai Li Ruofeng quickly retreated, making my Flaming Tiger God move to align with me. In that moment, my heart froze.

“Ha!”

On the bowstring, a meteor materialized as Bai Li Ruofeng's longbow was pulled back to create an extremely long ranged attack. A blazing meteor swept through me and my Flaming Tiger God. It was an SS tier

skill, [Big Dipper Meteor]

“2717 ! ”

“1827 ! ”

The Flaming Tiger God yelped in pain and with its life on the line, it pounced towards Bai Li Ruofeng with [Burstfire Raid]!

Bai Li Ruofeng retreated just in time while shooting another arrow at the tiger. With a “Shua Shua Shua” three arrows pierced through the [Burstfire Raid] and killed the Flaming Tiger God! He had been extremely calculating and had saved his skills, using them only when the Flaming Tiger God’s [Flame Armor] had worn off. The ability to calmly judge the situation was incredibly rare, and it was because of this skill that he made it into CBN’s top 10!

.....

“Pa.....”

My battle boots stomped across the stone floor as I dodged the incoming attacks in a zigzag manner, MISS-es appearing behind me. At the same time I waved my hand, activating [Haste], but everything was within Bai Li Ruofeng’s predictions. His eyes shone with prideful bloodlust, and without another word, raised his longbow. “Pa!” Another accurate shot!

I raised my blade and with a “Keng”, knocked away the arrow, but despite this, I still suffered another 500+ damage. Desperately closing the distance between us, my health constantly dropped. However, I couldn’t attack rashly and instead waited for the opportune moment to strike!

Bai Li Ruofeng continued kiting me, focusing on my decreasing health. Once it fell below 2000, he finally stopped in his tracks. He was only 10 yards away when he dragged his bowstring simultaneously causing a faint red structure began to materialize in the air. Motherf*cker, it was the third job advancement skill which could penetrate any defense – [Shot of the Archery God]! He had been waiting for my health to drop low enough to instantly kill me!

“Swoosh.....”

A red arrow shot straight at me. However, I had seen it coming and remained scarily calm. Concentrating hard, I activated [Blade Rush] at the exact moment the [Shot of the Archery God]’s arrow tip touched my body. “Ka Cha!” I rushed forward 5 yards, dodging the attack completely. Immediately taking a step, I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword as a frosty mist enveloped it, [Fierce Ice Blade]!

“Pa pa.....”

Bai Li Ruofeng immediately let loose two more arrows, draining my health down to 1000 points. At that exact moment, [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] activated, using up 40 Rage, while my defense instantly showed a tremendous increase. Right after, [Dragon Knight’s Recovery] also activated, using up the remaining 60 Rage. Just as my rage depleted, I began quickly recovering my health!

“Pu!”

The [Fierce Ice Blade] cut into Bai Li Ruofeng’s chest, dealing 2910 damage. Immediately after, I rushed at him with a normal attack, going straight for the kill! It was the fate of any Archer – either kite me to death, or die to my close-combat abilities!

However, just as Bai Li Ruofeng was about to die, he didn’t fall to the ground but rather began condensing. My heart froze as I saw it. Motherf*cker, a third advancement Archer skill that allowed him to revive with 5% health!

Without another thought, I quickly ran to Bai Li Ruofeng’s body and started slashing at him. The Emperor Qin’s Sword activated with a ‘ding!’ as 5 rays of golden light appeared encircling the blade. Right when Bai Li Ruofeng began reviving, I activated a Lv 8 [Combo] that ripped his body to shreds –

“1221 ! ”

“1029 ! ”

“1173 ! ”

“1210 ! ”

“1838 ! ”

The very last attack even dealt outstanding damage. Bai Li Ruofeng was full of regret as he weakly fell to his knees. There were no miracles in this world, he was dead for sure!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations! You have defeated Player [Bai Li Ruofeng] and will successfully advance to the tournament for the top 32!

.....

“Shua!”

I was teleported outside of the battle field and heard a loud cheer. Matcha rushed over with open arms to hug me while cheering with a big smile. “Boss..... Boss is so strong! You actually beat CBN’s ranked 4 – Bai Li Ruofeng!!! God, even [Destiny]’s number one Archer has fallen to Boss’s sword. Amazing, just amazing....”

I could feel Matcha’s pair of 34C’s pressing tightly against my chest and was a little embarrassed. I nudged her shoulders and said, “Matcha, don’t get too excited.....”

One Second Hero moved in to hug me too and chuckled, “I knew it, Matcha’s so pretty. How could Boss not take her? It really looks like this will develop into something more complicated...”

Matcha’s cheeks burned as she left my embrace and stared at One Second Hero, “Complicated my ass. One Second you douche, you only see what you want to see. I love Boss but we definitely don’t have that kind of a relationship!”

Bai Qi laughed out loud and said, “Alright alright, now quietly watch the rest of the competition....”

Glancing up at the big screen, I continued to watch as Lin Wan Er, grasping her dagger, slowly killed off Immortality Codex and smoothly entered into the top 32. Using an immensely strong magic attack, Dong

Cheng Yue also advanced without a hitch. At the same time, Yue Qing Qian continued to stack stuns on her opponent, using a high level skill with extreme ease. Heaven's Rebel did not have the chance to retaliate at all; eventually resulting in him getting overpowered and killed.

“Shua Shua Shua....”

The outlines of bodies began appearing as Matcha excitedly stood there, yelling out each of their names—

“Beauty Cang Tong advanced!”

“Beauty Cang Yue advanced.....”

“Wa.... even Old K advanced.....”

“Little Wolf advanced!”

“Wang Jian advanced!”

“Yue Wei Liang advanced..... Wu, looks like Little Wolf really does have to treat everyone to a big meal tonight.....”

.....

Everyone happily waited in the room and not long after, the final list of the top 32 participants was announced. Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Mu Xuan, and Simple had easily advanced into the top 32. The only surprise was that [House of Prestige]'s Guild Master Bai Li Ruofeng was eliminated in the top 64. But, when everyone saw that his opponent was me, it wasn't considered a fluke anymore.

Matcha looked at the list on the big screen, rubbed her mouth and said, “The pairings for the top 32 won't come out until 6 o'clock. How..... How about we log off now to get some dinner or something?”

Wolf picked up his dagger and smiled, “Let's go to Xiang Wei Xuan*! I've already reserved a private room for us....”

[Editor Note: Name of the restaurant – Hunan Pavillion]

I nodded and said, “Alright, then I'll bring Wan Er and Dong Cheng over!”

General Li Mu said, “Ok, I’ll bring the Valiant Bravery brothers over to celebrate.....”

Yue Qing Qian giggled and said, “Then I’ll log off too and get some dinner. Ma Ma’s already rushing me. See you everyone!”

.....

Everyone logged off and began to make their way to Xiang Wei Xuan for the party.

Chapter 324: There's Air Conditioning in the Hotel

In Xiang Wei Xuan restaurant, a group of people sat around a large table. Song Han ordered some food and grinned while saying, "It really wasn't easy but three people in our Zhan Long Studio actually entered the top 32 rankings of the Rise of the Heroes Tournament. We got really lucky!"

Lin Wan Er smiled faintly, showing her dimples as she said, "I'm not trying to demean you guys but we were truly lucky, especially for Song Han and Old K. Throughout the tournament, you guys haven't encountered any opponents that were truly strong or else you guys would've probably been eliminated in the top 64....."

Matcha held up a cup of tea and smiled, "Compared to that, Boss's journey through the Rise of the Heroes tournament was much more awe-inspiring. He overcame many obstacles and defeated strong experts throughout the competition, such as Dawn Hero, Don't be Foolish, Babel Buddha, Jian Tan, and Bai Li Ruofeng; each stronger than the last. You can honestly say that Boss had really fought his way to the top 32, especially in that last battle against Bai Li Ruofeng. When he activated that Archer [Combo], I was so sure Boss would lose but I would never have imagined that Boss would trick him so beautifully by using [Great Realm of Desolation] to kill his pet first. The battle tactics used were really clear-cut. Surprisingly, Bai Li Ruofeng didn't choose to command his pet to stun Boss and kill him while Boss couldn't move; he must've felt so regretful about that mistake...."

Dong Cheng Yue raised her drink with a wide grin, "Here here, let's make a toast for classmate Xiao Yao Zi Zai's great kills! Let's also toast the fact that five people from this table actually made it into the top 32"

Old K smiled and said, "Let's not, what's the point of drinking juice? Here, how about we switch to some liquor?"

Dong Cheng Yue was stunned, saying, "Eh, can we not drink beer? I'll get fat....."

Old K said, "Don't worry, we don't celebrate like this all the time....."

Lin Wan Er smiled and said, "Alright, then Dong Cheng and I will drink a bit...."

Song Han waved his hand and said, "Waiter, get us two packs of beer!"

The waitress hesitated for a second, then went to bring some beer. Soon, the table was filled with beer bottles, causing me to realize that tonight, there might be a few people who would drink themselves unconscious.

.....

After pouring out a glass of beer, Dong Cheng Yue stood up and laughed, "Here! For our first toast, let's... let's make it for, Hmm, I've forgotten....."

Lin Wan Er whispered to her, "For the top 32, idiot....."

Dong Cheng Yue lightly smiled and said, "Alright, cheers to our heroes who have killed their way to the 2018 World Cup's top 32....."

I facepalmed and said, "Dong Cheng, you're not drunk yet! Don't spout nonsense!"

After that, everyone rose to knock their cups together in a toast and proceeded to chug the beer down. The girls modestly sipped at it, whereas Dong Cheng Yue downed it in two gulps. Lin Wan Er took three long sips and finished her cup. Normally, they didn't drink that much.

As I still had some responsibilities to fulfill, I didn't dare to drink too much and only downed half the cup. Glancing at the astounding beauty clad in a floor-length dress sitting beside me, I was even more sure of the decision to stay sober in order to protect her. Although drinking seven or eight bottles would not get me completely drunk, it was still best to be as clear-headed and sober as possible.

Dong Cheng Yue downed a cup, her cheeks turning a bright shade of pink. She took out her phone and touched the screen a few times,

“That..... The Chinese Rise of the Heroes Tournament’s Top 32 have already been announced..... Wu, and our Brother Xiao Yao has been put into the A group. Your luck really is good. A group..... Damn, isn’t that the group of death? Mu Xuan, Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Feng Han, Q-Sword, and now a Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it’s the group of death, isn’t it?”

I shivered and said, “What’s the situation?”

“Here, look.....”

Dong Cheng Yue put the phone in front of me and took the chance to lean her sweet-smelling shoulder onto my chest; is she taking advantage of me? I didn’t pay too much attention since I was focused on the pairings for Group A. Looking at it made my heart beat faster –

Rise of the Heroes Tournament 32 Strongest

[Group A]

Xiao Yao Zi Zai Vs Mu Xuan Fushen Thousand Blade Vs Yan Zhao Warrior

Lu Dong Bin Vs Jian Feng Han Fallen Wolf Vs Q-Sword

.....

Lin Wan Er squinted her beautiful eyes and looked at the pairings, then looked at me and pursed her lips. Mischievously, she said, “Brother Xiao Yao, I feel so sorry for you, you had to face Bai Li Ruofeng in the top 64 and now in the top 32 you have to face Queen Mu Xuan. Your life is so hard. This round is basically set-up to be the epic opening for Rise of the Heroes’ top 32.....”

Without another word, I began tearing up. Raising a cup and gulping down the contents, I begrudgingly said, “It’s just too unjust. Why can’t I just go against Fallen Wolf or Lu Dong Bing? Even Fushen Thousand Blade would be better than this.....”

Lin Wan Er lightly smiled and pushed her shoulder against my chest. She sweetly murmured, “It’s alright. To be honest, you can take the initiative to defeat Mu Xuan then Yan Zhao Warrior and finally kill either

Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han. If you manage to, you'll be all the rage and everyone will know the weight behind your ranking as one of the top 4.....”

I was speechless, and continued drinking. Finally, I said, “I'm very upset tonight, can Wan Er drink and keep me company”

“Alright, don't be sad. Let's look at the last three teams.....”

“Sure!”

Everyone took out their phones to look. The last three groups appeared to be normal –

[Group B]

Fang Ge Que Vs General Li Mu Yue Qing Qian vs Xuan Yuan Feng

Cang Yue Vs Han Bei Song Death's Contract Vs Soaring Dragon

[Group C]

Cang Tong Vs Lu Chun Yang Simple VS Not So Ordinary

Sword Tears Vs Cang Cheng Ye Lai Vs Misty Clouds

[Group D]

Yue Wei Liang Vs Blazing Sun Drunken Spear Vs General Wang Jian

Hero Ran Min Vs The Seventh Tang Wolf's Totem Vs Heaven's Hero

.....

Dong Cheng Yue squinted her beautiful eyes and said, “Eh, in our B Group, there's a Fang Ge Que. Don't you guys think that my group is a death match too?”

Song Han said, “At least you can easily kill Han Bei Song and Death's Contract, securing your spot in the top 8.....”

Lin Wan Er said, “I'm in the C group, which appears to have strong experts.... Wu, my first opponent is Lu Chun Yang, reputed to have perfect control over his sword mastery..... There's also Simple who's really strong. That Ye Lai is [Judgement]'s Guild Master and rumored to be

extremely strong at close combat . I have quite a few obstacles this time around.....”

“The D group has the most love.....” Matcha lightly smiled, “Four of the people in the D group are from [Zhan Long]. Shouldn’t we call it the [Zhan Long] Group now? At least we’ll definitely get a member into the top 4?”

Fox shook his head and said, “Not necessarily. Yue Wei Liang, Wang Jian, Old K and Wolf being in the same group actually decreases our chances of getting into the top 4. Blazing Sun and Heaven’s Hero are ok but Drunken Spear and The Seventh Son of Tang changes things up a lot.....”

“Don’t worry so much, let’s eat first.....” I said as I picked up my chopsticks. The waitress had already begun serving the dishes.

Dong Cheng Yue then said, “There’s more. The rewards for the Rise of the Heroes Tournament have been released.....”

I questioned, “Oh? What are they?”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled and nodded. Then, with the voice of a talk show host, said, “First, all players ranked between 513-1024, get Charm+1 and Exp+20%. Secondly, all players between 257-512 get Charm+1, Exp+40%. Thirdly, all players between 65-256 get Charm+1 and Exp+60%. Lastly, all players between 33-64 get Charm+2 and Exp+80%!”

Matcha smiled and said, “Not bad, I got that Charm+1.....”

Lin Wan Er said, “Hurry, what are the rewards for the top 32? That’s what’s most important.....”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded, then continued listing out the awards for the top 32. I opened up the official site on my phone and scanned through the list, finding the rewards page –

17-32 Reward: Charm+3, Level+1, 10,000G and has one chance to participate in a lottery for an S tier skill book. The chances of winning correlates directly with the ranking and charm points of the person.

9-16 Reward: Charm+5, Level+1, 20,000G and has one chance participate in a lottery for an S tier skill book or a high level Purple Tier equipment. The chances of winning correlates directly with the ranking and charm points of the person.

5-8 Reward: Charm+7, Level+1.2, 50,000G and has one chance to participate in a lottery for a Emperor Tier equipment or an S tier skillbook. The chances of winning correlates directly with the ranking and charm points of the person.

3-4 Reward: Charm+9, Level+1.5, 100,000G and has one chance to participate in a lottery for a Valkyrie Tier equipment or an SS tier skill book. The chances of winning correlates directly with the ranking and charm points of the person.

Second place Reward: Charm+12, Level+2, 200,000G, and one chance in a lottery for a Saint Tier equipment or an SS tier skill book. The chances of winning correlates directly with the ranking and charm points of the person.

Champion Reward: Charm+15, Level+3, 500,000G, and the chance to enter a lottery for a Divine Tier equipment or an SSS tier skill book. The chances of winning are directly correlated with the ranking and charm of the person.

.....

“How is it? Do you have anything you want to say?” Dong Cheng Yue mischievously asked.

I rubbed my nose and said, “The prize for Second place is incredible..... I need to get to the finals. And who knows, maybe I’ll take away the world’s first Divine Tier equipment.

“Don’t disillusion yourself.....” Lin Wan Er smiled, “Try to defeat Mu Xuan first before you talk big. Don’t forget, third advancement Mages can use [Dimensional Leap] 3 times; in other words, a close combat specialist’s worst nightmare. Even though you have long-ranged skills, if you can’t break through her [Mana Shield] then it will all be in vain. So..... hehe, don’t let Mu Xuan get to you and you’ll be fine.....”

I made a fist and said, “Don’t worry. Mu Xuan has no chance of stopping me from getting into the final rounds....”

“The second round could be Uncle Yan Zhao. He’s also really strong!”

“No problem, I never thought of him as my rival. When I’m done with Mu Xuan, my spot in the top 8 will be set.....”

“Mhm!”

.....

We continued to eat and drink. The lavish Hunan-styled dinner was delicious and after a few more bottles of beer, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue’s cheeks were flushed. I wasn’t sure if it was because the food was spicy or if they drank too much, but seeing as their movements were as natural as they were before, the pink flush shouldn’t have come from the alcohol. These two girls have lived lavishly since childhood, and seeing the ‘Ms. Perfect’* temperament of these girls truly made one admire them.

[Editor’s Note: An internet slang referring to fair-skinned, rich and beautiful girls]

In the blink of an eye we feasted until around 8 o’clock. Song Han handed over his credit card to the waitress along with the check. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue sat on the side, their cheeks extremely pink. Lin Wan Er tilted her head and smiled foolishly, “Hi.....”

TL Note: Wan Er says Hi in English

Amused, I replied, “Hi, Wan Er.....”

Her smile became even sweeter as she wrapped her arm around the chairs back and moved her face closer until she was only 10 centimeters away from my own. She flashed a beautiful smile at me and all of a sudden, drunkenly asked, “Tell me honestly, do you like me?”

“Um.....”

My mind went blank and so I stupidly answered “I.....I don’t know..... probably?”

Lin Wan Er squinted her beautiful crescent eyes at me and smiled, "That's too half-hearted!"

Behind me, I felt a warm body suddenly pressed against my back. Dong Cheng Yue put her hand on my shoulder and leaned onto my back. Her full 34C breasts pushed against me as her warm breath breathed into my ear, "Brother Xiao Yao, take Wan Er and I home..... Hurry, Uh, nevermind, take us to a hotel room!"

I was astonished, "Why a hotel room?"

"It's too hot and hotels have ACs....." She mischievously smiled.

"That's enough....."

Looking at the two beautiful girls I began feeling dizzy. How could this be appropriate?

Chapter 325: Let's go buy drinks!

“Brother Xiao Yao....”

While supporting Matcha, Song Han said, “Matcha drank too much so I'll take her back. You.....You should..... take care. Make sure you don't take advantage of Wan Er and Dong Cheng's trust in you, ha ha ha.....”

I glared at him, “Get out.....”

“Haha, I'm leaving!” Song Han helped Matcha up and began to leave.

While opening the door, Matcha grabbed onto the door and turned to look at me helplessly, “Wuwu, will the boss be eaten by those two girls tonight?....”

Song Han was speechless, “Don't worry about it. Let's go. I'll bring you back to your room before Old K and Fox eat you up.....”

I stood up as well and while I supported Dong Cheng, I instructed, “Little Wolf, take Matcha to her room safely and then give me a call!”

“Okay!”

Song Han nodded reassuringly, “Don't worry brother Xiao Yao. While I'm here, I won't let anything happen to sister Matcha.

I knew Song Han's character. He's extremely honest, had a good temper and would never go back on his word. When Matcha entered our studio, I told them to treat her as a team member and not have any inappropriate ideas about her or else they were not be fit to be members of [Zhan Long] and I think Song Han understood that very clearly. He had a lot more self control compared to Old K and Fox. Besides, he could easily beat them both up, so I wasn't that worried.

.....

After the members of the studio left, only Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I remained. Looking at the two beauties, I felt dizzy again. Good thing I didn't get very drunk or else I wouldn't even know what to do. Even if I'm only 80% sober, I should be fine.

“Wan Er, let’s go home!”

I lowered my head and smiled at Wan Er. “Come on, why don’t you hold on to my arms?”

Wan Er started laughing. “No need. I’m not drunk at all. I can walk by myself.....”

I nodded. “Okay then, how about you walk a few steps?”

Wan Er stood up wobbling and laughed. Within three steps, she fell over and I immediately caught her. While she was holding onto my arm, I asked, “Do you still wanna walk by yourself?”

“No.....” She smiled. “My knees will get hurt.....and I won’t be able to explain why”

Expressionless, I said, “Spoiled girl.....”

.....

Holding onto Wan Er’s waist on my left and hugging Dong Cheng on my right, I walked out the doors. On the streets, my appearance attracted all kinds of envy and jealousy from other men. I even heard someone say, “Damn kid has two girls on his arms... tonight will surely be fun for him. I sure hope he dies from over-exhaustion ’cause he deserves it.”

I couldn’t help but smile and ignored them. I didn’t have any problem returning to the dorms. On the way, I even saw one of Lin Tian Nan’s men disguised as a sanitation worker. It was obvious that he wasn’t a worker since the man spends the whole day going around the school with bulging muscles. There was no way he was a sanitation worker....

Still, I was worried about them going upstairs by themselves, so I sat them down on a bench in the garden. I held onto Wan Er’s hand and said, “Wan Er, Stay here with Dong Cheng for a bit. I’ll go get some red tea to sober you girls up.”

Wan Er hugged my arm and said, “Li Xiao Yao, don’t leave.....”

“What happened?”

She looked at me tipsily as the corners of her mouth went up, “I don’t

know.... I just.... I just don't want you to leave. Stay with me for a bit okay?

“Okay then.....”

I sat down next to her and she moved her arms around me and hugged me with her face in my chest. She was breathing evenly and as though her position was uncomfortable, she leaned over, wrapping an arm around my neck, and hugged me. She hid her face in my chest, breathing her warm breath into my embrace and said “What’s happening to me..... I feel like I’m not myself.....”

I patted her back and smiled, “Silly girl....”

Wan Er lifted her head, then looked at me and laughed, “You’re the silly one. You’re an idiot.....”

“Is this a personal attack? Heh.”

“Even if it’s a personal attack, what are you gonna do about it?”

“What can I do? The miss is mightier than me.....”

Wan Er’s face turned red and she continued to bury her face in my chest.

On the other side, Dong Cheng was even more drunk. While on the chair, she began groping my legs and finally sprawled onto my lap and fell asleep.

I don’t know how much time had passed until Song Han finally called me. Looking at my phone, it was a bit past 10PM and the night wind became chillier and chillier. I should really get some red tea to sober them up or else we’ll be sleeping outside.

At that moment, I looked up and noticed a familiar light near the school fountains. After looking at it for a bit, I realized that it was the reflection off the scope on a sniper rifle.

Suddenly, I completely sobered up. Near the fountains, there was a sniper looking at me, Wan Er and Dong Cheng. I didn’t even need to think about it. He must be one of Lin Tian Nan’s men.

I held onto Wan Er’s arms and lightly shook her, “Wan Er, wake up!”

“What happened?” She opened her eyes.

“Look after Dong Cheng for a bit. I’ll go get you girls some red tea. You must be thirsty, right?”

Wan Er widened her eyes, “Eh, how did you know?”

“I guessed.....”

“Okay.” She sat up, moved Dong Cheng from my lap and smiled, “Then you better be quick!”

“Alright!”

.....

I stood up and made sure that there was no one else around so that the two girls would be safe. I walked towards the vending machine and stealthily plunged into the forest. I rushed towards the little park and used my qi energy as though I had activated [Haste]. I reached the fountain in 10 minutes and silently crawled up the hill!

“Shua!”

In front of the fountain, a sniper was laying on the hill for cover. He didn’t even notice me sneaking up from behind at all.

“ShaSha.....”

I purposely stepped on a branch to make a sound. He immediately turned his gun around! .

With a single stride I lunged forward. A frigid qi began gathering in the center of my palm as I cut right at him. With a “Ka Cha”, the rifle snapped in half. There was no way he could possibly shoot another shot.

The opponent suddenly reached down to grab the dagger in his boot. The movement was so reflexive that I could tell he was an experienced soldier. If I hadn’t been using qi to cover my whereabouts, he probably would’ve noticed me long before I made it this close.

I ferociously kicked at him and with a “Pa!”, the remaining half of the rifle fell to the ground from his hands. I swiped the knife from his hands

as well and pressed the blade against his neck.

“Kid. What do you want to do?!” He looked at me, shocked.

I put a little more pressure into my wrist, making the blade cut into his skin. He immediately turned red. Looking at him, I coldly drew each word out, “I told Lin Tian Nan already. Don’t let anyone point a gun at me. Go back and tell him, or else, the next time we meet, I’ll kill you. You can try me if you don’t believe it.

His face turned ashen and couldn’t say anything.

With a flick I tossed the army knife into the bushes on the hill and jumped down from the 10 meter high fountain with qi under my feet, lightly landing on the ground. I looked at the sniper and said, “What are you waiting for? Miss Lin is drunk. I’ll go accompany her while you go and get some red tea to help them sober up.....”

The sniper was stunned. “O...Okay.....”

.....

Going back to the bench, Dong Cheng was fast asleep on Wan Er’s shoulders. I quietly sat down and Wan Er looked at me. “Hey, where’s the red tea?”

I shrugged. “Wait a bit. Someone will deliver it.”

“Wow. The service nowadays are really good. There’s even a delivery service from a convenience store?”

“Yeah. I think the convenience stores are starting to partner with shipping companies for better service.....”

“Bullsh*t.....”

Not long after, the mercenary quickly came over with two bottles of red tea. Without saying anything, he gave me the tea and disappeared into the darkness. He knew that he was only a shadow and should not have appeared in front of Wan Er and Dong Cheng. This was only an accident.

After I gave the tea to Wan Er and Dong Cheng, they sobered up a bit. Wan Er stood up and smiled, “Okay. I’ll help Dong Cheng upstairs. You

should go get some rest too. We've already fought in the tournament for half a day so you should be tired as well. Rest up so you can maintain 100% concentration in tomorrow's battles against the experts. It would be the best if we could meet in the finals.

I nodded, "Yeah, I'll give it my all!"

"Okay!"

.....

After I confirmed that the two went upstairs, I returned to my own room and slept.

The next day, I was woken by a ringing sound. It was a call from Wan Er, "Get up sleepy head. It's 10 o'clock already. My dad came over and said he was treating us to a meal. The food will be served at 10:30 and we'll be finished by 11:30. That's enough time for us to get back to the [Rise of Heroes] tournament."

"Okay. I got it....."

I quickly got up and washed myself. At the same time, I felt a bit nervous since Lin Tian Nan came over. It must be related to the incident last night....."

.....

In a restaurant outside of school, Lin Tian Nan made reservations for a room. Dong Cheng, Wan Er and I entered and ate happily. Lin Tian Nan had a few bodyguards and talked a bit with his daughter. After eating he looked at me and said, "Li Xiao Yao, come out, I need to talk to you!"

"Okay!"

I nodded and followed him outside.

Lin Tian Nan's back was facing me and said, "Last night, you beat up one of my men. You're really good huh!"

I didn't beat around the bush and said, "I don't want someone to keep their scope on me every day. I hope you can understand!"

“Understand? Understand what?”

Lin Tian Nan turned and looked at me. “Li Xiao Yao. You’re making things really complicated. I need to be in control of things. But you. You’re always going against me. Tell me. What is your purpose for being around Wan Er??

“Purpose.....”

I took a deep breath, looked at him and stated. “The purpose is so that when you can no longer protect her I’ll be there to do so!”

Lin Tian Nan hesitated for a bit and then started laughing. “Okay. Go get some food. Eat a lot!”

“Yeah.”

.....

In the afternoon, I returned back to the dorms and went online to prepare for the tournament.

Chapter 326: Mu Xuan's invitation

This chapter was sponsored by Freelance PR, francois Ginon and Ng Shan! Thanks!

Shua!

Right as I logged on, I received a system message: "Hello, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Because you are a participant in the [Rise of Heroes]'s top 32 tournament, you can enter the arena for free. Do you wish to enter?"

.....

I made sure to check on the condition of my equipment so that it wouldn't break in the tournament, and that I had enough potions. Since the tournament restricted the use of God Army Cards, I didn't need to check on those, and I entered the arena. Rays of light began rising from the ground and wrapped around my body as the magic teleported me to another map. A panorama suddenly unfolded before my eyes. It was a stately and serene arena with white marble covering the ground. In the center of the massive plaza was a battle arena surrounded with hundreds of spectators. It was like a Roman Colosseum, only without the feel of death; it was more like the atmosphere of a competitive game.

At around 11:45, there were only 15 minutes left until the top 32 started competing. I came a bit late; Yue Qing Qian, Song Han, and Old K were already inside the plaza. In the distance, Yue Qing Qian raised her arm and shouted, "Brother Xiao Yao, we're over here! Hurry up!"

I quickly jogged over. Not far from me, Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue also appeared. Our entire group had been teleported to the nearest contestant stage, whereas the spectators were all sitting outside in the audience. The entire stadium had at least 10,000 people there to watch; they were all players from the three big cities.

Everyone was gathered together. I looked towards the center and said, "There's only one area. Looks like the top 32 fights are going to occur one by one, not at the same time."

Wan Er nodded and said, "Yup! In total, there'll only be 16 rounds since it's a best of three knock-out competition. This way it'll be more fair."

Yue Qing Qian smiled and said, "There are so many spectators. I heard that if you want to enter the arena, you have to pay at least 100G..... Otherwise, you can only watch it live from the NPC's in the main cities, where the atmosphere is not as great. But the 100G is too expensive; that's like 500RMB..."

Dong Cheng Yue held up her staff and said, "No worries. There's quite a number of people who have that kind of money in the three great cities.... Ugh, an annoying person is coming over...."

In the distance, a Knight clad in armor and holding a long spear was walking over. It was Wang Ze Cheng, ID Cang Cheng. He calmly walked over with his Transparent Spear and smiled at Wan Er, "Wan Er, here you were. Congratulations on getting into the top 32. I had originally wanted to invite you to eat dinner with me to celebrate, but you didn't pick up last night. I guess you just didn't see it....."

Wan Er pursed her lips and bluntly said, "No, I saw it, I just didn't want to pick up. I don't even know you that well, so don't call me again, or else I'll put you on the blacklist."

Wang Ze Cheng stared blankly at her and said, "That..... Wan Er, did I do something to offend you?"

Wan Er smiled and said, "You didn't offend me, but you used [Hero's Mound: First Division] to invade Ba Huang City. Now, even Q-Sword can't reclaim his power over the First Division. He doesn't talk about it, but that doesn't mean it didn't happen. Wang Ze Cheng, I really don't understand what you want to do. Did you invest 4M into [Hero's Mound] just so you could buy our First Division?"

Wang Ze Cheng furrowed his eyebrows and said, "It's not what you think it is. I was just....."

"What isn't?"

Wan Er arched a delicate eyebrow and said, "After [Hero's Mound: First

Division] left Fan Shu City, you've switched out a total of 43 people, from the Vice Guild Master to even the flag bearers. We all know that they're your people, your trusted aides. Hehe, Wang Ze Cheng, you've truly made a great investment. You managed to buy a super guild with 4M. In addition, you can use [Hero's Mound]'s reputation everywhere to intimidate the average small guilds and earn some meager sensibilities, right?"

Wang Ze Cheng looked like he was beginning to struggle, "Wan Er, it's really not what you think it is. I'm not that kind of a person. There must be some misunderstanding. Don't trust other people's rumors so easily....."

As he said, that he reached out to grab Wan Er's wrist.

"Shua!"

I quickly slid in front of Wan Er and with the shake of my right shoulder, the Emperor Qin's Sword slid out of its sheath and knocked away Wang Ze Cheng's arm. As we were, my defense was slightly lower than his, but my attack was far greater. It was impossible for him to force his way past me in the game.

"Li Xiao Yao?"

Wang Ze Cheng retreated a few steps, slightly embarrassed. He raised his spear and said, "What's the meaning of this? Why are you fighting against me?"

My eyes flashed as I coldly said, "Wang Ze Cheng, keep your distance from Wan Er, or else I'll rip you apart!"

Wang Ze Cheng gave me a cold glare and said, "Li Xiao Yao, I have not done anything to offend you, so why are you doing this? I have a strong alliance with Tian Xin Corporation. Uncle Lin would never allow you to do this. Hmph, don't mistake my patience with you as weakness. If you weren't Wan Er's friend, then I wouldn't show you so much mercy!"

I couldn't help but smile. and with a "Keng" my sword completely slid out of its sheath. I gripped it in my hand and said, "Come on, let me see

just how capable Ba Huang City's number one Knight really is. I've been waiting for you to say this for a while now, Wang Ze Cheng. It must be tiring wearing that fake mask all the time. Come, come, come, let's heartily fight it out. Whoever loses must withdraw from the Rise of the Heroes Tournament!"

"You!"

Wang Ze Cheng was speechless with fury, and could only raise his spear and turn around to leave, "It's impossible to reason with you....."

Yue Qing Qian smiled at the sight of Wang Ze Cheng leaving and said, "Oh, Brother Xiao Yao, you just made Guild Master Cang Cheng rage quit. Careful, [Hero's Mound: First Division] might try to annihilate our [Zhan Long]....."

Old K laughed out loud and said, "I'll be waiting for that group of trash to come at us....."

.....

At that moment, a handful of people also came walking over. It was the people from [Legend]! Leading them was a youth clad completely in white, and his battle robes elegantly danced in the wind. In his hand he held a paper fan, and he walked with an elegant demeanor. On top of his head there was a line of words, showing everyone his home city and ID—

Fang Ge Que Lv 73 Sacred Mage

City: Jiu Li City

Guild: Legend

Guild Position: Guild Master

.....

Behind Fang Ge Que, Lu Chun Yang and Xuan Yuan Feng closely followed. Their arrival quickly became the focus of everyone in the arena. Everyone was looking towards Fang Ge Que like he was the Son of Heaven. He was the Guild Master of [Destiny's] number one guild, number one on CBN's ranking, as well as the top player in the Chinese

servers, and perhaps even the number one player in the world!

Fang Ge Que's eyes scanned the entire area, devoid of all emotion. Soon he found a bench on the side of the contestant stage and calmly sat down, his posture elegant and his clothes perfectly placed.

"What a strong presence, this Fang Ge Que....." Yue Qing Qian whispered.

"Mhm....."

I tightly gripped my sword and said, "This person is in the same upper group as me. If I want to make it to the finals, then I must defeat Fang Ge Que....."

Dong Cheng Yue patted my shoulder and chuckled, "Don't worry too much. Think about getting into the top 4 first. Oh, look over there, it's your first opponent. Oh, she's probably coming here for you....."

In front of us, a beautiful Mage was unhurriedly walking over with her staff. Her equipment was exceptionally full of sex appeal; her skintight battle robes revealed a mesmerizing body. A good half of her D-sized twin peaks were revealed, as well as her slender waistline, while her skirt fluttered in the wind, showing off a pair of long legs that caught the stares of everyone. On top of that amazing body, she also had a charming face, making Old K, Song Han, Wang Jian and Li all gasp, "Damn, this woman really.....really takes the breath away....."

Mu Xuan, a.k.a. Queen Mu Xuan, perhaps because she had the traits of a ruler, had founded [Appearance Alliance] and made it into one of the top ten guilds. This woman was an alluring legend, and almost every man admired her. Even women were moved by her beauty, not to mention men.

Mu Xuan walked over to me and curled her lips into a lovely and alluring smile, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, [Zhan Long]'s Guild Master, Ba Huang City's number one close-combat specialist. These days, you even hold an extremely high win rate against Jian Feng Han. Hm, you even look pretty nice..... This, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you want to change guilds? I can make an exception if you want, and you can join [Appearance Alliance]. I'll even give you the position of Vice Guild Master, how about it? If you enter

[Appearance Alliance], you'll become a legend. On top of that..... you'll have an endless amount of beauties.....”

“Keng!”

I stabbed my Emperor Qin's Sword into the ground and wryly smiled, “Thank you for the offer, Guild Master Mu Xuan. However, even if I don't enter [Appearance Alliance], I believe that I can make [Zhan Long] a legend. As for beautiful women.....”

I glanced at Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue at my side and said, “Fan Shu City's number one and number two beautiful women, Cang Yue and Cang Tong, are mine. I don't think I need to look for any more.....”

Wan Er blushed and said, “Asshole, you're using me as an excuse again.....”

Dong Cheng Yue, on the other hand, gladly said, “Aiya, you're finally admitting to my existence. What a happy feeling.....”

Mu Xuan tilted her head and looked at me, then lightly smiled and said, “Alright, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Since you've declined my offer, I can only send you on your way in the top 32 fight. Don't blame Sister if I don't show any mercy. Hehe, also, we're the first round in Group A, so we'll be the opening fight. The most important part isn't winning or losing, but having an entertaining fight!”

I nodded and smiled, “Don't worry! It'll definitely be an exciting fight!”

“Alright, I'll be waiting!”

.....

At that moment, there were only 5 minutes until the tournament began. Everyone started to focus on the stage as the lights began to shine on the center. Suddenly, a summoning hexagon began to spin, and a beautiful figure appeared on the stage. It was a graceful Archer beauty. She carried a bow of light and with the sway of her slender hips, she walked to the side of the stage. Multiple eyes stared at her body and at the same time, a line of words appeared under the hem of her short skirt—ZGTV!

“What? Why does she look so familiar?” I rubbed my eyes.

Wan Er chuckled and said, “Did you forget? That is ZGTV Game Sector’s reporter, Sun Fei Er. Last time, she came over to interview the two of us.”

“Oh, it’s her....” I slapped my thigh.

Yue Qing Qian’s eyes fluttered a few times and she said, “ZGTV’s Fei Er, I heard that she’s the best anchor in all areas of [Destiny]. It’s amazing how she was even recruited by [Destiny] to introduce the top 32 in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament.....”

Chapter 327: Little Zai Zai

Standing on the stage, Fei Er was not nervous in the slightest. In her hands she held a special microphone designed specifically for the game. Soon, her sweet voice rang throughout the stadium –

“Contestants, players, welcome to this years Rise of the Heroes Tournament!”

“Up next, everyone will get to see an exciting competition between players from Jiu Li , Fan Shu, and Ba Huang City, as they try to clinch the gold medal. To whom will the gold medal of this Rise of the Heroes Tournament be awarded to? Will it be [Legend]’s Fang Ge Que, [Hero’s Mound]’s Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, or a black horse? Let us watch!”

“Our first fight will be between the number one player in Ba Huang City, [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, against [Appearance Alliance]’s Guild Master, Mu Xuan! Oh, Mu Xuan is a beauty who is known for her strength and looks. Let us witness this battle. Would the two contestants please come on to the stage!”

.....

“Ding!”

After a confirmation ring, I was sent to the stage. This time, the stage was at least 200×200 meters; this was advantageous for Mu Xuan to kite me, but disadvantageous for me as a close combat player. I would’ve much preferred a 10×10 stage where I could get close to my enemy within two steps.

On the stage, Mu Xuan stood gracefully on the other side with a smile plastered across her face. You could tell she was a veteran. Moreover, she was magnanimous and true to her word. Mu Xuan was not concerned about the outcome of the battle but rather the enjoyment of the fight itself.

Fei Er held onto the mic as she announced, “Alright, both sides have entered the arena. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Mu Xuan, please get ready. Once I

leave the stage, the fight will begin!”

As Fei Er said that, she turned into a white streak and disappeared.

The system started to countdown-

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle Start! This was the first time I had ever participated in the opening battle of such an enormous competition. The significance was obvious; it was a battle that I couldn’t afford to lose. Thus, I had to do my best and advance as far as I could.

“Pa...”

My battle boots burst off the ground as I abruptly charged towards Mu Xuan. With a low roar, the image of a dragon flitted across my body as [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] activated, increasing my attack and defense capabilities by 40%. Of course, an increase in defense did not mean much against an opponent like Mu Xuan. Only magic resistance counted when facing off against a Mage and fortunately, mine was quite decent.

Mu Xuan’s gaze locked onto me as she focused all of her attention on the impending battle. She spread open her fingers, sending an [Ice Cone] flying towards me!

“Pa!”

“1102 ! ”

This woman was truly strong. If her instantaneous spells dealt so much damage, what would her channeled spells be like?

Even though I had been slowed down, I continued to advance. At the same time, I opened my palm to summon my Flaming Tiger God and commanded it to attack Mu Xuan from another direction. This was key to my strategy; since she couldn’t cast an [Ice Cone] on both me and my Flaming Tiger God, all I needed to do was wait for the right opportunity

to strike.

Mu Xuan retreated while she summoned her own pet. With a cry, a giant eagle appeared in the sky and dived straight at the Flaming Tiger God, its sharp beak glowing red. “Pa!” The peck hit near the tiger’s eye, making it cry out in pain while also impairing its vision. It was a blinding attack, rendering me unable to control the Flaming Tiger God’s angle of attack or the direction of its movements!

I bit down and commanded it to activate [Burstfire Raid]!

“Hou!”

The small tiger’s body suddenly grew and its four flaming claws started slashed outward. It was pretty lucky that it just happened to trample upon the giant eagle’s position. The eagle had been flying low in preparation for another attack, and thus couldn’t dodge the incoming strike.

From afar, I opened my palm and cast [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“3488 ! ”

“Damn.....” The giant eagle’s health dropped and Mu Xuan was stunned. Her little mouth widened as she said, “That bastard’s attack is really strong..... If I had known that earlier, I would’ve switched to my Flaming Leopard.....”

Before the words even left her lips, Mu Xuan waved her staff, causing fire and ice magic to shoot straight at my chest. My health fell with each hit –

“1673 ! ”

“1426 ! ”

I was starting to get anxious and decided to rush forward with my Emperor Qin’s Sword. At the same time, I activated [Haste], giving me a great burst of speed. Simultaneously, I commanded my Flaming Tiger God to launch a surprise attack from the flank. Its [Flame Claw] cut right into the [Mana Shield], dropping its durability by another 21% to 47%. All I

needed to break the shield was another [Fierce Roar].

“Shua...”

A giant icicle began to form in Mu Xuan’s hand, an [Indigo Sea Arrow] was coming!

Right after [Indigo Sea Arrow] flew out, Mu Xuan’s arm shifted again, activating a [Pillar of Fire & Ice] right in front of the arrow. This woman was too clever; she knew I could use [Blade Rush] to dodge high level attacks like the [Indigo Sea Arrow]!

Unfortunately for her, she had miscalculated. If it were a month ago, my reaction speed would’ve been nowhere near enough to dodge. But the current me was incomparable. I twisted my body, and used [Blade Rush]. I stayed close to ground and slid forward at a 75 degree angle, causing her two attacks to MISS. I then waved my sword while my body was still in motion, and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Bang!”

With a flash, the blade sliced through Mu Xuan’s body, cutting down the [Mana Shield]’s durability down to 11%. More importantly, she was only 5 yards away as I closed in on her, rapidly covering the distance in between us within seconds.

“Damn...”

Mu Xuan bit her lip and retreated from her spot. At the same time, she raised her staff and continued to use [Ice Cone] to slow down my [Haste]. This time, however, something completely unexpected occurred.

“MISS ! ”

“MISS ! ”

Two consecutive MISSes appeared, revealing that the [Ice Cone]s had been dodged. On top of that, these were two attacks that she expected would hit!

“How is this possible!?”

Mu Xuan couldn’t recover from her shock. It was obvious that she

hadn't done her research well enough, or else she would've known that I was wearing a Magic Spite armor, allowing me to dodge 30% of all magic attacks. I clearly had the advantage in this respect!

With a burst of speed, I suddenly rammed against Mu Xuan's body, knocking both her and her [Mana Shield] back several steps. The tip of my Emperor Qin's Sword clashed against the shield as five hexagonal rays flew out, cutting into it. The first attack broke the shield, while the second attack landed on Mu Xuan herself –

“MISS ! ”

“1737 ! ”

“1822 ! ”

“1739 ! ”

“1802 ! ”

.....

Mu Xuan groaned painfully and weakly fell to the floor as she evaporated into a ray of light and flew out of the arena. I heard a small 'ding' beside my ear and a system notification appeared: Congratulations, you have defeated Player [Mu Xuan] and received 1 point!

Once the duel finished, my body suddenly felt a wave of warmth and my health returned to full. Looking at the armor in front of my chest, I was suddenly filled with gratitude. Thankfully, the Magic Spite armor held strong, or else I would've truly struggled against a powerhouse like Mu Xuan, whose strength was not inferior to Dong Cheng Yue's. One little mistake and everything would've been over, and that was not an exaggeration.

Not even half a second later, the second round began, and Mu Xuan was teleported to the arena once again.

“Shua!”

A summoning hexagon appeared as she summoned her pet a Flaming Leopard, giving off the atmosphere of an expert. Against every expert

there was always a counterplan, but as before, I didn't understand how this Flaming Leopard pet would change the Mu Xuan's tactics or plan of attack. Could this Flaming Leopard change my ability to pressure her? In the first round, I was able to pressure her, not even giving her the chance to use [Dimensional Leap]. How would this round turn out?

“Come then...”

Mu Xuan waved her arm and her 32E's swayed a little with the movement. She sweetly smiled and said, “I'm beginning to fall for you, Little Zai Zai*!”

TL Note: This is a play on Xiao Yao's name

I shivered and grinded my teeth as I said, “Can you not call me ‘Little Zai Zai!’?”

“Why, do you want me to call you ‘Little Zi Zi’?” Mu Xuan grinned.

My face practically turned green, “Whatever, do what you want, as long as you're happy. Work hard in the next round; I didn't feel pressured at all during the previous one.”

Mu Xuan lightly smiled and said, “Don't worry, the last battle was just the beginning. I was simply testing you out. This round's for real. Prepare to be devastated by me, Little Zai Zai!”

When Mu Xuan called me “Little Zai Zai” I could feel ants crawling up my skin. Once the countdown finished, I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and rushed forward!

“Shua!”

With the flash of a hexagon, my Flaming Tiger God roared and pounced out. My tactic was the same as before, letting my little tiger support me as we both attacked her. We had to give her a lot of pressure or else this expert in ice and fire magic would definitely wreak havoc; I had no way of tanking all that damage.

The next moment, a completely unexpected scene unfolded as Mu Xuan sent an [Ice Cone] at me, cutting down my speed while commanding her

Flaming Leopard to pounce towards my Flaming Tiger God. Before my tiger could react, he attacked first, sending a [Flame Nail] that stunned the Flaming Tiger God for 3 seconds!

“478 ! ”

Looking at the damage number, I suddenly realized that the Flaming Leopard was an agile pet; it had a high attack speed but minimal power. However, it was still much faster than my Flaming Tiger God, and could use [Flame Nail] to control its movements; it was perfect against my tiger. This type of pet would only be used by true top tier experts.

Mu Xuan waved her arm again, sending an [Indigo Sea Arrow]+[Fireball] right at my Flaming Tiger God!

“4129 ! ”

“1737 ! ”

At that moment, the Flaming Tiger God received critical damage. I was stunned and quickly used a [Heal] to save it!

The Flaming Tiger God woke from its daze and with a roar, it activated [Flame Armor] and used [Burstfire Raid] to charge at the leopard. It raised its sharp claws and hit the leopard with a [Blood Drain], sucking away 3000+ health!

At the same time I also raised my sword and charged forward, decreasing the distance between me and Mu Xuan. Without a second thought, she used a [Dimensional Leap], while her Flaming Leopard came roaring at me. It sent another [Flame Nail] straight into my shoulder, stunning me!

Mu Xuan was in no rush to kill me and continued to attack my Flaming Tiger God. Taking advantage of the distance between pet and owner, she whittled away at its health!

.....

My heart froze, was this what a top tier expert was like? She's too strong!

Taking advantage of my tiger's [Flame Armor], I rushed forward to decrease our distance. With the wave of my sword, I targeted the Flaming Leopard, and cut it down with a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“3167 ! ”

The Flaming Tiger God roared, activating a [Fierce Roar] that trapped the Flaming Leopard within the range of both our attacks. At that moment, the Flaming Leopard cried out and disappeared with a flash of light!

Mu Xuan couldn't help but let her small jaw drop, “Dammit, I have to change plans again! Clever Little Zai Zai, you really know how to find loopholes!”

.....

I raised my hand and cast another [Heal] on my Flaming Tiger God before rushing at Mu Xuan with my sword raised. Since both master and pet were fully recovered, I had a higher chance of winning!

Mu Xuan held up her staff and used another [Dimensional Leap] to jump to the border of the arena. She waved her staff and yelled –

“Okay already, I admit defeat...”

Chapter 328: Death Group

“Shua!”

Mu Xuan’s beautiful body disappeared in a flash of light. Once again, she proved to be a mysterious woman. She had at least a 30% chance of winning. If she had killed my Flaming Tiger God and used her two [Dimension Leaps], she would have been a serious threat to me. And yet, she chose to forfeit the match!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have won the match! You have successfully advanced to the top 16 of the [Rise of Heroes] tournament!

.....

After confirming the system notice, I was sent back to the place I was previously at. Suddenly, Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, Yue Qing Qian and the rest of [Zhan Long]’s members came up to me, “Congratulations on beating Mu Xuan!”

I held up my Emperor Qin Sword and rubbed my nose as I smiled, “I was just lucky that Mu Xuan didn’t try to fight to the end.....”

Several meters away, Mu Xuan picked up her staff and leaned against a white pillar as she lazily looked at me. Her 36E’s looked appealing as they moved with each breath she took, while her slender, snowy legs peeked out each time the breeze blew against her skirt. She laughed and said, “It wasn’t that I didn’t fight to the end, I just didn’t see any point in continuing. The 30% Magic Resistance on the Magic Spite Armor is just too terrifying. You only needed a [Blade Rush] to dodge my [Indigo Sea Arrow], giving me no chance of victory. I might as well just forfeit, or I’ll just look unsightly kneeling on the ground.....”

“Not at all.....” I laughed, “You’re defeated appearance doesn’t look ugly. Otherwise, how would you be considered Jiu Li City’s number one beauty?”

“That’s not it.....” The corners of Mu Xuan’s lips raised as she blushed, “The slit on this dress is just too high; the effect from losing makes it so that you can even see my pink underwear.....”

I was stunned, “I..... I didn’t notice anything in the first round.....”

Mu Xuan raised her elegant eyebrows and smiled, “Oh I see how it is, Little Zai Zai. You weren’t even looking, is that it? Am I really that unattractive to you? That’s it. I can’t take it anymore! Next week I’m mobilizing [Appearance Alliance] to storm into Ba Huang City to annihilate your [Zhan Long] before kidnapping you and taking you back to Jiu Li City where you’ll be made our Vice Guild Master!”

At that moment, Lin Wan Er was so anxious that her crimson knife came out of its sheath with a “Keng” and took a stance next to me. Her beautiful eyes carried killing intent, “Hmph, if [Appearance Alliance] dares to touch [Zhan Long] then come and try!”

Mu Xuan hesitated then smiled and said, “Alright, alright, big sister was just kidding..... Cang Tong, this girl. Ah, Little Zai Zai, you’re really lucky to have such a pretty girl at your side...It’s really strange that she, as the Vice Guild Master of [Hero’s Mound], is with you and not Q-Sword.....”

I made a fist and smiled, “Cang Tong will be one of us sooner or later!”

“Oh, so it was like that.....” Mu Xuan chuckled and said, “Now I know why you don’t want to join our [Appearance Alliance]. You already have so many beautiful girls around you. It all makes sense now, hehe.....”

Old K raised his battle axe and then pointed at the stage and said, “The next fight is about to start!”

“Alright!”

I looked up at the stage and carefully watched every fight, knowing that everybody on that stage had the chance of becoming my opponent. I needed to understand their fighting style and make sure I could rise victorious. Besides, while I was fighting my own battle, Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword were both completely focused on the fight, learning my every move and tactic. It was only by doing this that they could increase their

chances of victory. Every expert didn't become strong just by training their skills but rather with calculated moves and detailed analysis of their opponents.

In the second round of the top 32, it was Fu Shen Thousand Blades vs Yan Zhao Warrior, both of whom were famous people in Ba Huang City. One was [Vanguard]'s Vice Guild Master, Ba Huang City's number one Monk, while the other was [Prague]'s Guild Master, Ba Huang City's third top swordmaster.

Yan Zhao Warrior captured the audience's attention once he walked onto the stage. He was dressed in heroic armor and his body gave off an orange glow. It was obvious that at least 4 of his equipment were Emperor Tier or higher. Even the long sword in his hand was as strong as an Emperor Tier. [Prague] had a huge population and was a force to be reckoned with in Ba Huang City. It was even considered [Vanguard]'s rival. Many of the high level BOSSes in Ba Huang City had been killed by them, and so Yan Zhao's equipment was definitely not too inferior to Jian Feng Han's.

Fu Shen Thousand Blade carried his steel knife and glanced at his opponent. The corners of his mouth tilted up as he smiled and said, "Guild Master Yan Zhao, I never thought that I would meet you this early, he he....."

Yan Zhao Warrior was stunned and played it down, "Is it early? From the start I've known that a Monk couldn't possibly enter the top 32. I was expecting you to at most enter the top 128. I'm embarrassed to think that I'd meet you in the top 32, my luck is just too good. Getting into the top 16 is guaranteed....."

Fu Shen Thousand Blade's face turned purple. "Yan Zhao Warrior! Aren't you too arrogant!?"

Yan Zhao Warrior smiled. "Don't be angry. I'm only stating the truth. [Prague] and [Vanguard] were originally pretty close with each other. How about we secretly make an alliance?"

"Alliance my ass!" Fu Shen Thousand Blade angrily lifted his long

sword. “The world is too small for both of us. One of us will have to die! Let’s fight!”

The countdown started.

Yan Zhao Warrior brought out his pet and charged forward. He activated his [Peerless Strike] and instantly killed Fu Shen Thousand Blade’s pet. He whipped around and slashed through Fu Shen Thousand Blade, and then followed up with a Lv 8 [Combo]. After five attacks, the Monk was only left with around 30% health.

After hurriedly retreating, Fu Shen Thousand Blade grasped his long knife and began activating a cutting skill. Too bad for him, Yan Zhao’s battle techniques were just too strong and with a speedy retreat, he successfully dodged the skill. His sword charged forward once again and managed to stop his opponent’s next skill with a normal attack. He was not in a rush to kill since Fu Shen’s battle plan was already a mess; he could change the tide at any point. When Fu Shen reached critical health he downed a +3000 health potion!

“Fu Shen Thousand Blade is done for....” I smiled. “He will die once he drinks his potion.....”

Old K was stunned. “That’s not necessarily true, right?”

“Just watch.....”

In the arena, Fu Shen Thousand Blade started to drink his potion, while Yan Zhao Warrior began his attack. All his cooldowns were off. The sword pierced Fu Shen Thousand Blade. The [Combo] and its succeeding attacks exploded simultaneously, instantly slicing Fu Shen Thousand Blade’s body. Yan Zhao Warrior’s attack was so extraordinarily high that even a high defense Monk couldn’t defend against it.

第二局几乎没有什么变化，燕赵无双先杀宠物再杀人，就算是被对方放下屠刀降低10%的攻击力也依旧无比犀利，连斩浮生万刃两局，2:0晋级了16强，这也注定了燕赵无双是我16进8比赛的对手了！

There was basically nothing different in the second round. Yan Zhao first killed the pet and then the owner. Even if his attack had been

decreased by 10% from the opponents [Put Down the Knife], his attack power would still be unrivaled. He killed Fu Shen Thousand Blades two times in a row, guaranteeing his place as one of my opponents in the Top 8!

.....

“Wu.....” Yue Qing Qian made a fist and quietly said, “Ah, Uncle Yan Zhao won..... That means that Brother Xiao Yao will be his opponent in the next round, this.....this.....”

Wan Er looked at Yue Qing Qian, “Little Melon*, what is it?”

TL Note: This is a small joke referring to when Yue Qing Qian ate that giant cucumber in front of them

Qing Qian blinked and said, “Actually, I don’t want to see Brother Xiao Yao fight against Uncle Yan Zhao. I was originally [Prague]’s Vice Guild Master, so deep down I don’t want to see either fight against each other. But..... Last time when Brother Xiao Yao fought against Uncle Yan Zhao..... he lost....”

I clenched my fist and smiled, “Don’t worry, the only reason I lost the last time was because I had been a weak Healer without any attacking skills. It’s different now. In the next match, I will definitely overpower uncle Yan Zhao!”

Wolf smiled, “I support you, Brother Xiao Yao! Yan Zhao Warrior has been conceited for too long. We need someone to defeat him!”

Dong Cheng stood on the side and said, “Actually, Yan Zhao Warrior kind of lost to Jian Feng Han.... Ahem, ahem, but let’s pretend I didn’t say anything.”

“Don’t worry about it. The moment they become our opponents, we’ll use all we’ve got to defeat them. This way, [Destiny] will truly have fair gameplay. If [Zhan Long] truly wants to stabilize its place in Ba Huang City, we must defeat the CBN Rankers who have already made a name for themselves..... without sparing even one.”

“Yup!”

Wan Er lifted her face and looked at the stage. Showing her charming neck, she smiled and said, “The [Rise of Heroes] tournament is an important chance for players to prove themselves. After the tournament, the CBN Battlemaster Ranking charts will definitely change dramatically. For example, our Xiao Yao needs to be around the Top 10 or even in the Top 20 to rise in the CBN rankings. The CBN Battlemaster Rankings is even more important than the level rankings in each city, right?”

I nodded and smiled, “Mhm. Little sister Cang Tong is absolutely right.....”

Dong Cheng was shocked. “This guy is getting more and more daring. To even tease the miss like that.....”

Wan Er angrily glared at me and then smiled, “Laugh all you want. Hmph. Let’s see how you get out of the ‘Death Group’(A Group)!”

.....

At that moment, the third round for Group A began; it was Lu Dong Bing vs Jian Feng Han. Lu Dong Bing was the Guild Master of [Immortal’s Valley]. The meeting of these two was like a flood flushing the dragon’s palace. Jian Feng Han was respectful towards Lu Dong Bing; he cupped his hands and asked, “Brother Dong Bing. Long time no see. Are you still doing fine?”

Lu Dong Bing lifted his staff and said, “I’m doing fine....Just, my blood sugar’s been a bit high.....”

Jian Feng Han was speechless.

The battle ensued for seven minutes. Jian Feng Han continuously landed two hits on Lu Dong Bing, easily taking the ticket to the top 16 from him. Even though they were comrades, Jian Feng Han did not show any mercy at all. He was well aware that [Vanguard] was starting to lose status in Ba Huang City. [Prague] was growing by the day and [Zhan Long] was quickly gaining strength as well. In addition, [Blood Contract], [Misty Palace] and other new guilds were starting to appear. If [Vanguard] wants to maintain dominance in Ba Huang City, then Jian Feng Han must show his prowess in the [Rise of Heroes] tournament. However, his group is a

bit too much for him. If he wanted to enter the top 8, he would have to go through Q-Sword. If two Battle Reflux Style Master Class Legends fight, one of them will have to give up on the tournament.

.....

The fourth round of Group A was not as suspenseful as the others. Q-Sword easily killed Fallen Wolf, one of [Vanguard]'s top 16 players. After this, the pairings for the next round were clear.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai vs Yan Zhao Warrior

Q-Sword vs Jian Feng Han

.....

Each of the matchups had a Guild Master level player, and each playing an important role in their respective cities as well. The name "Death Group" was very fitting for Group A.

Chapter 329: The Strength of Fang Ge Que

Fei Er stood on the stage with her skin-tight armor wrapped around her curves. She held the mic in her hand and said in a sweet voice, “Alright, Group A’s semifinalists have already been decided. The participants are [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, [Prague]’s Guild Master, Yan Zhao Warrior, [Hero’s Mound]’s Guild Master, Q-Sword, and [Vanguard]’s Guild Master, Jian Feng Han. It’s fitting to say that the group of death has been created. The following matches will surely be a hair-raising fight to the death. However...before this, the three groups, B, C, and D must first proceed. The next competition will consist of Group B participants; And the first round will be Fang Ge Que VS General Li Mu!”

“Shua!”

Fang Ge Que took the initiative and entered the arena first, wearing a scholarly white gown. He held a paper fan in his hand as his entire body stood there with an elegant poise much like a noble from ancient times. Moreover, his gaze was disinterested and lazy, giving people the impression that he was aloof from worldly affairs. He was both relaxed and carefree ; it was most likely that kind of attitude that had made Fang Ge Que one of the major, undefeated experts on the Chinese servers. In addition, he had been dominating the top of the rankings for a long time, and was able to arrogantly look down at everyone else from the heavens.

General Li Mu gripped his sword and was at loss, “I’m about to go. Why is no one mourning for me?”

Wan Er chuckled, “Bye Li Mu....”

Yue Qing Qian held her dagger as she said, “Try to stay strong and endure at least a few hits. Nevertheless, you’re still be [Zhan Long]’s elder. You can’t....you definitely can’t be insta-killed. That’s unacceptable....”

Li Mu gritted his teeth, “I’ll try my best. Whether I get insta-killed or not will depend on Fang Ge Que’s mood....”

“Ok!”

.....

Li Mu entered the arena as well and the countdown began. Everyone was anticipating Fang Ge Que's performance, especially since we were all so unfamiliar with him. Only a few players from Ba Huang City have seen any of his PK videos and all we heard was that he was a rare expert in [Destiny]. Just the mention of his name was enough to make half of Jiu Li City Cower in fear.

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

The minute the fight began, Li Mu charged forward, launching separate attacks with his pet.

Fang Ge Que lightly waved the paper fan in his hand and a flaming wind slashed through the air, flying right at Li Mu! “Pa!” It hit him in his chest, dealing an enormous amount of damage –

“2671 ! ”

Li Mu's body slightly trembled. Never had he imagined that Fang Ge Que's cast speed would be so quick and ruthless. It was as though he didn't even need time to aim!

Fang Ge Que calmly watched as Li Mu rushed at him. Afterwards, he waved his paper fan again which made the earth shudder. An earth pike suddenly shot out of the ground and stabbed into Li Mu's two legs while another ice pike began to materialize in the air. It was Fang Ge Que's own custom SS tier skill [Earth and Ice Spike].

“2817 ! ”

Li Mu's health had dropped to the bottom and he quickly gulped down a health potion and hastily charged forward!

Fang Ge Que smirked and opened up his left hand to form a slender icicle. It was the beginning of an [Indigo Sea Arrow]! With the wave of his hand, the arrow shot right at Li Mu!

“Hua!”

“MISS ! ”

Li Mu's brilliant decision-making made him use [Blade Rush] to dodge Fang Ge Que's [Indigo Sea Arrow], while his blade also carried a [Sky Shaker Slash] that fell upon Fang Ge Que's shoulder. He had finally closed in on him!

Then, when everyone thought that Fang Ge Que had to use a [Dimensional Leap] to dodge the [Sky Shaker Slash], all he did was smile then opened his palm right in front of Li Mu's face. Suddenly, ice and fire began to intertwine “Bang!”, a new spell exploded, throwing Li Mu and his sword into the air where his body disintegrated into light!

“3726 ! ”

.....

“F*ck.....” Old K nervously made a fist as he was stunned by the scene, “Is Fang Ge Que even human? Before Boss Li Mu could even get close to him, Fang Ge Que managed to kill him in an explosion! That..... that's just too insane isn't it?”

Wan Er's eyes were glued to the stage as she said, “Fang Ge Que's calculations of health and magic damage is just too good. On top of that, he's extremely confident in himself. He knew that the [Fire and Ice Storm] was enough to take out 3200+ of Li Mu's health. Also, when he sent out the [Indigo Sea Arrow] he had already began to cast [Fire and Ice Storm], even Li Mu's use of [Blade Rush] was in his calculations.”

“This kind of opponent, is just too terrifying.....” Yue Qing Qian's small face was practically purple. She was familiar with Li Mu's strength, and for him to be killed so quickly meant that she, a small assassin, had no chance.

I patted her shoulder and said, “Qing Qian, don't be too worried. Even though your next opponent is probably Fang Ge Que,...Hehe, to be honest, entering the Top 16 is already pretty impressive. Just work hard to win against Xuan Yuan Feng for now.....”

“Alright, I got it Brother Xiao Yao....”

.....

On the second round, the same thing occurred and Li Mu had no strategy left to use. Fang Ge Que’s proficiency in magic had far exceeded everyone’s expectations. It was as if he could always predict his opponent’s next move and use spells to control them. Li Mu even deliberately moved in a Z shape but was still unable to dodge a single spell. In the end, he knelt to the ground again under another [Fire and Ice Storm]. 0:2, Fang Ge Que won!

“Shua!”

Li Mu left the arena, and with the sound of his sword clicking into its sheath, he gravely said, “Fang Ge Que is just too strong.... Everytime I try to move, it was as if I was dancing in the palm of his hand. There was just no way I could fight against him.....”

Dong Cheng Yue blinked a few times and said, “Li Mu’s movements were already extremely honed, and yet he still had no chance of winning. Exactly how smart is that bastard Fang Ge Que? It’s terrifying. On top of that, I keep on getting this feeling that the accuracy of his predictions is just too inhuman.....”

On the side, Lin Wan Er quietly crossed her arms in front of her chest and quietly leaned against a pillar, letting her shoulder touch mine.

I glanced at her and said, “Wan Er, don’t you think that Fang Ge Que might have the same ability as you?”

“I.....”

Wan Er stroked her chin then looked up at me and said, “I was thinking the same, I’m just not 100% sure.....”

“What kind of ability?” Yue Qing Qian asked.

“[Mind Reader]!” Wan Er gripped her hands and said, “Only with this skill can you 100% be sure of the opponents next move. It’s not possible for Fang Ge Que’s calculations to be so precise as to use spells to block

his every retreat and advance. This capability is practically impossible.

Yue Qing Qian was puzzled, "There's actually that kind of an ability? Then.... then the person with the SSS tier [Mind Reader] ability, that wouldn't happen to be you, Sister Cang Tong would it?"

Wan Er lightly smiled and said, "Yea, it's possible that Fang Ge Que has this ability as well."

Song Han then asked, "[Mind Reader], how do you disrupt it?"

"You need to control your thoughts." Wan Er didn't hide anything and explained everything about [Mind Reader]. She softly began, "[Mind Reader] is actually just the ability to snatch the opponent's current line of thought. If you clear your mind and not think about anything to the point where you're not even thinking about the next plan of attack, then the [Mind Reader] would basically lose all of its effect. Your body would react based on reflexes and not on what you are planning. That way, you might be able to break through the [Mind Reader]. But these are just my guesses, I don't know the exact details...."

Lost in thought, Yue Qing Qian muttered, "Acting with your heart, moving with your sword.... Hehe, that's easier said than done. If you don't have enough control over your consciousness, there's no way you can do it."

I coughed and said, "Actually, there's another thing to consider..."

"What?" Wan Er stared at me in shock.

Hesitantly, I began, "[Mind Reader]'s mechanics require extremely fast changes between discarding the target's previous line of thought and picking up the next. Fang Ge Que is human, not a god. If he picks up false information about the tactics used with his [Mind Reader], then he might not be able to quickly grasp the actual tactics that are relayed afterwards. We can prepare 3-4 sets of tactical routines and constantly switch between them. That way, we can use [Mind Reader] to mess up the other party's tactics."

"You bastard...." Mu Xuan laughed and said, "Little Zai Zai is truly

crafty to be able to come up with such a tricky plan. You truly deserve to be the man I've fallen for!"

I pursed my lips and said, "Don't bother with her. Let's continue discussing, there's also..... Hehe, Qing Qian you don't need to listen to the rest. You need to prepare for the next round. Your opponent is Xuan Yuan Feng, one of Fang Ge Que's top generals!"

"Alright, Brother Xiao Yao, wish me good luck!"

"Smooch....."

"Smooch....."

Wan Er was speechless.

.....

Yue Qing Qian walked up to the stage with her twin daggers in hand. She firmly stood there; across her was a formidable and handsome Knight. The Knight held a spear and wore sturdy armor. He seemed so bright that even the sun couldn't compare to him. His long hair floated in the wind as he laughed, "Miss Yue Qing Qian, I've really liked you way back when I was still in [Prague]. Let's be friends and join my [Legend] to help it grow. You'll become [Legend]'s number one Assassin. How about it, do you want to come over?"

Yue Qing Qian lightly brandished the dagger in her hand and a dense energy formed around it as she smiled, "No need, the one that I like is my Brother Xiao Yao. And I want to stay in [Zhan Long] for as long as it exists."

"Alright then, I guess I have no choice but to break my heart and kill this flower...." Xuan Yuan said with a laugh.

Yue Qing Qian also laughed, "Do it if you can!"

An Ice Rat burst from the ground and squeaked from Yue Qing Qian's shoulder. It was a Lv 62 magic-type pet. Yue Qing Qian had obviously chosen to use such a pet in order to face her opponent, a Knight. Because he had heavy armor with formidable defense, using magic attacks to

control the battle was definitely the smartest tactic.

“Roar!”

Xuan Yuan Feng’s pet was also released. It was fierce tiger; although it wasn’t as mighty as my Flaming Tiger God, it definitely wasn’t too low in terms of grade/rank/tier either.

The moment the fight started, Qing Qian used [Absolute Step] to charge forward and activated [Gouge] the second she reached him. “Shua Shua Shua.” The dagger stabbed forward three times in a row while her Ice Rat began its assault with its ice magic from a distance which slowed down both Xuan Yuan Feng and his fierce tiger pet.

“Shua!”

The spear’s tip began glowing crimson as a kill skill began to activate. With the turn of his body, Xuan Yuan threw a [Sky Shaker Slash]!

“Keng!”

The meteor fell from the sky and Qing Qian used both of her daggers to block it. She was forced to retreat several steps from the impact of the hit.

Xuan Yuan was an expert in tactics and with a turn he began to attack the Ice Rat. With a shake of his spear, he activated [Heavy Strike]+[Flame Axe] and his skills enveloped the small rat. Unfortunately, it’s tier was too low to defend and it had less than 4000 health. With a squeak, it was instantly killed!

Yue Qing Qian began chasing after her opponent and with a stab she dealt 1900+ damage. At the same time her snow white hand waved for a second and the Ice Rat returned to her pet space. With another wave, she summoned a Flame Wolf. To think that she would switch pets in the middle of battle, this little brat is truly daring!

Chapter 330: Intense Struggle

“Roar!”

The Fire Wolf was cloaked in scorching flames and it waved its sharp claws in the shape of a cross. “Pa Pa” Two slashes hit Xuan Yuan’s back, dealing 1200+ damage. Xuan Yuan’s defense was just too high, and although the Fire Wolf’s tier was pretty high, it wasn’t able to deal significant damage.

Yue Qing Qian closely followed him. Her dagger gave off a frightening glint as it was heavily thrust towards Xuan Yuan’s stomach.

“Keep dreaming!”

Xuan Yuan roared then completely turned around. “Bang!” His golden shield knocked the dagger away as he brought down his spear upon Yue Qing Qian’s shoulder. With some extra force he swept the beautiful Assassin away!

Qing Qian’s fell, and her arm got dragged across the ground, leaving her with a bleeding wound. Enduring the pain, she walked across the marble floor with her boots, gathering her strength for another [Absolute Step]. In a flash, she was behind Xuan Yuan Feng. Slightly raising her dagger, she activated [Backstab]!

“F*ck!”

Xuan Yuan Feng cursed, quickly activating [Cleansing Wind]. However, while it was still being cast, Yue Qing Qian’s feet slid across the floor and she immediately arrived in front of Xuan Yuan Feng. With a flick of her dagger, she successfully stabbed him, negating the effect of [Cleansing Wind]. Her attack even stopped him from grabbing a health potion by stunning him.

“Shua!”

Yue Qing Qian’s cloak fluttered as she raised both of her arms. A red glow surrounded her body, and energy instantly burst forth. She activated [Twin Blade Harmony], slicing through Xuan Yuan Feng’s heavy armor!

“2119 ! ”

At that moment, Xuan Yuan's eyes widened; 7000+ health had been cut away by Yue Qing Qian, just like that. To top it off, her timing was impeccable, stunning and killing him before Xuan Yuan even had the chance to recover!

.....

1:0 !

“Beautifully done.....” Dong Cheng Yue smiled as she held her staff, “Yue Qing Qian's PK was absolutely perfect. At first I was worried that she would lose, but it seems like my worries were unnecessary.....”

Wan Er nodded and smiled, “Yup! At the moment, Assassins still hold the advantage over Knights since they have the [Twin Blade Harmony] skill. After being stunned continuously, a Knight's ability to resist attacks would be considerably lowered. Besides, Assassins can also use [God's Dance] to dodge all physical attacks, an ability which critically lowers a Knight's chances of winning. Of course, this advantage would be lost when those expert Knights get to Lv 100 and obtain mounts.....Knights who have mounts can attack while charging, giving them the upper hand. This makes them incredibly difficult to face off against.”

The second round only lasted for 2 minutes and 27 seconds. Yue Qing Qian once again defeated [Legend]'s elder, Xuan Yuan Feng, and secured her place in the top 16!

.....

The next round was Dong Cheng Yue vs. Han Bei Song.

“Shua Shua” Two rays of light sent the two participants into the arena.

Han Bei Song looked at Dong Cheng Yue and rubbed his chin. He opened his mouth to speak but then stopped himself and hesitated for a few seconds before saying, “Beautiful Dong Cheng, you're Xiao Yao Zi Zai's friend and so am I. For this reason, can you tell me your number?”

Dong Cheng Yue irritably pursed her lips and said, “Alright, if you can

defeat me then I'll tell you my number. I'll even tell you Cang Tong's, Matcha's, and Qing Qian's numbers....."

Han Bei Song was surprised, "Buy one get three more free? Such good things exist? Looks like I certainly cannot afford to lose this match!"

Dong Cheng Yue waved her staff and lightly smiled, "Come, let me see how capable [Blood Contract]'s Guild Master really is!"

"I'm coming!"

Once the countdown finished, Han Bei Song charged forward with his pet. Seeing this, Dong Cheng Yue then commanded her Tiger Beastman to stop them. At the same time, she waved her staff which made the earth tremble. Pillars of molten lava suddenly erupted from the ground, dealing continuous damage to Han Bei Song. It was the S rank skill, [Magma Lance]! The instant Han Bei Song charged through the magma, Dong Cheng opened her palm again, [Thunderbolt Finger]!

"Bang!"

"3521 ! "

A Lv 8 Thunderbolt Finger obviously dealt an incredibly large amount of damage. Han Bei Song's health dropped, scaring him out of his wits, "F*cking hell, why's it so deadly?!"

Han Bei Song immediately gulped down blood then abruptly used [Blade Rush] to get past the Tiger Beastman's guard. Finally arriving before Dong Cheng Yue, he used [Haste] to increase his speed. [Blood Contract]'s Guild Master angrily yelled out, "Eat my sword! [Three Bloody Stabs]!"

He continuously swung his crimson blade. "Pa Pa Pa" Three blows landed on Dong Cheng's [Mana Shield]. The attacks were so powerful that they managed to break her shield!

Dong Cheng Yue's jaw slightly dropped and immediately used [Dimensional Leap] to fly into the air, activating another [Thunderbolt Finger]!

“Wu wu.....”

Han Bei Song fell to his knees with a wail, and just like that, he was defeated by the Mage. He had no other choice. Presently, Mages had the ability to use [Dimensional Leap] three times, which was a clear advantage. Warrior type players had to get to Lv 100 and reach the 5th job advancement in order to get [Charge]. That would be the arrival of the Knights' era. [Charge] could break through a stun, making the dream of instantly killing a Mage a reality.

.....

After two rounds, the score was 2:0. Dong Cheng Yue had taken victory over Han Bei Song!

The last round was Death's Contract vs Soaring Dragon!

In the arena, Death's Contract appeared to be a 30 year old young man who held a long sword in his hand. He was a third advancement Knight, and his eyes carried an intense fighting intent. He looked at Soaring Dragon standing in the distance and lightly smiled, “[Flying Dragon]'s Guild Master, hehe, I've heard that you weren't doing all that great in Ba Huang City. You were almost blown off by [Zhan Long]? I suppose it's true then; that for every rock there is always a paper. Your guild is named after a dragon and Xiao Yao Zi Zai's guild is called 'dragon slayer'. Was that why you've been left in this wretched state?”

Soaring Dragon had just prepared a polite greeting. But when he was suddenly met with such a biting remark, he ended up taunting back. His face was nearly green as he rebuked, “Death's Contract, [Flying Dragon] has never even crossed paths with [Emerald Porcelain]. Why would you mock [Flying Dragon]?”

Death's Contract laughed and raised the sword in his hand as he said, “That's not true. Let's just prepare to battle!”

Below the arena, I furrowed my brows, “Death's Contract is at least 30 years old, is he Sister Promised Love's husband?”

“That's right!” Wan Er smiled.

“Sister Promised Love is at most 25 years old and I’d believe you even if you said that Death’s Contract is 35 years old. This... this is starting to make me believe in true love, hahaha.....”

Wan Er glared at me and said, “Promised Love just prefers older men. Hmph, why are you laughing like that? I really want to punch you right now. Besides, what’s wrong with believing in true love?”

“Nothing’s wrong!” I leaned against the pillar next to Wan Er and smiled, “Let’s watch the tournament and stop talking.....”

.....

In the end, Death’s Contract had given us a glimpse of an expert Knight’s true strength. By using his shield, he was able to continue chasing after the Mage. With [Cleansing Wind], he was able to recover and dodge spells. He basically relied on these movements to gain the upperhand. In the end, he had used [Flame Axe] + [Skyslaker Slash] to kill Soaring Dragon. This clearly demonstrated that in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament, you needed the strength to back up your claims. It wasn’t a place where you could say you were strong just because you had a lot of brothers. On the arena, Soaring Dragon could still end up getting completely beaten up despite his ability to call upon the strength of a hundred in Ba Huang City.

And thus the top 4 from B group had also been decided—

Fang Ge Que vs Yue Qing Qian

Cang Yue Vs Death’s Contract

All in all, there wasn’t much of a suspense. Both Gua Gua and Dong Cheng Yue would probably die by the hands of Fang Ge Que. Of course, there was still some hope left; Assassins had the advantage over Mages. If Dong Cheng Yue competed against Fang Ge Que in terms of strength, accuracy, and their ability to control their thought process, if she could empty her mind while dodging all of her opponents attacks, then she could just rely on [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Magma Lance] to instantly kill her opponent. However the chances of that were fairly small because Fang Ge Que was a vigilant person, especially in battle where he would

have almost no flaws.

.....

Fei Er's mesmerizing body walked back onto the stage and she made an announcement with a smile, "Alright! After going through these intense battles, the victors from groups A and B have emerged. Next, let's give it up for the long-awaited Group C competition! The first round will be Fan Shu City's most beautiful Assassin, Cang Tong against [Legend]'s Vice Guild Master, Lu Chun Yang. This will definitely be a brilliant match; we'll all wait with high expectations!"

"Shua!"

Lu Chun Yang held up his blade and appeared on the stage. He seemed to appear slightly impatient.

I looked at Wan Er next to me and said, "Good luck, make sure you defeat that Lu Chun Yang....."

Wan Er held her daggers, her cloak whistling behind her. She smiled then said, "Don't worry, I've PKed Lu Chun Yang before. I've won 11 times and lost 3 times; the chances of him defeating me aren't very high."

"Okay!"

.....

Soon after, Wan Er also appeared on the stage and faced Lu Chun Yang. Neither of them said a single word as they waited for the system's countdown to finish—

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

The instant the countdown finished, Lu Chun Yang picked up his sword and charged forward with his pet. Wan Er lightly leapt forward and her long slender body seemed to disappear in thin air; it was [Conceal], one of the Assassin's most prized skills.

Lu Chun Yang stepped onto the green stone floor and slowly moved forward. His clear eyes swept across the battlefield and searched for any trace of his opponent. Leaves began to fall on the ground before his view then suddenly, Lu Chun Yang made a move. Wan Er used her daggers to block, but was pushed back several steps from the force of impact. He had managed to break her concealment.

“Wa.....”

Yue Qing Qian’s jaw dropped, “Lu Chun Yang’s insight is so keen that he managed to figure out Sister Cang Tong’s tracks based on the air current of the fallen leaves. No wonder he’s someone that Fang Ge Que places so much importance on.....”

I made a fist, but didn’t say anything. I just looked at the distant arena.

.....

Lu Chun Yang didn’t seem to have the slightest hesitation. Once he broke through Wan Er’s concealment, he immediately raised his sword to charge and slashed straight through the air!

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes looked became crescent shaped. Rather than retreat, she quickly advanced instead. Her little boots danced across the floor as she quickly rushed in. She had already figured out Lu Chun Yang’s angle of attack. She quickly jumped forward, and with a “Bang!” her shoulder hit Lu Chun Yang’s stomach. At the same time, her dagger quivered, activating [Bleed]!

“2311 ! ”

Lu Chun Yang’s health dropped by a half. He bellowed and took the opportunity to grab Wan Er’s arm. Spinning his body in the air, he immediately brought down a [Skysaker Slash] onto Wan Er’s shoulder!

“2519 ! ”

Feeling the pain from the attack, Wan Er became more violent. Her right hand cut through the air and with a “Ka Cha” her dagger penetrated Lu Chun Yang’s right leg. She brandished the dagger in her left hand and slashed another bloody cut onto her opponent.

“Dammit.....”

Lu Chun Yang quickly gulped down a potion. He suddenly swung his sword horizontally, but hadn't expected Wan Er to have already switched out the dagger in her left hand. With the raise of her hand, she drew out her iron umbrella. “Bang!” the sword clashed with the umbrella right in front of Lu Chun Yang's chest!

“Shua!”

The iron umbrella flashed then suddenly, Wan Er was holding two daggers in her hand again. The speed at which she switched weapons was astounding! She raised her arm and activated [Twin Blade Harmony]!

“I'm finished.....”

Lu Chun Yang looked over and couldn't help but close his eyes.

“2718 ! ”

A large damage number flew out. Under Fan Shu City's most beautiful Assassin's attack, [Legend]'s Vice Guild Master died just like that!

Chapter 331: The First Violent Battle

1:0 !

Although Lu Chun Yang's insight was exceptionally powerful, he was still quickly cut up by the Beautiful Lin. His endurance wasn't very strong; quite a few of his attacks had been shattered by Wan Er's iron umbrella. With [Mind Reader], Wan Er had been able to attack with exceptionally precise force at exact angles completely crushing Lu Chun Yang's advantage.

In the distance, Lu Chun Yang had been transported out of the ring. He quietly stood with his sword raised.

Fang Ge Que seemed to have said something to him in a low voice; and Lu Chun Yang just nodded. It was evident that Wan Er's strength made even Fang Ge Que unable to stay relaxed. Lu Chun Yang was under quite a bit of pressure, as he had not yet reached the peak level of a Swordsman and yet was going against a peak level Assassin like Wan Er.

.....

“Shua!”

The second time he appeared in the arena, Lu Chun Yang gripped his sharp blade and quietly watched Wan Er with his crystal beast.

The corners of Wan Er's mouth lifted and her piercing smirk penetrated deeply into the heart like an iceberg. She lightly waved the daggers in her hands, and after evaluating him, she gradually re-entered into an invisible state.

Lu Chun Yang quietly stood in place. He waved the sharp sword in his hand horizontally and the crystal beast loudly roared. A strong gust of wind stirred the falling leaves into an elegant dance. He was indeed smart; he used the spinning leaves to locate Wan Er's hiding location.

“Not good...”

Yue Qing Qian opened her mouth and said, “Sister Can Tong's concealment will be broken again. This Lu Chun Yang is really sly!”

“Hua...”

The falling leaves danced around when, suddenly, they separated, as though they had hit something in the empty space.

Lu Chun Yang didn't waste a single breath and charged forward. He waved his blade, allowing his [Combo] to burst forth, directly hitting that same empty space!

“Keng keng keng...”

When the sparks cleared out, one could only see the exquisite and unique iron umbrella deeply rooted into the floor tiles. It had been completely knocked away by Lu Chun Yang's chain of attacks. However, in that instant, Lu Chun Yang's face paled. Although his tactics were clever, Wan Er was even smarter. She abandoned her iron umbrella as bait while she remaining in an invisible state; directly diverting Lu Chun Yang's strongest and most explosive [Combo] skill.

“Hua...”

A stream of air whirled around at a crazy speed about 1 meter away. The leaves danced wildly in the air. With a sweep of her crimson cloak, Wan Er's physical body appeared. The tip of her blade suddenly swept upwards and ambushed Lu Chun Yang from behind!

“Peng!”

“1232 ! ”

Wan Er successfully stunned him for a duration of 2.4 seconds. With another dagger, she began accumulating energy in it With a shout, [Backstab] + [Bleed] simultaneously struck Lu Chun Yang's back, causing two damage numbers to burst out—

“1732 ! ”

“1293 ! ”

In that instant, Lu Chun Yang's health dropped once again. His eyes widened as he stared at Wan Er sliding towards him. The ambush had struck right as the stun stayed in effect for 2.4s. Wan Er lightly

brandished her daggers, and struck him once more, causing an additional 1.7s long stun effect!

Lu Chun Yang's face turned purple. This tempo would keep him stunned until he died. If it were any other Assassin, perhaps Lu Chun Yang would be able to rely on his 2300+ defense to resist two rounds of attack. However, Wan Er could kill him off within a single period of cooldown!

“Roar!”

On the side, the crystal beast brandished its sharp claws and suddenly struck Wan Er's arm. This completely stopped her attack, and also granted Lu Chun Yang an extremely good chance to recover. After this attack struck, he immediately retreated and gulped down a potion that recovered 3000 health. He then flipped around and used a [Blade Rush], putting his all into the attack!

“2217 ! ”

Wan Er's delicate body trembled, and she lost quite a bit health from [Blade Rush]. A violent wind burst forth behind him; Lu Chun Yang's [Skyshaker Slash] was coming!

“Shua!”

The blade was wrapped in starlight and the attack that Lu Chun Yang bet everything on cut into Wan Er's shadow. The beautiful Cang Tong activated [Absolute Step] and was 2 yards away, her speed far exceeding Lu Chun Yang's expectations. On top of that, Wan Er had used [Mind Reader] and found his angle of attack, one of the primary reasons she dodged the attack.

As she raised both of her daggers, the two blades began to fuse together; this was the prelude to [Twin Blade Harmony]. Wan Er was about to activate the killing move. She rushed forward to attack the crystal beast, and at the same time, her Tiger Beastman blocked Lu Chun Yang's path of retreat.

“Crap!”

Lu Chun Yang's pupils widened. As an expert, he already intuitively understood that this was an essential attack for Wan Er.

He suddenly held his sword horizontally in front of his chest to block. The magnificent number one Swordsman from [Legend] had finally been forced from offense to defense. He lowered his blade and planted his feet firmly in the ground to stabilize himself. At the same time, his left fist gathered energy, waiting to defend that incoming attack.

However, he hadn't realized that Wan Er had completely seen through his tactics. She leapt high in the air, and her seemingly delicate but strong combat boots kicked Lu Chun Yang away with a 'Peng'. Her angle of attack was extremely precise, and the amount of strength she put into the attack completely exceeded the opposite party's expectations. Her beautiful body flipped through the air, and seized the opportunity to raise her hands and send [Twin Blade Harmony] straight through Lu Chun Yang's chest!

"Puchi!"

"2817 ! "

Lu Chun Yang staggered back two steps. Before he could even catch his breath, the Tiger Beastman roared behind him and slashed at him with its sharp claws, inflicting 1215 damage. Lu Chun Yang finally fell to his knees. As the score was 0:2, he had already lost his chance to take part in the future rounds, stopping at the top 32. The only reason for his downfall was because his opponent was the all too powerful Beauty Cang Tong.

.....

"Shua!"

After her victory, Wan Er appeared next to me with a golden light. She laughed and said, "So easy...."

I shot a glance at her and replied, "That's a bit exaggerated isn't it, Miss?"

"Wu, alright. There was actually quite a bit of pressure. After all, my opponent was Lu Chun Yang, the expert that was brought up by Fang Ge

Que...”

Yue Qing Qian blinked and said, “I still think that Lu Chun Yang’s defeat was depressing. He hadn’t even had a chance to release a [Combo] before he died by Sister Cang Tong’s hands, step by step....”

In the distance, Mu Xuan raised her staff and laughed, “Lu Chun Yang’s loss was still fair. His strength is clearly very far from Cang Tong’s. Besides...Cang Tong managed to gain control over him step by step; Lu Chun Yang’s rhythm was completely thrown into disarray. If a peak level expert’s rhythm is broken, he’ll naturally lose. This competition’s victor was fated to be Wan Er.”

I looked at her and said, “Mu Xuan, don’t praise Cang Tong so much. She’ll become conceited.”

Mu Xuan straightened her astonishingly large chest and laughed, “Oh, that young girl can even act conceited? In front of me, what basis would she have to act so arrogantly?”

Wan Er looked straight at Mu Xuan’s 36E’s, then lowered her head to look at her own chest. She hugged my arm, her face bright red as she said, “Li Xiao Yao, we’re not going to talk with her anymore....”

I couldn’t help but chuckle, “Alright, we’ll stop talking. Let’s watch the next Group C competition...”

“Yea...”

.....

The second round was not suspenseful at all; Simple beat Not Ordinary 2:0. Not Ordinary was [Mass Burial]’s Guild Master, and had the innate skills, [Broken Slaughter] and [Rampage]. This was actually already very suspicious. Moreover, Bloody Blade was [Mass Burial]’s Vice Guild Master, who was also an Artificial. In reality, anyone with a brain would be able to connect the two; Not Ordinary was obviously the boss of Blue Water Street’s [Blood Scythe], Wei Fan. In addition, [Blood Scythe] had about 400 people that were used as experimental subjects for the Artificials project. Otherwise, there was no way they could’ve all been

able to gain the exact same innate skills.

Mm, at the moment, I still couldn't touch Not Ordinary, nor could I act blindly. Otherwise, I'd inadvertently alert the enemy. This was not something that neither I nor Wang Xin desired to see happen. However, the fact that the Artificials had joined the game was also very bewildering. [Bloody Scythe] definitely didn't have the ability to analyze and transplant various species' skills, if even Nanjing's research institute couldn't. The real situation happening behind the scenes was what I needed to dig out.

I would have to approach this slowly. First, I needed to figure out what [Mass Burial] was trying to do in the game, then I'd have to pull them all up by the roots. This would obliterate all evidence rather than eliminating them only on the surface. I had to completely erase all of these people's traces from [Destiny] to make the game clean and fair.

.....

The third round was Sword Tears VS Wang Ze Cheng. Sword Tears, Bei Chen Chen, Q-Sword's blood-related sister, along with Q-Sword and Jian Tan were known as "[Hero's Mound]'s Three Swords". They originally possessed extensive comprehension on tactics to control the flow of battle. It was said that when these three attacked together, a catastrophe would arise. This was because these three had studied fencing starting from a young age. Their coordination together within the game was something that nobody could even compare to.

Unfortunately, her opponent was Wang Ze Cheng. It was evident that Wang Ze Cheng had obtained two more new equipment. It was said that his base defense had already reached 3000, and his attack was also abnormal. His pet was a Grass-Eating Dragon, a low-ranked Earth Dragon. Although it was only a remote descendant of the dragons, it was still part of the dragon race. It was Emperor Tier, and couldn't be underestimated.

"Haha, Sister Sword Tears, to think that we'd meet in the top 32...."
Wang Ze Cheng smiled with his spear raised.

Sword Tears lowered her sword, and calmly gazed at the opposite party, “Cang Cheng, you still remember me? I had thought that you had brought [Hero’s Mound: First Division] to Ba Huang City and already divided the territory to become king, but never acknowledged us players from the main guild ever again.”

“How could that be?” Wang Ze Cheng laughed, “[Hero’s Mound: First Division]’s Guild Master will always be a member of [Hero’s Mound]. I, Cang Cheng, am not a person to kick a benefactor in the teeth. Don’t worry, as long as I have established myself in Ba Huang City and developed the three divisions, then I will definitely bring my brothers to return to Fan Shu City. That’s our real home city!”

Sword Tears indifferently said, “I hope that is truly the case. Otherwise, [Hero’s Mound]’s Guild Master will definitely kill all rebels within a thousand miles!”

Wang Ze Cheng nodded, “Yea, don’t worry. I’m not the type of person described in those rumors. Prepare to battle!”

“Ok!”

.....

The battle continued for another 3 minutes. Finally, Wang Ze Cheng used his powerful defense and recovery ability to whittle Sword Tears away. The main reason was without a doubt because a Knight’s [Heavenly Shield Wall] was a physical-type attacker’s worst nightmare. This was especially true in Wang Ze Cheng’s case due to his strong defense. Sword Tears couldn’t break his defense at all!

Having won 2 rounds in a row, 2:0, Wang Ze Cheng emerged victorious, and advanced to the top 16!

.....

The last round for group C was [Judgment]’s Guild Master Ye Lai VS [Misty Palace]’s Guild Master Misty Clouds. [Judgment] was ranked 6 out of the top ten major guilds, and Ye Lai was Lv 71 with the hidden profession, Blazing Berserker. His strength had reached unfathomable

depths!

From the distance, I said, “Clouds, be careful. Don’t get completely cut down by Ye Lai. Both of you are Berserkers with high attack and low defense. Make sure to seize the exact timing of attacks to instantly defeat him. In addition, your opponent, Ye Lai, is a renowned expert. He’s number 11 in the CBN Battlemaster Rankings. As a peak level player, he’s also called the Chinese server’s number one Berserker. You must watch out!”

Misty Clouds took a deep breath and nodded, “Yea, I’ll definitely make an all-out effort. Even if he’s the number one Berserker, I will still challenge him!”

Chapter 332: Porkchop Smiled

After two rays of light flashed, Ye Lai and Misty Clouds both arrived in the arena. Apart from the rank of their weapons, there wasn't much of a difference between the quality of their armor. In Ye Lai's hand was an Emperor Tier Battle Axe, whereas Misty Cloud's weapon was a high level Purple Tier Battle Axe. Ye Lai was [Judgement]'s Guild Master, so naturally his equipment wouldn't be bad. Similarly, Misty Clouds was the Guild Master of [Misty Palace], so his equipment wouldn't be too inferior compared to Ye Lai's.

“Keng!”

The two battle axes clashed. Ye Lai leaned over his battle axe. With an arrogant look on his face, he smiled and said, “[Misty Palace]'s Guild Master and the 2nd strongest Berserker in Ba Huang City. You've only been in this game for 17 months. Hehe, Ba Huang City truly is where the talented come from. No wonder someone like Jian Feng Han would have such a hard time. Misty Clouds, do you recognize me?”

Misty Clouds swung his battle axe onto his shoulder, his eyes full of pride. He lightly smiled and said, “I don't care what kind of a person you are. What I care about is the fact that you are what stands between me and getting into the top 16. Ye Lai, everyone says that you are the King of Berserkers on the Chinese servers. Today, I want to personally experience whether or not this number 1 is as strong as he is rumored to be!”

Ye Lai suddenly raised his battle axe and slightly opened his palm. A hexagon appeared, and a Fire Phoenix soared into the sky above their heads. Ye Lai's face was filled with pride as he brandished his axe and said, “Come! The number of opponents like you that I've defeated every year is already in the triple digits. Come on, Ba Huang City's 2nd best Berserker! Let me see whether or not you can endure a few hits from me!”

Misty Clouds didn't say anything and raised his arm to summon his pet. An Ice Wolf roared as it leaped out. The system began its countdown-

“3!”

“2!”

“1!”

Ye Lai shouted and picked up his battle axe as he rushed over. Misty Clouds didn't waste a single second and rushed forward as well. At the same time, just like their owners, the two pets confronted each other. Just before Ye Lai got close, he raised his palm and commanded the pet to advance at the same time. As a flame rose from his forefinger, he yelled out, “[Conflagration]!”

“Hong!”

Raging flames densely covered his body, making Ye Lai appear as though he was a god of war. [Conflagration] increased the damage output of fire element attacks by 50%; Ye Lai had the hidden class Flame Berserker, which mainly focused on fire type skills. After casting [Conflagration], his damage was unimaginable.

“Sh*t.....”

Yue Qing Qian gulped, squinting her beautiful eyes as she said, “Ye Lai cannot be allowed to land the first strike, or else Misty Clouds won't stand a chance.”

I nodded, “Yea!”

The incisive Misty Clouds had already grasped the situation. With the dragging of his battle axe, “Keng Keng Keng” a fire star appeared, and his entire body slid forward, beautifully dodging Ye Lai's attack. Simultaneously, the Ice Wolf, that had been battling against the Fire Phoenix, let out a roar as an icicle formed in its throat.

“Bang!”

The icicle hit Ye Lai right in his chest! The slow succeeded!

Misty Clouds had been waiting for this opportunity and immediately turned around, gripping onto his axe even harder. [Flame Axe] + [Skysaker Slash], his two most destructive skills fell upon Ye Lai's back at the same time!

Ye Lai instinctively shivered and abruptly slid his feet. “Shua” his battle axe flew up and blocked the [Flame Axe] with a “Keng!” At the same time, his shoulder was hit by [Skyslaker Slash]; it was painful indeed!

“2716!”

Ye Lai’s health had dropped by more than half within seconds. Without a shred of hesitation, Misty Clouds raised his battle axe again then yelled out, “Die!”

Immediately after the battle axe flew out, his third tier skill [Battle Axe Throw] was activated and as long as it hit, Ye Lai’s 2000 or so health would definitely not be able to hold out. Unfortunately, the [Judgement] Guild Master had seen it coming and gulped down a health potion, recovering 3000 health. He picked up his battle axe and charged at Misty Clouds, laughing, “Now it’s my turn!”

“Hong!”

A crimson light surrounded the battle axe as Ye Lai roared, “[Holy Fire Cut]!”

“Bang!”

“3477!”

It was an extremely fierce strike; Misty Clouds was forced backwards several steps. He immediately gulped down a health potion before looking up. Ye Lai, who was wrapped in burning flames, was charging right at Misty Clouds with his axe raised above his head. As soon as Misty Clouds was within range, he swung the axe down!

“F*ck!”

Misty Clouds knew that things weren’t looking good, but he put aside his worries and raised his axe with both hands to block. Maybe he could get through this attack!

However, didn’t expect Ye Lai to switch his strategy so abruptly. The battle axe in his hands suddenly disappeared; as he bellowed in rage, a fire sword began to materialize in its place.

That roar summoned a new weapon out of thin air – [Divine Weapon Breaker]!

“Bang!”

Misty Cloud’s defense was broken through since [Divine Weapon Breaker] had the effect of nullifying an opponent’s defence, dealing more damage than a critical hit.

“4282!”

Misty Clouds was forced back several steps as his battle axe swept along the ground, leaving a long crimson mark. A large cut then appeared on his shoulder. He clearly took a lot of damage from that skill. He reached up to wipe off his blood then yelled out, “Again!”

“No need!”

Ye Lai smirked as he opened his palm; flames blazed around his hand as he bawled, “[Burning Tornado]!”

Magic! He was actually using magic!

“Hong!”

The flame spiraled into a tornado which engulfed Misty Clouds. It was an AoE attack in which Misty Clouds had practically no defense against and killed him on the spot.

[Editor Note: AoE stands for Area-of-Effect: inflicting damage onto anyone in range of the targeted area instead of a specific target]

O:1 Misty Clouds’ defeat!

.....

“Shua!”

After being sent out of the arena, he took a short pause, picked up his axe and let out a sigh, “Is there.....is there really such a big gap between our skills? His pet did practically nothing, yet he still managed to kill me.....”

From a distance I said, “Ye Lai’s only trump card was the [Holy Fire Cut]

skill, and his weapon, [Divine Weapon Breaker]. You might be able to win next time if you trick him into getting one of them on cooldown or use [Reflect] to divert the attack.....”

Misty Clouds looked up and said, “But Xiao Yao..... the casting of [Reflect] is too obvious. The moment he sees the skill, he’ll definitely change tactics and break the skill with his bare hands, making it pointless.....”

I shook my head and said, “No, but you’ll have to time your [Reflect] well. Next time, when he uses [Holy Fire Cut], wait until the last 0.2 seconds of the cast time before activating [Reflect]. The average time it takes for a person to react is at least 0.2 seconds, and since you’ve prepared yourself in advance, he won’t be able to stop the skill in time. It’ll definitely work!”

“Alright!”

Misty Clouds’ eyes lit up, and he beamed, “I got it.....”

A few seconds later, he entered into the arena again. Time for Round 2!

This time, Misty Clouds was much more vigilant than before. He picked up his battle axe then circled the arena with his ice wolf. Both him and his pet were looking for the perfect opportunity to attack.

“Shua!”

However, it was Ye Lai who attacked first! His burning battle axe came sweeping over!

“Keng!”

Misty Clouds blocked the attack, but his strength was slightly weaker thus forcing him backwards from the impact. Ye Lai used [Conflagration] again and with a swing of his battle axe, flames began to rise. [Holy Fire Cut] was coming!

“Hong!”

The flaming axe made a beautiful arc as it chopped towards Misty Clouds’ shoulder. Ye Lai’s young eyes carefully watched his opponent’s

every move, as if he was trying to catch any tricks his opponent might have. These two were just too clever. They weren't your average Berserkers like Old K who just relied on brute force, these two were Berserkers that fought with their wits.

At the 0.2 second mark right before the axe fell, Misty Clouds made his move. With a wave of his arm, a mirror appeared before him; it was [Reflect]!

However, in the midst of the blazing fire and light, Ye Lai also summoned a mirror to protect himself. It was also a [Reflect]!!

“Bang Bang!”

Two bounces had occurred, the [Holy Fire Cut] was reflected by Misty Clouds, but was also reflected by Ye Lai, therefore, the strength of the chop was still rebounded onto Misty Clouds' shoulder!

“MISS!”

“MISS!”

“3711!”

.....

Even after that sudden change, Misty Clouds had not given up yet. Instead, he surpassed everyone's expectations and suddenly charged forward. He then raised his battle boots and kicked right into Ye Lai's stomach!

“Bang!”

“1123!”

He swung his battle axe. “Ka Cha!” the axe chopped right into Ye Lai's chest plate. Misty Clouds was truly terrifying when his life was on the line. At the same time, he took this chance to use [Sky Shaker Slash] and kicked Ye Lai's waist again. “Peng!” Immediately leaping off as the critical hit landed squarely on Ye Lai. From behind Ye Lai came the sound of a wolf roaring. The wolf's sharp claws slashed at Ye Lai attempting to steal the last bit of his health!

Beside me, Song Han, Qing Qian and the rest were stupefied. Such a fast-paced PK was just too rare. The speed at which the two adapted to new tactics was just astonishing!

Even when the Ice Wolf was pouncing right at him, Ye Lai didn't show the slightest bit of fear. He gulped down a health potion and hurled his battle axe at the wolf!

“Bang!”

The Ice Wolf cried out and retreated. With his bare hands, Ye Lai tackled him and started to wrestle with the wolf. He spread his hands and cast [Fire Tornado] to trap Misty Clouds. Ye Lai stood up with raging flames engulfing his body as he laughed and said, “Let's finish this!”

[Divine Weapon Breaker] broke through Misty Cloud's defense and dealt 4000+ damage. Ye Lai took advantage of the downward force and forced Misty Cloud's body even lower. He kicked him down then grabbed onto the returning battle axe and threw an [Icy Spear]!

“3102!”

Misty Clouds' entire body shook. He gripped the battle axe as he stood there, his health hitting rock bottom. Eyes widened, he looked at Ye Lai and said, “I will defeat you, sooner or later!”

Ye Lai slowly pulled out his battle axe and smirked, “I'll be waiting!”

.....

2:0 [Judgement]'s Guild Master had smoothly obtained the ticket into the Top 16!

Compared to Ye Lai, Misty Clouds was just too young. He needed more experience. But, based on Misty Clouds' unwillingness to admit defeat and his outstanding talent, it wasn't impossible for him to surpass Ye Lai. After this Rise of the Heroes Tournament, the hierarchy of the three big cities will become even more interesting. Only with this freedom of expression can there be competition.

And thus, Group C's final formation had also been decided –

Cang Tong vs Simple

Ye Lai vs Cang Cheng

.....

Group D's round began soon after. It was the internal struggle battle of [Zhan Long]'s group!

In the first round, it was Yue Wei Liang vs Blazing Sun. Blazing Sun was a mysterious Knight, and his spot in the Top 16 was mysteriously taken by Wei Liang in a 2:1 round.

In the second match, it was Drunken Spear vs General Wang Jian. The great battle ensued for 5 minutes, and 4 health potions were used. In the end, Wang Jian was defeated 1:2. Drunken Spear not only had top tier reflexes and tactics, but he also had excellent equipment and skills. Wang Jian's defeat was not too unjust.

In the third round, it was Hero Ran Min vs The Seventh Tang!

.....

From a distance, The Seventh Tang looked like a 25 year old elegant gentleman. He was donned in an elegant cloth armor and held an iron fan. He was a Lv 70 Fengshui Master and an extremely mysterious person.

Old K picked up his battle axe and said, "I'll kill this b*tch!"

I was speechless.

Chapter 333: Returning to Battle

“Second-rate, Don’t underestimate the enemy.....” I quickly said.

Unfortunately, before I could finish talking, Old K had already been sent to the arena together with The Seventh Tang. Seems like this battle will be decided by fate.

.....

“It looks like Old K is going to lose....” Wang Jian said.

Yue Qing Qian nodded. “Mhm. I just received info on The Seventh Tang.... He joined [Hero Mound] at 10AM today. Reportedly, the only reason he joined [Hero Mound] was because of..... Sister Cang Tong.

Wan Er was surprise. “Because of me? What do you mean?”

Yue Qing Qian smiled. “That’s simple. You’re really pretty and he admires you. Q-Sword also approved of him joining and even gave him an Elder position in the guild as well.

Dong Cheng’s jaw dropped, “No way! That Q-Sword is very strict with the leader positions in the guild. How could he let some new guy become an Elder immediately. This.... This is strange.... and almost impossible.....”

Qing Qian replied, “There’s something Sister Dong Cheng doesn’t know, The Seventh Tang is a Feng Shui Master, a hidden class. He has four special skills— [Hexagram Strike], [Triassic Flames], [Perspective] and [Pentashield], all of which are very powerful. He also has an S-class custom skill called [Bloom Again]. His identity is very mysterious as well; as a cloth armor user, he adds 7 strength, 2 vitality and 1 dexterity per level. His strength and dexterity are very high, like a Swordsman but not as fortified as a heavy armor Swordsman which normally has a higher defense. However, [Shrink] is a strong control skill so it makes up for this disadvantage. So.... in short, Brother Old K is in a bit of trouble.....”

I looked up at the stage and said, “Maybe... We all know how explosive Old K’s strength is. He also has [Oppose the Heaven] that can defend against any attacks for seven seconds. No matter how strong The Seventh

Tang is, he shouldn't be able to withstand 7 seconds of Old K's barrage, right?

Li Mu crossed his arms, leaned against the pillar and smiled. "We'll just have to sit and watch I guess, there's still 10 seconds until the match starts.

.....

On the stage, The Seventh Tang stood there without calling out his pet. It didn't look like he intended to either. Old K called out his Azure Wolf, a monster from the Green Qilin forest. It had a 100% excellency rating and just by looking at it, you can tell that it was as good as the higher tier pets.

"Hmph!"

Lifting his battle axe, Old K looked at his opponent."The Seventh Tang. Let's fight!"

The Seventh Tang looked at Old K with one eye and snickered. "Hero Ran Min, a member of [Zhan Long]. I heard you were brothers with Xiao Yao Zi Zai right? Go tell him that I'm going to take Cang Tong away from him. Whether he wants it or not, I'll make her fall in love with me and not him!"

Old K couldn't help but laugh. "Why don't you go take a piss and look at yourself. You want to take Little Li's woman? Who do you think you are? Have a taste of my axe and see if you're worthy enough!"

While bellowing , Old K lifted his battle axe and rushed forward. [Skyshaker Slash]!

The Seventh Tang didn't move at all. He extended his right hand and revealed three copper coins colored red, yellow and blue. "Shua shua shua" They began rotating. The blue coin activated and The Seventh Tang immediately tossed it out. "Pa" [Hexagram Strike] activated. A blue stunning aura appeared, freezing Old K in place.

The Seventh Tang did not hesitate at all. With his steel fan, he moved towards Old K and attacked him. "Papapa" three continuous strikes

landed on Old K's chest. However, Old K's defense was not so low that he would die from those attacks.

“1321 ! ”

“1123 ! ”

“1232 ! ”

The Seventh Tang analyzed the situation quickly and immediately retreated. As a result, Old K's [Skyshaker Slash] hit nothing but air. Feeling pissed, Old K positioned himself as the air danced around him. [Whirlwind Slash]!

“Keng!”

A violent storm appeared and The Seventh Tang's eyes became focused. He began dodging the attacks of Azure Wolf while activating a skill with his steel fan at the same time. Oracles burst out following the sound of thunder and five golden shields were summoned to his sides. This was his life saving skill, [Pentashield].

“318 ! ”

“321 ! ”

“337 ! ”

Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] lost 80% of it's attack power and barely dealt 25% damage to The Seventh Tang's health. Enraged once again, Old K used [Savage Jump Slash]. His entire body jumped up and he quickly leapt towards The Seventh Tang!

The Seventh Tang's eyes flashed and he waved his fan again. [Perspective-Extend]!

“Shua!”

The distance between Old K and The Seventh Tang went from 6 yards to 60 yards. Old K seemed to have been caught in an illusion as his [Savage Jump Slash] stopped midway, causing him to fall back to the ground. Full of frustration, he hurled his battle axe!

“Keng!”

The Seventh Tang had his [Pentashield] protecting him, so he wouldn't die. His gaze grew cold as he waved his fan again. “[Perspective-Shrink]!”

The Seventh Tang suddenly appeared right before Old K again and with a wave of his fan, a white aura appeared. This was his S-Class Custom Skill – [Bloom Again]

“Keng Keng Keng.....”

Three continuous attacks landed, Stab+Slash+Slash. When the fourth attack landed, a gust of wind blew Old K into the air. The Seventh Tang lifted his fan as a crimson aura began rising from his arms. The fifth strike was a cut. “Keng”. Old K flew into the distance and rolled a dozen meters until he died. The damage counter still hung in the air.

“3217 ! ”

.....

“Fuck!” Li Mu was surprised. “This isn't a joke right? A control type Mage can deal 3000 damage to Old K? To think that with a wave of his fan he could take out 3000+ of Old K's health. This.... Who the hell is this The Seventh Tang? This motherfucker is the real dark horse!”

Old K lifted his axe. “What can I do to win? This guy is too arrogant, I just want to kill him.....”

I patted Old K's back and said, “I was carefully watching the last fight. [Hexagram Strike] only works if the coins land on you. If you can react in time and change your direction while using [Haste], you can most likely force a MISS and not get stunned. Also, watch out for [Perspective]. Wait for him to get close to you, then attack. Feng Shui Masters are a close range combatant, so he needs to be close to you to finish you off.

Yue Qing Qian nodded. “Mhm. Brother Xiao Yao is right. There's no need for you to waste your [Savage Jump Slash] when he uses [Perspective]. Also you didn't activate [Oppose the Heaven] last round.....”

Old K hit his head and laughed. “Since I was comboed into the air, I

didn't have a chance to use it. All my skills turned gray and couldn't be used."

"Ugh..."

.....

The second round, Old K learned his lesson and tried to dodge.....

The Seventh Tang was full of smiles as he opened his palm. It was the three coins again. He chose the yellow coin this time, [Hexagram Strike]. "Shua." The coin flew forward.

Old K was startled. After seeing that it was not the blue coin, he became confused and didn't dodge the attack. For five seconds he was unable to use any of his skills, one of the effects of [Hexagram Strike].

The Seventh Tang changed up his tactics this time. The fan danced around as [Triassic Flames] erupted. "Pa pa pa" Old K lost a huge chunk of his health. Along with [Pentashield], he used a barrage of attacks.

"Fuck!"

Old K screamed in shock. After having his skills disabled, he could not use [Savage Jump Slash] and was completely controlled by The Seventh Tang. The Seventh Tang's combo attacks were so astonishing, each angle of attack was precisely made. It was to the point that they made Old K want to die. He could only lift his axe in an attempt to defend. But with a wave of the fan, his axe was knocked away. The Seventh Tang activated [Cyclone]+[Beheading], throwing Old K far into the distance. Once again, he could not use [Oppose the Heaven] nor drink potions at all.

0:2, Another member of [Zhan Long] was eliminated.

.....

Old K came out with his face full of rage. "I'll kill him one day....."

I smiled wryly then said, "You judge based on appearance too easily."

Li Mu sighed. "There are many crouching tigers and hidden dragons in the [Rise of Heroes] tournament. To think that there was actually a hidden expert like The Seventh Tang who's awareness and maneuvers are

at peak level. It destroyed our Old K.....”

“The last round.....”

I looked at the stage and said, “Little Wolf, beat Heaven’s Hero and enter the top 16!”

Little Wolf gripped his dagger and said, “Don’t worry Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll do my best to advance!”

.....

After a few minutes, the battle was over. Little Wolf beat Heaven’s Hero 2 to 1. With this, the pairings for the next round appeared on the screen.

A group: Xiao Yao Zi Zai vs Yan Zhao Warrior Q-Sword vs Jian Feng Han

B group: Fang Ge Que vs Yue Qing Qian Cang Yue vs Death’s Contract

C group: Cang Tong vs Simple Cang Cheng vs Ye Lai

D group: Yue Wei Liang vs Drunken Spear The Seventh Tang vs Wolf Totem

.....

“The top 16....” My voice stuttered a bit and nervously laughed at Wan Er. “I’m so excited. I’ve already played games for many years but never have I entered the top 16 in such a large scale tournament. In the tournaments that I’ve participated in previously, I was eliminated in 5 rounds.....”

Wan Er couldn’t help but grin and patted my shoulder. “Okay. Do your best this time. Get into the finals and join forces with me!”

I looked at Fang Ge Que and said, “I’ll do my best.....”

The beautiful Fei Er was back on the stage and announced that the top 16 matches will begin soon. First, it was the A group’s battles. The pairing was already shown on the screen.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv 71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Yan Zhao Warrior [Lv 70 Golden Swordsman]

.....

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my Emperor Qin’s sword and smiled. “Uncle Yan Zhao, we meet again at last. Are you ready?”

Yan Zhao Warrior glanced at me, brandished his longsword and chuckled. “Li Xiao Yao, this time it is different. I can’t be careless now. The present Li Xiao Yao is the Guild Master of [Zhan Long], Ranked 1 in Ba Huang City and recognized as one of the strongest Swordsman....”

I refuted, “Don’t start kissing my ass. Get ready.....”

“Hehe. You have too much confidence. It’s still only the top 16. Don’t forget, your Emperor Qin Sword’s [Kill for Blood] is at 0%. You don’t have any advantages.”

I lifted my sword and smirked. “I don’t need any advantages. It wouldn’t be fun that way!”

.....

“Shua Shua!”

Yan Zhao Warrior and I were transferred to the arena at the same time. Leaves began flying as our battle robes flowed in the wind. It was truly a long awaited battle. The time to prove myself has finally come!

I’ll kill this bitch!

Chapter 334: Defeat the Old Enemy

“Keng!”

Once the countdown dropped to zero, Yan Zhao Warrior reached behind his back and drew his sword with both hands. Brandishing the sword with his left hand, he opened his right and a shining pentagram appeared therein.

Because the battle was about to begin, I had already unsheathed my Emperor Qin’s Sword and had my Flaming Tiger God leap out of the pet dimension. My tiger roared fiercely as a crimson aura surrounded it, rallying it up for battle. It gave off the dignity of a king of the beasts.

.....

“Come at me Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Yan Zhao Warrior challenged, tightening the grip on his sword. He strolled over, neither rushing nor tarrying his steps and just calmly chuckled along the way. His demeanor seemed to be saying to all, ‘Give me your best shot, I have no openings’, and to me, it looked as though there was no hole in his defense. His hissing Demon Mantis closely followed behind him as it waved its sharp blades.

At the same time I also stepped forward and flashed my blade in a test attack!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew as Yan Zhao Warrior lightly warded off the hit. He then countered swiftly; his blade was like a shadow . With a sweep of my body, I dodged the attack and lightly stabbed my Emperor Qin’s Sword forward!

Yan Zhao Warrior knocked it away again, but this time, his body suddenly burst forwards and his speed abruptly increased. The rhythm of his attack swiftly changed as his long sword began to burn in wild flames; it was the prelude to [Flame Blade]!

I bit down. Bring it! I met his attack with a [Fierce Ice Blade]!

“Pu pu!”

“1929 ! ”

“2711 ! ”

Our sword clashed for a moment before we separated. There was a pretty wide gap in our stats. My [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] gave a 40% increase to my attack and defense, making my damage so OP that even Yan Zhao Warrior’s top tier equipment couldn’t defend against my attack. Besides, Yan Zhao Warrior’s chest plate had been caked in frost, making his movements slightly slower. At this point, I stole another 271 health with my lifesteal; it was clear who had the advantage.

I slightly lowered my blade, [Blade Rush]!

I flew forward 5 yards as my Flaming Tiger God roared and used [Burstfire Raid] to follow up my attack. Yan Zhao Warrior’s feet began sliding and dodged my [Blade Rush]. With a cold glance, his left hand suddenly cut through the wind and a red glow began appearing in his hand. He was actually creating a red bramble chain! With a sweep of the chain, there was no way of dodging it. “Pa!” it bound my two legs!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Warning! Player Yan Zhao Warrior used the skill [Blood Red Chains]. You cannot move for 5 seconds!

.....

My heart was filled with terror; I had been locked down!

Without a single hesitation, I slightly leaned backwards and started to build up some force in my legs. [Seven Star Fragment Slash] suddenly burst out and completely enveloped Yan Zhao Warrior and his Demon Mantis!

“2318 ! ”

“3412 ! ”

Yan Zhao Warrior smirked and quickly charged forward. Energy began to gather under his feet; it was the prelude of his combo, [Peerless Strike]!

Just as Yan Zhao Warrior's attack activated, my arm jolted and a crimson dragon broke through the ground and encircled me which created a shield. The blade slashed right in front of my chest, but I had already entered into defense mode!

"Keng keng keng....."

Sparks kept on flying as [Peerless Strike]'s 5 hits continuously fell upon my body. Even though I had the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] on, I still lost 2600+ health. Right after [Peerless Strike] finished, I swiftly slashed a [Wind Blade] right into Yan Zhao Warrior's shoulder. Even though [Blood Red Chains] didn't allow me to advance, it didn't affect my attacks!

"3117 ! "

Yan Zhao Warrior retreated in pain and luckily gulped down another potion, or else he wouldn't have been able to fight at all. Looking at his body, I reached out with one hand and opened my palm, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

At the same time, the Demon Mantis withstood the attack from the Flaming Tiger God and flailed its two blades as it activated [Soul Eater Slash]!

"Peng!"

"1123 ! "

Even though its damage wasn't too much, I was still stunned for one second, and my [Great Realm of Desolation] was interrupted! Yan Zhao Warrior turned around, then leapt back at me and hacked down onto me from above. It was a [Combo] + [Skyshaker Slash], my life was truly on the line!

My Divine Battle Boots hastily stepped across the ground as my body quickly left its original position with a "Bang". Behind me, a chain of MISSES flew up, so I knew that his [Combo] had landed on empty air. Even before Yan Zhao Warrior could turn around, I quickly turned around and used a Lv 8 skill to cut down Yan Zhao Warrior's shoulder. At the same time, I used a [Heal] on myself and gulped down a potion. His pet,

the Demon Mantis, had also activated a Lv 8 [Combo] which was very destructive as well. Both Yan Zhao Warrior and his pet were strong indeed.

“Bang!”

As the sword fell down, Yan Zhao Warrior turned around and raised his sword above his shoulder to block. He slid a dozen meters from the impact of my attack and his health was in the critical area already. I began hitting him and evading. With my 10% Lifesteal effect and the fact that my health was still above 50%, I killed his Demon Mantis. Lightly smiling at Yan Zhao Warrior, I said, “Uncle, why don’t we finish this?”

Yan Zhao Warrior weakly stood up. Once his pet had been killed, he had no way of summoning another pet. With an annoyed face, he looked at me and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai is truly Xiao Yao Zi Zai. From the start in Ba Huang City, you’ve always been so prideful and strong. Looks like you’re pretty much about to become a Master level player in battle manipulation. Come on, give me a quick death!”

TL Note: In the previous chapter, Qing Qian was able to summon another pet because her Ice Rat had not been killed yet

“Is that so? But I haven’t even been planning to go down that path.....”

I laughed out loud. Yan Zhao Warrior thought that I was a battle manipulator. It was probably because of my 10% [Blood Steal] and [Heal]. True, those are two of the main skills of a battle flow manipulator. Unfortunately, I didn’t really like manipulating the flow. Instead, I wanted to go more towards a path of complete victory, giving my opponent no means of retaliating, pressuring him all the way until he dies. That was the essence of my character.

Looking at Yan Zhao Warrior’s critical health, I didn’t make any move. Instead allowed my Flaming Tiger God to pounce with a [Flame Claw]+ [Blood Drain] onto Yan Zhao Warrior’s chest!

“1828 ! ”

“1911 ! ”

.....

Looking at Yan Zhao Warrior's character dissipate into a white light and fly away, I took the chance to look at my own health. Yup, Yan Zhao Warrior truly deserved to be one of Ba Huang City's top 3 Swordsmen, to think that he could force me into such a state with a chain of skills. If I hadn't immediately used the effect of [Blade Rush]+ a turn, my chances of winning would've been more uncertain.

There was cheering under the stage. In the distant audience, there was a sea of people making the wave. There were quite a few of [Zhan Long]'s fans. Many people were waiting for this duel between [Prague] and [Zhan Long]'s Guild Masters. My victory made a lot of people extremely excited—to think that an underdog was able to defeat an expert. It only demonstrated that there were unlimited possibilities in the game. There was no one who would always be the King. If one didn't continuously improve one's self, then he/she would be left behind!

“Shua!”

Yan Zhao Warrior was sent back to the arena. He summoned his Demon Mantis again and glanced at me indifferently. With a flash of the sharp blade in his hand, he said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you really believe that you can defeat Fang Ge Que?”

“Not really.....”

I pondered over how Fang Ge Que had created so many of his S-tier spells and couldn't help but shiver from my cold heart. I said, “Fang Ge Que is just too strong. Besides his godly awareness and reflexes, the fact that third advancement Mages are unrivaled by any other class with their three [Dimensional Leap]'s that can pull them 60 yards away, and that the environment favors kiting, are enough to dispose any top close combat player. We can't even charge at him; against Fang Ge Que, we don't have any advantages to discuss.”

Yan Zhao Warrior's lips parted and he smiled, “That's true. That's why even if I don't win in the top 16, I still won't have too much regret!”

I raised my longsword and said, “Either way, let's do our best!”

“Yea!”

.....

As soon as the battle began, I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and made it rush into battle. On the other hand, I didn't charge in that quickly, and watched as the tiger activated its [Burstfire Raid]. Yan Zhao Warrior had already thrown out his [Blood Red Chains] and “Pa!”, the Flaming Tiger God was trapped in place. With a sweep of his blade, a [Combo]+[Skyshaker Slash] fell onto the ensnared tiger.

I had already predicted this situation and made a command beforehand. The Flaming Tiger God roared out and flames began circling its body, creating its [Flame Armor], which increased its defense. It currently had at least 4000+ defense. Yan Zhao Warrior's chain of attacks had actually not instantly killed the tiger; instead, the small tiger raised its sharp claws and swiped at the Demon Mantis, taking away 2000+ health, and stealing 2000+ health as well.

My chance had come!

I immediately charged forward, and with a raise of my sword, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. At the same time, I opened my other palm and [Great Realm of Desolation] exploded!

“Pa pa.....”

Yan Zhao Warrior abruptly moved in a Z formation and two beautiful MISSes appeared after my attacks. Never had he imagined that before he could even regain his balance, I had already crouched down and punched the ground!

“Bang!”

Tiles flew as a red chain broke through the ground, wrapping itself around Yan Zhao Warrior's two legs. It was my [Binding Chains]! At that moment the [Prague] Guild Master's expression froze and cursed, “F*ck, this crafty little bastard.....”

That's right, I had used my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Great Realm of Desolation]'s targeting ability to force Yan Zhao Warrior to

where I wanted him. I then let [Binding Chains] explode. I had no doubts that he would fall into my trap!

Once the [Binding Chains] had locked onto its target, victory and defeat had already been decided. I had [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] activated as I rushed forward with [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Combo], sending Yan Zhao Warrior flying out of the arena!

2:0, I was completely victorious over [Prague]'s Guild Master!

.....

“Shua!”

I was sent out of the arena and Wan Er smiled, “Congratulations, you’ve finally defeated that tripping stone uncle!”

I nodded and said, “Yup!”

Dong Cheng Yue then continued, “The next round will probably be even more exciting, it’s [Hero’s Mound]'s Guild Master vs [Vanguard]'s Guild Master. Even the smallest mistake would result in one’s defeat.....”

I gripped onto my sword and took a deep breath and said, “Yea, whoever wins will be my next opponent.....”

.....

In the arena, Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han had basically been sent in together. They summoned their individual pets and slid their swords out of their sheaths. In reality, these two were also old rivals, and practically tied. Jian Feng Han had won 46% of the time and was slightly inferior. However, it was hard to tell who would win this match.

Qing Qian fluttered her eyes and began reporting the figures on the side, “Q-Sword has an attack of 3577, defense of 2574, extra attack speed of +12%, Blood Drain chance of 15.7%, and it’s said that his ring adds a 9% chance of lifesteal; he’s really top tier! Jian Feng Han has an attack of 3601, defense of 2551, additional attack speed of +15% and a lifesteal chance of 12.4%!”

As she talked, Qing Qian pursed her lips and stuck out her snowy white

34B peaks. With a smile, she continued, “All in all, there isn’t really a large gap between their attack and defense, but Jian Feng Han has a pair of shoes that increase his movement speed, so he moves really quickly. Q-Sword, on the other hand, has a higher blood-drain rate, so its really hard to determine who has a higher chance of winning. Whatever the outcome is, it’ll depend on either person’s attitude after their first defeat.”

Chapter 335: Duel between the Masters

“Keng!”

Q-Sword reached for his long sword and effortlessly waved the blade, his vermilion battle robes flowing behind him. His elegant face was filled with resolve and determination. He was going to give it his all this round. In reality, it was understandable, since [Hero's Mound] had practically put all of its strength and effort into [Destiny]. For the sake of the guild's future, Q-Sword couldn't lose. Besides, Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han had both been dubbed number one, but neither of them had actually surpassed the other. This time, the Rise of the Heroes Tournament gave them a rare opportunity to prove to millions of people, who was truly superior. And if Q-Sword won, one could only imagine the significance of that victory.

Jian Feng Han unsheathed his sword and summoned his Rock Spirit Fighter. He looked at his opponent with a burning passion in his eyes. Even though he was up against a strong opponent like Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han was not afraid. Instead, he revealed a face that looked forward to the battle. It was as if he was born with an avid fighting spirit infused into his body. This was the reason why Jian Feng Han was able to continuously defeat master level experts all these years.

The two did not say much. Maybe it was because everyone knew what was going on. Needless to say, this was an important match. To Q-Sword and [Hero Mound], this battle may determine which guild was the second strongest in China. Regardless of the result, they would both gain points for their guild.

.....

The system started the countdown. The spectators didn't make a single sound. Everyone had their eyes wide open, as two master level players battled it out to see who would advance to the top 8.

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle Start!

Jian Feng Han lifted his sword and dashed towards his opponent. He ran, tracing a big arc before rushing towards Q-Sword's position at the perfect angle of attack. The Rock Spirit Fighter also rushed towards Q-Sword from a different direction, creating a perfectly calculated pincer attack. It was almost impossible to grasp the angle and timing of the attacks.

However, Jian Feng Han's opponent was Q-Sword, the guildmaster of [Hero Mound].

Lifting his longsword, Q-Sword stamped on the ground then suddenly turned around. “Keng!” His sword knocked away Jian Feng Han's blade while he raised his left fist and threw a punch! Naturally, seeing as he was an expert boxer in real life, Jian Feng Han reacted immediately. He put aside his sword and threw a fist at his opponent!

“Bang!”

The two equals trembled from the impact and their bodies swayed backwards. Jian Feng Han's Rock Spirit Fighter wielded his battle axe and started hacking towards Q-Sword!

“Sha Sha Sha....”

Q-Sword quickly retreated, leaving a giant MISS in his original spot. At the same time, he jolted his arm and a hexagram flashed as a giant tiger-like beast covered in frost pounced out. Its entire body gave off a cold mist and even its fangs had icicles hanging from its sharp edges. It was Q-Sword's most valued pet – Frost Beast, an Emperor Tier BOSS pet. It's rumored that he obtained the pet's egg from some practice area in the middle of the mountains after a boss run.

The Frost Beast roared ferociously as it raised its sharp claws and tackled the Rock Spirit Fighter.

The Rock Spirit Fighter also roared and picked up its battle axe as it began to quickly retreat. Jian Feng Han had calculated the perfect angle

and charged forward, abruptly raising his sword for a cut. “Peng!” the blade landed onto the Frost Beast, causing it to cry out in pain –

“1627 ! ”

However, the moment Jian Feng Han had hit his target, ice began to condense all over his body; his movements were slowed as his attack speed fell. He did not expect that the Frost Beast had a Frost Armor that slows*. Raising his eyes, Q-Sword continued to attack!

[Editor Note: inflicts a slowing status effect]

“Hum…….”

The Flaming Cloud Sword’s glow sharply increased and an image of a wolf’s head appeared on Jian Feng Han. With a wave of his sword, the long range attack locked on to it’s target – [Corrupt Wolf Edge]!

Even as he was targeted, Q-Sword didn’t seem bothered and suddenly changed direction. His speed suddenly increased and dodged the [Corrupt Wolf Edge]. At the same time, his body was moving so fast that he was practically gliding across the floor. With a raise of his blade, “Keng!” he sliced right into Jian Feng Han’s underarm and brought out a large damage counter –

“1928 ! ”

Jian Feng Han took the hit and threw a fist right at Q-Sword’s wrist. Then, he used the fist that gripped his sword to push off the ground as he lost his balance before swiftly kicking Q-Sword, causing him to slide along the ground. The Rock Spirit Fighter suddenly roared out and threw a [Tornado Cut]. Q-Sword’s knee was on the ground as he raised his sword to block the attack which left a long mark on the bricks. But just as the Rock Spirit Fighter’s [Tornado Wind] reached its last stage, Q-Sword suddenly leapt from the ground and pierced forward. With his hands on the blade, his entire body began to morph into a golden tiger; it was his SS tier custom skill – [Fierce Tiger Burst]

“Peng!”

“4431 ! ”

After that attack, the Rock Spirit Fighter's health reached the bottom. The Frost Beast came roaring over and raised its sharp claws as it continued its attacks. Because of the Frost effect, the Rock Spirit Fighter was going to be finished off!

Jian Feng Han quickly analyzed the situation but was not worried at all. He was so calm that it was terrifying. In a flash, the energy in his feet suddenly burst forth. He had taken advantage of the opening when the Frost Beast killed the Rock Fighter Spirit and initiated multiple attacks. With a whistle, his sword slashed through the air and the Frost Beast didn't even have the chance to defend. "Peng Peng Peng!" he suffered continuous blows and finally after a normal attack, it cried out in a deathly wail and died!

“~

“Shua!”

With the slow debuff gone, Jian Feng Han suddenly quickened his pace and charged forward at an angle. He avoided Q-Sword's next round of attacks as he dragged his battle boots, creating sparks along the floor. “Bang!” He backed against a pillar as he gasped for air. He waited for his health to recover. After a few moments, along with the health that he stole from Q-Sword's Frost Beast, his health was basically almost full.

Q-Sword was also out of breath. He picked up his long sword and looked at his opponent from a distance. He didn't make any rash decisions. After all, both of them had already killed each other's pets and were finally going to confront each other.

Less than 7 seconds later, the sounds of battle started again. The cooldowns for each of their skills were almost over. This was the only thing they had been waiting for.

They picked up speed almost simultaneously. The two charged at each other, each swinging their sword at a different angle as they clashed. Jian Feng Han violently knocked away his opponent, then turned around as his other hand punched right into Q-Sword's back, the essence of the School of Penetrating Fists*. “Bang!” it was a critical hit which took 900+ from

the opponent's health. Q-Sword's blade also turned and "Ka Cha!" took 1500+ of Jian Feng Han's health.

TL Note: School of Martial Arts in the Real World

"Bang!"

Jian Feng Han suddenly kicked away Q-Sword's sword hand and with a [Skyshaker Slash], cut right into Q-Sword's.

"2762 ! "

Under extreme pain, Q-Sword quickly gulped down a Lv 10 potion. With a flash of his blade, his [Fierce Tiger Burst] exploded and took out 3219 of Jian Feng Han's health. At the same time, his battle boots stomped across the ground and "Hum" a burst of light began to envelop his entire body forming an imposing flame armor. It was an S tier skill, [Spark Armor] and for 7 seconds, his defense was raised by 60%!

Jian Feng Han's eyes turned cold; he was about to release his trump card. The Flaming Cloud Sword jolted and [Corrupt Wolf's Edge] began to activate. After all, it was a long ranged skill that ignored the target's defense!

"1838 ! "

Jian Feng Han's body abruptly lowered as he quickened his steps towards Q-Sword. In order to make him lose balance, he lifted his battle boots and kicked at Q-Sword's stomach, effectively sending the [Hero's Mound] guildmaster flying a dozen meters away. He then raised his blade and shot another long range attack – [Through the Clouds Slash]!

"1532 ! "

Unfortunately, Q-Sword still had a sliver of health left and miserably climbed out of a pile of rubble. With both hands, he supported himself up with his sword, then suddenly leapt up. The shape of a giant hawk suddenly began to form so rapidly that the naked eye couldn't catch it moving. "Shua!" It dived down right at Jian Feng Han's head and like a sword, its beak slashed through his neck, leaving a bloody mark and a large damage number –

“3717 ! ”

[Hawk Slash], an S-tier custom skill, it was Q-Sword's unique skill.....

Jian Feng Han barely had 2000 health left and also miserably stood up. He felt a shiver behind him as his and Q-Sword's blade suddenly passed each other, bringing out two big MISS-ess. At the same time, Q-Sword's feet were suddenly filled with energy and multiple attacks were activated. With a [Blade Rush] he penetrated Jian Feng Han's chest plate!

“Plop.....”

The [Vanguard] guildmaster, a prodigy, knelt to the ground and defiantly gripped onto his Flaming Cloud Sword. He felt an unspeakable resentment and frustration as he saw that Q-Sword had less than 100 health. However, a tournament is a tournament, and losing was losing, there were no “ifs”.

.....

1:0, Q-Sword rose victorious in the first round!

After that entire round, people were stupefied. The rhythm of their attacks was so swift that it was terrifying and they continuously dodged multiple attacks with their quick reflexes and blocks. Afterwards, each used their own special skills. This was the essence of battle flow manipulation; adapting and improving throughout the battle, lifesteal and drinking health potions. However, these two were both experts at controlling the fight, they won't need more than a few minutes to analyze the situation. The battle between the two lasted 21 seconds, with every strike that landed drawing blood.

On the stage, Q-Sword lifted his sword and summoned Frost Beast again. Jian Feng Han was sent back onto the stage and calmly looked at Q-Sword. They both stayed silent without saying a single word. While it was a boring scene to watch, no one can deny that it would lead up to a spectacular duel. The way real Master class players communicate can only be through battles.

“Keng!”

Flame Cloud Sword unsheathed again. Jian Feng Han and his Rock Spirit Fighter advanced forward together. The User-Pet Isolation tactic was something both Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han was very familiar with. However, like Jian Feng Han right now, sometimes users do not care for such tactics and instead, go all out and attack from the front.

The swords collided and Q-Sword quickly slashed Jian Feng Han's shoulders. His armor fluttered; the Frost Beast started to attack as well. Jian Feng Han successfully parried 4 attacks and sent 3 of his own attack to Q-Sword. While displaying his exquisite parrying techniques, Q-Sword chugged down a health potion. Sometimes in the midst of battle, whoever drinks potion first will usually lose. This has become an unstated rule.

Of course, due to his speed, Q-Sword was an exception.

"Puchi"

With a sudden attack, Q-Sword sent his sword straight through Jian Feng Han's chest. While covered in blood, he said, "[Destruction Wolf Formation]!"

"What!?"

Jian Feng Han's pupils suddenly shrank. He noticed that 10 meters behind Q Sword was a giant wolf head gathering energy and rushing forward. "Bang Bang Bang" Three consecutive attacks landed on Jian Feng Han not even giving him a chance to drink his health potion.

Q Sword was looking for an opportunity to attack. An opportunity created by Jian Feng Han's cold blooded attitude. This allowed Q Sword to finish Jian Feng Han in one attack.

.....

Shua!

Jian Feng Han was sent out by a white light. The guild leader of [Vanguard] had been eliminated from the [Rise of Heroes] tournament!

After being sent out, Jian Feng Han held his Flaming Cloud Sword with his chest down breathing heavily. He still had not recovered from the

battle. He helplessly looked at Simple and then at Yan Zhao Warrior on the side.

Yan Zhao Warrior was leaning on the wall and smiled. “Just now, didn’t a certain someone from [Vanguard] laugh at me because I was so easily defeated by Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Seems like someone got 2-0’d by Q Sword. What happened?”

Jian Feng Han’s face turned green. “You!!!”

Chapter 336: You Lump of Meat!

After the match was over, the final match of Group A appeared on the big screen:

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Lv71 Dragon City Nightwatch] vs Q-Sword [Lv72 Swordsmith]

.....

I finally got to see Q-Sword's hidden class, Swordsmith. [Destruction Wolf Formation], and [Spark Armor] could be a special skill from this hidden class. However, the name of the class is Swordsmith. Could Q-Sword actually be a Swordsmith Master? He shouldn't be. I haven't heard anything about a Swordsmith in the Northern Star family. It was probably only a class title.

Fei Er moved on to the stage and announced the pairings for Group B. The first match, Fang Ge Que vs Yue Qing Qian.

Our little Qing Qian nervously held her dagger and looked at the stage. She pouted a bit and said to me, "Brother Xiao Yao, what do I do if I lose two rounds in a row?"

I couldn't help but smile at her question. "Even if you lose two matches in a row, it doesn't matter as long as you've given it all you've got. You'll still be [Zhan Long]'s strongest Assassin and Vice Guild Master."

"Mhm, okay!"

After replying to Xiao Yao, Yue Qing Qian and her pet Ice Rat were transported into the arena with a 'Shua!' Likewise, Fang Ge Que appeared, elegantly carrying his Iron Bone Fan. Just like before, he didn't summon any pets and only stood silently at the other end. He smirked, and suddenly laughed out, "Yue Qing Qian, did you know? In the entire Chinese Server, you are the only Assassin other than Cang Tong that I am fond of. Your ability to seize and dispatch your targets is inspiring; moreover, your skills and reflexes place you as one of the top 3 amongst Assassins in the server. It's a pity that I've never had the opportunity to

be friends with you.”

It is very rare for an arrogant prick such as Fang Ge Que to actually start a conversation with another player. The fact that he would spend the effort to open his mouth and speak, shocked everyone and lead them to recognize Yue Qing Qian as someone with remarkable talent that was seldomly seen. If she truly wasn't so talented, why else would Mr. Holier-than-thou open his mouth?

Yue Qing Qian bowed slightly, her cloak billowed behind as a powerful aura wrapped around her. She gave Fang Ge Que a quick glance with her charming eyes before humbly saying, “I am Brother Xiao Yao's Vice Guild Master and I will never betray him. If you're trying to recruit me, you don't need to waste your breath....”

Fang Ge Que gave a blank stare before chuckling, “That's fine then, I won't force you. But if you are ever unhappy with being in Ba Huang City, you can come to our Jiu Li City to sightsee. [Legend] will always welcome you.”

“Got it, Thanks!” Yue Qing Qian replied as she pursed her lips.

Fang Ge Que waved his fan with a smile, “Mm, then let's get ready to begin. Against an expert like you, I would have to go all out.”

“Alright!”

The system countdown began --

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Before the battle began, Yue Qing Qian had already activated [Stealth]. The Ice Rat on the beauty's shoulder also disappeared along with its owner. Leaves floated lightly in the wind, while Fang Ge Que stood where he was, motionlessly; as if he had no intention of determining Yue Qing Qian's position.

“Fang Ge Que doesn't look like he wants to fight....” Li Mu pondered.

“That’s not it....” Lin Wan Er raised her eyebrow, “It seems like he’s waiting for Gua Gua to strike.....”

“That shouldn’t be it, right?”

Dong Cheng Yue lifted her staff, “Gua Gua is very nimble and can prolong her stun duration. The double stun effect of [Ambush]+[Gouge] can already break her opponent’s [Mana Shield]. Don’t tell me Fang Ge Que has that much self-confidence to be so certain he could withstand 5 seconds of Gua Gua’s violent attacks without his shield collapsing?”

“No...” Lin Wan Er shook her head and muttered unhurriedly, “No Mage would ever have that kind of confidence. An Assassin’s attack possesses the natural ability to break through shields. Fang Ge Que is no rookie and definitely knows this fact...”

“Then why don’t you examine Fang Ge Que’s thoughts?”

“No...”

Lin Wan Er pursed her ruby red lips, somewhat speechless as she muttered, “[Mind Reading] is merely a type of spiritual power. I have to be close to actually have a chance to read his mind. In addition, the game doesn’t let me read every thought, just those related to the game. Everything else is vague and unclear. Besides, if Fang Ge Que can mind read as well, his mental power should be strong enough to block me out, so either way I wouldn’t be able to read his mind....”

I lifted my head to gaze intently at the stage, “Hush, something’s about to happen...”

.....

In the arena, the sound of static discharge could be heard. It came from the blurry image arching with electricity on Fang Ge Que’s shoulder. If you looked closely, it seemed to be a demon carrying a pitchfork.

“That’s a Thunder Beast!”

Dong Cheng Yue was startled, “It really is the Emperor Tier BOSS pet, [Thunder Beast]!”

Suddenly, the earth trembled as the Thunderbeast cried out “Ji Ji.” Lightning thundered overhead, as the ground behind Fang Ge Que opened up into a giant chasm with a “BOOM!”. This was one of the Thunder Beast’s main skills, [Lightning Abyss].

“2172 ! ”

Under the effect of [Lightning Abyss] Qing Qian was exposed. She held her dagger and rushed over with [Absolute Step]. With a flash, she cut right into Fang Ge Que, stunning him in the process! As Qing Qian attacked, her Fire Wolf did not hesitate either as it roared out and began to attack Fang Ge Que. Qing Qian had switched pets while she concealed.

“Shua!”

A big MISS hung in the air. Fang Ge Que suddenly reappeared in a different spot and with a wave of his fan, [Fire and Ice Storm] activated!

“+3000 ! ”

“2717 ! ”

Yue Qing Qian gulped down a potion just in the nick of time, but her health was still cut down to critical levels, just like before. Fang Ge Que stood up majestically and with the flourish of a hand, came a [Spiral Ice Dance]! “Bang!” the [Spiral Ice Dance] locked down Qing Qian’s two feet and exploded. Qing Qian could only stand there, dumbstruck, with her dagger in hand as she evaporated into a white light and flew out of the arena.

“Shua!”

Sent back to our side, Qing Qian still gripped her dagger and cried as she stomped, “Could that even be called a fight? I didn’t have the slightest chance to attack. How can I block Fang Ge Que’s spells if I don’t have something like Brother Xiao Yao’s Magic Spite Armor....”

Wan Er smiled and said, “Don’t worry Qing Qian, next time just be careful of where you place yourself after you use [Stealth]. Remember, as long as you can stun him, you’ll have the chance to kill Fang Ge Que. You just have to believe in your ability to break his shield.”

“Ok!”

Qing Qian was sent into the arena again. Unfortunately, she wasn't able to change the outcome and Fang Ge Que's all-encompassing godly awareness seemed to detect Qing Qian's every move. After a chain of spells, he sent our beautiful Assassin out of the arena once again!

2:0, Fang Ge Que had won a complete victory over Yue Qing Qian!

.....

As I consoled Qing Qian I looked up at the stage. Dong Cheng Yue's match was about to start –

Cang Yue [Lv 70 Gold Mage] VS Death's Contract [Lv 70 Gold Knight]

.....

Dong Cheng Yue held her staff as she glanced at Death's Contract, who was already in the arena and smiled, “Hey, you're Sister Promised Love's man, how can I kill you. Tsk tsk, it's really hard for a Knight to get this far. I feel bad for sending you out of the Top 16.....”

I glared at her and ignored her pretenses then said, “Another one of our bastards is going on stage to show off, everyone clap and wish her a triumphant return!”

Everyone slowly clapped.

TL Note: (Sarcasm Alert)

Dong Cheng looked murderous then looked at the clapping Wan Er and said, “What happened to hoes before bros? Looks like you were just lying, just you wait, I'll finish this in a jiffy and deal with you then.....”

Everyone was speechless.

We watched as the Lady Guan Yu* was sent to the stage.

TL Note: Guan Yu is a famous Chinese General

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Guan_Yu

.....

Dong Cheng was truly a top tier Mage; the Knight who only knew how to charge was basically annihilated. Death's Contract was pretty strong. Although he was rumored to have a defense that almost rivaled Wang Ze Cheng and even had a higher attack, his opponent was Dong Cheng Yue, the beautiful she-demon. With [Lightning Finger]+[Magma Lance] continuously wreaking havoc, and finally multiple [Indigo Sea Arrow]-es to finish Death Contract off twice, 2:0, Dong Cheng easily took the name of Top 8!

“Shua!”

After being sent out of the arena, Dong Cheng puffed out her full chest and happily boasted, “How was that? Sister's killing might is astonishing right?”

I thought about it for a second and said, “Your next opponent is Fang Ge Que, I hope you make it.....”

Dong Cheng's face suddenly paled and she said, “I beg of you, don't talk about my next opponent. Just thinking about it makes me sick. So sick that..... that my period will come early.....”

I was instantly defeated and said, “Ms. Hero, please have mercy. Don't say anymore, let's just keep on watching....”

.....

Very quickly, the C group's matches began. The first match, Cang Tong vs Simple

“Shua!”

After listening to Jian Feng Han's whispers, she entered the arena. Wan Er also stood inside, as she gripped her dagger. As the system began the countdown, Wan Er already activated [Absolute Step], increasing her speed by 150% for 12 seconds. This was the prelude to a quick battle!

After using [Absolute Step], Wan Er entered a stealth state, disappearing from her position.

Simple was not a rookie. Her keen sense allowed her to cast [Magma

Lance] on Wan Er's position, causing leaves to fly around the arena. Wan Er's position was revealed, but Wan Er was just simply too fast. She sped up and hid within the traces of falling leaves.

Simple clenched her teeth and felt lost as she used [Dimension Leap]. However after using [Dimension Leap], she felt a shiver going down her back. Wan Er rushed onto her and successfully landed an attack, causing Simple to become dizzy.

"PaPaPa" Three consecutive hits landed. Right before the dizziness effect dissipated, Wan Er used [Gouge] to continue the effect. With both her daggers, she finished Simple off with [Twin Blade Harmony]

The shield broke! She killed her opponent and in a flash the battle was over!

.....

Simple lost 2:0 convincingly. She didn't only lose in terms of equipment, but also in tactics and mechanics. However, Wan Er's tactics were too bold. Starting off with [Absolute Step] followed by a strong attack. This was probably the first time that someone had used this kind of move in a tournament. Simple was one of the top Mages, and watching her walk off the stage did not give off a good feeling.

C group Second Match, Ye Lai vs Cang Cheng

"Shua!

Wang Ze Cheng appeared on the stage with his spear and golden shield in his hands. He looked fiercely at [Judgment]'s Guild Master Ye Lai and smiled. "Ah. [Judgment]'s Guild Master. How are you?"

"Keng!"

Ye Lai's battle axe dropped to the ground and caused sparks to fly around. "I heard you brought [Hero Mound's First Division] to Ba Huang City to cause trouble for others. You infiltrated the core of the guild and made [Hero Mound's First Division] as your own. Against trash like you, I don't have anything to talk about. But, I will cut you up with my axe!"

Chapter 337: The Tyrannical Ye Lai

“You!”

Wang Ze Cheng felt brushed off. He didn't think that Ye Lai would greet him in such a disrespectful way. Even though Wang Ze Cheng was the strongest Knight in Ba Huang City, he didn't even receive an ounce of respect from his opponent. However, keep in mind, the opponent was the Ye Lai, the Guild Master of [Judgment], one of the top ten guilds in China. In some ways, Ye Lai had a right to be condescending. Besides, given his egoistic character, it was natural to see such arrogance; if you were his friend he would respect you, if you weren't, you're worth nothing to him.

Pointing his spear at his opponent, Wang Ze Cheng grinded his teeth and shouted, “Ye Lai, I won't show any mercy!”

As he talked, he summoned his pet. It was a jade colored Grass Dragon, a rare species of dragon. In reality, it was nothing more than a lizard, since the true giant dragon species have yet to appear in the game. Instead, only dead things or lower tier species have appeared.

.....

Ye Lai waved his hand and let his Emperor Tier pet Fire Phoenix out of the pet dimension. He lifted up his battle axe and its blade began to scorch in flames, so much that even Ye Lai seemed to have flames surrounding him. This was a Flame Berserker's skill, [Fires of the World]! Not only was it interesting to watch, but also based on how Ye Lai's style is extremely fierce, the type that would use brute force to kill a thousand troops, this battle was bound to be fun to watch.

“Keng!”

Wang Ze Cheng shoved his enormous shield into the ground in front of him as his spear flashed. This was the typical opening to a defense and reciprocate strategy. He knew very well that he held the advantage of having high defense and health and without these, he was nothing. As long as he held his stance first, he could take on the Ye Lai, that Berserker.

The system started the countdown

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

When the countdown stopped, Ye Lai fiercely rushed forward and roared out to activate [Conflagration]. The flames on his body rocketed into the air and emulated the image of the Flame God of War. On his axe, he carried the might of the stars as he ferociously attacked Wang Ze Cheng's shield – [Skyshaker Slash]!

“1429 ! ”

Wang Ze Cheng was forced several steps backwards and couldn't defend against that sort of attack. Ye Lai closely followed and with a lift of his battle shoes “Peng!” kicked away Wang Ze Cheng's attacking spear. He jolted his body and dodged the Grass Dragon's slash and stomped the ground to make a turn and attack. Both of his hands gripped his battle axe and raging flames began to burn on his battle axe, a [Holy Fire Cut] slashed right into Wang Ze Cheng's shoulder!

“2716 ! ”

Wang Ze Cheng retreated several steps, as a cut he received from the Fire Phoenix began to burn. His health began to drop and he abruptly pierced his spear forward, [Icy Spear]!

“Keng!”

Ye Lai began to move and dodge while lifting his arm, splendidly bringing up his battle axe to block, successfully knocking away the opponent's [Icy Spear]. Then, his battle axe dissolved into a light that began to form a holy light longsword that fell with a boom. Wang Ze Cheng instinctively raised his shield to block but didn't think that he wouldn't be able to block it at all. This was an attack that smashed shield's to pieces – [Divine Weapon Breaker]!

“2720 ! ”

Within moments, Wang Ze Cheng's health dropped to the bottom and he immediately waved his hand to cast [Cleansing Wind]!

Ye Lai roared out and violently charged forward with his axe. "Peng!" it knocked against Wang Ze Cheng so hard that he had to retreat a few steps. The force of the attack interrupted [Cleansing Wind]! Opening his palm, all five fingers lit up with fire, he bellowed out, "[Burning Tornado]!"

The [Fire Tornado]'s tornado devastated the area and blew Wang Ze Cheng's shield away. Ye Lai took the chance to throw his battle axe forward. "Bang!" the battle axe cut deep into Wang Ze Cheng's chest. The third tier skill [Battle Axe Throw] had instantly killed the Guild Master of [Hero's Mound: First Division].

"Pa!"

Taking hold of the battle axe, Ye Lai proudly stood in the middle of the arena and looked at Wang Ze Cheng's weak body and indifferently said, "Trash will always be trash, and money won't change that fact, nor will it let you make empty claims in a virtual world game. This isn't your world, get it?"

.....

Outside the arena, all of the spectators were shocked.

Mu Xuan's little jaw dropped and said, "Looks like this Ye Lai is a bit too rough...bah whatever. We can't have someone like him in our [Appearance Alliance] anyway. I'll just go for my Little Zai Zai."

I sneezed. "Hey, Ye Lai's attacks are really fierce. Wang Ze Cheng couldn't even retaliate at all. There's a huge gap between their power levels....."

Wan Er slyly smiled, "And here I was thinking that I had to take care of Cang Cheng myself. I wouldn't have thought that Ye Lai would finish the job for me. I really have to thank him....."

Old K tightly clenched his battle axe and looked up: "God damn. Is this the strength of a top level Berserker? It really is fierce. To be able to

continuously attack without even letting a Knight retaliate.....”

Song Han squinted and said, “Yea, Ye Lai’s attack power and angle are all extremely calculated. On top of that, his sense of balance is extremely good; Cang Cheng was forced to lose his balance from the beginning, making it so that he has no way of accumulating force. Everytime Ye Lai kicks, tackles, or cuts, it all just happens to be where Cang Cheng isn’t paying attention. Hehe, Old K, you have a long ways to go.....”

Old K patted Wolf’s shoulders, “It’ll be group D’s turn soon. Little Wolf, you still haven’t been eliminated yet. Good luck. Don’t let our Guild Master be the only [Zhan Long] member to enter the top 8.”

Song Han laughed. “There’s still Miss Cang Tong and Dong Cheng. Don’t worry..... My opponent is The Seventh Tang, a Feng Shui Master. His skills are too complicated. It’s too hard to fight with this matchup.

Dong Cheng Yue said, “My next opponent is Fang Ge Que, also in the top 8. But...If you look at it, I’m pretty content already. Experts like Bai Li Ruofeng were all eliminated in the top 32. I have to thank the heavens that a little Mage like me was able to enter the top 8.”

I glared at her and said, “Don’t be too modest, you still have half a month right? You and Wan Er can join [Zhan Long] and become our future number one Mage. You have to earn that name though, and I’m not asking that you be too strong, just you should be in the top 3 Mages on the Chinese Servers right?”

Dong Cheng smiled. “I’ll try.....Brother Guild Master.....Smooches”

I smirked, “Smooches my ass, Just watch the matches carefully.....”

Lin Wan Er calmly looked at the stage. She was already so familiar with me and Dong Cheng’s teasing that she could easily ignore us.

.....

There was no suspense in the second round either. Ye Lai’s violent fighting style was not something Wang Ze Cheng could defend against. In just under 12 seconds the fight was over. This time, as before, Ye Lai ferociously attacked multiple rounds and Wang Ze Cheng not only didn’t

have the chance to cast [Cleansing Wind], he didn't even have the chance to drink a potion! He could only sit and wait for his death.

2:0 Ye Lai defeated his opponent and successfully entered the top 8.

.....

“Shua!”

After being sent out of the arena, Wang Ze Cheng held his spear and sat down in a foul mood. He looked at Ye Lai and said, “Hmph. [Judgment]. I'll remember this.....”

Ye Lai lifted his axe and smirked, “What? You wanna go again? Come on. I'll welcome anything. [Judgment] is usually peaceful in Jiu Li City but if you wanna come, I'll destroy your guild. You still wanna come? Or should I bring my people to Ba Huang City.”

Wang Ze Cheng was shaken up quite a bit. After finding out that Ye Lai was a bit too serious, he immediately shut his mouth. [Hero's Mound: First Division] already has [Zhan Long], [Blood Contract] and [Misty Palace] to deal with already. If they add in [Judgment], they wouldn't be able to do anything anymore. Not even Q-Sword would be able to protect them. Wang Ze Cheng was a smart person. He knows when to stop and won't do anything stupid.

.....

D Group, First Match, Yue Wei Liang vs Drunken Spear

As I expected, Drunken Spear's strength far surpassed our data. If Wang Ze Cheng was the strongest defensive Knight, then Drunken Spear would be the strongest offensive Knight. With his extraordinary skills with the spear, he easily defeated Wei Lian 2:0, preventing another one of our guild members from entering the top 8.

The second match, Wolf Totem vs The Seventh Tang

Wolf held his dagger and with a look of awe said, “If I can enter the top 8, I'll treat everyone to a meal next week....”

Old K hurriedly said, “Good luck!”

The result..... The Seventh Tang's [Hexagram Strike] succeeded twice and his skills had far surpassed Wolf's imagination. By using [Shrink], Wolf's [Sneak] and [Absolute Step] were both neutralized. The most important factor was his [Pentashield]. Within the first few seconds it was clear that Wolf couldn't beat him. He lost twice due to Tang's consecutive strikes.

0:2 Wolf was eliminated. The Seventh Tang, the real dark horse, enters the top 8.

.....

On the screen, the top and bottom half of the top 8 match ups appeared.

Top half: Xiao Yao Zi Zai vs Q-Sword Fang ge Que vs Cang Yue

Bottom half: Cang Tong vs Ye Lai Drunken Spear vs The Seventh Tang

.....

General Wang Jian looked at the board, then at me and said, "The first match, Brother Xiao Yao will go against the strongest mechanical player Q-Sword. Do you have anything to say?"

I took a deep breath. "It's time I show my real skills....."

Wan Er looked at me indifferently, "You have real skills?"

I butted in and said, "Miss, I'm going to a life and death match. How about you don't attack me and give me some confidence boost....."

Wan Er couldn't help but laugh and walked up to me with her beautiful face. She lifted her fist and lightly punched my chest, "Good Luck. if you beat Q-Sword, you'll be in the top 4!"

"Yeah!"

Right then, I was sent to the arena.

"Shua!"

After entering, Q-Sword stood in front of me with his sword and smiled, "Li Xiao Yao, I didn't think that we would meet like this. I really didn't see

this coming.....”

I smiled as well, “Guild Master Q-Sword, did you think I couldn’t get into the top 8?”

Q-Sword was a honest person. “Actually, I didn’t think that you could beat, Bai Li Ruofeng, Mu Xuan, and Yan Zhao Warrior, all those experts. But, entering the top 8 proves your strength. You are a worthy opponent.”

“Then let’s have a good fight!”

I lifted my hands and unsheathed my Emperor Qin’s Sword. I lifted my left fist and a hexagram appeared, summoning Flaming Tiger God, who appeared next to me with a roar.

.....

Q-Sword didn’t underestimate me and immediately called out his Frost Beast as he waited for the battle to start.

Chapter 338: A Trickster's Battle

The ticking sounds of the countdown resounded in my ears. It was finally about to begin—

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Holding the Emperor Qin's Sword, I commanded my Flaming Tiger God to dash forward with me. When we were about 10 yards away from Q-sword, I immediately positioned my sword as wind energy surged. My movement and attack speed increased by 8% through [Haste]; I darted desperately towards Q-Sword. At the same time, my Flaming Tiger God roared as it grew in size and rushed forward, its four paws covered in raging flames!

With an icy stare, Q-sword also charged towards us with his Frost Beast.

“Ding! ”

Five stars floated above the Emperor Qin's Sword and targeted Q-Sword. I then heavily struck a [Combo]!

Sparks rose from underneath Q-Sword's boots as he abruptly came to a stop, dodging the first two attacks from the [Combo]. At the same time, he raised his arm. 'Ding! Ding!' Quickly blocking the remaining two attacks that were coming from both the left and right sides. The fifth and final attack hit against his shoulder armor with a “Keng!” before fiercely throwing a punch towards my chest. What a bold move!

Once I felt pressure on my chest, I immediately turned and knocked away Q-Sword's arm with my right shoulder. With my Emperor Qin Sword, I then struck him with a normal attack to his back as I was turning, bringing out 1400+ damage. At the same time, I put force into my left Divine Battle Boot, causing the air to turn.'Pi, Pa, Pi, Pa!' The green tiles beneath my foot to crack as I unleashed a vicious kick!

“Peng! ”

The kick instantly hit Q-Sword’s chest and sent him flying back a good ten meters. However, once Q-Sword retreated, a [Skyshaker Slash] landed on my shoulder, dealing enormous damage —

“1719 ! ”

.....

.....

“Shashasha..... ”

As his battle boots slid along the stone floor, Q-Sword knelt to the ground with one knee. He then sprung at me, his sword poised to attack. His handsome face was filled with determination, just like mine. In a battle between two high attack players like Q-Sword and I, victory must be decided quickly. There would be no protracted battles between the both of us!

With a jolt of my arm, I swiftly decided to change my attack plan. My Emperor Qin’s Sword abruptly slashed towards my right with a [Wind Blade]; I’ll kill the Frost Beast first before Q-Sword himself!

As the Frost Beast roared, Q-Sword had already activated [Ice Armor] and its defense increased drastically!

“1721 ! ”

My Emperor Qin Sword could only deal this little damage. Even after the little tiger cub used [Burstfire Raid] and raged past the Frost Beast, it still had 50% health left. Yet, Q-Sword had already charged forward with his sword, demanding my life like the King of the Underworld.

“Hua! ”

The sound of the blade cutting through the air resounded. As I slashed on the body of Frost Beast, it’s frost began to coil around my arms and legs, reducing my movement speed. Unable to perform a quick dodge, I could only lean to the side and block the attack.”Keng” the sound rang out as I was forced backwards by Q-Sword’s strikes. I hastily positioned

myself; and when the moment presented itself, raised my sword and used [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong! ”

Q-Sword and his Frost Beast were both hit. Simultaneously, the Flaming Tiger God lifted its head and roared. [Fierce Roar]!

“Oh no..... ”

Q-Sword's expression changed. He had underestimated my ability to judge. While he and his Frost Beast were grouped together, my AOE skill would naturally land on both of them. His losses from this weren't small!

Slightly bending both of his knees, Q-Sword suddenly leapt over as his left foot kicked heavily onto my chest. The him that had comparable strength had used the momentum to apply an even greater force , so naturally I couldn't withstand the attack. I picked up my Emperor Qin's Sword and rapidly retreated several steps. I waved my hand for a [Heal] and recovered 1200 health!

Lifting my head up, I heard the screech of a hawk. Q-Sword was jumping at me with his sword raised with a [Hawk Slash]!

“Peng!”

“1938 ! ”

I retreated several steps. I trembled at the realization that Q-Sword was fighting as if his life was on the line. I immediately activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and put my Emperor Qin's Sword in front of my chest to block. As expected, Q-Sword violently started cutting towards me with a [Fierce Tiger Burst]+[Icy Spear]!

“1210 ! ”

“997 ! ”

Closely after, the wind began to rise and a combo came – [Six Directional Thunder]!

In the midst of the fierce storm, I kept my defensive stance. I drank down a potion and recovered 3000 health while activating [Dragon

Knight's Recovery] at the same time!

Seeing my health rise and fall, Q-Sword's eyes slowly began to reveal a sense of despair. His body abruptly charged forward as his blade's tip penetrated my chest plate. His attack was closely followed with a [Destruction Wolf Formation]!

I continued to defend as I commanded my Flaming Tiger God to begin fiercely attacking Q-Sword's back with a [Flame Claw]+[Blood Drain]. The two attacks pulled Q-Sword's health straight into critical levels. After a round of attacks, Q-Sword retreated as he gulped down a potion!

“Pa!”

I immediately grabbed onto Q-Sword's blade, ignoring the pain as I kned him in the stomach. The time to strike back had finally arrived!

My Emperor Qin's Sword flashed and sent a [Combo]+[Fierce Ice Blade]. Q-Sword hurriedly activated [Spark Armor], giving him an enormous increase in defense for 7 seconds. I, however, was such a strong opponent that after dealing a series of skills and combos, I dragged Q-Sword's already critical health even lower as he was pushed back 10 meters. I spread open one hand and before he could recover anymore health, cast [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“2422 ! ”

A large damage number flew out! Q-Sword's knees weakened and he suddenly knelt to the ground. His last bit of health had disappeared.

.....

1:0 I was victorious in the first round!

A cheer came from the outside. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Qing Qian were jumping up and down. Old K had raised his battle axe and laughed out loud, “[Zhan Long] Guild Master, strong and unrivaled!”

Song Han had picked up his dagger and calmly stood there with a big smile, “Hmph, Brother Xiao Yao truly is sharp. To think that you could win against Q-Sword like that. Too impressive. Q-Sword is second in CBN

battle rankings and is an extremely remarkable person. On top of that, he just defeated several other rankers like Jian Feng Han so he's pretty confident in himself. Brother Xiao Yao, you won this round beautifully!"

General Li Mu crossed his arms over his chest and smiled, "There was a miscalculation in Q-Sword's tactics. The moment he decided to attack the Guild Master first, he was fated to lose. Guild Master's defense and stamina are just too strong. Q-Sword can't kill you off in a short time period....."

"Yup!"

Soon, the second round began!

"Shua!" A ray of light brought Q-Sword and his pet Frost Beast back into the arena. He looked at me from afar and smirked, "Li Xiao Yao, you truly aren't a disappointment. I'm starting to like the idea of you as my opponent more and more!"

I grinned and replied, "Same for me!"

With that, we waited for the countdown to reach 0 –

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

Suddenly, Q-Sword gave a barely noticeable sign that he was charging forward. As expected, he came right at me with his Frost Beast, his blade pointing in my direction. This was..... a test strike?

I instinctively dodged the attack, then retaliated with my own. I did not expect, however, that Q-Sword was only faking it. His longsword went straight at the Flaming Tiger God behind me. Sure enough, he had changed his plan of attack and was going after my little tiger!

I quickly commanded the Flaming Tiger God to activate [Flame Armor]!

A burst of flame suddenly weaved around the little tiger, increasing its defense. Then, at that moment, Q-Sword suddenly turned around with his blade flashing a dazzling light. He took the chance to heavily land a hit

onto my chest while I was commanding my little tiger!

[Afterglow Slash]

“1722 ! ”

My body suddenly jolted and my mind suddenly went blank. Oh no, I’ve been stunned. [Afterglow Slash]’s stun lasted 1.5 seconds. It wasn’t long, but it sure as hell wasn’t short either!

Q-Sword roared out and immediately activated a [Combo]+[Skyshaker Slash]

“764 ! ”

“774 ! ”

“727 ! ”

“718 ! ”

“711 ! ”

“2218 ! ”

Within moments, all of my health was gone!

.....

My knees suddenly weakened and my body evaporated into a light that flew out of the arena!

1:1 Q-Sword made his comeback!

Outside, I calmly stood there. Beside me, Wan Er softly said, “It’s nothing, you just lost one round. Continue to do your best!”

Li Mu raised a fist and said, “Q-Sword’s battle tactics are extremely cunning. On top of that, he hid his [Afterglow Slash] which is kind of a crucial skill. You couldn’t even activate [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. This round’s loss wasn’t too unjust. But thankfully, he already revealed his [Afterglow Slash] in the previous round which meant that all his cards are already on the table!”

I nodded my head with an invigorating smile, said, “Yep, it doesn’t

matter. The third round will determine who's the victor!"

Wan Er lightly smiled and said, "Alright. Looking at your self-confident smile, I don't have to worry anymore!"

.....

"Shua!"

I was sent into the arena again, it was the decisive battle!

We didn't waste any time for words and just glared at each other. I finally made a decision. Even though I've been honing my reflexes on [Destiny] and my battle tactics have already reached a higher level, my instantaneous decision-making was still lacking and my reaction speed was still slightly slower than Q-Sword's. Otherwise, the [Afterglow Slash] should have not hit me before and even if it did, I should've used [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] beforehand to keep a defensive stance so that no matter what happened, I wouldn't have been killed within 1.5 seconds.

The two of us were silent as we waited for the countdown to finish –

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

The tie-breaker, begins!

After last battle's miserable defeat, I completely changed my stance. Not only did I forgo all thoughts of defending, I was also actively on the offensive. I picked up my Emperor Qin's Sword and charged diagonally forward. The angle of my charge just happened to be aimed right at Q-Sword. This type of dash could only be performed by experts like Jian Feng Han. It was a skill that could be considered even above the level of a top tier expert.

"Kong!"

The Flaming Tiger God pounced towards Q-Sword from the side and ferociously swiped his claws as my Emperor Qin's Sword attacked him straight on. Against such an oppressive offense, Q-Sword only smiled and

abruptly slid to the side. With a sweep of his sword, “Keng!” he used his blade to block my Emperor Qin’s Sword. Simultaneously, he used his sword to cut right into the head of my Flaming Tiger God. Then, he moved three steps to the side and activated [Fierce Tiger Slash] and aimed it right at me!

I didn’t give in in the slightest while I violently thrust my sword through his body before turning and giving him a taste of my [Wind Blade]!

“1642 ! ”

“2311 ! ”

Q-Sword took the hit but waved his longsword as well, activating a [Fierce Tiger Slash]+[Skyshaker Slash] at the same time. On top of that the [Fierce Tiger Slash] dealt critical damage!

“4626 ! ”

“1982 ! ”

I was astonished. Luckily I had cast a [Heal] the second [Fierce Tiger Slash] fell, pulling up my health a bit. At the same time I also activated [Dragon Knight’s Recovery]. As we passed each other, both our healths fell to critical levels. Our potions were also on cooldown, and so for 60 seconds neither of us could recover!

“Puchi!”

As cold wind brushed past his back, Q-Sword violently lashed out and activated [Destruction Wolf Formation]!

My heart froze as I hastily activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to face the onslaught!

“Hmmm!”

In the midst of the destructive light, Q-Sword’s longsword began glowing again, it was another [Afterglow Slash]!

“Keng!”

I heavily pierced my Emperor Qin’s Sword into the stone tiles and forced

my body forward. My right Divine Battle Boot suddenly kicked out!

“Peng!”

The force of my kick broke through Q-Sword’s [Afterglow Slash]!

.....

“Sha Sha Sha.....”

Q-Sword rolled back a few meters, a look of shock colored his face. With a wave of my arms, I activated [Great Realm of Desolation] while, at the same instance, commanded Flaming Tiger God to used [Fierce Roar].

“Shit.....”

Q-Sword’s eyes were full of despair.

“7124 ! ”

“1772 ! ”

[Great Realm of Desolation] dealt the final blow. This strike ended Q-Sword’s journey in the [Rise of Heroes] tournament.

.....

2:1 !

The sound of the system notice reverberated through the air.

“Ding”

System Notice: Player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai” has defeated “Q-Sword” and successfully entered the top 4.

Chapter 339: Clouds riding in the wind

“Shua!”

Once I was sent out of the arena, a warm, soft and delicate body fell into my embrace. Wan Er hugged me tightly, unable to contain her excitement as she cheered, “You won! You actually won!”

I patted Wan Er’s sweet shoulder and smiled, “Wan Er... Your umbrella is poking my face...”

Wan Er’s cheeks flushed as she pulled away from me. Beside her, Dong Cheng tilted her head at us and muttered, “I’m jealous.....”

I shot a glance at her and asked, “Why on Earth are you jealous?”

Qing Qian pursed her lips, then giggled and said, “It’s more accurate to say that there are people who are jealous right now.....”

Everyone looked over and saw that not far in the distance, Q-Sword and The Seventh Tang were standing there. Q-Sword looked in my direction and once he saw Wan Er hugging me, his face turned ugly. In reality, his loss in the Rise of the Heroes tournament made him extremely sensitive. He made a fist as his entire body trembled. He couldn’t even look at us as he muttered, “How... How could it be... how did this happen.....”

Unfortunately, Q-Sword didn’t have a single person with him. There wasn’t even someone to comfort him; his two Vice Guild Masters were with me. It was natural for him to feel so dejected.

.....

On the stage, the second round for the Top 8 was beginning. Fang Ge Que vs Cang Yue!

Dong Cheng picked up her staff and pouted her lips while gazing at the stage, “Ay, In the desolate cold we can discern, that the heroic warrior will not return...”

[Editor/TL Note: they are being poetic]

I smiled and said, “Don’t be so glum. You still have some hope. Everyone

here believes in you! Right now, the negative one ought to be your opponent. What's it called... A strong wind blows, clouds ascending; a calm warrior, all sides defending* ...”

[Editor Note: Probably talking about the fact that Fang Ge Que is all alone in the tournament compared to Dong Cheng who has the support of allies like Xiao Yao]

Dong Cheng grinned, her beautiful eyes filled with affection as she looked at me. She patted my shoulder and suddenly turned around, her voice extremely soft, “If it wasn't for Wan Er, you would've definitely been mine. You don't even know how much I like you.....”

“.....”

I stared blankly and couldn't reply. Wan Er pursed her lips, her eyes muddled with confusion. She didn't know what to say either.

“Shua!”

Dong Cheng was sent to the stage. Her opponent was the player who was ranked number 1 on [Destiny]'s CBN – Fang Ge Que!

Fang Ge Que waved his paper fan a few times. He was dressed entirely in white and looked like a young nobleman who had just stepped out from the mortal coil. It was because of this appearance that he was so popular in Jiu Li and Ba Huang City and became the idol of many girls. If Q-Sword was [Destiny]'s most ideal man, then Fang Ge Que was the most mysterious and carefree. Throughout his career in [Destiny], he has been extremely aloof and has never tasted defeat!

.....

As he lightly waved his paper fan, a golden shield began to materialize around himself. He stared straight at Dong Cheng and said, “[Black Tortoise Shield], a stronger type of [Mana Shield]. It has an increased durability of about 150% of a normal [Mana Shield] and the user's defense is also increased by 50%. Also, my [Spiral Ice Dance] is an SS-tier skill. It binds the target for 2 seconds while damaging them at the same time. It takes 0.2 seconds to activate and once it's released, it's extremely hard to

avoid. Cang Yue, you are the type of Mage that is rarely seen in the China Server, did you know that?”

Dong Cheng gripped her staff and tilted her head with a smile, “I didn’t know that. What I do know is that if a man uses a fan rather than a staff, it seems really gay. Fang Ge Que, do you want to tell me what you’re thinking?”

Fang Ge Que couldn’t help but smirk, “Let’s not talk about my business. This just proves my point that Cang Yue, you are a one-of-a-kind Mage. You never stick to one just attack pattern. Your ability far surpasses that of Soaring Dragon.”

“After saying all of that, what exactly are you trying to get at?” Dong Cheng asked.

“Are you willing to join [Legend]?”

“I don’t want to. Let’s start!”

“Alright...”

The system had already begun its countdown –

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Once the countdown finished, Dong Cheng summoned her pet wasp. The buzzing, small wasp flew up into the sky as Dong Cheng shook her staff once. A [Pillar of Fire & Ice] activated right under Fang Ge Que’s feet. The [Black Tortoise Shield] deformed for a second then morphed back into shape and lost 7% durability. As expected, it was just as Fang Ge Que said, breaking his [Black Tortoise Shield] would be excruciatingly hard.

Dong Cheng raised her staff and dashed forward. Her magic boots suddenly stopped, dodging Fang Ge Que’s [Blazewind Lock] as her long Mage robe fluttered behind her. Dong Cheng abruptly raised her hand, revealing that her fingers each released sparks and small bolts of

lightning. What a smart little girl, she knew that she could delay the skill's targeting by using her clothes. "Pa Cha!" The [Thunderbolt Finger] shot out, wreaking havoc around Fang Ge Que!

"Peng"

The durability of his [Black Tortoise Shield] fell to 69%. Dong Cheng Yue's staff then made the earth tremble. Suddenly, pillars of flame erupted from the floor and hit Fang Ge Que in succession, making his shield's durability fall below 50%.

"Beautiful..."

Fang Ge Que shifted side to side and couldn't help but praise, "This is indeed the ability of a top tier Mage!"

In the sky, a small wasp swiftly plunged down. "Pa" A piercing sound resounded as the stinger stabbed into Fang Ge Que's back. Suddenly, Fang Ge Que's face turned green as the durability of his shield kept dropping. This was Dong Cheng Yue's plan; although her Tiger Beastman had a high attack and defense, it had low mobility and could only act as a living shield. And so, Dong Cheng summoned her wasp which was much more agile and appropriate for the situation.

"Sha Sha..."

His boots began to move across the floor when suddenly, Fang Ge Que stopped. He stood completely still, then waved his paper fan. [Fire and Ice Storm] was activated!

"What..."

The [Fire and Ice Storm] appeared right in front of Dong Cheng Yue, "Bang!", she was pushed back by the impact and immediately after, [Ice Rock Blast] was cast as blocks of ice began flying at her. Dong Cheng Yue was hit twice and her [Mana Shield]'s durability fell down to 44%. Compared to Fang Ge Que's shield, her's simply deteriorated too easily.

"Shua!"

After being bound by the opponent's magic, her movements were

severely limited, Dong Cheng Yue could only use [Dimensional Leap] to escape. Unfortunately, Fang Ge Que also used [Dimensional Leap] at almost the exact same time. In his hand, he held an [Indigo Sea Arrow] which had suddenly shot out toward her!

“Peng!”

Dong Cheng Yue, despite being extremely clever, could not escape from the [Indigo Sea Arrow]. Her [Mana Shield] only had 4% durability left!

“Oh crap... This is bad...” Dong Cheng Yue’s little face paled.

Even after using another [Dimensional Leap], she couldn’t escape Fang Ge Que’s plans. In the midst of teleporting, Fang Ge Que’s pet Lightning Beast charged forward. A pitchfork materialized in its hand as the little bastard began to screech and hack at her. “Peng!” It forced Dong Cheng backward. [Lightning Slash] was a skill that condensed the force of lightning into a single strike before unleashing it onto the target; a special skill that only the Lightning Beasts had!

“It’s over!”

Fang Ge Que smirked and cast another [Ice Rock Blast]!

2811 !

Dong Cheng weakly evaporated into a white ray of light and exited the arena. 0:1, and just like that, she was defeated by Fang Ge Que.

Not much changed in the second round apart from Fang Ge Que using his [Spiral Ice Dance] at last. After trapping Dong Cheng, he used a chain of spells to burst her down instantly. Thus, ending our beautiful Mage’s journey in the Rise of Heroes tournament.

.....

“Wu wu.....”

When Dong Cheng was transferred out of the arena, she stomped onto the ground and looked up at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, you brute, tell me, is Fang Ge Que really unrivaled? To think that he didn’t have a single opening. He was able to perfectly maintain his [Black Tortoise Shield]

every time and eventually kill me... What is that even... Besides, every move I made was still within his calculations. Wu wu..."

I pursed my lips and said, "I can pretty much confidently say that Fang Ge Que has some kind of foresight ability. Dong Cheng, you don't have to be so upset. He is extremely famous for being number 1 on the CBN rankings, whereas you are only ranked 18th; There's no point in comparing yourself to him....."

"That's true, but....." The corner of Dong Cheng's lips rose into a mischievous smile, "But when it's your turn to go up against Fang Ge Que, you've got to do your best to defeat him and help me take my revenge! If you can defeat Fang Ge Que, as my thanks, I'll marry you....."

"Pft....."

On the side, Old K, Li Mu and Wang Jian all choked. Song Han crossed his arms over his chest and laughed out saying, "Brother Xiao Yao, this is a pretty good opportunity. Beauty Dong Cheng is so pretty, gentle, chaste and what not..... How great would it be to marry her..."

I laughed sarcastically and said, "If you don't want to die then shut up..."

On the other side, the beautiful little miss gripped onto her crimson blade and lightly smiled, "It's no problem, I don't really care..."

Old K cried out and said, "You... You don't care my foot..... is in so much pain....."

"Shua!"

A white light flashed as the beautiful little miss was sent into the arena. Her turn was up. The big screen also flashed with the opponent's name –

Cang Tong Lv 70 Gold Assassin vs Ye Lai Lv 71 Flame Berserker

.....

Ye Lai picked up his battle axe, his face full of smiles as he looked at the beauty on the other side, "I'm so lucky! To think that I would fight

against Fan Shu City's number one beauty. Tell me, if I were to win, I'd be hated. If I were to lose, I'd still be hated; it's so hard to be human!"

Wan Er's eyes carried a smile as she said, "Talk once you have the ability to win!"

Outside, Old K's body began to tremble, "How come I feel like... Our little miss's killing intent is filling up the entire stage? Even if that Ye Lai is [Judgement]'s Guild Master, he'll probably suffer some calamity in the near future..."

Qing Qian nodded and said, "Yup. Soon Sister Cang Tong's cruelty will be fully exposed on stage...."

Song Han squinted and said, "Alright, let's all watch what happens when a top tier Assassin gets mad. He he, the opponent is even Ye Lai, a high level opponent. Tsk tsk, an educational battle like this isn't something that people can see anytime they want..."

.....

On stage, the countdown ended. Ye Lai roared out and used [Conflagration] to buff himself. He charged right at Wan Er, his strategy was extremely obvious. He was going to attack before Wan Er used [Stealth]. This way he could avoid being ambushed from behind. For a Berserker, there weren't too many advantages they had over Assassins. Once they were stunned, it was possible for them to get killed within the status effect's duration.

"Hong!"

[Holy Fire Cut] was coming!

Wan Er raised her Iron Umbrella from behind her and blocked the opponent. "Peng!" And just like that, she had valiantly blocked the [Holy Fire Cut] and retreated extremely quickly; activating [Absolute Step] as her dagger carried a cold light and passed right by Ye Lai. "Ka Cha!" She brought out 2129 damage.

Ye Lai was shocked. He hastily turned around. With an open hand he initiated his finishing skill – [Burning Tornado]!

Wan Er abruptly opened up her Iron Umbrella. “Peng!” The umbrella’s branches opened up one by one and she hid behind the umbrella, dodging a large amount of the damage. Abruptly closing the umbrella, her little boots stepped across the floor. “Shua!” She came extremely close to Ye Lai. There was less than half a meter between her clear eyes and Ye Lai’s!

“F*ck...”

Ye Lai knew from his heart that things weren’t looking good. He quickly raised his battle axe and used [Divine Weapon Breaker]!

It was a shattering resistance, a defensive attack. Wan Er’s Iron Umbrella wouldn’t necessarily have been able to defend. However, something unexpected happened – she didn’t dodge. Instead, she raised her dagger and using [Gouge], breaking through the [Divine Weapon Breaker]! At the same time her lips curved into a smile and said, “It’s over...”

Ye Lai’s face turned positively green as he watched his opponent use [Bleed]+[Twin Blade Harmony] to take away his life while he was stunned.

After two rounds, Wan Er used her foresight advantage to completely win over her opponent. Ye Lai was miserably defeated 0:2 and he left the Rise of the Heroes’ stage.

.....

The last round was Drunken Spear vs The Seventh Tang. A battle between the two black horses.

Chapter 340: Preparing for Battle against Fang Ge Que

Drunken Spear and The Seventh Tang came face to face at the center of the stage.

The Seventh Tang held up his iron fan and suddenly laughed. He broke the silence, “Seems that neither of us really fit into the typical job description. You are a second-rate Knight while I barely fit the definition of a control Mage.”

Drunken Spear swept out the spear in his hand and grinned, “NO. You might be the one with the borderline job, but I’m definitely not. A Nature Knight is a passionate and bold class of Knights, fated to spend their life to protect their true love. How can such a righteous mission be delegated to some pitiful class? Though for you, Feng Shui Master. One look and I can tell that you’re an over glorified con man.”

The Seventh Tang pursed his lips and said, “Over glorified con man my arse, just wait until you’re defeated...”

“Haha, then I shall wait!”

The two were rather carefree bastards and just used that exchange of words as their declaration of battle. Not long after, the system began the countdown and the fight began.

.....

“Pa.....”

Drunken Spear’s battle boots blurred as he dashed toward his opponent. His tactic was fairly simple: just slash forward. His reasoning was simpler, only by getting close to your opponent could you truly be able to knock him down.

The Seventh Tang opened his palm and three copper coins materialized. He immediately picked out the blue one, activating [Hexagram], a stun skill. “Pa!” it flew out of his hand as if guided by the heavens.

However, Drunken Spear had exceptionally keen senses. Right as The Seventh Tang made his move, Drunken Spear followed-up with his own. He slid toward the opponent, dodging the [Hexagram] as it flew past him. A big MISS appeared overhead. He actually dodged it with his own reflexes. It was beautifully done, the way he changed directions while increasing his speed was almost perfect.

“Huh?”

The Seventh Tang saw that his [Hexagram] missed, but he didn't seem overly nervous. Actually, he flippantly fanned himself and abruptly charged forward. He reached out with his left hand and, quick as a viper, grabbed onto Drunken Spear's iron spear. With a slight flick, “Pa!” he knocked away the long spear. While waving his fan with his right hand, he activated another skill, [Triassic Flames], creating three powerful blasts of fire!

1436 !

1422 !

1397 !

Drunken Spear took the hits and abruptly stomped his left foot into the ground. The earth trembled with the impact and several geysers of scorching water burst out from the ground, merging together as they went straight at The Seventh Tang!

2717 !

At the same time, he gave his iron spear a quick jolt, shaking it from his opponent's grip. With a slight pull of his spear and then a stab, he activated [Rock Piercing Thrust]!

The Seventh Tang knew the damage from the attack would be too much for him; so before the [Rock Piercing Thrust] activated, he used [Pentashield]. This was the only way he could defend himself, otherwise he would've been immediately killed. However, from the side, The Seventh Tang heard the sound of a beast roaring. To his dismay, Drunken Spear's pet had also activated its attack.

“Sha sha sha.....”

The Seventh Tang retreated several steps as he gripped his iron fan. He used [Perspective], making extra sure that Drunken Spear’s pet could not chase him. However, Drunken Spear had already calculated the range of the skill. Brandishing his spear, he charged forward several steps and thrust his spear forward continuously. “Shua Shua Shua!” the spear pierced through!

442 !

398 !

417 !

[Pentashield] was way too cheap of a skill. It could reduce damage received by 80%, so there was no way he would be killed quickly.

“Hehe.....”

Drunken Spear immediately pulled his pet back and stood still. He used [Cleansing Wind] to recover his health and waited for The Seventh Tang. A bell rang after 5 seconds and [Pentashield]’s effect disappeared as it went into cooldown. Drunken Spear’s opportunity had arrived. He lifted his iron spear and began his attack.

All the skills of The Seventh Tang went into cooldown. In such a helpless situation he still had to face the enemy. He then hastily waved his iron fan and released his magnificent combo – [Bloom Again]!

“Peng!”

Drunken Spear drove his spear into the ground, and activated [Heavenly Shield Wall] to bear the brunt of the attack. Thus, the opponent’s [Bloom Again] dealt less than 2000 to his health. In turn, Drunken Spear lashed out with a [Skyshaker Slash]!

2817 !

With another normal attack, The Seventh Tang weakly fell to his knees, and just like that, he died!

1:0, Drunken Spear scored the first win!

.....

During the second round, The Seventh Tang still carried his fan lazily while leaning against a white pillar. Drunken Spear patted his pet's head then grinned, "How long has it been since I last gave you a bath, you're already getting fleas..."

His White Tiger growled, as if he was protesting his frivolous owner. Drunken Spear then slapped his pet on its forehead, "F*cking cat, it said it wasn't going to listen to me. Careful before I get upset and cook you in some spicy hot pot while I drink with The Seventh Tang."

The Seventh Tang laughed, "Alright alright, I have already eaten all kinds of wild beasts, but I can honestly say I haven't had a tiger before, not to mention a white one....."

Drunken Spear grinned, "Do you want to add more cumin?"

"That sounds good, let's add some pepper too....."

And then, the system countdown cut them off –

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

Drunken Spear's tactics were still the same. He suddenly raised his iron spear and pierced through, using [Rock Piercing Thrust]+[Skyshaker Slash]; both of which were extremely powerful!

The Seventh Tang then cast [Pentashield] to increase his defense and heavily took the assault from the other side. "Pa", The Seventh Tang gripped onto Drunken Spear's spear and unexpectedly called out a summoning hexagram. He smirked, "Drunken Spear, you're just too strong... forcing me to play all my cards....."

"Hong!"

From the hexagram, a monster suddenly came out. "Bang!", it's rocky body was big and covered with moss; it was a Stone Giant. The system showed its stats – Attack: 2840, Defense: 3320, Health: 7200 Emperor

Tier BOSS pet. Skills: 【Boulder Roll】【Pulverizing Assault】【Seismic Wave】.

“The Spear is done for...” Li Mu faintly smiled.

I nodded, “Yes he is...”

In the arena, Drunken Spear was directly hit by [Bolder Roll] which stunned him. The Seventh Tang then unleashed [Triassic Flames] onto Drunken Spear. When he had just barely recovered from his stunned state, a [Hexagram] flew out at him, effectively chain-stunning him. In the midst of Drunken Spear’s prolonged stun, The Seventh Tang leisurely cast his unique combo [Bloom Again] again.

“Shua!”

Drunken Spear was sent out of the field, 1:1, he died seconds after the Stone Giant’s attack.

.....

During the third round, there wasn’t much suspense. The Seventh Tang with his pet were very focused and coordinated with their use of skills. Drunken Spear only managed to dodge one of their attacks before being hit by another. Even if he wanted to, The Seventh Tang simply couldn’t instakill Drunken Spear. He used [Perspective]+[Shrink] and his [Pentashield]. The giant, sticking closely to Drunken Spear, tanked most of the damage with its 7200 health. Drunken Spear was completely helpless without an escape path and eventually, could only painfully kneel onto the ground.

2:1. The Seventh Tang won; and finally, the Top 4 of the [Rise of Heroes] tournament was out!

On the screen, four IDs were shown. Fei Er also appeared on the stage holding a microphone and gave a dazzling smile, “Okay. Thank you everyone for the enthusiasm and support. The [Rise of Heroes] tournament has finally come down to its last four competitors. They are – The Guild Master of [Zhan Long] and the number one Swordsman in Ba Huang City, Xiao Yao Zi Zai! The Guild Master of [Legend], Destiny’s #1

ranked player, Fang Ge Que! Fan Shu City's number one Assassin beauty and [Hero Mound]'s Vice Guild Master, the enchanting Cang Tong! And last but not the least, the mysterious Feng Shui Master, The Seventh Tang! Next up, they will fight for the championship. Please stay tuned!"

After moment's pause, Fei Er bowed and said "Up next, the semifinals will begin. First, Xiao Yao Zi Zai vs Fang Ge Que, a match that will become the focal point of this whole tournament. These two peak-level world class experts will definitely show us a beautiful and exciting match. The battle will begin in 5 minutes. Both players, please get ready."

.....

"I'm finally fighting against Fang Ge Que!"

Gripping my sword, I took a deep breath to calm myself down. Truth be told, even when I had killed before, I had never felt as excited as I did at that moment. Maybe it's because killing was such a natural thing for me, but today, I had finally reached a stage that I never would have thought possible. I was actually in the top 4 of a server wide tournament of the game that I liked. I would have never dreamed of this.

Song Han came up to me and said, " Brother Xiao Yao, if you can beat Fang Ge Que, the championship is ours! The first half was too brutal for you. To get to this point, you had to defeat a lot of experts. First it was Bai Li Ruofeng, then Mu Xuan, Yan Zhao Warrior, Q-Sword and now finally Fang Ge Que. All the ill-fated children in the first half had to kill off the top ten in the CBN rankings to qualify..."

I knew the feeling "You're right. It was tough..."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Enough. Xiao Yao needs time to prepare for a bit or else he really won't have a chance. This battle against Fang Ge Que will be his toughest. Just be careful of his [Mind Reading], hide your plans.

I nodded, "Yeah, I'll try my best!"

Yue Qing Qian tugged my arm and cheered, "Brother Xiao Yao, do your best for the championship. The champion of the [Rise of Heroes]

tournament will get a lot of gold!!”

“Yeah. I got it...”

.....

Dong Cheng blinked a few times, “Looks like Xiao Yao might actually go against Wan Er in the finals. He just has to beat Fang Ge Que first. And well, Wan Er shouldn’t have any problems with The Seventh Tang. Good Luck Xiao Yao! All the attention is on you. Just look at how many spectators there are!”

I looked up. Under the big screen was the viewer count of the people watching.

1,726,339 people.

[Destiny]’s Chinese server had around 2,000,000 online at the same time. It looks the event’s popularity rating was through the roof. This was indeed a game popular with all kinds of people.

The system transferred me onto the stage as I tightly gripped my sword.
“Shua!”

Standing on the stage, I felt an indescribable feeling of excitement. In front of me, a white light flashed and Fang Ge Que was brought to the stage. Holding his fan, he smiled at me respectfully. “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, how is it going? My toughest opponent in this [Rise of Heroes] tournament has finally appeared.”

I nodded, “Yeah, mine as well.”

Chapter 341: The Pinnacle of Battles

Slowly, the time ticked away. The most important match had finally arrived. Fang Ge Que's clothes fluttered in the wind as he stood 20 yards away. The fact that he had not pulled a safe distance of 40 yards away was understandable; he had to make sure that his spells were accurate. That's why for a high level Mage like Fang Ge Que, he would choose to stay only 20 yards away as a standard; that way, not only could he kite better, he also didn't need to worry about being struck by a [Blade Rush].

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

As the countdown ended, I roared as [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] activated. With an open hand, I summoned my Flaming Tiger God into the arena, revealing its name, Cang Tong, in bold letters. Side by side I charged with my Flaming Tiger God, telepathically urging him to remain 10 yards away from me at all times!

“Hummm”

The paper fan in Fang Ge Que's grasp began to ignite the air; after a few waves, a gale swiftly blew the fire toward us!

Sparks flew under me as I bore all my weight on my feet and a big MISS flew up behind me. I successfully dodged the attack. It was all done while keeping a calm mind, a mind completely blank of everything except my original battle tactic. I made no tactical predictions or any changes to my lines of thought. I was in autopilot and I charged right back at him.

“Eh?”

Fang Ge Que furrowed his brows, as if he couldn't figure out what I was thinking which was completely unexpected for him. In reality, this type of counter strategy against [Mind Reading] was extremely hard for the average player but it wasn't difficult for me at all. After having undergone many years of training, and having already broken through the bodily

training level, I was at the stage of training my spirit. Under this kind of training, I had to put aside all desires and thoughts, effectively clearing my mind. If I wanted to, even if she was standing right in front of me, Wan Er wouldn't be able to read my mind.

“Hua!”

My blade broke through the wind as it flashed the light of a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], enveloping Fang Ge Que and his pet Thunder Beast!

“Dammit.....”

Fang Ge Que's face froze. He immediately used [Dimensional Leap], leaving behind the Thunder Beast to be caught directly in my [Seven Fragment Slash]!

“Screech.....”

3123 !

With a roar, my Flaming Tiger God began tackling the Thunder Beast, causing another 2000 damage. Within seconds, the small Thunder Beast's health dropped to critical levels. After letting out a screech of pain, it began to dance around at the command of Fang Ge Que: the start of a large-scale spell. Countless stadium tiles began shooting up from the ground all around us, as a great [Lightning Abyss] opened up under my Flaming Tiger God and me.

1827 !

3111 !

I could withstand the damage, but the same couldn't be said for my Flaming Tiger God, so I quickly had it use its [Flame Armor]. However, the most pressing problem at the moment was that Fang Ge Que stood at a distance. With a wave of his fan, another large spell fell upon us – [Fire and Ice Storm]

2138 !

1922 !

My Flaming Tiger God was already in critical condition so I immediately

cast [Heal] on him. Then, I cast [Haste] on myself and gripped my sword as I dashed toward Fang Ge Que. As the Thunder Beast cried out, it transformed into a ball of light and became invulnerable for 2 seconds. This was another ingenious bait tactic with the Thunder Beast acting as bait while Fang Ge Que took advantage of his distance to bombard me with damage.

“Screech....”

My Flaming Tiger God was completely wrapped in the glow of his [Flame Armor], giving him a boost in magical resistance. As it waited for the Thunder Beast’s invincibility to end, its claws began to brighten with a red light and [Blood Drain]’s effect appeared. I immediately raised my sword and charged at Fang Ge Que. Simultaneously, I commanded the Flaming Tiger God to run and dodge Fang Ge Que’s spell while I used [Haste] and [Blade Rush]!

“Kacha!”

MISS !

[Blade Rush] had hit right into Fang Ge Que’s [Black Tortoise Shield]. This was the first time I truly touched him, which was an achievement since most melees couldn’t even get close to Fang Ge Que without getting killed.

“Shua shua....”

[Fire and Ice Storm] began to activate, raining damage onto my tiger’s body. Fang Ge Que knew as well that he had to kill my Flaming Tiger God, or else it would instantly kill the Thunder Beast. If both pet and owner were still alive, then he would definitely have a problem fighting.

My Emperor Qin’s Sword trembled as I suddenly used a [Combo] and hit his [Black Tortoise Shield] with a “PaPaPa” sound. The [Black Tortoise Shield]’s endurance fell to about 27%. However, at the same time, Fang Ge Que opened his hand and used [Ice Rock Blast] as cones of ice and rock pierced my Tiger God’s body, dealing enough damage to end its life!

“Hua!”

At the same time, I turned around and opened my hand. My [Great Realm of Desolation] targeted the Thunder Beast!

4189 !

A huge damage number flew up while the Thunder Beast shrieked one last time before dying.

My Emperor Qin's Sword trembled as it accumulated energy for me to activate a [Wind Blade]!

Fang Ge Que bit down as he raised his fan. With a "Keng," he blocked my attack. Actually no, he didn't block it. His entire body slid backward from the impact of my slash, increasing the distance between us. Fang Ge Que suddenly pushed his hand against the earth while frost gathered on his paper fan. With a wave, he activated – [Spiral Ice Dance]!

This skill was Fang Ge Que's proudest possession as it could bind the opponent!

I quickly evaded with a [Blade Rush], causing a MISS to fly up behind me. With [Haste] I quickly charged forward and within moments, I arrived right before Fang Ge Que. I twisted my blade and slashed at him!

"Keng!"

Once again I forced Fang Ge Que backward. Simultaneously I punched the ground which caused the earth to tremble; a chain broke through the earth and flew right at Fang Ge Que!

Fang Ge Que cried out and quickly used another [Dimensional Leap]!

"Shua!"

With another wave of his fan, [Blazewind Lock]+[Ice Rock Blast] both came right at me. On top of that, I wasn't that far from him, but since [Blade Rush] and [Haste] were on cooldown, there was no way to dodge!

2718 !

+1200 !

1727 !

I took the attack head on. But, before the [Ice Rock Blast] was released I also activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and raised my sword as I charged straight toward Fang Ge Que. At the same time [Recovery of the Dragon Knight]'s healing also activated; and just like that, the 100 Rage that I had when I began the fight were used up. This time, I had to put my life on the line!

Fang Ge Que furrowed his eyebrows. As he retreated, he also began to kite. As his hand flashed, an [Indigo Sea Arrow] shot at me from 7 yards away. It was hard to dodge so I just bit down and charged forward!

“MISS ! ”

The magic resistance effect from my Magic Spite Armor appeared, causing a MISS. Fang Ge Que's eyes widened as he cried out, “F*ck, how!?”

“Hummm”

I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and brought down another heavy slash. Fang Ge Que's body trembled slightly. His shoulder revealed a long bloody cut. The [Black Tortoise Shield] finally broke! My Emperor Qin's Sword dealt 711 damage!

However, Fang Ge Que remained as calm as ever and with a wave of his hand he touched my armor, [Spiral Ice Dance]!

Two paths of frost began to crawl up my Dragon Knight's Boots in a spiral, locking them in place. In that instant, I jolted my arm, landing a left punch right into Fang Ge Que's arm. Moreover, this hit had interrupted Fang Ge Que's third [Dimensional Leap]. God only knows how since [Dimensional Leap] had just 0.1 seconds of cast time. It was basically an instant spell, and yet I interrupted it!

Leaning close to the ground, I charged 8 yards forward. Fang Ge Que stood up and waved his paper fan. In those 2 precious seconds the [Spiral Ice Dance] bought, he already activated several spells. [Blazewind Lock]+[Ice Rock Blast]+[Fire Ice Storm] all activated at once!

2719 !

3112 !

3233 !

.....

My body suddenly weakened and I knew, I had been killed.....

“Shua!”

I was sent out of the arena as I stood there, clenching my fist. I stupidly stood there, silent. My heart kept on recalling every detail of that battle. There had to be something that I didn't do right, or else how could I lose to Fang Ge Que just like before?!

I looked toward my friends around me as I murmured, “What happened? I still lost...”

Wan Er lightly leaned against the pillar as she stared down at the tiles and said, “Fang Ge Que's cast speed is just too short. To think that a high level skill like [Blazewind Lock] didn't have a casting time, just his aiming delay. Even [Spiral Ice Dance], a crowd control spell only needed 8 seconds of cooldown. Even if you dodged the first attack, you didn't dodge the second. That's the reason you lost.”

I took a deep breath and said, “[Haste] can only last 15 seconds, whereas his three [Dimensional Leaps] can take away those 15 seconds. [Spiral Ice Dance]'s cooldown is so short too whereas my [Great Realm of Desolation] has a 12 second cool down. Even if I could break his [Black Tortoise Shield] within 12 seconds, I would only have 2-5 seconds where I can only take on his beating. Fang Ge Que's magic damage is just too high. My [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] won't be able to take it.”

General Li Mu patted my shoulder and said, “Guild Master, actually, I think that no matter how much you plan and calculate, you can only bet everything on luck. You need to break through Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield] first, and then kill him in seconds. Don't deal with that pet Thunder Beast of his!”

Dong Cheng Yue wryly smiled and said, “You can't. I know how strong that Thunder Beast is. It's a Lv 8 pet, it's magic attack is probably only slightly less than mine. Besides, [Lightning Abyss]+[Lightning Slash] are

just too fierce. Make Xiao Yao take a few and he definitely won't be able to survive. If he doesn't kill the Thunder Beast, Xiao Yao will die even faster..."

Song Han said, "How about Brother Xiao Yao uses [Binding Chains] on the Thunder Beast, then he might have a chance....."

I nodded and said, "Yup, I've got everyone's suggestion. Let me try it out!"

"Alright!"

.....

"Shua!"

I was sent into the arena once again and looked toward Fang Ge Que from a distance. The moment the countdown began, I already took my stance and buffed myself with the [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]. Once the countdown ended, I raised my sword and charged ahead with my Flaming Tiger God. On top of that, I kept my mind blank. My aim was to bind the Thunder Beast. If I use [Binding Chains] to lock him, then I can kill Fang Ge Que!

Thoughts from my consciousness filled the arena, there was no reason that Fang Ge Que couldn't figure it out. However, Fang Ge Que suddenly withdrew and didn't protect his [Thunder Beast]. He was a clever man, he already knew from the first round that I could perfectly block him from entering my thoughts and yet here I was, releasing my killing intent in the second round. He probably thought that there was some kind of trick, and so Fang Ge Que thought that this was some kind of bait and that my [Binding Chains] wasn't targeting his Thunder Beast but rather him!

"Hong!"

My fist was surrounded by a dense green fog as I suddenly thrust out. Just as expected, Fang Ge Que abruptly slid away. However, once the [Binding Chains] broke through the ground, his expression shook, "F*ck!"

"Ji ji....." The Thunder Beast had been bound. It couldn't move at all and just cried out. The Lv 8 [Binding Chains] lasted 5.9 seconds, the true OP

skill had appeared!

“Hmmm!”

The Emperor Qin’s Sword began to quiver with killing intent. My Flaming Tiger God and I split into two different angles of attack as we charged toward Fang Ge Que. The little tiger roared out as it used [Burstfire Raid]. As a Mage, Fang Ge Que naturally couldn’t outrun it. On top of that, I had already given my tiger [Flame Armor]. I could only kill Fang Ge Que in these 5.9 seconds, or else everything would be over!

“Grrrr.....”

The Flaming Tiger God pounced, forcing Fang Ge Que to use a [Dimensional Leap]. On top of that, he used two [Dimensional Leaps] at the same time. I then began my attack. The arena was only so big; soon, Fang Ge Que was cornered!

“Ding!”

Five golden stars began to revolve around my blade as [Combo] fell upon Fang Ge Que. He only had 22% durability left in his [Black Tortoise Shield]!

“Huh?”

As his clear eyes scanned the arena, Fang Ge Que used his last [Dimensional Leap] without hesitation!

I raised my hand and cast [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

His [Black Tortoise Shield] finally broke, and in that instant I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword angrily and brought down a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

Rubble flew everywhere as the stone arena was split in half by my slash. With a bang, the stones began to fall. The effect from the strike was just too great. The broken Fang Ge Que weakly sat in the midst of the destruction as a large damage number wafted above his head –

4738 !

.....

Instant kill, 1:1, comeback win!

Fei Er stepped onto the stage with her little boots. She grinned and said, “Congratulations Xiao Yao Zi Zai on your first win. However, you’ve destroyed our arena. Hehe, can everyone please wait five minutes. I’ll let the technicians fix up the arena very quickly. We’ll be right back.....”

Chapter 342: Unstoppable?

I gripped my Emperor Qin's Sword as I was teleported outside the arena. At that time, a group of [Zhan Long] members cheered. Qing Qian was the happiest as she cheered, "Brother Xiao Yao actually won against Fang Ge Que! So amazing!!"

General Li Mu laughed and said, "That's right! And with just one strike too! That shieldless Fang Ge Que is actually a one hit trash too..."

Not far away, Mu Xuan crossed her arms as she leaned against the pillar and faintly smiled, "This... this should be the first time Fang Ge Que tasted defeat in the [Rise of the Heroes] tournament. Strictly speaking, this is the first time Fang Ge Que lost a round ever since he began playing [Destiny]..."

I was stunned, "That can't be... Fang Ge Que should've been PK-ed before in Jiu Li City, right? Could it be that he's never been defeated before?"

The [Judgement] Guild Master Ye Lai lifted his battle axe over his shoulder and said, "I don't know about the others, but as far as I can remember, Fang Ge Que has never been defeated in Jiu Li City. It's already hard enough for someone to get close to him in the wilderness. Once, the famous Bai Li Ruo Feng had a chance to kill him but got killed in the process. Thus, Mu Xuan's words are probably right. After Fang Ge Que entered [Destiny] this is his first defeat. He's like a god already, to think that he died in your hands. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are truly powerful. Too bad I haven't had the chance to duel with you yet!"

I couldn't help but laugh, "[Judgement]'s Guild Master, you're too modest. We can compare notes at any time and I can even think of it as a lesson. You are a famous person on the CBN rankings while I'm just a newbie."

Ye Lai laughed out and said, "Names like 'newbies' or 'expert' are just the opinion of plebeians. In my eyes, you, Xiao Yao, have already achieved the same level as Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han. On top of that, [Zhan Long]

has experts like you, Qing Qian, Wolf Totem and the General Family. In the near future, you'll become a big guild like [Hero Mound] and [Vanguard]. [Zhan Long]'s appearance should be [Destiny]'s Chinese server's fortune!"

Wan Er also smiled and said, "[Judgement]'s Guild Master truly has a noble disposition. This kind of character isn't something Guild Masters from other big guilds have. No wonder [Judgement] could hold such a stable rule over Jiu Li City. Even if you offended [Legend], you weren't erased."

Ye Lai grinned, then looked at Wan Er then at me and said, "Rumors have it that Fan Shu City's number one beauty Cang Tong and Ba Huang City's number one hottie Xiao Yao Zi Zai are friends in real life. Now that I look at you guys, it seems like it's true. Beauty Cang Tong, even as [Hero Mound]'s Vice Guild Master, isn't with their Guild Master in this tournament but rather with Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I can smell something fishy going on, Ke ke, now that I look at it again, you guys are the ideal couple..."

Wan Er's blushed as she said, "Ye Lai, actually..... there isn't that kind of relationship between me and Xiao Yao. At least not yet..."

Mu Xuan's eyes lit up as she said, "Alright! Looks like I still have a chance. Little Zai Zai, think about it again. Wanna join our [Appearance Alliance]? We're said to have 24 golden flowers. We have twenty four top quality beauties. Whoever you like, I'll reveal their numbers to you. Mhm, if you like this sister's kind of beauty, that's fine too... My number is....."

I hit my head against the wall, feeling slightly suicidal. Old K took out his phone as his greedy eyes stared at Mu Xuan and said, "What's the number? Say it?"

Mu Xuan grinned as her exceptional twin peaks jiggled a few times and said, "Che, I'm having a private conversation with Little Zai Zai, why would I give it to you ugly bastard....."

Old K raised his battle axe to fight to the death when Li Mu quickly interjected, "Old K, don't be impulsive. You aren't Queen Mu Xuan's dish,

so don't be rash. She's a lady, we can't use brute force now can we."

Song Han laughed, "Alright, let's stop messing around. Brother Xiao Yao start preparing. The arena is about to be regenerated!"

"Yup!"

Qing Qian looked at me and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, you have to win! If you win, you'll become one of the finalists!"

Wan Er walked up to me; her sweet shoulders lightly knocked against my arm as she warmly smiled, "Good luck!"

"Yeah!"

I strongly nodded. The little miss' slightly bashful encouragement gave me a huge boost in confidence.

.....

The arena was quickly repaired and I received the signal to teleport. Afterward, I and Fang Ge Que both appeared in the arena. Outside, a thunderous applause resounded throughout the arena. Countless of players were watching this tournament and whether they were my friends or our enemies, everyone wanted to see this ultimate duel. Originally, the top individuals in the warrior class were Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han and Ye Lai. However, Q-Sword dealt with Jian Feng Han while Ye Lai was killed by Wan Er. Then, I defeated Q-Sword. It didn't matter before whether my school was China's number one or not, but now everything depended on me.

Fang Ge Que conceitedly stood in his original spot. A light breeze blew across the arena as his robes fluttered. A dark blue mysterious aura gathered behind him. Beside him, his Thunder Beast screeched and a ball of lightning began to condense around its body. It had high mobility and attack, its power was truly tyrannical.

Compared to Fang Ge Que, my armor looked extremely average. I was clothed in a stern armor, while a crimson cloak fluttered behind me. My Flaming Tiger God stalked around me, his fur riled up as he growled. The little tiger clearly displayed its killing intent to the opponent, probably

because he had been killed by him before. Yup, I'll stick to the same battle plan and create a confusing tactic. However, this time, my tactics had to be more complicated. I needed two battle plans in store so that I could swiftly switch between them; I couldn't let Fang Ge Que's [Mind Reading] succeed at all.

The countdown began-

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

In the end, he used an above average PK spell. His paper fan flashed as his Thunder Beast rushed over. Once it was extremely close, a [Blazewind Lock] flew at me which gave me no way to retreat!

1828 !

I immediately rushed forward. When I saw that there wasn't much distance between us, I immediately used [Blade Rush]!

“Hua Cha!”

When my body charged forward, Fang Ge Que's feet suddenly slid backward a few steps, dodging my [Blade Rush]. At the same time, he gave his paper fan a slight wave, and a [Fire and Ice Storm] suddenly enveloped both me and my Flaming Tiger God!

2412 !

3172 !

What the f*ck, isn't this the start of getting kited to death?!

I bit down and activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and [Haste]. At the same time, I gave a [Heal] to my Flaming Tiger God. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword as I dashed forward. My Divine Battle Boots created sparks as I came to an abrupt stop. I was at the perfect angle and with a raise of my sword, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Shua!”

Fang Ge Que used a [Dimensional Leap] to flash away. Even so, his Thunder Beast couldn't dodge. With a screech, it lost 2900+ health while the Flaming Tiger God pounced onto it with a [Flame Claw]!

1423 !

The Thunder Beast cried out then suddenly curled up into a ball. It was a defensive stance which could fend off at least 50% of the damage. At the same time Fang Ge Que roared out and an [Indigo Sea Arrow] shot right at my Flaming Tiger God!

However, my eyes were faster and my shoulder suddenly plunged in as I knocked my tiger away and took the damage from the spell!

MISS !

Luckily, the Magic Spite armor's magical resistance effect appeared. Fang Ge Que's eyes darkened again; His plans were probably spoiled. The Flaming Tiger God raised its claws and activated [Blood Drain] on the Thunder Beast. As the Thunder Beast died, it activated one last [Lightning Abyss], trapping both me and my tiger!

Fang Ge Que's paper fan waved, [Pillar of Fire and Ice]!

I saw it coming. I couldn't protect my Flaming Tiger God!

And thus, the little tiger in critical health began running toward the wall. My Valkyrie Tier BOSS level pet had an extremely fast recovery rate and only needed around 30 seconds to recover all of its health. Fang Ge Que also knew this, and so he rushed over and waved the flames on his paper fan, [Blazewind Lock] locked right onto the tiger!

3772 !

In the end, the little tiger couldn't withstand it and wailed as it fell to the ground. However, it also bought me crucial time as I quickly dashed toward Fang Ge Que. With a raise of my long sword, I activated a [Combo] as my sword began to flash five different rays of light, which all slashed right toward Fang Ge Que!

Fang Ge Que wouldn't dare take the attacks head on and could only use

another [Dimensional Leap] and appeared 20 yards away!

My feet didn't stop at all; my Battle Boots stepped across the ground and ran in a Z shape as I dodged two of Fang Ge Que's spells. With a wave of my longsword, a [Wind Blade] fell upon him!

"Shua!"

It was his last [Dimensional Leap]. Fang Ge Que stood still; his paper fan danced in his hand as he continuously cast three different attacks!

2918 !

MISS !

MISS !

When I saw my magical resistance take effect two times in a row, I was in ecstasy. The heavens were helping me!

"Peng!"

I knocked into Fang Ge Que's chest and took advantage of my opponent's retreat and the air under my feet began to rise as [Combo] activated!

"Eh?"

Fang Ge Que saw everything occurred and displayed his quick decision making. With a slide, he dodged the attack. He raised his paper fan once again as an icicle materialized in his palm. "Pa!" it shot right onto my wrist which actually interrupted my [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

I wasn't shocked in the slightest since everything was still within my calculations. I rotated my wrist as my blade cut right into Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield]. The paper fan in his hand slightly trembled as I raised my fist and "Peng!" began throwing punches. At the same time, I took a step forward, leaped and threw a kick into Fang Ge Que's stomach which interrupted his [Fire and Ice Storm]. Fang Ge Que's face clearly wrote out his shock as if he couldn't even dream of a Swordsman having such quick movements. He never would've thought that I could break through his casting movements. Just as he began condensing his third

[Blazewind Lock], my body slightly dipped and my Battle Boots kicked out!

“Peng!”

The kick knocked Fang Ge Que over causing his third attempt to be interrupted once again. As he continually took my hits, his [Black Tortoise Shield] fell to 9% durability!

“Hmm!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword began to buzz as I sliced down right into Fang Ge Que’s shoulder!

“Hmph!”

Even though he was a Mage, Fang Ge Que still had extremely swift movements. He suddenly raised his paper fan in front of him, was he blocking?!

“Peng!” Fang Ge Que rolled 20 yards away. Watching that, my heart froze. He wasn’t defending, he was borrowing the force of my kick to increase our distance!? F*ck, I fell for it!

.....

I opened my palm and faced Fang Ge Que, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

At the same time, Fang Ge Que pointed his paper fan at me – [Ice Rock Blast]!

“Bang Bang!”

3782 !

3427 !

.....

My body weakened and was sent out of the arena, while Fang Ge Que also knelt to the ground as his body turned into light which slowly converged again. A system notification resounded through the air –

“Ding!”

System Notification: Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Fang Ge Que was killed at

the same time during the tournament. But due to the fact that Xiao Yao Zi Zai had been killed by the other side 0.14 seconds before, Fang Ge Que had taken victory. Congratulations to Fang Ge Que for officially entering this year's [Rise of the Heroes] Tournament Finals!

Chapter 343: A Cruel Principle

Fragments of light began to merge outside the arena as I was sent back to my original spot. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Song Han all looked at me as their eyes filled with complex emotions.

Wan Er clenched her fists as her eyes filled with frustration, "What a pity, just a little 0.14 seconds more. Otherwise you would've killed Fang Ge Que first, it's really a pity....."

Song Han said, "Yeah, you just narrowly missed the chance to get into the finals just like that....."

I sheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword behind me and lazily leaned against the pillar as I faintly smiled, "It's no problem. The fact that I made it into the Top 4 is already enough for me. Besides, my opponent was Fang Ge Que, CBN's Number 1. I lost fair and square. He was definitely very strong. To think that he could instantly kill me with a chain of skills. Sigh.....The biggest problem was that all of my control type skills were restricted by the tournament... or else my lunch wouldn't have been stolen by someone else so easily. For someone as handsome as me, they must be the main character....."

General Li Mu laughed out and said, "That's enough Guild Master..... if this tournament allowed you to use the Mohist Five Scrolls, I'm afraid no one would be able to contend with you. However, I did hear that Q-Sword and Fang Ge Que had some large scale area of effect skills that were also restricted. And thus, the strength of everyone from this Rise of the Heroes Tournament was only the tip of the iceberg. You'll have to wait for a guild war to actually experience their true strength."

Dong Cheng said, "Actually.... I feel like Xiao Yao should've won....."

"Why's that?" Wan Er asked.

Dong Cheng fluttered her eyes as she smiled, "It's really simple. How long has it been since Xiao Yao Zi Zai made his debut? Before, he was just an obscure little bastard. However, now, he made his way into the entire country's top four and fought evenly against Fang Ge Que. He even won a

round and technically killed him twice! Keke, isn't that enough to prove something?"

Not far away, Mu Xuan waved her staff and also smiled, "Cang Yue is right. Even if Fang Ge Que wins this tournament, he has already lost his stable position at the top. From now on, everyone will remember that Fang Ge Que was killed by Little Zai Zai twice in the Rise of the Heroes tournament, even if he won in the end."

I pursed my lips and said, "Whatever. What's the point of saying stuff like that? The next round is about to start. Wan Er, you should prepare yourself....."

Wan Er faintly smiled and pointed, "0.14 seconds. From now on you have to work hard after this and shorten that 0.14 seconds so that not even Fang Ge Que could rival you."

"Alright. Your next opponent is the dark horse, The Seventh Tang. Be careful."

"Yup!"

.....

"Shua Shua!"

Two rays of light flashed as Wan Er and The Seventh Tang were sent into the arena together. Wan Er symbolized the look of a top tier female Assassin; From all her equipment, the worst was probably a Purple Tier. She lightly waved her hand and summoned her Tiger Beastman. The Seventh Tang carried his iron fan as usual. The fan was surrounded with flickering flames, it was probably some type of fire type weapon. That was probably what allowed his [Triassic Flames] spell to be so powerful.

Looking at the beautiful female Assassin on the other side, The Seventh Tang's eyes grew hot. He suddenly closed his fan and stood straight as an arrow, then bowed and said, "Lin Wan Er...I know it's you. Your ID is Cang Tong. I've been looking for you for so long. Even when I added you as my friend you rejected me. But I will never give up. I will definitely find you!"

Wan Er was surprised, "Who are you? I don't know you."

The Seventh Tang faintly smiled, “Do you still remember the concert in 2014? That day, I saw you and from then on I knew, I knew that you were the one. And so.... all those years, I’ve been searching for you, my one true love.....”

“So it was like that.....”

Wan Er was a little helpless. She played with her dagger and said, “Thank you for your support, but I already have someone I like. I don’t need you to pursue me.....”

The Seventh Tang jolted, “You have someone you like? Who is it? Is it that.....that Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!”

Wan Er grinned without answering and said, “What about it? Are you going to duel against him? That’s no problem. Once I wash you out, you’ll end up fighting with him over the third place anyway. Yup, and good luck, that bastard’s pretty strong....”

The Seventh Tang bit down, “Ok. I definitely won’t let you down!”

...

Outside of the arena.

Dong Cheng’s jaw dropped, “Wu.... this Seventh Tang is Wan Er’s fan? Brother Xiao Yao, your rival has appeared. He’s also one of the country’s top 4 experts and on top of that, he’s infatuated with Wan Er and pursued his love for 3 years now.....”

I pursed my lips and made a fist, “Yea, I have to get third place!

Qing Qian grinned, “Good luck brother!”

At this time, the countdown began. Wan Er and The Seventh Tang’s duel began –

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

The second the duel began, Wan Er swiftly retreated and disappeared

into the wind. The Seventh Tang held the hexagram in his hand. He grit his teeth as he examined every miniscule change around him.

“Hua!”

As a few fallen leaves rustled in the air, The Seventh Tang immediately became vigilant. In the empty space, Lin Wan Er activated [Absolute Step] and darted toward The Seventh Tang at lightning speed.

[Hexagram] !

The copper coin in Seventh Tang’s hand spun extremely fast and suddenly casted a blue hexagram, it was a stun!

Unfortunately, Wan Er’s [Mind Reading] was not a fake. Her little boots tapped across the ground and spun around, she easily formed a beautiful arc in the same spot and dodged the [Hexagram]. The Seventh Tang remained silent and waved his iron fan as raging flames flew out. He must maintain his dignity as a strong person before his idol no matter what; Or else he would never be able to reach Wan Er’s eyes!

“HuaHua..... ”

Wan Er’s cloak fluttered wildly behind her as she moved at an extraordinarily fast pace then crossed her two blades. “PaPaPa” The blasts of the [Triassic Flames] were averted for three consecutive times like a fluttering butterfly. Any skill that a player casts has an aiming and activation period at which the player is most defenseless. So, Wan Er used this to her advantage and interrupted the three attacks.

“F*ck!”

The Seventh Tang quietly reacted. His iron fan made a waving motion and his battle robe flew up simultaneously as he leaped and kicked at Wan Er.

“Huh? ”

Lin Wan Er’s beautiful eyes swept around as she blocked with both of her daggers crossed in front of her. “Keng.” She knocked away The Seventh Tang’s iron fan. She then slid forward as her fair legs gently

swept past the package under The Seventh Tang's armor and instantly interrupted his flying kick.

While The Seventh Tang staggered, Lin Wan Er launched her daggers forward as a [Gouge] was successfully executed!

[Bleed]+[Twin Blade Harmony]!

After sending out the two strikes, Lin Wan Er raised her hand and waved her iron umbrella horizontally. "Peng" A clang resounded as she blocked the attack from The Seventh Tang's pet. She then borrowed the Stone Giant's momentum as she spun around and arrived behind the Seventh Tang and activated [Backslash]!

.....

"Shua! "

A streak of light flew up, The Seventh Tang was killed before he could even activate his [Pentashield]. On top of that, Lin Wan Er's iron umbrella almost perfectly blocked the Stone Giant's attack. With that, It was a perfect kill!

"Er..... "

Yue Qing Qian peered at Lin Wan Er who stood on the stage with fluttering sleeves. She couldn't help but purse her lips together and ask, "Sister Cang Tong's performance is terrifying. Is that fighting style..... the legendary [Pulse Break Style]?"

Li Mu nodded, "It is [Pulse Break Style]. Breaking your opponent's attack even before the opponent strikes. Tsk.Tsk. The strength that The Seventh Tang possesses wouldn't even be able to be utilized. This is interesting....."

Wolf narrowed his eyes and said, "[Pulse Break Style] is probably the one of the most unpopular fighting styles. Back then, only Little Demon, the creator of the [Pulse Break Style], could perfectly use this tactic. However, looking at Beauty Wan Er's style, it should be similar to Little Demon 's level of perfection. With [Mind Reader]+[Pulse Break] it's basically a match made in heaven."

Yue Qing Qian faintly smiled , “Has Brother Xiao Yao ever thought of using [Pulse Break Style]? ”

I thought for a moment then shook my head, “No, I’m a pure-strength Swordsman. My speed wouldn’t be able to keep up. Unless I was fully dressed in godly equipments, only then could I even be qualified to talk about trying [Pulse Break Style]. Even now I can’t use it. It’s execution is too difficult. Wan Er is an Assassin, so she’s been adding all of her stat points to agility. Her attack speed is already really fast. Every time she attacks, she’s faster than her opponent, making [Pulse Break] perfect for her...”

“Then Brother Xiao Yao, what fighting style are you deciding then?

I touched my nose and replied, “I don’t know!”

Nearby, Mu Xuan softly caressed her clothes as she said, “A pure-strength Swordsman should use [Drunken Sword Style]. Besides, you also have your healing skills and Lifesteal equipment, so it wouldn’t be a problem to recover your health. You should crush the opponent with your special skills.”

I nodded, “Yup!”

.....

Meanwhile, Wan Er’s and The Seventh Tang’s second match had begun.

Even though The Seventh Tang changed his battle strategy, his [Hexagram] still could not escape Wan Er’s omniscient [Mind Reading], which caused his [Hexagram] to become useless. Even [Perspective] was affected by the intense speed of Wan Er’s [Absolute Step] and did not have much effect. In the end, Wan Er stunned the Stone Giant. Then, with the cooperation of her pet, she forcefully attacked him when The Seventh Tang activated [Pentashield]. The Seventh Tang’s combo [Bloom Again] was useless after the two successive kicks by Wan Er. In that state, he couldn’t do anything even if he wanted to.

2:0, The results for the top four of the Heroes Tournament had appeared!

On the large screen, two lines of big words appeared.

Final Match: Cang Tong VS Fang Ge Que

3rd Place Match up: Xiao Yao Zi Zai VS The Seventh Tang

.....

Fei Er seductively walked up the stage and cheerfully announced, “This competition has entered its final stages. Everyone must have enjoyed each one of the fierce fights, right? Now, we’ll start off with the 3rd and 4th place competition, Xiao Yao Zi Zai VS The Seventh Tang. This will definitely be an exciting battle!”

“Shua Shua!”

Two rays of light appeared on stage. The Seventh Tang and I faced each other from a distance. The Seventh Tang stared at me with the fiery iron fan in his hand as he calmly spoke, “I heard that you are someone beside Lin Wan Er in real life. Is that true? ”

I nodded and replied, “I guess it is! ”

The Seventh Tang curved his lips and faintly smiled. Yet, his eyes were filled with arrogance as he said, “Did you know? There is something in this world that is extremely cruel..... ”

I laughed and asked, “What thing? ”

The Seventh Tang enunciated his words, “Don’t stay by the excellent Wan Er’s side if you aren’t good enough. It will create a certain kind of damage to both you and her. You will leave her side because of this!”

“Keng! ”

I fiercely drew my Emperor Qin’s Sword out and pointed it at him as I roared out, “Die you poser!”

Chapter 344: The Final Rankings

The second the countdown ended, I had already dashed out with my sword in hand. Together with my Flaming Tiger God, we charged right at The Seventh Tang. At that moment, three copper coins hovered on top of The Seventh Tang's hands as he was choosing between the different hexagrams!

“Shua!”

The red copper coin flew out: the hexagram that dealt enormous burst damage!

“Peng!”

It hit me in the chest and a sharp pain reverberated through my body. As expected, this hexagram truly dealt a lot of damage—

“3277 ! ”

Half my health was gone in a flash. At the same time, my Flaming Tiger God roared as it pounced on The Seventh Tang. The Seventh Tang quickly backed away and cast [Pentashield] at the same time.

Once it received my telepathic command, the little tiger cub immediately turned and successfully dodged the Stone Giant's [Boulder Roll]. The Seventh Tang was stunned, “What the f*ck! How did it escape?”

I used a long-range attack and raised my hand to activate a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Seven stars rushed to my blade and began to orbit the tip as it gathered force. They flew out and instantly engulfed The Seventh Tang and his pet!

“571 ! ”

“3228 ! ”

The Seventh Tang was dumbfounded. I had unexpectedly used a long-range attack, rendering his main skills, [Triassic Flames] and [Bloom Again], useless since they were all for close combat. How pathetic was it to be tricked like that by a long ranged Swordsman?

I waved my hand, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“3517 ! ”

The Stone Giant howled in pain. Almost all of it’s health was gone—just what I wanted!

Helplessly, The Seventh Tang waved his Iron Fan and used [Perspective] to shorten our distance. He came 30 yards closer, instantly appearing in front of me. The hexagram in his hand activated again. The cooldown for that skill was so short! No wonder he could make it this far in the tournament!

I rapidly rushed forward as I used Yi Hai to lock onto his skill. The second the hexagram activated, I lowered my body and activated [Blade Rush]!

“Huacha!”

“739 ! ”

I suddenly dashed behind The Seventh Tang and stabbed my Emperor Qin’s Sword into his back. The Seventh Tang abruptly turned his head, only to hear my cold words, “Taste the overwhelming might of a pure-strength Swordsman!”

My skills erupted with continual strikes from [Fierce Ice Blade]+ [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I had attacked from behind and even though [Pentashield] could reduce 80% of the damage received, that combo was still overwhelming for The Seventh Tang. During my last strike, the Emperor Qin’s Sword pierced through his body and didn’t even give him a chance to drink a health potion. He was killed instantly!

.....

1:0

I stood proudly on the stage. I propped my My Emperor Qin’s Sword in front of me as the Cloak of Disillusionment fluttered in the wind behind my back. I looked proud and overbearing. As the only heavy armor player

in the semi-finals, many people would now consider me the strongest one in the entire the Chinese server. I showed the lethality of my class and consequently received an ovation from numerous people in the audience. Their cheers were thunderous. I was high from the sense of achievement.

During the second round, The Seventh Tang was a lot more cautious. He stood far away and activated the hexagram in his hand, unwilling to fight me face to face—maybe it was because my damage was too terrifying. He furrowed his eyebrows and said, “How can you have so much strength and still lose to Fang Ge Que? If so, how terrifying are Fang Ge Que’s attacks?”

I gritted my teeth and replied, “He instantly killed me with three skills, how terrifying do you think he is? I even have 200%+ Magical Resistance!”

The Seventh Tang’s jaws dropped as he heard my words. He responded, “What the heck? Are you serious? How did you fight a person like that? Does this mean that Wan Er will definitely lose against Fang Ge Que later?”

I shook my head, “I have no idea..... I just know that you’re going to lose again.”

The Seventh Tang waved his iron fan and said, “Don’t worry. That won’t happen! Hmph, if I lose a fourth time then this wouldn’t be a battle of the top four finalists anymore but rather an endless torture for me.”

I couldn’t help but chuckle, “What do you think?”

“Come, let’s do our best and fight!”

.....

The second the countdown ended, I began my attack. I lowered my Emperor Qin’s Sword as I focused on the movements of the hexagram. If I could dodge his hexagram, then I would maximize my chances of winning. I wasn’t prepared the first round so I had to dodge it this time. This was a test.

The Seventh Tang’s eyes focused on me. With the intention to kill, he swiftly raised his hand and threw out [Hexagram Blast]!

My Divine Battle Boots stomped on the ground as I came to an abrupt stop. One hand wasn't enough so I immediately rotated my sword and violently shoved it into the ground. "Peng" a clang resounded as fiery sparks scattered all around. Using all of my strength, I leaned to the side and forcefully left my original path. The [Hexagram Blast] slipped past my arm as a huge MISS appeared. I really successfully dodged it!

The Seventh Tang coldly glared at me, "Shit, you could even dodge it like that. Are you really just a pure strength Swordsman?"

True, I wasn't Lin Wan Er. I couldn't compete with her movement and turning speed. All I could do was use this "stupid" method and use brute force to dodge the [Hexagram Blast]. Either way, it was a successful dodge!

Focusing my weight on my feet, I swiftly dashed towards The Seventh Tang. As soon as I was only 8 yards away from him, The Seventh Tang hastily used [Perspective]. But, I was already expecting it. The moment [Perspective] activated, I used [Blade Rush]. "Shua" I appeared in front of The Seventh Tang again. I was more experienced than him and successfully countered his [Perspective] again!

I sent my blade forward with a stab, like a ferocious dragon bursting out of the sea!

The Seventh Tang started to reveal his true strength in short-range combats. He smacked his iron fan on top of my blade and slid his left foot under me to trip me, taking out a good half of my original force. Then, he threw a left punch right into my shoulder pad!

"Peng!"

"774 ! "

I looked at him and smirked, "It doesn't even hurt..... "

The Seventh Tang's face turned green, "You wanna die?!"

"Peng! "

I punched him back then charged again and landed a kick with my

Battle Boots. “Shua Shua” My Emperor Qin’s Sword hit The Seventh Tang twice before I launched a flying kick at him. I immediately sent The Seventh Tang flying. The Stone Giant roared and rushed at me, only to be trapped by my [Binding Chains]. My Flaming Tiger God growled and activated [Burstfire Raid], smashing into The Seventh Tang.

Even though he had [Pentashield] on, the rhythm of his attack was almost the same as the first round. Just like before, he was instantly killed with a barrage of attacks when I rushed forward!

“Shua!”

The Seventh Tang transformed into a ray of light and flew out of the arena. It wasn’t easy for him to fight against me since I had both high magic resistance and the support of my Flaming Tiger God. I was very different from any of the players he had fought before. Even though he had a good handle on the hexagrams, he still couldn’t kill me within a short time. I could defeat him even without using any of my defensive skills, [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] or [Recovery of the Dragon Knight]!

2:0

I got the third place!

I was soon teleported outside the stage. Lin Wan Er immediately cheered at me, “Congratulations, you won the third place! ”

I nodded and smiled in reply, “It was a piece of cake. Wan Er, go become the champion! ”

“Yes!”

.....

Suddenly, Fei Er went on the stage again, announcing that I had won third place. The moment everyone was waiting for was coming. The Final Match—

Cang Tong VS Fang Ge Que

One of them was the best Assassin while the other was the best Mage, both of whom possessed [Mind Reading]. This was a true battle of minds.

Standing in the breeze, Lin Wan Er's long hair fluttered gently as her sleeves waved around. She slightly bent her body then vanished into thin air. Yet, Fang Ge Que still had a calm expression as his Thunder Beast shrieked on his shoulder. The paper fan in his hand waved up and down. He looked at Lin Wan Er and smiled, "Do your best. Cang Tong. I want to see your real strength!"

Lin Wan Er lowered her dagger. Streaks of fire surrounded her yet she still remained invisible.

The second the countdown ended, Lin Wan Er had already darted out. Her beautiful eyes were focused on Fang Ge Que as she suddenly accelerated and thrust her dagger towards Fang Ge Que's back.

"Shua!"

Fang Ge Que used [Dimensional Leap] but only leapt 2 yards away. He already understood Wan Er's timing of attack. With fire raging on his paper fan, a [Blazewind Lock] instantly flew out!

Too close to Fang Ge Que, Wan Er couldn't dodge even if she had godly speed. She hastily lifted the huge umbrella on her back, opening it with a "Pa" and blocked the attack. However, Fang Ge Que's string of attacks was even fiercer. [Ice Rock Blast], [Fire and Ice Storm], [Pillar of Fire & Ice], and multiple other skills were all activated successively, forcing Wan Er to hastily retreat. After the first round of attacks ended, Wan Er returned her steel umbrella, only to find Fang Ge Que appearing in front of her with [Dimensional Leap]. He immediately sent out an [Indigo Sea Arrow]!

"3712 ! "

And, like a simple [Blade Rush], Wan Er slowly transformed into a ray of light and was sent out of the stage.

1:0 !

Almost everyone was shocked. The winner of the final round was actually decided in 7 seconds!

.....

During the second round, Fang Ge Que remained proudly standing on the stage.

This time, Wan Er's battle strategy became even more tenacious. The second she revealed herself, she tricked Fang Ge Que into using [Blazewind Lock] by using [Absolute Step] as her Bee blew and stirred the falling leaves. The dagger flashed and instantly stunned Fang Ge Que from behind.

“Pa!”

The second he was stunned, Fang Ge Que's expression suddenly changed as he exclaimed, “Oh no!”

As expected, Wan Er's attack rhythm was skill+normal attack+skill+normal attack. This tiny little detail increased the efficiency of her attacks by at least 20%. After a few attacks, Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield] only had 50% of durability left. Just when the effect of the stun was about to end, the beauty slid in front of him and quickly continued the stun with a [Gouge]. After another three strikes, his [Black Tortoise Shield] lost all of its durability!

“Shua!”

With a raise of her fair arms, [Twin Blade Harmony]!

“4417 ! ”

That stab was just too brutal. Even a top Mage couldn't withstand such a powerful strike! This was the third time Fang Ge Que died in this competition!

.....

The third round, the true final match!

In the end..... Lin Wan Er's performance was still a step slower. Under the effect of Fang Ge Que's [Lightning Abyss], her skills couldn't connect. In addition, she took the full brunt of Fang Ge Que's [Spiral Ice Dance]. Afterwards, she was hit by three successive spells, ending the fight!

Just as everyone has expected, Fang Ge Que won as the champion of [Destiny]'s Tournament!

.....

On the big screen, three IDs appeared. They were the top three finalists in the [Rise of Heroes] Tournament—

First Place: Fang Ge Que

Second Place: Cang Tong

Third Place: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

.....

“It’s finally over..... I am super exhausted.....” Lin Wan Er leaned on me and laid her head on my shoulder.

I cast a glance at her and asked, “Aren’t you sad about losing the championship?”

“Not really.....” Lin Wan Er grinned, “It’s alright. Getting second place is pretty good already. Let’s just get the prizes. We’ve already fought two days for this..... ”

“Okay!”

Chapter 345: [True Strength Arms]

Win or lose, didn't everyone fight their hardest for the sake of the reward at the end? Anyone who says otherwise is lying.

Dong Cheng Yue sat on the railings and kicked her long legs as she smiled, "Sigh. We've been fighting for so long, it has been way too exhausting. Thankfully this competition is only two days long. If it were three or five days long, we would die from exhaustion..... "

Wan Er narrowed her beautiful eyes and grinned, "Honestly, our weariness is nothing compared to that of the readers who have spent more than a month on 31 chapters just to read about a tournament. It's not that easy..... "

I coughed in response, "Be considerate and be more serious. Fei Er is going to announce the competition's rewards!"

"Okay Okay! "

.....

Fei Er stood seductively on the stage as the jaws of countless male players around the stage dropped. She held the microphone and smiled, "First of all, congratulations to the outstanding winners of the [Rise of Heroes] Tournament. The First, Second and Third place winners in this competition have finally been decided as Fang Ge Que, Lin Wan Er and Xiao Yao Zi Zai respectively. Congratulations! And now, it's the most anticipated: Reward Time! For the players ranked below 32, the system has automatically sent you your rewards. Everyone who participated in the [Rise of Heroes] Tournament will at least get some experience as a reward. Up next, it's our top 32 players raffle! To begin with, the system will teleport all players ranked between 17-32 to the stage and send the rest of the rewards out. Only the raffle needs to be operated manually. Now, the most exciting moment has arrived!

"Shua Shua Shua!"

Sixteen people were teleported onto the stage. Mu Xuan, Fushen

Thousand Blade, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Old K were among the sixteen. The huge screen presented the details of their rewards. The rewards included Charm+3, Level+1, 10000 gold coins and the lucky draw. “Shua” A ray of blue light fell on the main stage. On top of the light flashed a player’s ID— Mu Xuan! The first to participate in the lucky draw was Jiu Li City’s most beautiful woman, the big sister queen.

Holding her staff, Mu Xuan walked forward and pressed the Confirm button gently with her slender fair hands. Immediately, the numbers were quickly randomized and came to a slow stop. A light purple skill book materialized; it was an S rank AOE skill book—[Lightning Abyss]!

My Xuan was slightly taken aback. She flashed a big grin as she exclaimed, “Hey. This is a blessing in disguise! An AOE skill book! Woot!”

Afterward it was Li Mu’s turn. He pressed the button and obtained a Lv 70 Purple Tier shin guards with great stats!

Wang Jian and Fu Sheng Thousand Blade were not as lucky. They also got Purple Tier equipment, but they were incomparable to the best Purple Tier equipment today. Looks like the chances for good Purple Tier equipment really wasn’t that high. Misty Cloud, the last one, walked up the stage with his battle axe in hand and pressed the lucky draw button. A streak of light flashed across and a sinister crimson helmet hung mid-air then dropped right into Misty Cloud’s waiting hands.

Misty Cloud was astonished for a second. He stared at the attributes of the helmet happily and couldn’t stop grinning. The Emperor Tier Battle Helmet elevated the user’s attack by 17% and increased the attack speed by 12%. It also increased the probability of critical hits by 3%, one of the most prided stat for a DPS class. If you assembled high burst rate equipment like the helmet, you could have at least a 30% probability of a critical hit. With that, you could deal a critical hit every three strikes. This was especially good for high damage Berserkers like Misty Cloud, whose critical strike would almost take out any opponent’s life

.....

The raffle quickly ended. The next round was for the players ranked

between 9-16. This time, the players were on a completely different level. Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Feng Han, Yue Qing Qian, Simple, Yue Wei Liang, Song Han and the others were among the ranks. The twins cheerfully stood on the edge of the stage, smiling and talking to each other. These two girls were the kind that could destroy the world with their beauty when they grew up. Naturally, numerous people focused their attention on them.

Rewards: Charm+5, Level+1, Gold Coins+20000 and the lucky draw. Yan Zhao Warrior strode to the raffle on the stage, and pressed the Confirm button on the screen. Immediately, a string of numbers jumped and began randomizing as they slowly stopped to form a necklace. Yan Zhao Warrior glanced at it and smiled, “Well, not bad. An Emperor Tier Necklace..... ”

Jian Feng Han stood behind Yan Zhao and threw a dirty look, “Hmph. Satisfied with just an Emperor Tier Necklace. It’s really easy to please [Prague]’s Guild Master.....”

Yan Zhao faintly smiled and replied, “Happiness lies in contentment. One must be indifferent to fame and wealth. How would a naive young man like you understand such principles? ”

Jian Feng Han sneered and walked up for the raffle. Soon, a spear enveloped with an orange glow floated before him. It was a Level 70 Emperor Tier Spear with excellent attributes. Too bad he couldn’t use it; his only option was to give it to an important member under him. Would that be Vanguard’s number one Knight—Don’t Be Foolish? However, giving it to him seemed like a waste.....

Gripping her dagger, Yue Qing Qian walked forward and pressed the Confirm button. “Shua” A ray of light flashed and a purple colored skill book floated before the young beauty’s chest then dropped into her open palms. “Zhe Zhe” Another assassin skill—[Firestorm]. It was an S rank skill which ignored the opponent’s defense and increased the damage by 40%. It also has increased the probability of a critical hit by 75%. With 1.2 seconds of cast time, it consumed 20 points of energy and had a cooldown of 15 seconds.

This was a typical Assassin skill with increased damage. Those with cloth armor or leather armor would be instantly killed with just one strike. Yue Qing Qian happily learned the skill. Then it was Yue Wei Liang's turn to draw. With a wave of her hand, Emperor Tier Leather Boots appeared. Both of the twins received the best rewards of the draw and were overjoyed.

Song Han received an Emperor Tier Ring. It looks like the output rate of Emperor Tier Equipment in the ranks of 9-16 was much higher!

.....

Fri Er went on the stage again as she smiled, "And now, it's time for the Top 8 rewards. First off, let's all welcome the players ranked between 5-8 onto the stage. They are—Q-Sword, Cang Yue, Ye Lai and Drunken Spear. Welcome!

Four streaks of white light flashed across as four players appeared in the middle of the stage. The big screen presented the details of their rewards: Charm +7, Level +1.2, Gold coins +50000 and the lucky draw. Dong Cheng Yue was the first to walk toward the raffle on stage. She pressed the confirm button and pursed her lips as she put her hands together in hope that the gods would be on her side. The data began quickly moving and transformed into a scarlet red staff that dropped into her hand. Simultaneously, the big screen presented the stats of the staff. [Bloody Grip] was an Emperor Tier Quality Staff with extremely high magic attack. On top of that it was a level 70 equipment with three attributes. Dong Cheng Yue narrowed her beautiful eyes and said, "Nice. Not bad....."

Following that, it was Q-Sword's turn. As expected, another Emperor Tier necklace appeared. It increased the attack by 18% and life steal effect by 6%. These were actually the stats that Q-Sword dreamed of having. However, Q-Sword just stood on top of the stage and revealed a cold expression. Truly the attitude of an expert.

Ye Lai walked forward and swiftly pressed the button. An orange colored skill book quickly dropped in his hand—[The Consequence of Pride]. An

S rank skill book that causes one to enrage and increases the probability of critical hits by 40% for a duration of 7 seconds!

I staggered and narrowed my eyes. I exclaimed, “Damn! The damage of that flame Berserker Ye Lai is already surprisingly high. Now that he has this [The Consequence of Pride], I’m afraid our Old K will be much weaker than him.....”

Lin Wan Er nodded, “Yup. His explosive power is just too strong. With the support of some high level Healers, Ye Lai would be a God in team battles, guild wars and even battles between kingdoms!”

Misty Cloud touched the helmet on his head that he had just received and scanned the stage with a smile, “Yes. Ye Lai. Hehe.....”

The last to participate in the raffle was Drunken Spear. As soon as he received his reward, his face turned green. It was a Purple Tier Cloak. Holding the cloak in his hand, he looked at Fei Er with a pale face, “This..... aren’t you my blood sister? Why did I, alone, get a Purple Tier Equipment? I.....I can’t feel the love anymore..... ”

Fei Er chuckled and patted Drunken Spear on the shoulder, “Sorry for your loss. This was purely based on luck..... How about I give you Beauty Cang Tong’s number as compensation?”

Drunken Spear gritted his teeth and replied, “No, thanks..... Don’t think I don’t know what you’re up to, I know that it’s just Old K’s number.”

Below the stage, Old K was shocked, “Why do I get the feeling that I’m about to be extremely popular.....”

.....

Soon, the next round began. Time for the fourth place reward!

“Shua!”

The Seventh Tang stood on stage with a blank expression. Holding his iron fan, he said aloud, “Why am I alone on the stage? Why do I feel like a featherless chicken, thrown on a chopping board? This feeling..... what is it?”

Fei Er giggled, “It’s your raffle, the pitiful fourth place

The Seventh Tang pressed the button and actually received an Emperor Tier Superior weapon. It was a pity that the weapon was a long sabre that he couldn’t use. He then carried the long sabre, and went off the stage contentedly.

.....

Finally, the First, Second and Third place went on the stage together to receive their rewards!

“Shua!”

Wan Er and I walked onto the stage together as Fang Ge Que stood nearby.

Wan Er smiled at me and whispered “Are you happy now? This is the most honored podium in the Chinese server.....”

I laughed, “Actually, I’m more happy to stand here with you and be by your side..... ”

“Er..... ” Wan Er pursed her lips and blinked her eyes, as if she didn’t understand. She then grinned and said, “I know.....”

Fei Er coughed, “Okay. No lovey dovey during the rewards time. First of all, let’s welcome the third place, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, to receive the rewards!”

.....

My level had already increased by 1.5 levels and my charm increased by 9 points. On top of that I received the 100000 gold coins. The lucky draw was the the only thing left. I boldly strode forward with my Cloak of Disillusionment fluttering behind me and quickly pressed the Confirm button. The data speedily transformed into an orange colored skill book. “Pa” it dropped into my palms. The details of the skill book also appeared on the big screen—

【True Strength Arms】(SS Rank): A Passive skill that condenses strong battle power in both arms thus greatly increasing their strength. The player will be able to lift two-handed weapons in each hand. Also, the

attack of the right hand's weapon will remain 100%, but the left hand's weapon will decrease to 75%. The player's parry rate will increase by 40% and the attack speed of the player will also increase by 50%. Level Requirement: 70 Charm Requirement: 3

Lin Wan Er gaped at the skill book in my hand. She muttered, "The era of [Twin Sword Style] has truly arrived"

Fang Ge Que furrowed his eyebrows as he stared at the book without uttering a word.

Chapter 346: The Era of the Twin Sword Style

“Shua!”

The [True Strength Arms] skill vanished in my palm as another skill appeared on my skill bar. Suddenly, my arms seemed to be filled with an infinite amount of strength. I raised my hand, drew out the Emperor Qin’s Sword, and waved it softly. As expected, my strength seemed to be a lot stronger, and my attack speed also increased by quite a bit.

Wan Er searched through her bag rapidly, and with a “Shua” she took out a long, purple sword. She smiled and said, “Here, I will give you a sword first. It’s a Lv 65 Purple Tier weapon. Although it’s a bit lacking, you can change it yourself later....”

I nodded and smiled, “Thanks, Wan Er!”

I opened my left hand, then tightened my grip on the Purple Tier sword. In coordination with the Emperor Qin’s Sword in my right hand, “Shua shua shua”, I slashed the air three times in succession. Three afterimages of my sword overlapped in the air. One simple attack had been enough for me to comprehend this sword’s movement.

Fang Ge Que looked at me clearly and finally said, “Looks like....the close range combat structure in the Chinese servers will undergo a tremendous change with this simple skill book. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you truly are terrifying.....”

I smiled and turned toward him, “You’re very terrifying as well. I completely concede defeat!”

Fang Ge Que couldn’t help but laugh, “If life is like a boat going against a current, then victory or defeat can never be determined. You have to keep working hard. As soon as you’ve surpassed a ton of people, more people will be trying to surpass you.”

I nodded. This Fang Ge Que was able to climb to the top of the chinese server, so he couldn’t be an ordinary person. It was evident that he truly

was on a completely separate level compared to Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han, whether in terms of skills or experience.

.....

Next were the second place winner's rewards: Charm +12, Lv +2, +200000 gold coins.... After getting all these rewards, Wan Er went up to the raffle counter. Snow-white fingers lightly began to count, and with a, "Shua", the exact values flew up. The next moment, the digits condensed to form a hovering, frosty sword. At the same time, the long sword's stats appeared on the screen in the main arena—

【Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword】 (Valkyrie Tier)

Attack: 1320-1750

Strength: +72

Stamina: +70

Agility: +68

Bonus: Increases the user's attack power by 19%

Bonus: Increases the user's splash damage by 10%

Bonus: [Ice Spin]. Upon hitting the target, there's a 30% chance of inflicting 40% slow for 1.5 seconds

Level requirement: 72

Introduction: Legends say that the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword was originally an ancient deity weapon. Thousands of years ago, the owner of the Cold Iron Sword was killed in the Battle of the God Realm, and the sword was lost in the deep sea ever since. After thousands of years, the Cold Iron Sword absorbed an endless amount of penetratingly cold power from the deep sea, finally giving birth to this new blade.

.....

I was shocked. "Finally.... A Valkyrie Tier weapon...."

Wan Er held the Cold Iron Sword, and inspected it with her beautiful eyes. With a smile, she said, "It's a shame that it's not a dagger. I wanted

a Valkyrie Tier weapon too, but Assassins don't have enough strength to equip long swords. If I were to add strength to hold the sword, I'd become a useless Assassin....."

Saying that, she tossed the sword over to me and smiled. "Heh, I'll give this to you! You can use two swords now, so you're still missing one..."

I was surprised. "How can I take this? This is a Valkyrie Tier weapon. There aren't many Valkyrie Tier items in the whole server. How can you carelessly give it away....."

"I...." Wan Er's eyes looked complicated. "I'm giving you a virtual weapon. Does that count as carelessly giving something away?"

I stood there, unsure of how to reply.

"Bang"

Wan Er fiercely tossed the sword at the area in front of me. The sword struck the stage, and sent rocks flying. She looked at me and smiled in high spirits, "I don't care. I'm giving you this sword, so don't you dare reject it!"

I stared blankly for a bit before I reached out for the sword. The owner of the sword changed and I smiled, "Thanks, Wan Er. I'll think of a way to repay you for this!"

"Mhm. I'll be waiting for it...."

"Okay!"

.....

With a "keng" sound, the Cold Iron Sword returned to its sheath. Now, with two long swords hidden behind my cloak, my other stats had increased exponentially. However, my attack power hadn't increased at all. The 2nd sword's attack didn't stack. Instead, every time I attacked, the attack power would depend on which sword I used, and only the auxiliary attributes would be shared.

Wan Er giving me the sword caused the spectators to start gossiping about my relationship with her. However, this wasn't anything big; I was

already used to it!

A few minutes later, it was the first place's turn to receive his award. Fang Ge Que went up onto the stage, and drew his item from the raffle. Instantly, a bright bamboo-colored necklace landed on his palm. When the stats of the necklace were revealed on the screen, everyone became speechless. Damn, the prize for 1st place was indeed not lacking at all—

【Moon Feather Necklace】 (Saint Tier)

Magic: +90

Endurance: +87

Agility: +85

Bonus: Increases the user's magic attack by 24%

Bonus: Increases the user's health by 1500.

Bonus: Cooldown reduction by 25%

Special Skill: [Moon Feather]. Calls forth the power of the moon. Gather the power of the Moon's feathers to attack an area of 200M x 200M. Consumes 100 rage points.

Required Level: 75

.....

Fang Ge Que waved his arm and quickly switched necklaces, the Moon Feather Necklace appeared on his neck. It was the first Saint Tier item, and its stats could definitely be said to have the ability to overturn the heavens, especially with that special skill!

Wan Er pursed her lips and messaged me “In the future, [Zhan Long] can provoke anyone, but it'd be best not to provoke [Legend]. That weapon of Fang Ge Que's is terrifying in a guild war, since it can destroy anything within a 200 yard radius. Under the right conditions, it could instantly kill thousands of people without a problem. This kind of enemy is too frightening.....”

I nodded, “Don't worry, there were never any grudges between me and

Fang Ge Que. [Zhan Long] wouldn't go as far as to provoke [Legend]. Besides, [Legend] is in Jiu Li City, while we are in Ba Huang City. There's no way we'd end up fighting each other."

"Ok, that's fine then...."

.....

At that moment, Fei Er held the microphone up and pleasantly smiled as she announced, "Well, the [Rise of Heroes] Tournament is drawing to a close. Thank you to all the players that gave us this wonderful competition! This game was broadcasted live to you by ZGTV Single Line Webcast. Everyone has been fighting or watching this competition for the entire day today, so I'm sure you're all very tired already. Everyone should go take a shower and sleep now. This was Fei Er bringing you every detail about the [Rise of the Heroes] competition. Goodbye, and see you guys at the next major event in [Destiny]! Everyone, please follow ZGTV where every week we have celebrity interviews. This week's broadcast will be an interview with Beauty Cang Tong and Xia Yao Zi Zai. Don't miss it!"

Finally, the [Rise of Heroes] site gradually blurred. Soon, we were all transferred outside and were immediately transported to some random corner of Ba Huang City!

"Shua!"

I appeared outside the large church. In the distance, I could see Ba Huang City's new army recruit training ground. There were many stone figures locked into place to become practice dummies, and their surfaces were mottled with traces of cuts.

I took a step forward and raised my hand to pull out the Emperor Qin's Sword and the Cold Iron Sword, one in each hand. I was able to reach an extremely high degree of proficiency in the Twin Sword Style with almost no practice. I could easily use my comprehension of swordplay from real life. In reality, this game was extremely realistic. Something that had originally just been a player's wish eventually had become a game that one could put their hearts into. It was precisely due to this reason that I could also sense that my mastery of Royal Air had become stronger and

stronger recently. This had far surpassed my cultivation speed before. It was evident that [Destiny] definitely wasn't simply a mere online game; in terms of cultivation, [Destiny] was another cultivation space that could boost both one's abilities in the game, as well as their real-life strength.

“Shua!”

The blade pierced outward, and with a, “Keng”, it slashed at the stone person. My other hand quickly swept the Cold Iron Sword forward as my dominant hand strongly slashed down once more. The two blades danced in the air, and within a second, split into 5 blades. I was slightly stunned at the sight; this had already surpassed the game's boundaries. In my memories, a blade-type weapon's attack speed was about 1.5 seconds per attack. My dual swords should at most take only 1 or 2 seconds. However, it had unexpectedly materialized 5 blades in an instant as well. In reality, many people would flee at the mere sight of my normal attack alone. With the addition of my skills and the Twin Sword Style I was undoubtedly much more powerful!

“Peng!”

A loud sound rang out as the firm stone was cut in half by me, just like that. Bits of the stone flew about as I stood there calmly with a sword in each hand, gradually understanding the essence of the Twin Sword Style. After a few seconds passed, I opened my eyes and discovered that a few players were pointing at me from a distance, seemingly discussing something. Whatever, I don't know them!

“Ding.” A message came from Wan Er, “It's almost 8. Come out to eat dinner?”

“Okay, wait for me!” I replied.

“Okay, okay!”

.....

After getting offline, I changed into a set of clean clothes and went downstairs. I picked up the two girls from the girl dorms, and went to The Merry Bard for some ramen.

In the second cafeteria, each of us had a bowl of ramen along with a few side dishes. When you're starving, noodles really are the best.

After eating, Dong Cheng took out her phone and looked at it for a while. She pouted and said, "Why hasn't it refreshed yet?"

"Refreshed what, Dong Cheng?" I asked

Dong Cheng refreshed the page once more and said, "An hour after the [Rise of the Heroes] tournament, the CBN Battlemaster Ranking charts were supposed to be updated. This time, you and Wan Er will greatly affect the rankings, so I want to see how many ranks our Brother Xiao Yao went up by after getting third place."

I smiled, "Ah. So that's what it was....."

On the side, Wan Er put her phone on the table and said, "It's out. Li Xiao Yao is ranked 17 on the CBN Battlemaster Ranking list. He went up by 5 ranks, not bad. Dong Cheng, you're rank 19. You were surpassed by this fellow....."

"Ah?"

I walked over with Dong Cheng Yue and looked at Wan Er's phone. The CBN Battlemaster Ranking's top 20 rankings were displayed—

1. Feng Ge Que
2. Q-Sword
3. Little Demon
4. Bai Li Ruofeng
5. Jian Feng Han
6. Cang Tong
7. Mu Xuan
8. Simple
9. Yan Zhao Warrior
10. Death Contract

11. Ye Lai
12. Wild Beauty
13. The Seventh Tang
14. Lu Chun Yang
15. Xuan Yuan Feng
16. Quick Thunder Swift Wind
17. Xiao Yao Zi Zai
18. Yue Qing Qian
19. Cang Yue
20. Babel Buddha

Chapter 347: Reluctant Return

“Eh..... ”

I looked at the rankings on my phone and licked my lips before saying, “I’m ranked 17th now. I rose pretty quickly, much faster than I would ever have imagined. I didn’t even think that I would get into the top 20.....”

Wan Er stuck out her tongue and giggled, “Whatever. My ranking also went up. I’ve gone from being ranked 9th to 6th..... ”

Dong Cheng Yue threw her hands in the air and said, “Woot! I’ve finally made it into the top 20 too, that was way too hard. Wait, now that I think about it, there are actually three players ranked in the top 20 of the Chinese Server’s CBN [Destiny] Battle sitting at this small table. If anybody else saw this, they might shit bricks.....”

I stared at my phone and asked, “Fang Ge Que’s place at rank 1 will be pretty hard to steal. Likewise, Q-Sword’s spot, at rank 2, is pretty much solidified where it is. So who’s this Little Demon, and why haven’t I heard of this person before?”

Wan Er pursed her red lips together and chuckled gently, “Little Demon is [Legend]’s Vice Guild Master. She was ranked second in the game Conquest and her name was placed higher than Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han. She is also the creator of the Pulse Break Style and a Grand Master class player. However, Little Demon’s name isn’t well known here. She didn’t even enter games like [Destiny]. Something must have happened in real life; maybe she went to study abroad or something. Maybe that is why her ID doesn’t appear in the Chinese server. Although, her past achievements are so great that even if she didn’t enter [Destiny], she is still ranked third in CBN Battlenet Rankings.....”

I nodded, “I’ve seen the strength of the rank 4, Bai Li Ruofeng. He’s very strong and specializes in long-ranged attacks, something that is extremely effective during group battles. On top of that, his burst strength is a lot higher than our guild’s Dancing Forest. He’s also the Guild Master of [House of Prestige]. I don’t know whether he will be a

friend or foe in the future.”

Lin Wan Er ordered another 3 drinks and smiled, “He’s probably not our enemy. Bai Li Ruofeng isn’t a bad person. At least he won’t seek revenge for the smallest offense like Jian Feng Han. As long as [Zhan Long] doesn’t actively try to provoke them, [House of Prestige] might even become our ally when the three big cities converge in the future....”

“Yea.” I cast a glance at the ranks and said, “Ye Lai, the Guild Master of [Judgement], is a rather candid and blunt person. Hehe, I like it; we might even become allies in the future.”

“Yea, He seemed to have a good impression of you too..... ”

“That’s good.....”

I took a deep breath and stared outside the window. “[Zhan Long],” I mused, “still has a long way to go. For now, it’ll be a fight for the championship within Ba Huang City. And perhaps once all the players’ levels reach a certain point, Tian Ling City, the largest main city in the region of China Server, will open its gates. At that point, every guild will send their main forces to transplant themselves in this extraordinary city. That time will truly be when the heroes rise.”

.....

We sauntered beside the parterre after we left the restaurant. Wan Er carefully walked in her heels on the bricks that surrounded the parterre. She placed her hand on my shoulder while she drunkenly wobbled. Feeling the warmth on my shoulder, a burst of happiness filled my heart. I hoped this path would never end.

* <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Parterre>

But it did, as we arrived below the girl’s dorm soon after. I gazed at Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue as they went upstairs.

I raised my head and stared at the room of the very floor, of the building that they slept in. I knew I didn’t belong here; I was just a passerby. But deep down in my heart, I wished I could stand here much longer and be by her side. I hoped I could stop wandering and wait for her here

everyday; even if she is the daughter of the Tian Xin group CEO and I am just a worthless young man.

I stood downstairs for nearly ten minutes. Suddenly, Wan Er's dorm room curtains opened, and she stood there gazing at me who was downstairs.

“Di!”

My phone rang; it was a message that said, “Why aren't you going back yet?”

I stared dumbly at my phone. I didn't know how to respond. As I raised my head and looked back upstairs, I saw Wan Er standing cheerfully with her hands on her knees beside the floor-to-ceiling window. She then started to make a mock angry motion at me. As her long hair cascaded over her shoulders, she suddenly puckered her lips and kissed the glass of the floor-to-ceiling window.

“Di!”

My phone rang again, “Okay. Are you satisfied now? Now go to sleep. Idiot.....”

Even I became a bit embarrassed. I lowered my head and then lifted it up once more as I glanced at her again. I then replied to her message, “I am going back then.”

“Okay.”

I left reluctantly. My feet felt unusually heavy, like they were filled with lead, unwilling to leave this spot.

.....

Early the next morning, rain fell gently upon the school.

Holding a pile of textbooks and an umbrella, I arrived under the girl's dorm to fetch Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. There was compulsory class this morning. Without the audacity to skip the class, I could only suffer through the morning. It was an early autumn morning and the light rain gave a lonely feeling. Wan Er wore a short skirt, brown shoes

and held her books as she rushed downstairs with a smile. She held my arms and hid under my umbrella.

Dong Cheng Yue walked toward us with an umbrella. Slightly shocked, she asked, “Why..... Why am I holding an umbrella all by myself?”

I replied, “This umbrella only has room for two people, so be quiet..... ”

Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head and looked at Wan Er, laughing dryly she commented “I see someone’s finally succeeded, isn’t that right?”

Lin Wan Er tidied her books and responded in surprise, “What could you possibly be talking about? How come I don’t get what you mean?”

“Humph. You keep pretending!”

“Tee hee! ”

After breakfast, we went straight to the classroom. Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue listened to the teacher, while I earnestly copied their homework. Dong Cheng Yue stretched her neck and looked at me. “Hey. If you keep copying like this, aren’t you afraid that Wan Er and I would make mistakes in our homework?”

I took a deep breath and replied, “The basic principle of copying homework is to never doubt whether it’s right or wrong!”

“You truly have potential.....”

After struggling for a whole morning, the class finally ended. After lunch, I returned to my dorm and went online.

.....

“Shua! ”

My character appeared in Ba Huang City. I speedily went to repair all my equipment and replenished my potions. “Yes, there’s nothing else left on my schedule.” I thought to myself before proceeding to rush my Lv 8 alchemy. But, before I even left the city, I heard someone yell loudly, “Level 8 alchemy herbs Eye-Catching Grass! a batch of 100 for only 20G!

I thought to myself “Damn! Someone’s already selling Lv 8 herbs?

Perfect! I will buy them immediately, then there's no need for me to gather the herbs myself."

I arrived before the group of sellers. After bargaining crazily, I bought all the herbs and also an adequate number of alchemy furnaces. I then remained in the city to grind my alchemy. In about an hour, I heard a "Ding". My alchemy had been rushed to Lv 9 and I was able to refine Lv 9 pills now. Level 9 pills were still considered high level items; at least no one was able to sell batches of those pills right now. I opened the alchemy skills list, and the formula for Lv 9 pills appeared before my eyes.

[Spirit Recovering Pill]: Recovers 1500 points of mana. Ingredients: Spirit Recovering Grass×3, Eye-Catching Grass×1, Alchemy Furnaces×6.

Yes. I just need Spirit Recovering Grass. If I could gather that, I could rush my alchemy to Lv 10.

I searched online for the herbs, yet the forums didn't have any details about Spirit Recovering Grass, but I did find a few posts—

[Help] Where is Spirit Recovering Grass located? Why hasn't anyone seen it?

[Help] All the alchemists stopped leveling up at Lv 9. Is it possible that [Destiny] did not design the Lv 9 herbs?

[Help] Paying a high price for the location of Spirit Recovering Grass. Any insiders, please contact me. Will definitely pay a high price for information!

.....

I spent half a day inquiring, but there were still no results. I didn't find any information. Desperately, I checked my friend list. As I had many powerful and strange friends, there was a chance that I might have been able to obtain some information this way. Unfortunately, Yue Qing Qian, Li Mu and the others had no clue where the Lv 9 herbs were located.

At the end of my search, the ID 'Head of Medicine King Vale' caught my eyes. Yes. This person must be the one. This level 50+ uncle didn't

have a high level, but he possessed a super high alchemy level and was also an herb gatherer. He had traveled throughout the forests and waters of Ba Huang City, so perhaps he might be able to answer my question!

“Di!”

I sent a message, “Hello, Uncle Guild Master.....

After a few seconds, I received a message. “Hello! [Rise of Heroes] Third Place little Bro.”

I burst out laughing. This Uncle had some sense of humor. I sent him another message, “I have a question, and I would like to consult you. I just don’t know if Uncle is available.....

“What is it? Just ask.”

“Uncle, you’ve traveled throughout the maps of Ba Huang City and gathered herbs in countless precarious areas. Do you know the main locations of the herbs needed for the Lv 9 Alchemy?

“There’s really only a few locations.....” After waiting for a long half minute, he sent another message. “I spent almost a week to find the ingredients for the Lv 9 Alchemy skill. It is located in the badlands, north west of Ba Huang City. The map’s name is called.....hmm. It’s called ‘[Icy Forest Graveyard]’ because of its abundance of high leveled undead. Recently, the map had refreshed a few times. Now the monsters are probably at an even higher level. Common people won’t be able to go. I’ve only secretly gathered a few Lv 9 Spirit Recovering Grass around that area. As for the Spirit Recovering Grass that you need for your alchemy skill, I don’t know if there are any inside the area. However, I believe that the same level herbs might grow together so there might be the Spirit Recovering Grass that you need in the heart of the [Icy Forest Graveyard].”

I was overwhelmed with joy and nodded, “Yes. Thanks you Uncle. I owe you a big favor!”

“Haha. It’s nothing. There’s no need to be so courteous. If I was bullied by any guild in the future, Zhan Long can just get revenge for me and that

would be enough.....”

“Deal!”

.....

I focused on my target, the [Icy Forest Graveyard]. The map was easy to find. It was located to the north of the [Green Qilin Valley]. It was a desolate and remote region that required at least an hour of travel for any player. However, due to my Divine Battle Boots, I could probably get there a bit faster.

I set off after preparing everything I needed. The destination was locked for [Icy Graveyard]. My two swords, the Emperor Qin’s Sword and the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword, rested in a cross against my back. The weapons both shined with menacing light and against my high rank equipment, they gave me the appearance of a mighty warrior. I summoned my Flaming Tiger God to complete the look of pure sovereignty.

I quickly sped past the [Green Qilin Valley], receiving greetings from many members of the [Zhan Long]’s main guild, and the first sub guild, who were training in the valley. I was also greeted by a few others there who knew me. Soon, I continued deeper into the forest, flying past the trees after the activation of [Camouflage]. Ten minutes later, I appeared before an enormous valley. It was bone-chillingly cold, and icy winds continuously howled. The weather of the valley was unlike that of the outside. In the distance the sky was gray, and heavy snow fell into the valley. It was like the snowy [Dragon City], half a meter of snow had already covered the ground.

“Cha Cha.....”

My Divine Battle Boots stepped onto the snow, making a sweet crunching sound.

I wrapped myself with the red scarf at the collar of my battle robes and left for the valley to become the first to obtain the Level 10 Alchemy skill for that precious charm stat!

Chapter 348: Spirit Recovering Pill

Snow was falling from the sky as I entered the Icy Forest Graveyard, a cold, barren wasteland. Feathery flakes of snow landed on my armor and even descended upon my eyelashes. Following like a docile kitty, the Flaming Tiger God emitted a deep growl by my side. Of course, even though it seemed quite demure, my Flaming Tiger God would no longer be so docile once it starts attacking.

Nearby, a slender snow white feline stepped forward. The Snow Cat was a Lv 75 Phantom Tier monster with extremely high physical damage and attack speed to top it off. “That’s why no one was willing to come in this Icy Forest Graveyard. The difficulty of grinding for levels here is too high. Once you die, you’d have wasted the entire day of training. Obviously no one wanted to come here,” I mused.

The Snow Cat purred softly, and an icy figure appeared above. Its sharp claws came down as I dashed directly forward. “Keng! Keng!” I drew my swords and struck before the Snow Cat could attack. A majestic aura enveloped both swords as they lashed out in four consecutive strikes. The Snow Cat howled in pain as it was knocked backwards. Simultaneously, four damage numbers appeared—

“2873 ! ”

“2422 ! ”

“2839 ! ”

“2238 ! ”

It was clear that the Emperor Qin’s Sword in my right hand caused higher damage. At the same time, a thought came to me, and I activated the skill—[Combo]LV-8!

I launched five extremely fast successive strikes with my sword. It was a lot swifter than the strikes made by the [Combo] I had used before; the five blows landed in an instant. The Snow Cat let out a yelp before collapsing to the ground. In reality, it was only able to launch one hit

before getting instantly killed by me.

I stood silently in the snow and gazed at the swords in my grasp. Resting in my right hand, the light of the [Wind Blade] shook the Emperor Qin's Sword; in my left, the glow of [Fierce Ice Sword] entombed the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword. Tsk. Tsk. As expected, so long as my [Yi Hai] remains calm enough, I can utilize two different skills at the same time, thus allowing me to greatly reduce the delay between activating two skills simultaneously. Such an ability would be especially useful against expert opponents like Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han. If I could activate two skills at the same time, the chance of my opponent dodging or blocking two consecutive attacks is much lower.

I felt a rush of excitement as I aimed at my next target. Not too far away there was another Snow Cat. With a wave of my arms, my left sword sent out an [Ice Blade] while my right sword slashed with a [Wind Blade]!

“3628 ! ”

“4129 ! ”

I followed up with a chain of normal attacks, making the Snow Cat wail as it died. Hehe, the damage is just too terrifying. Even my Flaming Tiger God didn't have the chance to attack.

After picking up the silver coins that dropped, I threw them into my bag as I continued walking while carefully observing my surroundings. As I had expected, these small silver flowers that gave off a touching sense of reflection were the Eye-Catching Grass, a Lv 8 herb. Not letting this chance pass up, I dug up each and every one of them. This way, I was able to grind my harvesting skills, or else I'd have no way of harvesting Lv 10 herbs.

Not far ahead, I suddenly discovered a line of graves. Although they were covered by heavy snow, the outlines of each grave was clear. As I strode forward, I could hear a low growl come from the graves. In the next moment, "BANG!" a bloody hand broke through the snow, followed by an almost completely decayed head. The sinister face would make anyone throw up. Just like that, it rose up from its grave and charged right at me.

“Wah.....”

I quickly shut my mouth and began gathering strength in both of my arms. The two blades began intertwining as they created multiple afterimages. The Zombie cried out as it flung its arms in the air and jumped at me. At that moment my left arm reflexively lifted my Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword, “Pa!” I easily blocked the attack. Just as I expected, the probability of a successful block from my secondary sword arm was extremely high. Along with a player’s own maneuvering the probability of success would further increase. On top of that, I was already an expert in swordsmanship in reality. The Twin Sword Style was also very capable in the art of blocking. Thanks to this, my maneuverability had greatly improved.

After cutting down that Zombie, I picked the Eye-Catching Grass on top of its grave and continued forward. That Spirit Recovering Grass must be deeper in the Ice Forest Graveyard.

In the end, I was able to grind my harvesting skills while casually picking up these herbs. After around two hours, I heard a “Ding.” My Harvesting skill was now Lv 9, and my bag had a bunch of Eye-Catching Grass. As I continued further, I noticed that the graves were becoming more and more dense. I was aggroing 3-5 different Lv 75 zombies at the same time. On the bright side, I had my little tiger to support me. Along with my 10% lifesteal effect, I could solo 8-10 zombies at once without a problem.

I hacked and slashed a bloody path through the mass of monsters, leaving a trail of black blood splattered across the white snow. I walked for about 10 minutes and as I had expected, a great valley appeared in front of me. In reality, it was just a big graveyard where huge crowds of zombies covered the entire map. At the other end of the valley there was an entrance to a cave dripping with shiny, crimson blood. On top of that, the entire map was dyed blood-red. The fact that it was crimson was basically telling me that the area was extremely dangerous. For a map to be dangerous for someone at my level meant that there was a high level BOSS hiding. Yup, it’s possible that there are even Lv 9 herbs in there!

After scanning the map, I determined the course of my attack; I cleared out a path for myself from the canyon of the valley. That way I could save some time, since Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City have similar maps, it was possible that I wasn't the only one looking for Spirit Recovering Grass. Whoever is the first to find Spirit Recovering Grass, will be the one to obtain the charm for being the first to create a Lv 9 pill. The reward for doing so definitely wouldn't be too small.

“Sha sha.....”

After slicing my Emperor Qin's Sword into the canyon, and using my Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword to maintain my balance, I pushed myself and slid down the icy canyon. My little tiger roared and closely followed me. After sliding down 100 meters, I regained my balance at the bottom of the canyon. By then, 11 zombies had already come roaring in my direction. I quickly retreated a step and opened one hand, activating [Black Tortoise Realm] and forming the [Soul Army]. Then, with a raise of my arm, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] right into the crowd.

Using my primary arm to cut, I was able to have a higher attack. My secondary hand gripped the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword as it made a sweeping slice and knocked away the first zombie. Taking a step forward, I smoothly advanced and let my swords dance as I swiftly cut down the first zombie into a gory pile of meat and bones. By the time it died, it looked as though someone had cut all of its meat off its bones and all that was left was its bony frame. Even I couldn't help but take in a deep breath of cold air. F*ck, I never thought that the Twin Sword Style would be this powerful.

In addition to my attacks, Flaming Tiger God activated [Burstfire Raid]. With a sorrowful cry, the zombies dropped one by one. I lost almost half my health under the barrage from the zombies. I was able to use [Heal] and 10% lifesteal to pull my health back up. Even though I could see the blood from the zombies turn into my own strength, it made me feel sick as I watched my body absorb the blood from these disgusting zombies. But then again, it made me feel better knowing it was just a game....

.....

I slowly cleared the monsters as I walked around the border of the valley to the other end. At the same time, I noticed that the respawn rate of the monsters were really fast. It only took around 60 minutes for them to respawn. This wasn't a bad thing for me. Even if someone comes after me, they won't be able to clear the mobs easily. These Level 75 Phantom Tier monsters were no joke. Normal players could definitely not beat them. Of course, if Fan Ge Que or Q-Sword or even Jian Feng Han brings a squad over, then I won't do anything but extend my arms, closes my eyes and say, "Brothers, come kill me. I've done wrong. The BOSS is yours....."

After killing for around 2 hours, I finally reached the cave entrance. Even after killing so much, I only received 7% of my experience bar. Leveling up after Lv 70 is so hard. Unless it was a SS Class server mission or a massive event, there was no way I could quickly level up.

.....

After clearing out the zombies at the entrance, I healed myself up and entered the cave with my Flaming Tiger God. When I stepped into the cave, I began shivering. It was really cold! If the outside was like a refrigerator, then the cave would be a freezer!

"Ding!"

[System Notice]: You have entered a Sinister Map – Cave of the Dead King

Layers of frost appeared on my brows. I waved my sword around, using the flames on its blade to melt the ice. After walking a little further with Flaming Tiger God, I noticed a golden flower growing on the walls. After looking carefully, I realized that it was the Spirit Returning Grass that I've been looking for. I've finally found the Lv 9 alchemy ingredient!

Even if the Dead King is here, I'll just harvest these for now!

I took out my medicine shovel and started digging—

"Ding!"

System Notice: Congratulations. You have obtained [Spirit Recovering Grass] x4. Herb Gathering Proficiency +9!

.....

Continuing on, I dug out the remaining dozens of Spirit Recovering Grass from the wall. After that, I stood in the Dead King Cave and started to refine the pills. After using up six alchemy furnaces, I'd finally completed the first Lv 9 Medicine Pill.

"Ding!"

System Notice: Congratulations. You have obtained [Spirit Recovering Pill] x2!

After that, another bell resounded. This was the sound that I was waiting for.

"Ding!"

System Notice: Congratulations. You are the first player to refine the [Spirit Recovering Pill]. Reward: Charm +7

.....

Hehe. Charm +7. It seems like I didn't come here for nothing.

After venturing deeper and killing the small mobs on the side, my bag became filled with Spirit Recovering Grass. I had collected around 2000 strands already! However, I felt that something was off. Since entering the cave, I hadn't felt even the slightest movement from the BOSS. As I continued, I found a fresh pair of bones at the end of the cave. God damnit! Who killed the boss before me....?

Opening the forums, I searched for Dead King Cave and felt relieved. There was a stickied post about guild activities.

[Activity] Jiu Li City's [Legend] guild will enter the Icy Forest Graveyard this afternoon. The target, Dead King Cave's Dead King!

.....

This was a post from 4 days ago. This meant that they've searched the map already. The Spirit Recovering Grass was only a recent addition to the system so the [Legend] players who killed the BOSS did not find them. However, I missed out on the BOSS after finding the Spirit Recovering

Grass. Talk about fate.....

At the same time, Old K sent a message in the guild chat, "Is there anyone near Icy Forest Graveyard?"

I quickly replied, "I'm here. What's the matter?"

Old K said, "Our First Division has 20 people leveling in the Icy Forest Graveyard and they were attacked by members of [Mass Burial]. They have around 100 people. We're planning to send a group over to teach them a lesson.

I couldn't help but smile and looked towards the cave entrance, "No need to send a group. I'll go over!"

Old K laughed, "Okay. Based on your abilities, it shouldn't be a problem. I'll let Wang Jian bring a group of 100 over to explore the map while they're at it. You should be careful. These [Mass Burial] members are all the elites of their guild.

"Don't Worry!"

I held my sword and walked towards the cave's entrance. After struggling to climb back out, I looked towards the direction of the snowy valley. That was the place that Qing Qian mentioned. It's not too far from me. It'll probably take me ten minutes to get there.

Chapter 349: Solo Exploration

In the Icy Forest Graveyard, a blizzard manifested.

As I traveled through the Icy Forest Graveyard with my Flaming Tiger God, a cluster of red dots appeared on the map. It seems like our intel was wrong. It looked like there were closer to 200 enemies, instead of the 100 previously reported. They were clearly all from [Zhan Long]'s enemy guilds. In reality, [Zhan Long] didn't have many enemies, only [Hero Mound's First Division] and [Mass Burial] amongst some others.

I lifted my sword and ran through the deep forest. After a few minutes, I came out of the forest into an open area. To my surprise, a large group of [Mass Burial] members were surrounding and attacking a few people. They were all wearing [Zhan Long's First Division] badge. Their levels weren't too high, around 61-65. One of the level 65 Berserkers was especially angry. With one axe strike, he killed an enemy Archer without even letting him shoot an arrow. He turned around and yelled, "Come on. Let's see how many times you can kill us. I'll trade a level for a level anyday. Breaking Dawn, protect Rainy. Kill as many as you can!"

This Berserker's qualities weren't bad. With his battle axe, he broke through attacks and killed another [Mass Burial] member, allowing me to see his stats above his head.

Wong Jiang Lv 65 Golden Berserker

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: [Zhan Long's First Division]

Position: Chief

.....

Wong Jiang lifted his battle axe and with a swing of his axe, he cut apart two Knights. Suddenly he was hit with around 7-8 arrows. His health disappeared as he stabbed his axe into the ground, "Shit. My health is dropping too fast. At this rate I'm going down again. You guys be careful!"

Behind Wong Jiang, a female Mage around 20 years old, activated [Indigo Sea Arrow] and killed an Archer. She followed up with [Pillar of Fire and Ice] and [Chilling Wind Spell]. This time she killed a Musketeer. Her ID was Rainy. I vaguely remembered her. She was an expert recruited by Wang Jian to join First Division. Not bad, having this kind of magic attack showed that she wasn't any average Mage.

From the group of [Mass Burial] members, someone walked out of the fray. It was [Mass Burial]'s Guild Master, Not Ordinary. He lifted his axe and smiled, "I didn't think that [Zhan Long's First Division]'s weaklings would actually have someone like this. Hehe. It really gets me going. Brothers, let's go and kill these people. Let's send them to reunite with their friends in the graveyard. Kill that Rainy first. Don't let her do too much damage to us."

As he said that, Not Ordinary rushed forward with his axe. After dodging Wong Jiang's attack, he fiercely rushed towards Rainy.

"Keng!"

With a loud sound, Rainy's [Mana Shield] wore off. After quickly retreating, she used her ice magic to attack. Not Ordinary continued his barrage, but was parried by a level 63 Knight called Breaking Dawn. Breaking Dawn had already activated [Share Damage] on Rainy and a red aura surrounded Rainy. During the duration of this, all the damage Rainy received would be transferred onto Breaking Dawn. It was a special protection skill of a Knight.

"Bah!"

A group leader of [Mass Burial] spat on the ground, then smiled, "You guys want to defend against all the elites of [Mass Burial] with just you three? In your dreams! Let's all attack together and kill them quickly. We still have to go venture deep into the Graveyard. Don't let these [Zhan Long's First Division] trash stand in our way!"

.....

"Keng Keng Keng....."

After being continuously attacked, Wong Jiang and Breaking Dawn retreated. They simply couldn't hold on. It looked as though their opponents were playing with their prey. They could obviously end the battle and kill them, but the opposing Swordsmen continued to torture them. Wong Jiang and Breaking Dawn's health were quickly dropping. It seemed like they couldn't keep up anymore.

"Die!"

[Mass Burial]'s Lv 66 group leader, "Youyi" fiercely struck Breaking Dawn's shield, sending him back a few steps. Youyi continued to fiercely kick him backwards, then looked at him with a cruel smirk and said, "Is [Zhan Long] really that strong? You noobs who only know how to follow the strong actually think that you'll find protection after you join [Zhan Long's First Division]? Let me tell you this, I don't believe in that shit. We [Mass Burial] will rub [Zhan Long]'s tiger ass all we want. Let me tell you this, [Zhan Long] is only a weak mob and Xiao Yao Zi Zai is an idiot who only knows how to hug Cang Tong's legs. Just keep hiding in [Zhan Long] until you die!"

Wong Jiang was infuriated and chugged down a 3000 health potion. He activated [Flame Axe] and [Skyshaker Slash], causing Youyi to stumble back. Wong Jiang's young face twisted into an enraged expression, "Bullshit! We didn't join [Zhan Long] to beg for their protection. We joined [Zhan Long] because the Guild Master respects each and every one of us; they make us feel like we are a big family. [Zhan Long] will never lose to a trash guild like yours!"

"Shua Shua Shua!"

A ray of holy light appeared as a group of Healers behind Youyi healed him quickly. He pointed his sword at Wong Jiang and laughed, "Too bad for you, the only ending for you guys is lying on the ground like dead dogs Nothing will change this outcome...."

As he finished talking, Youyi rushed forward with a series of attacks. Wong Jiang was in a critical state again!

"Katcha...."

Sitting down with a thud behind a tree, Wong Jiang grabbed his axe with a defiant face and said, “Breaking Dawn, protect Rainy. We’ll keep on fighting.... keep on fighting.....”

“Poor insects..... I almost feel too guilty stepping on all of you.....” Youyi swung his sword and activated [Skyslayer Slash]. This was going to be a fatal blow!

Wong Jiang was in critical state, his skills were all on cooldown, and his pet has already been killed. Even though there was no hope at all, he kept his eyes open. With his clear eyes, he stared at the members of [Mass Burial] and said, “Come on. You dumb [Mass Burial] members. Let’s see how you’ll kill me. One day, your daddy, I, will lead a group of brothers and return the favor by ten fold.....”

“Shua!”

“+1200 ! ”

A fierce light appeared and Wong Jiang’s health raised. This was a third advancement Healer’s Lv 8 heal!

“Huh?”

Wong Jiang, Breaking Dawn, and Rainy all lifted their heads. At this moment, a glimmer of hope flashed in their eyes, especially in Rainy’s who was unable to do anything. She shuddered and almost cried as she stuttered, “Xiao Yao..... Zi Zai..... The Guild Master. Our Guild Master is here. Guild Master is here.....”

“Bang!”

Coming out from the snow, I cast [Haste] to increase my speed. With my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword, I landed three strikes on Youyi’s chest.

“2461 ! ”

“2726 ! ”

“2747 ! ”

Youyi’s reactions were not too slow as he chugged down a Lv 9 potion in

between. His face became twisted as he looked at me, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai! Shit! Why is he here?!?”

I clenched my fists and said, “Bullying members of my [Zhan Long], you’ll be punished!”

“Boom!”

[Great Realm of Desolation] exploded and pierced through Youyi’s body, dealing a great amount of damage.

“9024 ! ”

.....

As Youyi fell, his face still showed signs of shock, “Fuck. Xiao Yao Zai Zai is here..... Brothers, gang up on them. They only have four people. There’s nothing to be afraid of!”

Emperor Qin’s Sword moaned slightly and my Cold Iron Sword started to grow colder as I swung both swords. My cape fluttered behind me as Flaming Tiger God stood next to me. I looked forward and said to the three people behind me, “Wong Jiang, Breaking Dawn, protect Rainy. Leave the rest to me. You guys have fought hard. You can rest for a bit now.....”

Wong Jiang nodded: “Okay. Be careful Guild Master!”

.....

On the other side, an Archer leader yelled, “Let’s go! Shoot your [Scattered Shots] together. They only have one Xiao Yao Zi Zai. There’s nothing to be afraid of. Kill him!”

Those who make the first strike will punish those who don’t!

I didn’t make a sound as I rushed forward 10 meters. With a wave of Emperor Qin’s Sword, seven stars appeared. [Seven Star Fragment Slash] slashed down and heavily injured their group. It even killed quite a few people. Flaming Tiger God roared and used [Burstfire Raid], causing endless cries of pain.

I turned around and a number of melee players rushed over!

I couldn't help but laugh. With both of my swords, I rushed into the group of people. My Emperor Qin's Sword shook as I stabbed into a Swordsman's chest and I spun my Cold Iron Sword to parry a Berserker's axe. My body was rapidly whirling as I danced through the group of players with my twin swords and attacked them. With my defense, I didn't have to worry about their attacks. The two swords were soon drenched in blood. After I swiftly killed that Archer, I was able to push forward with both swords.

"Pssh!"

"5772 ! "

A Lv 64 third advancement Swordsman stood there with a shocked face. He was easily killed in a single hit. He probably thought that he would be able to withstand at least one of my attacks. 10 corpses were scattered behind me while I was back at full health due to my 10% lifesteal effect.

"Fuck....."

A [Mass Burial] team leader Knight cursed coldly, "This kind of attack power and attack speed is too damn strong already and he also has lifesteal? Is Xiao Yao Zi Zai invincible? Third bro, Fifth bro, come with me. Let's kill him!"

He brought two Assassins and rushed forward. The Assassins activated [Absolute Step] and [God's Dance] at the same time. Their speed exploded. This was a tactic to stun and kill me.

"Shua!"

The Assassin on the right quickly lifted his dagger and activated [Gouge].

I quickly reacted and swung my Cold Iron Sword. "Keng." His dagger was parried by my sword and [Gouge] was broken. I attacked with my Emperor Qin's Sword and killed him. With my Cold Iron Sword, I swung behind me and stabbed the other Assassin. He quickly fell to the ground as well. After quickly finishing the two Assassins, I fiercely glared at the Knight. With both swords, I struck him five times consecutively until he

knelt to the ground with widened eyes.

.....

“Boom Boom Boom.....”

In the distance, I noticed that bursts of flames were flying at me. There were at least 30+ Mages controlling magic. Without even realizing, I was down to around 50% health from these fire attacks.

I lifted my arms and two God's Army Cards activated and [Soul's Army] slowly descended. At the same time, I activated [Seven Star Teleportation] allowing me to teleport towards them. I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] along with my Flaming Tiger God's [Burstfire Raid]. The group of Mages cried out desperately from suffering the barrage of attacks. Without letting them cast another spell, I teleported again. With Flaming Tiger God's [Flame Armor], we easily killed the group of Mages, not sparing a single one.

.....

“Splash!”

Wong Jiang's eyes widened. Looking at the chaotic situation, he gulped and said, “Breaking Dawn, This.... This is the strength of [Zhan Long]'s strongest player? It's..... It's too terrifying....”

Breaking Dawn lifted his sword, “Yeah!”

Rainy's jaw dropped, “So strong... the Guild Master is really strong... only one person.....”

Chapter 350: Pursuing

“Keng!”

Behind, a burst of cold passed through, and along with it, came a scorching pain that was caused by a sharp sword that tore through my defenses. I abruptly came to a stop and turned around, parrying the attack using my Cold Iron Sword. I activated [Wind Slash] with my Emperor Qin’s Sword and struck down on the Swordsman. The Swordsman immediately fell onto the ground.

“Sha sha sha.....”

I quickly retreated, dodging an Archer’s attack. At the same time, I cast [Heal] onto Flaming Tiger God.

After an intense bloodbath, the snow was littered with countless corpses. Most of [Mass Burial]’s 200 members had dropped like flies. I must’ve killed at least 100+ people already. My Emperor Qin’s Sword’s [Kill for Blood] stack had already reached 50, thus raising its attack power by 50%. The remaining members of [Mass Burial] were terrified. At the same time, after fiercely battling with both swords, I realized that the twin sword style in game was different from reality. The process of attacking and blocking were not as easily done in reality. They had to be integrated slowly.

“Keng!”

I returned my Cold Iron Sword back to its sheath and held the Emperor Qin’s Sword. Eh. The [Twin Sword Style] should only be used on special occasions; I can’t let them understand my tactics, or else I’m going to regret it later on. Besides, Jian Feng Han, Soaring Dragon, Wang Ze Cheng, and many others will want to research this skill. Once my tactics are revealed, its advantage will be significantly lowered.

[Mass Burial] only had around half of its original players left. Not Ordinary stood there trembling with rage filled eyes, “God dammit. Is Xiao Yao Zi Zai even human? How can one person wipe out so many people.....”

One of the elders whispered, "Guild Master, our crowd control players are not here, we simply cannot do anything against Xiao Yao Zi Zai. On top of that, Wang Jian is also bringing over 100 elites from [Zhan Long's First Division] into Icy Forest Graveyard. Should we retreat? Or should we continue to fight to the death with these [Zhan Long] members here?"

Not Ordinary glared with cold eyes, "Ugh. There's no need to stay here and waste time. Retreat. We have much more important things to do. Go contact Wang Ze Cheng. We'll go take out the two Emperor Tier BOSSes in Firestone Canyon. We'll provide the front line close combat players!"

The Elder felt a chill, "Boss....? We're providing the front line players again? Every time we fight an Emperor Tier BOSS, around a hundred of our brothers lose a level. But what does [Hero Mound's First Division] give us? 100G per person. What kind of f*cking reward is that? Do they think we're beggars?"

Not Ordinary sneered, "Don't be unsatisfied. Just follow my orders and pick out the frontline players quickly. Also, don't tell anyone else about this. We still need Wang Ze Cheng's power for a lot of things. Hehe. Don't you like that Cang Tong Lin Wan Er girl? If you do good then maybe....."

The elder became excited, "Maybe... maybe I can get close to her?"

Not Ordinary laughed, "Close my ass. If you even think about trying to go for Lin Wan Er, Wang Ze Cheng will definitely shred you into pieces. At that time, not even I can protect you. I'm only warning you this one time."

"Yes, I..... I understand my mistake Boss. Are we retreating?"

"Yes, retreat!"

And thus, leaving over 100 corpses behind, the [Mass Burial] members retreated. A few white light appeared behind me and the 17 dead [Zhan Long's First Division] members revived. Wong Jiang returned to full health, lifted his battle axe and walked towards me laughing, "Guild Master, thank god you came. If not, they would be camping our corpses 24/7!"

I slid my Emperor Qin's Sword into its sheath, turned around and smiled, "That shouldn't be possible. We [Zhan Long] won't let our brothers' corpses be camped 24/7. If such unsightly things happened, we'll fight back with the full might of our forces. Oh yeah, how come you guys started fighting with [Mass Burial] members?"

"It's like this....."

Wong Jiang turned around, pointed at Rainy and said, "Rainy's brother works in Hangzhou and became a bodyguard in a bar on Blue Water Street. Not even three months later, Rainy's brother suddenly disappeared and hasn't contacted anyone at all. However, Rainy remembered that it was someone from [Mass Burial] who introduced her brother to work as a bodyguard in that bar. So, after doing some investigation, we followed the player and entered Icy Forest Graveyard. But not long after we were suddenly attacked and suffered a lot of casualties."

I was startled a bit. I looked at Rainy, walked towards her and said, "Rainy, your brother....he works at Blue Water Street?"

"Yea!"

Rainy's face became filled with worry, "My brother hasn't contacted us for a month. After he... after he helped me buy this game, he suddenly disappeared. I'm really worried about him. I went to Hangzhou to find him in that bar and all three times and they all said they've never seen someone named Qin Meng. I..... I'm really worried about him...."

Saying that, a large tear rolled down her face. With a whimpering voice she said, "That Youyi. I know him. He's the friend that my brother was talking about, but he won't admit it. He said that he's never met anyone named Qin Meng. What should I do?..... I'm really worried about my brother.... I'm afraid that he's already..... already....."

I gritted my teeth. I have a bad feeling about this and said, "Rainy, you're called Qin Yu?"

"Mhm!"

I took a deep breath and tried to comfort her, "Rainy, don't worry about

it. I'll find someone to investigate about your brother. Don't worry. I have some connections with the law enforcement in Hangzhou, so nothing will happen to your brother. Don't worry too much. You.... Where are you living right now?

"I go to school in Suzhou....."

"Okay. Don't come to Hangzhou to find your brother. I'll help you find him. Okay?"

Rainy lifted her head and looked at me with a face full of tears, "Guild Master. You're for real? You'll....You'll help me find my brother?"

I nodded, "Yeah. Nonetheless, I'll give you an explanation. Don't worry, I'll definitely find your brother. Don't worry too much about it okay? I'll add you as a friend and give you my cellphone number. If you have any clues to his whereabouts, call me. Don't go looking for him by yourself."

"Okay." After Rainy got my phone number, she looked at me again. "Guild Master, I..... I'm still worried. My brother.... could he already be..... could he already be....."

I forced a smile and patted her shoulder and said, "Don't think too much about it. This isn't as problematic as you think. Feel better okay?"

"Okay...."

On the side, Wong Jiang also added me as a friend and sent a message, "Guild Master, Rainy's brother.... could something have happened to him? I have a feeling that you're hiding something from us. I'm really worried about Rainy. I'm afraid that she can't take anything shocking like this. When she was in school in Suzhou, her father passed already, leaving her with only her mother. They relied on her brother to take care of the family. God forbids if something happened to her brother, I don't know how Rainy will deal with this....."

I turned and looked at Wong Jiang and replied, "Don't worry too much. There's things that you guys shouldn't know about, but please trust me. I'll do my best to help Rainy find her brother."

Wong Jiang clenched his fist, "Guild Master..... Thank you..... Even

though I don't know what you do, I still think that you're a trustworthy person. You have to help Rainy. She..... She's already suffered enough....."

I nodded and replied, "Mhm. You guys are members of [Zhan Long], which means that you're our brothers and sisters. I can't just sit there and cross my arms when you guys need help. Don't worry. I'll be able to find Qin Meng's whereabouts within half a month."

"Mhm. That's great. Let's keep in touch!"

"Okay....."

.....

Not long after, Wang Jian and his hundred man squad appeared from the snowstorm, only to find that the battle had already ended. He lifted his sword and disappointingly said, "What the.... It finished so quickly....."

Wong Jiang smiled, "Guild Master, you came too late; Guild Master Xiao Yao already helped us finish the battle."

Wang Jian smiled, "I knew it. With brother Xiao Yao here, there was no way you would lose. Actually, my bringing the whole squad here was a bit too much already. Okay. Why don't you guys join us. We'll venture deep into the Icy Forest Graveyard today."

"Okay. Yay!"

.....

I didn't say anything as I watched them go. I returned to the city and turned all the Spirit Recovering Grass into Spirit Recovering Pills. After all that, I was still missing 47% experience until I reach Lv 10 alchemy. I couldn't do anything but slowly wait.

At around 7, I got offline to get dinner with Wan Er and Dong Cheng.

"How's [Zhan Long] doing today?" Wan Er cheerfully asked me.

I wiped my mouth, "Eh, It's good. We PK'd and leveled a bit....."

Dong Cheng laughed. "Brother Xiao Yao, I heard that you single-handedly challenged 200 members of [Mass Burial] in Icy Forest

Graveyard and forced them to retreat. The strange thing is, everyone in the three big cities is talking about you.....”

I was speechless.

Wan Er smiled, “Hey Hey, How does it feel after using [Twin Sword Style]?”

I sighed, “The control for blocking got much better, and my attack output also increased by around 50%. The only flaw is that the attacks are too fast, so the accuracy decreases. There is still a lot of room for improvement.....”

“Oh. Good luck then!” Wan Er looked at me and said, “But, you have to practice discreetly. Don’t let anyone look at your battle records, especially ones where you’re using [Twin Sword Style]. You have no idea how many people are shadow-fighting you in order to gain experience.

“Yeah Yeah. I got it....”

“What are you doing after we eat?”

“Uhh.....” I thought about it and said, “Wan Er, you can go back online or rest with Dong Cheng. I need to go over to the police department. There’s something that I need to take care of....”

“You’re leaving me and Dong Cheng behind again.....” Wan Er pouted her lips, looking like a little girl throwing a fit.

I almost couldn’t help but say, “Alright, What do you want me to do with you?” But I was able to hold myself back and said, “Okay, okay, be good Wan Er. This is really important business for me.”

“Can you tell us?”

“Yeah. It has to do with one of [Zhan Long] members. Her brother went missing on Blue Water street. I need to investigate his whereabouts.”

“Okay....” Wan Er gently said, “Then I’ll go back to leveling and wait for you to come back.....”

“Okay!”

.....

After taking the two girls back to the dorms, I took out my cellphone and called Shen Bing.

“Hey, Li Xiao Yao? What is it? Did you miss me already?” Shen Bing’s voice was so charming that it could melt anyone’s heart.

I laughed, “Sister Shen Bing. Help me with something!”

“Heh. I knew it. What’s up?”

“Help me investigate the internet activity of someone named Qin Meng. He’s gone missing. I suspect that the Blood Scythe has something to do with it. Help me check it out, okay? As a matter of fact, I’m coming over right now, and we can investigate it together.”

“Mhmm, alright, come directly to my office in the Technology Section.”

“Yes!”

Chapter 351: The Guardian Squad

9PM at night. In the secret base of the Xihu district special forces.

At the door, I lifted my head for an iris scan to confirm my identity. The heavily armed guard looked at me and laughed, "Officer Li, you're here tonight?"

"Yeah. I'm going in."

"Okay!"

Entering the base, I noticed that everything was painted dark green. This base wasn't built too long ago. It's in the depths of the police district, and is hidden very well. It allows our special forces to carry out our missions very secretly. Recently, Nanjing had sent us more forces so that this office would become the main HQ of the Zhejiang region. The main objective of the special forces is to carry out missions regarding humans with super energy; Something that the normal police force wouldn't be able to handle.

.....

Under an average-looking small house was the entrance to the base. I entered it and went down a few floors, eventually ending up in the brightly lit training room. A group of special forces members were training with some electronic devices. Beams of red infrared lights landed onto the targets as the computers were rapidly calculating their shooting abilities. I turned around and a female member walked towards me with a smile, "Officer Li, you came?"

"Yeah. Can you take me to the technology department?"

"Okay!"

As we walked, I watched the two other training rooms. The female officer smiled, "Recently, groups of Artificials have been appearing in cities like Shanghai, Xiamen, and Shenzhen. Although we didn't publicly announce it, the higher ups have already put them on the high priority list. Captain Wang also believes that a calamity will descend upon China.

In order to deal with the Artificials' speed, we're practicing to master the usage of nano bullets. Because the nano bullets' ignition can produce very large amounts of heat, they also have the tendency to diverge from straight trajectories."

I had tried using nano bullets before. They did in fact deflect easily, and it was clear that they tended to curve upwards, so you had to point your gun a bit lower. I looked at her armband and said, "Looks like....the special forces are changing their name....?"

She smiled and nodded, "Yeah. As expected, your intel is very up to date. Why don't you just ask Captain Wang. He's also in the Technology department investigating the recent reports....."

"Okay!"

.....

After walking a bit further, we reached the technology department. The room was filled with computers, and it was basically a gathering place for all the bright minds of the Zhejiang region police force.

Shen Bing sat in front of a computer, her fingers flying across the keyboard, searching for some information as Wang Xin stood besides her. I lightly walked over and said, "Captain Wang, you're here too!"

Wang Xin nodded, "Li Xiao Yao, do you know this Qin Meng?"

"I don't." I shook my head and said, "But his sister is called Qin Yu, a member of the guild I created in [Destiny]. Qin Yu has been trying to find her brother's whereabouts, and Qin Meng was coincidentally acquaintances with Youyi from [Mass Burial]. These [Mass Burial] members aren't simple at all. That Dong Feng guy I caught last time was [Mass Burial]'s Vice Guild Master. I suspect that Youyi is also participating in the Artificials case. Connecting the two was simple. Qin Meng has a high probability of being taken to be experimented on. Finding him is very important for us as well; this might be our breakthrough! Oh right, how is Dong Feng's interrogation going?"

Wang Xin frowned, "Don't mention it. He won't talk even if he died. We

even invited interrogators from other countries, and it still hasn't produced any results. The people from Nanjing came over and did a DNA test on him. Turns out, he was an Artificial as well. Two days ago, he broke out of his cell and almost escaped. “

“Damn....” I clenched my fist. “Then what are you going to do about him?”

“I don't know. We'll have to see what the higher ups in Nanjing want.... They've put a great deal of importance on Dong Feng. General Sun Xing has been worried everyday about the speed at which the Artificials are evolving at. Dong Feng is the only Artificial that we've caught alive. His body is already changed, and we can observe the special DNA strands. This is an ideal test subject!”

I sighed, “Actually, it would be better if we found out who was behind all this from Dong Feng. Find out who's been supplying them with their equipment and technology. This is the biggest problem. As long as we take them out, this whole case would resolve itself quickly.

Wang Xin nodded. “Yeah I know. But this type of move needs careful planning. You should know all the constraints we have to work under. No matter who it is, they must be one of the big powers in China. If not, it wouldn't be possible for them to produce so many Artificials out of nowhere.”

I looked over at Shen Bing and said, “Sister Shen Bing. Did you find anything?”

Shen Bing looked at the screen and shook her head, “I can only confirm that Qin Meng entered the bar on Blue Water Street two months ago. Coincidentally, that bar's owner was the Dong Feng that we caught and after that, all traces of Qin Meng disappeared. I've been using cloud computing for a while to try and trace Qin Meng, but all I found was that all of his queries have been encrypted and blocked. Decoding this would take a bit of time.”

I slowly sat down on the chair besides me, crossed my arms and looked at the screen. I finally said, “Sister Shen Bing. About how long will it take

you to decode this?”

“I don’t know....” Shen Bing rubbed her eyes. “Probably...probably another seven hours or so?”

“That.....” I gritted my teeth. “I guess Sister Shen Bing has to work overtime tonight. I’ll stay here with you. I won’t be able to rest until we know about Qin Meng’s whereabouts....”

“No way!” Shen Bing lifted her head and smiled. “You haven’t fallen for this Qin Yu right? Otherwise, why would you worry so much about her brother?”

I let out a bitter laugh. “How could I? I just... I saw Qin Yu cry in the game. Both Qin Yu and her mom depend on Qin Meng. This kind of hard-working brother shouldn’t be disappearing like this. If I can, I’ll use all my strength to rescue Qin Meng from the Blood Scythes.”

“Okay! I’ll try my best!”

“Okay!”

I rubbed my eyes and looked at Shen Bing’s shoulders. There was a fresh armband with a five star red flag on it. It was the Hangzhou symbol, and then in large letters, “Guardian”.

Puzzled, I quickly turned and looked at Wang Xin, “Captain Wang, did the special forces change their name?”

Wang Xin smiled and nodded, “Yeah. It was decided a week ago. All of the upper class cities have a special base for the “Guardians”. We won’t be showing ourselves in public so we’re like the secret guardian protectors of the city. How is it? Isn’t the name cool?”

I extended my hand, “Bring it over!”

“Bring what over?” Wang Xin stared.

I stared back. “I’m a member of the Guardian Squad as well. Could it be that I don’t have a designation?”

“Well.....” Wang Xin curled his lips, “Xiao Zhao, go get Li Xiao Yao’s armband for him.”

“Okay!”

The officer who brought me over responded, and quickly returned with a brightly-colored armband. The national flag, the district, and all the other related images were exactly the same as Shen Bing’s. But instead of having GUARDIAN in the middle, all it had was GUARD.

My face turned green and looked at Wang Xin, “Why am I just a guard and not a guardian? What do you mean by this ‘guard’, Boss?!”

Wang Xin smiled, “It’s because you’re our Hangzhou district Guardian Squad’s leader. It was a direct order from General Sun Xing, so of course it’s different. What? You don’t like it?”

I looked at the armband. “Ugh..... Okay....”

On one side, Shen Bing giggled, “What’s so bad about it? The GUARD is pretty cool. It’s like a blessing. A brat like you just can’t appreciate your own fortune.....”

I felt my face twitch, “Can I not wear this during the operation?”

Wang Xin shook his head. “You have to wear it. If not, you might be accidentally killed by friendly fire.”

I pursed my lips, “Okay.....”

.....

I continued to sit in the Technology Department watching Shen Bing work. Her face started to sweat as she continued to decode nonstop. Once in awhile, she would turn and look at Wang Xin.

“Captain Wang, give the National Security Bureau a call. We need the authority to open and check out the C files.”

“Captain Wang, I need the military to authorize my account.”

“Captain Wang, help me buy some midnight snacks. Get me some flavored pork strips, and get Li Xiao Yao some pepper fried pig heart. I know the kid loves to eat that.....”

Wang Xin: “.....”

.....

We continued until 7 AM the next day, until Shen Bing suddenly pointed at the screen, "I got it!"

"Huh?"

Wang Xin and I both quickly rushed over, and sure enough, there was a portrait of a young man with the series of injection data and responses in the top secret file. This secret document was from a research document, and this man was definitely Qin Yu's brother, Qin Meng.

Wang Xin clenched his fist. "These human experimentations..... Where are they being conducted?"

"I'm searching through the satellites. Wait a bit!" Shen Bing was sweating profusely. After a few minutes, the screen jumped into action and displayed a map of somewhere in the Hangzhou's Xihu district!

"Found it! Blue Water Street. It's a new mall next to that bar, and is currently still being renovated. From this 3-D display, it seems like the lab is in the third floor of the basement!"

"It's really hidden. So that's where they were hiding!" The veins on Wang Xin's arms began to bulge. "I've finally found you bastards that turn normal humans into those monsters!"

"When are we moving out?" I asked.

Shen Bing said, "It's almost the morning. If we move now, we'll be noticed. Let's wait until nighttime!"

"Okay!" Wang Xin said. "We'll strike exactly at midnight! Li Xiao Yao, you'll lead the group. We must eliminate this research facility in one. However, you must also be very careful; they'll definitely have some defenses."

"Got it....."

.....

At this time, my cellphone rang. It was displaying Rainy's number. After picking up, all I heard was light sobbing—

“Boss, did you find my brother’s whereabouts? I.....I’m worried about him.... My mom just called and was crying.... I.....What should I do? What should I do.....”

I gritted my teeth, “Rainy don’t worry, I’ll find your brother.”

Chapter 352: A Trap!

The next day, I continued to search around the Icy Forest Graveyard map. Once again I found a large amount of Spirit Recovering Grass. In the afternoon, Matcha sent me a message.

“Boss, Our First Division’s Wong Jiang is coming to Suzhou from Hangzhou. He’ll be here at around 1. Did you know about this?”

“I didn’t. What happened?” I asked.

Matcha opened her voice message and said, “It seems like it’s about Rainy’s problems. After Rainy is finished with her classes, she’ll come here as well. She’ll probably be here in an hour or so. It should be the problem regarding her brother, so.....”

I frowned, “Why didn’t Rainy listen to me. Hmph. If they come, then they’ll come. Go pick them up later and I’ll come over to the studio as well.

“Okay. I’ll contact them then. They’re probably almost here. I’ll make a reservation at Hu Spices then.

“Okay. Thanks for telling me. I’ll come over right now.”

“Okay!”

.....

In the afternoon, I wasn’t with Wan Er and Dong Cheng like usual. Instead, I was standing in front of Hu Spices.

In the restaurant, Matcha, Song Han, Old K and Fox were there already. There were also two others. One was the 20 year old Rainy who was still in college. She was fairly pretty so I’d give her a 7. The other one was Wong Jiang. A 20 year old youngster with large eyes. Seeing me come over, he immediately stood up and respectfully said, “Guild Master!”

I laughed. “No need to be too polite. Sit.”

Rainy’s eyes were red and swollen as she looked at me and said, “Boss, I really.... I really don’t know what to do. There isn’t any information

regarding my brother. The police couldn't find any clues about his whereabouts either. I think.... If I stay in Suzhou, I'll be able to find him. At least... at least I'll be closer to him.....”

I took a deep breath and said, “Rainy, don't worry too much. They'll find your brother. You.... You should stay over at the studio tonight. Stay with Matcha. That way I'll feel a little more assured about your safety.

“Okay.....”

.....

After settling Rainy and Wong Jiang down, I stayed at the studio for a bit to check over what's been happening. Although we have a large shop with a massive fortune, the studio did not meddle with any of [Zhan Long]'s funds. All the profits were used to buy equipment for the guild members. Good thing Matcha and Old K were able to level fast, the studio's improvement was very impressive.

In the afternoon, Rainy cried a few more times. Wong Jiang carefully comforted and looked after her. We could all tell that this kid really cared for Rainy. Maybe it was the result of love. As for what happened to Rainy, we can't do anything but pray. Qin Meng ending up in Blood Scythe hands means that his life was left up to fate.

I waited until around 10 at night before changing into a nice shirt and bringing out Xiao Hei.

Matcha smiled, “Boss, Where are you going in the middle of the night all dressed up like that?”

“Uh....” I wavered. “To help Rainy look for her brother. Haha. Leaving in the middle of the night is a bit more convenient.”

Sitting on the sofa, Rainy stood up, “Boss. Really? But... but somehow I feel like you're lying to me. I feel like you're going to a bar, dressing all nicely and stuff. You also brought along a guitar....”

I replied, “Rainy, you gotta trust me. If I say I'm helping you find him, then I'll be looking for him.”

“Okay.....”

Rainy forced a smile, “Then work hard, Boss!”

“Okay. Stay here and wait for my good news!”

“Okay!”

.....

After leaving, I went straight to the base. There, a twenty-person squad was all ready. I quickly changed into my battle gear as well, and put my badge onto my shoulder with a “Pa” sound. Next, I put two army knives on each of my holster and strapped Xiao Hei onto my back. I had my handgun as well. Since the operation didn’t need it, there was no need to bring a sniper rifle.

Everyone was ready. Wang Xin waved his hands and said, “Li Xiao Yao will lead. Since Shen Bing is familiar with the area, she’ll go as well.”

On the side, a fully equipped Shen Bing smiled and nodded, “Okay!”

I stared, “Sister Shen Bing, you’re going as well?”

“What? Afraid that I’ll drag you down?”

“Not, But.....”

“No buts. Let’s go!”

“Okay.....”

.....

After getting into the car, we ventured deep into the city at night. At around 12PM, the car stopped in a small alleyway. I gave my signal, and the group quickly got off the car without a sound. Shen Bing carried a sub-machine gun and was trying to get off as well. I grabbed her hand, and she turned to stare at me, “Hey. What are you doing?”

I looked at her. “Sister Shen Bing, you’ll follow me. Make sure to be careful.....”

“Okay!”

In front, a member unlocked the door to the mall and with his signal, everyone entered. When we got in, Shen Bing turned on her flashlight and thoroughly scouted the mall. Shen Bing whispered, "That door, it'll lead us underground. Let's go!"

Two members swiftly opened the door and went straight down.

I also extended my Yi Hai and didn't feel any super powers within a 5 kilometer radius. I could tell that something was wrong, but we couldn't turn back now. After following them, we entered the secret room in the basement. The hall was dark and felt damp on my skin. My shoes made a crackling sound with every step. There was also a strange odor pervading the air.

"What happened?" Shen Bing asked when she noticed my reaction.

I blinked a bit. "I smell something....."

"What do you smell?"

"The scent of human blood....."

"....."

By then, three members surrounded the door in front of us and said, "Boss, behind this is the 3rd level basement. It's locked electronically. What do we do? Force it open?"

"Move!"

I unsheathed Xiao Hei and rushed forward and slashed the lock with one stroke!

"Keng!"

The lock broke in half and activated the alarms. Shen Bing quickly moved forward and disabled a wire, causing the alarms to shut off. After the doors opened, an even more foul scent wafted through.

I quickly lifted my hands and turned on the flashlight on the gun to scan the dark room. There were large containers all over the room; all of them were filled with human body parts. Some of them only had limbs soaked in some sort of water. There were some scales on the limbs as

well. These were probably some failed experiments.

“Don’t touch anything!” I yelled.

Shen Bing held a heat detector, “Li Xiao Yao, I see.... I see that the container in front of us has a strong life force. What’s going on?”

“What? It detected a strong life force?”

“Yeah!”

One of the members quickly moved forward, extended his hands to try and turn off the switch connected to the container.

“Stop!”

I quickly yelled and walked forward. Looking at it, there was a message lighting up on the top. I couldn’t understand it at all. Shen Bing walked up as well and said, “It seems like there should be a human.... or should I say, some sort of animal in here.....”

“Boss, do we open it or not?” One of the members asked.

I gritted my teeth. “If we don’t open it, we’ll be going back empty-handed. You guys move away. I’ll open it!”

“Why?” Shen Bing asked.

“It’s safer this way!”

Shen Bing pulled me away. “No, you’re the leader. How can you go and do such dangerous task?!”

I sighed and said, “Sister Shen Bing, just listen to my order. It’s because I’m the leader that I have to do it. Everyone fall back until I make sure it’s safe. Quickly.”

The members all quickly retreated. I walked up and extended my hands towards the lever for the huge container and slowly opened it. After opening it, a “Chi Chi Ya Ya” sounded out and steam began leaking out. After looking inside, I was surprised to find half a human body in there, containing only the chest area to the head. The rest were cut off already. However, this person’s eyes were still open. He revealed a mocking smile

and stared at me, “You’re finally here?”

I suddenly noticed a trigger beside his head that activated time bomb. It was starting to tick!

Shit!

I quickly yelled, “Fall back now, there’s a bomb!”

The countdown was set to only a second. As I started yelling, I could already see the bomb starting to explode. I quickly raised my internal energy to the maximum level, as the air around me started to spin. This was the only mode of protection that I could think of. After turning, I quickly hugged Shen Bing who was the closest to me.

.....

“Boom!”

A loud explosion echo sounded from behind me. My body felt scorching hot as Shen Bing screamed. The explosion hit at least 10 meters around us. The other members quickly ducked for cover in order to dodge the incoming debris.

I felt a piercing pain on my back. I knew that no matter how strong my internal energy was, I couldn’t block a modern day bomb, So I gathered all my energy around me to protect Shen Bing.

My mind went blank. All I could think about was Shen Bing’s desperate screams.

.....

“Li Xiao Yao..... Li Xiao Yao.....”

After waking up again, I was lying down in the center of a hall. Shen Bing was crying while hugging onto me. After seeing that I woke up, she rubbed her tears and said, “You finally woke up. You finally woke up. Thank god.... Thank god.....”

I used my strength to try and move my body. After looking around, I said, “Sister Shen Bing, We.... We fell into a trap, didn’t we?”

Shen Bing nodded with tears in her eyes, "Yeah. Those Blood Scythe bastards. Planning a trap like this for us....."

"What are the casualties?"

"One dead and six injured. You're also heavily injured....."

I tried to feel my body's situation and said, "Two bomb fragments are piercing my back..... Take me back to the base quickly."

"Okay."

Fortunately I began gathering my energy before the blast. If I hadn't, those two bomb fragments would've pierced my body. Then I would've really been dead.

.....

Back at the base, Wang Xin's eyes were red from waiting. He slammed his fist on the desk, "Bastards. Those bastards are really fucking crazy. I..... I'll... definitely destroy them all!"

I shakily stood up and extended my arms towards Wang Xin's shoulders, "Did the medics arrive? Get the bomb fragments.. out....."

Chapter 353: A New Strategy

“Ding.....”

The bloody fragment dropped into the water and immediately diluted the water.

I frowned and quietly laid there as Shen Bing wiped my head with a cold towel. She softly whispered, “Li Xiao Yao, does it hurt?”

“They injected anesthetics. What do you think?”

“Uh, okay....”

Next to Wang Xin, a 50 year old lab specialist picked up the fragment and gently stroked it, “This fragment is made from titanium and is very hard. Li Xiao Yao is a Royal Air Level practitioner who has greatly refined his body. His physique is many times stronger than that of a normal person. And yet, these fragments were able to pierce his skin very easily. These people are not only good at predicting our movements, but they’ve also researched our people thoroughly. They know our weaknesses.....”

Shen Bing’s arms shook as her face was filled with remorse, “It’s all my fault.... I was too careless. If it wasn’t for the fact that I didn’t erase my traces last night, they wouldn’t have noticed that someone had forced their way into the system and access their database. Then we wouldn’t have fallen into this trap.....”

“The problem now is.....”

Wang Xin sighed, “We lost all our leads again, and we didn’t even find Qin Meng’s whereabouts. They’ve also destroyed all their evidence in the underground labs. We’re back to square one.”

I raised my head and looked at Wang Xin, “Can’t you directly apprehend Wei Fan?”

“Not possible!” Wang Xin flatly replied. “With his identity as the CEO of Songfeng Entertainments, he was received by officers from *** yesterday. They placed utmost importance on him due to his involvement in the development of the entertainment industry. We cannot make a

move on Wei Fan right now. Right now, he's like a red hot charcoal. If we touch him, we'll just burn ourselves. Last time when we caught Dong Feng, it was only because of General Sun Xing that the situation was able to settle down. I'm afraid that he's probably been released already. The pressure from these high ranking officials are too much for us....."

The doctor helped me sew up my wounds. After applying medicine and wrapping it with bandages, I sat up. The effects of the anesthetics were almost gone. I swung my arms around a bit, and felt that there was no loss on my mobility nor strength. For a practitioner who has greatly refined his body, this wasn't much of an injury. Looking at the three fragments, I looked at Wang Xin and said, "How about this? I'll leave the Guardian squad and use my own identity to investigate. This way I won't be able to be pressured by Wei Fan. What do you think?"

"No! It's too dangerous!" Wang Xin shook his head. "You know, the people that we've been facing so far aren't even considered to be part of their main group. Not only does Wei Fan have Artificials on his side, he also has a bunch of people like you. Originally, these people didn't care for common matters, but with their vast amount of fortune, Wei Fan was able to hire five Royal Air level experts. The headquarters are telling us not to underestimate Wei Fan. Since his Songfeng Entertainment is located in Hangzhou, we're in the most dangerous location. We definitely cannot let you go solo. If anything were to happen to you, then the Guardian squad won't have anyone to rely on anymore. There is no second Li Xiao Yao."

I smiled helplessly, "Then are we going to be passive forever....?"

"No, we won't....."

Wang Xin's eyes grew cold, "For Wan Fei to be training so many Artificials, he must want to establish his position in the Southern Black Association. Training these Artificials takes a lot of time and space. They must be training in some sort of large factory or something. I've been gathering the DNA data from the Artificials. According to the analysts, we'll be able to find their training location in around half a month. When we find this place, we'll have enough evidence to take Wei Fan down!"

I couldn't help but laugh and didn't say anything.

Wang Xin stared at me, "What're you laughing at?"

I blatantly said, "Captain Wang, it's not that I'm undermining our analysts, but don't say half a month. Even if they had half a year, they won't be able to find the Blood Scythes' training facility. The Blood Scythes aren't as simple as we think of them to be. Shen Bing hacked into their network, and they immediately set a trap against us. I can say that their tactics are not inferior to ours by one bit. This group is not simple at all. They must have an even more powerful group supporting them behind the scenes. Everything is not as simple as we think it is."

Shen Bing shivered and nodded. "Think about it like this. They were able to prepare this kind of trap within 24 hours of me hacking into their network. So they must have some kind of expert supporting them."

I continued, "So? Besides Wei Fan, all the higher ups in Blood Scythe have erased all of their traces and disappeared. We can't do anything about them. We have nowhere to start and all we have are groundless reports. In the end, we won't be gaining anything."

Wang Xin replied, "Then what do you plan to do then?"

"There's one more lead."

"What lead?"

"Wei Fan has a guild in [Destiny] called [Mass Burial]. I can confirm that his group of people are in [Destiny]. As long as [Mass Burial] doesn't disappear, we can infiltrate them and analyze them from within."

Wang Xin excitedly said, "So it's like this. That's great! What do we need to do?"

I shook my head. "I don't know."

Shen Bing replied. "We get someone to join them and become familiar with them. Maybe then we'll have some useful reports."

"But....." I touched my wound. It kind of hurt a bit. "How do we get someone in? Let's not talk about a normal player. [Mass Burial] has 500

members. They're either Artificials or people with great talent. They won't easily accept some new guy. It's almost impossible."

Shen Bing smiled. "If there's no opportunity, then we'll make one ourselves. I understand some of this too. Wan Fei's ID is "Not Ordinary". He's someone who is very into [Destiny] and has achieved a very high level. As long as he's into the game, he has a weakness. I have a plan, but I don't know if you guys would agree to it or not."

"What kind of plan?" I asked.

Shen Bing laughed, "Your [Zhan Long] should be very strong. Why not let your guys go out and practice for a bit. I'm planning to have [Zhan Long]'s 4000 strong army attack and wipe out [Mass Burial]'s members. You have to make it as brutal as possible. The most brutal way would be to get a Guild Prestige Tablet, directly challenge [Mass Burial] and disband them! Then, with Not Ordinary's personality, he would not let this go easily. He'll look for even stronger people to create a new guild. At that point, we can infiltrate them...."

I nodded, "This does seem like a good idea. But, who do we get to infiltrate [Mass Burial]? All our [Zhan Long] members are on their radar. We'll definitely be found out."

Shen Bing immediately slapped her chest. "There is still me, your sister. I also have an account in game. As long as you help me with some stuff, I can create a guild in a short time. I'll bring people to "ally" with the defeated [Mass Burial] members. Then, the chance will come!"

"Okay!"

I stood up, "Then it's official. I'll go back and prepare. Oh yeah. Sister Shen Bing, aren't you busy every day? How do you have time to play games?"

"I don't. I just go on at night to casually play for a bit...."

Wang Xin laughed, "Oh. Casually playing can get you to Lv 65 third advancement?"

"That's none of your business!"

In Hangzhou's Guardian base, everyone was afraid of this stern-faced general Wang Xin. Everyone except for Shen Bing. She always challenges him. That's very daring.

.....

After changing, I went to get Xiao Hei. Through the explosion, Xiao Hei didn't receive any damage. It was only burnt black. After cleaning it for a bit, it'll be as good as new.

Shen Bing drove me back to the studio. After she left, I walked upstairs. Everyone in the studio was sitting in the living room. After hearing the door open, Rainy immediately rushed over and grabbed my arm, "Guild Master, did you find my brother's whereabouts?"

"Ugh....."

I made a sound in pain and retreated two steps, "Rainy, you're grabbing my wound...."

Under my shirt, the bandage around my arm could be seen and Rainy was startled for a bit. She saw the fresh blood coming from the wound, stood there and looked like she was about to cry, "Guild.... Guild Master, how come you're injured? What happened?..... It's all my fault. It's all my fault. I'm sorry....."

I smiled, "It's not your fault....."

Song Han frowned, "Brother Xiao Yao. What happened? Did you get injured during the mission?"

I nodded. "Yeah. We've been had!"

Wong Jiang stood up, "Guild Master. Who are you really? How did this happen....."

Old K patted Wong Jiang's shoulders, "Don't ask. It's better for you both if you don't know about it."

Wong Jiang was a smart person and he quickly nodded, "Okay. Got it."

I slowly sat down on the sofa as Matcha held onto me, "Hey, boss, how come you didn't tell us what you went to do? Did you go fight in the

middle of the night? Your eyes are really red....”

I smiled, “It’s nothing. This is just a normal injury. And Rainy, I still haven’t found your brother’s whereabouts, but I’ll continue to work hard. Don’t worry about it.....”

Rainy rubbed her eyes, “I got it. Thanks, Boss.....”

“Stay here in Hangzhou for a few days. Little Wolf, get everything prepared for Rainy. I feel a bit worried about Rainy going back to school in Suzhou right now.

“I got it, Brother Xiao Yao!

I continued, “Right now, [Zhan Long] has a new mission!”

Old K’s eyes shone brightly. “We finally have a big mission? Haha. Tell me quickly. I’ve been thirsting for some action lately.....”

“You.....” Matcha was speechless.

I laughed, “[Zhan Long] has grown so much already. The main guild has 3000 people and our first division is already at 1000+ members, giving us a total of 4000+ members. So it’s time..... it’s time for us to put ourselves to the test. For the next few days, we’ll be hunting [Mass Burial] members and we’ll wipe them out from Ba Huang City! Also, Matcha. Get me a Guild Creation Tablet....”

Matcha was startled, “Why? Are we making another guild?”

“A friend needs it.....”

“Okay. Whatever you want boss!”

Chapter 354: First Meetings

In the morning, I quickly returned to Liu Hua University. I didn't want to scare Wan Er with my injuries, so I only sent her a text telling her that I was coming back a bit late. I told her to get breakfast by herself, and I took a small nap by myself. When I woke up in the afternoon, I got something to eat and went online. The preparations for the hunt were complete.

“Shua!”

My character appeared in Ba Huang City's northern market. “Di!” Matcha immediately messaged me. “Boss, I got a Guild Creation Tablet for 170,000RMB. Someone from Jiu Li City is bringing it over right now. We've already transferred the payment over. Do you want it now?”

“Yeah, I'm at the shop. Bring it over to me.”

“Okay!”

A few minutes later, [Zhan Long]'s beautiful Phantom Knight came over while carrying an Emperor Tier spear. It seems like Old K and Fox weren't slacking at all. They even got Matcha Emperor Tier items. After upgrading her equipment, her gallant golden shield made her look even more intrepid and cute.

“Boss!” Matcha walked over carrying the Guild Creation Tablet and smiled, “Aren't I especially useful?”

I nodded, “Yeah, Matcha is like my right arm now!”

“So do you have as a reward for me?”

“What do you want?”

Matcha smiled slyly, skipped towards me, hugged my arms and acted like a spoiled child, “Boss, I was shopping yesterday when I saw this white Prada bag and I really really like it. How about you get that for me?”

I shivered, “Uh. Is it expensive? How much is it?”

“It's only 27,000!”

“Okay....” I patted her shoulders and smiled, “Since our little Matcha is so dedicated to the guild..... Not only did you help create [Zhan Long’s First Division], but you’ve also helped Qing Qian manage the guild as well. Giving you a reward is appropriate. I’ll go shopping with you later and buy that bag for you!”

Matcha cheerily smiled, “Mhm. Boss is the best, I’ll be going first then. Song Han and the others are going to fight a BOSS. I still have to go and tank for them!”

“Okay. Don’t get too into BOSS hunting. We’ll be starting our guild activity soon!”

“Okay! It’ll be quick!”

.....

After seeing Matcha go, I opened up my phone and called Shen Bing.

“Sister Shen Bing!”

“What’s up Li Xiao Yao?”

“I got the guild creation tablet. When should I get it to you? What’s your ID in game?”

Shen Bing pondered for a bit and said, “I need to keep my identity a secret, and can’t let anyone find out that I’m associated with you, so I need you to find a desolate place in Ba Huang City and meet me there. How about this, go to the third floor of the Ba Huang City Great Sage Hall. On the right side, there’s a small unoccupied storage room. Wait for me there and I’ll be there immediately.

“Okay. Got it!”

Looking at the distant Great Sage Hall, I bore my two blades and walked over. After climbing to the third floor, I followed the hall to the end and pushed open a damp door. At that moment, a moldy smell wafted out. The inside was filled with cobwebs. Who knows how long it had been since someone last went inside. Many of the books had already begun to decompose.

After closing the door, I walked to the little window on the other side. The window overlooked the bustling North Plaza of Ba Huang City. Anyone could tell that the game's economy was booming, but who could see the dark evils behind all of it? Wei Fan, that degenerate, is even in this game. You can't even count the number of innocent lives that have died by his hands. Not to mention the number of police officers that he had killed. There's just too many dark shadows in this virtual world for us to discover and wipe out.

"Creak....."

The little door slowly opened and a beautiful shape scurried in. It was a petite little female archer. Behind her, a pair of delicate wings slowly folded up; she was a wind elf. On top of that, her face looked vaguely familiar, but I couldn't be sure. It looked a little similar to Shen Bing, but there were still a lot of differences. It wasn't until she giggled and said, "Bastard, what are you staring at" did I finally confirm that she was indeed Shen Bing. Looking at her, I was finally able to recognize the girl with mystifying beauty.

I gave Shen Bing's character a glance. The words above her head were quite striking—

White Ink Lv65 Golden Archer

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: None

Position: None

.....

"So, have you seen enough?" Shen Bing didn't hold back one bit. She picked up her bow and twirled around as her cloak fluttered behind her. The body wrapped under the armor was filled with a youthful energy. She cheerfully looked at me and said, "Sister looks pretty good in game right? In order to keep my identity a secret, I made sure to change at least 25% of my look. You couldn't tell right? Actually, I gave myself some charm while I was changing my look...."

I pursed my lips, "This new look is actually not that different from the Korean beauties. Besides, Sister Shen Bing, don't you think that your game ID is a bit.... stupid?"

Shen Bing glared at me, "You're stupid, hmph!"

I laughed and said, "Alright, I got you the Guild Creation Tablet, go hurry up and create a guild. Also, that Guild Creation Tablet and the guild creation fee, that's enough for Captain Wang to compensate me right? This was for a team operation....."

"You cheapskate....."

Shen Bing chuckled and patted my chest, "Don't even think about it boy. Last time when I tore my skirt during a mission, I asked him to compensate me but, it got dragged on for a 2 whole years and 3 months. Humph, think about it, if he has to report a couple thousand yuan for a Guild Creation Tablet, he won't even have the chance..... The amount of money that the finance sector gives to the operations base is limited. Those old bastards would rather buy modern high tech weapons than buy me another skirt....."

My mouth twitched into a smile, "Then can I ask what kind of an operation would tear a skirt?"

Shen Bing's face immediately blushed, "It was a dark and rainy night, and our task force met a group of crazy gangsters. In the end, one of them took a fancy for me, and while we were fighting, he ripped my skirt. Wu wu, my Vero Moda, such a pity....."

I laughed, "Then, he touched your thighs?"

Shen Bing's face flushed and, "Pa" she punched me, "You bastard, that's none of your business! hmph!"

I spread out my arms and said, "I'm listening!"

"Nevermind, you heartless bastard! You really don't care for me at all!" Shen Bing gripped the Guild Creation Tablet and turned around. With her back facing me, she waved and said, "Then I'll leave first and go create that guild. Add me as a friend alright? So that if we ever need to, we could

just message each other so that there's no need for us to meet. Otherwise, my little plan might be revealed.....”

“Okay!”

After adding Shen Bing as a friend, she flew out the door. Not long after, Ba Huang City's Nth guild was created; it's name was “First Meetings”. What an artsy name, it was something that Shen Bing would do. I don't know where she would find 100 people to fill up her level 1 guild, but it doesn't matter that's none of my business.

.....

After pulling out a City Return Scroll, I was teleported straight to the plaza. There, I prepared my potions and cards. Afterwards, I sent out a message in [Zhan Long]'s guild chat, “Hehe, today there's going to be a guild event, so.... who wants to gather some intel?”

Dancing Forest said, “I'll do it. What's up guildmaster?”

I said, “Can you confirm where [Mass Burial]'s main training area is?”

Dancing Forest lightly smiled and said, “[Mass Burial] is a declared enemy, I've always been keeping tabs on them. This afternoon, [Mass Burial] has a 300 man team in the Icy Forest Graveyard. Also, there's a hundred man team towards the Firestone Canyon. What's up, does guildmaster want to attack this group?”

I nodded and said, “Yup. [Mass Burial] keeps on provoking [Zhan Long], this time I'm determined to wipe them out. Little Wolf, Old K, go gather a team of a thousand of [Zhan Long]'s elites, and follow me towards the Icy Forest Graveyard. Today, We are going to beat [Mass Burial] so hard they won't even dare leave their city again. So hard they won't even dare get online..... So hard that they won't ever level again!”

Little Wolf laughed out and said, “Alright! I like this kind of thing!”

Li Mu smiled, “Guildmaster, how about our Valiant Bravery camp go with you? That's right, the First Division guild needs some kind of task, or else that bastard Wang Jian will be bored to death soon!”

I said, "Yeah, why don't you contact Wang Jian, tell him to bring a 500 man team to Firestone Canyon, and annihilate the hundred man team in there. Tell him to guard their corpses 24/7!"

Li Mu grinned, "Got it!"

Everyone in the guild began to get excited. I continued, "[Mass Burial] also has an ally, [Hero's Mound: First Division], so we need to defend against Cang Cheng's surprise attack. Today, our entire guild will take on a battle formation. We need to be ready to rescue our brothers at any given moment!"

"Alright!"

.....

After leaving the city, I ran straight for Green Qilin Valley. After half an hour, I reached my destination. Song Han, Qing Qian and the rest had already brought their thousand man team and were only waiting for me to get there. Dancing Forest raised her Wanderer's Bow and smiled, "Not Ordinary is personally leading the team. The 300 men are grinding in a deep part of the Icy Forest Graveyard, just as before. Boss, should we just go in for the kill?"

"Yup, let's go!"

I waved my arm and yelled out, "Everyone, advance!"

After checking out who was in the thousand man team, I could tell it was mainly made up of [Zhan Long]'s elites. The average level of the players was practically 64. There were countless third advancement swordsmen, knights and healers. Needless to say, the strength of our group was very prominent. Our offense was able to hit hard while our defense was sturdy. The [Blade Rush] from our third advancement swordsmen could break any formation, while [Heavenly Shield] from our third advancement knights was like a great wall. Added on to that there was Old K, Qing Qian and a group of others who had S tier or greater skills. We were basically an invincible team. Putting the Ba Huang City and other big maps aside, this group of experts could at least exert our dominance over a small map like the Icy Graveyard Forest.

“Hua hua....”

The icy wind bit through our armor as massive snowflakes blew throughout the valley.

Qing Qian gripped her dagger as she looked into the snowy landscape and smiled, “What a beautiful scenery, too bad we came here to kill people....”

I responded, “Don’t feel guilty, to be honest we’re here to punish villains and serve justice....”

“Alright, whatever Brother Xiao Yao says”

Dancing Forest lifted her long bow and with a few powerful strokes, she soared into the icy snow and pointed into the distance, “Boss, they aren’t far from here. They’re about 1000 yards away, should we make some preparations first?”

I nodded and in a loud voice, gave the command, “Front line, the swordsmen will lead the charge. Make sure to reserve your [Blade Rush] cooldowns. Mages and Archers, advance with them. We need to kill them first before they even have the chance to respond!”

“Yes sir!”

Raising my arm, I pulled the Emperor Qin Sword out with a “Keng!” and left the Deep Sea Cold Ice Sword strapped to my back. I wasn’t going to use my Twin Sword Style during this battle, so there wasn’t any need for it.

In the midst of the ice and snow, a hazy shadow began to come towards us. It was a [Mass Burial] player. Every one’s shoulder had the [Mass Burial] symbol. On top of that, they had activated their skills and were exposing their strengths as they massacred the monsters.

I pointed my Emperor Qin Sword forward as I stood in front of [Zhan Long]’s army and roared out, “Attack!”

Chapter 355: Resurrect? Die!

In the midst of the blizzard, one of [Mass Burial]’s leaders, a Swordsman, froze in horror as he turned around and saw a large group of [Zhan Long] players rushing at him. He gave a shout, “Grab all the Eye-Catching Grasses you can and run for your life! [Zhan Long]’s players are here!”

Another one of [Mass Burial]’s captains gulped, “What?! Why would [Zhan Long]’s players be doing here?!”

“They’re obviously here to kill us. What? Did you think they were here to treat us to a meal or something?”

“Grab all the herbs you can carry!”

.....

“Stop them! Hurry up and follow me!”

After killing the monsters around [Mass Burial], one of its senior members, a Lv 67 elite Knight suddenly turned. He forcefully slammed his bronze shield into the ground, casting [Heavenly Shield Wall] and sending snow everywhere. Standing his ground with his spear in his right hand, he shouted courageously, “Block them! Make time for the other groups to arrive! Someone inform the Guild Leader, the situation is dire!”

Swooping into the frontline with my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I cast [Wind Blade] and [Ice Blade] on the Knight, penetrating his [Heavenly Shield Wall] and creating a large gap in his defense. There was too much of a difference in strength. Even with his [Heavenly Shield Wall], he still could not withstand my attack.

“2871 ! ”

“2482 ! ”

Behind me, Yue Qing Qian’s small figure sank slightly. With a wave of her hand, an image of a crimson red fox began materializing above her and suddenly a long ranged attack shot out – [Grip of the Firefox]!

“Boom!”

Firefox flames began swirling around before flying directly at the Knight I injured before, killing him in one stroke. At the same time, Li Mu calmly waited for the third advancement Swordsmen to charge at him, then with a [Blade Rush] broke through the enemy's front line. In that second, he shattered [Mass Burial]'s defense formation. With a wave of her hand, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands cast high-level spells one after another. In the blizzard, Dancing Forest notched a few arrows, firing a [Meteor Shot] that rained down on [Mass Burial] members.

I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and sent him to the front lines. My Emperor Qin's Sword had already killed 11 people, the [Kill for Blood] had already stacked my attack by 11%. With the combined strength of Old K, Song Han, and sister Matcha rushing upon [Mass Burial]'s positions, [Mass Burial] turned into a grave site within the blink of an eye.

In less than 3 minutes the number of [Mass Burial] bodies that lay at our feet was more than 150 whereas we had suffered no more than 100 in casualties. It was evident that there was a great disparity in strength between [Zhan Long] and [Mass Burial]!

.....

“Dammit!”

In the midst of the battle, Not Ordinary raised his axe and shouted, “Return it in blood! They came with only a few people, only around 700-800! We still stand a chance. Healers, revive those brothers who have fallen in battle! Hurry up! Right now!”

“Swoosh, Swoosh Swoosh...”

Beams of light flew around me as 3 [Mass Burial] members revived. Hiding a smile, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with a wave of my hand, and the 3 immediately fell to the floor. One of the members' leggings and breastplate had dropped. Seeing this, I became even more happy. Laughing, I taunted, “Let them revive again. Allow them a chance to attack back! This time we'll focus on plundering!”

My outburst infuriated Not Ordinary even more. He then furiously pointed his axe at me, “Xiao Ya Zi Zai you bastard. When have I ever provoked you?! Why are you treating [Mass Burial] like this?!”

I laughed coldly, “Have you already forgotten about what happened in the Magic Tracking Forest? Just yesterday, you camped the bodies of Wong Jiang, Rainy, and 20 other of our players, did you forget that too? I guess rich people have a terrible memory, but we of [Zhan Long] will never forget an incident like that, right now we are just returning the favor. Not Ordinary, you have done many bad deeds and you deserve to die. If you’re going to hate, then hate yourself for attacking my [Zhan Long] first!”

“Motherf*cker, you’re f*cking crazy!”

The furious Not Ordinary’s face turned purple, he grabbed the nearby deputy, and started roaring, “Today I’ll f*cking hold this fort. Message Cang Cheng, let [Hero’s Mound: First Division] bring reinforcements over, or else [Mass Burial] will be finished! Also, contact Soaring Dragon, I will agree to his conditions, and am willing to form an alliance with him, But first they have to immediately come here and support us!”

The deputy chief’s face also turned purple, “I... I got it, boss, you have to let go of me first...”

.....

Wolf quietly snuck up behind a member of [Mass Burial] and cast a [Twin Blade Harmony], killing him off. Laughing, “Not Ordinary, you’re about to have a heart attack, Ha Ha, this unsightly show is very amusing... Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll talk with One Second Hero right now, I’ll tell him to bring over 2000 members to reinforce us. He He, even if Cang Cheng came with [Hero’s Mound] first division, we will make them kneel down before [Zhan Long] and sing!”

I nodded, “Okay!”

Amidst the blizzard, a figure carrying a sword stepped forward, it was [Mass Burial]’s chief Youyi. Pointing his finger, he loudly commanded, “12 Knights charge and block them! Healers, revive the Monks and Knights

first! We need to be able to hold this position first if we are to retaliate!”

A group of 12 third advancement Knights charged over, each one throwing a [Heavenly Shield Wall] down. With the [Heavenly Shield Wall] ready, it looked like Youyi was using this group to block any further more advancements from our [Zhan Long].

“Zzzzzzz...”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword started emitting a light aura. I shouted, “Li Mu, Ran Min, come with me, Yue Qing Qian, use [Grip of the Firefox] to cover us, don’t let them strengthen their defenses further. Kill them all!”

As a Knight began charging at me with his sword raised, I did not choose to confront him. Instead, I turned sideways, and with a jostle of my shoulder, “Bang”, sent the Knight retreating several steps backwards. In terms of strength, he was not nearly my equal. With 7 stars at the tip of my sword, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] upon the crowd of 12 Knights, in which 11 were hit directly. Li Mu used [Blade Rush] at the same time to get near and cast [Skyscraper Slash], instantly killing one, while Ran Min threw a [Tornado Slash] on the same crowd of Knights throwing them into the air. Further away, Yue Qing Qian cast [Grip of the Firefox], killing another 7-8 of them. [Zhan Long]’s top 4 fighters synchronized attack, completely annihilated [Mass Burial]’s squad of Knights.

“What the heck...”

Youyi’s eyes widened, “This... This cannot be? To be destroyed that quickly...”

Not Ordinary was losing his cool, “F*cker, how come [Hero Mound]’s first division still hasn’t made any movement, why aren’t they reinforcing us? What is Cang Cheng thinking?! What is his intention?”

Youyi loudly yelled, “Don’t rely on them, Cang Cheng said that [Zhan Long] has 2000+ outside of the Icy Forest Graveyard and they just received a 3000 man reinforcement. Even if [Hero’s Mound: First Division] came, they wouldn’t get anything in return. Cang Cheng is probably planning on attacking home while they’re distracted with us and

bring the 3000+ men in [Hero's Mound] to Firestone Canyon to attack [Zhan Long: First Division].....”

Not Ordinary raised his axe as his body shook in anger, “Cang Cheng that bastard is treating us like a worthless shield. He himself isn't even coming to save us, does he even see our [Mass Burial] as allies anymore?!”

Youyi with cold eyes, “Chief, careful of what you say...”

“Hmph! Charge with me!”

Not Ordinary gripped his battle axe and rashly charged forward. “Peng!”, one of Dancing Forest's [Scattered Shot] followed by a [Meteor Shot] penetrated his body. With another three hits, [Mass Burial]'s Guild Master was actually killed by three long ranged skills from our number one Archer!

“Pa ta...”

As Not Ordinary fell to the ground, he dropped his battle axe, it's fire burning brightly. It was clearly not any ordinary weapon.

I hastily stretched out my hand and killed one of [Mass Burial]'s Mages who was trying to pick up the fallen axe with a [Great Realm of Desolation]. Together with my Flaming Tiger God, we began charging into the front lines. My [Seven Stars Teleportation] activated, taking me right above the battle axe. With a single slash, I cut down multiple [Mass Burial] members. I picked it up. Ce Ce, a Lv 62 Emperor Tier battle axe, not bad! I threw the axe to Ran Min while laughing, “Keep it, it's better than your Haunted Twin Blade Battle. [Mass Burial] may be stupid, but they do seem to have some wealth!”

Ran Min equipped the newly received battle axe and laughed out loudly, “Ce Ce, This weapon that [Mass Burial] just gave me isn't bad, I should thank them!”

“You can camp their bodies to thank them!” Li Mu added, laughing.

.....

In less than 20 minutes, the entire map Icy Forest Graveyard was

cleared, and out of the 300+ [Mass Burial] members originally there, zero were standing. I brought Yue Qing Qian, Wolf, and 500+ [Zhan Long] members with me to camp their bodies, while Ran Min and Matcha brought the rest of the members to go nearby and level. [Mass Burial]'s members must have problems with their IQ as only 10 minutes had passed and there were already 3 attempts to resurrect and come back. Too bad they would all just killed again. Only small groups of 20-30 tried to resurrect, even I can hold them off myself.

Standing in the snow, I couldn't stop grinning as I watched one body afar just waiting to resurrect. Many of [Mass Burial]'s members had already lost 2-3 pieces of equipment. Even more pitiable, their equipment, levels and strength would definitely get cut down after this while [Zhan Long]'s battle power would only continue to increase. After this battle, our equipment will be even better and our players even stronger.

“Sha Sha...”

Li Mu carried his sword and walked over while reporting, “ Updates from Firestone Canyon, Wang Jiang brought our first division over and annihilated [Mass Burial]'s 100 men, however Wang Ze Cheng brought over [Hero Mound: First Division] and they are currently engaged in battle with Wang Jiang and their 1000+ men. He pledged to destroy [Zhan Long]'s First Division without giving up!”

I squinted my eyes, “Hmph! Wang Ze Cheng really does want to die! Since it has come to this, how about we destroy [Hero Mound]'s first division today as well?”

“How shall we destroy them?” Li Mu excitedly asked.

I grinned and said, “Flag bearer Gentle Touch will lead 1000 men to guard the corpses of [Mass Burial]. Any officer ranked above that flag bearer will follow me. We'll take the 2000 brothers on the border to Firestone Canyon and crush Wang Ze Cheng's [Hero's Mound: First Division]!”

“Okay!”

.....

A large group of people rushed out of the Icy Forest Graveyard. Outside, One Second Hero brought a group of 2000 of [Zhan Long]'s best players to the plains and awaited for the next order. Scanning the area, I could see that each person in the mass was wearing the [Zhan Long] band on their arm. I couldn't help but feel accomplished from this sight. This was the [Zhan Long] I had started, and today it's where all the best players gather!

“Clang!”

Unsheathing my Emperor Qin's Sword and pointing it towards Firestone Canyon, “Our brothers over there are surrounded by [Hero's Mound]. Wang Ze Cheng has vowed to annihilate them. Everyone, what do we do?”

The group all rang out at once, “Kill them all!”

Satisfied, I nodded my head, “Then what are we waiting for? Let's go kill them! Onwards!”

Chapter 356: Wang Ze Cheng's Trap

“Peng peng peng...”

The ruckus of boots splashing in the swampy water echoed, as a large group of people could be seen crossing. Lifting his long sword Li Mu laughed, “It is a shame no one in [Zhan Long] has 100 points in their pet space; otherwise, we’d have a far more superior cavalry group in terms of mobility, and we would have reached Firestone Canyon in less than half an hour. Hmph, let’s give [Hero Mound]’s First Division a good ass-whooping!”

I lifted my head and looked forward, commanding, “Speed up, Firestone Canyon is just ahead. Wang Jiang and his men won’t be able to hold off any longer!”

“Alright!”

.....

After a few minutes passed, Firestone Canyon came into view. Taking the lead, I leapt into the canyon; my boots kicking up dust as my cape fluttered behind me. Slicing my Emperor Qin’s Sword into the canyon wall, I slowly came to a halt in the middle of the gorge. Li Mu, Ran Min, Yue Qin Qian and Matcha caught up to me while Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands flew over, landing elegantly with a wand in hand.

Yue Qin Qian pointed forward, “Just over 3000 yards away, Wang Jian’s 1200+ [Zhan Long: First Division] members are trapped in a small ravine, and 700 of them have already perished. We have lost more than half our group and can barely resist the enemy. Brother Xiao Yao, shall we head over quickly? If we delay any longer, they’ll be wiped out!”

Nodding my head, I instructed, “Matcha, go by air and scout the terrain. I will lead the rest via ground!”

“Okay!”

Matcha raised her sword and rapidly rose into the air as two translucent wings appeared on her back. Flapping her wings, she disappeared into the

distance. The 2000 elite [Zhan Long] troops on the ground proceeded swiftly into the forest. Only by suddenly striking out from the forest in a wild charge, thereby taking them by surprise, would we have the power to fend them off.

7 minutes later, I charged out of the thicket brandishing my Emperor Qin's Sword with a "Hua!". The ravine was right before my eyes. At least 3000+ [Hero's Mound: First Division] members were gathered together, all of them armed and ready. Wang Ze Cheng, with his long spear, stood amidst the crowd of people, laughing, "Close combat unit don't charge forward or else you'll just be feeding General Wang Jian. Long Range unit pressure them with [Scattered Shot] and, with the support of [Pillar of Fire & Ice], we'll annihilate all of them!"

Suddenly, the Berserker beside Wang Ze Cheng, Wind Walker, started to tremble. "Brother Cheng, [Zhan Long]'s main guild members have arrived! Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu and the others are right behind us. The core force have personally led their troops over, what do we do?"

Wang Ze Cheng abruptly turned, the corners of his mouth rose into a smirk, "I've been waiting for them. Team 1, Team 2 ready yourselves to block the assaulting forces of [Zhan Long]'s main troops. Long Range units withdraw!"

Soon, 2000+ [Hero's Mound: First Division] members simultaneously turned. A group of Knights and Monks thrust their shields into the ground, rapidly forming a compressed line of defense. Rays of sunlight reflected off the heavy shields, displaying a dazzling radiance. It won't be easy to break the defense of this shield formation.

I sent a message to Wang Jian, "Hurry and let everyone resurrect! The main guild is attacking from the front. You guys attack from the back, and together we'll crush [Hero's Mound: First Division]."

"OK!" Wang Jian Replied.

.....

"Ding!"

A message from Matcha appeared, "Boss, north of where we're currently standing, there are at least 5000 of Soaring Dragon members preparing for combat. I think these people are allied with Cang Cheng. The moment we take action and engage with [Hero Mound: First Division], they will immediately ambush us and start killing. When that happens, it would be even harder to fight back..."

I lifted my head up, Matcha had landed atop a tree and fluttered her wings a bit as she looked at me. Yup, Matcha's information is probably right. Now our only problem is that we need to request reinforcements!

After opening up my friend list, I found Han Song Bei and sent a message, "A great deal!"

Han Song Bei quickly responded with a smile, "[Blood Contract]'s 2500 men are already hidden in the forest nearby. Our exact location is around (31712, 112283), ready for your command!"

I took a glance at the map and couldn't help but laugh, "Okay, how did you guys pull this off?"

"It's because we've already wrapped our grip around Firestone Canyon. This is Ba Huang City's best training area, how can we let [Vanguard] take over it?"

"Okay, can [Blood Contract]'s 2500 men hold off the strength of [Soaring Dragon]'s 5000 core?"

"You guys quickly go and solve the problem of Cang Cheng and his men, then come and reinforce me. That should be enough!"

"Alright, immediately take this chance to preemptively attack!"

"Got it!"

A few minutes later, the distant sounds of fighting disturbed the valley. True to his words, Han Bei Song attacked. Having an ally like that help us truly gave a boost in confidence.

Pointing my Emperor Qin's Sword forward, I loudly command, "[Zhan Long], attack with all your might!"

My Divine Battle Boots stepped across the plains, as I was the first to charge forward. With my hand tightly gripping the Emperor Qin's Sword, I had my Flaming Tiger God follow me close behind. Right in front of my eyes, a rain of arrows flew right into the air. A large amount of [Scatter Shot]s had targeted me. At that moment, I willed my feet to come to a halt and change direction. With a turn, I moved in a Z shape on the spot, quickly leaving my original path. AT that moment, a field of MISS-es appeared behind me. Hmph, after going through the Rise of the Hero's training and fighting against top experts like Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, and Bai Li Ruo Feng, my skills at maneuvering increased ten fold. I had long surpassed the old me.

"Bang!"

My shoulder sent a heavy impact on [Hero Mound]'s First Division's shield array. With my Emperor Qin's Sword raised, I cast a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] at the enemy. Seven to eight Knights and Monks were forced backwards; but these people where [Hero Mound]'s First Division's original members, and did not admit defeat, as they began rapidly reforming the shield array. Their ability to do this showed that [Hero's Mound: First Division] was obviously more clever than [Mass Burial].

"Break through them!"

I angrily shouted, as I charged forward into the newly formed shield array, killing off a few Swordsmen in the process. As if I would let their shield array block [Zhan Long]'s advancement!

Old K swung his axe while roaring, and sent a [Whirlwind Slash] into the crowd, followed with a [Savage Jump Slash]. This attack forced a dozen men into chaos as their formation broke.

Carrying his long spear, Wan Ze Cheng sent a cold glare. With frightening speed, Wang Ze Cheng's spear flew forward and sent a [Skysaker Slash] into Old K's back --

"1828 ! "

"1527 ! "

Old K cried out in pain and raised his battle axe as he spun around to face Wang Ze Cheng. He and cast a [Skyshaker Slash], only to be blocked by Wang Ze Cheng's shield. "Keng!" sparks flew everywhere, making a large damage number fly out—

"1147 ! "

Our backline suffered another round of magic attacks. Old K roared loudly while activating [Oppose the Heavens] and lifted his battle axe as he started to retreat.

Li Mu continued his slaughter, sending three Knights flying across the battlefield. Because they had an advantage in numbers, a group of Knights roared out, "[Hero's Mound] members. Do not falter!"

As a result, Our first wave of attacks couldn't break through their formation!

.....

"I'm coming!"

Within a group of people, a wild brat rushed out. It was Cang Lei. With his god-given strength he violently swung his arms around and continuously bashed against the dense array of shields.

"Bang!"

Sparks flew. A group of nine tanks had their shields burst apart, sending them stumbling backwards. Li Mu immediately became overjoyed by this. He lifted his sword, rushed forward and yelled, "Break through this opening. Come with me! Hahaha. Good work, Ah Lei!"

My smile broke into a grin. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and continued to hack through the flanks with my Flaming Tiger God. Yue Qing Qian waved her small hand and [Grip of the Firefox] activated. The giant fire fox clawed through a group of people and I followed up with [Seven Stars Fragment Slash], wiping the group out.

At least 300 [Zhan Long] third advancement Swordsmen rushed forward. After receiving continuous attack from the 300 Swordsmen, the

defensive formation began to break down. At the same time, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Fox and other long range attackers focused their attacks on the Knights from behind. The opponents had far underestimated the attack power of [Zhan Long].

“Shit!”

Wang Ze Cheng stumbled back a few steps, and his face ashened, “I thought we could hold out for at least half an hour. How come we can’t even hold them back for ten minutes. Get back and block them! Focus your attacks on their front line! Kill them one by one! [Zhan Long] members have too much health and defense. We can’t kill them all together.

Wind Walker nodded, “I got it, Brother Cheng!”

From their back, a group of Mages started to focus their spells on our front line heavy armor attackers. In the next moment, one of our Lv 66 Swordsmen was consumed by fireballs. Next, they locked onto our frontline Assassin – Yue Qing Qian.

“Huh?”

Qing Qian raised her elegant eyebrows and picked up her dagger as she immediately somersaulted backwards to retreat. In her original position, “Pa Pa Pa” a mass of arrows missed their target. Next, the little beauty’s cape flew up as she activated [Absolute Step]. Her leather shoes slid with a “Shua Shua Shua” as she quickly dashed in a Z formation to dodge the enemies arrows and spells.

Wang Ze Cheng’s face turned green. His mouth twitched as he said, “I said.... don’t target Yue Qing Qian using long-range fire power. If the distance is too far then the critical damage wouldn’t be enough and you wouldn’t be able to kill that expert Assassin. Target Old K now!”

“Shua!”

A beautiful shadow fell from the sky. It was the little miss Matcha descending towards Old K. With a raise of her golden shield, [Heaven’s Shield] activated and she muttered under her breath, “Old K, you can

retreat now! They are coming to kill you!”

Old K picked up his battle axe and cut down another player as he unwillingly retreated. I gave a sigh of relief as this ferocious general finally learned how to retreat. On top of that, the way our [Zhan Long] members worked together to protect each other was becoming more and more synchronized. This was necessary for a guild to rise up!

.....

Within the short 30 minutes, more than half of [Hero's Mound: First Division] died, while [Zhan Long] had advanced 1000 yards, pushing [Hero's Mound] into the canyon's impasse. At the same time, Wang Jian, Wang Jiang, and Breaking Dawn lead [Zhan Long: First Division] to attack from behind. This meant that [Hero's Mound]'s strength would be greatly cut down. Wang Ze Cheng picked up his long spear and charged forward but he still couldn't lose Wang Jian and Li Mu's chase. His frustration soon became rage.

“Kill Wang Ze Cheng and end the fight!” I shouted as I raised my sword.

I hacked forward with my Emperor Qin's Sword. The blade began shining the light of a [Whirlwind Slash]. Wang Ze Cheng's movement wasn't too shabby as he quickly leaned to one side and successfully blocked with his shield. I slyly grinned and raised my left hand to pull out the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword. Taking the opportunity and cast another flurry of combos!

After a chain of damage numbers flew up, Wang Ze Cheng's face was astonished, “What?”

Clearly, he didn't know that I could use two swords yet.

.....

“Peng!”

An arrow shot through Wang Ze Cheng's throat and blood splattered all over. Our gifted Dancing Forest had sniped [Hero Mound's First Division]'s Guild Leader!

With one foot against Wang Ze Cheng's back, I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and roared out, "Cang Cheng is already dead. What is [Hero's Mound: First Division] fight for? Get the fuck out and I might not kill you all!"

Chapter 357: SSS Level Main Quest

“Ka Cha.....”

One of the [Hero's Mound: First Division] Berserkers dropped his battle axe and reached down to pick it up, saying blankly, “Did we really just lose like that? Didn't those dumbasses from [Flying Dragon] say they would help us? Where the f*ck are they?”

On the side, an Archer smiled coldly and said, “[Flying Dragon]? You were hoping for a trash guild like them to help us? Hmph, they're out a thousand yards, dragged down by [Blood Contract] and Han Bei Song. They can't even save themselves....”

The Berserker gritted his teeth, “Honestly, why are we provoking [Zhan Long] in the first place? I still can't figure out what's so important about Firestone Canyon.”

The Archer pointed out, “Nothing really, it's for the sake of protecting our ally [Mass Burial]....

The Berserker balled a fist, his eyes filled with rage, “[Mass Burial]?! Those motherf*ckers? Three days ago, one of [Mass Burial]'s flag bearers met with one of our female Healers and took her into his guild. He then had her blacklist all of her friends. Does that kind of a guild even count as an ally? Motherf*cker, if I knew that we were helping [Mass Burial] deal with [Zhan Long] in the first place, I wouldn't have participated at all!”

The Archer was astonished, “Dumbass, be quiet. If Windy Walker heard you he'd definitely keep on killing you till you hit level O!”

The Berserker gave out a cold laugh and raised his battle axe. He declared loudly, “Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I ain't fighting this battle any longer. Can I leave?”

From a distance, I nodded, “Go back to the city then. Nobody will block your path!”

“Got it!”

After a flash of light, the first person from [Hero's Mound: First

Division] left, there was a second, and then a third. Soon, more followed, and in no time at all more than half the guild had left the scene, leaving around only 700 total to fend for themselves. Under the pursuit of Old K and Li Mu, this lonely few would only serve to give us equipment.

.....

Another half-hour had passed, and the main [Zhan Long] guild, with its First division, had pressured nearly 700 members of [Hero's Mound] to leave. The rest all became corpses that littered the ground of the Firestone Canyon.

Li Mu brought over a thousand of Wang Jian's men to the forest to reinforce [Blood Contract]'s offence, only to have the fight end 30 minutes later. Five thousand of [Flying Dragon]'s men were utterly defeated. Even Drunken Spear was forced to retreat into the forest after his health had reached critical levels.

Raising my Emperor Qin's Sword, I stepped into the silver forest. My sword had already maxed out at 50 stacks of [Kill for Blood] long before the ground was covered with corpses. Looking back I saw the bodies of [Flying Dragon] strewn everywhere: more than 3500 total. All of them were waiting to revive, unfortunately for them [Blood Contract] gave no indication that they'd show mercy.

"Pei!"

After spitting on the corpses of [Flying Dragon], Han Bei Song growled, "To think that [Flying Dragon] would have a day like this. Motherf*cker has killed so many of [Blood Contract]'s members. There were even many times when we've had hundred men teams grinding events that have failed because of [Flying Dragon]. It got even worse afterwards. They ended up directly attacking and PKing us. Bastards! This time, I, Han Bei Song, will sit here for three days and three nights to have my revenge!"

I stepped onto a green moss covered stone and looked into the distance map and said, "Guard these bodies for three days? Isn't that a bit too much, [Blood Contract] only has so many people? If you guys just guard [Flying Dragon] you might piss off Soaring Dragon. If the 20,000 players

from [Flying Dragon] all come at once, heh heh, [Blood Contract] might have to go back empty handed.....”

Han Bei Song shot a glance at me, then broke into a smile, “No problem. We still have allies like [Zhan Long]. Besides, I’ve become friends with the Guild Masters of [Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], and [Ruined Bones] recently and we’ve talked about making an alliance. Once these three guilds merge, then we’ll easily have more than 10,000 members. Heh heh, then we’ll be able to make our stand in Ba Huang City. Soon we’ll become of equal standing with the other big guilds like [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon]!”

“Oh?” I was puzzled, “[Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], and [Ruined Bones] want to merge?”

“Yea!” Han Bei Song continued, “It’s something I heard from Who’s Blue recently.”

Under the maple tree, Who’s Blue carried a Mage staff, leaning it against the tree to rest and nodded, “Yea, I heard Misty Clouds bring it up. He said that, separated, they were weak but together, they would be strong, and so [Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], and [Ruined Bones] were going to merge. On top of that, I’ve also heard that Fighting in Blood, Sword Reborn and Misty Clouds have been meeting offline and have settled on a treaty. This new guild would be pretty united, all that’s missing right now is something to catalyze their creation....”

TL Note: an idiom referring to the fact that they’ll make their mark on the world and prove that they’re the top boss.

I couldn’t help but smile, “Oh? If they already decided to merge, why do they need a catalyst?”

Who’s Blue replied, “The three big guilds will merge into one and become a super guild. They need an extremely strong person to become their Guild Master. On top of that, this person needs to have a sound reputation that everyone knows, but after the recent Rise of the Heroes tournament, Misty Clouds had the highest achievement, and even he was only one of the top 32 players. His CBN ranking is only 87th, and so.....

They need to wait for the right moment. Once someone from within the three big guilds suddenly has an exponential increase in battle potential, then, they can merge!”

I nodded and said, “Not bad, they’ve thought over this thoroughly. If they don’t have someone to assert absolute dominance become the Guild Master, then this new guild will definitely suffer a lot of slander. Besides, Ba Huang City has too many large-scale guilds. Firestone Canyon, Ba Huang Forest has PK’s every day. If they don’t have a fist that’s strong enough, they’ll never be able to take hold of a piece of land long enough to survive.”

Who’s Blue slyly smiled and said, “Mhm, that’s very true.”

Han Bei Song optimistically said, “Uh.... I just got Misty Clouds message. He says he wants to borrow both of our Healers, Who’s Blue and Not Red Yet.... for a quest....”

“Oh? What level quest?” I asked, puzzled.

“An SSS tier quest.....” Han Bei Song broke into a grin, “Misty Clouds’ luck isn’t bad, to actually get an SSS tier main quest. Heh heh, on top of that it’s a large-scale quest and has a 50 person limit, so he came to us to borrow some help. Rent fee.....1000G per person. Besides, assuming we do complete the quest, we might get even more compensation.....”

“They only need two Healers?” I asked.

Han Bei Song slapped his forehead and smiled, “Yea I know right. They don’t care for a warrior type player like me. SSS tier quest isn’t like playing house. I feel like they’ll definitely borrow some people from [Zhan Long] as well. Hehe, Guild Master Xiao Yao, why don’t you just wait and collect the fees.....”

“Yea, alright....”

.....

Once I said that, I suddenly got a message requesting help from Misty Clouds—

“Guild Master Zi Zai, I have something to discuss....”

“Go for it!” I frankly said.

Misty Clouds laughed out and said, “Then I won’t beat around the bush. I just accepted a quest. It’s a quest from the Ba Huang City Duke Luo Lei, where I must lead 1000 of Ba Huang City’s NPC soldiers to escort Ba Huang City’s princess to a marriage in Jiu Li City. This is a government arranged marriage, and the quest is especially cruel. While we’re on the road, there’ll be a large amount of bandits that will thirst for this imperial princess. Once this princess is kidnapped, then everyone who takes on this quest will lose 5 levels and 10 points of charm. So, I plan to invite a few truly strong players to help in this quest. [Zhan Long] has a lot of experts and I hope to borrow 7 people to help boost our strength in this quest.....”

I nodded and went straight to the point, “Misty Clouds, just give me the list of names. I’ll tell you what I think of it, and if I don’t have any problems with it then I’ll just lend them to you.”

“Alright!”

Misty Clouds happily said, “I need two main tanks to block the monsters. Knights are the best so I want Strawberry Matcha and One Second Warrior. Also, I need long-ranged control, so I need Dancing Forest. On top of that, I need three Assassins to control the rhythm of the BOSS skills, and so I want Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, and Wolf. Lastly, I need a long range DPS, so Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands should work. Just these 7 people. As for Guild Master Zi Zai, you are [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, so I don’t dare ask for you. If the quest actually does fail and I make you lose 5 levels, then I wouldn’t be able to handle that responsibility. He he, so I just want these 7 people. Everyone’s commission would be 2000G. If you would just tell them, that any equipment the BOSS drops would be decided based on roll. I, Misty Cloud, am not Jian Feng Han, and I hope that they would believe in my reputation!”

I pondered for a bit and finally said, “Misty, I think you should bring in a

few more Healers or else you wouldn't be able to take the damage. You would need at least 10 or more Healers. You can freely use our miss Matcha, since her attack is extremely high, as well as her health and defense. As long as she doesn't die, the BOSS is basically doomed to die and so you must protect her!"

"Alright, I got it. Can you tell them that then? Tonight at 8 o'clock sharp, the event will begin."

"Alright, I'll let you know their response!"

"Thanks!"

.....

And thus, I invited Matcha, Dancing Forest and the other 7 people into a private team and briefly told them about Misty Cloud's quest—

Wolf said, "Brother Xiao Yao, I don't think this was very rational. Why is it that even I was invited, and yet Misty Clouds didn't invite you to participate in this quest? Logically speaking, Brother Xiao Yao's stamina is perfect for being the main tank. On top of that, you have a support like the Flaming Tiger God. Why would they want me to enter the quest and not you? There's a 50 person limit and yet there's no you....."

Qing Qian pouted, "That's right, we'll only be invincible with Brother Xiao Yao...."

One Second Hero smiled, "Hehe"

Matcha asked, "One Second Hero, why are you smiling?"

One Second Hero made a fist and said, "Maybe your gaming experience is higher than mine, but you don't have as much people experience as me. Think about it this way, Misty Clouds and Sword Reborn are both warrior type players. They want to be the main close-combat DPS player. If Guild Master Xiao Yao joins this quest, then they're places as the main close-combat DPS will most likely be affected. If a sword or battle axe drops then there'd be one more person to roll for it. Didn't they say before that three big guilds were going to merge and that they needed a strong leader? Because of this, either Misty Clouds or Sword Reborn has to

obtain the best drop and they must not let someone as strong as Guild Master become the main character!”

Dancing Forest raised her long bow and pursed her lips, “Then, we shouldn’t be a part of small tricks like this. Hmph, I didn’t think that Misty Clouds would be so defensive of our Little Zai Zai...”

The corners of my mouth twitched as I said, “Little Forest, you can’t say that. Misty Clouds motivation is pretty simple, it’s for the sake of creating a Guild Master worthy of the three guilds. When we’re playing games, doesn’t everyone want to become the ruler? Misty’s decision is something that any strong player ought to consider. Thus, we shouldn’t change anything because of me. You guys should go be a part of that quest, an SSS tier quest would give you at least 10 points of charm, and that’s a priceless reward. We’re already pretty lucky that 7 of our people are going in. [Zhan Long]’s getting a lot out of it too, 2000G of commission means 10,000 RMB, it isn’t bad at all!”

Qing Qian was puzzled, “Then... Brother Xiao Yao, what will you be doing?”

I smiled, “Me? I’ll take Li Mu and Wang Jian and continue to guard the [Mass Burial] corpses. No matter what they do today, I will definitely stop them with all I have. Let the players of [Mass Burial] become completely helpless in Ba Huang City!”

“Alright!”

Chapter 358: Breezy Swordstyle

We camped the bodies until it was 10pm. Matcha, Wolf, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Yue Qin Qian, and Dancing Forest had already gone to complete [Misty Palace]'s quest 2 hours ago, and I had no clue how they had been doing since. While they were in the middle of the quest, they had no way of contacting the outside world. Thinking about it, they were probably pretty well off, if anything. Misty Clouds had invited a lot of top tier experts to join in, and besides, Qing Qian was there. Based on her strength as CBN ranked 18th, her ability to cripple BOSS skills should be quite high. And with Wei Liang, she should be able to decrease the pressure of killing a BOSS by at least 10%.

.....

I stood on a quiet little path in Green Qilin Valley. Lv 77 monsters respawned all over the place; there were no other players. Trees surrounded the area and bushes hid the small path away from the outside world. The sunlight trickled down through the tree canopy, casting a looming shadow over the path. This was the northernmost part of Green Qilin Valley, a forbidden place that stretched down to the bottom of the Ice Ridge Mountains with The Ocean of No Return lying further north.

This endless sea, The Ocean of No Return, thus named because it was also a forbidden area. Any fool brave enough to venture in its waters have been spirited away, hundreds of sailors and entire boats have all but vanished. Many have long since given up in settling the area, and no ports were ever built near the area. What's more, if one were to stand up high enough they would be able to see numerous hurricanes gliding across the water, setting an ominous chill in their bone. Legends hold that huge waves and powerful sea monsters capable of mass destruction lurk in the waters. I myself do not know if these stories are true, but you can ask the drunk sailors at the bar later.

Standing on a path in Green Qilin Valley, everywhere I looked there wasn't any sign of other players. Only a few dead leopard corpses were lying around, having not respawned yet.

I stood there silently and calmly, pulling out my Emperor Qin's Sword and Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword. When I held them out in front of me, I could feel the circulation of Qi condense in my body. As expected, the designers of [Destiny] made every experience profound. I could feel the flow of Qi in the game, clearly demonstrating that I had an advantage over ordinary players.

The sky and the earth harmoniously merged together as I recalled what the old man told me—

“Kid, in training in the way of the sword, you must remember we derive nothing and everything from nature. Once every stroke of your blade flows with the wind, harmonizes with the earth, and is aligned with the heavens, your strength will blossom beyond man's imagination. Only at such a point will you have reached the highest echelon of Qi!”

“Though, a brat with such limited talent and comprehension such as yourself, may never have an understanding sufficient enough to reach such a realm, even if you managed to live up to my age, hei hei...”

“Go die old geezer, you old fart!”

“Little brat, getting rebellious, are you? Go down the mountain and buy some food, I want to eat Kung Pao Chicken and Fish Flavored Pork. If I don't eat these in one hour, I won't teach you any techniques for a whole month!”

“Oh, wise master must have heard wrong, I was saying you were brilliant and amazing...”

“Enough of your excuses, go buy the food!”

.....

Remembering up to that point, I couldn't help but feel the corners of my mouth twitch upward. Opening my eyes, hua hua, I saw the leaves around me begin to dance as a gentle cyclone began to form. The tips of my swords began to radiate dense blue and red lights, emitting hot and cool air around it. This was the power of the yin and yang effect! I waved my Emperor Qin's Sword forward and used my Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword to

continue the rapid strikes, synchronizing with mother nature.

“Shua Shua Shua Shua”

The shadow of my sword whistled through the alley, leaving behind long slashes along the walls. “Keng!” An oppressive force suddenly stopped the flow of air, causing the blade in my hand to halt. “Peng!” The Deep Sea Cold Sword dropped onto the stone floor, piercing into the rock. I could barely keep the Emperor Qin’s Sword in my hand, forcing me to retreat several steps backward!

“Pa....”

Dropping to my knees, I could feel my breath getting heavier. This was the system backlash from failing to create a skill. Just as I thought, I couldn’t put together random quick slashes....

I frowned and stood up. Walking over, I pulled out my Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword, and raised both of my arms so that my blades were parallel to the ground and each other. I closed my eyes and meditated calmly. I began waving my swords abruptly once more, creating bright green slashes in the air. Just as I expected, the Qi in the game materialized. My Divine Battle Boots violently kicked off the ground as my two swords lashed out, one after another. “Shua Shua Shua” seven slashes quickly followed. However, just as before, a “Peng” resounded throughout the alley, and the oppressive force pushed me back. Once again, I knelt to the ground from the sickening pressure on my chest. I had failed once again.

Sitting down with a thump, I held the two swords, and quietly leaned against the tree as I fell into deep thought.

The old man said before that this swordplay had actually been lost for 800 years. Legend has it that the skill was created by an expert from the Northern Song Dynasty, who had combined the Daoist yin and yang theories with the specialties of dual bladed sword play. It was a style that utilized the firmness of the blades. This was the most powerful sword style used by the master practitioners of the Wudang Mountains. By the time the old fart gave me this book, it was already 800 years old. At that time, I was so ignorant that I blindly believed all of it. But now that I

think about it there was ‘Printed in Kenting, Taiwan’ written in fine prints on the bottom of the book.....

Later on, while I was playing around, I destroyed the book. That made the old man give me a beating..... Now that I think about it, that sword style was the strongest twin sword style that I can remember.

Song Yang Sword Style. This was the original name of the technique. However, after 5 years of arduous training, my “unique” take on the sword moves had changed quite a bit. I emphasized less on the firmness of the blade but more on the agility. The killing potential didn’t decrease too much, especially against experts. I had even renamed it as something else: “Flying Swordplay”. As a naive youngster, I had named it that because I believed that the only people who could be considered strong were those who could fly and kill gods.

However, I had been painfully beaten up by the old guy the last time I practiced this sword style. He had said that my sword style didn’t seem like one. In the end, the old man “left his home”, and his last words to me before leaving had been to continue studying this “Flying Swordplay”. Based on my relationship with him, this meant that the old man had actually recognized the value of my swordplay.

.....

I channeled energy through my legs, and suddenly straightened my waist to somersault through the air. Reaching out with my hands to grasp the two hilts, I continued to test the Flying Swordplay. However, every time I tried, it would always rebound after seven slashes. In reality, the Flying Swordplay’s true quintessence was its fast break. Its rapid, forceful chain attacks led the opponent to enter the user’s domain, with each attack becoming increasingly more powerful. The two blades formed a perfect combination, although mastering them in the game was a bit difficult.

Practicing that over and over again was similar to the the waves I felt when I was learning the sword back when I first picked it up. I knew that I hadn’t yet understood it because my connection with the game wasn’t

good enough. Otherwise, I would've definitely mastered it. The mysterious of [Destiny] numbered far more than I had imagined, enough to make me delve much deeper to understand things.

At 1 a.m., a "Di" sound rang out as General Li Mu sent a message, "Xiao Yao, just now, 200+ people from [Mass Burial] revived while we were off guard. They all ran into the cover of the snow. Do we chase after them or not?"

I thought about it for a bit, "There's no need to chase after them. Leave behind 500 elite members to stand guard overnight, and let the rest go offline to sleep. Quite a few people have to go to work or school tomorrow..."

Li Mu replied, "Ok, then what should we do next?"

"Throw off all the people guarding the bodies, and let [Mass Burial]'s member revive. Then continue to closely observe their actions. After we capture their next objective, we can initiate our attack at any moment!"

Li Mu smiled, "Haha, I understand. This is for the sake of forcing [Mass Burial]'s towards death's door. I've got it!"

"Oh, also, purchase all of the Guild Prestige Tablets from all three major cities!"

"Ok, got it!"

.....

As I was not in a hurry to level, I continued to test out my custom skill. I needed to master this Flying Swordplay, or else I wouldn't possess a unique storm of attacks the represented me alone. Once I really mastered the Flying Swordplay, I would be able to wildly attack and sweep away everything in my way. The Flying Swordplay really only had one style; as long as this succession of wild attacks kept hitting its target in rapid succession, that single chain of attacks would be enough to kill even the most powerful close combat expert!

"Di!"

At 3am, a message from General Li Mu came in, "We found it out. Not Ordinary dispatched 200 people to the south of Ba Huang Forest for a mission. It's said to be an A rank task, shared by 50 people. The other 150 people are clearing their path. The final reward is an Emperor Tier axe. What do you think?"

I smiled and raised my sword, "What else is there to say? Dispatch 500 brothers back to the city, and we'll directly go and kick [Mass Burial]'s asses. Let's make sure they won't be able to do a single thing today!"

"Ok!"

I fished out a return scroll to head back to the city. A white light appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City and soon, [Zhan Long]'s 500 people group had finished gathering. We all left the city together, racing southwards.

.....

20 minutes later, quite a few players that were spending the night leveling up in a vast forest were killing monsters. In the distance, I could already see the densely packed crimson names. That's right, it was [Mass Burial]'s members currently advancing through a temple map. Their target seemed to be inside the temple. Off in the distance, Not Ordinary raised his battleaxe and loudly declared, "Everyone, make sure to focus. [Zhan Long] wants to exterminate all of us? F*ck that, I don't believe that Xiao Yao Zi Zai really has that type of remarkable ability. Just wait and see, I'll make [Zhan Long] and Xiao Yao Zi Zai learn that [Mass Burial] isn't someone they can mess around with! Mm, well, let's first get that f*cking Emperor Tier axe in our hands...."

A Wind Elf Archer desperately flapping his wings flew out from the forest. Breathing heavily, he shouted, "Boss, bad news!"

"What happened? Why are you so panicked? You look as if a fire is burning your eyebrows or something. Didn't I once say something like, 'stay composed even if Mt. Tai collapsed'?"

"Boss! The [Zhan Long] players are here! They have 500 people 800 meters north of us led by Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Li Mu and Wang Jiang!"

Not Ordinary felt a chill down his spine, “F*ck! This endless killing spree... it’s making me so f*cking mad. Everyone, turn around and engage in battle with [Zhan Long]! Also, go contact [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound] to ask for reinforcements!”

Next to him, Youyi’s face ashened, “Boss! Cang Cheng said he went offline to rest. [Hero’s Mound: First Division]’s two Vice Guild Masters are playing dead as well. [Flying Dragon]..... Soaring Dragon and his guys still have their corpses guarded by Han Bei Song.....”

“What?!?”

Not Ordinary’s face turned white, “Is God trying to destroy my [Mass Burial]? Go contact.... contact Wonderland Nightclub’s boss, Wang Zong....”

Youyi shivered, “..... Boss, this Wang Zong is an amateur. He’s still Lv 17.... What the hell can he do?”

Not Ordinary showed an angry expression, “Did I say that we were asking Wang Zong to save us? What I said was to..... get Wang Zong to go get two beauties for me..... I’m gonna go cool down a bit!”

“Then what are we going to do here?”

“Everyone log off!”

Chapter 359: Another Guild Prestige Battle

“Keng!”

I drew the Emperor Qin’s Sword and bellowed, “Full speed ahead!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others all drew their swords and activated [Haste]. A group of Wind Elf [Zhan Long] members darted across the air and rushed forward at top speed. Streaks of ice and fire roared as [Triple Arrow]s cascaded into the midst of the crowd. In the end, some members of [Mass Burial] couldn’t log off in time since they were interrupted abruptly and didn’t finish waiting for the 10 seconds to get offline.

“Boom!”

Like lightening, my Flaming Tiger God activated [Burstfire Raid] and charged into the middle of the crowd. I gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword and continued cutting people down. I finally drew near Not Ordinary. The imperious man who could cover the sky with one hand in real life was facing me in the game. Yet, he had a helpless and angry expression on his face. He raised his battle axe and roared furiously, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai. How have I offended you? What have I done that would make you ruthlessly destroy my [Mass Burial]?”

“Shua!”

With a slant of my body, I not only beautifully dodged Not Ordinary’s attack, but also slashed through his chest as my Emperor Qin’s Sword glowed with the light of a [Fierce Ice Blade], bringing out 3652 damage. My mouth curved into a smile as I replied, “You are the claws of Cang Cheng’s [Hero Mound: First Division] and ambushed [Zhan Long] at the Magic Tracking Forest. We’re just settling some old scores and eradicating [Mass Burial] from Ba Huang City. Not Ordinary, accept your fate. You should understand that the winner takes all!”

“I understand shit!”

Wei Fan spun his battle axe and struck my shoulder with a [Skyshaker Slash]. It seemed like he decided to put up a desperate fight. The energy

of the [Skyslayer Slash] that enveloped the battle axe shuddered as it cut into my shoulder and inflicted 1979 damage. His attack was definitely not weak since he was fully equipped with all of the highest quality equipment. It was even a bit more powerful than The Seventh Tang's attack.

I raised my arm and knocked away the battle axe with a "Peng!" I then swung my Emperor Qin's Sword forward and a [Wind Blade] lacerated Wei Fan's shoulders, bringing out a damage of 4002. This time, he was instantly killed!

"Owhhh....."

Wei Fan weakly dropped to the ground and begrudgingly fell to his knees before me. I gave him a flying kick with my foot to his chest just like kicking a dead man after killing him. "Shua" Wei Fan's body tumbled far away into the grassland and fell still. Wei Fan must have seen what I had done before he died. I was purposely provoking him. The more anger he felt, the more intense his thirst for revenge!

Li Mu, Old K and the others swept past me one by one. Within ten minutes, the forest returned to its past tranquility, as hundreds of [Mass Burial] Players lay dead. Fox, who was leading a group of people to clean the battlefield, grinned and said, "Tsk,tsk. This day has been so productive. [Mass Burial] has given us a lot of equipment!"

I nodded, "Fox, take the brothers who have red names to train and log off only after the red names have been cleared!"

"Got it!"

A few minutes later, Wang Jian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao. Not Ordinary, Youyi and a few of the main members of [Mass Burial] have already gone offline. What should we do? Should we continue to camp the bodies or...?"

I smiled in response, "No need. Once your red names have been cleared, you should rest. It's already dawn. Not Ordinary probably won't get online to grind. Let's talk about it tomorrow. Have the brothers that are staying online constantly pressure [Mass Burial]'s activities. If any of [Mass

Burial]'s members take a single step out of Ba Huang City, then immediately attack. That will be our plans for now.

As I finished speaking, I turned and looked at Li Mu and inquired, "None of the other large guilds are making any moves right?"

Li Mu shook his head with a smile, "Nope. [Vanguard] is having fun spectating the scene. Jian Feng Han even sent a group of people to observe our battle with [Mass Burial]. [Hero's Mound] and [Flying Dragon] have no intention of making any moves against us. The same goes with [Prague]. While we were in Firestone Canyon, Yan Zhao Warrior even dispatched a group of ten people to watch the fight from far away; they even began cheering for us.....

Awkwardly, I responded "Okay. That uncle is really loving. Then, I'll prepare to log off now. You guys should also rest soon since there will probably be more harsh battles tomorrow. Not Ordinary is the type of person that would definitely retaliate and would never be humiliated without feeling any grudges. Within the next three days, Not Ordinary will definitely use all of his strength to attack [Zhan Long]!"

"Yes!"

I took out a [City Return Scroll] and used it. Just as I was about to get offline, I suddenly received a message from the Guild Master of [Zhan Long: First Division], Wang Jian. The message wrote, "Guild Master, are you searching for a Guild Prestige Tablet?"

"Yes. Why? General Wang, do you have any clues?"

"Yup! Seven minutes ago, the Guild Master of [Judgement] of Jiu Li City—Ye Lai received a Guild Prestige Tablet when he slaughtered an Emperor Tier BOSS. I heard that they left it in storage. You added Ye Lai as friend, right?"

"Okay. I got it! Thanks~~"

"You're welcome!"

I immediately opened my friend list, found Ye Lai's name and sent him a call request—

“Haha. Guild Master Zi Zai?” Ye Lai’s hearty laughter rang in my ears.

“Yep.” I nodded in response, “I heard Guild Master Ye Lai got a Guild Prestige Tablet in a battle, so I called you up. I wonder what Guild Master Ye Lai is going to do with that Guild Prestige Tablet?”

Ye Lai paused for a moment before responding, “Err..... actually Jiu Li City has a small guild that has been provoking [Judgement] for a while now. I wanted to beat them up for a long time. Yesterday, that guild leveled up to a 3rd rank guild with 1000 members. So I decided to use this Guild Prestige Tablet to initiate a battle with them. That way, I can truly give judgement to those scoundrels.”

I was speechless, “Those are just clowns, how about.....how about Guild Master Ye Lai do me a favor and sell me the Guild Prestige Tablet. I have a more important mission and I need this Guild Prestige Tablet to complete it. Truly, this Guild Prestige Tablet is too important to me. I hope Guild Master Ye Lai can grant my wish!”

Ye Lai pondered for a minute, then grinned, “Alright. I, Ye Lai, respect you, Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai, as a friend. This Guild Prestige Tablet..... will be my gift to you. Let’s not discuss about anything trivial; [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] should form an alliance. Once the largest main city, Tian Ling City, is opened, we will be facing mad guilds like [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound]. It’s better if we could become allies and fight against them rather than be devoured by each of them in the end.”

I nodded and smiled, “Yes, I was thinking the same. I will send you an alliance request now. After that I will immediately depart to Jiu Li City and receive this Guild Prestige Tablet?”

“No need!” In the dialogue box, Ye Lai waved his hand and guffawed, “I will send the top Assassin of [Judgement] to take the Guild Prestige Tablet to Ba Huang City now. He moves fast so it’ll take him at most an hour to get there. Guild Master Zi Zai, just wait in Ba Huang City’s northern market and he will contact you once he arrives.

Slightly anxious, I asked, “An Assassin, wouldn’t he be killed on his way here?”

“Don’t worry. That is a Wind Elf Assassin that can fly and prowl on the ground. It would be very difficult for people to catch him. Plus, he is the elder of [Judgement]. Even if he is at Ba Huang City, the other guilds should leave some respect for me and leave him alone.”

“True that, then I shall sit and wait!”

“Alright!”

In no time, a “Ding” rang. [Zhan Long] and [Judgement], the two big guilds had formed an alliance. In the guild channel, Li Mu burst out in laughter, “Hehe. We are now allies with [Judgement]. Great. This is our first step towards Tian Ling City!”

Wang Jian chuckled, “Looks like we can wait here a little longer. Something big will definitely happen today!”

Old K asked, “What kind of a big thing?”

Darling Duck answered, “Just sit and wait..... ”

.....

I set up a stall at Ba Huang City’s northern market. In the end, only 57 minutes had past before I heard the sound of wings flapping in the sky. I saw an Assassin dressed in black armor, folding the wings on his back slowly descend to the ground. Striding towards me with a soft smile, “Is this Guild Master Zi Zai? I am the delivery man. Please receive.....”

It was a young man around 25-38 years of age with cold eyes. He was a Lv 70 Assassin and the elder of [Judgement]. His ID is Jing Ke. Tsk, Tsk. Someone who can preregister such an ID must not be simple.

Jing Ke walked forward and opened the trading interface. A shiny Tablet was placed above. It was the Guild Prestige Tablet that Ye Lai, the Guild Master of [Judgement] had given me. When the trading was successful, I nodded and smiled, “Brother Jing Ke, please send my regards to Guild Master Ye Lai and thank him for his gift to [Zhan Long]. This Guild Prestige Tablet is like charcoal sent in a snowy weather. In the future, if [Zhan Long] can do anything to help [Judgement] in the future, we will definitely do everything we can without any hesitation!”

Jing Ke chuckled, “Yes. I knew it, my Guild Master never misjudges people. Guild Master Zi Zai is a person that is true to his word. I shall leave then. I expect to see the rise of [Zhan Long] in Ba Huang City and that we will be able to create a virtual empire once Tian Ling City opens!

“Of course!”

Under my gaze, Jing Ke took out a [City Return Scroll] and went back to Jiu Li City. I held Guild Prestige Tablet and headed straight towards the location of Ba Huang City’s ruler, Luo Lei, at crazy speed!

Duke Luo Lei was leaning on a sword with a teacup in his other hand. He was standing beside the big map formed on the sand table and observing the war at the frontier. My arrival caught his attention and he immediately turned around and recognized me. He then inquired, “Young Warrior, I know you. You have come to Ba Huang City again. What’s the matter?”

I fished out the Guild Prestige Tablet and under the condition of submitting 50000 gold coins, I answered, “I want to issue a challenge!”

“Okay!”

In the next moment, the sound of the system bell resounded in the air —

“Ding!”

System Notification: Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai has successfully used a Guild Prestige Tablet. His guild, [Zhan Long], issued a challenge against guild [Mass Burial]. Both guilds will each dispatch 200 people to participate in the battle. In the end, the winner will receive an abundant reward and the loser will bear a heavy price—guild disbandment. The official challenge will start at noon 12 o’clock on the dot.

.....

The instant the Guild Prestige Tablet came out, [Zhan Long]’s guild channel nearly blew up with chatter—

Old K exclaimed in delight, “Haha. The wait is finally over!”

Li Mu said, "That's great! Tsk, tsk. Achieving the goal in one leap!"

Dong Cheng Lei commented, "Er..... Brother Xiao Yao is about to exterminate [Mass Burial]..... "

Darling Duck exclaimed, "Hehe. I can finally see the hot blooded side of Guild Master. This is how guilds like [Mass Burial] should be treated. Just destroy them and don't leave them any means for survival!"

Gentle Touch asked, "Cough, cough. Why didn't you submit the Guild Prestige Tablet and request a guild war with [Hero's Mound: First Division] or [Vanguard]?"

I coughed and smiled, "No matter what, [Hero's Mound: First Division] is still a guild under Q-Sword. Q-Sword can still turn a blind eye when we PK in the field, but if we submit the Guild Prestige Tablet to demolish them, that would be equivalent to slapping the face of [Hero Mound]'s Guild Master. How do you expect Q-Sword to find a way out of this embarrassment? As for [Vanguard], Jian Feng Han has too many connections. For now, we are uncertain of winning in a 300VS300 positional combat between [Zhan Long] and [Hero's Mound], so it's better to not make any risks. The same goes with [Vanguard]. Otherwise, with Jian Feng Han's personality, he would have definitely collected a Guild Prestige Tablet to exterminate [Zhan Long].

After saying this, I concluded, "Alright, it's time for bed. The Guild Prestige battle will start 8 hours from now. I will choose [Zhan Long]'s top members who have entered the top 2000 in the CBN Battle Net to participate in this battle. This fight must be won and shall not end in failure! Everyone sleep tight and participate in the battle with 100% vigor!"

"Okay!"

Chapter 360: Victorious

“Du Du.....”

My phone rang, waking me from my dreams. I checked the time, 11 o'clock. It was the little miss calling. As soon as I picked up the phone, I heard Wan Er's voice, “Li Xiao Yao, have you woken up yet?”

“Yup. Just woke up.”

“And?”

“Err..... the guild prestige battle happens at noon. Wan Er, I don't think I have enough time..... ”

Lin Wan Er muttered, “But..... but you haven't eaten with me for a long time!!”

I couldn't help but smile when I heard the slight whine in her voice, “Alright, wait ten minutes for me and let's find a fast food restaurant and eat our lunch quickly. Alright?”

“Okie, Okie. I will wait for you downstairs!”

“Alright!”

.....

I rolled out of bed, put on a nice shirt and finished washing up before going downstairs. One could see the usual scene from the school path at Liu Hua University: A handsome young man wearing casual clothes dashing towards the girl's dorm. “Pa” His phone dropped on the ground and he quickly halted to pick it up, then continued dashing forward. Guys who act like this are usually meeting their girlfriend or attending a class. Unfortunately, both assumptions were wrong, I was rushing to fetch the little miss and eat fast food with her.

From afar, Lin Wan Er walked towards me from the girl's dorm. She looked at me happily with a charming smile on her snow white face as her dress fluttered in the wind. She was indescribably beautiful. Pursing her lips, and looking at me with her head tilted, she then giggled, “You're

doing good. You actually dared to start a guild battle against [Mass Burial]. [Zhan Long] is about to rebel against the heavens. Can no one in Ba Huang City stop you guys?

I burst out in laughter, “No. It’s just that [Mass Burial]’s members really need a good beating. Provoking us again and again. This time, we will beat the sh*t out of them!”

“Ya. Okay..... ”

I stood in front of Wan Er and asked, “What are we eating?”

“Let’s head to the cafeteria and eat some fried rice. How does that sound?”

“Okay, Okay. It’s my treat! What about Dong Cheng?”

“She caught a new pet and is training like crazy right now. I’ll just take out a portion

of fried rice for her and that should be fine.”

“Okay!”

We ordered three portions of fried rice at the school’s cafe. I sat opposite of the little miss and started eating. As I ate, I stealthily glanced up at her. It had been a long time since I last saw Wan Er; I really did miss her. But once I raised my head, I saw Wan Er lower hers and her collar started drooping. The neckline revealed a deep crevice that was formed by full and magnificent snowy white flesh. It was like the most beautiful snowy mountain valley on earth, an irresistible attraction.

“Pu..... ”

I couldn’t contain myself and spat out my food.

Lin Wan Er lifted her head and stared at me, and then lowered her head and saw the beautiful scene at her neckline. Immediately, her face flushed as red as the apples during autumn and glared at me bashfully, “Humph. Don’t look!”

I was slightly speechless, “It was just an accident..... plus, you can’t blame me.....”

Wan Er pursed her red lips and said, "Fine then, I won't wear clothes like this in the future. The neckline is just too big....."

"Don't....."

"What!" The little beauty glared at me.

Slightly palpitating, I replied, "Err..... You can still wear it. If you don't, I won't get anymore benefits....."

Lin Wan Er's face turned completely red. She narrowed her beautiful eyes and glared at me, " Humph. Asshole. Why do I want to beat you up so much?"

I lowered my head and continued gobbling up my rice before saying, "I need to go back early to fight the guild prestige battle. As the Guild Master, I have to be responsible. I don't wanna be late and get laughed at....."

"Ya. Ya! " Wan Er finished joking and obediently continued eating her lunch as she slowly finished her drink.

I looked up and found her beautiful eyes staring at me deeply with a light that I couldn't understand. I asked, " You.....why are you looking at me secretly?"

Wan Er's pretty face became even redder, "No..... when did I ever look at you! I was looking at the basketball court....."

As she was talking, she immediately lowered her head and continued playing with the rice in her bowl. I felt like laughing when I saw her, but something in my heart felt warm. I was confused with my own attitude, but I could tell that I had fallen deeper and deeper.

.....

After lunch, I sent Lin Wan Er back to her dorm and immediately returned to my dorm to get online.

"Shua!"

I appeared within Ba Huang City. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Fox, Bai Qi, Lian Po and the others were already there. Wang Jian, Wang Jiang, and

Rainy sister had even specially come from the First Division and joined the primary guild to help fight this Guild Prestige Battle. There was no other choice since Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, Wolf, Dancing Forest, and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands had been borrowed by Misty Cloud to do a SSS level main quest!

“Is the member list set?” I asked.

Li Mu answered, “Yup. It’s set. In this 200 member guild battle, our average level is 68.4. All of them are third advancement players. Powerful, right?”

I couldn’t help smiling, “Yes. We need that feeling. Let’s all prepare for battle. Although [Mass Burial] doesn’t have many strong men, they still cannot be underestimated!”

“Understood!” Wang Jian spoke, “I found out that [Mass Burial] wanted to borrow troops from Jiu Li City, and Fan Shu City. However, [Hero’s Mound], [Judgement], and [Legend] all rejected Not Ordinary’s request. In the end, Not Ordinary could only request 120+ high skilled players with a high price on the forum at 6 o’clock this morning, but he couldn’t get any of CBN’s top 100 players. He he, they were all just some mercenaries; their real battle power will probably not be a problem.”

Old K spoke, “Among the people in [Zhan Long] this time, we have 3 in the top 100: Li Brat, Li Mu, and Wang Jian. If Yue Qing Qian, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands were here, then it would have been even better.”

I nodded, “Yeah. This amount of strength is by far enough to demolish [Mass Burial]. We don’t need to be too strong. No need for a musket to kill a butterfly! There’s still 10 more minutes before the battle begins. Everyone, be prepared!”

“Okay!”

.....

At the next moment, the system notified us that we could enter the field. Ba Huang City seemed to twist and turn around us as a magical energy teleported us to the arena. As my eyes brightened up, a green

grassland panned in front of me and a plateau lay in the distance. It was the exact same battlefield as the one in the battle between [Valiant Bravery] and [Flying Dragon].

Standing within the protected energy barrier, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Darling Duck and a large group of [Zhan Long]'s players have already clenched their fists, waiting for battle. Fox asked, "Do we need to prepare a battle strategy?"

I smiled, "Just take the hill first. The side to take the highlands will be victorious. I will charge in the frontlines later while Darling Duck focuses on healing me. We'll use me to control their firepower while Li Mu and Wang Jian each take a group of people and strike from the sides to take down the main force of [Mass Burial]!"

"Roger it!"

.....

The seconds slowly ticked by. Soon, the energy barrier disappeared and the battle began

"Keng!"

I raised my hand and drew my Emperor Qin's Sword and roared, "Charge with me! We'll take the highlands! Charge!"

Breaking through the wind, I opened my palm and my Flaming Tiger God drifted out of the hexagram I cast. With [Zhan Long]'s 199 elite players behind me, we stormed out. The large group of people darted towards the uplands. I was leading through the use of [Haste] and my divine battle boots. But strictly speaking, my Flaming Tiger God was the fastest. It was ten meters ahead of me.

After we reached the highland, we came face to face with more than ten [Mass Burial]'s players. Perfect! Time to kill!

I suddenly halted and cast a [Seven Star Fragments Slash] with a wave of my hand!

"Oh no!"

A startled Wind Elf Archer didn't react soon enough and was engulfed by my [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. The Archer was killed instantly. I opened my hand again and the brilliance of the [Great Realm of Desolation] shot towards the heavens and cascaded down upon the enemies. A Swordsman shuddered and trembled as a damage number of 4231 appeared above his head as he died instantly.

My Flaming Tiger God roared furiously and advanced forward, but was constantly attacked by a group of Archers and Mages. I hastily commanded it to activate [Flame Armor] and streaks of flame armor appeared around the little tiger. With a roar, the Flaming Tiger God activated [Blood Drain]+[Fierce Roar]. The attack hit right into the dirt, scattering the mud and leaves everywhere!

“Form a defense line!”

A Lv 69 Knight abruptly smashed his shield on the ground. He was obviously a mercenary, he even had a scar on the side of his cheek. This guy was probably not a good person in real life, otherwise he wouldn't have worked for the notorious guild, [Mass Burial], for money.

“Pa!”

Dust flew up as I savagely accelerated forward. I leaped and furiously slashed down with my Emperor Qin's Sword tightly gripped by both of my hands!

“Peng!”

Fire sparks scattered and the Lv 69 Knight was knocked away along with his shield. In addition to the normal attack, my [Combo] resulted in a instant kill!

Behind me, Li Mu and Wang Jian led two groups and immediately flanked on both sides. The situation at the highlands was very straightforward. [Mass Burial]'s members completely abandoned the 112 corpses on the hill as they were no match for us.

.....

“F*ck!”

Below the hillside, Not Ordinary gripped his battle axe and scolded angrily, “Those useless f*cks. They bragged that they could definitely help [Mass Burial] demolish [Zhan Long]? F*ck, they even pocketed my 2 million+ and were just slaughtered by them so easily. Is this something a man would do?”

Youyi held his long sword, “Boss, [Zhan Long]’s members are too strong. On top of that Xiao Yao Zi Zai is leading the team himself. He..... he won third place in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament. Even Fang Ge Que was killed twice by him. Not to mention, Li Mu, General Wang Jian, and Old K aren’t easy to deal with. I think this is why big guilds in Fan Shy City and Jiu Li City refused to dispatch troops.....

Not Ordinary roared out, “So we just give up? Is.....is this really the end of [Mass Burial]?”

Youyi replied, “It’s alright. Our division, [Thousand Burial], will soon level up to level 3. This time, we have to recruit strong ones, or else we really can’t survive in this chaotic Ba Huang City.”

Not Ordinary nodded, “Okay. Everyone rush up with me. Even if it’s we die, we’ll die for a reason!”

.....

On the highlands, Fox held a gun and bellowed, “Ready to fire, let them die worthily!”

The sounds of guns rang loudly. Not Ordinary and Youyi collapsed under the array formed by 17 of our Musketeers. Wang Jian, Old K, and I rushed down the highlands and began another round of slaughtering. The end was near!

In less than 20 minutes, a bell resounded throughout the air—

“Ding!”

System Notification: The Guild Prestige Battle had ended. The final survival count was 87:0. Congratulations, Guild [Zhan Long], for winning by a margin of 87 people. As the losing guild, [Mass Burial] will be automatically disbanded and this name shall never be used again to build

a guild for the next 365 days. [Zhan Long] received 10% of the the competitor’s guild experience as reward. The MVP player of this Guild Prestige Battle is Xiao Yao Zi Zai. He killed 14 people and earned the reward of charm+8!

.....

Chapter 361: No Matter the Cost

After winning that victory, I got 8 points of charm stats. Compared to the last MVP reward, [Camouflage], this guild prestige battle's reward was obviously inferior. But it wasn't too bad. At least the 8 charm points were enough to learn two SSS rank skill books.

.....

The field was buzzing with excitement. [Zhan Long]'s members had all raised their weapons and killed their opponents within 20 minutes. Nothing like this had ever happened before in all 12 of the previous guild prestige battles in the three main cities and it was not because [Mass Burial] was too weak, but because Zhan Long was too strong. This even happened without Yue Qing Qian and the others. Otherwise, with the [Grip of the Firefox] and its fiery blasts, [Mass Burial] would have lost even faster!

“Shua!”

We were teleported out of the battlefield. Li Mu stood beside the city walls and guffawed, “Man, I thought there would be a great war. Who knew it would only take 20 minutes to finish off [Mass Burial]. Such a waste of excitement!”

Wang Jian laughed as he left the main guild to rejoin [Zhan Long: First Division] as the guildmaster, “It can't be helped. Our individual strengths are too strong and we have good teamwork. It's only normal for [Mass Burial] to lose. Look over there, the remains of [Mass Burial] are over there”

Everyone looked towards a corner of the square. Not Ordinary, Youyi, and other former members of [Mass Burial] all stood there, uniform in one aspect: all of them had lost the [Mass Burial] badge and had become solo players.

“Keng.....”

Not Ordinary dejectedly stood there as his battle axe fell on the bricks

of the city walls. His eyes swept over [Zhan Long]'s members, helplessly furious. He coldly muttered, "Zhan Long..... just you wait. I will definitely make you take the consequences!"

Beside him, Youyi softly reminded him, "Boss, let's join our guild's division first!"

"Okay"

A few minutes later, a [Thousand Burial] badge appeared on Not Ordinary's shoulder. And soon he became the guildmaster. This was his escape plan as he was able to possess another guild once [Mass Burial] was gone. However, based on what I knew, [Mass Burial] originally had only 400+ main forces. Not Ordinary was unwilling to recruit new members, which was probably because he wanted to maintain the strength of the artificials. Now, it would be different. If [Thousand Burial] still did not recruit new members, it would still be suppressed by [Zhan Long]. There was no use in relying on allies either. Wang Ze Cheng's attitude was very clear: At any critical moment, he would choose to protect [Hero's Mound] over [Hero's Mound: First Division].

.....

"Hehe....." Li Mu looked into the distance and smiled, "Boss, should we continue to slaughter [Thousand Burial] till they couldn't even take a step out of the city?"

I shook my head, "No need. We've already achieved our primary goals. Let's give up butchering [Thousand Burial] for now and talk about it after we see how they develop after a while. I still need to continue to observe them. Thank you everyone for your hard work! Go do what you need to do. Be it training or questing!"

"Roger that!"

I checked the time and realized that Misty Cloud had been working on the SSS rank quest for 14 hours. There was still no way of knowing their progress as they were in the quest map and couldn't be contacted by the outside world. However, Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, and the other sisters' names were still bright on my friend list, so there shouldn't have been any

problems. The quest was still going on. Plus, if the quest was completed, the system would definitely notify everyone as it was a SSS rank main story quest. No need to be nervous. Just wait patiently.

In the afternoon, I continued guarding a perilous map on the northern border of Ba Huang City. It wasn't too far from Green Qilin Valley, but the monsters were all above level 75, something I could train off of. Simultaneously, I continued using the dual sword style to kill the monsters in the desolated map, trying to understand the ways of attacking with Flying Swordplay one bit at a time. Even though I didn't receive any hints from the game, I had a feeling that, with time, I would be able to grasp its ways. I could tell from that warm feeling that always lingered in my wrist after I used the Flying Swordplay, a feeling I had in real life when I practiced it as well.

.....

Finally at 11 o'clock at night, a bell resounded in the sky above the all of the main cities. Misty Cloud's quest was complete—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Each player, please pay attention. The team led by player “Misty Cloud” has completed the SSS rank main story quest [On the Way]. All players who have participated in the quest will receive Level+1, Charm+10, Gold Coins+7000 and their reputation in the main city increase. Also, the leader of this quest, Player “Misty Cloud” received the final reward—[Four Divine Symbol Guardian Class Certificate]!

.....

“Damn. Four Divine Symbol Guardian?” I looked up into the sky, yet I didn't have a single clue as to what this hidden class was like.

I could finally hear the voices of Matcha, Yue Qing Qian, and Wolf in the guild chat again—

Matcha exclaimed, “Owhh. It's finally over. I am dead tired!”

Yue Qing Qian uttered, “I've been up for so long, Mommy will definitely scold me this time.....

Wolf said, "luckily, we didn't fail your expectations and finally completed this quest....."

Dancing Forest yelled, "Guildmaster! Calling Guildmaster!"

I answered, "Ya. I am here, Dancing Forest. What's up?"

Dancing Forest chuckled, "I got a description of the Fourth Holy Guardian class from Misty Clouds. Do you wanna check it out?"

"Ya. Show me!"

"Alright!"

Soon, Dancing Forest sent me a private message listing out all of the details of this hidden class—

[Four Divine Symbol Guardian]

Introduction: During ancient times, Heaven and Earth were in chaos. Four divine symbols* were born within the devastating battles between yin and yang. Earth, fire, water, and wind each respectively belonged to the four symbols of the East, South, West, and North. The ancient Eastern God sent Green Dragon, Phoenix, Black Tortoise and White Tiger to guard the four symbols. The Fourth Holy Guardian is the powerful warrior positioned above the sacred temple who guards the four spirits of the divine beasts. Legend has it that the Fourth Holy Guardian is able to harness the divine powers of the four symbols and is one of the strongest warriors of heaven and earth.

TL Note*: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Four_Symbols_\(China\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Four_Symbols_(China))

Class growth: Strength 1.2/Stamina 0.9/Agility 0.7/Spiritual Power 0.9

Job Skills: [Green Dragon Arms], [Phoenix's Slash], [Black Tortoise's Divine Shield], [Combo Slash], and [White Tiger Defense]

Usable Defense Equipment: Heavy Armor, Leather Armor, Cloth Armor

Weapon Mastery: Sword types increase attack by 25%

.....

I was speechless and asked, "Needless to say, Misty Cloud would

definitely use this class change certificate for himself right?"

Dancing Forest nodded, "Yeah. Now that Misty Cloud has obtained the class changing certificate, he probably won't give it to other people. Misty Cloud wants to merge the three big guilds and this Four Divine Symbols Guardian class changing certificate is a great opportunity that he's not about to let go."

I smiled, "Yeah. However, if the three big guilds merged as one, they'll become our ally. This is definitely not something bad for us."

"Yeah. Guildmaster have been pursuing and slaughtering [Thousand Burial]'s members all day. Aren't you feeling satisfied?"

"Very satisfied, haha!"

.....

I guarded the gate of Ba Huang City until dawn and finally saw the scene I had been waiting for——

"Shasha....."

As the sound of footsteps approached the gate, Youyi held his long sword and stood under the North gate of Ba Huang City. He yelled out loudly, "[Thousand Burial] is fully opened! Recruiting new members! Our guild has excellent pay and conditions. Any members ranked above 500 in the guild will receive a salary of 1000+ RMB. On top of that, our requirements are not very high. We only ask that you be strong. We require levels 65 and up, with at least three purple tier equipments. Welcome highly skilled players ranked above 1000 in the CBN Battle Net to join. You will definitely be highly paid!

In the end, Youyi stood there waiting, but not many players went to sign up. It looks like that scum still didn't really understand the rule of this game. It is absolutely not enough to solely rely on money; the guild's reputation is critically important. [Mass Burial] had forcibly occupied all of the areas surrounding Ba Huang City for training and suppressed all of the independent players leading to [Mass Burial]'s infamy. It is difficult for such a notorious guild to recruit new members, after all other people

aren't stupid.

I stated at Youyi in the distance and burst out laughing.

Youyi also looked at me and said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what the f*ck are you laughing at!

I replied, "I am laughing at you, f*cker. Haha!

Youyi was furious but couldn't respond.

.....

At this moment, Wolf sent a message. "Brother Xiao Yao. Did you know a new guild has been formed? It's called [First Meetings]. The Guildmaster is Bai Mo Yan, a high level archer.

My heart palpitated, but I knew that it would be better if less people knew about Shen Bing's plan. I then replied, "No idea. Why?"

Wolf explained, "Around Butterfly Forest, that Bai Mo Yan lead 200+ of [First Meetings]'s members to train. A conflict then started with a hundred of [Vanguard]'s members and [First Meeting]'s slaughtered them all! Maybe because it was a small affair, Jian Feng Han did not pay attention to it. So Fallen Wolf led people over there instead but he was too careless. He was ambushed by a group of people led by Bai Mo Yan and Fallen Wolf was instantly turned into a hedgehog. Hehe. Now [Vanguard] has finally taken them seriously and have decided to dispatch troops to encircle and suppress [First Meetings]. What should we do?"

I thought about it for a second and said, "How about we just sit and see what happens?"

"Yeah. Alright!"

I turned off my messenger and immediately opened my friend list. I sent a message to Shen Bing, "Sister Shen Bing, you guys are making a big stir in Butterfly Forest. Quit while you still can. Have your people return to the city. Don't get stuck in the wild with Jian Feng Han. The good thing is, [Thousand Burial]'s members just happened to be training at the North Gate. If you can make the conflict between [Vanguard] seem as if you

need reinforcement, [Thousand Burial] might come and find you themselves. That would make it appear more natural.”

Shen Bing sent a message back with a smiley face emoji and two words, “Roger that!”

.....

Soon, streaks of white lights flashed into the city. The group of people from [First Meetings] had all returned to the city. They appeared to have around 200+ people. Guildmaster Bai Mo Yan held her long bow and stood in the midst of the crowd. She then led them to the North Gate Bridge.

Outside the north gate bridge, Jian Feng Han lead a group of at least a thousand people into a battle formation. Both sides had already assumed an aggressive state.

“Beauty Bai Mo Yan..... ” Jian Feng Han’s eyes turned cold as he tightly gripped his sword, “What is the meaning of this? Openly attacking [Vanguard]’s members in Butterfly Forest and ambushing our elder Fallen Wolf. Are you trying to humiliate [Vanguard]?”

Shen Bing smiled, “How would we dare?”

[Vanguard] is a big guild with 70000 members registered. [First Meetings], a level 2 small guild, wouldn’t dare to challenge you guys..... It was your people who attacked us first, otherwise I wouldn’t dare attack you!”

“Really? Then how do you plan to solve it now?”

“I won’t resolve it. What are you going to do?”

Shen Bing refused to compromise and Jian Feng Han touched his nose embarrassingly. He then pointed outside the city and said, “I will let it go this time. I hope [First Meetings]’s members won’t attack [Vanguard]’s members again. Otherwise, you guys won’t be able to step out of the city gate again. I, Jian Feng Han, is a man that is true to his words. Once you take even a single step outside of Ba Huang City, I will definitely slaughter you all.

Shen Bing leisurely backed away a few steps and leaned against a railing on a white rock, and grinned, "Fine then, let's just keep dawdling. It would be a great honor to have the guildmaster of [Vanguard] dawdle around with us!

"You!" Jian Feng Han was furious but didn't know how to act out.

.....

Right at that moment, a group of people stormed out from within the city. The leader was not anyone else but Not Ordinary. Youyi stepped forward, "Boss. Those are the members of [First Meetings] who directly challenged [Vanguard]. They are so bold and the guildmaster is even a beauty. How about we persuade the members of [First Meetings] to join our [Thousand Burial]!"

Not Ordinary clenched his fist, "Okay. No matter what the cost!"

Chapter 362: Unequal Treaty

Not Ordinary raised his axe and walked to the Northern Bridge entrance step by step, treading across the brick bridge and stood in front of Shen Bing, sincerely saying, "Beautiful miss, I have a matter to discuss!"

"Oh?"

Shen Bing looked up and fluttered her eyes before smiling and saying, "So it's [Thousand Burial]'s guildmaster, what have you come here to discuss?"

Wei Fan laughed, "I know that [First Meetings] is a newly established guild and a small misunderstanding occurred while you were training in Butterfly Forest. It can't be helped, even if Ba Huang City had slightly bigger maps or even more resources, in the end, it is still limited and conflict is inevitable between players and their guilds. On the other hand, we, [Thousand Burial], are also a very vulnerable group. We were constantly being forced into a corner by [Zhan Long]. Against such a powerful guild, we couldn't advance or retreat."

"Exactly what is it you want? Shen Bing tilted her head looking at Wei Fan, carrying a hint of mischief in her eyes.

Wei Fan awkwardly smiled, scratched his nose and said, "Don't you think our guilds have many similarities? Since it is this way, How about we combine our two guilds? Two is always stronger than just one. I can... I can also provide [First Meetings] with a really strong backup. As long as you agree to merge with [Thousand Burial]. I can promise you that you will remain in command of the First Meetings team. In addition, every month I will give... give you more than 5 Million RMB as the funds for developing your team.

"5 Million RMB a month?!" Shen Bi's small mouth gaped, "Guildmaster Not Ordinary, you aren't making fun of me now, are you? Will you really give us 5 Million RMB each month?"

"Yup, I never go back on my word!" Wei Fan patted his chest, "If you join, [First Meetings]'s 300 members will become a part of [Thousand

Burial]; henceforth, everyone will be family!”

Shen Bing laughed, “Hah, hah...”

Youyi raised his eyebrows, “Guildmaster Bai Mo Yan, why are you laughing? Could it be that you have an objection towards our guildmaster’s generous offer? Do be frank with us. We are all unreserved people and don’t like hiding secrets from each other....”

Shen Bing rubbed her red lips and nodded her head, “I consent, since you guys are so sincere. I just have a few conditions to say!”

Not Ordinary secretly felt a burst of happiness, “Yes, please say, please say!”

Shen Bing leaned against the bridge wall and leisurely said, “I have three hundred members under my command, a good portion of which are my in game friends, or friends of my friends. I will under no circumstances abandon my leadership of them. After [First Meetings] merges with [Thousand Burial], [First Meetings] members must remain the same and I will handle the leadership of that team.”

Not Ordinary*beamed back, “No problem, I will give you a position of deputy chief leader making it more convenient for you to manage your team!”

TL Note: I recently realized this may have been confusing to a lot of you but, Wei Fan = Not Ordinary

Shen Bing continued, “First, [First Meetings] has offended [Vanguard]. You must send [Vanguard] away this instant! Lastly,[Thousand Burial] is seen by [Zhan Long] as their arch-enemy and have constantly been pursued and slaughtered. I don’t wish for my members to be ruthlessly pursued and killed by crazy people like Xiao Yao Zi Zai after we join [Thousand Burial]. Therefore, [Thousand Burial] must resolve their hatred with [Zhan Long]. You can never provoke [Zhan Long] again, at least until your guild become strong enough.

Wei Fan pondered for a while, “Sure, I will try my best!”

Shen Bing smiled, “Alright, then I shall sit back and watch!”

.....

Not Ordinary grinned, turned his figure and placed his battle axe onto his back. With carefree arms, slowly walked another direction towards the exit of the bridge. Facing Jian Feng Han, he laughed and said, "Jian Feng Han, can you honor my reputation a little and give up on killing [First Meetings]? This was just all just a misunderstanding and the beauty Bai Mo Yan doesn't want to become [Vanguard]'s enemy either."

Jian Feng Han knitted his brows and replied, "Not Ordinary, do you expect me to patch up this quarrel with just a few words? Don't forget, [First Meetings] slaughtered at least 300+ of our members. She even killed our elder, Fallen Wolf. How am I supposed to just look over that offense?"

"Mu Rong Han!"

Not Ordinary's voice suddenly became louder as he said, "Actually, I have seen you before. It was seven years ago. I saw your father, Mu Rong Qiong, when I went to the headquarters of Han Yun Corporation. You were only 17 years old at the time. Why? Did you already forget your Uncle Wei Fan?"

"What?"

Jian Feng Han's eyes widened and asked, "You are..... You were that scoundrel uncle at the time?"

Not Ordinary's face turned green when he said, "I.....I am not some big scoundrel. Boy, how can you say that. Either way, you must do me this favor today. You can even go back and ask right now. Your dad's company still has a pricey contract with my Song Feng Entertainment Company. If you press on, I will take this to your father!"

Jian Feng Han couldn't help but laugh, "Fine. I had no idea that the guildmaster of [Mass Burial] is actually Uncle Wei Fan. Forgive me for being ignorant. Since it is Uncle Wei Fan's request, I shall forget this incident. By the way, your [Mass Burial] was annihilated by [Zhan Long] through the guild prestige battle. Aren't you thinking of exacting revenge?"

“There’s no hurry……” Not Ordinary lowered his voice as he replied, “I need to build [Thousand Burial] into a superb guild for me to take revenge. I have to complete the first step by taking in Shen Bing and her 300 [First Meeting]’s members. After that I will start planning my future steps towards justice.

Jian Feng Han nodded, “Yeah. The battle strength of those 300 people are not weak. Keep it up!”

“Okay!”

After he finished speaking, Jian Feng Han turned around and lifted his long sword. He commanded loudly, “The problem has been resolved. Everyone, continue to grind and do your best in leveling up! [Vanguard]’s activity for today ends now!”

Seeing the members of [Vanguard] leave like the waves of a torrent, Wei Fan gave a sigh of relief and turned around to look at us. With a cold glare, he strode over.

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” He bellowed from afar.

I looked up and gave him a glance, “What?”

Not Ordinary said calmly, “Well, everything is just as you saw. [Mass Burial] has begun restructuring into [Thousand Burial]. The guild before this has disappeared and thus so should all the resentments. I hope that from now on, [Zhan Long] and [Thousand Burial] won’t interfere with each other’s businesses. I don’t want this endless cycles of revenge to continue……”

I stood up and stared straight at him as I sneered, “Did you think it would be that easy for [Zhan Long] to let it go?”

“Then what more do you want?” Not Ordinary was slightly angered.

I smiled and clearly drew out my words, “You must promise to fulfill certain conditions, and only then will [Zhan Long] let it go. First off, the players of [Thousand Burial] cannot take step within Green Qilin Valley or Green Qilin Abyss, or else [Zhan Long] will definitely pursue and kill. Secondly, [Thousand Burial]’s players cannot actively attack [Zhan

Long]'s members in any of the maps in the wilderness. Otherwise, the same thing would happen where we pursue and slaughter you guys throughout the entire map. Thirdly, [Thousand Burial] had raided us many times during previous team activities and causing enormous damage to [Zhan Long]'s members. Therefore, I need you all to pay 100000 RMB as compensation. If not, [Zhan Long] will persist in going our own way.

Immediately, Wei Fan's face turned green, "You..... you want compensation? Isn't this an unfair treaty? Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you're taking this too far. You can't be like this even if your guild, [Zhan Long], is strong!

Li Mu laughed beside us, "Actually, it's pretty fair. Besides, Guildmaster Not Ordinary, let's be honest with ourselves, you don't need that little bit of money, isn't that right?

I crossed my arm lazily and grinned, "No matter what you say, pay and I will call off the challenge towards [Thousand Burial]. Otherwise, I cannot guarantee you and your members' safety when [Thousand Burial] members take a step out of Ba Huang City."

"You!"

Wei Fan was so enraged his body trembled. Beside him, Youyi stepped towards Wei Fan and lowered his voice, "Boss, our guild has just been disbanded. Now, [First Meetings]'s 300 members are what we need the most before we rest and strengthen ourselves. It's not too late to fight [Zhan Long] after everyone's equipment and levels reach a certain point. Otherwise, we will be continually be placed in a passive position and be crushed to death as we continue..... "

Probably due to the fact that Youyi's words sounded reasonable, Wei Fan trembled for a while before saying, "Fine then. Here is 100000 RMB. I will transfer the money to you. In addition, [Thousand Burial]'s players will never enter the maps you have said. Don't worry, Guildmaster Xiao Yao Zi Zai. So, are you satisfied now?"

I pocketed the 100000 and smiled softly, "Alright. I wish that

[Thousand Burial] will prosper and be vigorous. Haha.....”

.....

Wei Fan turned away angrily as he led Youyi to Bai Mo Yan. Soon, the badge on Bai Mo Yan’s shoulder transformed into [Thousand Burial]’s badge. The core players of [First Meetings] all changed their guild one by one. As for [First Meetings], it basically became [Thousand Burial]’s first division guild.”

“Let’s go. We are going to camp at Firestone Canyon. From now on, that will be our base. Everyone, follow me once you have replenished yourselves. We’ll rush our guild to level 3 tonight and then rush to level 4 later on. Our objective is to get strong!”

Following Wei Fan’s roar, 500+ members of [Thousand Burial] left the city. Shen Bing lightly grinned as she led [First Meetings]’s players out of the city as well. Back facing us, I could see her slim figure as she placed a hand behind and gestured an OK. I burst out laughing when I saw it. Looks like everything is going as planned. Shen Bing had made her first step into the organization of [Thousand Burial].

The next step was probably for Shen Bing to build a strong relationship with people in the guild and obtain useful information after she knew them well enough. Youyi and the others were probably all artificials. Shen Bing could at least find something out about their lab. With this many artificials, there had to be a huge lab that provided injections, observations and other such functions.

.....

“I guess there’s nothing left for us to do here?” Li Mu grinned.

I nodded, “Yeah. Wash up and go to bed early.”

A little distance away, Sister Dancing Forest came towards me with her long bow in hand and asked, “It’s bustling at the south side of the city. Do you wanna go take a look?”

“What’s going on there?”

“Err..... Misty Cloud had changed his class to the new class, Four Divine Symbols Guardian. He’s announcing a challenge and claims that he will be in the ring until dawn. If he doesn’t lose, he will merge the three big guilds tomorrow at dawn.

“Hmm..... Why don’t we go check it out?”

“Sure!”

.....

We dashed all the way to the south side the city. Sounds of cheering could be heard when we were still at a distance. The south side of the city is a non commercial area. The number of players at the south side of the city was nowhere near the number of players at the north side of the city. Basically, it was a place where players could learn from each other and socialize. In that shabby ring, Misty Cloud stood loftily with his arms crossed as a green and red long sword floated in the air around him.

Chapter 363: Power of the Four Divine Symbols Guardian

At least a thousand players were surrounding the ring and many of them had blue stars flashing in front of their bodies, revealing the fact that they were recording the event. Clearly, many people were here to personally witness the debut of a super heavy armor player.

Misty Cloud stood loftily in the ring, a magnificent line of letters floated above his head —

Misty Cloud LV-70 Four Divine Symbols Guardian

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Misty Palace

Position: Guild Master

.....

A red and green longsword, orbited by stars, drifted above Misty Cloud, floating in circles; he was actually manipulating the blade telepathically. Slowly, he stretched out his hand and grabbed the long sword, clasping it in both hands. Then he smiled, and gave a bow. He began humbly, “I am Misty Cloud, a southerner that created the guild, [Misty Palace]. I have only recently changed to this class, and have no idea of how powerful it is. Therefore, I have set up a battle ring in hopes that the highly skilled players of Ba Huang City would enlighten me with a duel. And with PK mode on, there will be no loss. This is simply to make in game friends, not to distinguish who’s stronger or weaker! I want to establish guild that is able to compete with [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Zhan Long], so I must show everyone what I am capable of!”

Dancing Forest, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf, and I stood at a distance from the ring and peered at the center. Dancing Forest first spoke, “The sword in Misty Cloud’s hand is the one that BOSS dropped in the SSS rank quest. It is a Lv 70 Superior Valkyrie Tier named ‘Bleeding Star Sword’. He also has a Valkyrie Tier Helmet! Rumor has it that the current basic attack

strength of Misty Cloud has just broken 3800 and his defense is most likely around 2700 with 6200 health. His equipment isn't much weaker than yours, Boss."

I nodded, "Yeah. I can tell, otherwise how would he have the audacity to challenge all the highly skilled players in Ba Huang City. Even though the top ten of the CBN battle net, Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, and the others, aren't in Ba Huang City, it still has experts like Jian Feng Han, Simple and Yan Zhao Warrior.

Dancing Forest pursed her red lips,"Err. Someone went up!"

.....

In the distance, someone carrying a long sword leaped into the ring. It was the squad leader of [Prague], a Lv 69 Swordsman—Luo Mu!

Luo Mu landed in the ring steadily. He lifted his hand and drew his sharp sword. With the blade positioned horizontally, he smiled and said, "Hehe, if you want to establish a guild on a par with [Prague], then let me fight you Guild Master Misty Cloud. Can I bring pets?"

Misty Cloud chuckled, "So it's Luo Mu. Anything is fine with me, bring it if you want."

"What about you?"

"I won't be bringing one!"

"Then nevermind, I won't bring one either! Let us dance."

A bloody red flag was raised in the ring: the duel had begun!

Luo Mu bellowed and activated [Haste] along with a [Defense] buff. The light of a [Skyslayer Slash] glinted off of his blade and with a jump slash, he went forward carrying a large amount of momentum.

"Sha....."

Sliding through the fine sand with his battle boots, Misty Cloud's left foot moved half a step backwards as he slightly ducked. The soul of the azure dragon materialized and drifted from his shoulders with a roar. The cries of the dragon continued to resound throughout the arena. Misty

Cloud forcefully swung his arm and “Peng”, his iron fists smashed into Luo Mu’s [Skyshaker Slash]. As a result, both skills clashed and the [Skyshaker Slash] was squashed by Misty Cloud’s [Arm of the Azure Dragon]! This skill could shatter any attack, that was what made the skill exceptional!

“Boom!”

Fierce flames began encircling the Bleeding Star Sword as Misty Cloud forcefully thrust his right arm forward, piercing the long sword into Luo Mu’s chest. Energy immediately burst out and a Phoenix darted out into the sky. Luo Mu was instantly killed!

“4729 ! ”

.....

“Damn!” Wolf clenched his fist tightly as his eyes widened. He exclaimed in disbelief, “My god..... this isn’t real, is it? A Lv 69 third advancement Swordsman was killed in an instant by this Lv 70 Four Divine Symbols Guardian? He.....He was killed in the blink of an eye with one strike?! This Misty Cloud..... how strong has he become now?”

Li Mu crossed his arms over his chest and sneered, “Tsk, Tsk. No wonder Misty Cloud has been so arrogant. He’s like a killing machine now. Not only does he possess such strong equipment, he even has those OP skills of the Four Divine Symbols Guardian. There truly aren’t many people left in Ba Huang City who can defeat him. Tsk, tsk. This new guild is destined to rise to the top.....”

Once Luo Mu was defeated, one of Yan Zhao Warrior’s subordinates sprung up. It was the Vice Guild Master of [Prague], Heaven’s Hero. He grasped his sword in one hand and yelled out furiously, “Misty Cloud, you’re too conceited. Come, let me face you then! If you can’t defeat me, then don’t even talk about establishing a guild that is equal to [Prague]!”

“Pa!”

Another flag was dropped as Misty Cloud stared at his opponent with a grin, “Vice Guild Master of [Prague]? Alright, another expert, just as I

expected. Come, come, come. You're allowed to bring pets into the fight!"

Heaven's Hero gnashed his teeth in anger, "No need. I won't take advantage of you!"

His blade shuddered and roaring flames surged, wrapping around his blade. This was one of Heaven's Hero's skills —Red Cliff Slash; a strong strike that had a 70% increase in attack. As the Vice Guild Master of [Prague], he obviously had to have at least a few outstanding abilities.

Increasing the length of his strides, Heaven's Hero charged forward and raised his blade with the [Red Cliff Slash] on its edge!

Misty Cloud carefully watched the situation. With a wave of his arm, another shattering [Arm of the Azure Dragon] was coming!

Heaven's Hero's eyes turned cold as his lips curved into a smile. Despite being midair, he swept out his left arm to initiate a punch. As his body turned in the air and "Shua!", the Red Cliff Slash struck right at Misty Cloud's shoulder in the second rotation!

"Ha!"

Misty Cloud also chuckled. With this outburst, streaks of green energy twisted around him. The image of a dragon tortoise head materialized faintly in the air around him. The tortoise shell then formed a protective shield. As Heavenly Hero's Red Cliff Slash struck down, it was smashed into fragments of energy with a "Peng". [Divine Shield of the Black Tortoise] didn't simply increase defense, but also dissolved 100% of all incoming damage. However, the strength of the protective shield was proportional to the attack of the user. This was possibly the strongest heavy armor protective shield currently in use.

Suddenly lifting his shoulder, Misty Cloud raised his battle boot and kicked Heaven's Hero's falling body."Peng", Heaven's Hero was kicked away. With a lunge forward, Misty Cloud struck him with a normal attack and a [Phoenix's Slash]. Heavenly Hero coughed up blood and died!

"Shua!"

White light evaporated into the air and Heaven's Hero was resurrected

outside of the ring with shock written over his face. He stared at the sharp sword in his hands, unable to accept that he had lost without even drawing a bit of Misty Cloud's blood.

.....

Misty Cloud stood proudly in the ring. As he held up his sword, he stated clearly, "Now, [Prague] shouldn't have any problems with me establishing a super guild in Ba Huang City, right? Haha, actually even if you all disagreed, the result will still be the same!"

Heaven's Hero grit his teeth in anger but remained silent.

Suddenly, someone outside of the ring let out a barking laugh. It was the deputy chief leader of [Flying Dragon], Fierce Tiger. He spoke while carrying a fiery battle axe, "What a joke. Claiming to be number one in Ba Huang City after defeating a few noobs? Come, come, come. Let me fight you, you the Four Divine Symbols Guardian!"

Misty Cloud stared at him and laughed, "You're just insta-kill trash. I don't really want to accept your challenge....."

"What the hell!" Fierce Tiger furiously planted his flag.

Misty Cloud didn't reply, but the instant the countdown ended, he quickly darted out. He raised his left arm and crushed Fierce Tiger's [Skyslasher Slash]! Simultaneously, his right hand plunged the flaming sharp sword into his opponent's chest!

"Peng!"

"2318 ! "

Once he received the enormous damage, Fierce Tiger was blasted 4 yards backwards and couldn't counterattack. Misty Cloud struck the second blow as quick as a thunderclap and threw his opponent backwards another 3 yards. Closely following were the third, fourth and fifth blows that killed Fierce Tiger while he was still flying mid-air from the second blow. All he could do was stare shockingly at his opponent's skill— [Combo Slash]. Every time this attack hit its target, the opponent would be blasted backwards. On top of that, the user would rush forward 3-5

yards. In reality, this skill was a combination of [Combo] + [Blade Rush], but the attack power increased exponentially. It was a 5 part brutal attack, something normal people wouldn't be able to take.

.....

Fierce Tiger slumped to the ground. That was the rhythm of an instant kill. His face was ashen as he knelt speechlessly to the ground.

Misty Cloud raised his long sword up high and yelled, "Are there any other friends who still wanna challenge me? Cough, cough..... Err, after the establishment of our new guild, we will still be recruiting skilled players in Ba Huang City. If you respect me, Misty Cloud, as a friend, then I welcome you all to contact me now. Any friends ranked in Top 1000 of CBN Battlenet are unconditionally accepted into the guild!"

"Hey, kid. Stop advertising!"

Below the stage, a warrior with a long sabre in hand leaped into the ring. He chuckled, "Let me, Fu Shen Thousand Blade, challenge you!"

The person that went into the ring was none other than Fu Shen Thousand Blade, the Vice Guild Master of [Vanguard]. He was a famous figure known as the number one tank in Ba Huang City, well, that is self proclaimed Number One..... That said, Fu Shen Thousand Blade's defense should still not be underestimated.

"Hehe, now it's getting interesting....." Dancing Forest laughed, "According to information I gathered, Fu Shen Thousand Blade currently has 2950 points of defense. The long sabre in his hand is a Superior Emperor Tier while his shield is a newly obtained Valkyrie Tier. His health is almost 9000 points and his attack is more than 2400. Hehe, these stats alone should be enough to give Misty Cloud a headache....."

"Not necessarily....." I grinned, "Misty Cloud's maneuvers are a lot stronger than Fu Shen Thousand Blade's, and he has the advantage in his skills. The end has already been determined."

"Okay....."

.....

Another flag was planted in the ring!

Fu Shen Thousand Blade immediately used [Put Down the Knife] after he went into the ring, reducing Misty Cloud's attack strength by 10%. Afterwards, he carried his heavy shield and brandished his long sabre as he took the initiative to launch an attack!"

"ShaShaSha....."

Misty Cloud unexpectedly flew backwards several steps. With a jerk of his shoulder, streaks of spirit energy from a ferocious white tiger appeared in the center of his palm and encircled him as he opened his hand. It is the white tiger's defense skill which increase all attributes by 15%. The attribute lowered by [Put Down the Knife] was naturally recovered. Misty Cloud wielded his Bleeding Star Sword to fight against Fu Shen Thousand Blade and activated [Phoenix's Strike]!"

"1928 ! "

As expected, Fu Shen Thousand Blade's defense was truly not weak!

Laughing out loudly, Fu Shen Thousand Blade lifted his long knife sliced another slash as he chanted. It was the third advancement skill of Monks —[Truth Slash] !

"1623 ! "

Misty Cloud knitted his brows and used his Bleeding Star Sword to lightly knock away his opponent's sabre. He lowered his body and forced Fu Shen Thousand Blade to lose his balance with a flying-kick. He then activated [Combo Slash]!

As his body flew, Fu Shen Thousand Blade smashed his heavy shield into the ground and used a defense skill—[Heavy Defense]!

Unfortunately, he only blocked Misty Cloud's first strike, but didn't manage to block the subsequent four attacks!

"1727 ! "

"1749 ! "

"1736 ! "

“1734 ! ”

.....

After a combo and a lunge stab from Misty Cloud, Fushen Thousand Blade fell to ground, a corpse!

Misty Cloud let out a laugh and picked up his Bleeding Sword as he walked to the edge of the ring. He then called out, “It’s been great meeting friends through fists. Is there anyone else who would like to try? A nice warm-up fight before late night snacks would be good too!”

.....

“Di!”

Wan Er sent a message, “Err.....late night snacks?”

I smiled, “Wait five minutes for me. I will log off in no time!”

“Alright!”

.....

Raising my hand, I drew out my Emperor Qin’s Sword with a “Keng”. I lightly smiled, “Let me try!”

The crowds separated and everybody gaped at me simultaneously—

“Damn! It’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

“Fuck, he’s ranked number 17th on CBN Battle Net. Things are getting really interesting now!”

Chapter 364: Enemies at the Gate

“F*ck.....”

Once Misty Cloud saw me, the smile on his face quickly disappeared, “Xiao Yao. What are you doing here? I didn’t realize that you were here.....”

I laughed, “Well..... Cang Tong invited me out for a midnight snack so I decided to stop by and learn some stuff from you before I went. Let’s just say that it’s to warm myself up before the snack....”

Misty Cloud gripped his sword, “Che. If you’re going to eat then go eat. What are you doing, trying to fight before a midnight snack.... That’s not good for your stomach. Listen to me and go get some food with Cang Tong. Be careful about being late or else she’ll beat you.....”

I easily leapt onto the stage and smiled, “No problem. I can handle it. Come on Misty. Let’s see what you’ve really got!”

“Okay. If you insist!”

A blood red flag appeared on the stage, displaying the words “Practice Mode” and a 5 second countdown appeared in the air. I took a deep breath and gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword tightly. Truth to be told, before Misty Cloud changed classes, I didn’t care much about fighting him as I probably had around an 80 % chance of winning against him. However, now he was a Four Divine Symbols Guardian, his skills were staggeringly powerful. I had to go all out to make sure that I didn’t lose...

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

Battle Start!

Misty Cloud came forward, clenching his hands into a fist. Streams of azure energy gathered around his fist as his Bleeding Sword floated next to his shoulders. His whole body gave off a cold energy as if it was

encased by a divine power. Everything about this new class was cool to the max!

Let's check out his reaction speed!

I suddenly made my move and slammed my left fist into the ground.
[Binding Chains]!

“ShaSha.....”

Misty Cloud immediately dodged, causing a MISS to appear. Taking advantage of his move, I immediately rushed forward with Emperor Qin's Sword and landed a normal slash into his chest, dealing 2432 points of damage.

“Such a powerful attack!”

Misty Cloud was shocked. He quickly activated [Skysaker Slash] to retaliate!

“Keng!”

“2211 ! ”

I forced a few steps back. Emperor Qin's Sword glinted and activated [Combo]!

Misty Cloud simply waved his left arm and activated [Arms of a Green Dragon]. With a “Bang” , he smashed my [Combo]'s hexagram into pieces. My Lv 8 [Combo] was so easily interrupted and I just wasted a round of cooldown. This [Arms of a Green Dragon] was definitely OP!

However, Emperor Qin's Sword was still in the air and I brought down another normal attack right onto his shoulder!

“1727 ! ”

Misty Cloud only had 20% health left. He bellowed and the energy of the tortoise materialized around his body, [Divine Shield of the Tortoise Shell] was activated! He dashed towards me and used [Combo Slash] !

I couldn't help but grinned; I lowered my body and used [Blade Rush]!

“Huacha!”

“MISS ! ”

The damage from my attack was absorbed by the [Divine Shield of the Tortoise Shell] while I dodged the first strike of [Combo Slash]!

“It won’t be that easy!”

Misty Cloud suddenly turned around and tried to land the second strike of [Combo Slash]. The next attack vibrated against my Emperor Qin’s Sword, forcing me to slide backwards. In addition, my whole body felt as if it had been filled with lead, unable to move. The blast backwards produced a certain lagging effect. No wonder Heaven’s Hero and the others were barraged until they couldn’t even be angry!

“1833 ! ”

“1737 ! ”

After receiving two consecutive blasts from the [Combo Slash]’s, I was forced to the edge of the ring. If two more strikes hit, I would die!

Sparks flew as I raised my hand and drew my other long sword—Cold Iron Sword. “Keng” I blocked the fourth strikes of [Combo Slash] and I cross both swords in front of me. “Peng” A flow of air surged through my body and the fifth attack vanished. I took a deep breath as a faint cyclone surrounded my body.

“Oh No!

Misty Cloud seemed to have felt the foreboding power of my attack and hastily backed away but it was too late. In the blink of an eye, my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword crossed as I attacked through different angles. “Kakaka”, the attacks slashed across Misty Cloud’s [Divine Shield of the Black Tortoise] and numerous MISS-es flew up. Finally, during the last strike, the [Divine Shield of the Black Tortoise] finally crumbled and only a bit of Misty Cloud’s health was left.

“Hum.....”

With a terrifying glint, Cold Iron Sword slashed across the air and darted at Misty Cloud’s neck. It was so fast that before most people could

tell what happened, I immediately pulled back my long sword and with a lift of my Divine Battle Boot, kicked away Misty Cloud's Bleeding Sword!

“Peng!”

Using the momentum from the Bleeding Sword, I flew out of the ring with my cloak fluttering behind me. “Pa” I descended to the ground and slid more than ten meters away. At the same time, I cancelled the battle flag and sheathed my swords. I raised my hand and laughed, “Misty is truly very powerful now. This Four Divine Symbols Guardian is just too powerful. I give up. Hahaha.....”

Misty Cloud stood in the ring with a blank expression. He knew that I had the chance to kill him, but did not do it. There was no other reason for my action. He needed this combat to earn a reputation for the new guild. If I were to defeat him now, it would not be any more honor to me. But it would be a hard blow to him, so I intentionally lost.

“Di!”

I received a message from a friend. It was Misty Cloud. “Haha, thank you. Brother. That was thoughtful of you!”

I smiled as I replied, “You're very strong now, but all the of those skills are only Lv 1, right? Haha, I could tell. You're still lacking a little on your understanding of those skills, otherwise I might have really lost.”

“Yeah, the skills are all Lv 1. Go quickly. If you're late, Beauty Cang Tong is really going to beat you up.....”

“Okay.....”

.....

Turning around, I left with Li Mu, Wang Jian, Little Wolf and Dancing Forest.

Little Wolf asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, with your reaction speed, you should've had many opportunities to kill Misty Cloud just now. Why did you hold back? It shouldn't have been hard with your skills.....”

I smiled, “It's nothing much. I “can't” beat him right now. Besides, I was

just here to test out his skills. I've seen it all already, so there was no need to win."

Dancing Forest smiled, "Little Wolf, you dumbass, can't you see what Boss is doing? If one of our allies is trying to rise up, how can we not help him?"

Wolf smacked his head and laugh, "So that's it.... Brother Xiao Yao. Then what do you think about Misty Cloud now?"

I pondered for a second before saying, "Bluntly put, there aren't more than three people that can defeat Misty Cloud in our guild. Right now, you guys are probably no match for him. His skills are honestly too OP. His [Divine Shield of the Black Tortoise] is especially OP, it didn't break even after I struck it five times. Hmph, under normal circumstances, if Misty Cloud activated [Divine Shield of the Black Tortoise] and used [Combo Slash] continuously, he would win against any top-ranked highly skilled players. Unless he was put up against Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, and Ye Lai, or other such top-ranking super skilled ones, it would be difficult for him to lose even if he wanted to."

Wang Jian clenched his fist and commented, "My god, the Misty Cloud now is honestly slightly OP....."

"Yeah, I know right....."

.....

Offline, Wan Er was waiting downstairs.

A bit to the far side, I notice that Dong Cheng was there too.

"Why're you looking at me like that?" Dong Cheng glared back.

I laughed, "Nothing. It just seems like I haven't seen you scrounging free meals off of us in a while. Just a bit unused to it."

"..... Hmph, go to hell....."

I looked at Wan Er, "Hey, what should we get for our snack tonight?"

"How about some Congee?"

“Uh. Okay!”

In the school congee store, the three of us sat next to the windows under the moonlight. The girls were wearing dresses. I casually leaned against the window and asked, “Has anything been going on in Fan Shu City lately?”

“Nothing much. But it seems like Ba Huang City has been making a big commotion. Various kinds of PK and show off battles.....” Wan Er laughed.

I pursed my lips, “Eh it’s nothing much. It was all to take care of Wang Ze Cheng and Not Ordinary for stirring up trouble. Otherwise, it would not have been necessary to cause gigantic bloodshed in Ba Huang City. ”

Wan Er nodded. “I heard that Ba Huang City’s Misty Cloud got a new class? I think he also got a Valkyrie Tier Sword. It should be Ba Huang City’s strongest sword right? Even stronger than Emperor Qin’s Sword....”

“Not really. The Emperor Qin’s Sword’s passive effects make it much stronger than Bleeding Sword after some stacks of [Kill for Blood].”

“Ohh Okay.”

I continued to say, “Actually, before I left I had a small duel with Misty Clouds. He’s very strong right now, but not to the point where he’s really OP. I’m afraid that if people like Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, or Bai Li Ruofeng came to Ba Huang City, Misty Cloud would lose a few times tonight. To others however, it would be a risky win.

“Yea...” Lin Wan Er smiled, “Ba Huang City is so lively, I want to go there too. Since Misty Cloud’s become so strong, can I go there tonight and kill him once?”

“No, he’s an ally, there’s no need to...”

“Alright then, let’s talk after I get to Ba Huang City!”

“Yup!”

.....

After finishing our porridge, I sent the two beauties back to their dorms

and returned to my room to rest. After laying in my bed for a bit, Glasses took off his helmet, went offline to drink some water and glanced at me, “Li Xiao Yao, Ba Huang City has been in a state of chaos and you are about to become the man of the century. Any thoughts? I heard that.....a highly skilled player named Seventh Tang just joined [Hero’s Mound]. Hehe, I was told he looks a bit like me.....

I cast a glance at him and said, “Yeah right, Glasses. That Seventh Tang is extremely handsome while you look like... that. With an appearance like yours.....even if you adjust 25% of the appearance, you still won’t be as good looking as Seventh Tang. Just stop deceiving yourself. Besides, Seventh Tang is the type that with a single look you could tell he has good skills. A fatty like you? Sigh.....”

In the midst of my sighing, Tang Gu slowly got off the bed with his flabby body and said bitterly, “F*ck you.....”

.....

It was a quiet night. I fell into deep sleep until the next morning. Before I was fully awake, my phone received a message from Sister Matcha. The message said, “Updates, Boss! Last night, Misty Cloud defeated 100+ highly skilled players in a row. It was only during the second half of the night, when Jian Feng Han returned to the city did Misty Cloud get defeated once. After that, Misty Cloud won all the other battles. This morning at 7 o’clock, Misty Cloud officially established a new guild named ‘[Enemy At The Gates]’ and [Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], and [Ruined Bones] all became divisions of the new guild!”

Chapter 365: Covering Sword Slash

In the morning, I cut class and got online to continue overseeing [Zhan Long]'s growth.

“Shua!”

I appeared at the northern side of Ba Huang City's marketplace. After repairing my equipment, I went to check on how our store was doing. Since this was the only player managed store in Ba Huang City, we were able to generate a steady profit without any major interruptions. We were the first player made store in Ba Huang City so our fame was already widespread. Even if others set up stores, our business wouldn't be dramatically affected. The store itself basically generated enough profit for our operation funds. Even though it wasn't enough to make me, Li Mu, Fox and the others rich, we were able to fully equip the 5000 members of the guild.

Taking a glance at the items for sale, I saw that there were actually two Emperor Tier weapons! The prices were pretty high and the seller names were hidden. There was nothing interesting here, time to go!

After leaving the city, I took my Flaming Tiger God to the northwestern side of the map towards Green Qilin Valley. This was where our headquarters were so it was easier for me to level here, besides, I could also occasionally help out some lower level guild members.

As I walked, I opened up the guild members list and sorted out the names by CBN Battlemaster Rankings. [Zhan Long]'s rankings were extremely distinct—

Xiao Yao Zi Zai

2. Yue Qing Qian

3. General Li Mu

4. General Wang Jian

5. Yue Wei Liang

6. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands

7. General Lian Po

8. Dancing Forest

9. Wolf Totem (Little Wolf)

10. Hero Ran Min (Old K)

.....

Basically, these were [Zhan Long]'s top ten experts. Our individual abilities were all above average. On top of that, they would develop along with the game and become increasingly like high level experts. For example, every time we have a team battle, experts like Qing Qian, Li Mu, Thousand Suns and I could deal with over a hundred enemies each. Plus, we could all lead an offensive rhythm on the front lines. It's said that true experts are like ancient generals, once they go out to war, they slaughter the enemy, their ferocity would greatly boost the morale of the troops. Each and every time [Zhan Long] went out to battle, we won complete victory against a stronger enemy. We didn't rely on greater numbers but rather a certain determination that lead us to battle even if the enemy were Goliath.

Licking my lips, I stood in front of the tall grass and smiled. Soon, Wan Er and Dong Cheng wil join us, and we would really become one of China's top guilds. When the time came, even if we were to fight against a colossus like [Legend], we would not fall easily. My dream was getting closer and closer!

Not far away, a group of people appeared in the open area of the forest. Every single one of them had a similar blood colored badge on their arms. It was none other than the newly established [Enemies at the Gate].

As the group came to a stop before us, Misty Cloud crossed his arms in front of his chest with the Bleeding Sword on his back and laughed, "Alright, seeing as this BOSS has already been pushed over, then we should look for our next target. We need to aim to becoming a Lv 2 guild in the next two hours, and a Lv 3 guild in the next 24!"

Sword Reborn gripped his long sword, while the symbol of a Vice Guild Master floating around his shoulder, and said, "Guild Master, I had the [Ruined Bones Division] brothers train around 1000 yards away from us, just in case someone were to ambush us. You caused a lot of chaos yesterday, I'm afraid that we'll become the target of guilds like [Flying Dragon] or [Wrath of the Heroes]. We are only a Lv 1 guild and our main guild only has around 100 elite."

Misty Cloud lightly smiled and said, "Don't worry, our three division guild has around 10,000 players in the area. There shouldn't be too much danger. Besides, this place is pretty close to [Zhan Long]'s headquarters in Green Qilin Valley. Once we get ambushed, [Zhan Long] could reinforce us within 20 minutes. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is an extremely good bastard. We're really lucky, to have such a reliable ally!"

Fighting in Blood chuckled and said, "He has to be. [Zhan Long]'s rise surprised [Vanguard] and [Prague]. Xiao Yao Zi Zai's charisma is far better than trash like Soaring Dragon or Tyrant of Western Chu, or else how could he possibly get the General Family to join his guild? Alright, let's stop wasting our time now and continue to grind!"

"Alright!"

.....

I decided to not bother them and picked up my sword as I snuck past them in the forest. After slashing through the forest, I managed to get to Green Qilin Valley very quickly. Might as well jump into the abyss!

"Pa!"

Grabbing onto a green vine, I dropped into the abyss. At the bottom, a new type of Lv 77 monster had spawned there already and there wasn't another soul in sight. The second I let go of the vine, I reached behind me and drew my swords. I made a cross with my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword and slashed the forehead of one of the monsters. As the enemy cried out in pain, my two swords danced out again; "Shua Shua Shua" the quick rhythm violently hacked the monster to death. This trash didn't even have the chance to hit back.

Standing up, I closed my eyes and felt the flow of qi around me. My Emperor Qin's Sword suddenly darted out and my Cold Iron Sword lashed out a few times. The blades created a powerful sword energy that shook the vines. After another few slashes, I felt a pressure begin to build up in my chest. It came again, the game was rejecting the Breezy Sword Style.

This time I was much calmer than before. In the end, I would spit out the pressure in my chest as I made several slashes. After a while, my shoulder began to feel numb and I was forced to sit down on the ground. In such a short time period, I lost all of my energy. Motherf*cker, the ability to create your own skill is truly extraordinary.

"Di!"

A message from Matcha came, "Boss, are you in Qilin Valley? If you are, come to (32773, 112993). A new Lv 77 Emperor Tier Boss spawned. You should be our tank, because if I tank and it goes off tank*, then we'll lose more men!"

TL Note*: when she loses the aggro

I quickly responded, "Sure. Wait for me, I'll be there in 5 minutes!"

"Alright!"

I reached out, grabbed a green vine and quickly climbed out. After swinging a few times, I landed on top of the cliff in Green Qilin Valley. I then carried my Emperor Qin's Sword and quickly ran over. After a few minutes, I reached a deep forest. In the distance, I could see a 5 meter tall Stone Giant who was surrounded by a group of people. It was none other than Matcha and her team of 200. Li Mu and Song Han were there too.

"Brother Xiao Yao has come!" Song Han yelled out, "All tanks in the front, get out of the way! We need Brother Xiao Yao to attract all of the aggro!"

I waved my Emperor Qin's Sword and opened my palm, releasing a [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the BOSS from afar. Following that, I activated [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning], buffing Matcha, Li Mu and the others. With a jump, I brought my Emperor Qin's Sword

down upon the Stone Giant's leg as it carried the light of a [Combo]. After a chain of brutal attacks, I immediately attracted all of the Stone Giant's aggro.

“ROAR!”

The Stone Giant began waving around its gigantic arms, and smashed my shoulder, bringing out 1478 damage. Darling Duck immediately healed me and smiled, “Boss' defense is so strong. There isn't any pressure on me at all....”

I waved my Emperor Qin's Sword, activating [Fierce Ice Blade] and a normal attack. One after another, damage numbers began flying out. On top of that, my [Blood Drain] also took effect—

“3127 ! ”

“+312 ! ”

“2253 ! ”

“+225 ! ”

Indeed, 10% [Blood Drain] was truly impressive. There was so much less pressure on the Healers now. However, there were 200 of [Zhan Long]'s members here, it was just too easy killing an Emperor Tier BOSS. It's just that everyone's levels weren't high enough, so they needed a Lv 72 player like myself to act as a shield.

After battering the BOSS' health down to 10%, I yelled out, “This.... I'll kill this BOSS. I have 123 points of charm, so we'll probably get more drops. I just need the experience, everything else that drops will be split amongst everyone here.”

Matcha and Li Mu nodded, “Ok!”

With a whistle of my Emperor Qin's Sword slicing through the air, along with the attacks of Mages and Archers, we all ended the BOSS' life. I ended up dealing the last hit, making the Stone Giant cry out in pain as it fell to the ground. Its enormous body shattered within seconds and it dropped a pile of equipment. Of them, there was also a blood red skill

book. I signaled to Matcha by glancing over at her. She immediately walked over and raised a chest plate. She smiled and said, “Here’s a male type Lv 70 Emperor Tier chest plate, Wu..... I think Li Mu’s the only one who can equip it?”

Li Mu’s old face blushed as he said, “How can I, hahaha.....”

Speechless, I finally said, “Just take it....”

“Alright!”

Matcha continued looking through the drops and took out an Emperor Tier longbow and gave it to General Lian Po. After that, a Purple Tier helmet and Purple Tier fists were given away to an Archer and a Berserker. Finally, it was the blood red skill book. Matcha reached out her hand and waved it over the book. The skill book’s stats appeared in the air—

[Covering Sword Slash] (S rank): Rotates the longsword in the user’s hand and creates a powerful slash that hits every target within a 30 degree fan range of 25 yards. The closer the target is to the user, the higher the damage received. Required Level: 70 Required Class: Swordman. Learning this will use up two points of charm.

.....

I laughed, “This.....can only be used by Li Mu, right? You.....why didn’t you bring Wang Jian along to kill the BOSS today? Otherwise, there’d be a roll.....”

With his hand on his forehead, Li Mu guffawed , “That fellow took the First Division’s members to Icy Forest Graveyard for training. Hahaha, I am so lucky today.....”

I nodded, “Yeah, just learn the skill. [Covering Sword Slash] is an AOE skill. It looks like it’s tremendously powerful and you just happen to lack an AOE damaging skill. Also, once you learn [Covering Sword Slash], Zhan Long will become even more invincible in frontlines during group battles!”

“Okay!”

The skill, [Covering Sword Slash], transformed into a ray of light in Li Mu's hand and vanished. He immediately brandished his sword and activated this Lv 1 skill. He then forcefully jumped up and bombarded a whole fan-shaped area with a slash. Tsk, Tsk. It didn't even seem like strike of a longsword, but more like a laser-guided battle axe missile. Its power was shocking!

.....

Right then, I heard a "Di!". It was a message from Dong Cheng Yue that said, "Dear, my dad has invited you to lunch today. You and Wan Er must go. My brother is going too. It's at 11:30 a.m. Wait for me and Wan Er downstairs. Don't be late!"

I immediately replied, "Yea. I got it. I won't be late for something like food!"

"Good. Carry on with your work!"

"Alright!"

Chapter 366: Tang Qi

Dong Cheng Feng's invitation promised a high class restaurant, and the gastronomical delights associated with such haute cuisine made my mouth water. My only desire in this life was to eat and drink for free, and here, presented to me, was a great opportunity that couldn't be so easily missed. Thus, I stopped grinding at around noon—I had finally reached Lv 73— 'twas time to log off!

Full of expectation, I arrived below the female dorms and there I beheld Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue all dressed up and waiting by the Audi TT, which was parked by the curb. We immediately got in as Dong Cheng Yue started the car and we sped towards the city, finally stopping at the restaurant's underground parking lot. After getting out, Dong Cheng Yue carried a small purse and walked ahead. Wan Er, on the other hand, trudged alongside me and secretly threw a few glances at me before reaching out to hold my arm. However, at that moment, Dong Cheng looked back at us and the little miss didn't know what to do with her hand. She could neither reach out to hold my arm, nor take it back. The only option left was to awkwardly pull my sleeve.....

I wasn't sure whether to laugh or cry, so I just let her continue holding onto my sleeve as we walked up the stairs.

.....

In the private room, the head of the Dong family sat upright in his chair. Upon witnessing our entrance, he greeted us with a kind smile, "Yue Er, Wan Er, you have arrived! Ah, Li Xiao Yao, you're here as well. Ha ha, today will be rather lively!"

Dong Cheng Lei stood up and called out, "Brother Xiao Yao!"

I nodded at him, "Ah Lei, I haven't seen you for a quite some time. You seem..... um, more robust?"

Dong Cheng Lei hesitated for a second, then candidly said, "I've been eating too well lately....."

Dong Cheng Feng couldn't help but smile and said, "Ah Lei, you brat....."

Lin Wan Er tugged on my sleeve, urging me to sit down. Dong Cheng Yue took the seat on my other side, before pulling out a menu saying, "Daddy, have you guys ordered already? I want to eat and I want to eat meat...."

Dong Cheng Feng was even more speechless at that revelation. Finally he said, "I got it...I already ordered a lot of different meats....."

"Good...." Dong Cheng Yue then sweetly smiled, "Daddy, why did you suddenly think of inviting us to eat? You're normally so busy that you don't even have the time to celebrate my birthday with me...."

Dong Cheng Feng smiled, "Actually, I invited you all to eat today because I wanted to introduce someone to you. Soon he will also be your schoolmate. His main duty is.... to be around Yue Er and guarantee her safety. Lately, there have been strange events around Hang Zhou, so we need to be cautious."

"Oh? Who are you introducing us to?"

"Just wait, they're almost here...."

"Ok...."

.....

A few minutes later, someone knocked on their private room door. It was an elegant young man clothed completely in white; he looked vaguely familiar. He smiled at Dong Cheng Feng and modestly announced, "Uncle, I'm here!"

Dong Cheng Feng stood up and said, "Yes, this is the person I wanted to introduce you to. His name is Tang Qi and he's from Si Chuan. I think, you guys should be able to recognize this person is!"

Dong Cheng Yue hesitated for a second then said, "This..... is this the Feng Shui Master, The Seventh Tang?"

Tang Qi grinned and said, "Yes it is me, Miss Dong Cheng, but please, just refer to me as Tang Qi. From now on, we are friends. In addition to

being friends, in compliance with your father's wishes, I will be accompanying you at school to ensure your safety."

As he finished talking, Tang Qi looked at Wan Er and said, "Hello Cang Tong. I didn't think I would meet you in real life...."

Wan Er glared at him and said, "I don't know you!"

Dong Cheng then looked suspiciously at Dong Cheng Feng, "Daddy, I don't think....I don't think I ever asked for a bodyguard, isn't that right? Besides this Tang Qi.... what gives him the right to protect me? Is he really talented?"

"This...."

Dong Cheng Feng quietly said, "Yue Er, don't be stubborn. Tang Qi is only here to take care of your safety and won't meddle in your personal life. Besides, Tang Qi isn't much weaker than Li Xiao Yao, he's also on the Royal Air level. This is something that an old friend of mine tested out...."

"What?!"

Tang Qi was shocked, "Li Xiao Yao is also a peak Royal Air Level?"

I look at him and said, "So that's why...."

Tang Qi smiled and said, "Then... How about we cross swords for a bit?"

I grinned back, "Just what I was thinking!"

Unexpectedly, Dong Cheng Lei angrily roared out, "You want to bully my Brother Xiao Yao? Dumbass! Don't you dare touch a hair on my Brother Xiao Yao or else I'll beat you up!"

Raising his fist, Dong Cheng Lei threw a punch with his god-given strength!

Tang Qi immediately reacted and gathered both his palms at his abdomen. Suddenly his qi expanded and "Peng!" he caught Dong Cheng Lei's fist, but was forced backwards several steps. His face was ashen. He didn't move even after a few seconds. His two arms were probably numb by now. Shocked, he looked at Dong Cheng Lei, "This...young master Ah Lei is so strong, so strong...."

Dong Cheng Feng yelled out, “Ah Lei, calm down! Tang Qi isn’t a bad person!”

Dong Cheng Lei’s arm suddenly tightened as he roared out, “But he wants to fight my Brother Xiao Yao. How can he not be a bad person? Dad, don’t get tricked by this bastard!”

Dong Cheng Feng helplessly said, “Li Xiao Yao...”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Ah Lei, please calm down a little. Tang Qi and I just want to arrange a time to spar. We aren’t actually fighting. He isn’t a bad person, at least he doesn’t look like one!”

Tang Qi rubbed his nose and said, “Hmph, the waters of Hang Zhou are truly deep. I need to be more cautious here next time. I need to take precautions or else I’ll be doomed....”

.....

I nodded at Dong Cheng Lei to sit down. That brat doesn’t even listen to his own dad, but he hears and obeys me.

Mumbling, he finally sat down next to his father.

Dong Cheng Yue wasn’t feeling too satisfied with this and spun the lazy suzy. She shot a glance at Dong Cheng Feng and said, “Daddy, you really won’t discuss this with me? I don’t want a bodyguard, and even if I did want one, I want to choose one myself.....”

Dong Cheng Feng said, “Brat, then who do you want?”

“Li Xiao Yao...”

“Hmph.....”

Dong Cheng Feng looked towards me, “Li Xiao Yao, do you want to? If you want to, then I’ll give you 10 times of what Lin Tian Nan is paying you. How does that sound?”

I looked over at Wan Er who was beside me and shook my head, “I really shouldn’t. Thank you for your generosity Uncle Dong Cheng, but I already promised the Lin Family that I would properly protect Wan Er, and I have no intention of changing that.”

Wan Er's small cheeks finally seemed to reveal a small smile as she happily looked at me but she didn't say anything.

Dong Cheng Yue pouted and said, "Too bad, there's only one Li Xiao Yao....."

.....

Tang Qi couldn't take it anymore and said, "Li Xiao Yao...Li Xiao Yao... why does everyone want Li Xiao Yao. What's so good about that bastard, to be so important to Miss Dong Cheng? Looks like I definitely need to test him....."

I glanced at him and said, "What is it, you want to duel with me?"

"Just what I was thinking!"

"Hmph...." Dong Cheng Feng said, "Let's first eat. If you want to compete, this restaurant has a practice ground in the rear garden that you can use for your spar. Besides, I also want to see which of these two young elites is truly number one! Tang Qi, rumor has it that he is the strongest youth amongst the younger generation of martial arts in the South. Li Xiao Yao has never been heard of, but it seems as though he isn't bad. A perfect match up. Let me see who of the two younger generations is stronger."

I nodded, "Mhm, as you say."

Tang Qi pulled out a chair and sat beside Dong Cheng Yue. He smiled and said, "Little miss, how about I show you a magic trick?"

Dong Cheng Yue nodded and said, "Do what you wish...."

Tang Qi took out a turtle shell from his pocket, tossed three coins into the shell and shook it around. Dong Cheng Yue's face revealed some annoyance, "You think a few parlor tricks will help you pick up girls? Give up already, I don't believe in my 8 characters* and I don't have any interest in finding out my future. My future will be something that I, Dong Cheng Yue, alone will control, you don't have to try and figure it out!"

TL Note: *8 characters in chinese culture represents a sort of fortune telling that is rumored to be pretty accurate. Everyone has 8 characters that represent them and can be used to calculate their compatibility with other people's 8 characters

Tang Qi smiled, "Little Miss, I'm not telling you your future. Just watch carefully..."

As he finished talking, Tang Qi abruptly opened his hand, and the turtle shell suddenly started floating in mid air. Then, he lightly tugged the air in his right hand and the coins in the shell slowly flew out, one at a time, and began spinning around in the air. There wasn't a single string attached to the coins.

.....

"Eh!?" Dong Cheng Yue's eyes widened, "This... this really is magic. You can actually lead objects through the air?!"

I couldn't help but smile. As a Royal Air Level expert as well, I could feel the flow of Tang Qi's qi.

"Li Xiao Yao, why are you smiling?" Dong Cheng Feng asked.

I simply shook my head and smiled. Then I picked up the chopsticks next to me and gave it a casual toss before activating my own qi. At that moment, the chopsticks suddenly stood up in midair. I opened an empty palm and the qi pushed the chopsticks, forcing them to fly out. "Pa!" the chopstick struck the coin in the center and shot it right into the other wall. When I rose my right hand, the second chopstick flew out as well. "Shua Shua" three chopsticks shot down Tang Qi's three coins right into the wall.

Wiping my hands, I smiled, "Oh, it seems I can use magic too? Tang Qi, aren't you ashamed for using your repelling qi for parlor tricks? You've embarrassed the entire martial arts world..."

Tang Qi's face burned, "Hmph, so you studied this kind of stuff too...."

Dong Cheng Feng clapped his hands, "Not bad, not bad. The next generation truly is formidable. The skills of you two are truly shocking.

Once we finish eating, I want to see your true strength!"

I asked, "Will I get rewarded if I win?"

Dong Cheng Feng hesitated, "Eh, what do you want?"

I thought about it for a second and said, "The reward I want is for Tang Qi to not become Dong Cheng Yue's bodyguard. I don't want to see Dong Cheng Yue forced into something she doesn't want."

"Such a request...." Dong Cheng Feng deeply pondered for a few seconds then said, "I can't agree to this."

"Alright....." I smiled, "It's no problem. Then I won't compete with Tang Qi any more. Can I still eat?"

Dong Cheng Feng helplessly said, "Just eat, it's no problem. There's no need to spar, it won't hurt our relationship"

"Ok."

Dong Cheng Yue pouted as her watery eyes looked at me. Tang Qi saw everything and gave a deep sigh, "Ay, this trip to Zhe Jiang was truly hard and unprofitable...."

.....

The banquet came to an end as I filled my stomach until it became perfectly round. I rubbed my mouth and followed Wan Er out.

Tang Qi walked up and said, "Wan Er....."

"Hm?" Wan Er turned around, "What do you need?"

"I would.....I would like to go back to school in your car. Is that alright? I'll be going to study at Liu Hua University as well...."

"Why don't you get a taxi...." Wan Er said impatiently.

Tang Qi's face turned green, "Isn't that just a little too heartless?"

I smiled, "It's nothing... it's really easy getting a taxi here. Besides, I also remember what you said before-that I had no right to remain by Wan Er's side, is that right? I still remember that very clearly. I won't say anything else but this, meet me tonight at 10 at the school's basketball court #7.

We'll decide who's better in secret.

“You!” Tang Qi made a fist and said, “Alright, I accept your challenge!”

“Good, I'll be waiting!”

.....

After getting into the car, the TT sped away.

Tang Qi stood at the curb and reached his hand out to flag a taxi. The car came to a stop and the driver asked, “Where to?”

Tang Qi said, “Liu Hua University!”

“It's out of the way! My car's air conditioning isn't good either, it can only spit out hot air.”

“I don't believe you!!”

“Get in then!”

More than ten minutes later, Tang Qi's face dripped with sweat as he crawled out of the taxi. After wiping off the perspiration off his face, he cursed, “F*ck, to think that I would get here trapped in a car at 39°C. These coastal people's heads are truly made of something else....”

Chapter 367: Hills of Despair

In the afternoon, I continued to grind levels and also took the opportunity to go to the Cave of the Dead King. There, I gathered some more newly spawned Spirit Recovering Grass, training my alchemy skill until the experience reached 87%. I was missing just a bit more to becoming a Lv10 alchemist and if everything proceeded as planned, I would undoubtedly be Ba Huang City's first.

.....

Around 5 in the afternoon, I logged off to eat with Wan Er and Dong Cheng only to discover that Tang Qi was also at the bottom of the girls dorm. In his hand, he carried his small turtle shell. Grinning at me, he said, "Li Xiao Yao, you came?"

I glanced over at him and said, "Yea, I'm here to pick up Wan Er, you?"

"I'm here to pick up Dong Cheng Yue, you know that..."

"Hehe...."

"F*ck, who are you laughing at?!"

"Who are you, do I know you?"

Tang Qi was speechless.

A few minutes later, the two beauties came down the stairs, hand in hand. They were incredibly beautiful with their dresses fluttering in the wind. Having seen this many times, I was accustomed to it but Tang Qi was completely mesmerized. His entire person seemed dumbfounded as he murmured, "So beautiful...."

I glanced at him, then couldn't help but smile. I walked up to Wan Er and asked, "Wan Er, what are we eating tonight?"

"Let's eat barbeque, I want to eat meat...." The beautiful little miss coquettishly decided.

My heart skipped a beat and I nearly cried out but managed a normal reply instead, "Alright. There are a few barbecue places in the school and

they all seem pretty good. Let's head over. Dong Cheng, you're coming along too, right?"

Dong Cheng giggled, "Yup. Of course I'm going with Brother Xiao Yao...."

Tang Qi looked at us awkwardly from the side. Wan Er felt a little guilty and asked, "Tang Qi, do you want to come too?"

"Uh, yes! Yes!" Tang Qi seemed as though he was grasping at straws and sent a gracious look at Wan Er. However, Wan Er quickly grabbed onto my sleeve and dragged me away.

.....

Within the barbeque buffet on campus, Wan Er and I sat together, busy greasing and sprinkling spices. Dong Cheng quietly sat on the other side, her beautiful eyes emotionlessly staring at Tang Qi. Tang Qi could only shiver from the glare before asking, "Little miss, exactly what did I do to offend you so much?"

A corner of Dong Cheng's lips twitched into a smile as she said, "Not at all, you haven't offended me. It's just, my personality isn't that great, and I just don't feel good seeing you. That's why my face looks like this. You don't have to feel guilty, it has nothing to do with you."

Tang Qi's face turned green, "This... How could this not have anything to do with me? I'm the person involved....."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Alright. Tang Qi you don't have to panic so much. Dong Cheng isn't a very narrow-minded girl. She's just rebelling against the arrangement made by Uncle. When my dad arranged to have Li Xiao Yao stay by my side, I was irritated at first too. I still got used to it in the end; Now, if..."

Wan Er paused and cast a glance at me with her beautiful smiling eyes. She continued grinning and said, "If he were to suddenly disappear from my side now, then I will really feel strange."

Dong Cheng Yue clenched her fist and pouted, "Don't say anymore, Wan Er. With Li Xiao Yao staying by your side, at least you like him.. But

what about me? It's a presumptuous super idiot with intellectual deficiency staying beside me.....

Tang Qi shuddered and said, "I..... I..... Little Miss, when did I become a super idiot? Although I, Tang Qi, am not an elegant and distinguished person, but..... but I am still considered good looking, brave and strong in my hometown....."

Lin Wan Er giggled, "Okay, Dong Cheng. Stop twisting yourself into a knot with these. You are going to stay with me in the future anyway. Tang Qi is just a shadow that accompanies us when we eat and shop, just regard him as air. You can continue teasing Li Xiao Yao. I won't mind at all....."

I coughed, "I mind, okay?"

Dong Cheng Yue immediately looked at me with hurt expression, "Brother Xiao Yao, you don't love Dong Cheng anymore?"

I twitched my mouth, "Sis, when have I ever loved you? Speak clearly, I am not a very careless person, you know. Seriously....."

Dong Cheng Yue pouted her mouth and sat there reservedly, "It looks like my days of a one-sided love will still continue for a long time....."

Tang Qi clenched his fist and exclaimed, "I can't tolerate this any longer. Little Miss, I want to help you uphold justice!"

Emitting a killing aura, Dong Cheng Yue glared at Tang Qi with her beautiful eyes, "Do you have the right to talk here? Get lost!"

Tang Qi was shocked, "Such a quick change of attitude. I..... I suddenly feel slightly overwhelmed with grief..... "

Dong Cheng Yue stretched her hand and pointed southward, "There. A clear lake is near southern side of the library. Many couples are making out there. If you don't mind, you can do a magnificent jump into it. Tsk, tsk....."

Tang Qi's face turned purple, "My future living environment is really crazy....."

As he was saying, Tang Qi raised his brows and looked at me, "Li Xiao Yao, isn't all of this because of you? Even though you came first, I.....I, Tang Qi, will not give up."

I grinned, "What are you talking about? Why can't I understand? Let me tell you. The three people sitting in this table are [Zhan Long]'s members; just you alone are a member of [Hero's Mound]. Figure it out yourself. Stay low, if not you will get beaten to death!"

Tang Qi became speechless, "....."

.....

.....

After dinner, we strolled on the small path of the school. Wan Er walked rather slowly, so I slowed my pace too. My instincts told me that Missy had something to say right now.

As expected, Wan Er stared at the fallen leaves and asked softly, "Li Xiao Yao, are you really going to fight Tang Qi in the number 7 basketball court tonight at 10 o'clock?"

I nodded in response, "Yeah."

"Why must you?" She gave me a perplexed look and said, "You know, Tang Qi is the person hired by Uncle Dong Cheng. You being on bad terms with Tang Qi will cause the relationship between my father and Uncle Dong Cheng to become uneasy. Also, it would not be a good thing for Dong Cheng, since we still don't know Tang Qi well enough. If he is someone with malicious intent, then Dong Cheng will be in danger!"

I smiled, "Don't worry. I have my own intentions. I am responsible for your safety as well as Dong Cheng's safety. I must show Tang Qi who's the Boss around you two. No matter how strong Tang Qi is, he must obey me during decisive moments, otherwise I can't promise to keep you and Dong Cheng safe. The fight with Tang Qi today is not because of jealousy, but to decide who's the Boss!"

Wan Er stared at me with her bright eyes widened. Suddenly, she grinned, "Alright, I really don't understand the world of you boys. But rest

assured, Dong Cheng and I will come at 10 o'clock on the dot to watch the fight tonight.....What are you planning to do when you get back to your dorm?"

I pondered and answered, "I wanna rush my Lv 10 alchemy. Wan Er, what maps in Fan Shu City do the Lv 9 herbs, Spirit Recovering Grass, spawn in? I have been to all spawn points of this herb in Ba Huang City, so I am thinking of going to Fan Shu City. I am really close to getting Lv 10 Alchemy."

"Hmm. I don't know yet, but I will help you check. With my connections, it's pretty easy."

"Alrighty!"

.....

I returned to the dorm and went online!

"Shua!"

I appeared in Ba Huang City. After checking my bag, I dissolved some rubbish weapons I took out from National Beauty and received some God Army Cards. I suited up for the journey and went directly out of Ba Huang City. I then opened the world map, locked onto my destination and sped towards Fan Shu City with my Flaming Tiger God in tow.

"Di!"

The Beauty Cang Tong sent a call request, and I immediately answered

"Li Xiao Yao, I found it. There are three locations that spawn Lv 9 herbs in Fan Shu City. The first one is taken by [Hero's Mound] and the other one is taken by [Porcelain Goblet]. The last one is quite hidden and not many people know about it. Only this map gives you the possibility of finding some newly spawned herbs.

My eyes lit up, "What's the name the map?"

Wan Er chuckled, "It's a hidden map located northeast of Fan Shu City, not too far from Ba Huang City. The exact coordinate is (172373,78484),

but the levels of the monsters there are extremely high. I heard the monsters there are almost Lv 80. Plus, many top players of Fan Shu City might also be hunting there. You must be cautious. After all, the badge of Ba Huang City is displayed on your shoulder so the people of Fan Shu City might pursue and kill you if they see you.

“Yeah, I got it!”

“Erm.....do you need me to accompany you?”

“Err..... “ I pondered and grinned, “No need. I can gather the herbs myself. I won’t take up any more of your time. You should go training yourself. Muah.....”

Wan Er smiled sourly, “Fine, then you watch out. Tell me straightly you got PK and I will bring people there to get revenge for you.

I burst out in laughter, “Don’t worry. It’s the Boss of Ba Huang City going to Fan Shu City, how would he get bullied? They should thank the heavens if I don’t bully them!”

“True that!”

“Get your things done first. I am going to gather herbs!”

“Okay!”

.....

After dashing for 40 minutes, chunks of boundary stones appeared in the flourishing jungle. Ba Huang was wrote on the obverse side of the monument and Fan Shu was inscribed on the reverse side. This is the borderline of the two cities.

The instant I stepped past, the system bell rang: Attention please! You have entered the boundary of Fan Shu City!

The system’s map coordinates refreshed and changed into that of Fan Shu City. I saw that I wasn’t too far from the coordinate that Wan Er had informed me of. The journey would take just a maximum of 20 minutes. Perfect! I immediately made my way there swiftly!

After crossing the desolate plain, an abstruse jungle appeared ahead of

me. Amidst the dense shrubbery were several hills. As I approached the coordinates, the sound of the system bell rang in my ears—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Attention please! You have entered the perilous map—Hills of Despair !

Map Introduction: Hills of Despair; an enormous zone made up of unstably connected mountain ranges. Due to the earth’s magnetic poles, these enormous mountains float in the sky and are joined together by green vines. Terrifying wild animals inhabit the jungle surrounding these mountains. It is an area that adventurers of mankind wish to avoid. However, some herbs that people desire thrive within this hilly region, therefore the Hills of Despair became the graveyard of adventurers, accompanied by agony and despair.

.....

I looked up and saw mountains floating in midair. Green vines were hanging below the mountains while the howls of wild animals resounded from the mountain peak. This was a really interesting map.

“Pa!”

Grabbing a green vine, I lifted myself up and within moments, ascended the floating mountains.

Chapter 368: Fight Me If You Dare

“Pada.....”

I stepped firmly past the edge of the floating mountains with my divine battle boots and ran forward a few steps in case I fell back over the ledge. I looked up and saw an enormous scarlet lizard directly ahead of me. It rushed at me with its rapidly moving four legs and blood red tongue sticking out, before finally opening its gigantic mouth fiercely. From this action I could tell he wanted to swallow me whole.

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my Cold Iron Sword and forcefully thrust it downwards. “Puchi” My sharp longsword had nailed the lower jaw of the lizard directly to the stratum. The Emperor Qin’s Sword in my right hand carried out a [Combo] causing the enormous lizard, a Lv 79 Phantom Tier monster, to howl in pain. My Flaming Tiger God then roared and slashed at the lizard’s head continuously with its sharp claws. It was settled in just a few strikes.

“Huala.....”

14 silver coins plus a blood-red card—

[Scarlet Lizard Card]: Increase the user’s attack strength by 10% and attack speed by 5%. Level Requirement: 70. Duration: 120 minutes

.....

It’s a good card. With a wave of my hand, I used it and continued advancing!”

While slaughtering lizards on the way, I glanced over at the plants in the mountain range twice. I could see Lv 7 and Lv 8 herbs, but I just couldn’t find any Lv 9 herbs . Peering out into the distance, I noticed a red-colored mountain range that was more majestic than the rest. Yeah, if I’m not mistaken, the Spirit Recovering Grass must be there.

I continued clearing the path and heard the howls of monsters along the sides so I went out of the jungle to take a look. On the mountain ridge,

a small three man training team was diligently battling. A Lv 68 Archer, a Lv 70 Knight and a Lv 67 Healer named “Love Mangoes”, “Love Durians” and “Love Grapes.” They must’ve all been in the same family. The one named Love Durians was a Knight around 25 years old, while Love Mangoes and Love Grapes were two plain-looking female players.

“Little Sis, target the monster before you use [Scatter Shot]. Don’t go too far away, otherwise skills like [Scatter Shot] will lose its accuracy. Second Sis, just focus on healing me!”

Love Durians swung his longsword and saying, “In Fan Shu City, the price of a Spirit Recovering Grass has gone up to as high as 10G. If we’re able to gather 100 Spirit Recovering Grass, then it would be enough for the game fees and electric bills for the next few months. Hehe, now it’s really time for profit!”

Love Grapes chuckled, “Brother, don’t be so idealistic. Whether there is Spirit Recovering Grass here or not is still unknown. Plus, we might not even make it up there. I saw corpses of Scarlet Lizards on the ground just now, so I suspect that we’re not the only ones here. Besides, brother, your level absolutely must not drop, otherwise all those the nights spent on training would be wasted.”

“Rest assured. Your brother is very strong!” Love Durian said as he confidently waved his shield and laughed out loud.

.....

I glanced over at them but remained silent and carried on clearing my path along the other side of the mountain. Those three didn’t pose a threat towards me, and they looked like good people. People who work assiduously for the game fees and electric bills were primarily good-natured. If there was no greed, there wouldn’t be invasion or slaughter either.

I continued advancing along the shady side of the mountain. About an hour later, I finally arrived at the main peak. The rocks here exhibited a deep red color like they had been soaked in blood. However, various kinds of unusual plants flourished in the crevices of the rocks. There were

plants that could be harvested while at the same time there were those that couldn't.

“Eh?”

I gasped in surprise at the sight of a familiar herb in the crevice of the rock right ahead of me. That was the Spirit Recovering Grass I had been searching for!

In extreme excitement, I hurriedly rushed forward to gather all of it!

I gathered a herb and received three Spirit Recovering Grasses. I was delirious. Filled with motivation, I begun dauntlessly slaughtering my way towards the next patch of grass and begun collecting more. In the blink of an eye, I had gathered several tens of Spirit Recovering Grass. I was bursting with joy. This was all thanks to the precious information Wan Er provided me with. Otherwise, I would have had to wait at least a week before I could gather Spirit Recovering Grass at Ba Huang City. If that happened, I wouldn't be able to get the reward given to the first person who reached Lv 10 Alchemy.

As I walked forward and drew closer to the summit, I could finally see that it had was strangely crown-shaped. There were also a few small monsters wandering around the vicinity. In addition, densely packed tufts of Spirit Recovering Grass could be seen from a distance, growing abundantly between rocks at the peak. Suddenly, I swung myself onto a ledge. Oh my, there were over a thousand tufts of Spirit Recovering Grass! What a big temptation! Among the three big main cities, Hills of Desperation definitely had the most Spirit Recovering Grass!

Feeling a sense of excitement, I was about to make a detour towards the summit. Yet, the clashing sound of swords and knives filled my ears. I hastily stood up and weaved through the high grass; a roundabout route to get to the pathway leading to the peak. From here, there was no way to get up to the summit as it was floating in midair.

.....

Crawling out of the bushes, the scene in the distance astonished me. The Fruit Loving Trio had been completely annihilated. Love Durian was

kneeling under a pine, his shield had already dropped. Love Mango and Love Grapes were also kneeling not too far away, their potions scattered all over the ground.

“Pa.....”

A gold battle boot stepped onto the shield as its new owner reached down to pick it up. He scanned it and smiled, “He he, a Lv 70 Purple shield. The defense is pretty good too. It’s a waste to put it on such a trashy Knight, how about we take it? Fourth Bro better get up here soon or else all of the Recovering Spirit Grass might not be monopolized by our [House of Prestige] any longer.”

Staring at the killer, I found that he was a Lv 71 Berserker. Above his head, a line of distinct words appeared—

Quick Thunder Swift Wind Lv-71 Gold Berserker

City: Jiu Li City

Guild: House of Prestige

Position: Vice Guild Master

.....

Beside him, an Archer cleared his throat and said, “Vice Guild Master, we came all the way from Jiu Li City for the sake of grinding to Lv 10 alchemy and herb-picking..... Ruo Feng Guild Master had repeatedly forbidden us to PK out in the wild but just now..... now we’ve killed three people from Fan Shu City. If Guild Master were to find out, then I’m afraid.....”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind grit his teeth and said, “What are you afraid of? Brother Ruo Feng won’t say anything about it. It’s a good thing for [House of Prestige] if we produced the first Lv 10 Alchemist. Three dead people can’t be compared to that. If there were others I would have killed them all the same. This is the price you have to pay to become the King.”

The Archer pursed his lips and said, “Alright alright, I’ll keep this a secret. I’ll do my best to make sure that Guild Master Ruo Feng won’t find

out about this.....”

.....

I took a deep breath. I finally understood what had happened. It was Jiu Li City’s [House of Prestige] coming here to grind to Lv 10 Alchemy. The Vice Guild Master Quick Thunder Swift Wind was leading the expedition himself. Clearly, he was none other than the famous CBN ranked 16. His ranking was actually above mine. But, his ingame attitude was just all too terrible. In all honesty, the two parties could’ve negotiated; there was absolutely no need to kill the Fruit family. I couldn’t tolerate his way of settling the issue.

“Keng!”

Reaching back, I pulled out my Emperor Qin’s Sword and together with my Flaming Tiger God, slowly stepped out of the thicket, my silhouette flickering as I appeared.

“Who’s there?”

The Archer’s voice fell as his eyes widened in shock, “This.... Ba Huang City’s number 1? Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it’s actually you!!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind reached out and grabbed his battle axe. He stared coldly in my direction, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai? What are you doing in Fan Shu City. Aren’t you busy flaunting your dominance?”

I grinned and said, “I’m here to pick Spirit Recovering Grass, why don’t you step aside!”

“We got here first, why should we get out of your way?”

“Because you guys are in my way so I should kill all of you. Isn’t this your style?” I coldly smiled back.

Quick Thunder Swift Wind grit his teeth and coldly said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, heroes are flexible. Take a look yourself, there are 5 members of [House of Prestige] but only one of you. Even the lousiest of us five is ranked 1137 on the CBN Battle Net Rankings. On what grounds do you think that you can deal with all of us?”

I suddenly raised my other hand and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. The corners of my mouth lifted as I said, “Why don’t we give it a try? How else would I know if I could deal with all of you? Let’s fight!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind was starting to get mad and lifted his battle axe, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I know you’re an arrogant person. However, unless it’s inevitable, I won’t fight you. For what reason would you challenge [House of Prestige]?”

I swung my arm and pointed my Cold Iron Sword at the three bodies, “Just pretend that it’s for their sake! Our [Zhan Long] has always fought for the weak. I simply can’t stand trashes like you that take advantage of the weak with your strength. What’s the point in people like [House of Prestige], [Legends], or [Hero’s Mound] killing these solo players? Come on, don’t be a wimp. If you have the guts, then fight me instead!”

“You have a death wish Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind abruptly raised his battle axe and summoned his pet. He roared out, “Brothers, attack together! Let’s kill him!”

Charging forward, I met Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s battle axe with one of my swords. At the same time, I looked over and noticed a [Scatter Shot], a [Indigo Sea Arrow] and a [Combo] locked onto me. They would hit me all at once!

“Die!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s axe was engulfed in flames as he violently swung it down at an impossibly undefendable angle. My only option was to fall into their trap. The first attack basically showed that Quick Thunder Swift Wind was a true top level expert, and he wasn’t much weaker than an expert like Yan Zhao Warrior.

My body came to a sudden halt as I held my Cold Iron Sword above my shoulder. “Keng!” I parried the battle axe’s attack, and as I expected, the left hand buff of block+40% was extremely useful; an originally extremely difficult attack to defend against was easily blocked by my sword!

“Shua shua...”

After taking Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s oppressive attack, I rolled across the ground, dodging the other three attacks. I slipped out of the fight and flipped myself upwards while punching the ground, making [Binding Chains] fly out, binding the Archer’s two feet. Good! My opportunity was here!

I swung my Cold Iron Sword and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

Three images of the Cold Iron Sword appeared in the air and suddenly shot through the Archer’s body. 4531 damage. It was an instant kill. The enemies were now down a person and best of all, it was a control type!

My body shot through the group as I activated [Haste] while my Flaming Tiger God roared as it charged in from behind the group. I turned around as I slid, my Emperor Qin’s Sword flashing with the light of a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

.....

“Oh no!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind bellowed, seemingly aware that the situation was becoming extremely unfavorable for him.

Chapter 369: Divine Dragon Slaying Arms

“Boom!”

[Seven Star Fragment Slash] came down heavily, cutting apart one of the large boulders on the side of the mountain. The Healer couldn't dodge in time and was killed instantly while the Mage's [Mana Shield] was critically damaged, bringing the durability down to 57%. My Flaming Tiger God tried to pounce forward, only to be stopped by two of the enemies' Poison Mantises, who crossed their blades, creating a bright pulsing light.

“Roar!”

Flaming Tiger God roared as his body ignited in flames; the [Flame Armor] had increased the tiger's defense so much that the two mantises couldn't do more than 2000 damage in total. The small tiger pounced with its claws raised and slashed a [Flame Claw] onto the Mage before he could even use [Dimensional Leap]!

“Peng!” The tiger's attack shattered the Mage's [Mana Shield]. He immediately used a [Dimensional Leap] and appeared 20 yards away from the small tiger. With a swing of my Cold Iron Sword, a [God Army Card] appeared on the tip of the blade and begun to spin, activating [Soul Army]. The Mage was dumbfounded. Without his [Mana Shield], how was he supposed to take on the might of [Soul Army]?

“Shua!” he activated [Dimensional Leap] again. Using [Haste], I rushed up to him for the kill. Lowering my body, I activated [Blade Rush] to decrease the distance between us. The Mage panicked and activated his third [Dimensional Leap] to increase the distance between us. Unfortunately, he didn't notice the movement behind him. Two Scarlet Lizards tackled him from behind, and bit the Mage to death. His cries of pain were unending.

.....

“Hei!”

I spun around and lifted my Cold Iron Sword; “Keng!” I parried a Swordsman’s attack and forced him back two steps. He immediately activated [Skyshaker Slash] with a face full of rage, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you bastard, die!”

Shifting my weight backwards, I started to retreat, but couldn’t escape from the [Skyshaker Slash]’s range. This bastard’s hit rate is definitely pretty good; I can’t solely rely on dodging by creating distance anymore. Thus, right as the [Skyshaker Slash] was about to hit my shoulder, I suddenly ducked down and stabbed my Cold Iron Sword into a boulder. With a strong push, I threw away my Cold Iron Sword and forced my entire body back 3 yards. A big MISS appeared from behind me. I had finally dodged that bastard’s [Skyshaker Slash].

My Emperor Qin’s Sword lowered as I saw Quick Thunder Swift Wind charging at me from the corner of my eye. He activated [Battle Axe Throw] and I knew that I had no way of dodging it. I had to take this head on!

Slanting my body, I dragged my blade behind me as the attack shot towards me!

“Peng!”

Pain shot through my entire right shoulder, making me lose 2312 health. The [Battle Axe Throw]’s attack wasn’t just strong; it was strong enough to send me flying backwards with the momentum. After calculating the time, I suddenly spun around, and activated [Wind Blade] with my Emperor Qin’s Sword. I built up the strength in mid-air and slashed right at the Swordsman!

“Ka Cha!”

“3321 ! ”

The attack practically shattered the opponent’s chest plate. With a wave of my hand, I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and rushed forward, giving another barrage of attacks!

“1728 ! ”

Within a few moments, I had killed all 4 people that Quick Thunder Swift Wind sent over. At that time, Quick Thunder Swift Wind had already appeared behind me. While clenching his fists, he suddenly yelled out!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Player Quick Thunder Swift Wind has activated [Will of the Berserker] and increased his critical attacks by 30%.
Duration: 10 seconds!

.....

I silently panicked. There was a skill that would increase critical attacks by 30%? On top of that, this Berserker's original critical had to be at least around 20%, meaning that it was now already at 50%!

Quick Thunder Swift Wind's face twisted into a smile as he charged forward and bellowed, “Let's decide this battle within 10 seconds, Third Place Rise of the Heroes!”

Increasing his pace, Quick Thunder Swift Wind spun his battle axe and cut right at me. His battle rhythm was so natural as it shifted between offense and defense, hehe, he was really good!

Crossing my swords in front of my chest, I forcefully defended the attack. “Keng!” My arms went numb and I was forced to take a several steps backward. Quick Thunder Swift Wind laughed out and took the chance to get closer. Flames burned on his battle axe as he slashed down, it was his strongest skill — [Fierce Beheading Axe]!

I watched carefully and jerked my left shoulder. I used my Cold Iron Sword to parry the battle axe but it couldn't completely block the attack. Putting my weight into my Divine Battle Boots, my right foot stepped past the position of my opponent's right foot and with a slight hook, “Pa!”, Quick Thunder Swift Wind's body lost balance and fell right at me. With all the strength I had in my body, I lashed out with my Emperor Qin's Sword!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew and I had succeeded! I used my maneuvers to smash Quick Thunder Swift Wind's strongest attack!

The [Fierce Beheading Strike] was interrupted, but Quick Thunder Swift Wind's face revealed a terrifying calm. He suddenly slipped past me, spun around and activated [Skyslasher Slash]. The attack caused pain to ripple through my back!

"4428 ! "

It was a Critical Strike!

I quickly cast [Heal] onto myself and gulped down a 3000 Health Potion. With a roar, an enormous red dragon broke through the dirt, and twisted itself around me to form a crimson shield. At the same time, Quick Thunder Swift Wind suddenly spun around and threw another S level skill at me— [Whirling Battle Axe]. It was a 360 degree long range slash that cuts down everything within 5 yards of the user. There was no way to retreat!

Straightening my back, I showed no intent of retreating. "Peng!" I took the hit straight at my chest, losing 2800 health. Another critical hit! Even the Crimson Dragon Shield couldn't block the sheer strength of Quick Thunder Swift Wind.

However, light reflected off my Cold Iron Sword into Quick Thunder Swift Wind's eyes and I smirked, "Now it's my turn!"

I thrust my Cold Iron Sword at my opponent with a normal attack. "Keng!" sparks flew as the sword was parried by his battle axe. Unfortunately for him, my Emperor Qin's Sword came rushing at him from a different angle, stabbing him right in the arm. Quick Thunder Swift Wind cried out in pain and lost his balance. Before he took a defensive stance, my Cold Iron Sword struck down, "Ka Cha!", and cut his throat. In a flash, my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword crossed as I struck four times in a row!

"2871 ! "

"2747 ! "

“2948 ! ”

“2717 ! ”

.....

“Pa ta....”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind sunk weakly onto his knees, with eyes full of shock. His jaw fell as he said, “What...what a terrifying skill, Twin Sword Style, I’ll remember you!”

When Quick Thunder Swift Wind died, he dropped two pieces of equipment. One of them was a Purple Tier shield, while the other was a glowing red dragon shaped wrist guard. Picking it up to examine, I couldn’t help but laugh out. He he, wasn’t this the strongest armor type equipment of [House of Prestige]’s Vice Guild Master? No wonder his attacks were so strong that it brought me down to this state; even my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] couldn’t block his attacks. It was all because of this treasure...”

“Shua!” The dragon shaped wrist guards suddenly displayed a set of transparent stats ——

[Divine Dragon Slaying Arms] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 520

Strength: +70

Stamina: +67

Agility: +62

Special Effect: Increases the user’s Critical Attack by 25%

Special Effect: Increases the user’s Magical Resistance by 30%

Special Effect: Increases user’s attack by 150

Special Skill: [Defeat the Dragon], activates a dragon’s strength and drags any target under the user’s level to the user. Uses 20 points of Rage

Level Requirement: 70

.....

I quickly switched my old Purple Tier wrist guards to these new Valkyrie Tier wrist guards. At that moment, I felt strength coursing through my arms. I could feel it coming from these wrist guards. Excitedly, I checked my own stats. The Divine Dragon Slaying Arms also raised my stamina, strength and defense quite a bit. Now my stats were even scarier than before --

Xiao Yao Zi Zai (Dragon City Night Watch)

Level: 73

Attack: 3112-4177

Defense: 3126

Health: 7661

Magic: 2726

Charm: 123

CBN Battle Net Rankings: 17

.....

The 7000+ health and 4177 attack didn't need to be mentioned, but my defense had finally broken through 3100. Other than a few top tier Knights, there probably weren't anyone with a defense that rivaled mine. This sort of defense would definitely shock everyone.

On top of that, these Divine Dragon Slaying Arms had a [Dragon Slaying] special skill that used 20 points of rage. It would grab any target within 20 yards and pulled them towards the user. This was definitely an extremely useful special skill, especially for situations when the opponent is a long ranged attacker. As long as I was within 20 yards of my enemy, I could control their life and death. Regrettably, I didn't get this skill earlier or else I'd have had a better chance against Fang Ge Que. Had it been this way, the first Saint Tier equipment wouldn't have gone to [Legend] but to [Zhan Long]! Then again, Fang Ge Que was still higher level than me, so

the [Dragon Slaying] skill probably wouldn't have worked anyway.....

Standing beside the pile of corpses, I furrowed my brow. Instead of hastily gathering the Spirit Recovering Grass on the mountaintop, I used Heal again and again until my health had fully recovered. I then waved my hand and said, "Love Durian, you guys can revive now!"

"Shua Shua Shua!"

Three streaks of white light successively flashed across the field as Love Durian and the girls resurrected one by one. The girl, Love Grapes, widened her eyes as she stared in shock at the surroundings. She then asked, "Those [House of Prestige] members were all killed by you alone?"

"Yeah." I nodded.

She exclaimed in disbelief, "Impossible! That.....that Quick Thunder Swift Wind is a powerful person ranked 16th in CBN Battle Net rankings. How is it possible..... for you to kill him and four other members from his guild....."

Love Durian coughed, "Little Sis, this guy..... he's Xiao Yao Zi Zai. The one that's ranked number 17th in the CNN Battle Net rankings, he's a lot stronger than Quick Thunder Swift Wind!

I smiled, passed him the shield and said, "Quickly equip yourself and go gather the Spirit Recovering Grass. Just make sure to leave some for me!

Love Durian hesitated for a moment and said, "This..... We were the ones who were saved by you. How could we take your prizes? These Spirit Recovering Grass should all belong to you. We can't....."

I interrupted him with a laugh, "It's alright. Stop wasting your time talking, they won't be easy to gather once those bastards respawn. Return to the city as quickly as possible once you've collected 100 Spirit Recovering Grass. A battle might arise again. I didn't kill Quick Thunder Swift Wind to try to keep everything for myself. I just couldn't bear the sight of them using their strength to bully the weak. Just go!"

"Al.....Alright....." Love Durian led the two girls past me, simultaneously uttering softly, "Thanks....."

I smiled but remained silent.

.....

A few minutes later, Love Durian and the girls had gathered 100 Spirit Recovering Grasses. They immediately fished out a City Return Scroll and returned to the city after expressing their gratitude. As expected, while I stood in the grassland with my Emperor Qin's Sword in hand, Quick Thunder Swift Wind and his companions didn't have the audacity to revive since I could kill anyone of them in one strike while their health was still in half. In addition, with the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms in hand, they wouldn't dare to make any moves.

I turned around and sat on the mountaintop, leisurely collecting the Spirit Recovering Grass one by one while the sleeping little tiger purred and curled around me like a huge lazy cat.

Chapter 370: Battle Evil to the End

“Shua!”

After I picked up my 77th Spirit Recovering Grass, Quick Thunder Swift Wind and four of his guildmates finally revived. At the same time, another dozen of expert class players appeared in the vicinity of the mountain, all members of [House of Prestige].

Turning around, I looked at the people who had just revived and activated [Black Tortoise Realm] to block their path up the mountain. I smiled and asked, “You guys still want to fight? Come on!”

This time, the area around Swift Thunder Quick Wind’s wrist was empty. He lifted his battle axe, clenched his fists and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, as you can see, we have a total of 23 [House of Prestige] members here. You cannot take us on alone. Since you’re also here to harvest the Spirit Recovering Grass, there’s no reason for us to fight to the death. How about we split the harvest?”

I raised my hands and smiled, “No need. Once I’ve gathered enough Spirit Recovering Grass to reach Lv 10 Alchemy, I’ll leave immediately. You have my word. Unless you guys make a move, I won’t attack you either.”

“That’s fine. You can harvest as much Spirit Recovering Grass as you want. But please return the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms to me. No matter what, PKing is just a wild spar. There’s no need to take my equipment right?”

I smiled but didn’t comply.

.....

Next to Quick Thunder Swift Wind, an Archer frowned and whispered, “Vice Guild Master, that Divine Dragon Slaying Arms was obtained at the cost of the Guild Master’s levels. How can we let that brat Xiao Yao Zi Zai have it so easily? How about we all just rush in right now and kill him. There’s a 50% chance that he’ll drop it. It’s worth a try!”

A Mage on their side nodded. "Yeah. We have the number's advantage. We don't have to be scared of one person."

Quick Thunder Swift Wind coughed, and loudly said, "Guild Master Xiao Yao, I hope you will return the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms. This equipment is really important to me. I can't not have it....."

I suddenly stood up and said, "Quick Thunder Swift Wind! PKing in the wild has its own rules as well. Do you think I'm a three year old? If I was killed by you and my Emperor Qin's Sword dropped, would you still return it to me? We're all adults here. Don't treat me like a child. If you want the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms then come get it. If you kill me, there's a high chance that it'll drop. Don't say that there are 23 of you. Even if there were 230 of you, it'll be worth fighting for if I can take revenge for those three bystanders from before!"

Swift Thunder Quick Wind gritted his teeth, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you're not giving me any face now are you?"

I smiled coldly, "You have to earn your respect. [House of Prestige] is viewed as a reputable guild, but you guys took advantage of your strength and bullied weaker players? I've recorded all of it and I don't mind posting it on the forums, but..... I'm worried that Bai Li Ruofeng will lose all his face after this..... You guys better watch yourselves. If you want to fight, I won't back down!"

After saying that, I continued to harvest Spirit Recovering Grass. My Flaming Tiger God was patrolling the area a bit further away. Also, I'd already set up [Black Tortoise Realm] and [Soul Army] to block their reinforcement's path, so now, only their Wind Elf type players can fly up here to join them. Unfortunately, they only have three Wind Elf players and as Archers, they couldn't penetrate my defense. It would be committing suicide for them if they came up here.

I also have my [Great Realm of Desolation] and [Seven Star Fragment Slash], two AOE skills. I wasn't afraid of any flying Wind Elves at all.

.....

In the end, only after I had gathered around 1200 Spirit Recovering

Grass, I realized that I had harvested a bit too much. I stood up, pointed at the ground and said, “There’s around 30% of the Spirit Returning Grass left. Do you guys want it? If not, I’ll be taking it all.”

Swift Thunder Quick Wind gritted his teeth, “You.....”

The Archer quickly yelled, “Of course!”

I wiped the dirt from my knees and took out a City Returning Scroll, then smiled, “If fate has it, we’ll meet again! Quick Thunder Swift Wind, don’t do anymore bad things. God knows what you’re always doing. Karma will definitely get you!”

“Kacha!”

The City Returning Scroll shattered!

At that time, I received an attack on my back. Fuck. When did an Assassin get behind me?

“Roar!”

My Flaming Tiger God roared out and raised its claws as it tackled the Assassin behind me. After recovering from my short stun, I immediately spun around and stabbed the Assassin in the chest, killing him instantly. From above, Quick Thunder Swift Win and the others finally began their attack. A group of people ran straight down from the hilltop with the close combat specialists in front!

I lightly smiled and telepathically commanded my Flaming Tiger God to activate [Flame Armor]. His defense dramatically increased, then he activated [Burstfire Raid] and charged up the hill. Not a single one of the heavy armor type players came out unscathed. At the same time, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] backwards, wreaking havoc alongside the entire hill. Combined with the sound of my Flaming Tiger God’s roars, seven of the heavy armor players all fell to the ground. The damage from the AOE attacks were just too heavy; even their Healers didn’t have time to heal them all. Only Quick Thunder Swift Wind was able to get out with critical health. It was pure luck that he was still alive.

“Pa pa pa....”

A chain of arrows fell upon my armor but were only able to deal a few hundred damage. One of the Wind Elf girls at the bottom of the hill was so shocked that her little mouth widened and she exclaimed, “His.....his defense is so high, how are we supposed to fight him?”

Suddenly, a [Pillar of Fire and Ice] exploded under my feet, dealing 1700+ damage. He he, this Mage’s damage is shockingly high!

After targeting my enemy, I opened my palm and the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms began to buzz as a red dragon began to wrap around my wrist. It then turned into the shape of dragon chains that locked onto the Mage. “Hong!” It pulled the Mage from 20 yards away down the hill right before me. The Mage’s eyes widened!

“Keng!”

In seconds, my Cold Iron Sword slid out of its sheath and with both blades I cut the Mage 5 times in a row!

“MISS ! ”

“MISS ! ”

“1327 ! ”

“3482 ! ”

“3718 ! ”

The second the shield broke, the Mage was destined to die, killing him could be done in a moment’s notice.

“Retreat!”

I don’t know who yelled that, but I noticed a Healer on the hill who looked so terrified from watching me that his boots began to shake. Then in a shaky voice, he said, “Motherf*cker, this Xiao Yao Zi Zai isn’t human! We.... we don’t have a chance against him with those kind of skills in this map, going against him is practically just asking for death! Vice Guild Master, we have spent a lot of time getting to our levels. We can’t just lose them like this!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind gripped his battle axe, his eyes filled with

rage, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, remember your words and actions today, our [House of Prestige] will give you a surprise soon, just you wait!”

Before activating another City Returning Scroll, I stared fiercely at my opponents and clearly stated, “I am Xiao Yao Zi Zai of [Zhan Long] from Ba Huang City. If [House of Prestige] is a trashy guild like this, I won’t refuse your challenge. If you insist on making us your enemies, then I will put this recording up on the forums. Everything, from the beginning to the end!”

“Good. Go back to Ba Huang City and wait for it!”

.....

“Shua!”

After successfully using the scroll, I appeared in the middle of the marketplace. I quickly bought a few alchemy furnaces and immediately began refining the Spirit Recovering Pills.

As each pill was successfully refined, my experience in alchemy soared. Not even after ten minutes of doing so, the sound of the System Notification was heard--

System Notice: Congratulations, You have successfully reached Lv 10 in Alchemy. Because you are the first Lv 10 Alchemist, you have received a reward: Charm +12!

.....

Hehe. Another 12 Charms. Today really is a good day.....

I opened up the alchemy menu and the recipe for Lv 10 Potions appeared.

Lv 10 [Devil’s Pill]: Recover 3500 Mana, Evil God Grass x3, Chilling Grass x1, Alchemy Furnace x10.

Evil God Grass.... this was another rare ingredient. After searching the forums for a bit, I couldn’t find any clues as to the whereabouts of the Evil God Grass at all. I’ll just go find it myself. Finding a single needle in the vast sea is pretty hard, but there’s nothing I can do besides wait.....

Then, accompanied by a “Ding!” sound, a voice chat invitation from the beautiful Cang Tong appeared.

“Li Xiao Yao?” She said softly.

“Yeah? What’s up Wan Er?” I asked.

“You’ve already reached Lv 10 in Alchemy right?”

“Yeah. It’s all thanks to your information!”

“Hehe. No need to thank me. Also, I heard that you ran into some problems with the Vice Guild Master of [House of Prestige] in the Hills of Despair.”

“Yeah.” I didn’t want to hide anything. “They PK’d three innocent guild-less bystanders for those Spirit Recovering Grass. I couldn’t stand it so I decided to sweep the floor with them.”

Wan Er was slightly worried, “[House of Prestige] is ranked 4th place and has 70 million players registered. In reality, their strength is probably not any less than [Vanguard]’s or [Zhan Long]. It’s a little unreasonable, shouldn’t you just deal with any problems right now?”

“Yeah....” I extended my arm, “But I got one of Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s equipments after I killed him. He wanted me to return it to him. I didn’t want to return it or comply with those lowly people.”

“... What kind of equipment did he drop to make you so daring?”

“Divine Dragon Slaying Arms, a Lv 70 Valkyrie Tier Wristguard.” I sent the statlines over to her.

After looking at it, Wan Er started laughing, “Good! We can’t lower ourselves to compromise with those lowly people. I’ll support you. We’ll battle evil to the end!”

I was speechless. “Yeah. I got it. But I feel like [House of Prestige] won’t be doing anything big anyways or else they’ll be losing some face. I have the recording of them killing the innocent bystanders. It can be used as a shield if the time comes.”

“Oh. Alright, alright. When are you logging off?”

I checked the time. It was already 21:50 and so I replied, "I will get off now. See you at basketball court 7!"

"Okay!"

.....

I stored all the Spirit Recovering Pills. The quality of the potions made by players were always better than the potions sold in shops. With a 50% higher effect, the potions made by players are much more precious. Of course, the price was also correspondingly higher. This was the reason why every big guild was attempting to dominate the spawn points of high level herbs, which would bring them an endless supply of wealth.

I logged off, dressed up casually and headed out!

It was time to face Tang Qi! Let's find out how capable this fellow from the Szechuan Tang Clan really is!

Chapter 371: Real Skills

The bleak autumn wind blew as the falling leaves rolled across the basketball courts. Under the dim lights, a few groups of guys were playing basketball on courts 3, 4 and 5. “Papapa.” The dribbling sounds of basketballs echoed endlessly. The scene was just right to have my duel with Tang Qi.

.....

When I arrived at the last court on the field, the 7th one, I saw that Tang Qi was already there. He wore an informal black shirt with flat shoes and was casually leaning against the fence.

“Li Xiao Yao, you’re late”

I looked at my watch, “Not really, I’m actually right on time!”

On the side, Wan Er was wearing a dress and slightly shivering from the frigid night air. She held both her arms and said, “It’s..... kinda cold.....”

Dong Cheng grabbed Wan Er’s shoulders and laughed, “Come come. Let’s make some body heat.....”

Wan Er laughed, “Stop playing around. Watch them carefully! This.... Li Xiao Yao, Tang Qi, don’t actually fight for real. If one of you hurts the other, I won’t forgive you!”

I nodded, “Alright. I’ll be careful.”

Tang Qi smiled, “Got it. I don’t want to make Miss Wan Er worry.....”

.....

Standing there, I cupped my hands and said, “Then..... I’ll be using Q Sword’s “Imitation Fist” if that’s alright with you.”

Tang Qi nodded, “Yeah. Do whatever you want to try and beat me. Just know that I won’t tell you what style I’ll be using. You’d better be prepared Li Xiao Yao. Show me the strength that you use to protect both Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. If it’s all bark and no bite, then you can scram. I’ll personally be the one to protect them both instead.”

I couldn't help but laugh, "Be careful of what wish for, you wouldn't want to bite off more than you can chew!"

.....

Tang Qi's left foot slipped back half a step, his body lowered and his right hand clenched into a fist. Streams of invisible energy gathered around his fist, determination flashed in his eyes. I could tell that he only wanted to defeat me, not actually hurt me in any way.

Taking a step forward, I stood up straight and pointed my fists towards the ground. My arms started to tremble as particles of dust fell from my shoulders. This was the effect of the Northern Star Clan's "Imitation Fist." The last time when I sparred with Q Sword, I had actually seen through half of the moves. Not to mention, I was already well trained in the style so I was pretty confident when using it.

Tang Qi looked at me and couldn't help but compliment, "Not bad...."

When he finished talking, he rushed at me and thrust his palm forward, like lightning: it was the Wen Shou Style!

"Bang!"

My fist met with his palm and shook a bit. Both of us were using quite a lot of energy, creating a loud ruckus upon contact. My body trembled from the force. I quickly regained my composure and used all my strength to kick outwards!

Tang Qi quickly blocked with both arms. "Bang." And flew backwards about a meter into the air. While mid-air, he took a deep breath to quickly regain his senses. As he was falling, gravity seemed to strengthen around him. He fell fast, using the downward acceleration to aim a barrage of rapid palm strikes right at my shoulder.

I hastily looked up and used my arms to block his palm strikes. I didn't think that Tang Qi would be able to send out such a series of attack. Both of his hands moved very quickly as he sent five more palm strikes towards me. For his last strike, he clenched his hand into a fist filled with qi energy and fiercely punched out.

“Bang!”

As expected, his level of Royal Air had far surpassed Q Sword's in power. He attacked with full force, and I was sent flying backwards, colliding with the pole of the basketball hoop. The impact created a large dent in the pole since it couldn't handle the impact from my body...

“Li Xiao Yao!” Wan Er quickly ran over and asked with concern, “Are you okay?”

Dong Cheng came over as well and pulled me up, “That punch was packed with quite a bit of power. Even I could feel it.” She turned to Tang Qi and continued, “Tang Qi, are you stupid? Why did you go all out?”

Tang Qi stood there with defiant eyes and said, “Yeah. So what if I went all out?. If you, Li Xiao Yao, only have this much skill then I suggest that you scram right now. Such outstanding people like Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue cannot afford to shelter wimps like you. Having a trash around will only bring them harm!”

Wan Er gritted her teeth and angrily said, “Shut Up, Tang Qi. Who do you think you are? On what basis do you have the right to talk to him like that?”

Dong Cheng was angry as well, “Tang Qi, leave right now! I don't need an arrogant scum like you beside me!”

I slowly straightened up my body, grabbed Wan Er and Dong Cheng and smiled, “Calm down girls.....”

“Huh?” The two girls looked at me at the same time.

I took my hands off them, clapped and smiled. “This was only a small test for him. If someone of Tang Qi's strength could harm me, then I definitely wouldn't dare to be Wan Er's bodyguard. With that said..... Tang Qi, let's go again. I'll show you my full strength. Do you dare?”

Tang Qi's eyes were filled with arrogance, “Hehe. Come on. I hate people who are all talk. Come come come. Let me see what Li Xiao Yao's real ability is like!”

I stepped forward and turned towards the two girls, “You girls move back a bit. I’ve gotten kind of angry.....”

“Ah?”

Wan Er shuddered and quickly pulled Dong Cheng away.

.....

I walked in front of Tang Qi and fiercely lifted my right arm and smiled, “Beating you? Actually I don’t need to use any skills. I only need One Punch!”

TLN: One-Punch Man :o

“One Punch??!?!?!?”

Tang Qi couldn’t help but laugh, “Li Xiao Yao, you’ve really disappointed me. All you can do is talk. Hahaha.....”

I quietly smiled. The forces around my body began to gather around my right arm. It was as if the air around me started to whirl and condense around my arms. One could see streams of white colored air swirl around my fists as it created a wind-like “Xiu Xiu” sound.

The arrogance in Tang Qi’s eyes slowly faded away as it was replaced with horror. “This.... This is Qi Rotation?! My God! This bastard can actually..... can actually use Qi Rotation!!”

“Come on!”

I punched so quickly that Tang Qi had no opportunity to block. All of the Qi energy around us had been gathered by me. Practitioners like us heavily relied on the energy of the heavens and the earth and now that I’ve absorbed all energy around us, even a Royal Air Practitioner like Tang Qi cannot do anything except rely on his own body and his strength to defend against such an attack!

“Bang!”

The impact from the Qi and the fists created a loud sound. Tang Qi weakly cried out as his body was sent flying like a cannonball towards the basketball hoop. The entire backboard broke apart as glass shattered

onto the floor and Tang Qi flew through the frame, landing onto the grass field in the back without a cry.

.....

“This.....” Wan Er opened her mouth in shock and said, “Well..... Well..... I don’t really like Tang Qi, but this..... Isn’t this a little too much? You killed him....”

I quietly stood there and said, “Don’t worry Wan Er, he’s someone of the Royal Air level. How could he be killed so easily like this?”

Sure enough, a soft cry came from the grass field. Tang Qi sat up as he looked at both of his arms and moved them around. They were probably numb from that last attack.

“Damn. That hurt. Li Xiao Yao.... No, Brother Xiao Yao, you’re really fierce.”

Bringing along the two girls, I walked towards him and smiled, “Now do you think I’m worthy of my position?”

Tang Qi could only nod and smile, “What else can I say. The Royal Air level has three stages. I’m only at the first stage but you’re already at the peak stage, plus you can even use Qi Rotation. You’re only one step away from reaching the Internal Flame Awakening Stage.

There’s nothing else I can say. You’re the boss....”

I laughed and extended a hand out to help him up, “You aren’t injured right? Your Royal Air level physique should be very strong.”

“Not really!” I pulled him up as he grabbed onto my hand and smiled, “It seems like the old fart was right. Behind every able man there will always be other more able men. I didn’t pay much attention to it, but now I guess he’s right. I’ve been too naive..... That being the case, I’ll return to Sichuan and continue training..... This place, there’s no reason for me to be here anymore!”

“There’s no need!”

I shook my head, “You don’t need to go. Stay here. Sometimes, I need

someone like you to be beside Wan Er and Dong Cheng to protect them as I can't guarantee that I'll always be here to do so.... If I run into some problems and need to leave for awhile, I'll need you here to protect them."

Tang Qi was surprised, "You..... So this means....."

"Stay here. Be the backup. What don't you get?" Dong Cheng interrupted.

Tang Qi was speechless, "Okay! Whatever the Miss says. This backup job..... it's mine! Whoever wants it will have to go through me first!"

Laughing, I slapped his back and said, "Go back and put some medicine on your wounds!"

"Okay!"

"This place....." I looked at the destroyed court and the guys playing a few courts down..... "What should we do about this place? We destroyed the basketball court....."

Wan Er smiled on the side, "Don't worry, I gave the principal a call and told him about it. The repair fees will be billed to my dad. You two don't have to worry about anything."

"That's good...."

.....

That night, we had our first meal as friends. Around 11, I met up with the two girls and Tang Qi to go get some barbeque.

Blowing the smoke, I said, "Head Chef, add some more spicy powder....."

Dong Cheng looked over at Tang Qi and smiled, "I'm afraid that someone might not be able to handle the spiciness....."

I shook my head and smiled, "Dong Cheng, did you forget that this guy's from Sichuan?"

(TLN: SiChuan has VERY VERY VERY spicy food. Like REALLY)

Tang Qi laughed as well, "It's not fun if it's not spicy. I'll treat you guys tonight. Let's go and get some Sichuan Cuisine tomorrow. Li Xiao Yao will

pay for it!”

“Get out of here. I’ll treat us tonight. You can treat us tomorrow!”

“Hey, you’re being too stingy!”

.....

While eating, my phone rang as I received a message from Song Han: “Brother Xiao Yao, the game has updated. They’ve added a city battle system into the game. It seems like Jiu Li City wants to attack Ba Huang City.....”

I took a glance at it and hesitated for a second. I couldn’t understand what was going on.

Chapter 372: Time for City Wars

“City War?” I hung up the phone, puzzled by the news.

Wan Er took out her phone and checked [Destiny]’s official website. She then grinned, “Yeah, the City War system had just been implemented. Actually.....it’s two main cities dispatching troops to attack a citadel and the winner receives a generous reward. Also, the assisting players will receive a generous reward. It’s probably similar to the battle at the [City of the Ancients].....”

I looked at the starting time – the city war was set to begin at noon tomorrow. All the details of the event were clearly stated on the website.

[War of the Cities]:

1. A citadel will spawn between two main cities. Within the citadel will be neutral guard NPCs. The two main cities will dispatch 50% or more of their forces to commence an attack.
2. The players can assist in the attack and a certain amount of City War points will be awarded when they kill the NPCs or players of the opposing factions. When this event ends, the points can be exchanged for a generous amount of experience points. Based on these points, the top 1000 players will receive additional rewards.
3. When the City War ends, more than 80% of the NPCs that were killed will be resurrected, however, BOSS level NPCs cannot be resurrected
4. After entering the range of the citadel, once a player dies, they will not be able to revive. The City War will continue for 48 hours and the person that obtains the Citadel Guarding Decree at the end will receive sovereignty over the citadel and the citadel’s BUFF.
5. The Chinese server will spawn two citadels, “Fort Zi Feng” and “Fort Yuan Ling”. The two cities, Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City, will battle for Fort Zi feng while the other two forces, Fan Shu City and the Tribe of Giants, will battle for Fort Yuan Ling.

.....

After reading the introduction, I took a deep breath and said, “Looks like the Chinese server’s main city battle has already begun. There will be a bloody battle between Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City!”

Wan Er chuckled, “Too bad, Dong Cheng and I are in Fan Shu City, so we can’t go over to help you. [Zhan Long] has to do its best! Your opponent is Jiu Li City, there is a countless number of big guilds, like [Legend], [House of Prestige] and [Judgement]. The pressure on Ba Huang City is extremely heavy. On top of that, losing the War of the Cities would mean giving away a bunch of wonderful opportunities to the opponent.....”

I laughed out, “Don’t worry, I’ll do my best. Ba Huang isn’t that weak either, we have [Vanguard], [Prague] and our [Zhan Long]. On top of that, the new power – [Enemies at the Gate] – is more or less enough to trip Jiu Li City up a little.”

Dong Cheng swiped her phone screen a few times, then suddenly exclaimed, “Xiao Yao.... Jiu Li City, those assholes, are just too arrogant! They’ve already declared battle against [Zhan Long?!]”

Puzzled, I asked, “What’s the situation?”

Dong Cheng showed me her phone screen, unsurprisingly it was one of the hottest threads on the forum—

[Declaration of Battle]: Ba Huang City’s [Zhan Long], are you prepared to die? (Owner: Bai Li Ruo Feng)

[Content]: Just today, you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, PK-ed our [House of Prestige]’s vice guildmaster and a dozen of our brothers. On top of that, you took the Diving Dragon Slaying Arms that Quick Thunder Swift Wind dropped. [House of Prestige] will remember this. We weren’t planning on exacting revenge so quickly, but this City War has given us a big opportunity. That is the way it is, there’s nothing more to explain; you should prepare for battle, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. At this City Battle, [House of Prestige] will massacre [Zhan Long], just you wait!

.....

Wan Er rubbed her eyebrows, “This Bai Li Ruo Feng....isn’t he acting a little too aggressive? That [House of Prestige], do they actually think they’re one of the three supreme guilds or something?”

Dong Cheng pursed her lips, “Hm, for them to declare battle against [Zhan Long] like that, must mean that they’re really confident. They even said something like there’s nothing to explain.... Pei....”

I made a fist and smiled, “I wasn’t planning on doing any explaining either. I don’t care if Bai Li Ruo Feng is a good person or not, and I don’t care if [House of Prestige] is a super guild or not, all that matters is the result of the battle. Bullsh*t. After doing something like PKing in the wild, then advocating a false justice, who else would I beat up if not a guild like that!”

“How many people are in [Zhan Long] right now? I heard that.... that there are over 20,000 members of [House of Prestige] online....” Wan Er worriedly asked.

“We have around 6000 members, and around 90% of them can be online for guild events, which means there will be at least 5000+ of [Zhan Long]’s guild members.” I pondered for a second, then revealed an optimistic smile, “Just enough to win the battle, right?”

Wan Er rubbed her lips in thought, “Still need some reinforcement.....”

Dong Cheng looked at her phone and smiled, “Look at the replies. I feel like [Zhan Long] still has a chance in the coming fight. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is pretty popular in Ba Huang City and while his enemies are numerous, so are his allies. On top of that, most of his friends are second-rate hot-blooded fellows who are more valiant than that kind of two-faced uncle....”

Everyone looked at the responses. As expected, there were quite a few people who supported me.

[Second Post/Comment (Player Han Bei Song)]: Heh Heh, Bai Li Ruo Feng, you sure talk big. You actually want to massacre [Zhan Long] during the City War? May I ask if [House of Prestige] suddenly developed the right to massacre [Zhan Long]? Do you guys really think there’s no

one else in Ba Huang City? What do you see [Zhan Long]'s allies as? Talking about slaughtering [Zhan Long] in our presence, do you think we are decorations?

[Third Post/Comment (Player Moonlight Lover)]: Humph! Xiao Yao Zi Zai actually dared to kill our vice-guildmaster Quick Thunder Swift Wind in a Fan Shu City map. It's rare to see someone as immoral as you are!

[Fourth Post/Comment (Player Honest Feather)]: Yup, Yup. Big brother Quick Thunder Swift Wind is a very kind person that always stays up late to take us out for training. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, that asshole, is really not anything good. To think that he would actually make Quick Thunder Swift Wind drop his Divine Dragon Slaying Arms. So shameless!

[Fifth Post/Comment (Player Yue Qing Qian)]: I would like to ask, are the brains of the third and fourth commenters up their asses? With which eye did you two see my Brother Xiao Yao PK maliciously? It's alright if you defend your Quick Thunder Swift Wind, but don't slander my Brother Xiao Yao!

[Sixth Post/Comment (Player Yan Zhao Warrior)]: I'm just here to watch the young un's fight and I am only going to say a few words. There must be a reason as to why Xiao Yao Zi Zai attacked Quick Thunder Swift Wind. From my understanding of him, he's definitely not a person who would hurt someone without a reason. In addition, did Jiu Li City ask for [Prague]'s permission when they announced the massacre of Ba Huang City's major guild?

[Seventh Post/Comment (Player Misty Cloud)]: Massacre [Zhan Long]? This is the funniest joke I have heard today. You, [House of Prestige] want to massacre [Zhan Long], did you guys ask for the permission of the 15000 members of [Enemies At The Gate]?

[Eighth Post/Comment (Player Goodbye Tears)]: Woah, so many famous people are commenting. I'm just a nonentity passing by. By the way, although [Vanguard] isn't allied with [Zhan Long], they are still a guild in Ba Huang City. If [House of Prestige] is saying that they are going to massacre [Zhan Long] then they are looking down on [Vanguard] as

well! Die!

[Ninth Post/Comment (Player Ye Lai)]: Albeit not really understanding this, I have a feeling that the owner of this thread is really powerful. I, Ye Lai, hereby declare that although I am a player of Jiu Li City, [Judgement] will absolutely not help the [House of Prestige] slaughter [Zhan Long]. Unless [Zhan Long] seizes Fort Zi Feng, [Judgement] will never attack an allied friend. This is my position!

[Tenth Post/Comment (Player Don't Be Foolish)]: All Hail Fatty Ye!

[Eleventh Post (Player Ye Lai)]: Poster/Commenter above, F*ck off. I am going to slash you to death if you dare to come to Jiu Li City!

.....

“Look.....” Dong Cheng Smiled sweetly, “you still have quite a lot of supporters in Ba Huang City. Whether it's our alliances or the guilds that declared war, my only worry is [Legends]. They have too many members and a lot of high skilled players..... Fang Ge Que is like a nuke in large-scale group battles. With the wave of his hand, one of his spells can take out a bunch of elite players.....”

Wan Er uncontrollably gave a slight smile, “Dong Cheng, you really underestimated our Li Xiao Yao. If Fang Ge Que is the nuke, then Li Xiao Yao is the nuke killer. As long as he forces Fang Ge Que to use up his three [Dimensional Leaps] then Fang Ge Que has no other choice but to die. Plus, with healers, Fang Ge Que can't instantly kill Xiao Yao, while Xiao Yao can almost kill Fang Ge Que in the blink of an eye. This is the difference between classes.

“Yeah, yeah.” Dong Cheng patted my shoulder and said, “Anyway, do your best tomorrow and fight to the death with Jiu Li City. As for us..... Hmm, Wan Er and I are heading to Fort Yuan Ling to wage a life-and-death battle with the giants. I don't know if we will be stomped into mush by the giants.....”

I looked at her speechlessly, “Dong Cheng, your 34C is touching me.....”

Dong Cheng blushed and speedily went a step back. She grinned and

asked, "How'd they feel?"

"Can I refuse to answer?" I asked with a helpless expression.

Lin Wan Er was even more speechless, "You two, that's enough....."

Tang Qi asked, "Wan Er, are these two usually like this?"

"Yeah....." Wan Er answered with a soft smile.

Tang Qi's face turned ashen, "Why do I feel as if I am really unnecessary here? I have a feeling that I have already become the back-up plan. I.....I suddenly miss my hometown....."

Wan Er glanced at him and said, "You only understand that now? Too late.....the people of Sichuan won't miss you...."

Tang Qi was speechless as tears flowed, "I have a feeling that the whole world has abandoned me. Allow me to go wipe my tears. You guys eat first....."

.....

It was already very late by the time we finished the late-night snacks. After sending the two ladies back to the girl's dorm, I went back to the boy's dorm with Tang Qi. As we were walking on the small pathway through campus, he seemed to have something to say, but hesitated a few times.

I couldn't help but ask, "What do you want to say? Just come out with it."

Tang Qi coughed, "Xiao Yao, I would like to ask how you manage to..... to get Wan Er to like you so much and yet not feel jealous when Dong Cheng also likes you very much?"

I paused for a moment and answered softly, "I didn't do anything intentionally. I know it's not that Wan Er doesn't get jealous but that she just withholds herself from saying anything. Therefore, I shall act appropriately. I only have Wan Er alone in my heart and I won't give a response to Dong Cheng. I, Li Xiao Yao, have a small heart that can only keep one person with no space for another."

“Then.....” Tang Qi asked, “can I pursue Dong Cheng?”

I casted a glance at him and said, “As long as Dong Cheng is happy, you can do whatever you want. However, if you ever make her unhappy, I will beat you up!”

“Okay, alright.....”

.....

I returned to the dorm and slept until the next morning. The next day, I hastily ate my lunch after class and went online to prepare for the City War!

Chapter 373: Speak with Discretion

“Shua!”

After appearing in the middle of Ba Huang City, I went to get my equipment repaired and replenish my potions. I also stocked up on Spirit Returning Pills for the battle. We were goign to be spamming skills, so our mana pool would not have been able to keep up. This type of high level Mana Potion was absolutely essential. I didn't want to end up as jt a high level infantry soldier. A Xiao Yao without skills was almost the same as a Tyrant of Western Chu.

“Ding!”

A message came from Qing Qian: “Brother Xiao Yao, we're gathering at the northern gates of the city. You'll see our platoon when you come over. Heh. There's only an hour left until the City War starts, we should head over quickly. I've heard that they've already begun fighting at the borders between the two cities. People are really impatient.....”

I smiled and replied, “Alright. I'm coming!”

I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and set off for the northern gates with Emperor Qin's Sword in hand and the Cold Iron Sword sheathed on my back. Looking around, it was especially lively. Ba Huang City has at least 3 million players online right now. All the big guilds had assembled and were ready to depart. Looking to the edge of the forest, I noticed a bunch of [Zhan Long] members had gathered together. Qing Qian, Song Han, Li Mu, Matcha and etc, they were all there.

As I walked towards them, the system refreshed itself. A golden symbol appeared on my shoulders that read “The House of [Zhan Long]”. Haha. Our [Zhan Long] has already been recognized by the game masters!

“Brother Xiao Yao is here!” Song Han smiled.

I nodded, “Everyone is here already. Are we ready to go?”

“Yeah!”

Qing Qian walked to my side and noticed the badge on my shoulder. She

couldn't help but grin, "Wow, it's our [Zhan Long Hall] badge! So beautiful..... I don't know when I can enter the hall. I am so envious....."

I laughed out loud, "Keep up the hard work! Contribute in this city war. How about

I make the decision and allow the member of [Zhan Long] who contributes the most city war points to go straight into Zhan Long Hall. What do you think?"

Li Mu and Wang Jian smiled and nodded "No problem. It's best this way. Otherwise, you would be all alone in Zhan Long Hall!"

"Yeah, now that that's decided, how many people are we sending?"

Li Mu muttered to himself and replied, "Yesterday, Bai Li Ruo Feng mocked you and created the thread that insulted [Zhan Long] for everybody to see. With that, we now share a hatred for a common enemy and have decided to take our revenge. Therefore, the online rate of the main guild is 95% and the online rate of the division is 92%. With the additional members, [Zhan Long] is dispatching a total of 5700+ people. Now, we are just waiting to f*ck the [House Of Prestige], this arrogant guild, brutally.

I grinned, "Watch your language, there are little girls here. Let's set out. Matcha, do recon on the map and check the best route to get there. Everyone, do not attack rashly and act carefully!"

"Yes, Okay!"

Wait, Brother Xiao Yao....." Wolf grabbed my shoulder armor, pointed towards the south and said, "Quick look, the NPCs of Ba Huang City are moving. Cough, cough. What's going on.....?"

.....

Everyone peered south together. As expected, the massive cavalry was galloping out of Ba Huang City. With at least ten thousands people, they covered the area. At the forefront of the troops, under a blood-colored royal flag, was Luo Lei, dressed in golden armor with sword in hand and riding on a black horse. As his cloak behind his back fluttered in the

wind, he stopped his horse outside the city and drew his sword. He bellowed out furiously, “The arrogant King of Jiu Li City actually hacked my daughter’s finger off because of a few offensive words. This time, Ba Huang City will not back down. Attack and seize Fort Zi Feng! Advance into Jiu Li City and slaughter those arrogant, stupid pigs!”

A group of NPC generals all drew their sharp knives and yelled, “Save the princess!”

Luo Lei continued speaking, “Have the border guards been recalled?”

A general replied respectfully, “Lord, the seven major troops of the Kingdom of Ba Huang City have all been recalled. We will immediately proceed to attack Fort Zi Feng. This time, those ants of Jiu Li City will definitely cower before the calvaries of Ba Huang City!”

“Excellent!”

Luo Lei’s eyes turned icy cold as he declared, “No matter what troops Jiu Li City despatched, even if it’s their ace, we must crush them this time. Plus, we have the assistance of numerous adventurers. Let’s tear down the Fort within two days!”

“Yes, Lord!”

“Advance!”

“Yes!”

.....

Flags fluttered and the enormous army of the kingdom began advancing. The sound of hooves could be heard coming from outside the forest and the different colors of the flags of the seven troops could be faintly seen. This was truly a battle between King Cities. Just the thought of the upcoming battle would make your blood boil. It also happened to be a great opportunity to train [Zhan Long]’s troops with [Legend] and [House Of Prestige], some of the best guilds, as opponents!

[Zhan Long]’s large army also advanced simultaneously. We passed directly through the forest while killing all sorts of monsters on the way.

We soon past Green Qi Lin Valley, [Zhan Long]'s headquarters. It was a pity that we had too many people today. The Valley was overrun by numerous players and NPCs. They slaughtered all of the monsters and proceeded to crush Magic Tracking Forest and Icy Forest Graveyard. Presently, the large army reached the border of the map's zone. Jiu Li City was just ahead!

An empty plain was seen in the far distance, the autumn wind soughed through the air. This map named "Hell's Core" and was a neutral piece of territory right between Jiu Li City and Ba Huang City; a plain with a large piece of land colored red in the center. The red soil reminded people of of Yunnan. However, it was not Yunnan, but a dangerous region where monsters roamed freely.

(Ed Note: Yunnan is a province in Southern China)

Stretching his hand, Li Mu pointed ahead and said, "Located at the center of of the Hell's Core is the spawn point of Fort Zi Feng. This citadel is located exactly halfway between the two big main cities with a chain of mountain range on its left and the icy cold Ice Ridge Mountain on its right. It is just perfect location for troops. In fact, whoever controls Fort Zi Feng will be able to grasp the chance to attack first.

I nodded in response, "[Zhan Long] should not act rashly. Just keep advancing and await orders when we reach the border of Fort Zi Feng. There are too many people in this battle. Our 5000+ people will be crushed immediately, and we might not even be enough for them to kill. We should attack after the situation becomes clearer!"

Wang Jian nodded, "That's what the other guilds also plan to do. Brother Xiao Yao, if advance a little forward we will be able to see the campsites of [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Enemies At The Gate]. Since this is a city war, everyone ought to communicate and work together to win this grand City Battle."

"Yeah, let's go. Let's see what they are going to say!"

"Alright!"

A group of people determinedly went forward. Ten minutes later, a lofty

citadel appeared on Hell's Core. In reality, we had already entered the range of the City War when we had left Ba Huang Forest. Therefore, this battle may not even be limited to only Hell's Core. There's a huge possibility that it might be drawn to the other areas of the two main cities.

The ground was dotted with the formations of players. [Vanguard], [Prague], and a few other large guilds camped 2000 yards away from the citadel and awaited in an orderly arrangement for the command. As for some casual players and small guilds, they had already impatiently stormed at Fort Zi Feng. There was still ten minutes left until the battle began, and yet intense fights had already started around the citadel.

I walked towards the group of people slowly and stood firmly in the middle of the crowd. Almost every player around me was a guildmaster or at least an Elder. There was not even team leaders. The top guilds in Ba Huang City were all here.

.....

"Humph, Humph!" Fu Shen Thousand Blade sneered, "The guildmaster of [Zhan Long] that we have all been waiting for has finally arrived. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are late!"

I smiled humbly, "Sorry, I had class this morning. I can't be in game for a whole day like some idle people....."

"Who are you talking about?! Fu Shen Thousand Blade exclaimed inquisitively as he lifted his metal knife.

I opened my hand and grinned, "Would you like to try the taste of [Great Realm of Desolation]?"

Fu Shen Thousand Blade froze for a second. My [Great Realm of Desolation] was basically a signature skill. Of course he would know the power of the [Great Realm of Desolation], and so he did not answer but instead simply smoothed things over by saying, "Let's move past our old hate. Our opponent is Jiu Li City this time, and we must work together. Just do it for the BUFF reward for the winner....."

Jian Feng Han nodded, “Yeah. Let’s discuss the plan for the battle. This is the most important part.”

Yan Zhao Warrior crossed his arms and said, “Li Xiao Yao just arrived so he doesn’t know the situation yet. I’ll just briefly summarize it for you. This time, the people that came from Jiu Li City are mostly small to medium-sized guilds and teams. These types are not what we should be careful of. However, there are a few organized large guilds that are slightly more terrifying. The seven large guilds Jiu Li City pose the greatest threat to us!

He paused and continued speaking, “Everyone is aware of [Legend], the top guild of the China server with guildmaster Fang Ge Que, and vice guildmaster Lu Chun Yang. Next up is [House of Prestige], the arrogant guild that threatened to massacre [Zhan Long]. Then it’s Ye Lai’s [Judgement]. [Judgement] is the most indomitable guild, with an extremely strong combat strength that cannot be ignored. The fourth is [Appearance Alliance]. A guild with only girls, yet the number of the registered members is more than 50000 and the number of the online members is definitely more than ten thousand. number five is [Dao Jian Xuan], number six [Emperor’s Blood] and the seventh is Gong Zi Ying’s [Moonlit Lake]. These are all big main guilds with at least 30000+ registered members. Let’s divide the work. Specifically, how shall we battle?

Sister Matcha followed right beside me and replied, “The city war is secondary, exterminating the enemy forces is the most important. Therefore, the key to this war is killing as many of the enemy forces as possible.

[Thousand Burial]’s vice guildmaster, Youyi, sneered, “Do we need you to tell us that? What position do you have? You’re just an Elder, what right do you have to speak here?”

Matcha was taken aback for a moment.

Raising my hand, I drew my sword and forcefully shot a [Wind Blade] at Youyi!

“Peng!”

Youyi was slashed and fell back several steps. Only a bit of his health remained as a shocked expression flashed across his face..

I pointed at Youyi and said apathetically, “Every member of Zhan Long is my brother. No matter their position or strength. Watch what you say! I don’t want to annihilate [Thousand Burial] again so soon!

Yan Zhao Warrior hastily pulled my arms, “Cough, cough. [Zhan Long]’s Guildmaster, calm down. Err, Vice Guildmaster of [Thousand Burial], do speak with discretion.....

.....

The members of [Enemies At The Gate] all burst out laughing. Misty Cloud held his sword in his arms and laughed, “Haha, he actually dared to ruffle Xiao Yao’s feathers. Isn’t he trying to die?”

Chapter 374: Dragon Emperor

Jian Feng Han coughed and said, “Arguing won’t solve any problems in this battle. Shall we instead have a good discussion about our strategies? What is the overall plan, who do we attack first, who will be the main force and who will be the support; We need to settle all of these details. Chaotic battles without any formations will only put Ba Huang City at a great disadvantage. After all, Jiu Li City’s overall military strength is 10% greater than our own!”

Holding onto his sword, Yan Zhao Warrior smiled and said, “Our biggest concern are the 4 large guilds, [Legend], [House of Prestige], [Judgement] & [Appearance Alliance]. We have to at least get rid of 1 or 2 of these four guilds, if not, they’ll come together, and we’ll be forced into a difficult situation.

Tyrant of Western Chu stepped up with a sword in his hand saying, “Why don’t we attack [Legend] first! In Jiu Li City’s power hierarchy, [House of Prestige], [Judgement] & [Appearance alliance] have clashed swords with them before, so they are certainly not allies. If we all join forces and attack [Legend], we might be able to obliterate them, reducing our concerns.

I pursed my lips and said, “ Those are all just conjectures. The Guild Masters of the few large guilds of Jiu Li City all have relatively high IQ and EQs, Bai Li Ruo Feng, Ye Lai and Mu Xuan are all aware that just like the lips and teeth depend on each other, they are also interdependent. That plan is just too risky.”

Tyrant of Western Chu glared and asked “So Li Xiao Yao, what do you have in mind?”

Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior both looked at me, I looked down and said, “Let’s use their grudges. Previously, when I was in Fan Shu City, I killed Quick Thunder Swift Wind, [House of Prestige]’s Vice Guild Master, making the whole alliance hate me to the core. I will take advantage of the chaos, and bring [Zhan Long]’s most agile team to

attack [House of Prestige] for a short while, then we'll retreat. The other remaining guilds will prepare an ambush at a fixed location, first clearing [House of Prestige]'s main offensive strength, once they have lost their main army, [Legend], [Judgment] and the rest will definitely come to their aid. What do you guys think?"

Jian Feng Han Clenched his fist and said, "Yes, this plan might work, however, the lands around here are all barren, there doesn't seem to be any good places for an ambush"

Matcha giggled beside me and said, "That might not necessarily be true. Before coming into the Hell's Core, I checked the surroundings. Even though it mostly consists of barren lands, 3000 yards east of the Fort Zi Feng, there lies a forest, called Moonlight Forest. It's highly suitable for ambushes. There's just one problem, it's very dangerous for [Zhan Long] if our members are the only ones going to lure the enemies."

Smiling, Soaring Dragon raised his staff and said "The wolf can't be caught if we can't bear to lose a child, these sacrifices are necessary!"

[*TL note: This is an idiom basically meaning 'sacrifices are inevitable in order to reach your goal']

Yue Qing Qian rolled her eyes and said "It's not like emotions are making Soaring Dragon members become bait, no wonder you seem very calm about it!"

Jian Feng Han said "Knock it off, why don't we discuss who will be doing the ambush"

Yan Zhao Warrior continued "The ambush team has to be very strong, at the very least it needs to be able to suppress [House of Prestige]'s main force. Prague will send 1000 core members to help, our Vice GM Heaven's Hero will lead the team while I stay here to defend."

Jian Feng Hai followed, "[Vanguard will send 2000 men, with Sister Yun* commanding. Xiao Yao Zi Zai do you accept?"

TL Note: Sister Yun is referring to his sister Simple

I nodded and smiled "OK, Since [Vanguard] and [Prague] are so sincere,

[Zhan Long] will have General Wang Jian leading 2000 of our elites for the ambush. Misty Cloud what about you guys?”

Misty Cloud laughed aloud, “How about this, I won’t fight here, I’ll go in for the kill. I will be leading 5000 of our elites to assist you, so you will have less worries. Even if [Legend]’s main force attacks us, our military strength will be on par with theirs.”

Han Ben Song followed, “Since we are allies, I will send 3000 of our men, I’m sorry if that’s not enough, as our whole guild only has 5000 members.”

I nodded “Yes, it’s sufficient. While the crowd is still in a state of chaos you guys should discreetly deploy your men to their various positions to avoid being detected by Jiu Li City’s members. If not this plan will fail.”

“OK, Got it!”

.....

From the 200,000 men that formed Ba Huang City’s guilds, 20,000 troops swiftly spread out towards Moonlight Forest. With the chain of troops formed by smaller guilds from Ba Huang City, these 20,000 troops were concealed and moved unnoticed. Moreover, Fort Zi Feng acts as a wall between us and Jiu Li City’s camp, making it impossible to see them.

Qing Qian pursed her lips and said “Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll accompany you to lure the enemy. Go gather the troops, how many people should we bring?”

Li Mi explained from the side, “If we have too many, it will scare them, if we have too little, they will feel like there isn’t enough, and that there’s a catch. Therefore, we must be careful with the number.”

I blurted, “1000 men from Zhan Long’s core members should be able to attract [House of Prestige]’s appetite.”

General Wang Jian laughed loudly “Yes, Xiao Yao Brother is right, let it be 1000 men!”

Drawing out the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I faced the highly motivated

[Zhan Long]'s members and shouted “ We are setting off now, however we need members who are quick on their feet! Everyone with boots with movement speed +7% move out!”

At that time, about 500+ people moved out!

I followed “Members who are Wind Elves with boots of movement speed +5%, move out!”

Immediately, another 500 members started moving.

I grinned “Good, all of you, do not ask me for our strategy, our objective is to become the bait. Form groups of 10, then every 10 groups form into a platoon and those 10 platoons form into a thousand man battalion. Listen to my commands, whether its to attack or retreat, listen only to me!”

All 1000 of the men drew out their weapons and shouted “ Yes, we obey you Guild Master!”

“Move Out!”

.....

As my battle boots tread upon the red ground of the Hell's Core, I rushed ahead. Behind me, Li Mu, Matcha, Yue Qing Qian, and the rest of the members followed behind. General Wang Jian led 2000 elite members towards Moonlight Forest. There, the two groups split and the remaining people who remained at Fort Zi Feng held on to the ground; these 180,000 people were good enough for a diversion.

The scene ahead of us was bustling as millions of players from both cities were gearing up for war. Under my command, I led 1000 players towards the fortress in the south to the east. Finally, from afar, a sea of red name players from Jiu Li City dotted the map in front of us. There seemed to be no players from [House of Prestige] close by.

“Damn...”

I clenched my fist, “How can this work if there are no [House of Prestige] members...”

Matcha slapped my shoulder and pointed out, “Boss, there is a group of

people over there...”

“Ah?”

Everyone looked over and were impressed to see a group of high level players equipped with god like equipments slashing down members of Ba Huang City as they rushed towards the city war point. All of these players had the same insignia on their arm, a blood red sword. They were Jiu Li City’s 6th strongest guild – [Emperor’s Blood].

Matcha slowly replied “[Emperor’s Blood]’s Guild Master Dragon Emperor is said to be good friends with Quick Thunder Swift Wind, therefore [Emperor’s Blood] and [House of Prestige] are alliance brothers. How about we lure out [House of Prestige] by using [Emperor’s Blood]?”

My heart leapt at the chance, “Hm, ok!”

I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and shouted, “ Follow me, our target is [Emperor’s Blood], they only have 500+ players. Obliterate them!”

As I spoke, I dashed forward as my Flaming Tiger God roared. I then opened my hand and targeted an Archer from [Emperor’s Blood] with [Great Realm of Desolation]. One hit KO!

“4721 ! ”

“叮 ! ”

System Notification: You have killed the player [Emperor Ao Gu] and have achieved 10 War Points!

.....

As we were engaged in battle, General Li Mu held his sword and fought along side me. With a swing of his sword, his [Combo] was activated, killing a Knight immediately. Without delay, he raised his sword again towards a group of Healers and started slashing. With a roar, he instantly killed 7 to 8 players. This offensive strength was worthy of being placed within Ba Huang City’s top 10.

Qing Qian lightly dashed forward, “Cha Cha”, in a blink of an eye, she killed a couple of players with her daggers. In sync with my [Seven Star

Fragment Slash], Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox] raged into the crowd, and [Emperor's Blood] members were dropping like flies.

“Guild Master”

As a captain was frantically trying to retreat, he shouted “ Guild Master, It's [Zhan Long], It's [Zhan Long]! Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu are all here, [Zhan Long]'s core members are all here!”

From the rear of the crowd, a Knight clad in Gold Tier equipment with a lance in his hand rushed forward with a beast by his side, his face filled with anger “What is happening, why is [Zhan Long]'s main force charging at us!”

Above his head a line of words could be seen prominently—

Dragon Emperor LV-70 Gold Knight

City: Jiu Li City

Guild: Emperor's Blood

Position: Guild Master

.....

Dragon Emperor roared out and charged at General Li Mu. When he lunged forward, his lance shook from the strength of his thrust! General Li Mu parried the attack, “Dang”, sparks flew. He was actually being pushed back!?

Qing Qian spoke in the team channel “Be careful, Dragon Emperor is Jiu Li City's number 1 Knight, with over 3400 Defence points and 2800+ damage points. On top of that, his health is over ten thousand!”

“A 10,000 health Knight?!” Li Mu hastily retreated, he only had 5000 health points and couldn't afford to be reckless.

“Leave it to me!”

Tightly gripping onto the Emperor Qin's Sword, I dashed forward, intercepting the hunt between Dragon Emperor and General Li Mu. My Emperor Qin's Sword flashed and an 8 hit [Combo] continuously hit

Dragon Emperor's shoulder. Sparks flew with each hit.

“787 ! ”

“873 ! ”

“775 ! ”

“833 ! ”

Indeed, his defenses were really strong!

Dragon Emperor growled “ Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you came just in right time!”

“Hua!”

As his lance swept at me, I couldn't help but smile. I then pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and angrily hacked at him. “Kang”, I pushed his lance back, taking the chance to pull myself closer to him as well. I raised my boots and delivered a kick right into Dragon Emperor's stomach. Suddenly, sounds of thunder began to boom as cyclones gathered around my blade. Five lightning slashes struck the Dragon Emperor's chestplate. This health Knight was left with only 2k health.

In one hand, I started to gather energy for [Great Realm of Desolation]!

I deliberately released the skill slowly. Dragon Emperor jumped back to retreat, his face ashen. He activated [Cleansing Wind] to recover 3000 hp as he jumped back to dodge [Great Realm of Desolation]. Gritting his teeth, Dragon Emperor shouted, “Xiao Yao Za Zai, you win for now but just you wait!”

I didn't bother to respond. Instead, I placed my Cold Iron Sword back in its sheath, then raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and shouted, “Obliterate all players from [Emperor's Blood]!!”

.....

Qing Qian squinted and smiled sweetly, “Whoa, Brother Xiao Yao is so smart, you've inconspicuously diverted all the hatred towards us”

Song Han smiled and said, “Now we wait for this faux battle!”

Chapter 375: Battle at the Moonlight Forest

Shortly, a countless number of people stormed forward from the northern side of Fort Zi Feng. Dragon Emperor was in the midst of the army, leading at least 3000 members of the guild [Emperor's Blood]. Also, at the side of [Emperor's Blood], another group of people advanced menacingly. The head of this group was none other than Quick Thunder Swift Wind, the Vice Guild Master of [House Of Prestige]. He lead a troop with easily more than 5000 people who were charging aggressively towards us.

“Attack! Slaughter all of [Zhan Long]!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind held his battle axe as coldness filled his eyes. He roared furiously, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it's you who wanted to die. I said that I would massacre [Zhan Long] and now, here's the first step. None of the people that you have led here will escape!”

Dragon Emperor raised his long spear up high and yelled loudly, “Surround them!”

.....

“Ka Cha!”

My Emperor Qin's Sword slashed an Archer as I turned and struck behind me. I simultaneously cast a glance at my Emperor Qin's Sword and saw that it was covered in blood. The [Kill For Blood] had already stacked up to 50 levels in such a short time. After my attack strength increased by 50%, my Emperor Qin's Sword had a higher capacity for killing.

“Little Li!”

Carrying his battle axe, Old K violently dashed out in the middle of the crowds as [Whirlwind Slash] blasted away the group of people. He screamed, “What are we going to do now? Keep battling and slashing these bastards, or retreat?”

I laughed out loud, “They have too many people. It’s not beneficial to fight a protracted battle. Retreat with Qing Qian!”

Yue Qing Qian was at the rear of the troop formation as she fled away with her daggers in hand, softly giggling. Li Mu, Bai Qi, and the others immediately followed and retreated towards the back, while only Dong Cheng Lei was left slashing on the frontline with his battle axe. With a swing of his battle axe, three Knights were slashed until they were forced to back away as they howled in pain. Dong Cheng Lei roared angrily, “You all want to slaughter [Zhan Long]? In your dreams!”

I burst out laughing as I slid back a few steps and grabbed Dong Cheng Lei’s cloak. I laughed out loud, “Little fool, stop fighting and retreat with me. Otherwise, you’ll be shot into a hedgehog by their Archers! All the Wind Elves with long range skills, fly up high and support the retreat by shooting from the sky!”

In the midst of the crowd, a group of Wind Elf players led by Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands all soared upwards. The long row of Archers pulled their bows and shot towards the ground wildly. As for us, we escaped towards the Moonlight Forest under the cover of the Archers. We couldn’t run too fast or else our opponent would give up on chasing after us.

“F*ck you all. Still thinking of running?” Dragon Emperor roared furiously. He hastily sped up and suddenly lifted his long spear and threw it out with a “Shua”. The long spear swept across the sky as it drew a long curve. With a “Pu Chi”, it penetrated the chest of a [Zhan Long] Archer, dropping their health below 20%. The Archer’s wings broke as he fell to the ground, only to be caught up by Quick Thunder Swift Wind and killed with the strike of a hammer.

“F*ck.....”

Li Mu held up his battle axe and howled in anger, “I am going to kill them!”

I turned my head to shoot him a glare, “Kill my ass. You’ll die. There are so many Archers’ [Scattered Shot] targeting you right now that you will

be shot into a hedgehog before you could even get close to them. This kind of thing..... let me handle it! I have a basic defense of 3000+. I will cover, you guys run quickly!”

“Alright. Be careful!”

“Okay!”

.....

The roars of my Flaming Tiger God were heard, while numerous members of [House Of Prestige] dotted the sky behind and the Wind Elf players of [Emperor’s Blood] chased after us. The movement speed of the Wind Elves had increased exponentially when they ascended to the sky, yet they didn’t have the audacity to get too close. This was because they knew that if they were attacked and their wings broke, it would only mean death for them.

I decisively ran towards the back with my sword in hand and peered at the distance. A dozen Archers and Mages were targeting me. [Scattered Shot]s and [Indigo Sea Arrow]s were all targeted and prepared to fire. After estimating the time I needed, I forcefully spun around such that my feet made two lines on the ground, dodging a chain of incoming attacks and nullifying the damage. Simultaneously, I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] across the sky!

“Hong.....”

Seven Archers were hit and fell to the ground. At the same time, my Flaming Tiger God’s [Burstfire Raid] swept past with just enough power to kill the rest. I moved in a flash and continued following the crowd as we escaped towards Moonlight Forest.

Veins popped out of Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s forehead as he observed the scene, “F*ck. Trying to mess with us? You think you can use a hit and run tactic to slaughter all of us? In your dreams!! All Wind Elves, listen! Fly straight over Xiao Yao Zi Zai then descend to the ground to trap him. Even if we can’t kill those trashes from [Zhan Long], we must at least slay Xiao Yao Zi Zai, that arrogant son of a bitch!”

Everything was going according to plan. I opened my left hand and two God Army Cards began spinning in my hand. I threw one of the God Army Cards to the sky, causing an ancient sword to massacre everyone around. In an instant, ten Wind Elves fell to the ground while I continued running, canceling the previous [Soul Army] to release a new one. In the end, I easily slaughtered the Wind Elves of [House Of Prestige] within seconds, making my tactic more and more similar to a hit and run.

“Oh no. This won’t do.....” Dragon Emperor gritted his teeth as he said.

Quick Thunder Swift Wind stretched his hand and pointed right ahead while exclaiming furiously, “Bai Li Ruo Hai, go shoot Xiao Yao Zi Zai to death!”

In the midst of the multitude, a person suddenly flew up into the air. It was a Lv 70 Archer, a team leader of [House Of Prestige]. From the look of his name, he seemed like someone who was rather close to Bai Li Ruo Feng. He was a young man around 22 years old who gripped a blood-red long bow and darted forward. He aimed at me from afar and used [Scattered Shot] !

I could see the arrow clearly, but didn’t dodge. Instead, I suddenly turned around!

“Peng!”

The [Scattered Shot] hit my shoulder, causing a damage of 1129 and 1.9 seconds of stun. My resistance was so strong that there was even a limit for the period of stun. Bai Li Ruo Hai then used a [Triple Shot]. As expected, the attack strength was shocking. Even with 3000+ defense, I still took so much damage that I had only around half of my health left!

The instant I recovered my ability to move, my killing intent turned cold. Gulping down a 3000 health potion, I activated [Haste] and darted straight at Bai Li Ruo Hai. Simultaneously, I lowered my body and closed a 5 yards distance with a [Blade Rush]. In that moment, I reached the required conditions for using rage skills. I abruptly opened my hand and a chain in the shape of a dragon stormed out of my palm, binding Bai Li Ruo Hai. With a “Hua” sound, I pulled the chains closer, bringing him

right in front of me!

“Ah!?”

Bai Li Ruo Hai was extremely shocked. Before he could even react, he was cut into two by the full brunt of a [Wind Blade] that I had prepared in advance.

“5129 ! ”

He died and a clattering sound rang out. A crimson red leather helmet was dropped. Picking it up, I threw it into my bag and continued following Qing Qian, Li Mu and the others to escape for our lives!

.....

“F*ck.....”

Dragon Emperor stared with his eyes wide and mouth agape as he exclaimed, “He managed to catch and kill Bai Li Ruo Hai in such a short amount of time even when he is so far away. He’s is the second strongest Archer in [House Of Prestige]. Isn’t that Xiao Yao Zi Zai too terrifying?!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind gripped his battle axe with bloodshot eyes and declared, “This absolutely cannot be tolerated! Chase after them. I am definitely going to chase after those [Zhan Long] trash until every last one of them is dead!”

Dragon Emperor scanned the Moonlight Forest that was right ahead and said “Swift Wind, we better be more cautious. There might be an ambush in Moonlight Forest. If we get ambushed and lose our major force of ten thousand people, that loss would really be too great!

“Don’t worry!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind glanced at the distance and said, “The main position of [Prague], [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], and [Enemies At The Gate] are all there. At least 200,000+ people of the major forces are under our eyes. What can this small Moonlight Forest hide? Could it be [Wrath of the Heroes]? If it’s trash guild like that, hah, hah, then our 10,000 men are more than enough to crush them!”

Dragon Emperor also laughed, “ OK, I understand now. Start chasing at full speed!”

.....

The first half of [Zhan Long], General Li Mu, Yue Qing Qian and the others had already entered the Moonlight Forest. Wang Jian, Misty Cloud and the others hid really well. All of them were covered under the thick blankets of plants and their characters disappeared from the map, making them undetectable.

“Shua.....”

I was the last to enter the forest. I immediately became invisible through [Camouflage] and continued dashing forward trying to lure almost ten thousands people of the [House Of Prestige] and [Emperor’s Blood] into the forest. In the team chat channel, Wang Jian spoke, “Brother Xiao Yao, almost time. They’ve probably already entered into our ambush range, should we start the battle?”

I asked, “Who’s going to cut off the way of their retreat?”

“[Enemies At The Gate] already went!”

“Great! Once [Enemies At The Gate] attacks, we will also attack and encircle to devour these ten thousand people!”

“Yeah!”

.....

“Vice Guild Master, why do I have a feeling that something is wrong?!” A team leader of [House Of Prestige] asked.

“What’s wrong?” Quick Thunder Swift Wind raised his battle axe and shouted loudly, “Keep pursuing. We will catch up with them soon and crush [Zhan Long], that team of thousands. The time for revenge has come!”

Team Leader paused and held his staff, “But I keep feeling.....”

Before he could finish his sentence, a flaming Swordsman rushed out of the bushes and used [Combo Slash] on the [Mana Shield] of the team

leader. His long sword thrust forward as flames devoured the team leader's body behind the damaged shield and instantly killed him. [Phoenix's Slash] blew up the forest, making it a fiery hot region enshrouded by flames.

With a foot on the corpse of this team leader of [House Of Prestige], Misty Cloud raised his Bleeding Star Sword and bellowed with a cold expression, "These people pursued our allies [Zhan Long]. Brothers! Can you tolerate this? Kill all of them!"

Immediately, the 5000 members of [Enemies At The Gate] all charged out and blocked the opponent's retreat.

At the same time, the Ancient Demon Blade in the forest was slashing in the midst of the crowd. In a flash, Simple appeared in the open ground and spoke with a clear voice, "All of the [Vanguard] members here, attack!"

[Prague], [Blood Contract], [Flying Dragon] and the other guilds all launched their attacks. The 20,000 people treated the people of Jiu Li City like they were wrapping dumplings. Li Mu, Old K, the others, and I also returned to attack. Wang Jian led the major forces of [Zhan Long] and surprised the enemy at their flanks. In an instant, the whole battle situation seemed very clear.

.....

Dragon Emperor's lance quavered slightly, as he spoke in his trembling voice, "F*ck..... I knew it. We are trapped. Xiao Yao Zi Zai was just relying on this team of thousands to attract us. Now..... this team of thousands won't be devoured by us, instead our team of ten thousands is about to be devoured. This feeling is totally.....the feeling of being unable to f*ck the vixen, but instead getting yourself smelly.....*"

TL Note: Chinese idiom about attempting to do something, only to end up in a worse state than before.

"Cut the crap!"

Carrying his battle axe, Quick Thunder Swift Wind turned and bellowed,

“So what if we fell into an ambush! Now tell them, this is not the type of situation that [House Of Prestige] has not experienced. Our status was earned through knives and swords! Brothers! Hack a path of retreat with me. Guild Master is already leading an army of 20,000 people to assist us!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind had already darted towards Misty Cloud before he finished his words. The bright radiance of [Fierce Axe Strike] materialized above the battle axe as he roared in anger, “No matter who the f*ck [Enemies At The Gate] are, die!”

Streaks of Azure Dragon energy ascended up Misty Cloud’s arms. With a fierce punch, Misty Cloud directly crushed Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s [Fierce Axe Strike]. He then brandished his sword with his right hand as he activated [Sky Shaker Slash]!

“Peng!”

“3128 ! ”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind backed away with a shocked face.

Misty Cloud held up his long sword and went step by step forward, “Who is [Enemies At The Gate]? Heh heh, someone who can make you scream for your grandpa!”

Chapter 376: The Collapse

“Finish it quickly and don’t waste too much time on them!”

With the Emperor Qin’s Sword in hand, I charged into the crowds. My goal was to kill the stronger ones. The Flaming Tiger God roared as it transformed into an enormous figure, activating [Burstfire Raid] in the midst of the crowd. With flames on its four claws, just a touch would cause great burn damage. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and the others all led a troop of people and charged into the map. Within the map of the city war, City Return Scrolls were prohibited which meant that if someone got trapped, then they were doomed to die.

.....

“Get the f*ck away!”

battle axe in hand and yelled, “Healers, focus on healing me. Wait till I butcher that Piggy!”

On the [House Of Prestige]’s frontline, Quick Thunder Swift Wind held his battle axe and dashed back and forth while attacking. He suddenly spun and activated one of his skills. [Whirling Battle Axe] swept across the flat ground and slashed three [Wrath of the Heroes] players dead. Farther away, Piggy held up his rifle and fired multiple times, “Peng Peng.” Suddenly, two holes were blasted through Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s chest, causing him to furiously rush towards the frontline while holding his battle axe in hand and yelling, “Healers, focus on healing me. Wait till I butcher that Piggy!”

Tyrant of Western Chu gripped his sword and bellowed, “Everyone, stay alert. Kill Quick Thunder Swift Wind for me! I don’t care if he’s some famous person of CBN BattleNet rankings, kill him no matter what. We are [Wrath of the Heroes] and we fear nothing!”

Drunken Cold Rain charged forward with a long spear in hand and used a [Sky Shaker Stab]. However, he did not expect the speed of Quick Thunder Swift Wind to be so quick. Quick Thunder Swift Wind slid, moving in a beautiful zigzag pattern, and dodged the [Sky Shaker Stab].

He suddenly spun around and activated [Will Of the Berserker]. As flames engulfed his battle axe, his [Sky Shaker Slash]+[Fierce Axe Strike] fell on Drunken Cold Rain's back at the same time. The two damage numbers that flew up were alarming!

“4122 ! ”

“3984 ! ”

After the two deadly strikes, Drunken Cold Rain's health instantly dropped to the bottom. He hastily activated [Heavenly Shield Wall]. Then, with a wave of his left hand, the effect of [Cleansing Wind] washed over himself. Simultaneously, a group of Healers also started healing him.

However, no one had expected what happened next. It was absolutely not a coincidence for Quick Thunder Swift Wind to enter the top 20 of CBN Battle Net. In a flash, Quick Thunder Swift Wind's battle axe struck a normal attack, another deadly strike with a damage of 2216 that directly interrupted the effect of the [Cleansing Wind], killing Drunken Cold Rain

“Owhh.....”

The instant Drunken Cold Rain collapsed, Tyrant of Western Chu's face turned purple. He absolutely did not expect that his best Knight to actually be killed in just one round of fighting.

From the rear of the mass of people, a lady's voice rang out. Following the sound, the best female Mage of the [Wrath of the Heroes], Heart of Fire, was seen singing while frost swirled around her. With a wave of her staff, grey clouds filled the sky immediately and giant hailstones enveloped by flames smashed fiercely on the congregation of [House Of Prestige]. This was her signature skill—[Flaming Hailstorm] !

“PaPaPa.....”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind's health dropped drastically as he was smashed by the [Flaming Hailstorm]. He hastily dashed away with his axe in hand and yelled while being healed, “Have a troop of Swordsmen follow me and advance in that direction. Kill Heart of Fire and Sonata. Without those two, [Wrath of the Heroes] would just be a tiger with no

claws and teeth. Not fearsome at all!”

100+ Swordsmen of [House Of Prestige] strode forward with a group of Archers and Mages following behind in preparation for support. Each of the Swordsmen activated [Haste] and immediately darted over when Quick Thunder Swift Wind gave the order. As they approached the formation of [Wrath of the Heroes], they lowered their swords, and hexagrams began to spin.

The effect of 100+ [Blade Rush]es that were activated simultaneously, made a truly spectacular scene as the Mages behind them also cast [Pillar of Fire & Ice] to sweep past. In an instant, the frontline organized laboriously by [Wrath of the Heroes] was torn into pieces, as easily as tearing up a withered stump!

The battle proved that there was truly a wide gap between [Wrath of the Heroes] and a top guild. This was a truth that couldn't be ignored.

.....

Piggy gritted his teeth and screamed , “Guild Master, we can't fend them off anymore!”

“We have to block them even if it is impossible”

Liu Ying gripped his long sword and bellowed, “Core team, charge with me. I don't believe that we can't win against those [House Of Prestige] dregs. F*ck them all. Do those gentry have blue blood*!?”

TL Note: No man is born noble /Winners are made not born!

Piggy was shocked, “Boss can recite poems.....”

Sonata grinned, “Let's kill them quickly, I'll snipe them”

Liu Ying dashed out first, leading a group of people towards [House of Prestige]'s main force of Swordsmen. The warriors of both sides were flooded by seas of flame, rains of ice, and arrows, causing screams of pain to resound over and over again. Even if this was a surprise attack, a high price was paid to annihilate the main force of [House of Prestige].

A few moments later, Liu Ying backed away with only a little bit of

health remaining. Behind him, Quick Thunder Swift Wind had 75% health left and stormed forward as he roared in anger, “Tyrant of Western Chu, aren’t you very bossy? Come on, let me chop off your dog head!

Liu Ying gnashed his teeth in anger, “Sonata, use [Scattered Shot]!”

“Sou!”

An icy arrow darted towards Quick Thunder Swift Wind and stunned him with a “Pa” sound. Unfortunately, a dozen other [House Of Prestige] Swordsmen came straightaway to his aid. As Quick Thunder Swift Wind recovered from the dizziness, he immediately bellowed, “Use [Haste] and kill Sonata!”

A few Swordsmen promptly used [Blade Rush] to draw closer. They brandished their swords and Sonata’s health rapidly dropped to 50% while the players around him were all killed. With no choice, he hastily used [Crystallize] and entered a state of invincibility!

“Just in time!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind laughed out loud. He suddenly lowered his body, strenuously raising his battle axe with his arm and used a third advancement skill—[Battle Axe Throw]!

Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s assessment was spot-on. The instant Sonata recovered from the effects of [Crystallize], the [Battle Axe Throw] hit him. The Archer’s weak body was immediately torn apart by the battle axe of a top Berserker, making a huge damage number flew up—

“4317 ! ”

.....

Piggy’s rifle had already turned red-hot from the continual firing, and his face was colored by gun residue. He looked towards Liu Ying and yelled loudly, “Boss, we can’t do this with brute force. Whether it is in levels, equipment, or teamwork, our people cannot compete with [House Of Prestige]. If we continue, our major force will be annihilated! It’s time to retreat!”

Liu Ying gripped his long sword tightly, “F*ck them all. Retreat! Li Xiao Yao, we can’t block this path of retreat anymore. It’s up to you and [Zhan Long] now!”

.....

I stared at Liu Ying from a distance and raised my brow, “Brothers, advance towards the north and slaughter the major force of [House Of Prestige]!”

Behind me, the generals of [Zhan Long] followed me and left the previous battlefield. Qing Qian came up to me and softly said, “Right now, Quick Thunder Swift Wind seems to be the main force behind [House of Prestige]’s momentum. The smart move here would be to take him out first. Brother Xiao Yao, let’s work together. You rush into their formation and use the effects of [Defeat the Dragon] to pull him closer, then Sister Dancing Forest and I will use our long range skills to instantly kill him!”

“Alright!”

Seven or eight successive arrows shot me in the shoulder, but Darling Duck speedily recovered my health. With a wave of my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the midst of their formation where the Swordsmen were. Pain spread through the players as they all cried out desperately. Old K roared furiously and a [Whirlwind Slash] swept past, chopping a crowd of people into minced meat. Wolf stepped on the grassland as he activated the skill, [Ten Way Blade] making it impossible for anyone to get close. As if there was no resistance, Wang Jian, One Second Hero and the others dashed forward to kill. Within seconds, the few hundred members of [House Of Prestige] were annihilated.

“F*ck.....”

The face of the flagbearer of [House Of Prestige] twitched for a second as he said, “Vice Guild Master, the instant destructive force of [Zhan Long] is so fierce. We can’t get too far away from the long-range campsite, otherwise we would be like a baby with no milk, strangled on

the periphery.”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind nodded in response, “Retreat and keep the field organized!”

My eyes turned cold and said, “Everyone, follow my lead. Let’s surprise them and crush their field.”

Behind me, 2000+ [Zhan Long] members stormed forward with enraged roars, enduring the magical skills and arrows of the enemy. I was at the front as my Emperor Qin’s Sword thrust into the bodies of the opponents, bringing out splashes of blood. My Flaming Tiger God activated [Flame Armor] and raged in the midst of the enemy army. The whole battlefield was about to belong to [Zhan Long].

“Motherf*cker.....”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind gnashed his teeth in contempt, and said furiously, “This attack is too fierce; there are too many people, many of whom possess AOE Skills that are above rank S. All the Archers and Mages, prepare to concentrate fire and I will lead the attack. Let’s kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai first. Healers, heal me indifferently and do not let me get killed instantly!”

With an angry roar, Quick Thunder Swift Wind activated [Will of the Berserker] again and darted towards me with his battle axe in hand. Before he approached me, he activated the skill, [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Peng!”

My shoulder felt cold as I lost 2791 health. Fortunately, it was not a deadly strike. Darling Duck hastily healed me, while a group of Swordsmen charged towards me in cooperation with Quick Thunder Swift Wind.

Now was the time!

I thundered in anger and activated a [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. While I was under great damage, I suddenly opened my left hand and targeted Quick Thunder Swift Wind, activating the skill—[Defeat the Dragon] !

“Shua!”

I fiercely grabbed this Vice Guild Master in front of me as I raised my hand and drew my Emperor Qin’s Sword. When the golden hexagram swept past, the [Combo] skill exploded in an instant, and a [Fierce Ice Blade] quickly followed in succession. Simultaneously, I yelled in the team chat channel, “Now!”

“PuPuPu.....”

The blades tore up Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s body, but there were too many people that spam healed him. My ferocious attacks still couldn’t kill him. Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Fire Fox] suddenly hit!

“Hong!”

“3327 ! ”

Almost at the same time, a meteor shaped arrow swept across the ground and fiercely thudded into Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s body. Along with my [Fierce Ice Blade], the concentrated-fire battle tactic was finally complete! We finally completed the first part of guerilla warfare!

“Owh.....”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind knees weakened and he dropped to the ground, finally about to die. He raised his head and glared at me with fierce eyes as he screamed, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you better wait. I will have my revenge!”

I remained silent as I kicked his corpse and picked up the Purple Tier armor that he dropped. Unfortunately, this equipment was a lot more inferior than my Valkyrie Tier armor which meant that I wouldn’t be using it.

Li Mu brandished his metal sword and [Zhan Long] began slaughtering thoroughly!

.....

On the other side, the players of [Vanguard] were also advancing and attacking. Don’t Be Foolish held his long spear and was dashing at the

forefront of the battle. He yelled with an angered expression, “Come on, kill me if you dare!”

“PaPaPa.....”

Numerous arrows shot at his face, but Don't Be Foolish smoothly raised his hand, easily blocking all the arrows while a sneer rose to his lips as he said, “It doesn't hurt!”

Goodbye Tears suddenly stood before Don't Be Foolish with his shield in hand and roared angrily, “Idiot, how can it not hurt when blood is flowing. Quickly use [Cleansing Wind], you dumbass. I will f*cking protect you. North Pole, let's charge!”

The Mage North Pole carried his staff and the long range campsite of [Vanguard] continued pushing forward using scorched earth battle tactics. Every inch of the earth was devastated as [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard], these two big guilds attacked from both sides. Finally, the army of [House Of Prestige] with about 4000 people began collapsing.

Chapter 377: The Strength of Pulling a Bow

In the next thirty minutes, all of the 9600+ enemies, besides the 50+ people that Dragon Emperor lead out of the trap, died.

A chilly breeze swept through the forest, blowing the scent of human blood through the field. Corpses of players who had yet to respawn littered the field. Each of the large guilds sent players to search the fields they had conquered. [Zhan Long] occupied the area with three thousand corpses and the most spoils.

Li Mu walked over carrying his sword, and he lowered his voice as he chuckled, "Damn, we're just too good. As expected, [House of Prestige]'s drops are all good. In total they dropped two Emperor Tier, and 257 Purple Tier equipments. Hehe, our fortunes have probably blown our brothers away!"

I stealthily took out the Emperor Tier chestplate that I had received from Quick Thunder Swift Wind and handed it to him, "Here equip this. But don't let Wang Jian or Old K see... I was watching you battle just now, and you are much too defenseless. I will feel bad if you don't increase your health now. This armor will add 1700 points to your health, at the small price of 30 attack points. It is a very good item, its benefits are definitely worth the cost.

Li Mu quickly put it on and exclaimed, "Damn, now I have 6500 health as well....."

“必须的.....”

“That's what's necessary....”

Glancing at Quick Thunder Swift Wind's body, I said, "Guild battles will no longer be determined by strength, but rather by stamina. To truly be a king, you must have at least 10000 points in your health. With that many points, you will be able to survive taking a beating. Otherwise you will suffer Quick Thunder Swift Wind's fate, death by strategy.

“Then I would have to sacrifice a lot of attack points.”

“Yeah. Unless the equipment is extremely godly, you can’t have it both ways.”

.....

Simple walked over, Twisted Jade Staff in hand as she laughed, “The Moonlight Forest battle is over, for now we should all return to our positions. In just a few moments, Ba Huang City’s NPC army will arrive. Our objective is to assist the army, the real battle has yet to start.”

I nodded, “ Yeah. Let’s each return to our respective camps...”

The crowd slowly dispersed as everyone left the Moonlight Forest. Of course, Jiu Li City’s 9600+ men could no longer return. Their quest had come to an end.

Qing Qian hurriedly caught up to me, and said“ Brother Xiao Yao, I have already checked it out. Originally, it wouldn’t have been possible for [Emperor’s Blood]’s Dragon Emperor to kill his way out, but Heaven’s Hero had purposely let them out of the formation, letting Dragon Emperor and a few dozen others out. Do you know why he did that?”

I nodded my head and smiled, “ Of course I know. Uncle Yan Zhao was very prudent. Our main object here is to cut down [House of Prestige]’s forces . That’s why we can kill Quick Thunder Swift Wind, but not Dragon Emperor. Otherwise, [Emperor’s Blood] will become our mortal enemy, which would just be an extra annoyance. Instead of letting Emperor Dragon die here, it is better to kill him face to face in a battlefield where he can die a heroic death.

Qing Qian stuck her tongue out and smiled, “You guys consider too many factors. I wasn’t even thinking about that in the first place.”

“Just wait until you grow up a little, then you’ll see.”

“Ok.....”

.....

Ten minutes later, we arrived at [Zhan Long]’s formation. Matcha held her long sword as she landed lightly on the ground, saying, “Boss, I just

finished calculating our losses. After the battle at the Moonlight Forest, we lost around 10% of our forces, or 300+ men.”

My heart fell a little and I said, “Got it. On the bright side, [House of Prestige]’s losses were far greater than ours. They had lost 4000 men all at once. I can’t imagine how this Quick Thunder Swift Wind plans on telling Bai Li Ruo Feng.”

Li Mu laughed out, “Who cares! What’s our next move?”

“Let’s wait for the NPC troops from Ba Huang City!”

“Alright!”

.....

After a few minutes, the ground rumbled, and the sound of horse hooves could be heard, coming towards us from afar. A tomahawk shaped flagpost carrying Ba Huang City’s colors fluttered in the breeze. The first army had arrived. Underneath the flag, a figure with a sword on his back rode a horse. It was a general. A player name appeared over his head—

Forgotten Sea Lv-100

Class: Sword Saint

City: Ba Huang City

Position: Ba Huang City’s First Army General

.....

“Whoa, a level 100 BOSS level NPC...” My mouth twitched.

Matcha excitedly exclaimed, “Boss. That’s Forgotten Sea, the strongest general of the seven great armies. Duke Luo Lei aside, he’s probably the strongest NPC in Ba Huang City.”

Li Mu rubbed his hands, “Even the First Army has arrived. Looks like this battle will be pretty interesting!”

Qing Qian’s beautiful eyes narrowed, “Now the only thing left to see is what Forgotten Sea plans to prioritize in this war. Will he first try to capture the forts first or will he try to deplete the garrison before

beginning his assault.

Her question was answered very quickly, Duke Luo Lei emerged from the horizon. Brandishing his sword, he shouted, "Quickly, let us lay siege to them! Retake Fort Zi Feng from those barbarians!"

The sound of hooves pounding the ground echoed throughout the valley as the plains were soon filled with a mass of NPC cavalry, preparing to invade the city.

I furrowed my brows, The NPC's AI isn't very high. How could you use cavalry to enter a city with a wall that is dozens of meters tall? This is madness...

But soon, the first section of the NPC cavalry dismounted from their horses and began to construct all sorts of siege engines. So the horses were used to carry raw materials for the siege.

.....

What should we do now, Brother Xiao Yao?" Qin Qian asked, puzzled.

I chuckled, then raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and said, "[Zhan Long], move out! We'll head South and stop 300 meters from the city walls. We'll maintain our formation perfectly so that we can attack the fort's NPC army at any time. Our foremost goal is to protect our NPC army from the attacks of the Jiu Li City players. Those big guilds definitely won't let go of the chance to kill our NPC's for equipment and experience drops. It's a once in a lifetime chance!"

Everyone nodded. The [Zhan Long] camp advanced, taking up 200 yards. [Prague], [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] all advanced, making sure to leave space for the Ba Huang City NPC army to advance as well. We were like strong wedges, meant to guard the NPC army.

On the distant hilltop, numerous Ba Huang City flags kept appearing. Very soon, seven different flags were fluttering in front of a mass of platoons. The seven great armies of Ba Huang City were all present: Desolate Dragon, Blizzard Wind, Purple Star, Fierce Tiger, Nightmare, Desolate Cloud and Imperial Defense. All sorts of legions were displayed

before the players. We felt blessed, if this battle for Fort Zi Feng we wouldn't be able to see this grand sight; all of the NPCs and Leaders were all assembled in the same area. Of these Leaders, Luo Hai, Purple Star, and Angela had all achieved Sword Saint rank. These three were Duke Luo Lei's left and right arms. They would definitely make a difference in the course of this battle.

.....

From the midst of the Blizzard Wind army, a female general atop a white horse slowly emerged. It was the general of the Han Feng Army--Angela. She was one of the strongest warriors of the Moon Elf tribe, and was known as the Moon Elf Princess. Angela was currently one of the greatest supporters of Ba Huang City. She drew a double edged lavender sword which glowed with a breathtaking luster. She brandished her sword at the horizon and yelled, "Han Feng Army, prepare for battle! The cavalry shall rush the fort's walls while the archers will fire at the defenses! Attack!"

Yue Qing Qian blinked her eyes and smiled, "According to the official Destiny lore, there was a Family or spiritual power and a glorious city to the north of Ba Huang City. However the city's army was destroyed by [Duke] Luo Lei. Angela, the Moon Spirit princess was put into training under Forgotten Sea, and later as a Sword Saint, was promoted as Commander of the Han Feng Army.

I nodded my head as I glanced over at Angela's figure. She did look a bit like Frost. But I knew, Frost was definitely stronger than Angela. You could tell the difference in their power.

Ba Huang City troops reached the city walls. At the top, there was a group of shadowy barbarians. They all had tall and sturdy figures. Based on the introduction, they were neutral creatures. Most of them were warriors, but there was a group of archers. Every one of the barbarian archers held an iron strongbow. One of the barbarians whipped back a bowstring and targeted one of Ba Huang City's foot soldiers. "Ka Cha"! The bow broke in half. The archer was clearly stunned as he look towards his commander, "Commander, this bow is way too weak....."

A barbarian dressed in full battle clothes stepped forward. "Pa!" He slapped the archer and shouted, "You fool! I told you to not use so much force. Why can't you just learn? Did you think a longbow made by humans would even be able to take the ridiculous strength you use to f*ck your mother? Idiot! If you pull apart another long bow, I'll skin you alive!"

As he finished yelling, the barbarian general turned around and pulled out the battleaxe on his back. With a voice like thunder, he roared out, "The Ba Huang City bandits are coming again! Everyone wake up! Kill whoever dares to come at us. Archers, use half of your strength to pull back the bow. Use the rest to f*ck your mothers! Everyone, listen to me, we must stand strong! Che....."

He licked his lips, then looked at the distant Angela and smiled, "That human girl is really pretty. No one's allowed to kill her. She's mine tonight!"

The archer that broke the bow candidly smiled, "Boss, that is a Moon Elf tribe female, you would ruin her..."

"Ga Ga Ga..."

The Barbarian General guffawed, "First we have to capture her, ruining her is ruining her. Ready up, Fire!"

.....

Arrows hailed down from the walls, these were all good shots, the velocity and power of these arrows were impressive. However the NPC soldiers of Ba Huang City were not noobs, with shields raised they began hooking ladders onto the edge of the walls. A large number of knights began to rush into the city, and there was bloodshed everywhere as a terrifying war broke out in front of us.

Li Mu took a deep breath and said, "For now there's still a long time before we'll actually use our swords to fight.

I called out, "Wait, maybe they might come to us instead!"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands held her staff and landed down, smiling, "Boss's guess is on point, the enemy is coming. I saw a large

group of Jiu Li players coming towards us.

“Which guild?”

“[Emperor’s Blood]!”

Chapter 378: Thank you for your trust!

“How can this be?”

Matcha’s eyes widened, “ [Emperor’s Blood] originally had a mere 15,000 players online, moreover, we wiped at least 5000+ players earlier on, what nerves do they have to challenge Ba Huang City’s Mega Guilds?”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands shook her head and said, “No, it’s not just [Emperor’s Blood]. Strictly speaking, [Emperor’s Blood] is only a supplementary force. Their main strength is the three great army’s All Terrain Corps!”

“What? The Earthsea Army is heading over?” Qing Qian exclaimed.

“Yes, there’s so many people that it’s uncountable!” Thousand Suns Over Snowy Land nodded.

Qing Qian turned towards me, “ Brother Xiao Yao, what do we do? The NPCs from Jiu Li City have already started to march towards us. What should we do? Do we retreat or fight?”

I clenched my hands into fists as I looked from afar, “Aside from the Bosses, the rest are Lv 80 Phantom Tier NPCs. Even though they are very tough, I feel like this would be a good opportunity to get more experience for leveling!”

General Li Mu asked, “So what should we do?”

With my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I raised my hand and said, “Listen to my orders. All of [Zhan Long] is to change our course. We will head west and face the Earthsea Army’s attack. Knights and Monks set up a seven layer barrier. We must stop their calvary’s assault. Healers focus on healing; as long as we can withstand this wave, we should be able to obliterate the Earthsea Army!”

“OK!”

As soon as General Li Mu gave the order, Zhan Long’s 5000+ players quickly changed their course and prepared for the attack from Jiu Li City’s Earthsea Army. At the same time, I sent a message to Misty Cloud

and Han Bei Song and the two of them readily answered. Thus, [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gates], and [Blood Contract], the 3 big guilds gathered by the gates forming a front line at least 1KM wide, where 2000+ players welcomed the attack of the NPCs!

.....

On the other side, hundreds of Jiu Li City's smaller guilds were arriving. [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon] had all sent men to resist the attacks. As I had expected, the quality and quantity of Jiu Li City's players far exceeded Ba Huang City's, giving them the confidence to take the initiative and attack. This was the way the strong intimidated the weak, facing Ba Huang City's players with absolute contempt!

I tightened my grip on my Emperor Qin's Sword. Looking at dust diffused in the air from afar, I lowered my voice, "Everyone be careful, the Lv 80 Phantom Tier NPCs are here. Their attacks will definitely be terrifying. Be on the look out for the calvary's rush. All brothers in arms at the frontline facing the 1st wave, activate your defensive skills. We will not retreat, so hold onto your positions!"

Song Han lifted his head and stared into the distance, he pursed his lips and said, "Luckily, there's no sign of the Boss. The leader of the 3 strongest armies in Jiu Li City must be at least a Lv 100 NPC; that would definitely be very difficult to handle!"

With a nod, I lifted up my sword and shouted, "Prepare for impact, 200 Yards! 180 Yards! 160 Yards!"

Following my count, an entire line of [Zhan Long] members that stretched 300m wide held their breath, weapons in hand. Amongst the smoke, NPCs from Jiu Li City were closing the distance. The Knights in the front line were majestically waving their lance and swords. They were only 100 yards away when suddenly, a group of knights started thrusting out their lances!

"Careful!" I shouted.

I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and rushed to the front, "Dang", a cavalryman violently hit my blade, pushing me back half a step. Damn,

what a strong attack and impact. Even with my high defense, I was knocked back. These Lv 80 NPCs are just too terrifying!”

Roaring out, I cast my SSS Skill [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] , and all of the [Zhan Long] members around me gained a buff to increase their defence by 40%. At the same time, a “Pu Pu Pu” sound resonated across the line as players were being pierced by lances thrown by the enemies. The Archers that were standing at the front were most vulnerable, all of whom received more than 4000 damage; all instant kills!

Even as the war had just started, screams could be heard one after another. Zhan Long had already lost dozens of players!

Matcha stood beside me and glanced over worriedly. I just smiled in response and nudged her shoulders, saying, “It’s alright, we can surely endure this. If [Zhan Long] can’t even resist these NPCs, then Ba Huang City will only be swept away by others.”

“Ok!” Matcha’s eyes brightened. Could it be just as Song Han has said, I was their pillar of confidence?

.....

General Li Mu raised his sword and shouted, “[Scattered Shot]! Fire!”

Tightly packed arrows cut through the sky and landed upon the NPCs a kilometer ahead. “Pa Pa Pa”, fresh blood splattered all over. A large group of NPCs were stunned, causing the war horses rushing from the back to collide with those in front. The scene was chaotic, significantly decreasing the force of their charge.

“They are here!”

With my sword raised, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash].

“Boom!”

Dust was kicked up from the ground as a group of All Terrain cavalymen held their swords out, and rushed forward as if nothing happened. DAMN! Can we really withstand this?

I hurriedly cast [Soul Army] and [Black Tortoise Realm] at the group of people rushing towards me to ease up the offensive pressure. At the same time, three Jiu Li City cavalrymen shifted their aggro and started charging at me!

“Pa!”

With haste, I stepped into the barren land, and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. My dual blades danced as I cut them down.

“Dang Dang Dang...”

Sparks flew everywhere as the three cavalrymen wailed out in pain. At least I’ve defended my end. Beside me, Matcha had her shield readied, moving back only a step or two; she held her defense as well. Removing her shield, she swiftly swung her sword, activating [Phantom Ray Slash]!

Unfortunately, Matcha and I were exceptions, to be able to withstand the strong attacks of the enemies. Screams of despair could be heard from along the line of battle. The strong cavalrymen rushed into a group of [Zhan Long] Knights, and trampled them under their steel hooves. Swords were waved and guns were fired, and in a blink of an eye, we lost quite a few players. Luckily for us, our agile Healers were able to minimize our losses.

Mages were furiously casting AOE attacks, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ [Pillar of Fire & Ice] intensified the output of damage. Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot] also landed on the group of NPCs. Raising her dagger, Yue Qing Qian used her [Grip of the Firefox]. Old K cut through the crowd with [Whirlwind Slash]. With his [Super Strength], Dong Cheng Lei instantly knocked back at least 10 Lv 80 Phantom NPCs.

Although [Zhan Long] members who had acquired S level skills were able to maintain their front, many zones were still lost. The continuous pressure from the NPCs had already broken 4 of our defensive formations.

The scene made me fume with rage. With my sword drawn, a golden hexagram appeared on the ground and my Flaming Tiger God activated [Burstfire Raid] as it lunged out to reinforce the broken formations. With

[Flame Armor] my Flaming Tiger God had nothing to fear from the NPCs and rushed towards them. The burns from the flames attracted the aggro from the NPCs. Like this, I didn't have much to worry about?

“Attack!”

I unsheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword and cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] while my Cold Iron Sword cast a [Wind Blade]. Nine Jiu Li Cavalry soldiers instantly fell dead, making my experience grow exponentially. Tsk tsk, this time the event was just like the previous ones, filled with an enormous amount of experience. Most players were probably relying on this event to break through to Lv 80 and get the 4th class advancement.

General Li Mi swung his sword and shouted, “Zones that are more stable are to provide reinforcement to zones that have been broken through. Assassins are to stun the cavalrymen to slow down their advancement. Archers, don't be conservative with your [Scattered Shot]s, once the skill finishes its cooldown, aim for the knights at the edge. Everybody let's do this, [Zhan Long]'s position will not be broken through so easily by these NPCs.”

General Li Mu's talent was indeed worth mentioning. Not only was he a great strategist in battle, but his personal strength was also commendable. There were not many who had his skill in commanding and to top it off he was extremely skilled in directing the flow of team battles.

.....

With the fall of Jiu Li City's army, we slowly regained our position. From afar, Old K's laugh rang out as he held out a shiny necklace, “Damn, these cavalrymen from Jiu Li City even drop Purple Tier equipment, 6% life steal, I'm rich....”

Everybody around looked envious. I waved my sword and laughed, “Do your best, these Lv 80 Phantom NPCs give really good experience. On top of that, you can't miss out on the points from killing them!”

Everyone was inspired by the necklace. A Purple Tier Necklace, with a 6% Lifesteal that was stackable..., this was truly a spoil of war that many

wished they could obtain. It could sell for at least ten thousand RMB; with that, you can downpay a house in third-tier cities with that kind of money!

In a short 10 minutes, a pile of All Terrain Army soldiers were lying lifeless in front of us and our experience had also shot up a great deal.

“Ka Cha!”

As I pierced through a fallen cavalryman, I looked into the distance and saw that [Enemies at the Gate] appeared to be relatively stable as well. Misty Cloud had his class the Four Divine Symbols Guardian, making his strength explode. He was defending the frontline as though he were a war angel that had descended from the heavens. He wouldn't retreat even in death and protected the entire frontline, taking away much of the pressure from the [Enemies at the Gate] players.

On the other hand, [Crimson Contract] had a dismal performance. Their defense line had been broken through, and many of the heavy armor players were down. Han Bei Song was on the verge of crying, defending the line with his life.

I couldn't leave him alone! I glanced over at General Li Mu and he immediately knew what I wanted, “I'll bring 1000 people to help!”

“OK!”

.....

General Li Mu brought 1000 main players over to help [Crimson Contract] hold their position. The main impact was actually the 1st wave of cavalymen, the subsequent waves were usually weaker. Basically, the three great guilds had defended well against the NPC army. Seeing that we stood our ground, the smaller guilds from Ba Huang City moved closer to us to share the cup of soup. I had no objections since more people would make our job easier. The more the merrier!

“[Emperor's Blood] is here!”

Matcha spoke softly, “[Emperor's Blood] brought nearly all of their 10,000 of their main members. They must be here to take advantage of us

while we are weak from defending against the NPCs!”

I frowned, but at that moment, “Di”, I received a message from Piggy, [Wrath of the Heroes]’s Vice Guild Master, “ Guild Master Zi Zai, [Wrath of the Heroes] has 17,000 troops behind you that can be called upon at anytime. Since [Emperor’s Blood] is here, we, [Wrath of the Heroes], are willing to send all 17,000 men to block off [Emperor’s Blood]’s line of retreat, while [Zhan Long], [Enemies at The Gates] and [Crimson Contract], the three main forces attack together to obliterate [Emperor’s Blood]. How does that sound?”

I was overjoyed and held up a fist, “OK! Once you have cut off their path of retreat, [Zhan Long] will immediately retaliate!”

Piggy replied, “OK, Thank you!”

“What are you thanking me for?”

“I thank you for still putting your faith in [Wrath of the Heroes]. I, Piggy, will not let you and our Ba Huang City down...”

“No need for the formalities. Just do your best!

“OK!”

Chapter 379: Qin Hai

Most of the Jiu Liu City Cavalrymen in the iron formation were killed before our battle formation, transforming into experience, silver coins and equipments. Although 80% of these NPCs will revive after the event, the loss was still heartbreaking. These were all virtual resources of the China Server. Once the War of Nations starts, Jiu Li City will also become one of the major forces against the enemies, and victory would be dependent upon the cooperation of these NPC armies with players during fights in the War of Nations.

.....

“So roughly counting.....”

Qing Qian paused as she stared at the jumping numbers on the calculating tool and continued speaking, “Brother Xiao Yao, we killed almost 50,000 soldiers of the All Terrain Army within half an hour, along with some high ranked generals that were among them. However, our own losses cannot be considered small either, with about 500 people dead. The losses of [Crimson Contract] and [Enemies At The Gates] might be even bigger.”

I nodded in response, “It can’t be helped. The west side of the city can only depend on us to defend. How’s the situation with [Prague] and [Vanguard]?”

Anxiety was written all over her face as Qing Qian replied, “It’s hard to tell. The battle at the west side of the Fort Zi Zeng was really brutal. Fang Ge Que appeared, leading around 30,000 of [Legend]’s players, and swept away all of our guildless players. [Vanguard] and [Prague] have combined forces to fight against [Legend]. The battle is reaching a climax; all three sides have suffered terrible losses. I suspect that once [Judgement] and [House Of Prestige] join the battle, [Prague] will be defeated.

“Damn. It’s that crazy?”

“Yeah. [Legend]’s team tactics are extremely strong, that’s just an indisputable fact.”

General Lian Po suddenly raised his hand and pointed in the distance as he yelled, “Guild Master, look over there; a BOSS finally appeared. F*ck. It’s a.....a BOSS that can fly.....”

.....

Thunder rumbled in the highest heavens as a NPC general appeared in the sky, carrying a crimson red sword in hand. He walked on air with cyclones under his feet as he descended slowly before the All Terrain Army’s campsite. The corners of his mouth curved down, revealing an angry expression. Suddenly he started reprimanding the NPCs, “A bunch of useless warriors. Those adventurers from Ba Huang City actually stopped you from advancing forward. You all are useless, a completely useless army!”

Receiving his scolding, not even one of the warriors dared to lift their heads up. As I peered at this commander of the Jiu Li Army, I noticed a dazzling line of words floating above his head—

Qin Hai LV-90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS

Location: Jiu Li City

Position: All Terrain Army Commander

Introduction: Qin Hai, the strongest warrior in the Knight School of Jiu Li City, and the youngest Sky Knight in the kingdom. His extraordinary abilities shocked the continent of Destiny. He was known as one of the strongest knights in the continent and was titled “Undefeated Saint Knight.” He once led thirty thousand soldiers on horses, and fiercely attacked a barbarian army of seventy thousand under the Ice Ridge Mountain. A complete victory was obtained in the end, and the heads of the seventy thousand Barbarians were beheaded, and the status of Jiu Li City in the northern areas was protected, remaining high and majestic.

.....

“F*ck, a Level 90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS.....” Wolf mopped the sweat from his forehead and said, “I have an anxious feeling that this Qin Hai will bring pain and death to us.....”

I grinned, “You don’t say? It would be difficult for us to kill a Lv 80 Valkyrie Tier BOSS now, let alone a Lv 90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS. It’s gonna take quite some time to kill. Tell everyone to prepare as we will be concentrating fire later. Let’s try to kill this Valkyrie Tier BOSS as quickly as we can. Damn. I don’t even know how much health this guy has. I can’t read his stats.”

Li Mu smiled and said, “There is probably no one that can read the stats of a Lv 90 BOSS right now. Anyway, it’s going to be a tough fight....”

In the distance, Misty Cloud raised his sword and yelled, “Xiao Yao, the BOSS appeared. What should we do?”

I replied “Organize the people and start attacking! Even if it costs the lives of 1000 people, you all must slay this Qin Hai for me!”

“Alrighty. I got it!”

From afar, Han Bei Song shouted, “Can we dispatch less people? 1000+ members of [Crimson Contract] have already died in battle. If we continue to get killed, we won’t have anyone left!”

“Okay. Everyone, prepare to kill the BOSS together. Also, watch out for the sneak attacks from [Emperor’s Blood]!”

.....

On the horizon, the 10,000+ members of [Emperor’s Blood] were itching for action. Dragon Emperor stared at our campsite with a calm expression. A sneer formed at the corner of his mouth as he exclaimed, “A mantis trying to stop the car*. You dregs want to kill Qin Hai, one of the three big BOSSes of Jiu Li City? In your dreams. Brothers, let’s launch a surprise attack while [Zhan Long] is being slaughtered!”

*TLC: Idiom that means: An ambitious attempt without a sense of one’s pitiable limitation

The army of [Emperor’s Blood] drew out their swords and responded, “As you command, King!”

.....

The pounding hooves of the horses thundered against the earth right ahead of us. Qin Hai had led the group of All Terrain Army's soldiers towards us. This was the true attack!

"F*ck!"

Gripping the sword, Li Mu's hands trembled slightly while I drew out my Cold Iron Sword. I must wield both of my swords during times like this, or else I'll be strangled to death before I can even start foaming at the mouth.

"I will tie down the BOSS later, make sure you guys put forth your best effort in attacking!" I said in a low voice.

Qing Qian asked in a worried tone, "Brother Xiao Yao, can.....can you really tie down a BOSS with such level? He's seventeen levels higher than you. The suppression of your stats is too great*....."

Editor's Note: If there's a five level gap there's a stat reduction for the weaker party

"It's alright. I will try my best. As the saying goes, if I don't go to hell then who will....."

"Err....."

Looking in front, I dashed out towards Qin Hai, and opened my hand while I was still at a distance, activating [Binding Chains]!

"Bang!"

The metal chain burst out of the earth but couldn't touch Qin Hai who was high up in the sky. It was a MISS. I gritted my teeth and tried again. This time I used [Great Realm Of Desolation]!

The energies of the three swords interwove in the sky. "Kacha" the energy blades pierced through Qin Hai's armor, and a huge damage number immediately flew up. Not bad, this should count as breaking the defense—

"2172 ! "

Qin Hai shuddered for a second, and the crimson sword in his hand

began flashing as the corner of his mouth quirked up in a menacing smile, “Damned little fellow. Are you trying to get yourself killed? Oh, well, let grandpa send you on your way!”

He suddenly moved. The movement speed of the BOSS was shockingly fast, and he came before my face in almost an instant. In the midst of his grim laughter, he forcefully struck towards me with his sword!

I raised my Cold Iron Sword against his sword. “Keng!” I trembled from the impact. The strength of my opponent was too strong, directly pressing my Cold Iron Sword onto my shoulder. Qin Hai struck again with more force, and I immediately felt a tearing pain on my shoulder—

“4727 ! ”

With just a strike, I lost such a great amount of health. It was absolutely crazy. I descended like a falling leaf as a God’s Army Card spun in my palm before I reached the ground. Simultaneously, a [Black Tortoise Realm] surrounded Qin Hai.

“[Scattered Shot]!”

Li Mu yelled loudly, and all of the [Zhan Long] members around charged forward, assaulting Qin Hai with long-range skills. Unfortunately, the arrows of the Archers could only cause a damage of less than 100. Such attack strength was too weak to break through his defense. Only the bows and arrows of Dancing Forest and General Lian Po dealt more than 500 damage. The one that caused the greatest damage was Qing Qian’s [Grip of the FireFox] which blasted away 2000 of the BOSS’ health using the effect that considerably ignored defense.

“You all are looking to die!”

Qin Hai guffawed ferociously and struck forward in fury. The energy of the sword fell upon [Zhan Long]’s campsite, and countless ghastly damage numbers flew up. They were almost all instant kills.

“7217 ! ”

“8824 ! ”

“7943 ! ”

.....

Li Mu stared at the scene until his eyes almost popped out of his head. He exclaimed, “Don’t give up on attacking. Continue. We must kill this BOSS!! F*ck!! How could he be that strong? He is not human!”

Qin Hai laughed out loud as he lifted his arm, and abruptly swept past the crowds, causing flames to ravage them. Another group of people was killed instantly. Our people are just constantly being crushed.

I grasped my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and continued dashing forward. Blessed by the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], I leaped up vigorously and slashed both of my swords on Qin Hai’s back!

“1727 ! ”

Blood gushed out from the cuts, and Qin Hai turned around majestically as the corner of his mouth revealed his anger, “Young fellow, it’s you, the ant, again!”

His crimson red sword swept across and struck twice in succession, making my health rapidly drop to the bottom. However, Darling Duck led a group of Healers from a distance and healed me. My health was fully recovered in an instant. I positioned both of my swords and forcefully activated a [Combo]. My Emperor Qin’s Sword and Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword crossed and slashed patterns which left several bloody marks on the BOSS’ chest. “Ka Ka Ka” the attack brought forth a stream of damage numbers.—

“1337 ! ”

“1122 ! ”

“1312 ! ”

“1130 ! ”

.....

When the succession of fierce attacks finished, I again added another combo skill, [Strength of A Thousand Men]. Qin Hai’s health was finally

noticeably decreasing. We had to use a completely desperate fighting style. I also depended on the defense blessed by the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to fight this powerful BOSS!

“F*ck off!”

Qin Hai lowered his body and lifted his right leg. As a stream of air encircled his knees, he heavily kicked my chest with a “Peng!”. I immediately flew out like a bullet, and collided into the city wall with a loud crash. The Barbarians on the city wall stared at me and immediately started drooling, “Damn. A young adventurer was sent to our side as food. Let’s shoot him dead and roast him tonight!”

With a “Pa” sound, I descended to the ground and quickly rolled up. I quickly escaped the city walls, the danger zone. My movement speed was extremely fast even as arrows covered my back. Fortunately, the Healers focused on healing me otherwise I might not have survived even if I had nine lives!

“Boom Boom Boom.....”

Qin Hai attacked using AOE skills again and again among the congregation of [Zhan Long] players. Within minutes, we had been obliterated. It was especially heartbreaking for me to watch this scene as every death was a loss, and all of these people were the elite of [Zhan Long]

.....

At that moment, the sound of hoofbeats resounded from the rear of the [Zhan Long] campsite. Qing Qian widen her beautiful eyes as she exclaimed, “Brother Xiao Yao, our savior is here! Ba Huang City finally sent reinforcements!”

I held up my sword and turned around. Just as Qing Qian had said, a huge mass of the Han Feng Army’s Cavalry were dashing towards us from behind the mass of people. At the forefront was the Moon Elf Princess, Angela, sitting on a white war horse with a pure black metal umbrella on her back. In her hand she held a long sword, the Godly weapon—The Destroyer. The legendary weapon that us players wouldn’t even dare think

of going against.

“Pa.....”

Angela abruptly jumped off the horse as she waved her sword in the air and delicately yelled out, “Qin Hai, you ruthless demon. Die!”

“Bang!”

The energy of the sword slashed across, and a bloody mark appeared on Qin Hai’s arm. He licked his lips and grinned, “I see it is the pretty Moon Elf Princess, Angela. We haven’t met in ten years. I didn’t expect that we would fight to the death as soon as we met again. Come on, let me see if you have made any new improvements within these ten years!”

With his sword raised, Qin Hai darted out at lightning speed and struck towards Angela’s fair neck in a flash.

“Shua!”

Angela held up the metal umbrella with her left hand and did a simple sweep. With a “Peng” sound, the energies collided together and smashed into pieces. Qin Hai spun in the air and backed several meters away as his eyes showed a slight shockness, “What a strong force! That little b*tch must have been taken into Luo Lei’s harem, and stolen some of Luo Lei’s battle strength after all those intimate nights!”

A furious expression formed on Angela’s beautiful face as she said, “Qin Hai, you are dead today!”

.....

From afar, the sounds of battles rang out. Li Mu screamed, “Guild Master, [Emperor’s Blood] has started attacking!”

I smiled and sent a message to Piggy, “Can we make our move now?”

Piggy speedily replied, “We have arrived at the rear of [Emperor’s Blood]. You guys can attack now!”

“Alright!”

I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword up high and pointed right ahead as I

shouted, “Target [Emperor’s Blood] along with the NPC cavalry and crush them all at once!”

Chapter 380: Who Slaughters Who?!

Metal hooves stomped the ground as the Han Feng Army from Ba Huang City clashed with the All Terrain Army from Jiu Li City. The Moon Elf Princess carried The Destroyer, and continually struck Qin Hai's sword. As the fight went on, the battle soon reached a fever pitch. There were large amounts of NPCs killed almost every second. The lives of the NPC Army seemed to have become worthless, as 80% of them were going to revive in the end anyway.

.....

The battle on the players' side was even simpler. Our goal was very clear – to kill NPCs and players to obtain experience and City War Points. After receiving the help of the Han Feng Army, the pressure on the three guilds, [Zhan Long], [Blood Contract], and [Enemies At The Gate] was reduced greatly. A counterattack immediately started, and they attacked the 20,000 NPC iron cavalry. Simultaneously, the players of [Emperor's Blood] mingled with the NPCs.

“Kill the NPCs first, then kill the players. Concentrate your fire and target the [Emperor's Blood]'s players who possess the most firepower!”

Matcha held her sword, and lifted her shield as she dashed forward at full speed. Moving her shield away, she waved her sword and used [Skyshaker Slash]. A Swordsman with half health was immediately slashed to death. Simultaneously, she raised her shield and an Assassin darting at her was knocked away with a “Keng”. With another slash, she instantly killed the Assassin. I felt pleased as I looked at her fight from afar. After so many days of experience, Matcha's accuracy in attacking had finally improved a lot. She was not in an inferior position even in battles between such ace guilds, and had become the absolute main tank of [Zhan Long]'s battlefield.

“Sister Dance!”

Qing Qian adjusted the tool board and targeted a member of [Emperor's Blood] at a distance. A Lv 68 Mage was brandishing his staff, using [Pillar

of Fire & ice] to repeatedly take away the lives of many [Zhan Long] members. Qing Qian watched the scene carefully and said, “Start the targeting mechanism and let [Grip Of The Firefox] and [Meteor Shot] hit the target together. I will break his defense and you kill him!”

Dancing Forest nodded with a smile, “Okie!”

Qing Qian’s attractive figure leaped several steps ahead. She opened her small hand, and the fire grew denser and denser, materializing into an image of a Firefox above her head. With an abrupt wave of her hand, sharp claws swung out as the furious roars of the Firefox echoed and pierced through the crowds with a “Boom”. The effect of the flames ravaged the crowds around and struck directly onto the Mage’s [Mana Shield]. The instant the shield broke, a [Meteor Shot] swept through!

“Puchi!”

“4129!”

It was an instant kill. The Mage stared at the bloody hole in his chest, incapable of believing what had just happened.

Li Mu raised his long sword and used a [Covering Sword Slash], shocking the crowds. Simultaneously, he laughed out loud and said, “Qing Qian and Dancing Forest work very well together. Tsk, Tsk, killing someone in 25 seconds.....”

I nodded with a smile, “Yeah, we should have more teams like this. It would be much deadlier to kill and break defenses if we had 100 teams like this. If we were able to target and kill 100 highly skilled enemies using long range skills within 25 seconds then every guild would be terrified when they see us, [Zhan Long].....”

“Haha. Yeah!”

.....

Before Li Mu’s voice had died away, Dong Cheng Lei began roaring out from the other side. His battle axe swept across, and seven close combat players of [Emperor’s Blood] were slashed up two meters into the air. Once the knockback effect from the [Super Strength] was triggered, the

result shown was frightening. Before the 7 melee players descended to the ground, Old K had dashed over while wind energy ferociously danced around him, and pieces of wind blades flew across swiftly and fiercely. The [Whirlwind Slash] exploded and the 7 members of [Emperor's Blood] were all strangled in the air. Successively, a violent [Savage Jump Slash] was used, and a distant Archer was viciously slashed down. The battle axe was thrown and it flew out, killing another Healer as a "Puchi" sound was heard. The succession of attacking skills made the [Emperor's Blood]'s members stared with their eyes widened and mouths agape—

"F*ck, is that big black face still human?"

"Yeah, why is his attack strength so powerful? Yet, he looks so ugly?"

"This Hero Old K must have been brought back to our country from African refugee camps. Those words about being a good brother for many years must be a lie. You can't fool me!"

The group of the [Emperor's Blood]'s players mocked with all their effort, but they didn't manage to enrage Old K. Carrying his battle axe, Old K continued killing all the way back while a cold sneer formed on the corner of his mouth, "F*ck you all. There are so many people calling me ugly, you think you guys are the first to say that? Back of the line!"

Li Mu was slightly speechless, he spoke while attacking the NPC ahead, "Compared to mine, or Old K and Cang Lei's team, Yue and Dance's team is too gentle. Old K, on the other hand, kills people with impressive speed, even faster than me!"

"Yeah....." I feel the same way too. [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash] are both effective killing machines. Even I felt slightly envious! Pah, actually, why would I be envious..... My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Great Realm of Desolation] are totally better than those two skills. In addition to the Mohist Five Scrolls, the rate at which I kill is much much faster....

.....

The fierce battle went on for about half an hour. Finally, 20000 soldiers of the All Terrain Army had died under the swords of our three big guilds,

and at least 25% of [Emperor's Blood] had been killed!

“Boss!”

A team leader of the [Emperor's Blood] looked horrifyingly at Dragon Emperor as he exclaimed, “Boss! Our rear is also under attack! Our way of retreat has been cut off, and the attacker is Ba Huang City's [Wrath of the Heroes].

Dragon Emperor was shocked as well, “How could that be possible? The information that we had received earlier.....isn't [Wrath of Heroes] a guild established by an affluent second generation? How could a guild built up on RMB be terrifying?”

The team leader gnashed his teeth and replied, “It's different this time. [Wrath of the Heroes] has dispatched at least 20000 people. The attacks are very fierce, they are gripping onto us and unwilling to let go like a mad dog. Plus, we still have to face and battle [Zhan Long], [Enemies At The Gates] and [Crimson Contract], these three super strong guilds. Boss, I'm afraid we don't have enough people. What can we do? There's a pack of wolves before us is waiting for an opportunity, while mad dogs are gripping onto us in the rear!”

With a wave of his sharp knife, Dragon Emperor smiled calmly and said, “It's alright. If that's the case then so be it. Ha ha ha, to think that they'd dare cut off my [Emperor's Blood]'s path. That [Wrath of the Heroes] must be tired of living. Just you wait, once I stabilize our formation, it'll only take 10 minutes!”

“Alright!”

.....

[Emperor's Blood] had already begun setting layers of shields under the city walls, showing a state of defense. They have completely given up on attacking, and even the Vice Guild Master, Blue Dragon Emperor, retreated into the defense formation with his sword in hand as a cold sneer rose up the corner of his mouth.

“What's going on?” Sister Matcha was shocked.

Wolf exclaimed, "They gave up so quickly. How dare they claimed to be some top six guild of Jiu Li City? Pah, now it looks like they are just a bunch of losers!"

Li Mu furrowed, "I don't think it's that simple...."

Lian Po responded, "Yeah, Jiu Li City is stronger than us, and our true major guilds are on the east side. There are only three big guilds and some small guilds here at the west side. There's no reason for them to give up on attacking. Plus, they still have the aid of the NPC armies. "

"Yup, there is probably only one reason," I said as I peered at the distance.

Qing Qian looked up at me and asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, what reason?"

I grinned, "Err, when I was young.....I studied books on the art of war and obtained a deep understanding of military strategies....."

Hearing my words, Matcha was speechless, "Boss, skip the self-praise and move on to the important part....."

I touched my nose and said, "[Emperor's Blood] was attacked simultaneously from the front and rear by us until they had the appearance of having only 7000+ people. They had fallen into a predicament, but still remained here defending. There could only be one reason. They have powerful reinforcements. If so, [Emperor's Blood] will be like a peg, nailing us, the three big guilds, here. Thereafter [Emperor's Blood] would cooperate with the reinforcements and slaughter [Wrath of the Heroes] and our advantage will become a disadvantage....."

"Then..... then what should we do?" Dong Cheng Lei looked at me in shock, "Brother Xiao Yao, we should think of a plan. I don't want to leave the battlefield of the city war so quickly..... "

Li Mu also stared at me, "Guild Master, you make the choice!"

I took a deep breath and said, "How about this, let [Enemies At The Gates] and [Crimson Contract] continue to attack [Emperor's Blood] from the front. [Zhan Long]'s 5000 people will outflank them from the west. Once Jiu Li City's reinforcements attack [Wrath of the Heroes] from the

rear, we will attack fiercely from the side, covering for [Wrath of the Heroes] and simultaneously attacking our enemy. This way, we might still stand a chance at winning!”

“Then what are we waiting for? Let’s move right now!”

“Yes!”

We notified Misty Cloud and Han Bei Song of our plan and the Guild Masters of the two big guilds both happily agreed. With a pat on their chest, they also promised to end the battle within half an hour, and slaughter [Emperor’s Blood]. [Zhan Long] left the battlefield and made a detour towards the forest in the west as we hid among the smoke and dust!

.....

“ShaSha.....”

My battle boots stepped on the serene grass as a sprinkle of rain fell from the sky, dripping on my battle armor and cloak. I dashed forward while shouting out loudly, “Everyone, keep up! Once [Wrath of the Heroes] receives the ambush, they won’t be able to sustain themselves for long!”

Wang Jian said, “Brother Xiao Yao, [Wrath of the Heroes] is just a trashy bully. Did you forget how the Tyrant of Western Chu bullied you in the past? Plus, that Dawn Hero had also been chasing our sister and wouldn’t give up. Humph, guilds like this should just die!”

I couldn’t help but laughed, “Wang Jian, you’re still young. You should distinguish the interest within this event. This is the city war and it concerns the well-being of every player of Ba Huang City. We must do our best. Also, I am going to assist [Wrath of the Heroes] for no other reason, but for the promise I made to Piggy that we will work together. The past is forgotten. The 20000+ members of [Wrath of the Heroes] ventured into danger by themselves, so what other reason do we have to not help them with the utmost effort?”

General Lian Po nodded his head, “Very good, the Guild Master of a

super guild should possess such generosity. Through your attitude, I can see that [Zhan Long] is destined to rise above [Vanguard]; because our Guild Master has the manner of a king that is better than Jian Feng Han!”

I grinned, “Stop complimenting. Everyone advance quicker!”

“Yes!”

.....

About ten minutes later, the plain in the distance was the center of a fierce battle when we came out of the forest. Fighting was happening everywhere around Fort Zi Feng. All four corner beacons of Fort Zi Feng were lit up in flames. After the beginning skirmishes had died down, the true battle had finally begun.

“Di!”

A message from Piggy, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, things aren’t going good here. The two big guilds, [House Of Prestige] and [Judgement] made an attack upon our rear. We suffered great loss with the battle damage rate of 500-1000 people per minute. What do we do now?”

I replied, “Hang in there. I’m on my way now!”

“Alright!”

.....

Farther away, the Guild Master of the [House Of Prestige], Baili Ruo Feng, held his long bow and shot a [Big Dipper Meteor] from a distance.

“Shua!”

An arrow pierced through the crowds and a dozen of the [Wrath of the Heroes]’s players fell to their knees. Bai Li Ruo Feng raised his arms and roared in anger, “Attack at full speed and slaughter [Wrath of the Heroes], those contemptible clowns!”

On the other side, Ye Lai brandished his battle axe, and led over ten thousand elites near the city wall areas, dashing forward to kill the elites of [Wrath of the Heroes] as he bellowed loudly,

“Attack!”

Suffering from the attacks coming from at least 20000+ members of the two big guilds, the members of [Wrath of the Heroes] were all so terrified that their faces turned purple, “What now? We..... are we doomed?! ”

.....

“KengKeng!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword were unsheathed. I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword up high with only one hand as I shouted loudly “Brothers, [House Of Prestige] who threatened to massacre us is before our eyes. Go! Attack! And let [House Of Prestige] knows who is the one that will truly be slaughtered!!”

Chapter 381: Bloody Collision

“Attack!”

General Li Mu, Old K, and General Wang Jian waited for everyone to pull out their swords, as 5000 [Zhan Long] players rushed out of the Moonlight Forest directly into [House of Prestige]’s wings. There were at least 10000 [House of Prestige] members in front of us, but we [Zhan Long] were not afraid at all. Especially those in the front lines. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi and the others were all experts who did not like to lose. They were neither pressured or intimidated by the members of [House of Prestige]. In fact, they were probably feeling excited. They believe that they can prove themselves by defeating such strong opponents.

.....

“Not good. It’s..... It’s [Zhan Long].”

Not far from their main force, [House of Prestige] had a number of Archers on the side. One of the flag bearers discovered us and yelled, “[Zhan Long] is launching a sneak attack. Quick. Notify the Guild Master! Brothers on the left side, use [Scattered Shot] and try to slow them down. Quick! If [Zhan Long] slaughters their way in, we’re all done for!”

A group of Archers raised their bows and used [Scattered Shot]s. The sky was darkened by the mass of flying arrows. Almost all of the attacks were from the automatic targeting mechanism in the game. This system was a player guidance system as most people playing weren’t actual Archers, or any of the other long range classes except for the few top class players. With it you could just select auto target, and the skill would be directed exactly at the spot the player was in at that exact moment. Unfortunately, once the targeted player suddenly changes their direction, then the locking mechanism would become useless!

“Sha Sha Sha.....”

My Divine Battle Boots quickly slid across the grass. I looked up at the multiple arrows in the sky and yelled out, “Everyone, use your own judgement and activate [Blade Rush]. I don’t care how many people we

sacrifice, we need to cut into the frontline first! All of the long-range players behind follow us. We have to smash [House of Prestige]'s frontline in one go, or else we might not have another opportunity!”

I quickly lowered my body. “Ka Cha!” I rushed forward five yards as arrows cut through the empty air with a “pu pu pu” behind me. Each arrow resulted in a big MISS popping out in the air. Li Mu and Wang Jian rushed forward beside me at the same time as they waited for the third advancement Swordsmen to all activate their [Blade Rush]es to escape the targeting mechanism of the [Scattered Shot]s. Of course, there was a big group of players that didn’t react fast enough, resulting in the arrows thudding into their bodies, and splattering fresh blood onto the ground. There were even quite a few arrows that instantly killed the Berserkers. The average strength of the [House of Prestige] Archers had far surpassed our imagination!

“Full speed ahead!”

I picked up my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and finally activated [Haste]. I closed the distance between me and the enemy by another 10 yards. I was so close that I could see the fear in the eyes of the Archers. I stretched out my arm, and a hexagram began spinning on the ground under me. My Flaming Tiger God roared as it leapt out of the pet dimension. It lunged at a group of people with flames dancing on its claws. With a furious roar, it activated [Burstfire Raid] on the Archers, and crushed them into a pile of corpses!

“Shua!”

In a flash, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and killed another group of players. I began moving in a Z formation, one of the most basic movement patterns for a close combat player. Based on my present strength, I’ve basically perfected the pattern. Even if I was compared to Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han, they would still not be quite as good as I was. My only problem was that I was still lacking in using it instinctively.

[Soul Army]!

I abruptly opened my palm, and cast another strong skill, [Black

Tortoise Realm]. At that point, all of the players from [House of Prestige] had been submerged in a mud-like state, slowing down all of their movement and attack speeds. Behind me, Li Mu, Old K, Wang Jian and Bai Qi all ran up to kill. All types of skills began dancing across the battlefield and devastating the Archers. It had basically become a slaughterhouse!

“Hua hua hua.....”

I heard the sound of wings flapping in the air. It was Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands who quickly cast [Pillar of Fire & Ice], as Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox] appeared. Dancing Forest shot an arrow from afar carrying a [Meteor Shot] that cut through the mob, leaving behind a trail of corpses. Within the blink of an eye, the flow of battle was completely within [Zhan Long]'s control!

.....

“Where are our people?”

One of the Mages from [House of Prestige] roared out in fury, “Don't just f*cking kill the trash from [Wrath of the Heroes]! Quick, bring over the heavy armor players that Guild Master sent to us. Our right flank is about to get crushed by [Zhan Long]! Do we only care about the head and not the body anymore?!”

TL Note: This idiom is referring to the fact that they are only protecting one part of the army and not the army as a whole

“Wait for one second, Guild Master said that the heavy armor players will get here in five minutes. We have to block them on our own for now!”

“Sh*t! We're just a group of Archers, Musketeers and Mages! What are we supposed to use to block those elite [Zhan Long] close combat specialists? Should we use our faces, or our dicks? Don't joke around with me! If there's no other choice then we'll get the [Judgement]'s people to reinforce us! Aren't the heavy armor players under Ye Lai considered to be number one in Jiu Li City? It's time for them to prove that!”

“Eh, flagbearer, you're kidding right..... Ye Lai is the Guild Master of

[Judgement], why would he listen to the commands from [House of Prestige]? Besides, Ye Lai is on good terms with Xiao Yao Zi Zai. He already said that in the City Wars Event he would never lay a finger on [Zhan Long] unless he was absolutely pressed to do so. I think that, even if our Guild Master were to beg Ye Lai to come, that dipsh*t wouldn't give the nod anyway!"

"Sh*t! No choice. Everyone, use all of your strongest attacks and nuke those [Zhan Long] players! Kill as many as you can. Make sure you save up the cooldowns for your [Crystallize]. Be prepared at any time to dodge any long range attacks from Xiao Yao Zi Zai and others!"

.....

As the commanders from [House of Prestige] were discussing their plans, 5000 of [Zhan Long]'s players had already spread out. Just like a famished dragon that had just awoken from a deep sleep, we swallowed up the right flank of [House of Prestige]. This area just so happened to be mostly crowded with their long ranged specialists. There were no close combat players there to protect them. They just lay defenseless before us. This moment was the perfect opportunity, a concept that Li Mu and I understood very clearly. No one in their right minds would let go of an opportunity like this!

"Shou shou shou....."

As the arrows began to wreak havoc, players on [Zhan Long]'s frontline began falling one by one. One Second Hero picked up his long spear, and rushed into the formation. He looked back at me and said, "Guild Master, I don't think the situation is very good for us right now. Our losses on the frontline is just too great. If we keep this up, then all of our close combat players will be dead!"

I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword, and began using Dual Sword Style to hack through the mob. As I was killing I shouted out, "Don't think about our losses and focus on attacking. [Zhan Long] only has 5000 people left. The only way we can help Ba Huang City right now is to completely eliminate [House of Prestige], and God Damn it, for every one of our close

combat specialists they kill, I'll cut down three of their long range players. This exchange is well worth it!"

One Second Hero chuckled, "Alright, I got it! Brothers, charge! Kill more, earn more!"

A short five minutes later, [House of Prestige]'s right flank long range team had suffered a devastating attack; A team of 5000 was cut down by us to only 2000 or so. On top of that, the surviving players weren't in a good situation either. The plains and deserts of Hell's Core was littered with corpses. People didn't even bother to pick up the dropped equipments. This was a silent rule of team battles, once everyone tried to pick up equipments, then the entire fighting force of the team get cut down.

.....

"Brother Xiao Yao!"

Qing Qian suddenly retreated several steps and pointed to the right, "Look! The close combat players from [House of Prestige] have arrived!"

I scanned the distance. Indeed, there were at least 3000 close combat specialists rushing over. Many of them only had half or critical health. It was clear that they had just rushed over from the frontlines.

"What should we do?" Li Mu squinted and said, "Should we use force or should we retreat?"

I looked behind me and said with a heavy voice, "We'll risk it all! Our long range DPS players and Healers have all joined us by now while they don't have any support or heals here with them. For now, we'll just take our time to kill them. To top it off, everyone at [House of Prestige] all underestimate us. Let's take advantage of their pride, and slaughter those 3000 close combat specialists!"

Li Mu also got bolder and said, "Motherf*cker, wasn't that the best decision I made in my life joining [Zhan Long]? Only under a Guild Master like you can I fight to my heart's content on the battlefield!"

Bai Qi picked up his battleaxe and said, "Time to charge?"

I nodded and said, “Charge, charge right at them!”

Old K and Dong Cheng Lei laughed out and rushed out to meet the enemy. Old K roared out in fury and cut through the crowds with a [Whirlwind Slash]. His strength was much higher than the enemies, forcing several Swordsmen and Berserkers into the air. Dong Cheng Lei took the chance to rush forward. With a wave of his battle axe, he cut all of the enemies in the air to pieces as [Super Strength] activated itself.

Dancing Forest lifted up her longbow, and sent out arrow after arrow, all of which carried immense force behind them. Most importantly, Li Mu, Wang Jian and I all kept darting around the front lines. Once our health dropped to a critical level, we would immediately retreat, completely messing up the enemy’s flow of battle!

.....

“Kill! Our pride won’t make it past us if we lose to some second rate guild like [Zhan Long]!”

A Lv 70 [House of Prestige] Berserker picked up his battle axe. He had a line of characters showing on his shoulder. Player Name: Snow Wolf Ghost*, Position: Elder. This was probably one of their strongest close combat players aside from Quick Thunder Swift Wind, and was the leader of this group of enemies. The battleaxe in Snow Wolf’s hands gave off a terrifying glow as it cut down a [Zhan Long] Swordsman with a [Skyshaker Slash]. He then yelled out, “It’s time we meet our enemies face to face. [House of Prestige] cannot lose on a front. We must face [Zhan Long] head on and win! Everyone, charge with me!”

Maybe it was because they were motivated by Snow Wolf’s speech, a group of players rushed forward, cutting down a dozen of [Zhan Long]’s players, their confidence raised again.

In the team chat, Song Han said, “We have to kill Snow Wolf and break their morale. I’ll stun him, the rest follow Brother Xiao Yao, Li Mu and Wang Jian’s lead!”

“Go ahead!” I nodded my head

Li Mu chuckled, "I'll keep tabs on Snow Wolf from 10 meters, as long as Snow Wolf becomes dizzy, he will die!"

"Right!"

.....

Wolf turned into a shadow and mingled through the place, stealthing past the area and escaping from any further harm. Coming closer to Snow Wolf, he suddenly activated his skills. Ambush complete!

Li Mu heartily laughed, as Wang Jiang also suddenly came up. Before Snow Wolf could move Li Mu activated a [Skyshaker Slash]!

"2871 ! "

Wang Jian also activated a [Combo] at the same time, but to their surprise, Snow Wolf's reaction was quick as he held a one handed tomahawk. "Keng" he parried Wang Jian's [Combo].

"Hum..."

I hastily raised my Emperor Qin's Sword, and pointed at Snow Wolf, casting a [Great Realm of Desolation]!

Snow Wolf's face turned cold, " This is? Fu*k..."

.....

"4127 ! "

A fierce hit, combined with Song Han's power, and this famous elder was killed!

Chapter 382: The Crops are Ripe

When Snow Wolf died, the frontline of [House Of Prestige] became agitated. In addition, the AOE skills of Li Mu, Old K and the others swept past, and the first 500 people of the 3000 man army were mostly killed. The collapse of the frontline spread towards the back like an epidemic. A fundamental change was finally triggered. [House Of Prestige]'s right wing team began facing a landslide defeat!

“Kill!”

I crossed my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword as I swept through the players at an incredibly fast speed. My Flaming Tiger God roared furiously and jumped into the midst of the crowds like it had entered a desolate area. None of the other pets could fight the Flaming Tiger God. For instance, even if ten ordinary pets like mantises and bees were to be added together in term of strength, they wouldn't be able to compete against Flaming Tiger God. The gap between their strength is too big!

.....

As I charged forward, I sent a message to Piggy, “We, [Zhan Long], have already killed 4000 of [House of Prestige]'s close-combat players. How's your situation?”

Piggy hastily replied, “It's not looking good. Bai Li Ruo Feng and Ye Lai have brought 10,000 men, and they are practically hacking us to pieces! Their strength is just way way too great. I don't think [Wrath of the Heroes] can withstand anymore. Guild Master repeatedly told me to retreat. Guild Master Xiao Yao, I'm really sorry, but [Wrath of the Heroes] must retreat now, or else we'll truly be annihilated!”

I nodded, “Yeah, then let's retreat! [Enemies At The Gate] and [Crimson Contract] should be annihilating all members of [Emperor's Blood] soon!”

“Okay. We are backing out!”

In the distance, the [Wrath of the Heroes] players all quickly retreated.

They moved towards the other side of the plain. When they came, they were 20,000 strong, but when they left, they were a mere 5000 man team. This just proved how terrifying [Judgement] and [House of Prestige] were. They were practically two massive killing machines!

.....

“Boss!” Matcha exclaimed, “[Wrath of the Heroes] was utterly defeated! Bai Li Ruo Feng brought the true elites from [House of Prestige] to fight the decisive battle. Why don’t we retreat... [Zhan Long]’s losses were also great. If we fight another battle head on, then all of our men would die!”

“Yes!”

I pointed to the south with my sword and said, “Go towards the south, and attack as we move forward!”

“Alright!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian and the others commanded everyone to retreat. Meanwhile, Bai li Ruo Feng led a group of [House Of Prestige]’s main forces to pursue us fiercely. The pursuing team consisted of Swordsmen, Berserkers, Mages and Archers. Therefore, their movement speed was extremely fast, and they were about to catch up!

“PaPaPa.....”

His leather boots sliding across the sand, Bai Li Ruo Feng was the first to arrive. He pulled 20 yards closer, and had already got into the most advantageous position. He immediately halted, then activated [Electrical Star Shot], increasing his attack speed. It was almost as though the process of positioning the bow had been completely neglected, as he rapidly fired seven to eight arrows. Five of [Zhan Long]’s players in the back row cried out as they crumpled to the ground. Following that, Bai Li Ruo Feng sent out a [Big Dipper Meteor]. The skill cut through the crowd, and killed seven people before burying itself into the back of One Second Hero!

“Peng!”

“3717 ! ”

One Second Hero's entire body shook from the impact. He immediately picked up his long spear and roared out, "Bai Li Ruo Feng, you bastard! I won't let you kill so many of my people. I'm going to go teach you a lesson!"

Raising my sword, I quickly retreated and yelled out, "One Second Hero you dumbass there's no f*cking way for you to kill him. Get your ass out of there! You can strike back when you meet up with [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract]! I'll go block Bai Li Ruo Feng! "

"But Boss!"

"No buts, leave!"

"Ok!"

.....

Watching One Second Hero leave, I immediately held up my two swords and leapt at Bai Li Ruo Feng. His movement speed was extremely quick, and he soon pulled 30 yards away from me. Once he noticed me his face broke into a smile, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, perfect timing! I was just thinking of dueling you. Come at me, let me see just how talented you really are, as you dared to kill so many of my people!"

I didn't say anything. Instead, I rushed out and charged straight at Bai Li Ruo Feng!

Bai Li Ruo Feng raised his longbow. The terrifyingly accurate attack was coming again! "Shua Shua Shua" three arrows shot out. I only manage to dodge one of them!

"1938 ! "

"1922 ! "

It was just too painful. I gulped down a health potion, and kept trying to pull closer!

"Ha!"

When we were only 15 yards apart, Bai Li Ruo Feng immediately raised his long bow, [Silencing Arrow]! I couldn't get hit by this, or else I

wouldn't be able to use any skills for 2.5 seconds; my fate would be sealed then!

I ducked down, and used my [Blade Rush] to dodge the [Silencing Arrow]. This way he was also within my range of attack! I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

Once my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] left my blade, Bai Li Ruo Feng suddenly activated another attack — [Lightning Tempest]! A impenetrable tempest appeared before me, blocking my [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Closely following that, he sent out another arrow through the tempest, forcing his body to bounce backwards. What an effective combo!

I endured the pain of the arrow pierced in my chest, and activated a [God Army Card] in my hand. [Seven Stars Teleportation] activated, giving me free reign to teleport to any point in the seven star placement. "Shua!" I teleported to the Tian Quan Position and swung my blade, casting a [Combo]!

"Huh?!"

Bai Li Ruo Feng's heart froze. He immediately cast [Crystallize]!

"MISS ! "

The second [Crystallize] was about to end, I lunged forward with a stab!

"Keng!"

What surprised me was that he used his steel bow to block the attack. Even though he couldn't completely block the attack, his body flew backwards from the impact of the attack. Miserably, he fell onto the ground. Looking up, all he could see was my arm gathering the power of the dragon!

"Oh no!"

[Defeat the Dragon] activated and Bai Li Ruo Feng was bound by the dragon chains and dragged right to me. I swung my Emperor Qin's Sword with my right hand, as it shined with the effect of [Wind Blade]. With just

one attack, I could pretty much kill this [House of Prestige] Guild Master!

.....

“Keng!”

Everything weighed on this moment and I was stunned. Motherf*cker, who would’ve thought that I would get stunned at this moment! One of the remaining [House of Prestige] Archers caught up to us!

Bai Li Ruo Feng, still in a state of panic, immediately raised his battle bow, and shot three arrows in a row!

“Pa pa pa.....”

My health dropped to the bottom. Fortunately, the Archer that stunned me wasn’t very strong, so the effect period was very short. Once I recovered, I immediately activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], and threw a [Wind Blade] at Bai Li Ruo Feng. By then, he had already prepared himself for the attack!

“Keng!”

The strong skill hit against Bai Li Ruo Feng’s bow, forcing him so far backwards it was like he was kiting. Battered, he fell to the ground while I simply opened my hand — [Great Realm of Desolation]!

I didn’t even check to see if the [Great Realm of Desolation] took his life. Instead, I held up my sword and immediately retreated. The players from [House of Prestige] had all caught up to us, but all of [Zhan Long]’s players had successfully retreated. My task was complete. While I was running, I toggled my viewpoint to behind me. Just as I expected, Bai Li Ruo Feng rolled away, causing the [Great Realm of Desolation] to MISS. He escaped again!

Although I did not manage to kill this Guild Master, that was enough as I have embarrassed him in front of so many [House Of Prestige]’s players. I had achieved my goal, and shocked the hearts of the [House Of Prestige]’s players to a certain point. It was to tell them that [Zhan Long] was not to be trifled with, and that it would not be difficult if I wanted to kill Bai Li Ruo Feng!

.....

When we returned to our position using [Haste], we found out that the [Enemies At The Gate] and [Blood Contract] alliance were already battling with [Judgement]!

Ye Lai lifted his battle axe and was locked in a fierce battle with Misty Cloud, yet he was constantly forced to back away due to the harassment of Han Bei Song's [Blade Rush]. With a raise of his battle axe, he bellowed loudly, "We can't rely on [House Of Prestige] anymore. All of [Judgement] retreat immediately. [Zhan Long] has returned. If we don't leave now, we will definitely suffer losses!"

I raised my sword from afar and laugh out loud, "Ye Lai, goodbye!"

"Bye!"

Holding up his battle axe, Ye Lai led over ten thousands [Judgement] players and disappeared into the clouds of smoke. There were only piles of corpses, equipment, potions, cards, etc left on the ground. This city war was so intense that every part of the battlefield was horrifying.

.....

"Clean the battlefield!" I gave the command. "We can't lose out on things like this, since [Zhan Long] is also a major force in the battle. "

Carrying his sword, Misty Cloud walked over here as a stern expression filled his face, "Ye Lai is truly very strong. Even though I changed class to Four Divine Symbols Guardian , I still did not gain any advantages. Instead, there were a few times that I almost got killed by him....."

I nodded, "The 11th place of the CBN Battle Net isn't just for show."

"Yup!"

Behind me, Sister Matcha walked attractively towards me. I then asked her, "Has the rate of battle damage been calculated?"

Matcha pursed her red lips and answered, "Yeah, 5100+ people went and 1400+ died. Now there are around 3700 people left. Boss.....if a head-to-head big battle happens again, I am afraid we will be wiped out....."

I remained silent.

By my side, Misty Cloud patted my shoulder and said, “Making [Zhan Long] painstakingly face guilds like [House Of Prestige] has really made things difficult for you guys.....”

Lifting my head up, I looked at him in the eyes. and declared with a faint smile, “It’s alright! No matter how strong the opponents we face now are, we will possess that same strength in the future.”

“Yeah. Great speech! Now what?”

.....

I turned and gazed at the battlefield from afar and said, “Check how much health the All Terrain army’s BOSS, Qin Hai, has now. When he has only 5% of his health remaining, send the people from our group out and slay this BOSS. We might obtain some nice experience, equipment or something. This chance must not go to waste. Since our probability of winning in this city war isn’t very high, we must take whatever the benefits we can get.”

“Yeah!”

In the distance, the battle between the NPCs was reaching an end. Large amounts of the cavalry from both Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City became corpses, and the area under the city turned into a pool of blood. Facing the city war, the major armed forces of Ba Huang City were attacking the city walls as corpses lay all over the area. The ruler of Ba Huang City, Luo Lei, had personally come to supervise the battle, while Angela of Han Bing Army was sent here to guard the west side of the city.

“Honk honk honk.....”

Qin Hai was breathing very heavily as the long sword in his hand trembled slightly while only 11% of his health was left. Right in front of him was Moon Elf Princess Angela who still had 37% of health. Her pretty face was marked with bloodstains, and her chest heaved rapidly while her battle robe was already colored red with blood. She spoke in an indifferent tone, “Qin Hai, the All Terrain Army has already been terminated. Heh

heh..... The army you are so proud of has been wiped out. What other cards do you have left?"

Qin Hai's eyes were filled with flames of anger and he exclaimed, "Angela, You bitch! Even if the All Terrain Army collapses, I will definitely bury your Han Feng Army along with my them! You wait and see! Lord Huo Li and Lord Lin Qiong will avenge me!"

Farther away, Angela opened her hand, and the wind circulated around her. With a "Peng" sound, [Wind Cone] bombarded Qin Hai's chest and Angela said with a faint smile, "You are already at death's door. Die!"

.....

"Keng!"

I drew out my Emperor Qin's Sword as I laughed out loud, "The crops are ripe. Brothers, come harvest with me. Qin Hai's head belongs to us!"

Chapter 383: Those who deserve it, Will be Rewarded

The Boss only had 10% of its health left while [Zhan Long] as well as several other small guilds were all launching organized attacks. We pushed the remaining Jiu Li City soldiers to the side, focusing on the core BOSS General Qin Hai.

.....

“Bastards...”

As General Qin Hai became enraged, he sent out a slash instantly turning a small group of Ba Huang City into ash. Even though the BOSS was being attacked from all sides, he also managed to kill many people. But now, his health was finally almost gone!

“Keng!”

General Angela put her long sword back into its sheath and mounted her horse once more, “Qin Hai, looks like the number of people who want to kill you is too great. It seems like I don’t even have to do anything this time. See ya! Jiu Li City’s All Terrain Army, you guys are already history!”

Qin Hai furiously roared, and raised his long sword. Another blow fell upon a group of players, but he still coughed up blood from exerting energy. The amount of players was just too much!

.....

“Sha Sha...”

Holding my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I dashed through the group and charged forward. Li Mu, Wang Jiang, and Matcha waited for the others to catch up. Yue Qing Qian, on the other hand, softly called out, “Dancing Forest, try to lead the BOSS to us!”

Dancing Forest nodded and pulled back her long bow, sending out a [Triple Shot] and a [Meteor Shot].

“Bang!”

“1427 ! ”

The [Meteor Shot] sent out a ball of fire as 4 big damage numbers popped up. Qin Hai roared again and immediately raised his sword as he rushed forward. Li Mu, with a wave of his sword, commanded “Containment squads, go!”

Suddenly, a group of Monks carrying shields came forward, and surrounded the boss, preventing it from moving any further. Thousand Suns had been waiting for this exact moment to lead the players, and carry out an attack. The battlefield went into chaos!

“Swoosh!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword sent out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], hitting the boss. Opening my hand, I locked onto the BOSS with [Great Realm of Desolation], pulling the aggro right to me. I swiftly leapt backwards into the grass with [Camouflage], losing all of the aggro. You Yi continued to kill players in the plains, while I wait

The results of the BOSS’s attack was devastating; he massacred so many people. I directed all of my attacks at the BOSS while also protecting the other players. I couldn’t let up, or else all of [Zhan Long] would be annihilated!

.....

Many other players perished as [Zhan Long]’s members kept their distance and provided support. Playing on the safe side, we could deal more damage to the BOSS as a whole. The experience received by everyone was not small however the target of this competition was making the last hit. The killer would receive 50% of the experience from a Lv 90 Valkyrie Tier Boss! Even though the losing 20 of our players was the price, the bounty of experience one could get for killing the BOSS was too tempting to refuse.

“When are we making our move?” Li Mu asked.

Looking into the distance, I replied, “ [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Flying Dragon] will probably also send people over and it’s bound to become a

messy battle! In a while, you, General Wang Jian and Old K will attack rush the BOSS when its health drops to 1%. I will not participate in the rush, but will instead focus on the BOSS, grabbing all the items that drop!”

Li Mu grinned: “Well, these types of things are usually our job, but are you certain we can rush at 1%?”

“Yup, This BOSS has around 2,000,000 Health, 1% would be about 20,000”

“Roger!”

.....

Not far away, [Prague]’s Vice Guild Master Heaven’s Hero was waiting with a group of players for the opportunity to attack. In the opposite direction, [Wrath of the Heroes]’s Dawn Hero led about 100 people to wait for BOSS’s health to decrease more. Another group of mindless small Ba Huang guilds also joined in. Seeing the BOSS’s health drop below 10%, they already lost all inhibition and just rushed out.

“7% ! ”

“6% ! ”

“5% ! ”

“4% ! ”

“3% ! ”

The moment the BOSS’s health dropped to 3%, a sudden change occurred. Heaven’s Hero suddenly roared, “Men, Steal the BOSS, Qin Hai is ours!”

A group of 50 heavy armor players carrying shields moved in front of [Zhan Long], the sounds of shields banging the floor echoed, “Bang bang bang”. Within moment, they formed a defense formation.

Was this... was this to block the path between me and the BOSS? Did they want to steal the BOSS?

Li Mu raised a fist in anger, “What’s the meaning of this Heaven’s Hero? Are you not letting [Zhan Long] kill this BOSS?”

Heaven’s Hero didn’t respond, but instead raised his longsword and roared out, “[Prague], use everything you have to kill off this BOSS! We, [Prague], will become the first guild in this battle to kill a BOSS!”

“Keng!”

I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and furiously shouted, “I won’t allow that! Ah Lei, break that formation! Old K, destroy them! Everyone else, charge with me! We’re almost there! If we just break through [Prague]’s blockade, we’ll be able to kill the BOSS in one go!”

At that moment, Qin Hai seemed to follow my command, and threw a slash of sword energy into the crowd of people. All of the Knights had their health cut in half. Even if they activated [Heavenly Shield Wall], they still wouldn’t be able to block the Lv 90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS’s attack.

Dong Cheng Lei roared out, then lifted his battle axe, and lunged forward. The blade swept forward and “Peng!”, seven to eight of the shields seemed to all get blown away. That [Super Strength] of his far surpassed the expectations of most players. Dong Cheng Lei broke through the defense formation while Old K immediately rushed in with a [Whirlwind Blade]. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the rest also took the chance to break into the formation. I immediately followed Dong Cheng Lei as my two swords danced around. “Pu pu pu” I cut apart the Knights of [Prague]. In the blink of an eye, I killed seven to eight people, and dashed straight at the BOSS. It only had 2% of its health left!

“Kill! [Wrath of the Heroes], attack!”

In the distance, Dawn Hero also initiated his attack. The battlefield was immediately thrown into chaos!

The BOSS’s health soon dropped to 1%. I silently prayed for the next 3 seconds, then quickly yelled out, “Everyone in [Zhan Long], throw out your strongest skills!”

As I finished yelling, I also rushed head on and opened my hand to bind

the BOSS with [Black Tortoise Realm]. Everyone besides friendly players had their movement and attack speed seriously cut. All I wished for was to get the spoils of war. I didn't want to kill people, so all I could do was to use [Black Tortoise Realm]. Otherwise, I would just use [Soul Army], which would probably hinder them even more.

Song Han's [10 Way Blade], Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox], Dancing Forest's [Combo Shot], Matcha's [Phantom Ray Slash] practically all landed on Qin Hai at the same time. Li Mu lept up with a shout as his long sword glowed with a [Covering Sword Slash]. At that moment, Qin Hai cried out; his last bit of health was cut down. At the same time, a pile of drops burst out!

I was only a yard away from the BOSS. With my two swords out, I immediately charged forward. "Peng Peng" I knocked away the bodies of Heaven's Hero and Dawn Hero. I opened my left hand to pick up and put a crimson battle shield, a white cloak, and a long sword into my bag. With another "Peng" I knocked away the hand of a [Prague] team leader with my Emperor Qin's Sword. Opening my right hand, I picked up a shining bracelet and a Guild Creation Tablet. Once I got everything I needed, I returned to my team!

My battle boots stepped across the desert as I rushed back. The three pieces of equipment that Qin Hai dropped were all collected by me. There was another Guild Creation Tablet and some gold pieces that other people picked up. Heaven's Hero indignantly brought a group of [Prague] players to chase after me as though wanting to kill me, but they were blocked by Li Mu and others from [Zhan Long]. With a wave of his sword, Li Mu yelled out, "The treasures of the world will go to capable people. If [Zhan Long] wants something then what are you gonna do about it? Are you going to fight us for it?"

Heaven's Hero looked at the 3000+ elite [Zhan Long] players behind us but didn't say anything. He just gritted his teeth and said, "Fine, you guys are the stronger ones! Brothers, let's go!"

It wasn't until then, did the system finally ring out —

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations [General Li Mu] killed the Valkyrie Tier BOSS “Qin Hai” in the City Battle and obtained a separate reward! Level +1, Charm +9!

.....

“Shua!”

A ray of light fell upon Li Mu as he leveled up. He immediately regained his status as Top Five in Ba Huang City’s rankings. He was smiling so hard that he couldn’t close his mouth.

After the great battle was decided, our [Zhan Long] managed to protect three pieces of equipment. I didn’t even have the chance to look at the stats. I simply raised each equipment and yelled out, “This is our reward for slaying the first boss of the event! We’ll use the guild point system to decide on how to split the equipment. All of the equipment that have level or class requirements will go to the player who meets those requirements with the highest number of guild points. On top of that, we’ll use the system recognized method to determine who has the most number of guild points to decide who gets the equipment. Nobody has any disagreements right?”

Everyone nodded, “Guild Master, there’s no need to say anything more. Let’s just look at the equipment already!”

“Alright.....”

Picking up the crimson battle shield, I felt a vigorous energy emanate into my palm. I waved my hand.

[Plunderer’s Battle Shield] (Valkyrie Tier)

Defense: 1020

Power: +72

Stamina: +70

Agility: +67

Additional: 41% higher block rate

Additional: +2400 health

Additional: 12% Physical Defense

Effect: [Plunder], Reflect 25% of taken damage back at the enemy.

Required Level: 75

.....

Li Mu's eyes widened as he exclaimed, "Eh.... This is an equipment that reflects 25% of the damage, hehe it's a godly shield! The only problem is that the level requirement is just too high. Even now, our highest level Knight is One Second Hero at level 71, and even Matcha is only Level 70....."

I scanned the guild points and said, "Seeing as nobody's level is high enough, then we'll just check to see who has the highest number of points. If there isn't that great of a difference between the points, then we'll just roll for the equipment....."

Qing Qian, "There's 172 total number of Monks and Knights between level 70-75. Of them, Sister Matcha has the greatest number of points. The second highest is One Second Hero, who has 47% of the number of points. And so, Brother Xiao Yao, you get it....."

I cracked a smile and said, "I'm sorry Yong Jie....."

One Second Hero picked up his long sword, slapped his forehead and said, "Damn, the time that I've spent in the guild has been too short, otherwise how else would there be such a great difference between our guild points. It's no problem, just give it to Matcha. I'll survive. The next Knight type equipment is mine!"

I nodded and said, "Matcha has a total of 270,000 guild points. This Plunderer's Shield is around 140,000 points, so I'll just deduct 140,000 from your points?"

Matcha nodded with a smile, "Alright Boss!"

I took off 140,000 points from Matcha, and handed the shield over to

her. I said, “You still have five levels until you can use this. You should go back to the city to store the equipment, and replenish your potions before coming back!”

Matcha nodded with a wide grin, and carefully put away her shield before turning around and running back to the city. So obedient.

.....

“Hua La.....”

I took out a white cape from my from my bag, it’s radiance was oppressive. The cape was actually a cloak with shoulder guards combined. It looked very formidable. I waved my hand over the equipment, and the stats appeared in the air. At that point, everyone in [Zhan Long] couldn’t close their mouths.

Chapter 384: Hero's Skull

[War Swept Cloak] (Valkyrie Tier)

Defence: 620

Attack: +74

Stamina: +71

Agility: +70

Additional: Increase damage by 11%

Additional: Increase magic resistance by 33%

Special effects: [Ride the Wind], increase movement speed by 15%

Required Level: 75

.....

I donned the [War Swept Cloak] and laughed, "How do I look? Does my orange Valkyrie Tier armor match with my white war cloak?"

Qing Qian pouted her small mouth and said, "Very handsome, you look so complete.."

Li Mu continued, "Damn, the Guild Master is about to take the equipment without even rolling for it. Well, I guess this equipment was bound to be yours; you have the highest level, and possess the most guild points. Hurry up and use your points, I want to see your equipment stats."

I laughed out loud and glanced at my experience bar: Lv 74 with 25% filled. Huge war events really do give large amounts of experience. No wonder my experience bar jumped so quickly, just a bit more and I'll be level 75. I'll soon be able to equip the [War Swept Cloak]. Since I'm not in a rush, I'll just put it back into my inventory.

A war cloak that increases Movement Speed by as significant an amount as 15% is just too hard to come by. The importance of Movement Speed is not to be underestimated, especially when it comes to melee players. Superior movement speed will allow for greater ease when

initiating chases and escaping dangerous situations.

‘Plop!’ The [War Swept Cloak] was placed in my inventory. The third piece of equipment was a gorgeous necklace with a malicious golden skull pendant

[Hero’s Skull] (Valkyrie Tier)

Strength: +72

Stamina: +70

Intelligence: +67

Additional: Increase user attack by 14%

Additional: Increase user Max HP by 1800

Special Effects: [Death’s Determination], When HP falls below 50%, attack increases by 5%. When HP Falls below 20%, attack increases by 10%. When HP Falls below 10%, attack increases by 20%. Effect lasts until the user’s death.

Required Level: 75

.....

“F***....” Ran Min widened his eyes, Th...these stats are just too OP. I love special effects like [Battle Death Will] – the lower your HP, the stronger you get...tsk,tsk.

General Li Mu was in shock, “Damn, looks like I can’t even fight for this too. Ran Min, are you certain you want this necklace?”

Ran Min nodded, “Brother Li Mu, we have the same amount of Guild points, but I really need the necklace. How about this – you give me the necklace, and I’ll... I’ll give you all of Matcha’s three sizes in exchange...”

General Li Mu replied indifferently, “Do you think I’m that type of person? Hmph, lets not talk any further Ran Min, I’ll roll for it til death with you unless you give me the information on all the girls in Zhan Long.

Ran Min slapped his thigh, “Deal, [Hero’s Skull] is mine!”

Qing Qian rolled her eyes, “Why do I feel like I was just sold off?”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and Darling both nodded, “mutual feeling +1....”

.....

Just like this, the transaction concluded. After deducting half of Ran Min’s Guild points, [Hero’s Skull] was transferred into his inventory. All together, after increasing his health points by 1800, Ran Min’s max health totaled to over 7000 HP. Due to the substantial increase in attack as his health decreases, Ran Min thus received a huge upgrade in his offensive power. This will be especially useful in dire straits, as this necklace can give the opportunity to turn the situation around, allowing Ran Min to rampage like a beast, without regard for his HP.

There was still a Guild Creation Tablet, I looked at it and asked, “So what do we do with the Guild Creation Tablet?”

Wang Jian laughed and said, “Xiao Yao Brother, I suggest we use this Guild Creation Tablet to set up Zhan Long Second Division, with that, we do not need to purchase another one from others.”

I thought about it, smiled and replied, “Well then, who do you think is most suitable to be Guild Master of Zhan Long Second Division?”

“I would like to nominate someone” Li Mu replied.

“Who is it?” I asked.

Li Mu smiled, “Fox! His reputation as a Vice Guild Master is pretty good, enough for him to take charge of the logistics. Besides, it’s not necessary for the second division to take charge of our main attack, therefore Fox can lead the second division onto a production path... and finally the most important thing...”

General Li Mu looked down and laughed out, “Damn, our First Division is being led by Wang Jian who originally belongs to us [Valiant Bravery], the Second Division ought to be led by your own [Zhan Long] studio members, this way, the lifeline of [Zhan Long] is in the hands of the 2 of us. Xiao Yao, as long as we do not die, [Zhan Long] will always be [Zhan

Long], it will never walk down the path that leads us to destruction, do you agree?”

I nodded, “Yes, we’ll go with your suggestion – Fox shall be the Guild Master of the Second Division. Today we will set up our second division, in fact, we are already establishing kind of late. A lot of other guilds have already started on their 6th and 7th divisions, how else would they be able to contain tens of thousands of players.”

“OK!”

Fox and I had a private chat and without further ado, Fox removed his Vice Guild Master badge, and took the Guild Creation Tablet as well as some gold to create the guild. Within a few minutes, [Zhan Long: Second Division] was formed after becoming allied to the main guild, but labeling itself as part of the Zhan Long Family. Fox then went on to accept the excess [Zhan Long] members. With at least 100 members in the guild, they could participate in war events and thus receive experience and prizes.

.....

“Ka Cha...”

The ground trembled, in the distance, the huge gates south of Fort Zi Feng opened slowly. 2 giant beasts, that were leashed to metal harnesses and roaring unceasingly, appeared before the gates. A barbarian clad in a set of black armor was whipping the 2 beasts continuously, hurrying them to open the gates. As the heavy gates slowly lifted open, a ray of light shone on what seemed to be a group of fully equipped barbarians holding up axes, lances, bows, and arrows waiting to move out.

“F***...” Li Mu laughed out loud, “Looks like Fort Zi Feng’s neutral area is ready to counter attack.”

“Yes!”

I nodded, turned around, and shouted, “Everybody move out to the front line immediately, get ready to face the barbarians’ rush!”

[Zhan Long]’s members quickly reorganized. As we had lost a lot of

members previously, we needed to reallocate our forces. A long line of melee fighters were on the frontlines, secondary aids were forming up behind, all pets were ready for battle. Over 3700 [Zhan Long] members immediately reorganized their formation. [Prague], who were always one step ahead, for once, paled in comparison.

Dead bodies of residents from Ba Huang City were hanging on the walls. A barbarian was even holding onto a freshly decapitated head dripping with blood, throwing it down the wall as he laughed loudly, “Do you ants from Ba Huang City really think that you would be able to penetrate the thick walls of Fort Zi Feng? Dream on! Luo Lei, if I were you, I would return to Ba Huang City and prepare 8000 beauties to present to Fort Zi Fen; at least you can still enjoy a prosperous life as the the Northeast Border King.”

From afar, Duke Luo Lei was trembling, he suddenly unsheathed his sword and shouted, “Ba Huang City, continue to attack! I doubt these barbarians can withstand our oppression. Set up our catapults to destroy their fortress, calvary, get ready to attack! Forgotten Sea, Dragon City force, get ready to move out, protect your honor as our trump cards!

Amongst the crowd, a young warrior holding onto a giant blade said, “My Lord, don’t worry, I will definitely subdue this city, if not I’ll present my head to you”

This was none other than Ba Huang City’s first division commander, Forgotten Sea, who could be one of the strongest NPCs in Ba Huang City.

.....

“Boom!”

The gates were fully opened. From within Fort Zi Feng, a dense crowd of barbarians could be seen rushing out and forming a line outside the fort, getting ready to counter attack. They were all panting heavily, their bloodshot eyes filled with malice as they stared at the human army ahead of them. They were prepared for war. Showing no signs of fear, since they were, after all, barbarians. Since birth, this had been their nature.

“For the King!”

A barbarian raised his halberd and shouted, “For the pride of us barbarians, charge ahead, smash these ignorant humans, flatten them! Let us rise above this continent, and show those that despise us who is the true king!”

A group of barbarians roared as they charged, waving their polearms and swords. A flood of barbarians could be seen forcing their way towards the front, ground trembling as they moved.

With a glance, I spoke in the guild chat, “Dark Barbarians, Lv 80 monsters, basic attack 2700-2900. Health 16,000. Skills: [Axe Rush] and [Skyslaker Slash]. Brothers at the frontline please be careful during defense and offense. Avoid colliding with big groups of barbarians, you really will die. Alright, let the battle begin! Archers, get ready to shoot! Slow their attacking speed to interrupt their attacking rhythm while the rest of the other classes prioritize skills with status effects; Those that can slow them, slow them while those with skills that Weaken, cast them!”

Before I even finished talking, [Scattered Shot]s, [Pillar of Fire & Ice]s and other skills already flew out from the [Zhan Long] group. “Pu pu pu” they fell upon the group of barbarians while I dashed 10 yards forward as the sole player leading the frontline. By attracting much of the attacks, I was able to lessen the amount pressure on the frontline. Of course, my main goal was to get some experience so I could level up to 75. That way I could equip the Lv 75 Valkyrie Tier cloak. Ever since I’ve started playing this game, I’ve never equipped a white cloak before. This would be the first time. I wonder how handsome I will look.

Using Dong Cheng’s words — There’s no point in looking so sharp as long as you’re sufficiently handsome.

.....

“Boom!”

My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] cut through the crowd of Dark Barbarians. With a flick of my wrist, I activated [Soul Army] and [Black Tortoise Realm] around me; doing my best to decrease the barrage of

attacks. Reaching behind me, I unsheathed my Cold Iron Sword and sliced forward several times. With the support of my Flaming Tiger God, I cut down one barbarian. Indeed, this scum had godly strength and a lot of health, but their defense was just average.

“Peng peng peng.....”

Behind me, a team of barbarians rammed against our [Zhan Long] frontline. Everyone did their best to hold their positions. In the distance, [Blood Contract] and [Enemies at the Gate] had also successively organized a front to resist the oncoming forces

I violently thrust my sword forward, then glanced at the dashboard for the City War statistics. The top ten players with the most city war points were listed. As expected, I had already placed among the top ten—

1. Fang Ge Que [Points 1737380]
2. Simple [Points 1673770]
3. Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Points 1652930]
4. Bai Li Ruo Feng [1562660]
5. Jian Feng Han [Points 1342880]
6. Mu Xuan [Points 1294870]
7. Ye Lai [Points 1242770]
8. Lu Chun Yang [Points 1182720]
9. General Li Mu [Points 994770]
10. Old K [Points 974720]

Chapter 385: Sowing Discord

Fang Ge Que used several AOE skills as usual to run up his score. Meanwhile, Simple became the person with the highest score from Ba Huang City since [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Legend] all had conflicts during the City Battle. Simple probably managed to cut down quite a few people, but she still couldn't manage to be as brutal as Fang Ge Que. Even as a top tier Mage herself, there was too much of a disparity between the two.

It was within expectations that long distance players like Bai Li Ruo Feng and Mu Xuan managed to collect many points in this city war. As for close combat players, I came in on top. Jian Feng Han, Ye Lai and Lu Chun Yang came afterwards. What gave me the greatest joy was seeing Li Mu and Old K both on the rankings as well. In such a large scale event where hundreds of guilds were participating, [Zhan Long] managed to get three people into the top ten places. It was practically a miracle!

All in all, of the top ten rankings, Ba Huang City took five places while Jiu Li City took the remaining five. There was definitely much more to this battle, and we were so evenly matched that it would definitely take a while before we got to the end!

On top of the Fort Zi Feng wall, a line of energetic barbarians began pounding their war drums. As the drums rang through the air, they began to energize the numerous barbarian soldiers at the foot of the wall who charged out to attack. However, a loud drum doesn't necessarily mean a strong army; the Ba Huang City players coordinated with the NPC army as they rigidly held their formations. The rest racked up kills with auxiliary support from the back.

.....

“Ka cha!”

With a swing, I cut down a barbarian soldier, getting a card at the same time. It was a “Barbarian Soldier Card” and raised critical damage by 15%. It seemed pretty good, since my attack was already high enough, another

15% increase to my critical attacks would be extremely advantageous. Besides, my full suit of Valkyrie and Emperor Tier equipment added three points to all of my stats, that would mean that my agility would have an overall increase of 300+ points. These agility points could also increase my critical by 20%. Adding 15% to that would give me an almost 40% boost in critical damage. That meant that practically every two hits would result in critical damage. The effects would be extremely great!

“Shua!”

Once I used the card, I raised my sword and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Consequently, a group of barbarian soldiers cried out as several high damage numbers flew out—

“9754 ! ”

“4879 ! ”

“10058 ! ”

“10078 ! ”

.....

When One Second Hero saw this, he was stunned and exclaimed, “Eh... Aren’t those attacks from Guild Master just a little too much? With that one slash, he practically dealt 300,000 damage. That’s way too OP.....”

Wang Jian laughed out and said, “If you get some barbarian cards then you should use it as well! The effect is pretty awesome. That 15% critical boost is actually pretty terrifying. Li Mu and I have both used it already, and we have risen into the rankings as a result!”

“Got it!” One Second Hero continued to spam kill the monsters.

Qing Qian gripped her daggers as she darted around the front line, killing barbarians one after another. She put forth all her energy, activating [Grip of the Firefox] and [Flame Beacon] frequently. The barbarian soldiers basically couldn’t fight back at all against this beautiful Assassin’s attacks. There was a reason for Qian Qian’s determination. Before the battle, we made a deal that during this City

War battle, whoever got the highest number of city war points would be considered as having given a contribution to the guild, and so that's why Qing Qian has been so determined in killing the monsters. Her completely determined face would melt any heart.

Old K and Li Mu fearlessly charged forward as the monsters left standing before[Zhan Long] decreased more and more. Numerous monsters soon became scattered teams, as the dead barbarians became experience, equipment, and other rewards. I was very satisfied, to see that my efforts in establishing [Zhan Long Hall] had not gone to waste, and that this function was truly helping the guild. The rewards from killing the monsters only incited more competition between the elite of [Zhan Long] as it was a rare honor to be able to enter [Zhan Long Hall], and everyone was doing their best to achieve that.

.....

Close to two hours of fighting, we had successfully repelled the barbarians time and time again. In the beginning, we lost a few of our brothers because our formation hadn't stabilized yet. But after fighting for an hour, we practically suffered zero loses while our experience skyrocketed. Finally, under a golden ray of light, I had risen from Lv 74 to Lv 75. I finally met the requirements for using the battle cape!

"Damn, Brother Xiao Yao is finally Lv 75!" Qing Qian looked over and smiled, "Soon, soon. You should put on the cape and show everyone! It'll definitely be very hot!"

"Got it!"

I was also very impatient, as I pulled the off Cloak of Disillusionment, and donned the War Swept Cloak. "Ka La," the snow white cape on my back fluttered. A violet-gold armor plate gradually formed on my shoulders, displaying an imposing spiral blade edge. Adding onto the luster of my bright orange armor, the impression I gave off had changed drastically.

"Ehhh...."

Matcha was in a daze; a pair of beautiful eyes looked on with

amazement, before turning around and lowering her head as her cheeks flushed.

Song Han exclaimed, "Matcha Sis, why are you blushing?"

Matcha stroked her blade handle, pouting as she shyly replied, "Ahwoo... Boss is so dashing...."

Song Han, "...."

Yue Qing Qian and Dancing Forest both nodded in unison, "Y..Yes.. so handsome...."

Li Mu laughed out loud, "Xiao Yao, the important thing is that your attributes should have increased a lot. Afterall, it's a Lv 75 Valkyrie Tier equipment..."

I nodded and looked at the attributes. Seeing my stats, they were indeed mind-blowing. I smiled and announced: "Health 8005, Defense 3448, Attack 3157-4231, Mana 2746. Anything you wish to comment on?"

Li Mu was speechless, "What more can I say? This armor is just too sick...Even I believe that my own equipment was already strong; after all, it's one of the top in Ba Huang City: Health 6100, Defense 2659, Attack 2431-3667, Mana 1740.. but how could our attributes have such a big difference... Especially the defense. If you are an Iron plate, I'm just paper...."

Dancing Forest widen her eyes and said, "Don't be like this, with a defense of 2659 you claim to be paper, how about my defense of just 1600, it just makes me not want to live anymore....."

Wang Jian smiled, "Alright, because Brother Xiao Yao has the strongest attributes, from now on we can just hand over everything for him to deal with!"

I grinned, "OK, let's continue to finish up these barbarians, we should be getting the next mission after this!"

"OK!"

.....

In a blink of an eye, another hour passed. The group of barbarians had all been cut down. The gates were flooded with corpses, and the City War had been going on for 7 hours. People were getting tired as Fort Zi Feng's gates were closing. Defense officers held onto their heavy swords and growled, "Close the gates. Nightfall is approaching, we need to survive through the night. We'll start fighting tomorrow morning! If anyone attempts a raid, properly receive them with our arrows!"

"Yes, your honor!"

On the fort, numerous barbarians were ready with their bow in hand, eyes full of killing intent.

.....

"Keng!"

Lifting my hands, I placed my Emperor Qin's Sword back to its sheath. I lifted my head to observe the situation, and turned around to face a ground full of tired Zhan Long players, "Li Mu, it's already 7pm, let's have everybody go offline and take a break? Let them have their meals and chat for a bit. Killing monsters and PKing at such a high rate is just making everyone tired, we should be ready for a fierce battle around midnight."

Li Mu nodded, "Ok, let's do just that, so shall all of [Zhan Long] go offline?"

"Yes! Ba Huang City army of 100,000 wouldn't be affected by a mere 3000 of us going off ! Let me go to [Prague], [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon] and inform them!"

"OK!"

Li Mu went offline to deal with the matters. I took my Flaming Tiger God, and went to the eastern part of the city. From afar, a few large guilds were preparing for combat. I began to walk forward. Seeing me, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Soaring Dragon, Tyrant of Western Chu, and Wang Ze Cheng also brought their people and walked towards me. The large groups of people met one another.

“What’s the current status?” I asked

Jian Feng Han frowned, “ Not too good, [Legend]’s strength is too powerful. Even with our [Vanguard] joining with [Prague], we did not manage to get the upperhand. Adding in [House of Prestige] flanking us and [Appearance Alliance]’s sudden surprise attack, our [Vanguard] has lost 65% of our effectiveness now, [Prague] is the same. We can only rely on the small guilds to fight some of their players. We must save our effectiveness for later on to counter our current decline. Although Fang Ge Que isn’t too smart, a master like him would not be baited so easily.”

I looked up into the sky as the waning moon began to rise and took a deep breath, “[Zhan Long] will log off first and take a rest. [Enemies At the Gate] and [Blood Contract] should do the same. Everyone else should look after Ba Huang City. Don’t make any rash decisions. Now that night has fallen, the big guilds from Jiu Li City will probably maintain their current strength. If we were to make any sudden movements, they might ambush us. There’s only so many guilds from Ba Huang City, losing even a single one is a significant loss.”

Yan Zhao followed up, “Yup, we know. Come back soon [Zhan Long]. We still need you to defend the southwest side of the fort!”

Wang Ze Cheng smirked, “That’s right, how many of [Zhan Long]’s players are even left?”

I rubbed my chin and said, “Around 3500+.”

At that point, the Vice Guild Master next to Wang Ze Cheng, Windy Walker, laughed out and said, “The rumored undefeated [Zhan Long] only has 3500 left? Hahaha, what a joke. They don’t even have as many people left as our [Hero’s Mound: First Division]! That’s just hilarious!”

“You better shut the f*ck up right now!” I glared at him.

Yan Zhao growled out, “Cang Cheng, you better reign in your subordinates! What do you know, Windy Walker? Even though [Zhan Long] doesn’t have many men, I, Yan Zhao Warrior, know that these 3500 men under Xiao Yao have the strength of 35000 men. With just 5000 men, they had the courage to take on [Judgement] and [House of Prestige]

who have formations of over 30,000. Does [Hero's Mound: First Division] have that kind of courage? If you don't then you better shut up quick. What we need right now at the front lines are warriors, not scum who try to spread discord!"

Wang Ze Cheng hesitated for a second, before smiling and saying, "Yea, alright. Windy Walker's words were rather senseless. Guild Master Yan Zhao, please don't get angry. Think of it as a favor to me, and [Hero's Mound]. In the next battle, we, [Hero's Mound: First Division] will use our all to continuously advance and defend. We'll definitely reserve no force!"

"Yeah, That would be good!"

.....

I nodded, "Alright, then I wish you all a safe journey. I'm logging off!"

After bringing up the system dashboard, I logged off to rest!

Chapter 386: Change in Tactics

After logging off, I began feeling hot all over. I sat up on the bed and numbly looked at my arm. Using my Yi Hai, I could see the aura surging through my arteries, but I kept feeling as though I couldn't control this energy, a feeling that I never had before. Could it be that relentlessly battling in the game caused my energy to go out of control.

My arm suddenly shook fiercely as the white aura swirled around and scattered. I took a deep breath and forcefully suppressed the violent aura, allowing my body to calm down. I turned around and looked at the other bed. Glasses Bro was still in the game twitching. He should be in a very intense battle right now, but with his skills, he probably wouldn't last the first 24 hours before he's gets killed. That thought made me feel a little better.

After taking a quick cold shower, I called Wan Er. She was currently in the game and her voice sounded rushed: "Li Xiao Yao, you're offline?"

"Yeah, Zhan Long is currently regrouping. Wan Er, do you and Dong Cheng have time to get offline and get something to eat?"

"Wait for me, the Fort Yuan Ling BOSS is really strong. Give us 5 minutes. We'll log off when we finish the BOSS.

"Okay, I'll wait at the entrance."

"Okay!"

.....

After waiting outside the girl's dorms for awhile, Wan Er and Dong Cheng finally came down. Tang Qi also meandered over from the boy's dorm in the 7th building. He was carrying four cups of milk tea over and he laughed, saying, "Here, drink some first! Everyone has been working hard!"

I took the milk tea cups and distributed them amongst the two girls, then asked, "What's the situation like in Fan Shu City? It's pretty fun battling against the NPC army right?"

Wan Er nodded and said, "In terms of obtaining equipments, Fan Shu players are getting it easy. There are at least 10 Valkyrie Tier BOSSES in Fort Yuan Ling, and over 30 Emperor Tier BOSSES. It's only been 7 hours, and we've already killed five Emperor Tier BOSSES and two Valkyrie Tier ones. The only problem is that we've also suffered great losses. The NPCs' levels are just too high. Sometimes, they're practically crushing us. If it wasn't for the Fan Shu City NPC army helping us battle, we might've already been annihilated...."

I was stunned, "You've already killed two Valkyrie Tier BOSSES? How come you're so lucky.... You must've gotten quite a few high quality equipment right?"

Dong Cheng giggled, "Actually, Q-Sword only got a Valkyrie Tier armor and Wan Er got a Superior Valkyrie Tier dagger that has an attack that's a little higher than your Cold Iron Sword. Now, all of her normal attacks deal at least 3000 damage. It's so overpowering it's scary..."

I was speechless. When I finally recovered I said, "Wow, I should hide whenever I see Wan Er from now on....."

Wan Er shook her fist and said, "Why do you need to hide from me!"

I laughed and took a step back before asking, "Wan Er, what should we eat?"

"Let's eat some western food, it'll be faster."

"Alright! Dong Cheng's paying!"

Stunned, Dong Cheng opened her small mouth, "Why am I paying? Isn't Sister* the one who usually freeloads?"

TL Note: She referring to herself

I pointed at Tang Qi, "Because you're bringing this one!"

Dong Cheng gritted her teeth, "Tang Qi! You..."

Tang Qi quickly smiled apologetically, "Miss, I'll do anything to pay you back. Just don't get angry. I can't win against Li Xiao Yao, so we can't offend him right now....."

Dong Cheng glared at me with her beautiful eyes, then grabbed my arm and said, "What do you mean by 'we'? I'm with Brother Xiao Yao, you're on your own....."

Tang Qi facepalmed, "Damn, why do I get this urge to kill myself. Why don't we go eat already. Otherwise, I'm afraid a poisonous energy will attack my heart and kill me."

.....

Going into the school dining hall, we filled the table up with steaks and salads amongst other things.

Tang Qi stared at me as I sat next to Wan Er. I couldn't help but smile, "Tang Qi, you bastard, what are you looking at? Do you want to eat me up or something?"

Tang Qi was speechless. Finally, he said, "No way, I can't even defeat you..."

Wan Er rubbed her lips and smiled, "I heard that the Tang sect in Si Chuan is an expert in poisons. You wouldn't feed Li Xiao Yao any poison to kill him, would you?"

Tang Qi's face turned green, "No way..... Definitely not? I'm not that kind of person...."

I smiled, "Wan Er, don't worry. Using poison is enough to land him 50 years in prison!"

"That....." Tang Qi grinned and said, "Why don't we just happily eat. All this talk is making me sweat. Look, I was born under the red flag and I'm a beautiful young man who lived a happy childhood, how could I ever do something like that? Unless Li Xiao Yao does something to miss Dong Cheng, I would never do something like that...."

Dong Cheng squinted her eyes, "Oh? What could Li Xiao Yao do to me?"

Tang Qi suddenly became awkward and rubbed his nose, "For example, if Xiao Yao were to take miss Dong Cheng to a hotel outside of the school behind Wan Er's back, and thus sully the mistress, then I would definitely

not let him get away with that!”

Dong Cheng exclaimed, “Would he?”

Wan Er also stared at me, “Yea, Xiao Yao, would you?”

I calmly cut into the steak and looked up at the three of them as I grinned, “I would’ve done it earlier if I wanted to....”

Tang Qi was speechless.

In a few seconds, Dong Cheng’s face grew red from the embarrassment as she finally said, “Then exactly when would you do it?”

“噗.....”林婉儿喝着果汁喷了。

“Pu....” Wan Er gulped down some juice after choking on her food.

.....

After we quickly ate our dinner, it was getting close to end of the 2 hours rest period. I recovered in my bed for a bit, and quietly raised my qi as I silently chanted the incantation for Flying Swordplay. Only when I felt that strange wild energy in my heart calm down did I finally log on. It must have been from battling so fiercely for such a long time that I lost control over the flow of my qi, otherwise, something like this would never had happened. In actuality, whether or not a game like [Destiny] would increase the mind’s mental capabilities was up for debate. Either way, I wouldn’t understand the esoteric effects of the psychology, but, there had to be some reason the old geezer decided to participate in making this game. I know him too well. If there wasn’t a good enough reason for him to do so, the geezer would never lift a finger. If he worked on this game then I would have to truly work hard in order to get the true benefits from playing it.

Game Start!

“Shua!”

I appeared on the southern side of Fort Zi Feng. The armies that came from Ba Huang City were currently fiercely attacking the wall. The axe bearer at the front was General Luo Jian. With one hand, he swung his

Frost Battle Axe, and massacred several barbarians under the wall. The battle axe emanated frost as it danced on the battlefield. With one look and I could tell it wasn't any old normal equipment. In the character introduction, this Luo Qian was Ba Huang City's Duke Luo Lei's twin, and the battle axe in his hand was a godly weapon – Ice Demon. It was the only other godly weapon in the seven great armies of Ba Huang City besides Angela's own weapon. The two of them made up Ba Huang City's Two Godly Weapons.

The NPC army continued their siege for a while longer and it seemed pointless to keep watching. The sky began turning white in the east as dawn approached. I slowly pulled out the Emperor Qin's sword from my back. Just as I was about to join in the battle, I suddenly saw Li Mu, Wang Jian and a few other players come dashing over from the west. Li Mu shouted as he was sprinting at me, "Xiao Yao, we've got a problem! The players in Ba Huang City are being massacred!"

"What's the situation?"

"Look at the battlefield in the east!"

With lightning speed, I leapt up and climbed a large tree. As I looked into the distance from the high branches, I noticed that in the East, the Hell's Core Plains were basically painted in blood. Corpses littered the ground as dust blew into the air. You could tell that someone laid destruction upon the field, and at least 70% of the bodies on the ground were players from Ba Huang City and many of them were from [Prague] and [Vanguard]!

"Exactly what happened?" I hesitantly asked as I pointed to the East.

Li Mu gritted his teeth and raised his longsword, "In the 2 hours that we had been offline, [Hero's Mound: First Division] and [Thousand Burial] went against everyone's objections and rashly provoked all of the small Ba Huang City guilds. They gathered together 300,000 men to form a square formation, and ambushed the Jiu Li City army on the northern side of the fort. However, they were discovered by [Legend], [House of Prestige], [Judgement] and [Appearance Alliance]. Those guilds then got

together, and crushed the force. It was as easy as crushing ants. Unable to take the injustice, [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Flying Dragon] sent reinforcements to help, but ended up falling for a trap and were annihilated in a forest near Moonlight Forest. They were ambushed in a low basin. The big guilds suffered losses of 50% and up. Motherf*cker, it's rumored that even Simple was killed!"

*Editor note If Simple was massacred also you know you suck at strategizing

"What? Simple, she...she was killed?" I was shocked. I looked at the score rankings. Indeed, Simple's points hadn't risen in a long time. She really had been killed!

.....

"Boss, what should we do?" General Wang Jian clenched his fist, "If we let them keep this up, then all of Ba Huang City's players will be killed. How.... how are we supposed to fight the City Battle like that?!"

I furrowed my brows and stared at Hell's Core for a long time. Finally, I jumped off the big tree and looked up before saying, "Let's draw up some battle plans first. We have to destroy some of the big guilds in Jiu Li City, or else everything really will be over for us!"

"How do we crush them?" Li Mu asked.

In a somber voice I said, "Like this. I'll make a 10 man party, and invite all of the Guild Masters of each of Ba Huang City major guilds. From there, we'll make our battle plans!"

"Okay!"

After creating the team, I immediately sent out the invitations, asking all of the Guild Masters of Ba Huang City's major guilds to join. Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Misty Clouds, Soaring Dragon, Tyrant of Western Chu, and Han Bei Song were among the ones I invited.

.....

"Shua shua shua" the system sounded each time a Guild Master joined

the party. A group of Guild Master ranked players joined into my party. At that moment, none of the Guild Masters could refuse my invitation. The battle situation had fallen to such a terrible state. Ba Huang City had suffered such harsh losses that our forces only equaled to 50% of Jiu Li City's forces. If we kept going down this path then we would definitely be annihilated. The other Guild Masters began the discussion—

Yan Zhao, "Damn, that was terrible. Whoever is commanding Jiu Li City is despicable. To think that they'd even use a baiting tactic. When the hell did they hide in the forest, how come we didn't get any information about them? What the hell were our scouts doing!"

Jian Feng Han, "Sigh, even Big Sister died...."

TL Note: I almost feel sad for JFH lol

Tyrant of the Western Chu, "Our [Wrath of the Heroes] only has 2000+ people left. Li Xiao Yao, you didn't come until after the battle was over, it's too late...."

I sincerely said, "At least you all haven't died yet. That means it's not over just yet. Why don't you all report your remaining number?"

Yan Zhao said, "[Prague] has around 5500 men who can still fight!"

Jian Feng Han, "[Vanguard] still has 7000...."

Soaring Dragon, "[Flying Dragon] has 9000 left...."

Misty Cloud, "Our [Enemies at the Gate] managed to stay fairly complete. We still have 11000+ men left. [Blood Contract] still had 3000+ people, same as [Zhan Long]. All together, we have around 50,000 men. That should be enough to fight, right?"

Tyrant of Western Chu miserably said, "We had around 400,000 men before, and we were still defeated. What can 50,000 do?"

Yan Zhao said, "Li Xiao Yao, you brought us all over, does this mean you have some kind of a plan?"

I nodded, "Yup!"

Jian Feng Han, "What plan? Out with it!"

I smiled, “A strange man’s methods can bite a strange man back. We’ll also use a baiting tactic. I looked at the geography of the map and to the south of Hell’s Core there’s a Bowl Valley. All of your guilds that are being chased after, why don’t you bring the Jiu Li armies to that map. [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] will bring a group of other small guilds to ambush them there, and destroy some of the main forces of Jiu Li City first!”

Soaring Dragon gave a cold smile, “The people of Jiu Li City aren’t fools. They have spies in all of our guilds. That baiting tactic is much easier said than done. Can you even trick a deadman with this clumsy tactic?”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Strategies aren’t alive, but men are. The art of war is based on tricks. Did I said that we were just baiting the enemy? Listen to me so we still have a chance of recovering this battle! [Vanguard], have the people who are chasing after you go along the border of Hell’s Core, and head towards Bowl Valley. [Prague], bring the people chasing after you through Pear Blossom Mountain, and retreat into the north. [Blood Contract] will meet you at 38177, 13883 and ambush them from there. [Zhan Long] and [Enemies at the Gate] will flank them from both sides. If we time this correctly, then at five o’clock sharp we’ll turn around and strike. You’ll notice that the meeting places are all in Bowl Valley. We can surround the enemy when they least expect it. We’ll use these maneuvers to confuse the enemy, that way, we might be able to fight a winning battle!”

“F*ck.....”

Yan Zhao took a deep breath and softly muttered, “Li Xiao Yao, what the hell do you do normally?”

I couldn’t help but smile, “I play strategy games. My old ID was Brother Xiao Yao in Country Battles. If you don’t believe me then just check it out!”

Chapter 387: Battle Against [Dao Jian Xuan]

Jian Feng Han's expression became determined. He lifted his longsword and growled, "Alright. [Vanguard] will trust you this one time and follow your battle strategy. Now get ready to carry it out!"

Yan Zhao Warrior nodded in agreement, "Okay. Then it's decided. Let's wait for the fish to take the bait!"

Misty Clouds replied as well, "Yeah. [Enemy at the Gate]'s 11,000 elites await your command."

I nodded, "That's great! Then we'll act according to the plan. Give me some time to gather the [Zhan Long] members together."

"Okay!"

.....

In the distance at Hell's Core, clouds of dust began to billow as the sounds of killing shook heaven and earth. [Prague] and [Vanguard] both began cruising through the plain, luring the enemies in circles. Yan Zhao Warrior and Jian Feng Han were both intelligent men. If we fought according to plan, they shouldn't encounter any major problems.

[House of Prestige], [Judgment], [Appearance Alliance], [Diao Jian Xuan], and [Moonlit Lake] each began to chase down their respective targets, each in formations of over ten thousand men, ready to strike. During this phase of the war, anyone with less than 1000 men in their teams would definitely not have the courage to leave the protection of their respective NPC army.

In this virtual world, the brutality of war was laid bare before us.

"What do we do now?"

Li Mu held his sword and asked, "Since we already have a plan, should we go and set up an ambush at Bowl Valley?"

"Don't....." I hastily said, "That's too obvious, we can't set up any

ambushes there. Given Jiu Li City's great size, there must also be many smart people out there. Even if the pursuing armies are swollen with victory that doesn't necessarily mean they won't see through our battle plans. I am thinking that we should set up ambushes in the thick shrubbery and thorny undergrowth around Bowl Valley to confuse them. The players of Jiu Li City will definitely be confused. That way, they would never be able to guess that we would set the battle in Bowl Valley!"

Li Mu nodded, "Okay!"

Wang Jian smiled, "This is the first time I've felt like we've taken the initiative in battle. Brother Xiao Yao, what's next? What should we do?"

"Gather the troops. We will pursue and kill the small teams from Jiu Li City, and slowly advance towards Bowl Valley. We're setting the time of battle to be an hour from now. Li Mu, go make the arrangements with all of the Guild Masters of the super guilds. Tell them: in one hour, that is, tonight at 10:20pm, every force must cross into Bowl Valley. This is the first decisive battle between the players from Ba Huang City and the players from Jiu Li City. Li Mu, you take Wang Jian, Qing Qian and Wolf to gather the troops. I am going to trick the members of the remaining small guilds into becoming the troops responsible for misleading the enemies!"

"Yes. Alright!"

.....

Sheathing my Emperor Qin's Sword, I ran forward towards the South Gate of Fort Zi Feng. A hoard of players from Ba Huang City were gathering at the gates to provide nominal aid to the NPC army attacking the city. In actuality, they were forced there by Jiu Li City's powerful attack and oppression; they had no choice but to seek the protection of the NPC army.

Raising my arm, I yelled loudly at the crowds, "Brothers from Ba Huang City, do you actually want to just sit here and wait for death? Once [Legend], [Judgement], [House of Prestige], and the other guilds from Jiu Li City annihilate [Zhan Long], [Vanguard] and [Prague], their next target

will be all of you. They will crush every single one of you along with the seven big armies of Ba Huang City and we will lose this City War. As men, are you all just going to hole up here?"

The group of people stared at me blankly and I smiled and shouted, "Players with the rank of Guild Master, please come to me. We, [Zhan Long], have a request that I hope you will agree to!"

Soon, dozens of Guild Masters stepped out and more kept coming forward. Not long after, fifty seven of them were assembled around me. The fact so many people responded to my call proved that [Zhan Long]'s reputation in Ba Huang City was extremely good, otherwise it was possible that nobody would come forth. Of course, it was more likely due to the fact that I claimed third place in the [Rise of Heroes] Tournament, only ranked below Fang Ge Que and Cang Tong, that people came. I had reached the pinnacle of popularity, so much that people thought of me as the top player of Ba Huang city.

.....

"Speak, Guild Master Xiao Yao. What do you want us to do?" An axe wielding player with a big beard patted his chest and said, "No one here is afraid of death, but we have no desire to join the team battles on the plain. That is a battle destined to fail. There's no point in us joining. I do not wish to see my brothers go on a suicide mission."

With a nod, I said, "Actually, the thing we want you guys to do is very simple. [Zhan Long], [Prague], [Vanguard], [Enemies At The Gate], and the other major guilds have organized a battle plan to counterattack, and we need your to help with an ambush. I hope that all of you will participate. The plan is for you all to divide into four teams, prepare an ambush in four different locations on the west side of Fort Zi Feng, and wait for the opportunity to strike. Once the people from Jiu Li City arrive, immediately attack. If they don't come, you guys are at least troops deployed to mislead the enemy."

The big beard nodded, "Okay, can you tell us the locations of ambush?"

I laid out a big map, pointed at the four red dots on the map and said

“Here. It’s a thorn forest that can hide around 20,000-50,000 people. The first team will go there. There’s a lowlying basin that can hide around 10,000 men. The second team will go over there. Here we have a very vast area full of shrubbery that would have no problem in hiding 100,000 people. At least 50,000 men should be dispatched to control the situation of the war at this location. The last location is here, at the border of this body of water. Send 10,000-20,000 men to hide among the reeds and wait to ambush. Remember these four sets of coordinates. As for the method of attack, you guys plan it yourselves; I have to go direct [Zhan Long]. Everyone, do your best, even if it’s not for Ba Huang City, at least do it for a thrilling battle in this city war!

“Alright!” Big beard and the group of Guild Masters nodded and it was settled.

.....

I friended Big Beard and the Guild Masters of a few main guilds. Roughly estimating, in addition to these guilds ambushing at the four areas, Ba Huang City has invested in this plan a total force of more than 200,000 men. Fighting against [Legend], [Judgement], and [House Of Prestige] with this number of troops, they should be honored that we gave them so much face. Of course, only if everything goes smoothly.

Carrying the Emperor Qin’s Sword, I returned to [Zhan Long]’s position. The 3500 members of [Zhan Long] were already in their formations. Many people that just got online were bewildered and had no idea of the current in-game situation. I stepped on a small soil mound, lifted my Emperor Qin’s Sword and shouted, “Everyone, quiet for a moment!”

Hearing my command, the crowd quickly quieted. I pointed towards the east with my sword and said, “There in the Moonlight Forest, our Ba Huang City’s [Vanguard], [Prague], and other super guilds were besieged. We lost half of our power, tilting the balance entirely towards Jiu Li City in the City War. However, we cannot give up, not until the last second. No one can predict who will win this war! Next, all of [Zhan Long] advance to the frontline. Strive with all your effort and attack with me! ‘Clear’ every blockage in our path!”

Li Mu drew his sword, "Prepare for battle!"

The multitudes all drew out their weapons, got into formation and immediately set off!

.....

The formation spread out, and 3500 people went forward with great strength and vigor. Li Mu and Old K led their teams and rushed at the forefront, speedily crushing a few hundred-man teams from Jiu Li City. Small formations, like hundred-man teams, would not be able to withstand even a few minutes before getting annihilated.

After crossing through the plains, forests, hills, and shrubbery began to appear in front of us. This junction between Jiu Li City and Ba Huang City had a complicated topography and would cause this battle to become even more confusing.

"Boss!"

Sister Matcha soared in the sky, pointing at the south with her sword and exclaimed, "Quick, look! There's a group of people pursuing and killing our Ba Huang City's people. The ones being pursued seem to be either a hundred or two-hundred man team from [Wrath of the Heroes]. The pursuers are.....err, Jiu Li City's guild, [Dao Jian Xuan] with around 2000 men in total!"

I gnashed my teeth and said, [Dao Jian Xuan] is the guild ranked five in Jiu Li City. All of [Zhan Long], attack with me and crush them! Notify the [Wrath of the Heroes]'s team of a hundred men to stop running and defend from where they stand. Tell them, also, to stay and wait to make a simultaneous frontal and rear assault in conjunction with us. I will lead 1000 of [Zhan Long]'s men and attack from the front, while Li Mu will lead 1000 men from [Valiant Bravery] to attack from the left. Wang Jian will lead a troop of another 1000 men from our first division in an attack from the right. It's best we annihilate them as quickly as possible. The most elite forces of [Dao Jian Xuan] should be located here. Report the location coordinates of [Dao Jian Xuan]'s Guild Master at all times and kill him first!"

Li Mu and Wang Jian nodded their heads together, “Heh, Understood!”

The [Zhan Long] team rapidly separated into three parts, looking like the Emperor of the Sea, Neptune’s trident, with me as the sharpest and tallest point. I held up my sword with both hands and charged fiercely at the forefront while my Flaming Tiger God roared and followed me closely. Behind me, Old K, Wolf, Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, and the other elites of [Zhan Long] rushed forward together!

“Attack!”

The killing sounds that shook the heavens echoed through the air. The players of [Dao Jian Xuan] stood still, and started preparing their defenses. Amid the crowds, a Lv 70 Knight holding his spear proudly spoke, “It’s the entire forces of [Zhan Long]. Ha Ha, [Dao Jian Xuan] has good luck. We actually encountered [Zhan Long], the bone that is difficult to gnaw. Brothers, Ba Huang City’s fighting spirit has been broken by our merciless massacre. Go, and butcher these homeless dogs. Even if it’s [Zhan Long], we will still tear them into pieces!”

It wasn’t a nobody, but the Vice Guild Master of [Dao Jian Xuan]—Iron Courage!

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao!” Yue Qing Qian darted forward while smiling, “I will rush in front later and stun Iron Courage, and use [Combo] + skills to kill him instantly. Humph, humph. Charging so close. He totally wants to die!”

“Yeah!” I nodded. True enough, [Dao Jian Xuan] had become arrogant with victory. Rushing here like this was truly suicidal!

“Shua!”

Qing Qian suddenly increased her speed using the skill, [Absolute Step], and her whole body was as fast as a phantom. I immediately used [Haste] and dashed forward along with her. Two shadows, one speedy and one slow, swept across. Yue Qing Qian’s meticulousness in her controls was extremely shocking. “Pa” the sound of the leather shoes dragging a long

line on the grassland was heard as Yue Qing Qian suddenly moved away in a zigzag pattern, dodging Iron Courage's attack. With a swing of her dagger, the skill, [Gouge], appeared while she slid behind Iron Courage and thrust twice, adding another [Back Stab]!

I lifted my sword and rushed forward. Before Iron Courage recovered from the [Stun], my combo skills burst out and both of my swords slashed continuously. In just one round, Iron Courage's health instantly dropped to the bottom!

“Pa Da.....”

Falling to the ground on his knees, Iron Courage glared with widening eyes. He absolutely did not expect himself to be killed so quickly and violently.

Chapter 388: Boar Forest

Lowering my body slightly, I darted 5 yards forward as the brilliance of the sword enveloped me. The strike of the skill, [Blade Rush], was so quick that the Vice Guild Master of [Dao Jian Xuan] had already fallen on the ground on his knees when I swept past. His body hardened and his soul was released. The iron lance in his hand was propped on the grassland, while he knelt there dejectedly and died.

“Charge! Give up on defending, and tear them apart first! Kill them over and over again and break [Dao Jian Xuan]’s defense!”

As I was rushing and attacking, I shouted in the [Zhan Long] guild chat channel, “Li Mu and Wang Jian, give up on the defensive attack. We don’t have many people left, and the same goes for them. A purely offensive fighting style is more beneficial to us!”

“Okay!”

On the flank, Li Mu and Wang Jian led a two thousand man team, and thundered furiously as they broke into the [Dao Jian Xuan]’s camp site. Like wolves and tigers, [Zhan Long]’s heroes crushed the defense of [Dao Jian Xuan] in almost an instant. The average strength of the [Dao Jian Xuan]’s members was probably at the level of [Soaring Dragon], so it wouldn’t have been possible for them to defend against [Zhan Long]’s attack. Since the 3000+ survivors of [Zhan Long] had experienced countless battles, every one of them was battle hardened after surviving the previous numerous attacks.

.....

I had dashed too far ahead. Even though I attracted a large amount of firepower away from the [Zhan Long] players at the back, my health was rapidly dropping. Under the battering of arrows and magic, my health quickly dropped to 30%. Right ahead of me, a Lv 70 Swordsman came forward with his sword in hand. The energy of [Skyslayer Slash] emerged above his sword and he bellowed in anger, “Concentrate your fire and kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

My eyes flashed cold as the Guild Master rank badge appeared on his shoulder. Motherf*cker. This guy is the Guild Master of [Dao Jian Xuan] —Blade Hero!

My Cold Iron Sword swayed softly along with the wind, and as my battle boots stepped backwards, my Cold Iron Sword waved along with a force like the fallen leaves in the flowing waters, resolving the [Skyshaker Slash] easily. When facing single target attacking skills, the best way to avoid is actually controlling the distance. The attack range of a sword is 2-3 yards. If I keep the distance between me and Blade at 3 yards, then I will be able to greatly increase the percentage of dodging the [SkyShaker Slash]. If the distance is 1 yard, then I am afraid that I wouldn't be able to block his attack even if I moved away.

“Oh?”

[Skyshaker Slash] was blocked away and Blade Hero furrowed his brow; he obviously did not expect that my control of strength would be so skillful. I then lowered my body and used [Blade Rush]. Simultaneously, my eyes swept across, noticing the 4 [Scattered Shot]s and 3 [Indigo Sea Arrow]s in the distance that were targeting me and were flying towards me. My remaining 30% health would not be able to defend against the damage caused by concentrated fire!

My arms shuddered and Shield of the Crimson Dragon burst out of the ground. It immediately lingered beside me, forming a protective shield around me. At the same time, I saw an opportunity and lifted my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword together. “Keng” A sound burst forth as my swords clashed with Blade Hero's sword. Under the enormous force, Blade Hero tilted backwards and fell to the ground along with a “Pa” sound. The radiance of my [Blade Rush] swept past and I then tumbled away. Some dust immediately dirtied my white War Swept cloak, but it doesn't matter since I've dodged many attacks. This should be enough!

I retreated and my pet advanced forward. Flaming Tiger God roared as fiery broken shields enveloped his body and it charged into the crowds, using [Burstfire Raid]. Within a short few seconds, Old K, Wolf, and Dong Cheng Lei finally arrived!

“Damn!”

Old K held his battle axe and yelled, “Motherfucking assholes, Look what you guys have done to our little Li in such a short moment! Brothers, Go! Fight for the Guild Master of [Zhan Long]!”

Old K’s furious voice thundered, and his battle axe spun. [Whirlwind Slash] immediately swept across the crowds, and slashed the group of [Dao Jian Xuan]’s players into the sky. Dong Cheng Lei angrily roared and struck in rage, tearing the group of people into pieces before they reached the ground. Yue Qing Qian opened her fair hand, and the murderous [Grip of the Firefox] darted out and blasted the crowds. Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot] went along, and many people were killed instantly.

“Guild Master!”

Dancing Forest cast a smile at me from afar and said, “When you want to kill that Blade Hero from [Dao Jian Xuan], check for my signal…….”

I nodded. Old K, Wolf, Dong Cheng Lei and the others charged together, and messed up the enemy’s front line with their attacks. One Second Hero held his long spear, and darted forward with great force. He was then trapped in the siege. He abruptly lifted his head and seven or eight iron arrows shot into his face. He was stunned. Widening his eyes, he screamed, “F*ck you all! This guild really likes concentrating firepower. Oh, I won’t live long…….”

“Shua!”

A cold arrow flew past the tip of One Second Hero’s nose and struck the Swordsman behind him with a “Pa” sound heard. It was Dancing Forest’s [Scattered Shot], and successfully stunned the Swordsman. Blade Hero originally decided to kill One Second Hero, this flagbearer of [Zhan Long], but he did not expect that when the mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of oriole behind. Dancing Forest’s [Scattered Shot] had imperceptibly targeted him!

TLN: the mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of oriole behind. An idiom that means “To pursue a narrow gain while neglecting a greater danger.”

“Light him up” Li Mu yelled, raising his sword from 15 yards away, he began to attack Blade Hero.

I also opened my hand, syncing with Li Mu’s attack pattern, sending out a [Great Realm of Desolation]. Together the attacks hit 刀剑英雄, not giving him any chance to heal!

“Bang! Bang!” As the sound of our hits resided outwards. 刀剑英雄 trembled as two large damage numbers appeared over his head—

“2627 ! ”

“4597 ! ”

Combined with the might of Dancing Forest’s [Scattered Shot], there was no avoiding death. 直接 kneeled onto the ground. With this, [Dao Jian Xuan]’s Guild Master and Vice Guild Master were dealt with. In the ensuing chaos, the remaining elders and squad leaders became the targets of [Zhan Long]’s onslaught. Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, and Wolf continued to kill 3 of the 4 elders. The other elder had already been killed by [Vanguard].

The might of [Zhan Long]’s three forces was like 3 pairs of scissors rapidly cutting paper. After 7 to 8 times of repeated charges, our attacks left their people completely decimated. Their groups were largely scattered about with absolutely no power to resist, even if they wanted to kill a single player it would be impossible. After a short period of only less than 20 minutes, [Dao Jian Xuan] was completely decimated, leaving behind 1000+ corpses and 200 members frantically running to escape.

Battle finished!

With the ground littered with corpses, the air reeked of the smell of blood. My Emperor Qin’s Sword was covered in blood, “ Pa Pa” as the leaves swayed on the grass. Li Mu walked up and reported, “After sweeping through the battle field, they still have roughly 200 players who escaped, should we send someone to chase them?”

I shook my head and said, “Forget it, It’s best not to chase after a cornered enemy..... let’s account for the losses we’ve suffered from this

battle....”

Matcha picked up her sword and walked over, “There’s no need. We still have 3017 alive. In other words, we lost 549 men in the battle just now. Boss, the more we battle the more we lose....”

I took a deep breath and said, “Of course the more we battle the less men we have. Get ready to set out, we’ll continue to roam around the plains, and look for a small Jiu Li City force. The more we kill the more likely Ba Huang City will win!”

“Got it.”

Matcha looked at a body on the ground and said, “[Dao Jian Xuan] has pretty much already been completely dealt with. We’ll probably reach our limit if we fight against one or two more of the main guilds....”

I smiled, “Yea, no matter what happens, we’ve already gained a lot from this battle. At least we were able to kill a Valkyrie Tier Boss.”

“That’s true.....”

At that moment, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands slowly landed on the ground. She raised a hand and pointed east and yelled out, “Guild Master, there are people coming from the east. All of their names are red, they must be from Jiu Li City!”

“How many people?”

“Looks to be around 3000+ people. They might even have more than 4000!”

“F*ck, that many. What guild is it.....”

“[Moonlit Lake]!”

“Oh.....”

I grunted then raised a fist, “[Zhan Long]’s luck isn’t too shabby, we’ve found another one of Jiu Li City’s main guilds. [Moonlit Lake] is ranked 7th in Jiu Li City. They have 40,000 people, even more than [Dao Jian Xue] or [Emperor’s Blood]. The forums say that the Guild Master for [Moonlit Lake] and the Vice Guild Master are both beauties. Later, you all

better not show mercy....”

Old K grinned and said, “Don’t worry. The City War Points are most important, even if it means killing them. I’ll just find a chance to apologize later!”

Qing Qian asked, “Then.... how exactly are we going to fight?”

I examined the map, then pointed towards the South, “There’s a bunch of bramble over there called Boar Forest. The under growth’s geography is extremely good for fighting in battle formations. We’ve already suffered great losses to our close combat division. How about this, we’ll enter Boar Forest, and fight a formation battle against Moonlight Forest. After 10 minutes, we’ll take them towards Bowl Valley, and meet up with the other Ba Huang City guilds and fight in the final battle!”

Li Mu help up a fist with a smile, “Ok, Guild Master gave the order! Everyone, we’ll set out west immediately!”

.....

[Zhan Long]’s 3000 men started advancing towards the south. As if seeing [Zhan Long]’s movement, the 4000 men from [Moonlit Lake] started to chase us hurriedly from afar. Just as I had expected, after Jiu Li City’s men obliterated almost half of Ba Huang City’s manpower at the fort’s walls, they became overconfident and seemed to have completely forgotten about [Zhan Long]’s advancement.

Inside Boar Forest, the whole place was covered in thorns and shrubs.

“Ow, these thorns are killing me...” from the moment Old K entered the forest, he was constantly crying out. “ Darling Duck, give me some healing, I lost some health...”

Darling Duck retorted, “ You’ve only lost about 7% , why get so worked up about it?”

“It’s still 1000 health...”

I laughed out loudly, “Everyone, form defensive arrays behind the undergrowth. If [Moonlit Lake]’s players want to attack, then they’ll have

to suffer damage from the thorns. Their frontline will probably only have 50% health left by the time they get to us. All Mages, Archers, and Musketeers, you guys are the main players of this war. All heavy armor classes find a good place to camp. Walking around would be committing suicide. Prepare for engagement!”

Matcha and One Second Hero stood in front of everyone, holding their ground and setting up defensive stances.

I looked from afar, only 3 minutes until they reached us. Let’s see what they will do about their surroundings.

Holding my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I withstood the pain from the thorns stabbing into skin that wasn’t protected by my armor. I walked along [Zhan Long]’s frontline to get to the other side of Boar Forest’s undergrowth. I could hear “Hu Hu” from afar; I had a feeling that the sound was familiar. After I pushed away some leaves, I suddenly saw a group of—

Boars!

Chapter 389: The Brewing War

“HuHu.....”

In the jungle’s chaparral, a drove of brawny boars covered with prickly spikes were digging up the soil. They seemed to be searching for some lush roots. The bodies of these boars were glowing, but not with divine brilliance, it was the sheen of plant oil. They had been rubbing against the trees ever since they were born, and had not taken a shower for a few hundred years. The thick layer of pine oil had formed an armor that was comparable to iron, impenetrable to knives and swords. As well, the prickly spikes they were born with that passed through the layer of pine oil like spear points on a shield.!

Thorn Forest Boars, a level 80 Phantom Tier monster with medium attack strength, high defense, high health and high speed, they also possessed skills like [Charge], [Drain], etc. These creatures were basically the kings of Boar Forest. Because of their high level, players didn’t normally come here to grind for levels. There was no problem in monopolizing Boar Forest.

I roughly counted and found that there were around 200+ Thorn Forest Boars here. There were just too many. I had to keep the [Zhan Long] players away from them, otherwise it would bring us endless troubles if they were pursued by these monsters.

.....

After learning the situation our surroundings. I held my sword and returned to [Zhan Long]’s campsite. In the distance, the members of [Moonlit Lake] charged forward as imposing as rainbows. The group of berserkers, knights, and swordsmen roared furiously as they blindly dashed forward, only to be pricked by the thorns halfway. They howled in pain as their health rapidly dropped. When they finally arrived within 40 yards of [Zhan Long]’s frontline, only 50% of their health remained.

Dancing Forest lifted her long bow and yelled, “Everyone, shoot! Attack indiscriminately and kill them all!”

Above the campsite of [Zhan Long], numerous arrows and magic spells flew out, and blood splashed among the crowds with a “PuPuPu”. Dozens of people were instantly killed while painful howls were continuously being screamed. Before the battle even started, at least 200 members of the [Moonlit Lake] were dead. This was the result of acting recklessly without any understanding of the topography.

“Stop assaulting!”

At the rear of the crowds, a beautiful swordswoman clothed in heavy armor drew her long sword abruptly and shouted, “Draw up in battle arrays. Healers, follow closely, and we will advance forward step by step. Crush everything as we move! Don’t let the members of [Zhan Long] use the terrain to their advantage. Everyone, listen to my command. Prepare to attack!”

This was none other than the guildmaster of [Moonlit Lake], the enchanting beautiful swordswoman Gong Zi Ying, who looked no older than 22 years old. Beside her, stood her equally beautiful vice guild master, Mu Xue, a level 70 mage. Besides these two, it would seem that the players of the guild were mostly men. It didn’t take much thought to reason that these two beauties had seduced a bunch of idiotic men. Perhaps it was not beauty alone, because Gong Zi Ying possessed a very keen sense of judgement. This was no surprise, smexy guild masters were far and few between, she’d need more than just beauty. It was no wonder how [Moonlit Lake] could have a place in Jiu Li City. Beautiful but nothing more than a thin veneer of transient looks that will fade with the passing of time. There is no substance.

Under the command of Gong Zi Ying, [Moonlit Lake] began their tactic of advancing gradually and entrenching oneself after every step. The players in front advanced slowly, while the healing healers at the back followed. This way, the damage caused by the thorns became chocolate trifle.

[Note; for those interested in the recipie,
<http://allrecipes.com/recipe/19017/chocolate-trifle/>]

“Prepare to attack!” I stood on the frontline and said, “Brothers, let’s fight them; the more we kill, the more we earn. Everyone, do your best. [Zhan Long], battle for the city war points!”

Qing Qian wore a defeated expression as she asked, “Brother, wasn’t our slogan, battle for the weak?”

I laughed out loud and answered, “There is no difference between the good and evil in city wars. It’s all for the city war points. A man should be honest and kind. Right now, [Zhan Long] is fighting for our honor and dreams, and for the points!”

“Okay, really practical!” One Second Hero burst out in laughter and exclaimed, “Then we shall battle for the points!”

.....

Faraway, my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Great Realm of Desolation] were sent out almost at the same time. Flaming Tiger God also charged back and forth, killing under the “care” of Darling Duck. A battle of almost ten thousand people started in the Boar Forest!

Although the comprehensive battle strength of [Moonlit Lake]’s members was not comparable to [Dao Jian Xuan] and [Emperor’s Blood], they had a great number of people that every two deaths on the frontline would result in the death of one [Zhan Long] player. Under such strenuous war, we only had 1000 people left after they were annihilated. With only 1000 people, how could we destroy guilds like [Legend], [House Of Prestige], and [Judgement]?”

I pondered over and over, and decided that we couldn’t continue acting recklessly like this. At that moment, a plan appeared in my mind. I called Qing Qian to my side, and whispered a few words in her ear. The young lady chuckled as she heard my words, and nodded in response, “Brother Xiao Yao, you are so shameful.....”

“It’s nothing. Quick!”

“Okay!”

.....

The army divided and Qing Qian and I left the campsite together. I went into the heart of the jungle from the right side, while Qing Qian went in from the left. After I passed through the dense trees, I immediately accelerated and hovered around the thorn forest wild boars. One by one, I attracted the agro of the boars by moving past them in a zigzag pattern again and again. Soon, the 200+ boars all chased after me. Unfortunately, their speed did not allow them to catch up with me. My [War Swept Cloak] possessed 15% of the [Ride The Wind] effect which increased the movement speed by 15% finally came in handy!

“Hong!”

I dashed out of the jungle, leading my “boar army” and headed from the side towards the campsite of [Moonlit Lake]. The earth trembled slowly, and each Thorn Forest Boar was like a moving fort. Each weighed at least 500 kilograms and they all were pursuing me with a whooshing motion.

.....

“F*ck!”

A team leader at the side of [Moonlit Lake]’s camp gaped and screamed, “Motherf*cker. Oh no, Xiao Yao is coming to us with a bunch of boars. Damn, it feels like we’re being cheated!”

“What should we do?” An archer who was rendered speechless by Xiao Yao Zi Zai finally asked.

“What else can we do. Prepare to slay Boars and kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Gong Zi Ying held her sword and gnashed her teeth, “Fang Ge Que, Baili Ruo Feng, and Ye Lai weren’t wrong. The most terrifying opponent was not Jian Feng Han, but Xiao Yao Zi Zai. His brothers are too strong and his mind is too intelligent. Charge forward and kill those boars!”

I darted forward while surveying the local terrain. With an abrupt movement, I activated [Blade Rush], and disappeared into the thorn forest; [Camouflage] was effective in grass, and shrubbery regions, so I endured the piercing thorns to obtain the invisibility effect. The 200+

Thorn Forest Wild Boars lost their original target and immediately turned their aggro towards the [Moonlit Lake]’s players in front, charging forward furiously with a whooshing motion!

“PengPengPeng.....”

Under the brutal assaults, in addition to the [Blood Drain], dozens of [Moonlit Lake]’s members were killed. This was a happy scene. Gong Zi Ying wielded her sword on the frontline and moved forward to kill the boars instead, causing the pressure on [Zhan Long] to instantly reduce. At this moment, movements were heard from the left side. A pretty girl charged forward with at least 150 wild boars behind her. The second she approached [Moonlit Lake], she activated [Absolute Step], and disappeared into thin air while gifting another 150 level 80 Phantom Tier Monster to them. This time, there should be enough to tire them out!

“What are we waiting for?” Li Mu raised his long sword and laughed out loud, “[Zhan Long], advance towards the frontline and crush them!”

Old K used a [Whirlwind Slash] to break the enemy’s formation. Dong Cheng Lei, One Second Hero and the others also charged forward, yelling and screaming. A strike of Sister Matcha’s [Phantom Ray Slash] killed a bunch of the players with low health, and her attacks chilled the members of [Moonlit Lake] to the bone.

Because of the influence of many factors, the balance of this battle had tilted completely in [Zhan Long]’s favor. After Gong Zi Ying solved the “Wild Boar Crisis,” about 1500 people of [Moonlit Lake] had already been killed by [Zhan Long]. The number of people [Moonlit Lake] had left now couldn’t compare with [Zhan Long]. With only 2000 people, they had to fight against at least 2800 people of [Zhan Long]!

.....

“Hold your ground!”

Gong Zi Ying held up her sword, gnashed her teeth and said, “Shift from offensive to defense. We can’t fight recklessly now. Everyone, remember: Guard this field. Our allies will arrive soon!”

Mu Xue also raised her staff and yelled, “Hold your ground! Victory belongs to Jiu Li City!”

As [Zhan Long] advanced forward step by step, we began to take control of the battle field. The facts had proven that [Zhan Long]’s 5000 people have the strength of 50000. As long as we maintain our good battle strategies and timing, we’ll continue to be an invincible mighty force!”

Hearing Gong Zi Ying’s words, Li Mu was slightly worried and asked while attacking, “Gong Zi Ying said there are reinforcements. What should we do?”

I checked the time and grinned, “Just in time. Once their reinforcements arrive, we will immediately back down and retreat. Great timing! Also, we have to appear slightly hopeless to lure the enemy into chasing us. For this to be successful, our acting skill is very important!”

Li Mu positioned his sword and smiled, “No worries. As veterans that have wandered the internet for years, we are all great actors!”

“Heh Heh, great.....”

.....

It was 9:55 at night when a huge cloud of dust swirled in the air. As expected, reinforcements arrived. It’s a team of more than 5000 people that belonged to a guild from Jiu Li City—[Iced Red Tea]. They dashed forward under the command of the beautiful mage Luo Shui Red Tea who was the good friend of Gong Zi Ying. [Iced Red Tea] was also an ally of [Moonlit Lake]. True, if [Moonlit Lake] combined forces with these 5000 people to form an encirclement, with the combined forces of 7000 people, they would be able to devour almost all of [Zhan Long]’s 3000 people.

“Guildmaster, what do we do?” One Second Hero held up his metal spear and asked angrily, “Should we fight them?”

“Fight my ass.....” I backed away with my sword in hand, and laughed out loud, “[Zhan Long], abandon the field. We have earned enough, and retreat with me now. Retreat at full speed! Whoever runs slowly and gets killed, will be punished by me for it!”

The crowds burst out in laughter and retreated. Faraway, Gong Zi Ying stomped her feet in anger and exclaimed, "Humph, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are thinking of leaving? No way! Leave one of your levels as an apology gift!"

Smokes and dust billowed behind us as the big army of 7000 men pursued and charged towards the 2700+ people of [Zhan Long].

.....

After ten minutes of dashing, a verdant valley appeared right ahead. This was the Bowl Valley that we were heading towards. I unconsciously glanced at the left and right side, and saw that smoke billowed on the plains and there were signs showing that a large amount of players were fighting. Yes, [Prague] and [Vanguard] also were able to get the enemy to chase them here. Misty Cloud of [Enemies At The Gate] also sent a message, saying that a group of small guilds from Jiu Li City that they are pursuing will pass through Bowl Valley!

"Into the valley!" I waved my sword and led the members of [Zhan Long] into the valley.

"Di" a sound rang and it was a message from Han Bei Song that said, "Guildmaster Zi Zai, 3300+ people of [Blood Contract] have arrived at the southward exit of Bowl Valley and are all waiting for you guys. Come here quick. We will initiate a surprise attack promptly at 10 o'clock. Heh heh, I heard you guys were having a hard time, being pursued by Gong Zi Ying and what not!"

I burst out in laughter and replied, "Don't even talk about that, just prepare to welcome the climax battle of this city war!"

"Yes, everyone is ready!"

.....

Smoke and dust billowed on the plain, and headed towards the Bowl Valley with a regular pattern. However, the influential forces of Jiu Li City never expected that the moving battle was a conspiracy. But when they realized, it would be too late. The waters retain no constant shape and

warfare retains no constant conditions. With some concealment, the baiting tactic became extremely subtle!

“Huala.....”

In the jungle, a group of people stormed out. They were the members of [Flying Dragon]. Around 2000 people of the [House Of Prestige] followed behind them and passed by us. Baili Ruo Feng stared at [Moonlit Lake] blankly and yelled from afar, “Gong Zi Ying, why are you guys here?”

Gong Zi Ying paused for a second and replied, “We’re pursuing and killing [Zhan Long]. Why.....?”

Baili Ruo Feng shuddered, “Oh no, I have a bad feeling.....”

Gong Zi Ying widened her beautiful eyes and said, “Don’t..... don’t scare me.....”

Chapter 390: 10,000 Arrow Through the Heart

“Slaughter all of the standing [Vanguard] players!”

A roar came from the east side of the valley, as the Guild Master of [Judgement], Ye Lai, appeared and killed the group of [Vanguard] members one by one. While Jian Feng Han was holding his sword, and walking at the rear of the group, flames enveloped Ye Lai's arm, and he roared as he struck towards Jian Feng Han's shoulder with his battleaxe. It glowed from the radiance of [Holy Fire Cut]. Seeing this, the corner of Jian Feng Han's lips curled up, as he sent out his blade diagonally. With a “Klang” sound, his blade touched the tip of Ye Lai's battle axe while he slid numerous yards backwards and cleverly dodged the [Holy Fire Cut].

Ye Lai loudly laughed, and kicked Jian Feng Han.

“Bang!”

Jian Feng Han was kicked back 10 or so meters, while Ye Lai carried his battle axe and brazenly followed up the attack with the skill, [Divine Weapon Breaker]. This was a skill that could crushing any attack, rendering the opponent unable to block it. As long as the distance and angle were right, the opponent would definitely suffer from this skill!

Jian Feng looked at the vast array of [Vanguard], they had already gone far enough. Laughing, Jian Feng Han carried his sword, and deflected the magic attack. He attacked Ye Lai at this moment, landing a [Corrupt Wolf Edge] directly onto Ye Lai's shoulder!”

“3127 ! ”

Ye Lai stepped back two steps, and Jian Feng Han attacked with another [Through the Clouds Slash]. Combined with his [Corrupt Wolf Edge], Ye Lai's health drastically dropped while Healers frantically targeted him. He looked up at the surrounding mountains with a doubtful expression and asked, “Hmm.....why does this place feels a little weird?”

Turning around, Babel Buddha nodded and said, “Guild Master, this

places is surrounded by mountains, it's a good place for annihilating enemies."

"What's our position?"

"We're in the best position for being annihilated....."

"Eh, well I'll be. Why do I feel like we're gonna be f*cked....."

"I think, we should first retreat for now. We've gone too far for just one army!"

Beside him, the Assassin Jing Ke voiced his opinion, "No, [House of Prestige], [Appearance Alliance], [Emperor's Blood], [Moonlit Lake], [Iced Red Tea] have all concentrated their forces here. I just won't believe that those dejected losers can counterattack all of these people in such a short amount of time!"

"Not necessarily!"

Ye Lai's eyes were cold, "We have to immediately retreat. We've been tricked this entire time. The fact that there are people from [House of Prestige] and [Appearance Alliance] here as well already says that there's something wrong!"

"Alright!"

.....

The 8000 people from [Judgement] immediately prepared to charge out of the valley, only to find that the hills were already covered with countless [Vanguard] players. Jian Feng Han was only leading a small fraction of [Vanguard]'s forces. At least 3000 of [Vanguard]'s players had already finished setting up formations on the hills. Towering above all, Fallen Wolf raised his battle axe and laughed out, "Ye Lai, you actually want to escape? This Bowl Valley is Ba Huang City's territory and you are our guest. How can we not properly welcome you? Everyone, prepare your formations for attack. Ba Huang City's time to counter has arrived!"

In the midst of the crowd, Don't Be Foolish raised up his long spear and pointed forward as he yelled out, "[Vanguard], advance! It's time to

avenge our fallen brothers! Kill Ye Lai and defeat [Judgement]! Ha Ha, Ye Fatty, don't blame me for being ruthless"

Ye Lai swung his battle axe over his head and instead of showing any panic on his face, he laughed, "So it was you dumbass. Ha ha, there's 8000 of [Judgement]'s main force here. If you want to kill us then come at us! My [Judgement] is a piece of hard bone, and I welcome Ba Huang City's fierce tigers to try and gnaw on us. Hope you guys don't f*cking lose your teeth!

Goodbye Tears raised his knife and was the first to start rushing down the hill. He roared, "Kill! Cut down Ye Lai first! Don't exchange any more words with him!"

North Pole held his staff in one hand, "Damn, Monk, you're such a dumbass. What the f*ck is a Monk like you rushing forward for? Get the f*ck back to your position and protect me. We have Swordsmen to charge out!"

Goodbye Tears didn't look back, "My blade is too thirsty. Just slowly do your thing for a while and then we'll discuss it!"

Ye Lai waved his battle axe, "[Judgement], Kill! Annihilate them!"

.....

[Vanguard] and [Judgement] began to fight.

"Sha sha"

My battle boots brushed against the grass at the bottom of the valley. [Zhan Long] had been sprinting for a while. I abruptly looked back towards Gong Zi Ying. She and the rest of her guild were starting to slow down. I laughed, "Brothers! It's time to head back! [Blood Contract] will protect us!"

At the top of the valley, Han Bei Song raised his long sword and grinned, "[Blood Contract], Charge! Help [Zhan Long] destroy those arrogant Jiu Li City bastards!"

[Blood Contract] members rushed down the side of the mountain and

[Zhan Long]'s 2700+ members turned back to kill. Their morale was high. Everywhere you looked, you could see the players from Ba Huang City. The [Moonlit Lake] players suddenly all shivered. They knew that they had walked into an ambush, but they hadn't realized exactly how many people their enemy had. They were starting to get nervous, but they still had to fight.

Outside of Bowl Valley, Bai Li Ruo Feng took 7000 [House of Prestige] members to retreat, only to be forced back in by a mass of people who plugged up the valley. A whopping 11000 players stood there, making Bai Li Ruo Feng lose all hope of retreat. His face turned green as he raised his bow and said, "What's done is done, there's no turning back. All we can do now is battle. Brothers, get into your formations and prepare to attack!"

In the back, there was another group of people coming to join in on the kill; it was Yan Zhao leading thousands of [Prague] members into the fray! His lips curved into a smile, "Too bad, [Legend] didn't take the bait. Such a pity!"

.....

"Ka Cha!"

My blade broke through the chestplate of one of the [Moonlit Lake]'s Swordsmen and I immediately lunged at him to finish the kill as my Flaming Tiger God roared out. This was destined to be a bitter battle. Even though we had surrounded our enemies in Bowl Valley, a cornered enemy is always the most fierce. On top of that, we had trapped the most elite guilds. Even [Judgement], [Appearance Alliance], and [House of Prestige] are all in the mix. One could imagine the difficulty of the task before us.

All around Bowl Valley, players from Ba Huang City kept pouring in. Even the Big Beard Guild Master showed up. These were all the people that I had gotten to come over. There were 57 small guilds and close to 200,000 people participating in this battle against Jiu Li City. The destruction of Jiu Li City's major guilds was almost inevitable. The only

thing we couldn't make sure of was how many of Ba Huang City's players would die as casualties of war.

一个个积分肥得惊人，能灭掉他们，斩龙所有人的城战积分都会猛涨一截的。

I angrily hacked away with Emperor Qin's Sword, killing another Archer, giving me 1120 more City War Points. This Archer had probably killed many people, since I only get 10% of his points yet still gained so much. On top of that, Gong Zi Ying's [Moonlit Lake] had participated the first battle in the east, so they had killed quite a few of Ba Huang City's players. Each and every one of them had so many points that it was shocking. If we could just kill them, then everyone's city points would skyrocket.

As I charged forward, along with the reinforcements, [Moonlit Lake] had been basically obliterated. Gong Zi Ying and Mu Xue disappeared from the battlefield; nobody knew how they had died or who had killed them. But I had seen Old K raging around, swinging his bloody battle axe and laughing out, "Wahahahah, Gong Zi Ying had so many points!!!"

General Li Mu shook his head and said, "You brute. You don't have any sense of tenderness...."

Wang Jian glanced over, "How can you even say that Old K doesn't know the meaning of tenderness when you were the one who killed Mu Xuan?"

Li Mu said, "That's not possible, how would I not know?!"

"She was killed by a [Covering Sword Slash], I saw the entire thing...."

Li Mu facepalmed, "The girl has already died, leaving the air filled with dead blossoms...."

Matcha raised her sword, "Eh, If you guys can kill people then don't try to act cute. I'm getting goosebumps just listening to you. You all are as strong as bulls but still copy people and pretend to be artsy!"

Li Mu was speechless.

.....

As the battle raged on, [Zhan Long] fought alongside [Blood Contract], cutting down 2000 of [Moonlit Lake]’s players. Then, they cut down another 5000 of [Iced Red Tea]’s players. They kept on advancing towards [House of Prestige]’s formation and cut right in, meeting up with [Enemies at the Gate] and [Prague]. Like that, they attacked [House of Prestige] from all three sides. The rather stable formation that they originally had was starting to unravel. One after another, the Swordsmen and Monks were being killed, leaving the long-ranged players completely defenseless to Ba Huang City’s [Vanguard]. Old K, Li Mu and Wang Jian all charged forward, making all of [House of Prestige]’s heavy armor players unable to hold our forces back!

After an hour, [House of Prestige] went from 7000 men, down to around 1000 men. Bai Li Ruo Feng’s face was practically green. No matter what, he never would’ve imagined that he’d suffer a fate like this where his guild’s destruction was due to the terrain. On top of that, anywhere within this special event’s map restricted the use of City Return Scrolls, so there was no way of escaping!

“Get ready, it’s time to kill Bai Li Ruo Feng, right?” General Lian Po asked.

I nodded, “He’s being protected by a few heavy armor type players. We can’t guarantee his death in a short time period.”

General Lian Po said, “Why don’t we force him out of the crowd and leave the rest to us. Guild Master, Bai Li Ruo Feng and a group of people are hiding near that big boulder over there, if you use [Seven Star Fragment Slash] you should be able to crush it. It’s all up to you!”

I thought about it for a moment.

I nodded, “We can probably try it out. Matcha, One Second Hero, make sure to cover for me!”

“Alright!”

Matcha and One Second Hero carried their heavy shields to protect my front. Arrows kept missing and thudding into the shield with a “Keng keng keng”. At the same time, rays from multiple [Heal]s kept falling

upon us. The health of the two Knights kept increasing, and thus weren't killed in the barrage of long range attacks from [House of Prestige].

“I'm close enough now, move out!”

I laughed as Matcha and One Second Hero immediately moved away to my left and right side. I lashed out with a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], sending several meteors right at Bai Li Ruo Feng!

“Careful!”

Bai Li Ruo Feng's eyes grew cold and he immediately dodged. At that moment, the large green boulder behind him split in two with a “Peng!”. The effect from the slash was definitely destructive!

Within moments, Li Mu's [Covering Slash], Dancing Forest's [Meteor Shot] and Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox] all activated, and Bai Li Ruo Feng's command center had turned into a sea of blood, while Bai Li Ruo Feng himself had retreated as fast as he could from his original location. He abruptly stopped under a pear tree, as he felt his hands go limp, he murmured, “Oh no!”

In the middle of a small forest, General Lian Po had been waiting for him. He brought along with him a group of [Zhan Long]'s Archers and within seconds, he had ordered them to rain arrows upon Bai Li Ruo Feng!

“pu pu pu pu,....”

Fresh blood splattered the ground as Bai Li Ruo Feng's chest was filled with arrowheads. He was a once in a lifetime Master of Archery, only to be downed in the midst of battle by arrows. No one was even sure who had killed him!

.....

With Bai Li Ruo Feng's death, [House of Prestige] had been defeated and with this the Battle of Bowl Valley had been decided!

Chapter 391: Clearing the Field

“Oh no! Ye Lai brought people to break through the encirclement!”

In the distance, Goodbye Tears held his metal knife and bellowed loudly, “This group of [Judgement] players is too strong. To think that they could even break through the encirclement like this. Should we pursue them or not?”

Jian Feng Han stood on the mountaintop, and stared at the nearly 1000 people of [Judgement] stirring up clouds of smoke and dust as they left. He curled his lips and said, “Nevermind. We already suffered huge losses to encircle and suppress the major forces of [Judgement]. For godly berserkers like Ye Lai, it’s better to not push too hard. Otherwise, we would suffer more losses. [Vanguard] can no longer endure a heavy blow.

Don’t be Foolish carried his heavy shield and sat between the broken rocks. His face was slightly pale as he said, “Are these people from Jiu Li City still humans? All of them are so fierce it’s as if they are on drugs. F*ck it! Our battle with [Judgement] is almost an equal death rate of 1:1 and this is even under the situation of being encircled by us. How much stronger is [Judgement]?”

North Pole grinned and uttered, “[Judgement]’s average battle strength is higher than [House Of Prestige], but they have a fewer number of people. Otherwise, the second place guild of Jiu Li City would be [Judgement].”

Don’t Be Foolish laughed out loud, “They’re that powerful? When should we bring some brothers along and join [Judgement]?”

Jian Feng Han’s face turned green, “A group of idiots. Don’t discuss this in front of me.....”

Goodbye Tears smashed Don’t be Foolish in the face with his sword and scolded, “Idiot, I’ve already told you this, don’t talk about it in front of him.....”

Don’t be Foolish said, “Oh shit. I thought Guild Master had already

been killed by Ye Lai. I didn't know that he was still alive..... Long live Guild Master! Long live!"

Jian Feng Han,"....."

.....

Carrying his long sword, Yan Zhao Warrior crossed through the crowds and yelled loudly, "[Appearance Alliance]'s 14,000 people have all been slaughtered, but.....but has anyone seen Mu Xuan? Is she dead or alive?"

Qing Qian stood up beside me and answered, "Uncle, [Appearance Alliance] was led here by the two beautiful Vice Guild Master and Wild Beauty and Mu Xuan, but they have have not appeared ever since. If she had, they might not have been entrapped in our encirclement. I have heard that Mu Xuan is more than just a little smart."

Yan Zhao Warrior clasped his hands and smiled, "Then that's good. with the loss of this 14,000, no matter how powerful Queen Mu Xuan is, she shouldn't be able to turn the tables....."

I held up my Emperor Qin's Sword, and ordered, "Clean the battlefield and calculate the battle damage!"

The group of [Zhan Long]'s members immediately delineated a spot and began cleaning the battlefield. The ones that came were the big guilds of Jiu Li City, and so the players' equipments would naturally be of excellent quality. Especially since [Judgement] and [House Of Prestige] were among the dead, causing there to be countless Purple Tier equipments. After this ambush, [Zhan Long] players equipment would be upgraded to a higher level once again.

On the mountaintop, colorful flowers bloomed and the Guild Masters of the big guilds from Ba Huang City assembled. Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Fen Han, Soaring Dragon, Misty Cloud, Han Bei Song and the others were all here, discussing the next battle plan—

Yan Zhao Warrior held his long sword in his arms and spoke, "The calculation of the battle damage is out. For the last 2 hours of battle at Bowl Valley, a total of 77,000 Jiu Li City's players have been slaughtered.

They were all elite players. On our side, a total of 32,000 people participated in the battle and we lost 10,900 men with [Enemies At The Gate] and [Zhan Long] suffering the heaviest losses. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, how many people of Zhan Long are still at our disposal?”

I sat on a crimson mountain rock, twisted my lips and answered, “Zhan Long still has 2017 people.....”

Yan Zhao Warrior smiled apologetically, “Yeah, Thank you for your effort. If there was no [Zhan Long], I am afraid we would be not have been able to gain a complete victory in Bowl Valley. The elite strength of Jiu Li City has been foiled, and the only opponent left is [Legend]. Although [Legend] claims to have 50,000 online players, they must have lost more than half of their strength after the melee that happened previously. They should only have a maximum of 25,000 players. Therefore, we just need to annihilate [Legend] to gain victory in this City War!

Jian Feng Han uttered, “Let me interrupt for a second. Actually, Jiu Li City still has 77,000 in the city war map. Our Ba Huang City has only 34,000 people remaining. The difference between the number of people is very great. Plus, the last NPC battle will definitely be extremely difficult.”

Yan Zhao Warrior nodded, “I know, but we must target [Legend]. Albeit the guilds of our Ba Huang City have all conserved a minimum amount of strength, they might not be the opponent of [Legend] even if their forces are all combined. Such self-awareness is necessary. We must fight one more uphill battle to gain the final victory.”

Misty Cloud spoke, “You’ve said so much, how about telling us the next step. Otherwise, it would still be useless no matter what you say.”

I uttered, “Let’s rest for a while and reorganize ourselves; then head back to Fort Zi Feng and await the chance to battle again. After the battle at Bowl Valley, the few big guilds of Jiu Li City have been destroyed. They must be terrified and appalled. Even Fang Ge Que must have some reservations after that battle. Therefore, tonight will be the greatest chance for us to annihilate the small guilds in Jiu Li City. Send a guild to

watch and tie down the major force of [Legend]. The rest of the major guilds will kill more enemies, and turn back our disadvantage on the number of people.

Yan Zhao Warrior guffawed and said, “Yeah. This should be the solution that doesn’t really count as a solution. However, who will be restraining [Legend]?”

I laid down on the huge rock and grinned lazily, “I don’t care about that. [Zhan Long] has been slaughtered until only 2000 people remain, so don’t even think of making us, [Zhan Long], restrain [Legend]. Otherwise, we will all run in the front of Fang Ge Que and gift him with points.....”

“You win.....” Yan Zhao smiled speechlessly and said, “[Zhan Long] has won every battle and is an indispensable strength of Ba Huang City, so we won’t ask you guys to tie down [Legend]. How about.....”

With a sudden “Shua” sound, Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Feng Han, Misty Cloud and Han Bei Song, the four people, simultaneously directed their eyes towards Soaring Dragon, the Guild Master of [Flying Dragon]. Soaring Dragon immediately shuddered and exclaimed, “What the f*ck. Why do I have a feeling that I am being eyed..... You guys, are you guys seriously thinking of making [Flying Dragon] tie down [Legend]? That’s the strongest guild in the China Server!! [Flying Dragon] is only ranked 13. This is unreasonable!!”

Yan Zhao Warrior burst out in laughter and said, “Guild Master Soaring Dragon, [Flying Dragon] has not been counted upon as a major force in any of the battles. Even during the battle of annihilation in Bowl Valley, you guys still acted as the characters that hide behind others, making sneak attacks. As a result, [Flying Dragon] conserved a force of 10,000 men. Among the top ten guilds in Ba Huang City, only [Flying Dragon] still possesses such powerful strength; so if you guys don’t go restrain [Legend], who else will?”

Jian Feng Han held his arms and laughed, “I know right. Plus, we are only asking you guys tie down [Legend], not making you guys fight a winless battle with [Legend]. If [Flying Dragon] can keep an eye on

[Legend] and obstruct [Legend] for a few moments when they attack, giving us the time to reorganize our battle formation. This would be enough.....”

Soaring Dragon muttered to himself and nodded in response, “Alright, [Flying Dragon] will accept this mission. You guys do your best and butcher all those bunnies from Jiu Li City. Don’t let them be so arrogant!”

“Yes. Of course!”

And so the few big guilds of Ba Huang City worked together in absolute sincerity again and were unprecedentedly united.

.....

After cleaning the battlefield, the 2000 [Zhan Long] elites returned to the battlefield with extremely tired bodies. Under Zi Feng Fort, the battle of the NPCs had reached its turning point. The seven armies of Ba Huang City took turns attacking the fort. The wall on the south of Fort Zi Feng has been hit by the strikes of the catapults until it possessed the image of a beehive. It shook and cracked; It was only a matter of time before it collapses.

Holding his battle axe, Old K stood under the fort and asked, “Little Li, should we attack the fort with the NPCs?”

I shook my head, “Don’t. This is a battle of attrition between the NPCs. We don’t have to contribute manpower. Next, what [Zhan Long] needs to do is kill those Jiu Li City players wandering around the south, west, and east of the fort. This operation must be quick. Leave immediately after the killing and never stop. We must sweep across this plain like a tornado, and devour as many points as we can. Even if we lose this city war, we can’t lose to Jiu Li City in terms of our determination!”

Old K nodded and replied, “Okay. I got it!”

Qing Qian winked and asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, there is a Lv 3 guild from Jiu Li City located directly west from us and 1000 yards away from us. It seems to have about 700 people. Should we wipe them out?”

“Yes. Let’s set off under the cover of darkness!”

“Alright!”

.....

Drawing out my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword, I held up both of my swords and led the [Zhan Long] elite teams into the darkness. A few minutes later, the sound of the clashes coming from the west of the fort thundered out. Within ten minutes, [Zhan Long] devoured these 700 people like wolves and tigers, and there were almost no losses incurred. The ones that survived until now are all elite players. The top-notch players like me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and Matcha, are all on the frontline. It would be extremely difficult to kill any one of us. Plus, they fought against us in fear, without any urge to battle.

“Brother Xiao Yao, there is a team with around 1100 people at 25 degrees northwest, 1200 yards away from us. Should we slaughter them? It’s a guild ranked 21 in Jiu Li City!” Qing Qian continued to maintain her ability of giving us the most accurate information.

I nodded, “Kill. Except for [Legend], we, the 2000 men elites of [Zhan Long], will fear nothing!”

“Yes!”

The troops continued to advance and appeared on the plain in the mantle of night. The players on the front roared as they charged into the crowds. The defense of the rank 21 guild from Jiu Li City immediately collapsed as they were cut directly apart by [Zhan Long]’s team. They fled after the defeat, but were then pursued for a period of time. After the twenty minute battle, there was nothing left of them. [Zhan Long]’s losses were so tiny that it would just be ignored. Just casualties of at most 50 people!

As the others cleaned the battlefield of equipment and potions dropped all over the area, I held my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and stood in the middle of the wilderness. I gazed up at Fort Zi Feng in the distance. The massive lights of the fires in the fort were seen. It was already late at night. The City War has been going for 14 hours, and the battle seemed to be endless.

I opened the rankings on the city war interface, and noticed some big changes happened again——

1. Fang Ge Que [Points 2247340]
2. Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Points 2212910]
3. Ye Lai [Points 1974270]
4. Baili Ruo Feng [Points 1892650]
5. Simple [Points 1823710]
6. Jian Feng Han [Points 1812830]
7. General Li Mu [Points 1478170]
8. Mu Xuan [Points 1462560]
9. Hero Old K [Points 1444740]
10. Lu Chun Yang [Points 1392710]

.....

Chapter 392: Takedown Lin Qiong

Since the battle at Moonlight Forest, [Legend] hasn't been very active, Fang Ge Que's points didn't change much. I, on the other hand, went through a lot of large battles in the Wild Boar Forest and Bowl Valley, so my points have almost caught up with Fang Ge Que's. Ye Lai led 8000 of [Judgement]'s warriors in a difficult breakthrough battle from Bowl Valley, leaving an uncountable number of corpses behind them, rapidly bringing his rank up to third place. Ba Li Ruo Feng and Simple, two masters of AOE attacks, had already been killed so their points were set meaning they could only slide down the rankings. Jian Feng Han's points are in hot pursuit with General Li Mu and Old K's points also rising. Looks like, as long as there are no major accidents, the second person to enter [Zhan Long Hall] will be Li Mu. That's fine, he deserves it!

.....

Lots of chaotic battles had broken out in the plain. After the night ended, Hell's Core's barren sands were completely dyed in blood. Countless players' corpses lay on the sands. [Zhan Long]'s 2000 man elite army quickly and relentlessly fought in eight battles, and like swirling winds sweeping through the plains, we massacred almost 20,000 enemies. In the end, our own army had finally dwindled down to only 1500 men. Li Mu's and Wang Jian's weapons were almost broken.

Looking at my Emperor Qin's Sword, its ability to never wear down meant it still had 100% durability, but the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword only had 14% durability left. If it wasn't fixed soon, it would lose its attack buff. Clearly, there was no way I could fight against the armies of Jiu Li City with just my Emperor Qin's Sword.

"Sha Sha....."

Matcha walked across the sand with her sword dripping fresh blood. She blinked a few times, then looked at me with a smile, "Boss, aren't you tired? You've been at the very front of all these continuous and ferocious battles..."

I nodded my head, "Yeah, [Destiny]'s game helmet strains your brain. Plus, we've been intensely PKing for a while. It's already five minutes past midnight, playing seventeen hours is probably the limit of a person's body."

Li Mu said, "Just got some news, [Legend] fought a small scale battle with [Vanguard], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Prague] to the east of the fort. [Legend] lost 3000 players while killing 7000 of Ba Huang City's players. Now, most of [Legend] has gone offline to rest, even Fang Ge Que has already logged off. Boss, we should also get some rest, or else, if our comrades continue like this then all of our energy will be spent and everything will only get harder."

I nodded and said, "Then let's rest. All [Zhan Long] players return to the city, repair your equipment and replenish your potions. You must return online at exactly 12 o'clock noon tomorrow."

Matcha said, "Brother Fox's [Zhan Long Second Division] has already risen to Lv 3, it can have up to 900 members now. I have some friends scattered across Ba Huang City that can join so we can get another 900 people. At least we will have more than 1500 members. To be honest, we have way too little people. If we meet [Legend] like this, then we'll probably be instantly devoured by them..."

I couldn't help but laugh, "Haha, thank god the guild has Matcha. Thanks to her, finding new members isn't a problem. You can do it!"

"Yeah!"

.....

One after another, everyone turned towards Ba Huang City and sprinted back. I looked at Fort Zi Feng, and saw the city caught in the midst of a chaotic battle, Ba Huang City's NPC Army Corps had even sent out the Flying Cavalrymen to support the armies. The battle had entered its most intense phase, but it seems that it will still take some time before it's finished. It shouldn't be an issue if we sleep for about 7 hours.

Before returning to the city, I messaged Lin Wan Er. It turns out that she and Dong Cheng Yue had also decided to sleep till around 11 o'clock.

After eating some fast food, they would continue to battle.

I rushed back to Ba Huang City, finished preparing, and went offline.

Taking off the helmet, I felt a swelling sensation in my forehead, and the energy within my body kept rushing around wildly within my body. I clenched my fist and felt the energy around it instantly swirl into a snowflake. I couldn't help but be stunned. I had only used around 40% of my strength and yet I still managed to make shape movement of my energy. Is this a sign that I've actually improved my mastery of ki by a lot?

Whatever, let's sleep first.

After quickly eating two pork buns as well as drinking some cool water, I laid down on my pillow and fell asleep.

.....

I slept all the way until noon, and was woken up by my phone alarm at 11. I hastily got up, washed my face, changed my clothes, and rushed downstairs.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng were already waiting at the entrance of the girls dormitory, but Tang Qi hadn't arrived yet. I asked "Where is Tang Qi?"

Dong Cheng said, "Q-Sword dragged him off to do the dirty work. He had to lead a team of people to keep on attacking the city. Why don't we just go eat first? Don't think too much about him. Brother Xiao Yao, how is the battle between Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City going?"

"Not very well....." I sighed: "Jiu Li City is too strong, Ba Huang is struggling against them, especially against [Legend]. To think that they could actually maintain a 20000+ man army, even [Zhan Long] has already cut down to only 1500 men. Just talking about it makes me want to cry."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Alright alright, that's enough. I've already looked at Jiu Li City VS Ba Huang City's Guild battle standings. [Zhan Long]'s members are all at the top of the rankings. The points

[Zhan Long] has is 11% more than the second place guild [Legend].....”

I was a little speechless, “That was from being desperation and going all out, but because of that, we only have 1500 men left.”

Wan Er looked down at the leaves that had fallen on the ground, and used her little high heels to kick a small rock. She smiled and said “Alright already, [Legend] has registered 100,000 members, 50,000 of which are online right now. To top that off they have several divisions. On the other hand, your [Zhan Long] has around 5000+ people. To be able rival them in terms of points is miraculous. All that killing must have been giving a lot of experience, and all 3000 people in the [Zhan Long] main guild have definitely been a main force in the battles. Aren’t you guys getting close to becoming a Lv 5 guild?”

I grinned: “We’re alright, Lv 4 guild with 77% experience. As we are now, we’ll probably hit Lv 5 by the end of this City War.”

“Isn’t that great.....”

Wan Er tugged my sleeve while walking with me. She gently smiled and said “Level 5 guilds can hold up to a max of 10,000 people, [Zhan Long] shouldn’t have problems recruiting that amount of people. This way, you’ll be able to break 10,000 members easily. Also, you should develop your divisions early on. By the end of this game, whether it’s a guild battle, city battle, or country battle, the way to become the top guild is to have the greatest number of men!”

I nodded “Yeah, I know already. We have been trying our best to accomplish that. Oh yeah, you and Dong Cheng are joining soon right? There aren’t too many days left.....”

“I know~”

Wan Er glanced at me and replied. Her beautiful eyes shining with a mischievous light, “Don’t be too impatient, Dong Cheng and I have been pretty busy these days.”

“Oh? Busy with what?”

Wan Er turned around with her two hands behind her back. She

charmingly looked back at me, her long hair softly fluttering in the wind and her beautiful cheeks making my heart squeeze. She then tilted her head and grinned, "Because, I want to get you a big mysterious gift...."

"Huh? What is it?"

"If I told you then it wouldn't be mysterious anymore, so don't ask!"

"But if you don't say what it is, then I won't be able to sleep" I whined.

"If you ask again, I will have Dong Cheng beat you up....."

"Okay never mind, Let's go eat!"

The three of us quickly sped through the school's buffet style cafeteria, got some food, and finished it in 20 minutes. The two girls quickly went up to the dorms to continue leveling up for the City Battle. I also ran as quickly as I could to my dorm. Log On!

.....

"Shua!"

I appeared in the Ba Huang City Center, it was already noon. Li Mu's message had appeared, "Xiao Yao, you're finally online! Everyone is ready to go. They've finished gathering at the forest on the outskirts of the north side of the city. You should quickly come!"

"Okay!"

Pulling out my sword, I ran out of the city. A little ways away, the closely packed [Zhan Long] warriors were ready, waiting for action. It looked like the Second Division had recruited to the max as we had 900 more men. Also, Qing Qian formed some temporary parties filled with Ba Huang City players who had not taken part in the City War so far. She had gotten about 1600+ more men. Just like this, [Zhan Long] managed to piece together nearly 4000 men.

Passing through Ba Huang Forest and Bowl Valley, the army headed toward Fort Zi Feng. As we swept through the plains, we slaughtered 500 Jiu Li City players. The area south of the fort had originally been Ba Huang City's territory, but now I couldn't see too many players from Ba

Huang City. Everywhere I looked, I saw small groups of players from Jiu Li City roaming the area, killing Ba Huang City players for experience.

When [Zhan Long]'s army arrived, all of those soldiers quickly retreated. I didn't pursue them since I didn't have a high speed cavalry group. It would waste too much time.

Behind us, there were still large amounts of players coming in from [Vanguard], [Prague], [Enemies at the Gate], [Blood Contract] etc. Everyone was rested up. Finally it's time for a fierce battle.

.....

Looking at the City Battle Menu, the two sides didn't have as much of a disparity in terms of men as there was yesterday.

Jiu Li City: 127829 men

Ba Huang city: 91727 men

We were basically competing each other in terms of size. The only thing that concerned me was the fact that 20,000 of the 120,000 players of Jiu Li City were comprised of [Legend]'s elites. Killing these people would be extremely hard. Fang Ge Que is a smart person, and this entire time, he's been able to keep most of his forces intact. The Citadel Guarding Decree will most likely fall in Fang Ge Que's hands, and whoever gets that, is without a doubt, the MVP of this City Battle.

"Look!"

Dancing Forest pointed towards the city walls and said "The NPC's on Fort Zi Feng's walls have been switched to Ba Huang City's NPCs. Does this mean the fort has already been captured by us?"

"No!" General Li Mu pointed toward the east and said, "Look over there. Those plains are full of NPC skirmishes. Holy Crap, that's a lot of people. Looks like the battle is about to finish!"

I looked over there as well. Indeed there were over 100,000 men battling in the plains. Ba Huang City's Nightmare, Imperial Defense, and Desolate Cloud Army, the three great armies, were in the midst of a fierce battle

against Jiu Li City's Heaven's Army!

.....

"What are we going to do now?" Wolf was a little anxious.

I adjusted my grip on the Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword and smiled, "Let's go beside the Desolate Cloud Army and set up our position there. We can also help in the NPC's battle. We can't really kill players right now, so why not kill some NPC's for some points. We need to level up the guild to Lv 5. It would be frustrating to no end if [Zhan Long] doesn't end up being Lv 5 by the end of this!"

"Alright!"

Everyone excitedly went left towards the northern side of the fort. We stopped next to the Desolate Cloud Arm, and arrayed our shields in a formation while our long range players stood very still in the back. In the distance, drums shook the heavens as Jiu Li City's Heaven's Army took the initiative and made the first attack. They didn't show any fear of Ba Huang City's Three Great Armies.

.....

"Hum!"

The Imperial Defense commander-in-chief, Luo Ge, lifted his Ice Demon Axe, waved it around, and gave a battlecry "Ba Huang City's warriors, come and charge at the enemy with me. Let us destroy Jiu Li City's Lin Qiong for the Duke!!!"

The pounding of hooves rang all around as it signaled the beginning of the great battle.

Chapter 393: The Destructive Force

“Peng Peng Peng.....”

One by one, the Heaven’s Cavalrymen’s armored horses smashed against [Zhan Long]’s defensive formation. Many of the [Zhan Long] Monks and Knights were knocked back several paces, but managed to tenaciously hold on. These Lv 80 Phantom Tier NPCs were seriously too powerful, it was extremely difficult to defend against them. Once blocked, however, the city war points and experience from killing them would be abundant!

“Brace yourselves!”

I yelled out and swung both of my swords. My Cold Iron Sword struck heavily on one of the NPC knights and a “Peng” burst forth as he was blasted backwards. In regards to strength and defense, I still beat these Lv 80 Phantom Tier monsters. Simultaneously, Matcha, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and the others all supported a spot on the frontline while Dancing Forest and the other long range players crowd controlled from behind. Consequently, the assaults of the Heaven’s Cavalry could only shake our frontline, but couldn’t break through us!”

“Kill!”

The moment to counterattack had arrived. Spells and arrows flew over the top of our heads into the swarm of monsters. The assault from Heaven’s Army had been purely a cavalry charge without any other tactical plans for after the charge, resulting in them being severely disadvantaged. In the blink of an eye, hundreds of Heaven’s Cavalrymen died on the frontline. “Shua Shua Shua”, countless rays of light cascaded onto the [Zhan Long] team. Many people leveled up from the monster’s generous experience while the guild experience also increased rapidly. We were rapidly getting closer and closer to Lv 5. For now, the China Server only had a single Lv 5 guild, which was [Legend]’s main guild. Since our contribution in the city war was phenomenal, [Zhan Long] might become the second to rush to a Lv 5 guild if it is lucky enough.

Because all the teams were formed by players of the same guild, almost all the experience obtained by everyone will be converted into guild experience. Within less than one hour, the guild points of the [Zhan Long]'s main guild increased by nearly 400 percentage points!

.....

The fierce battle continued raging. A “Hong” sound thundered as grey clouds swirled and rotated crazily in the sky and streaks of thunder lacerated the earth ferociously. Amidst the fierce wind, a young General stood loftily in the sky, clothed in bloody red armor and held a long sword in his hand. He was actually flying. In addition, a beautiful line of words floated above his head—

Lin Qiong Lv 100 Thunder Sword Saint

Main City: Jiu Li City

Position: Commander of Heaven's Army

Introduction: Lin Qiong, the youngest Sword Saint Tier general of Jiu Li City. Rumor has it that Lin Qiong broke through the Heavenly Level when he was 17 years old. He achieved Sword Saint Level at the young age of 21 years old. In addition, he is adept in controlling the wind and possessed the power to summon thunder. The Thunder Wind Sword in his hand swept across the mainland without opposition. He instantly became the right-hand man of Jiu Li City's ruler. Along with Huo Li, the commander of Huo Li Army, they became the two pillars of Jiu Li City.

.....

I couldn't see the details of Lin Qiong's stats, but they must be very OP and a lot stronger than that Qin Hai which we killed earlier. Just based on the thunderstrike from his first appearance, we knew this BOSS would be extremely ruthless.

Staring at the Imperial Defense army's cavalrymen advancing and attacking, the corner of Lin Qiong's mouth curved up as he opened his left hand. Streaks of wind coiled around his fingers while he smiled and said, “I control the power of the Heavens and the Earth and inexhaustible

winds guide my light. Rip Apart! Transform these ants into dusts—
[Boundless Wind]!”

“Hong!”

The earth trembled slightly, and amorphous streaks of wind condensed above the ground. The next moment, the wind abruptly surged forward and formed slashes of knifelike wind that cut through the Imperial Defense army’s cavalymen. These extremely sharp blades of wind actually cut the armor of the knights into pieces and mutilated limbs and body parts danced in the air as blood splashed in all directions. The earth was instantly dyed red by the fresh blood.

.....

“Ah.....”

Luo Ge, who was fiercely charging forward with his battle axe in hand, shuddered, and his heart ached at the sight. The battle axe in his hand trembled slightly as he lifted his head and roared furiously, “Lin Qiong, you monster! Give me back my brothers’ life! You demon! Killer!”

A “Pa” sound was heard as Luo Ge stepped on the war horse and leaped up towards the sky like a sharp arrow. He raised the Ice Demon Battle Axe in his hand and threw it out. A frosty long curve was formed in the sky and it was extremely magnificent!

“Hehe.....”

Lin Qiong casted a smile as he raised one of his hands and pressed downwards with his palm. Immediately, an amorphous and powerful swell of air was condensed beneath his palm and he bellowed, “Fall to the earth! Weakling of Ba Huang City!”

“Peng!”

Luo Ge’s Ice Demon Battle Axe seemed to be slashing a metal wall, and was blasted away forcefully. He was even blasted down into the ground by the strength of Lin Qiong’s palm. After a loud boom, a deep hole was left on the ground. Blood ran from the corner of his mouth, and when Luo Ge stood up he leaned on the battle axe as he breathed heavily. Dense hatred

concentrated in his eyes as his Imperial Defense army was being slaughtered. Almost 50000 men were about to be obliterated within a minute. This Imperial Defense army was also destined to be a legend that vanished from the world. This is something he himself as the commander could not bear.

“Hong Hong Hong.....”

Streaks of a blood-red whirlwind condensed around Luo Ge, and he howled incessantly. The expression on Luo Ge’s face was distorted as his muscles bulged. It seemed like his veins would burst at any time. His whole body bulked up by 20%, and the Ice Demon Axe in his hand transmitted a sensation that only Godly weapons could. His armor was peeled off piece by piece, revealing the muscular body and skin tinged with the color of blood seeping out.

“Lord Luo Ge! A NPC General’s face turned pale and yelled, “Don’t! This..... Puppet of Light spell cannot be activated. It will absorb all your blood and flesh and make you the puppet of power. This is a skill that uses your life as the price. This absolutely cannot be used. How are we going to report to the Duke. Please, don’t.....”

Luo Ge held up his battle axe and turned back to look at this subordinate. The corners of his mouth curved up into a calm smile, “I cannot watch you guys get slaughtered with my own eyes and do nothing. We do things for the honor of our kingdom, and this is the duty of every soldier. If I must die, let me die before you guys. This is also what a commander should do. I do not want to see all of you battle to death, and be the only one living in this world in the end.

As he finished talking, Luo Ge leapt up as he stepped into the sky leaving a crimson trail behind him?? The Ice Demon Axe danced around, creating a crimson cyclone that he angrily threw right at Lin Qiong. He roared out, “Lin Qiong, you bastard, why don’t you have a taste of the seven slashes of [Puppet of Light]!”

“Keng!”

The spinning Ice Demon Axe hit violently upon Lin Qiong’s long sword.

Surprisingly, Lin Qiong's body in the sky trembled slightly, and was pushed a dozen meters backwards. This was the first time he had been knocked backwards!

As the veins of Luo Ge's body popped out, he opened one of his hands and thundered furiously, "The second strike!"

The whirlwind enshrouded and enveloped Lin Qiong's body. Luo Ge had already used the strength of the whirlwind to control Lin Qiong's movements as his battle axe smashed onto Lin Qiong's shoulder.

Lin Qiong gnashed his teeth and raised his hand, throwing a punch at Luo Ge!

"Peng!"

The second strike of [Puppet of Light] was resolved. In the midst of Luo Ge's roars, the third strike, another fierce strike struck and unexpectedly blasted Lin Qiong backwards again. The fourth strike was coming next, and the head of an evil beast materialized above his Ice Demon Axe. Crimson flames exploded as the fourth strike was being prepared. Luo Ge's body trembled even more, and drips of blood flowed down his skin. His veins finally couldn't withstand such a strong energy and burst.

"Luo Ge....."

Lin Qiong's emotionless eyes revealed pity as he said, "I admired you as the brother of Luo Lei from Ba Huang City. You are worthy of your Ba Huang royal blood. Unfortunately, you and I are enemies today and so you must die. No matter how strong your [Puppet of Light] is, and how sharp your Ice Demon Axe is, your ending today was foretold..... now, rest assured and die. I will send your brother, Luo Lei, to reunite with you in hell!"

"Weng!"

Lin Qiong forcefully lifted his long sword. As the vibrating radiance of the thunder shone from the blade, he struck directly downwards, striking before the fourth strike of the [Puppet of Light] had fully accumulated its strength!

“Hong.....”

The furious thunder swallowed the heavens. After receiving such a fierce strike from Lin Qiong, Luo Ge's staggering body finally could not withstand. He was swallowed by countless flashes thunders and lightning and was torn into pieces. His flesh was burned and crumbled into dusts!

“Pa!”

Ice Demon Axe revolved in the sky and struck forcefully on the ground. The cyclone slowly dispersed, along with the death of its master. The radiance of the Ice Demon Battle Axe faded, as if it was devastated because of Luo Ge's death.

.....

“Lord Luo Ge! Commander Luo Ge!”

The three armies grieved as they stared at Luo Ge crumbling into dust in the sky and drifting away. The soldiers and generals of the Imperial Defense army all knelt on the ground and shed rivers of tears.

However, tears are not needed on the battlefield. Lin Qiong raised one of his arms and roared furiously, “Heaven's Army, charge forward and annihilate the Imperial Defense army. Change the Seven big armies of Ba Huang City into the Six big Armies!”

The cavalymen on the battlefield charged forward.. In the twinkling of an eye, the Imperial Defense army seemed to turn to dust as almost everyone was wiped out.

“Ahhhhh.....”

At the rear of the battle formation, Luo Lei, the Duke of Ba Huang, clenched his hands as his eyes were filled with redness. He exclaimed, “Damn Lin Qiong, this damn bastard. I.....I, Luo Lei, swear that I will slay this murderer in this life! Men! Who will battle for me? Who will challenge Heaven's Army and present me with Lin Qiong's head in hand!”

In the midst of the crowds, a undead general came out with a dagger in hand. His hollowed eyes were bloodshot and he spoke with a hoarse voice,

“Your highness, Raikes of the Nightmare army requests to battle. I will fight Lin Qiong and kill him!”

This was none other than Raikes, the one ranked fifth within the seven armies, the commander of Nightmare army and an assassin of the Undead race.

At this moment, someone among the crowd came out. It was Angela, the commander of the Han Feng Army and the legendary Moon Elf Princess. She held her godly weapon, The Destroyer, in her hand and uttered softly with reddened eyes, “Father, your daughter is willing to fight and take revenge for Uncle Luo Ge. I will present back to you with the head of Lin Qiong! The soldiers and horses of the Heaven’s army are strong and powerful and the numbers of the Heaven’s knights are many. We only have a chance of winning if Blizzard Wind Army and Nightmare Army work together!”

Luo Lei’s arm trembled slightly as he gnashed his teeth and said, “Alright then, you and Raikes can go kill that scum, Lin Qiong..... This battle can only end in victory..... Angela, please be careful. I..... I cannot lose more.....”

Angela stood up and her eyes redden as she replied, “I know, father.....”

.....

Angela mounted up the white horse with The Destroyer in hand and shouted delicately, “Blizzard Wind Army, to the battlefield!”

Chapter 394: I'm Taking this Woman

“Keng!”

The lance clashed against my Cold Iron Sword, and I took the chance to grab onto it, pulling down a Sky Cavalryman from his horse. Qing Qian and Matcha then cut him down with a flurry of slashes. At the same time, he dropped a Sky Cavalry Card that raised attack by 20% and health by 10%. The card was actually extremely useful for situations like this. I gave it to Qing Qian, as the true path of the king was having higher health. At this point, Assassin's no longer solely add stat points to agility. Any Assassin who had less than 5000 health was pretty much instant kill trash. No matter how good they were at dodging, it's useless in the end.

The Sky Cavalrymen's attacks became more and more fierce, and to top it off there was no end to them. On the other hand, everyone from [Zhan Long] was profiting from this; quite a few have already leveled up. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and Bai Qi weren't coming off of the frontlines at this point, it was such a great leveling opportunity that nobody was willing to pass it up.

Along the entire frontline, [Enemies at the Gate], [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon] had all lined up in formations, while 1000 yards outside of the the Jiu Li City front line, [Legend], [Judgement], and [Appearance Alliance] had all appeared. Understanding slowly dawned upon everyone. This was a blank period, a time where both sides just did their best to collect more City War Points. Whoever kills the most number of NPC's, becomes the final MVP.

.....

Not far from here, [Thousand Burial] also appeared. Not Ordinary lifted his battle axe, signalling for You Yi and the others to come to a halt. They were guarding a 20 yard long frontline. [Thousand Burial] hadn't participated in much of the battles in the city war, and so they were able to keep their forces rather intact. You Yi raised his longsword and walked along the front line while shouting, “Get your spirits up! The more you

kill the more you earn, brothers. Let's do our best to rush our guild level to four!"

Bai Mo Yan held a longbow in her hand and sent out three arrows, each thudding heavily into a Sky Cavalryman. She furrowed her eyebrows and said, "You idiot, You Yi. We should move as a single unit and kill them one at a time. If you use AOE skills you'll attract too much aggro, making the pressure on our Healers too much. If they only healed you then everyone else would die!"

You Yi grinned, "Eh.... I didn't think of that. Vice Guild Master, you're right. He he, why don't you command the battle on the frontlines then? I'm just a dumbass, hehe, I get it....."

Not Ordinary swung his battle axe over his shoulder and said, "Exactly! You Yi, your battle tactics are terrible, why don't you let Mo Mo command. You can rest, haha...."

Bai Mo Yan defiantly glared at You Yi, "Yesterday, didn't someone here brag about how strong he was? Something about how they want to fight 300 duels against me?"

You Yi's body shivered and he said, "That..... actually, the 300 battles I was talking about was for something else, not the ones in the game. Sister Mo Mo, you should understand...."

Bai Mo Yan suddenly stopped, then lightly positioned her long bow and raised her Archer's short skirt, revealing her pure white thighs in the moonlight. Sweetly she said, "Oh? You actually want to fight with me like that 300 times? How about I give you my address and we can log off and stick that flag in and 'battle' a few times?"

You Yi gaped at her, "Really?"

"As if!" Bai Mo Yan giggled, "For a pervert like you, Sister just has to curl her finger to create an army of my own. Why wouldn't I find someone who lasts longer?"

You Yi grew furious, "How do you know I won't last long?!"

Bai Mo Yan glanced at You Yi and said, "Your face is pale, your legs are

shaking, your tongue is white and your breath is short. Aren't those the symptoms of kidney disease? You don't have to explain, those are just excuses.....”

You Yi glanced at Not Ordinary, “Boss, can I leave the guild?”

Not Ordinary laughed out and said, “Useless!”

.....

Beside [Thousand Burial], [Hero's Mound: First Division]'s was also out front. Wang Ze Cheng raised his iron spear and towered over the front line. At his side, Ageless Beauty put her hand on her dagger and said, “[Thousand Burial] took in Bai Mo Yan's [First Meetings] and a few other small guilds. Now, their total count is around 2000 people. Its as though Not Ordinary really wants to make his guild big again....”

Wang Ze Cheng's eyes turned cold, “Hmph, they're just ants trying to claim that they're king. It's pretty much desperation. With Not Ordinary's intelligence, [Thousand Burial] is nothing. Even if they have one Bai Mo Yan, heck, even if they have 10 Bai Mo Yan's, they're still just cannon fodder in the end!”

Yan Suo nodded, “Yup, my love!”

“What?” Wang Ze Cheng looked at her.

Yan Suo said, “Well, you've created four other divisions of our guild and we almost have 10,000 members in total, if Q-Sword finds out, then wouldn't that old bastard lash out at you? Keep in mind, [Hero's Mound] is an empire that Q-Sword fought for with his own bare hands....”

Wang Ze Cheng smirked, “Don't worry. Q-Sword told me to go to Ba Huang City because he wasn't planning on dealing with me anyway. The more chaos I create in Ba Huang City, the happier he'll be. Wouldn't it fit in perfectly with the Guild Master's plans if I were to deal with [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Zhan Long]? Maybe the more divisions I create, the happier Q-Sword will be, because he knows that there are problems between Li Xiao Yao and I, therefore, I would never team up with [Zhan Long] to fight against [Hero's Mound]. Therefore, no matter

what I do, Q-Sword will never be unhappy.”

“Oh, then that’s good...” Yue Suo tugged Wang Ze Cheng’s arm, her eyes filled with burning desire, “After we finish fighting this battle, we should rest up. Do you want to sleep at my place?”

“Alright....” Wang Ze Cheng revealed a perverted smile and softly pinched Yan Suo’s shoulder, “What’s wrong? It’s only been two days since we last saw each other and you want some more already?”

Yan Suo coyly whispered, “Not at all, I just.... I just want to see you that’s all.”

“Alright, I get it. Be good and kill the monsters for now. When Jiu Li City’s [Legend] and [Judgement] begin their attack, we’ll immediately retreat. There’s no point in going against them head on. [Hero’s Mound: Division One]’s goal is that Citadel Defending Decree. Seeing as we won’t be able to get the title of MVP, then we’ll at least get that Citadel Defending Decree!”

“Yup yup. That’s a very wise decision!”

.....

As the players frantically cut off the NPCs’ heads, the situation on the battlefield was constantly shifting.

“Whoosh!”

The Nightmare army commander in chief, Raikes, raised both of his arms and bent his knees* and suddenly rushed into the sky, flying straight into Lin Qiong. He raised his dagger and it suddenly turned into two.

TL Note: Go Nyan Cat, Go!!

TL Note 2* : “I.. Have.... The... POWERRR!” (He-Man)

“Oh?[Nightmare’s Strike]?” Lin Qiong was stunned, but quickly recovered and smiled coldly, “You actually dare toy with an axe with insignificant skills like yours? Raikes, do you have a death wish? Alright then, why don’t I fulfill your wish then!”

He swept out his blade and “Peng!” shattered the strength of

[Nightmare's Strike]. Lin Qiong then leapt up, his two hands gripping his sword as he fiercely cut at Raikes with a lightning net!

“Keng!”

Raikes crossed his two daggers and parried Lin Qiong's attack head on. At the same time, Raikes' lips curved into a smile, “Lin Qiong, how does it feel to have a death god descend upon you?”

“Huh?”

Lin Qiong suddenly realized what was going on, as a beautiful shadow suddenly appeared behind in the air behind him. Angela put all of her destructive force into one attack!

“Peng!”

As the force dissipated and the air cleared up, a lightning shield suddenly appeared on Lin Qiong's back. He let out a maniacal laugh and swung his blade out. Angela quickly raised her iron umbrella to parry it. The impact of the blow forced her body to fly backwards. Lin Qiong then forcefully spun around, and landed a heavy kick on Raikes shoulder. All of his strength exploded in that second, throwing Raikes backwards into the air. He fell to the ground with a loud bang, punching a ten meter radius hole in the ground. Miserably, he gripped his dagger as he stood up. “Pu” He spit out the blood in his mouth. He had suffered a great injury.

.....

“You bastard Lin Qiong!”

Raikes abruptly straightened his back, then looked up at the sky, only to find that he couldn't see Lin Qiong. His heart froze. He suddenly whirled around and saw that Lin Qiong stood right behind him, his Thunder Wind Sword filled with electricity. Lin Qiong thrust his sword!

“Pu chi!”

Blood burst out as the blade penetrated Raikes' body. The bloody blade had stabbed through Raikes' back, the electricity burning the wound open, creating a big bloody hole. Raikes' heart had been stabbed and

burned. Within moments, his soul had left his body and he knelt to the ground, dead. Even if he was one of the undead, he was still annihilated by Lin Qiong.

“Commander-in-chief Raikes!”

A group of Nightmare generals were visibly shaken. No one thought that this Jiu Li City Sword Saint would be so strong that he’d kill two of Ba Huang City’s famous generals!

.....

To these charging Nightmare cavalymen, all Lin Qiong did was grin and casually wave his hand. From his palm, raging flames burst forth, creating a several hundred meter burning field. He was practically god like. Countless cavalymen howled in pain as they burned to death in the field of flames. The Nightmare Army’s losses were so cruel that I couldn’t even bear to keep watching ????

High up in the sky, Angela’s beautiful figure descended again. The godly weapon, The Destroyer, smashed onto Lin Qiong’s shoulder as a “Peng” sound burst forth. However, the strike was knocked away by Lin Qiong’s energy. Yet, Angela did not give up. She raised her snowy white legs and kicked Lin Qiong in the chest with the battle boots that glowed with a blood-red radiance!

“Err.....”

Lin Qiong humphed in pain as he was kicked several meters backwards, leaving a long mark on the ground. He stood up embarrassingly as a small trickle of blood came out of the corner of his mouth. He looked up at Angela and smiled, “The foster-daughter of Ba Huang City’s ruler. Beautiful moon elf princess, Angela. Your strength really draws the attention of all men. Why did Ba Huang City form an alliance by marrying off Princess Lyla instead of betrothing you, Angela, to me? If so, I, Lin Qiong, would be willing to abandon this battle. Hahahaha....”

Angela gnashed her teeth and yelled, “You demon! Don’t even think of touching Ba Huang City! Even if my body gets burned to dust, I will not receive your pity. I will never marry you, a demon with bloody hands!”

Lin Qiong laughed out loud as he turned around to face Luo Lei in the distance and shouted, "Luo Lei, you old fellow! Now, you listen to me. I want your daughter, Angela. She will be my woman! And no one can stop me from getting her. I have decided to raze Ba Huang City as the betrothal gift! Haha! Duke Luo Lei, what's your opinion towards my kind suggestion?"

Luo Lei was so angry that his shoulders trembled. He raised his blade, and roared furiously, "Jiu Li City! Ba Huang City and you guys are sworn enemies! All armies, charge forward for me! Crush the trashes of Jiu Li City!"

Chapter 395: The True Rival

The focus of the war seemed to be no longer on Fort Zi Feng, but on the fierce battles happening at the plain under the Fort. As the elites of Ba Huang City were all out, the seven big armies all pressed on. Unwilling to be overlooked, Jiu Li City also sent out their top legion—Huo Li Army. The group of cavalymen dressed in fiery looking clothes appeared on the plain. There was even a group of wind mages dancing in the sky, and moving forward as they wielded the wind and blasted Ba Huang City's cavalymen on the plain.

If the deaths were to be calculated during this battle, it wouldn't be considered an exaggeration to say there were millions. There were countless numbers of NPC cavalries, swordsmen and long spearmen charging at one another on the battlefield. There were numerous deaths happening every second. Lin Qiong, Angela, Luo Hai, Purple Star and Lachlan, the high level BOSSes also slashed recklessly among the crowds causing a scene of utter chaos.

The strong smell of blood filled my lungs as I wiped off the blood splatters on my face. The winds of the plain blew violently, and the War Swept Cloak Fluttered behind me. The white cloak had already been dyed completely red, and had numerous holes pierced by the sharp swords and long spears, while the Magic Spite Armor that protected my body was covered with sword marks. These were the results of battling for a long time.

On the frontline of [Zhan Long], Li Mu, Old K, Qing Qian, and Matcha were not in a better state than me. We had all tried our best to kill as many NPCs as possible.

“Kacha!”

Qing Qian sent her dagger out softly and shanked a low-health NPC knight. She pulled the dagger out slowly and glanced up at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, our guild's experience bar is already at Lv 4 with 91% experience. I estimate that we will reach Lv 5 within 2 hours.”

I nodded, “Yeah! A Lv 4 guild holds up to a max of 3000 players whereas a level 5 guild holds up to a max of 10,000 people. After the city war, the main guild of [Zhan Long] will be expanded to a ten thousand members guild. However, we must be cautious when we recruit people. Perfidious* ones absolutely cannot be accepted!”

Editor note*Means people who aren’t trustworthy/unloyal

Qing Qian grinned and answered, “Yeah. I know!”

Old K said joyfully, “Tsk. Tsk. A ten thousand member guild would be great! Our 10 team leaders would then all be promoted to leaders of teams with thousand people!”

Qing Qian giggled, “Actually, our position of Vice Guild Master is still empty.....”

“Shh.....”

Wolf chuckled softly, “No one can covet the position of Vice Guild Master. Brother Xiao Yao has specially reserved that for Big Missy.”

I glared and scolded, “Don’t talk about those things. Do your best on killing soldiers!”

.....

The fierce battle continued, and two hours later, the sound of bells suddenly rang in my ears—

“Ding!”

System Notifications: Congratulations. Your guild, [Zhan Long] has successfully leveled up to a Lv 5 guild. As this is the second guild to reach Lv 5, every member of your guild will be rewarded 10% of this level’s experience.

Tsk, Tsk. 10% experience! Not bad! It’s better than nothing!

The level up of the guild brought utmost joy to everyone. Yet, sounds of clashes suddenly resounded from afar at this moment. Li Mu’s eyes flashed with coldness and held up his sword as he yelled, “Oh no! Have the players of Jiu Li City launched an attack?”

“How many people do they still have? Are they still attacking?” Old K asked.

“I have no idea.....”

However, as the NPCs of the Heaven’s Army from Jiu Li City began to decrease, a group of players charged forward through the smoke and fire. Everyone of the players had the Jiu Li City’s badge on their shoulder. F*ck. It is the players of Jiu Li City launching an attack! Are these people crazy? Charging into the field of our Ba Huang City’s players. They are totally trying to get themselves killed!

Positioning my Emperor Qin’s Sword, I bellowed, “Prepare to engage in battle! Kill them all! Show them who’s the owner of this field!”

“Yes!”

Wang Jian, Li Mu, Bai Qi, Old K and Wolf all stood at the front of the array, preparing to confront the attacks of the enemies. Simultaneously, I noticed that in the group of Jiu Li City players charging forward, not one of them belonged to a major guild and even the strongest one was part of a guild ranked below 20th. This was weird.

“Hua!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword swept past and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] blasted across the players as they howled in pain, while dozens of people were killed in an instant. This proved that the battle strength of these players was all seriously ordinary. The arrows and magic danced in the sky and cascaded on the multitude of Jiu Li City players, producing screams of pain that reached the heavens. In the blink of an eye, thousands of corpses appeared at the front of [Zhan Long]’s field.

“This.....” Slashing and killing with the bloody battle axe in hand as Old K wondered, “What is going on? Are these people just here to die?”

“No!” Li Mu answered as he narrowed his eyes, “If I guessed correctly, these people are here to exhaust us. Unfortunately, they have chosen the wrong army. I am afraid exhaustion is impossible in the field of [Zhan Long]. They can only exhaust our red and blue potions.”

I glanced left and right towards the fields of the Ba Huang City's players. [Enemies At The Gate], [Vanguard], [Thousand Burial], and [Hero's Mound] were already battling the players of Jiu Li City and were killing with extreme vigor. However, [Thousand Burial], [First Division of Hero Mound], and [Wrath of the Heroes], the few slightly weaker guilds, suffered some losses as their members collapsed continuously under the hasty attacks of the enemies.

"Boss, don't you think it's a bit weird?" Matcha looked at me with her beautiful eyes that were filled with suspicion.

I nodded, "Yeah, It is weird. These players of the inferior guilds were here to die, but where did [Legend] go?"

Matcha answered, "[Legend] left the frontline fifteen minutes ago. It is almost night time now and the wind is blowing. It formed a sandstorm which caused extremely low visibility in the sandy region. Boss...."

"I understand now....." I shuddered, gnashed my teeth and said, "[Legend] must have rerouted to our rear! They are preparing to destroy the strength of Ba Huang City by attacking from both sides."

"Then, what do we do?" Li Mu asked in shock.

I suddenly turned around with my sword held up as I shouted loudly, "All members of [Zhan Long], turn around! Our enemy might be behind us. Notify all the guilds of Ba Huang City! Look out for the ones coming from our rear!"

"Yes!"

Immediately, the three big guilds, [Zhan Long],[Enemies At The Gate] and [Blood Contract], turned around together. [Zhan Long]'s 2500+ people, [Enemies At The Gate]'s 5000+ people and [Blood Contract]'s 1700+ people combined forces into a formation of about 10,000 people, and the rear of the formation was formed by the Ba Huang City's players. The sandstorm wreaked havoc as with the fierce wind we could hardly open our eyes. F*ck! We were located facing the direction of the wind which worried me even more. Jiu Li City had the advantage of the time and place. Fang Ge Que was indeed smart, knowing how to take

advantage of the storm at night. We would definitely suffer greatly in this battle!

“They are here!”

Li Mu yelled, and among the distant sand and dust, a huge mass of people surged towards us. Suddenly, a dark shadow rushed out of the concealment formed by the sand. It was the Guild Master of [Judgement], Ye Lai, who held a battle axe in his hand. There were flames enshrouding his battle axe and Ye Lai looked towards us, the ten thousand people, and burst out in laughter, “Hahaha, It’s really lucky to have the powerful and smart Xiao Yao Zi Zai as my opponent in this City War! Come! My friend! Battle with [Judgement]!”

Behind Ye Lai, 3000+ people of [Judgement] stormed out. Immediately, flames enveloped Ye Lai’s battle axe, and under the effect of raging flames, [Holy Fire Cut] directly blasted on the shoulder of a team leader of [Blood Contract], causing a deadly strike!

“7128!”

After that instant kill, Ye Lai did not stop but kept slashing into the crowds. His battle axe swept past and killed the second person using [Skyslayer Slash]. He opened his hand and flames roared out. He then bawled, “[Burning Tornado]!”

The fierce wind mingled with flames wreaked havoc among the crowds, and a dozen members of [Blood Contract] were killed in the blink of an eye. Han Bei Song thundered furiously, “F*ck it. What’s the meaning of this? Is Ye Lai seeing us, [Blood Contract], as a dish of food?”

Hastily dashing, Han Bei Song suddenly leaped and swung a [Skyslayer Slash] while he was still descending from the air!

Seeing this, Ye Lai bent down slightly, and the effect of [Divine Weapon Breaker] materialized above the battle axe. The skill was sent out directly, and crushed Han Bei Song’s [Skyslayer Slash] with a “Pa” sound. He then raised his fist and punched Han Bei Song’s chest armor!

“Peng!”

Han Bei Song slid several meters backwards as sand and dust flew up from beneath his feet. Fright filled his eyes as he cursed, “F*ck. Ye Lai, you bastard!”

Behind Han Bei Song, Who’s Blue hurriedly healed him and yelled, “Guild Master, you can’t use strength to fight him. You will get killed. Get the Archers to target him. With their help, it wouldn’t be hard to kill a Berserker!”

“Yes. Get the Mages’ [Indigo Sea Arrow]s to also target him!”

Ye Lai was a smart person. After ferociously killing about 30 people, he immediately retreated in haste, returning to his position. He then led 3000+ members of [Judgement], and charged forward as he laughed out loud, “It’s useless. There’s no need to request [Zhan Long] and [Enemies At The Gate] to save you guys. They can’t even save themselves!”

.....

“Shua Shua Shua!”

Among the flying sand, shadows leaped out one by one. There were two heavy armor players, Lu Chuan Yang and Xuan Yuan Feng, the core players of [Legend]. Next, amid a flash of light, Fang Ge Que appeared elegantly before our field. A faint smile was formed at the corner of his mouth as he spoke, “We can finally battle [Zhan Long] directly. All members of [Legend], attack with all your strength and crush [Zhan Long]! Don’t let any more miracles happen in Ba Huang City!”

I held up my Emperor Qin’s Sword horizontally with my right hand, and lifted my left arm to slowly draw my Cold Iron Sword out. I stared straight ahead and yelled, “Brothers of [Zhan Long], our strongest opponent has appeared. They are [Legend]. They are an undying myth. I understand that you all might feel the same as me, feeling despair and fear, but please believe in me. There was no [Legend] in this world since the beginning. If we work together in this battle, victory will be not be far from us. Hear my command, and charge forward! No matter how many people [Legend] has, kill and clear them all!”

Holding the metal spear, One Second Hero’s hands trembled slightly,

unknown of whether it's excitement or fear. The corner of his mouth curved and he exclaimed, "It's just death, nothing more. Charge with me!"

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and the others all charged forward and attacked. There was an unknown number of enemies among the flying sand and dust, but we had no way to retreat and could only charge forward. [Legend]'s team of long range Mages was acclaimed as being invincible. If we continued to battle using trench warfare, there may be no chance for us.

.....

Lu Chun Yang raised the sword in his hand and laughed out loud, "[Zhan Long]'s people are here! They really aren't afraid of death! F*ck it! The team led by Xiao Yao Zi Zai is indeed braver than the guilds like [Vanguard] and [Prague]!"

Xuan Yuan Feng pointed to the front with his long spear and yelled, "[Legend], attack! Crush our opponents and let them know the meaning of the abyss of despair!"

Chapter 396: The 1000 Men

“Kill!”

[Zhan Long]’s group of elites rushed out, with Li Mu and I at the front. As we dashed forward side by side, I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], aiming to hit at least 20 [Legend] members. However, I did not expect this group of [Legend]’s melee players to react so quickly. With a “Shua”, the group of [Legend] players parted to both sides, only 12 of them took damage from my AOE strike while the 9 others dodged!

“Hong!”

A deep crack was created on the barren sand as a string of damage numbers flew up—

“3718!”

“3137!”

“4123!”

.....

Lu Chun Yang held up his sword and shouted furiously, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s attack strength is too powerful. Avoid him and kill the other [Zhan Long] players. Don’t try to fight Xiao Yao Zi Zai head on. Get a group of Knights to encircle him!”

With this, Lu Chun Yang darted out. His sword flashed and the energy of his sword cut through the crowds. One by one, [Legend]’s Swordsmen dashed out beside him. They aided him with [Combo]s while freely using [Skyshaker Slash] and [Blade Rush]. Immediately, dozens of [Zhan Long]’s melee players collapsed in a river of blood. It was heartbreaking to watch this happen before my eyes. These were all elites of [Zhan Long] that followed me, and fought by my side for eighteen hours in this city war!

“Block their slashes!” Li Mu ordered furiously. He then sent out a [Covering Sword Slash] into the advancing crowds. Unfortunately, he was unable to stop the numerous members of [Legend] from invading.

Old K raised his battle axe and slashed sideways, activating a [Whirlwind Slash]. Dong Cheng Lei swung his battle axe vigorously. With a shout, a whirlwind raged, and many melee players of [Legend] were cut down and sent flying.

In the distance, Fang Ge Que could no longer bear with the losses. He waved his fan and bolted out in a flash. With a raise of his hand, he sent the attack combination of [Ice Rock Blast]+[Blazewind Lock]. It was almost as if there was no casting time. The two explosive skills were directly tossed on Old K and two damage numbers leaped out—

“3871 ! ”

“4127 ! ”

Fortunately, Old K was still left at critical health level after being healed midway by Darling Duckling, narrowly escaping death by the skin of his teeth. He hastily used [Oppose the Heavens] and forcefully leaped, towering over his opponent while slashing down heavily with his battleaxe, roaring, “Fang Ge Que, die!”

“Shua!”

“MISS!”

Fang Ge Que easily dodged Old K’s [Savage Jump Slash] with the use of [Dimensional Leap]. Unexpectedly, he also left an ice explosion skill on the same spot, thus hitting Old K and instantly emptying most of his health!

I watched in fright as I exclaimed, “Old K, retreat! Don’t force yourself!”

Among all of [Zhan Long], only my words could command Old K. With an angry expression, he held the battle axe, and dashed fiercely towards the back, slashing and killing while running for his life. Fang Ge Que did not continue pursuing him, but aimed towards the other members. His fan that was enshrouded in flames shuddered, and a [Fire and Ice Storm] devoured a group of low health [Zhan Long] Musketeers in the distance. Even Fox was hit and he doubled over in pain while backing away. He was almost killed instantly. This showed how terrifying Fang Ge Que’s magic

attack strength is.

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Qing Qian could only back away as she was pursued and attacked by a few Swordsmen. As she was still running, she shouted loudly, “Their battle strategy is to cut us up. Watch out! You have advanced too far ahead. You must be careful!”

Before Qing Qian’s words even left her mouth, a group of heavy shield Knight’s surrounded me. Each of them had at least 2800 defense points. Just seeing the confidence in each of their faces told me that something was wrong. Without a word, the Knights charged at me with their shield raised. “Peng Peng Peng” they smashed their shields into my body. This was an effect from a shield strike. Did they want to use this method to strike me to death?

“Peng!”

I suffered a dozen strikes from the Knights, feeling the pain of having my body ripped up over and over again. My heart froze. Cyclones of wind began to rise around my body with a “Shua Shua Shua” as I began to wave my two swords. “Peng!” I knocked away a Knight. I then crossed my swords and slashed out, cutting down another one of the Knights. I took out a God Army Card and let it hover over my hand as it activated [Soul Army], an indiscriminate killing skill! At the same time, the Seven Star positions began to move, and “Shua!” I appeared on the other side, escaping the shield prison. With a raise of my hand, I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] followed by [Great Realm of Desolation], effectively sending another group of people to their graves!

“Gr....”

My Flaming Tiger God growled as it left the pet dimension and leapt out onto the battlefield, ready to kill. With a [Burstfire Raid], it charged into a crowd of people. I charged sideways, taking numerous damage while constantly dealing out attacks. My 10% drain was able to help me barely survive, but I had to be continuously on the move while changing my position; once I’m targeted by a skill, I’ll be slaughtered!

Fang Ge Que glared at me from a distance, then waved his fan and activated [Spiral Ice Dance]!

I saw that happen, and slightly lowered my body as I activated [Blade Rush]. A big MISS floated up from behind me. At the same time, I crossed my swords and hacked down a Knight, bellowing, “Fang Ge Que, you wanna kill me? Keep dreaming!”

Fang Ge Que gripped his fan and didn’t say anything, but his eyes were filled with fury.

.....

Fighting while I retreated, I soon met up with Li Mu and Wang Jian, only to find out that each were covered in numerous wounds and blood stains. Old K was practically burnt black. The long range [Legend] team had finally arrived. There were at least 7000 Mages in the group. A scorched earth battle tactic was especially cruel. Even a guild as strong as [Zhan Long] would be swallowed up by the fire.

“Pu chi!”

Piercing an enemy with his blade, Li Mu looked over, his eyes red from all of the killing. Distressed, he said, “Xiao Yao, if we keep going like this... then... then all of our brothers will be cut down! Ahh! This... this won’t be our fate as well, would it? [Zhan Long] shouldn’t have this kind of a fate, right? Tell me, why should we take the gunpoint for guilds like [Vanguard] or [Prague]?”

I looked at the Ba Huang City team. They hadn’t finished creating their formations yet. I gritted my teeth and said, “Five minutes. Hold on for just five more minutes!”

“Alright!”

Soon, the [Zhan Long] team was cut in two halves. [Legend]’s attack was far too vicious. [Judgement]’s Ye Lai was fighting against [Enemies at the Gate]’s Misty Cloud elsewhere. In a duel between such crazily powerful people, there was no way that victory would be determined anytime soon!

.....

“Di!”

Prague’s Guild Master Yan Zhao sent a message, “Li Xiao Yao, we’re done preparing our formation. Thank you [Zhan Long]. Quickly retreat, all of Ba Huang has witnessed your sacrifice!”

I immediately waved my sword and ordered, “Brothers, retreat to the west! Quickly!”

A group of [Zhan Long] players retreated with me, their health in critical range. One after another, people kept falling under the net of fire. Even Matcha came back with critical health. That was enough to demonstrate the degree of cruelty that battle had.

Behind us, [Appearance Alliance] emerged as well, with a crowd of around 2000 people in tow; Mu Xuan was at the very front, armed with her staff. As she ran she raised her head to look in my direction, only to see the pitiful state that [Zhan Long] was in. She furrowed her brows, then murmured, “Poor Little Zai Zai. You fought to this point for the sake of Ba Huang City. Ay, this kid....”

.....

Under the eastern wall of Fort Zi Feng, a group of [Zhan Long] members stood steadily. I held my Emperor Qin’s Sword and said while gasping for air, “Quickly regain your strength. There will be another big battle happening soon! Count the number of people left!”

Qing Qian spoke with a slightly sad tone, “Brother, we still have 1200+ people. In only half an hour, we lost at least 1500+ people. [Legend]’s really too powerful.....”

I stared at the crowds and uttered, “Brothers, I have made you all suffer. I know, you guys might think it’s not necessary to gain time for [Vanguard] and [Prague], but.....but if we didn’t do this, it would only cause Ba Huang to lose the whole war. It’s all done for the honor of the players of Ba Huang City! I do not want our pride to be trampled by those people from Jiu Li City!”

Li Mu nodded, "Yes. Guild Master, we all know. You have made the right choice. Even if everyone died, it would be worth it. We have killed many of the [Legend] members anyways....."

Sister Matcha gazed afar with her shining bright eyes and said, "[Legend] is formidable. If I recall correctly, that was the first time [Zhan Long] abandoned everything and fled after battling for only 30 minutes....."

I responded, "The difference between our numbers were too big....."

"Yes." Dancing Forest said as she held her long bow in hand, "The number of [Legend]'s people is ten times ours. Winning against them is inconceivable. So what's our next plan?"

I looked towards the east and said, "[Prague], [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes] and dozens of the other guilds have formed a huge defense formation of at least 10000 people. It just depends on how Fang Ge Que plans to break this formation. [Zhan Long] won't participate in this battle for now. We will observe from the side, and help the major force of Ba Huang City when there's a chance."

"Yes!"

.....

The light of the rising sun beamed through the clouds and about 20000 men from [Legend] returned to the east side. Fang Ge Que then raised his arm and yelled, "[Legend], [Judgement], [Appearance Alliance], and [House Of Prestige]! For glory! For the dreams of all the players of Jiu Li City! Charge! Crush the people of Ba Huang City! At least for today, they are no longer our friends, but our enemies in this city war!"

"Shua!"

The golden rays of sunlight appearing from beyond the horizon beamed in our direction. I was shocked again and cursed that smart Fang Ge Que who was really good at utilizing the favorable geographical position of this map. Under Fang Ge Que's command, his army came from the east and surprised us, coming from the direction the sun was shining from.

Thus, making it difficult for the Ba Huang City's players on the field to look at them directly. If our players can't even see them clearly, how could the attack be countered?

“Sha Sha.....”

Yan Zhao Warrior narrowed his eyes and went several steps forward as his battle boots strode upon on the sand. He stood among the array, and abruptly drew his longsword while shouting, “Prepare for battle! For the glory of Ba Huang City!”

Jian Feng Han also drew his longsword and Ba Huang City's major force of almost 10000 men roared in rage as they prepared to engage in this crucial battle.

.....

Holding his battle axe, Ye Lai led 1000+ [Judgement] players, and bathed in the light of the rising sun. With a grin, he spoke, “Yes. This is the last battle. Brothers, how many more people does [Judgement] have?”

The crowds shouted simultaneously, “Guild Master, 1000+ men!”

Ye Lai laughed out loud, “All the players of Jiu Li City are about die in battle. What's the use of these 1000 people? Let's go, brothers. It's either the friends from Ba Huang City sending us off on our final journey, or us sending them off on their journey!”

[Judgement] thundered forward, slashing and killing off our troops along the way. The rumors on the forum were not wrong. Ye Lai truly was the most fervent person in all of China's battling arena. He was indeed very bloodthirsty.

[Legend]'s melee players also charged forward fiercely under the command of Lu Chun Yang, and instantly clashed with the formation of Ba Huang City!

“Peng Peng Peng.....”

Within the cacophony of fierce clashes, swords and blades were swinging about wildly as streaks of fresh blood splashed onto the sandy

ground. Magic danced in the air like the sinister fangs of a demon. During this final battle for supremacy, it was still unknown how many would lose their lives.

Chapter 397: Battle with Ye Lai

“Keng.....”

The sound of the swords smashing into shields echoed continuously. As Lu Chun Yang struck down heavily, Goodbye Tears was forced back many steps while his feet dragged a deep cut in the sand. After experiencing such a fierce blow, Goodbye Tears raised his head, and a sneer formed at the corner of his mouth, “Lu Chun Yang, is this all you got? I dare you to kill me! If you dare, I will recognize you as my father!”

Lu Chun Yang knit his brows and remained silent. He took his sword and positioned it horizontally, as he lowered his body and he continued attacking. With a “Shua shua shua” sound, his long sword trailed three fierce slashes in the air and successively struck Goodbye Tear’s shield as a “Keng keng keng” sound burst forth. No matter how sturdy Goodbye Tear’s defense was, his health still dropped below half.

“What are you guys waiting for? Bombard him!” Goodbye Tears roared in anger.

North Pole held his staff and laughed aloud, “What for? Just let Lu Chun Yang keep attacking. I’m still waiting for you to call him ‘honorable father’...”

Don’t Be Foolish also grasped his shield and snickered, “Yes, Bald Donkey, you’re so blessed to be able to get a new dad....”

Goodbye Tears raised his long knife and attacked Lu Chun Yang’s shoulder and sneered, “What are you laughing about? You two better not forget that we three are good brothers. So if he’s my dad, then he’s your dad too!”

Don’t Be Foolish shuddered, “F*ck. North Pole, let’s go! Today, it’s either Lu Chun Yang dying or us!”

North Pole raised his hand and continuously chained multiple spells as Lu Chun Yang’s health immediately dropped below 50%. Don’t Be Foolish charged directly forward and positioned his shield, and smashed into Lu

Chun Yang with a “Peng” sound, Knocking him over. Lu Chun Yang miserably tumbled numerous meters away on the ground before he managed to stand up. He then held his sword and fled back to [Legend]’s army line. As he ran back, he yelled, “These three people of [Vanguard], you guys better wait! I will return to take your heads!

Goodbye Tears patted his bald head and shouted back in high spirits, “You better f*cking come! If you don’t come and kill me, I will look down on you!”

“Pa Pa Pa.....”

Before Goodbye Tears’ voice faded away, numerous arrows thudded into his bright and clear forehead. In the distance, two [Legend] Archers held their longbows and exclaimed with an astonished expression, “The defense of this bald donkey is so high! He isn’t dead even after being shot by so many arrows...”

Carrying his long knife, Goodbye Tears backed away, face blanched, as he uttered, “Brothers, I am hurt....”

Don’t Be Foolish reddened, and exclaimed, “Brother, don’t die! If you die, how should I care for your wife.....”

TLN: KEEP ACTING! =.=”

Goodbye Tears widened his eyes and yelled, “F*ck you. Just because of you, I will definitely build an invincible body and stay alive!”

Don’t Be Foolish was speechless.

.....

Jian Feng Han held his sword and slashed continuously, killing a dozen of [Legend]’s players. He raised his hand, and used [Corrupt Wolf Edge] to instantly kill an Archer. He knit his brows and bellowed, “North Pole, Don’t Be Foolish, and Goodbye Tears, stop acting cute. Hurry up and restore the array! This attack from [Legend] is truly too fierce! Command the array to stick close to [Prague] and fight by their side. If not, we won’t be able to defend against [Legend]. In addition, command our Wind Elf Mages, Musketeers and Archers to fly up and attack [Legend] from the

sky! Kill and wound them to the greatest extent! [Legend] is a sword that is too sharp! We'll only die miserably if we keep defending!"

North Pole nodded his head, " Got it. Guild Master leave it to me. We three brothers will take on the responsibility for the future of [Vanguard]."

Jian Feng Han's mouth twitched, " How can I feel reassured by this... cough cough, forget it. Do your best..."

On the other side, Fallen Wolf carried his battle axe, and charged into the mass, loudly yelling, " Players of [Vanguard] strike back for me! Tear up [Legend]'s array, and crush this myth of the world of online games. [Vanguard] will never lose to them, and especially not to Fang Ge Que!"

Before Fallen Wolf's voice died away, a spiral of ice rose up from beneath his feet and immediately bound him, restricting his movement for 2 seconds. The spiral of ice was the product of Fang Ge Que's [Spiral Ice Dance]. Unknowingly, Fang Ge Que had already arrived the frontline under the cover of the large crowd. With the [Spiral Ice Dance] targeting Fallen Wolf, Fang Ge Que commanded, "Kill him!"

"Whoosh..."

As many ice arrows flew forward, "Pu Pu Pu" sounds burst forth, and a gush of blood splashed in all directions. Fallen Wolf's body trembled violently as he was almost turned into a hedgehog in an instant. His battle axe had already dropped when he knelt slowly onto the ground, and his eyes widened as he cursed, " Damn you, Fan Ge Que..."

As Fallen Wolf fell, Fushen Thousand Blade immediately came over to take his place. Carrying his spear he began to furiously swing it killing three [Legend] players while shouting, " Lock your [Heal]'s onto me, we must defend this position. All Swordsmen come with me and rush, Fan Ge Que would never allow [Legend] to retreat, let them meet their demise!"

Fan Ge Que's eyes turned cold, and flames lingered around him, he commanded, " I'll use a triple attack on him, no amount of health will save him. Follow my orders!"

After Fan Ge Que commanded, at least 20+ [Scattered Shots] slammed into Fushen Thousand Blades. Fan Ge Que raised his arm as his whole body became a wild flurry. He sent out three spells, [Blazewind Lock], [Ice Rock Blast], and a [Fire Ice Storm]. They flew directly at Fushen Thousand Blades, causing large damage numbers appeared above his head.

“3717 ! ”

“4102 ! ”

“3882 ! ”

Terrifying damage numbers appeared, however the attacks did not kill their target as too many people were around Fushen Thousand Blades. Even though his health had already reached more than 10,000, right now he had less than 10% of his remaining health, and he was on the the verge of dying.

“Outta my way!”

A raging roar was heard from the side, and a ferocious warrior stormed forward with a battle axe in hand. The badge representing the Guild Master of [Judgement] was seen on his shoulder. Under the effect of [Consequence of Pride], he swung his battle axe horizontally, and the combo of [Holy Fire Cut]+[Divine Weapon Breaker] fell on the shoulder of Fu Shen Thousand Blade as he yelled furiously, “Die!”

“6468 ! ”

“8984 ! ”

It was the effect of two successive fatal strikes. Ye Lai’s attacks were not ordinarily overbearingly ferocious. The time between these two attacks was not more than 0.1 seconds. The Healers could not heal in time, and Fu Shen Thousand Blade fell on his knees to the ground with eyes filled with incredulity as he muttered, “This...How is this possible... What the f*ck is this damage...”

Ye Lai did not back away after killing Fu Shen Thousand Blade, but held his battle axe and slashed his way into the formation. His hands opened and another whirlwind of flames strangled dozens of [Vanguard] players

while the fiery phoenix on his shoulder cast fire spells repeatedly. Behind him, hundreds of [Judgement]'s melee players followed, and the battle situation seemed to have descended suddenly, forcing [Vanguard] to concentrate on their formation.

.....

“Hong!”

Jian Feng Han's [Through the Clouds Slash] fell among the crowd of [Legend] players, and killed numerous people as he hastily retreated, shouting in anger, “Come! Kill Ye Lai with me! Kill him!”

Ye Lai held his battle axe and burst out in laughter, “Do you think I will be afraid of you?”

His battle axe dragged a beautiful trail in the air. After the “Keng” sound rang out from the clash, Jian Feng Han and Ye Lai each went several steps back! Their strength was basically equal! Jian Feng Han raised his hand, and a [Corrupt Wolf Edge] blasted away 3000+ points of Ye Lai's health, while Ye Lai slashed Jian Feng with [Holy Fire Cut], forcing him to back away continually. There were no longer techniques in this messy battle, but just ferocious all out heavy swings.

definitely

“Guild Master!” One of the team leaders of [Judgement] gnashed his teeth and said, “Let's retreat! There are too many [Vanguard] players here! No human can endure this rain of arrows that they just unleashed...”

Ye Lai's chest was pierced by arrows and he replied with tightly knitted brows, “Yes. Let's retreat! A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. We have done everything to help [Legend]! Let's go slaughter the people of [Blood Contract], and kill Han Bei Song first!”

“Okay!”

.....

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my Emperor Qin's Sword abruptly and bellowed,

“Brothers, it’s our time to act!”

Li Mu exclaimed excitedly, “Who should we attack first? [Legend] or [Appearance Alliance]?”

I shook my head as I looked at Ye Lai who was charging back and forth among the crowds, and answered, “Let’s kill Ye Lai first. This guy is too strong. If he continues to attack like this, the elite players of Ba Huang City will all be sliced to death. Dancing Forest and Qing Qian, work with me. We must strive to kill Ye Lai in an instant!”

“How? Ye Lai’s control and consciousness is unordinarily powerful. He won’t let our long range skills get close to him..... If we did get close to him, it might only result in us dying.....” Dancing Forest said with a slightly worried tone.

I nodded, “Yeah, I know. I will be going backwards for some distance when I fight Ye Lai later, and it all depends on you two during this time. I am Lv 75 now and Ye Lai is Lv 74; one level higher than him. When he uses [Divine Weapon Breaker] he will be stunned for at least 1 second, we will use this chance to kill him! He won’t get away!”

“Yes, alright!”

.....

I led the 1200+ people of [Zhan Long] and charged towards Ye Lai. In the distance, Ye Lai also saw me and laughed as he asked, “Guild Master Zi Zai, you are finally here?”

I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and shouted, “Ye Lai! Let’s fight a battle of life and death!”

Ye Lai replied, “Yes! Just what I wanted!”

.....

Ye Lai led hundreds of [Judgement]’s players that survived and charged forward. Although these fellows looked shabby, they possessed extremely explosive force, and everyone knew about this. Plus, I knew that Ye Lai’s goal was very simple: to kill me before all of [Legend] got annihilated.

Killing me would be eliminate a terrifying opponent for Jiu Li City in the battle for the Citadel Defending Decree. Knowing this, I had to fight because I wanted to kill Ye Lai as well. Even though we were friends, it was impossible for us to coexist in this battle!

“Hong!”

With the blessing of [Conflagration] , scarlet flames materialized above Ye Lai’s battle axe as he led a group of players toward us. With a loud roar, he leapt up, and struck heavily with his axe, sending out a [Holy Fire Cut]. His attack was simple yet quick and fierce, and all my ways of retreat were blocked.

I positioned my Cold Iron Sword horizontally and parried!!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew up in all directions as I managed to block the attacks but suffered around 20% of the damage. I took two steps back and hurriedly used [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. Two “Pa Pa” sounds were made on my chest as I was stunned by a [Scattered Shot]. Ye Lai thundered as [Divine Weapon Breaker] and [Skyscraper Slash] were dropped together. He opened his hand as a [Flame Beacon] burst out almost simultaneously. These big combo skills erupted with the fiercest speed. At the same time, two Swordsmen darted towards me from the side with five golden hexagrams floating above their swords. It’s the effect of [Combo]!

I bellowed in the guild channel, “Heal me! Quick!”

Darling Duck and the other Healers were already healing me at full speed, but my health still dropped rapidly. It instantly dropped to around 20%. In critical health, [Combo]s from two Swordsmen came towards me. Regret filled my heart as I asked myself, “Is this how it ends?”

Behind me, the shadow of a beautiful figure shuddered slightly. It was sister Matcha’s protection skill!”

“Pa Pa Pa.....”

The attacks of the [Combo]s had all been transferred, and Matcha took all the damage for me!

Chapter 398: Together, Alive or Dead

As I came back to reality, I gripped my blade, and cast [Wind Blade] with my Emperor Qin's Sword. I executed a normal attack with Cold Iron Sword, and I had used my quickest speed to throw the two attacks into Ye Lai's chest!

“3912 ! ”

“2718 ! ”

Barely escaping with his life, Ye Lai hastily retreated, then through gritted teeth he called out, “Heal me!”

I raised my Cold Iron Sword towards him, then activated [Defeat the Dragon], materializing a dragon chain around Ye Lai. “Shua!” I dragged Ye Lai over a dozen meters , right to my side. His eyes froze in horror, “Oh no!”

Behind him, Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox], Dancing Forest's [Meteor Shot] interwove with each other as they flew right at Ye Lai. I also activated a [Combo], sending Ye Lai to his death!

But, at that moment, Ye Lai slightly lowered his body, and swung out his battle axe. Even in his final moments, he threw out a [Battle Axe Throw]!

.....

“Peng!”

“4716 ! ”

Dancing Forest's delicate body trembled, then weakly fell to the ground. At the same time, Ye Lai also knelt to the ground from my [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Raising his eyebrows, he looked at me and smiled, “Well isn't this interesting, 10% of my City War points are yours now....”

Annoyed, I said, “At the price of one of my sisters....”

“You can't be too greedy....”

As Ye Lai finished his last sentence, he fell over. The Guild Master of [Judgement] had finally left this City War. Of course, he took with him

our little miss Dancing Forest.

.....

Once Ye Lai died, the 300 players from [Judgement] immediately entered into the state of a headless dragon. The Vice Guild Master, Babel Buddha took over the command, but was killed by Han Bei Song and Misty Cloud. Under the alliance of [Zhan Long], [Blood Contract] and [Enemies at the Gate], we turned [Judgement] into a group of dumplings*, and cleaned them all up within a few minutes!

*TLC Note: refers to turning them into exp

Looking at the bodies on the ground, I gripped my bloody Emperor Qin's Sword, and lead a group of people to charge. Before we even finished, [Judgement] had already completely left the stage. Even though their performance was quite remarkable during this battle, the final victory belongs to the last person standing.

Looking ahead, I saw the players from [Appearance Alliance]; there were around 1500 people. Mu Xuan stood at the center of the formation with her staff raised. She was continuously commanding players to attack [Prague]'s defense line. Yan Zhao Warrior was roaming the battlefield, looking for chances to kill Mu Xuan. Unfortunately, Mu Xuan was a beautiful and intelligent woman. Killing her was easier said than done.

"Guild Master, should we attack [Appearance Alliance]?!" Li Mu asked.

I looked at the [Legend] army that was even further away; they had around 15,000 players. Thus, I grit my teeth and said, "No, let's go around them. Take [Enemies At the Gate] and [Blood Contract] to flank [Legend]'s formation. Do whatever you can to deal as much damage as possible to them!"

"Why? Isn't it easier to break through [Appearance Alliance]'s formation?" Wang Jian asked.

I made a fist, "[Appearance Alliance] only has 1500 people left. [Prague] can deal with them. We'll go attack [Legend]. I... I don't want to kill the few friends I have in Jiu Li City with my own hands over and over again.

I'd rather lead you all to fight to the death against [Legend], than stand by like a gambler and place bets....”

Li Mu nodded, “Yup, I support that! Let's attack [Legend]!”

On the side, Misty Cloud pulled out his sword and dashed forward. He brought 3000+ soldiers from [Enemies at the Gate] along with him, saying, “Xiao Yao, there's not many of our [Enemies at the Gate] members left now. Looking at where you're heading, are you planning on fighting [Legend]?”

I didn't deny his allegation, instead loudly commanded, “Misty Cloud, [Blood Contract] still has 1000 men. The total amount of our 3 guilds is about 5000 people, let's launch a last coordinated strike against [Legend]. This is our last chance, or else even if we kill a great amount, [Legend] will surmount us, and our Ba Huang City will lose!”

Misty Clouds smirked, as the [Arm of the Azure Dragon] appeared in his hands, exclaiming, “Okay, [Zhan Long] is [Enemies at the Gate]'s brother guild, if you guys are facing death, isn't it normal for us to join you too? I called Han Bei Song, such a fun thing that we are doing, how can we not have him. Count him in too!”

From afar Han Bei Song came to us, his face pale, “I just knew it, when there is good stuff I have to come, facing death... walking, we will charge together. Whoever is afraid of death is a dog, Ha Ha!”

.....

Side by side the three guilds rushed together, and a cloud of dust drifted across the plain, as 3 pairs of scissors charged towards [Legend]'s left-flank. [Legend] was still currently in the battle against [Vanguard], [Wrath of the Heroes], and [Flying Dragon]. They were almost destroyed at this point with Jian Feng Han, and Soaring Dragon barely being able to hold on. If we hadn't come, they would have been swallowed whole.

Misty Clouds gazed at the corpse-filled battlefield, and it couldn't help but ignite fire in his eyes. “Motherfu*ker, [Legend] is terrifying, with 20,000 people they took on Ba Huang City's 100,000 men, just how strong is this guild really...”

“ Who gives a Sh*t,!Destroy them!”

“Yeah!”

The first thing I did when I arrived at the flank of [Legend], was to send out Flaming Tiger God while I cast a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and also spun a God Army card sending out a [Soul Army]. As a group of [Legend] players saw us, they each put down their shields. In the midst a flagbearer exclaimed, “ Form defensive positions... Fu*k, it’s [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract]’s players. They seem to have survived. Everyone be careful, these players are Ba Huang City’s strongest players!”

A group of [Legends]’s Swordsman each raised up their longswords, and each one cast a [Sky Shaker Slash]+[Combo].

Without the slightest hesitation I leaned slightly back, and with a [Blade Rush], instantly took out their defensive formation. I cast a [Wind Blade] killing an Archer while chaining a bunch of skills. Attacking a group of 4 Swordsman, they were constantly forced to step back. My battle boots stepped across the sand sideways, dodging a long-range attack. I abruptly pulled out my Cold Iron Sword, and charged at three Swordsmen. My blade was like lightning and “ka ka ka” I sent a chain of quick cuts. As I passed them, the three Swordsmen fell to their knees with me gaining full health due to my life steal.

The flag bearer’s face turned ashen, “So.... so terrifying, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Quick, ask the Guild Master to give us reinforcements. We have to protect this part of the formation, we can’t let [Zhan Long] pass us....”

Li Mu sent out a [Covering Sword Slash]. He then morphed into a light as he and Wang Jian both activated [Blade Rush] to break through the formation. This was [Legend: Second Division]’s formation, and wasn’t their strongest frontline defense. It was the perfect opportunity!

“Get the f*ck away!”

Dong Cheng Lei roared, and forced a group of Knights to retreat. Old K took the opportunity to pass through, into the formation. Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] fell upon the formation at just the right time,

breaking it up even further. Song Han, Matcha, and General Bai Qi lead everyone to charge in. [Zhan Long] became the sharpest blade of the three guilds, cutting right through the enemy's defense. On the left and right lines, Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song also commanded their troops to break through the formation. Just like that, the three guilds cut into [Legend]'s defense, withstanding the rain of fire, hail, and winds to advance forward and kill!

Every second there were players dying. Some of them were from our army, and some of them were from [Legend]'s. I had basically given up on defending, and charged forward with Wang Jian, Li Mu, Old K, and Dong Cheng Lei. I relied solely on [Heal]s and my 10% life steal to recover my health while the others relied on the Healers who were following from behind.

"Boss, we're losing too many people too quickly!" Matcha's voice traveled through the frontline to me.

I gritted my teeth, then raised my blood soaked sword, and continued hacking at people. I yelled back, "No matter, even if we all die, we have to destroy their formation. If [Legend] isn't destroyed, then Ba Huang City will have no chance of victory!"

"Alright, Boss...."

.....

The death count kept rising. We were basically exchanging kill for kill. [Legend]'s players had also been killing so much that their eyes were completely red. Over a thousand people picked up their knives and charged at us, but were then cut into a pile of meat. Another thousand people came at us again, while the long range attacks were continuously being cast as spells, arrows, and bullets kept falling upon us.

After what seemed like forever, we finally managed to force ourselves into [Legend]'s main group. As the the field became a mountain of slaughter, my entire body, the Emperor Qin's Sword, and Deep Sea Cold Iron Sword became completely soaked in blood. My chestplate was plastered with dents from incoming swords, and my helmet was full of

cracks. Even my Flaming Tiger God had already lost a level. I kept on yelling, "Continue to advance!"

"Careful, their elite force has arrived!" Han Bei Song cautioned from across the line.

From afar, a group of people came over with Xuan Yuan Feng carrying his spear leading them. Behind him was 2000 elite hand picked players from [Legend]. He loudly commanded, " We let [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] be a little too flashy didn't we? Give me some spirit, kill them one by one! Focus on their CBN elite players, don't let them kill anyone else! As long as we pin these people down, would we have to lose so many brothers later? There over there, focus on Cang Lei, fire!"

"Cang Lei, look out!" Li Mu loudly exclaimed, but it was too late.

"Pa, Pa, Pa..."

Arrows pierced into Cang Lei's body, combined with multiple [Pillar of Fire & Ice], Cang Lei fell down unable to fight anymore.

Afterwards, Yue Wei Liang and One Second Hero were both stunned by magic. Xuan Yuan Feng carried his long spear and sent out a sweep,

"KLANG!"

As Yue Wei Liang parried with her dagger, she was sent tumbling backwards while also " Pa Pa" taking two arrows to the shoulder. She raised her head to only be pierced by Xuan Yuan Feng's spear!"

She was instantly killed!

One Second Hero roared, with his shield raised, he knocked Xuan Yuan Feng back. He Proceeded to to use a [Flame Axe] hitting him at point blank range. Xuan Yuan Feng retreated back a few steps, yelling, " Are you looking to die!"

Behind One Second Hero, multiple Archers fired their long bows at him.

One Second Hero narrowed his eyes, and hurriedly placed his shield in front of him casting a [Heavenly Shield Wall]!

Arrows rained down with each one bringing up terrifying damage numbers, and combined with multiple [Pillar of Fire & Ice]. Just like this, One Second Hero our flagbearer was devastatingly killed even when in a state of defense behind [Heavenly Shield Wall].

.....

“No, their long range skills are too powerful! If we force ourselves to fight, we will all die on the frontline! Brother Xiao Yao!” Yue Qing Qian yelled.

I held up my swords with drops of blood dripping down, and determination filled my eyes as I responded, “[Zhan Long], charge forward with me! This is really the final battle! If we can’t destroy [Legend], we can only die!”

Wang Jian, Li Mu and Old K roared as they dashed forward forcefully. When going against the world’s top long range team, what else can we do besides breaking through forcefully?

Chapter 399: World Disparity

Letting my two swords drop, I charged at the front. My Magic Spite Armor gave off a glow, and behind me, my bloody War Swept Cloak fluttered in the wind. With a jerk of my left shoulder, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and killed a group of [Legend] Mages. At the same time, I yelled out, “Charge with me! If I’m killed, then you guys will just continue to advance!”

Clearly, going up against these 500 Mages, I didn’t have the confidence to survive. The most I could do in my current state was to break down the [Mana Shield]’s so that the other players of [Zhan Long] had the chance to kill them.

“Hong hong hong...”

Bursts of fire blossomed from my chest as my Magic Spite Armor took effect. One after another, numerous MISS-es flew up. On top of that, I was completely equipped with magic defense armor. Each of these Mages dealt 300-900 damage, nothing too critical. On top of that, Darling Duck followed not too far behind me with seven to eight other Healers also constantly healing. It wasn’t going to be that easy killing me when I had 8000 health.

My Flaming Tiger God had activated [Flame Armor] and sent long ranged attacks into the group. Unfortunately, he was killed within moments. My tiger had long been on the blacklist of [Legend]’s players. Xuan Yuan Feng had probably given a command to a team to specifically target my Flaming Tiger God.

.....

My little tiger gave out a dying growl, and evaporated into a light which sent him into the pet dimension. At the same time, my [Soul Army] appeared in the air as seven stars began to move. I had already activated my teleportation, and disappeared in a flash of light to another place. My Emperor Qin’s Sword and my Cold Iron Sword crossed as I cut into the group, tearing down three Mages. Right afterwards, I immediately

teleported again. Just like that, I used my [Seven Stars Teleportation] to move again and again. Within a short 30 seconds, I managed to kill several dozen Mages and Archers.

“F*ck, there’s no way to catch Xiao Yao Zi Zai. What should we do?” One of the [Legend] flag bearers stared wide eyed as he talked.

Xuan Yuan Feng’s eyes turned cold. He immediately locked onto a red target on the map and yelled out, “Based on some intelligence, this is a skill from the [Mohist Five Scrolls]. The [Seven Stars Teleportation] can only teleport seven places. Lock onto these seven places and keep spamming your skills. Xiao Yao Zi Zai can’t survive no matter how hard he tries. Now!”

In the blink of an eye, a blanket of firepower covered the sky, and my health hit rock bottom. I immediately retreated to let Darling Duck and the other Healers heal me. Xuan Yuan Feng was a smart player, and easily figured out the weakness of [Seven Stars Teleportation]. Indeed, I could only teleport between 7 different places. I can’t do anymore. The skill was ok for killing just one person, but once the enemy figures it out, it’s extremely difficult for it to succeed against a group.

On the frontline, Old K, Li Mu, and Wang Jian all charged forward. They took with them a group of heavy armor players. With a sharp blade, Gentle Touch stabbed a Mage in the chest, killing him. At the same time, he was swallowed up in a raging fire. His death in battle meant that [Zhan Long] was starting to lose their top level players.

In the midst of painful cries, I charged at the formation. Even I was killing one enemy for every guild member that was killed. As their numbers began decreasing, our frontline was continuously cutting into [Legend]’s core formation. Finally, at the price of many brothers that had died in battle, the team of long range players that Xuan Yuan Feng had was basically killed by us, while the [Zhan Long] frontline close combat players had only had a hundred people left. Adding the long range players and support players, we didn’t have more than 300 people.

.....

“Kill!”

On the other side, Misty Cloud’s voice reached me. He had brought the remaining [Enemies At the Gate] players, and wildly charged forward. It was a completely desperate attempt. He cast several Four Symbol Guardian skills, cutting the [Legend] players so much that they were constantly wailing in pain. Unfortunately, both sides were exchanging a life for a life, and there were much fewer [Enemies at the Gate] players. They went from the initial 11,000 people to only a 1000 people.

[Blood Contract] was even more desolate. There was probably around a hundred players left. They were even more miserable than [Zhan Long]!

“Look!”

I pointed my blade forward and shouted, “Brothers, we’ve almost killed our way to [Legend]’s main formation. If we continue to attack, we’ll waste them away, and make sure that [Legend] disappears from Hell’s Core!”

Everyone charged forward. This was the nth time that I summoned my Flaming Tiger God. I was continuously advancing, letting my two swords dance wildly through the battlefield. There were countless souls who had died under my blades. I looked like I had just come out of a blood bath. With a wave, I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash,] and cut through the group of people. Like this, I became the first person to reach [Legend]’s main formation. I gripped my sword, and wanted to return to get the rest of [Zhan Long]’s players.

Right at that moment, a familiar wail traveled across the battlefield. It was Bai Qi’s voice. His two legs had been bound by frost, and his chest filled with arrows and balls of magic. His body was practically torn to shreds. With a grunt he fell to his knees, his battle axe dropping from his hand and his eyes swollen, “Motherf*cker, you again, Fang Ge Que....”

It was Fang Ge Que’s [Spiral Ice Dance] that had killed him. On top of that, Fang Ge Que had also brought 3000 of the main guild’s elite. Finally, [Zhan Long] had attracted his attention.

“F*ck!”

Old K raised his battle axe, "I'm going to f*cking cut down Fang Ge Que!"

I immediately yelled from afar, "Old K, get the f*ck back here! You want to take your brothers to their graves!?"

As I said that, I began advancing forward again. I opened my hand and cast [Great Realm of Desolation] into the distance!

"Shua!"

Three Emperor Qin's Swords cut through the air and hit with a "keng!". Fang Ge Que retreated several steps, dodging the skill. His eyes glared at me from the distance, as he sneered, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai. You're still alive. He he, such a strong bastard...."

Maybe my existence threatened Fang Ge Que, so he did not continue pursuing. Old K and Li Mu led 300 of [Zhan Long]'s men and charged out of the field. They then assisted [Enemies At The Gate] and [Blood Contract] in the slaughter of the encircled troops. In less than one hour, we went from 5000 people to 1500 during the struggling battle. [Legend] was having a rough time too. At least 4000 of their people were cut up and killed by us, causing their major force to suffer huge losses.

.....

"Let's go!"

I waved my sword and pointed directly at a highland in the distance as I said, "Let's retreat to that area to occupy a position of high ground. If Fang Ge Que and his men dare to approach us, we will suppress them. If they don't dare to come, we will find a new chance to attack!"

Misty Cloud picked up his longsword, "Yup, whatever you say!"

The 1500 people rushed straight towards the highland. The people occupying the highlands were mostly the members of [Enemies At The Gate]. As they looked down on the battlefield, they noticed that the fires of Jiu Li City badges were almost linked up into a single long line. On the other hand, not a lot of our Ba Huang badges were left. On the interface of the city war, the comparison between the numbers of both sides began

to differ greatly again—

Jiu Li City : 52737 people

Ba Huang City: 17639 people

.....

Looking slightly tired, Misty Clouds sat on a huge rock. He stared at the long sword in his hand as he muttered, “I thought we could win, but I didn’t expect that the gap between [Zhan Long] and [Legend] would be so large. Xiao Yao, did you also feel that fear that fills your heart when you were battling against [Legend]? We can’t win against [Legend] with our condition now.....”

I nodded, “Yes, [Legend] still has a major force of 10000 men, yet our Ba Huang City’s major force were already worn out and depleted.”

Han Bei Song clenched his fists and exclaimed, “No! Are we really going accept this? Should we just watch that arrogant Fang Ge Que take away the Citadel Defending Decree? All of the brothers from Ba Huang City did not fight and struggle to watch ourselves result in failure!”

General Li Mu said, “Maybe there’s another chance. We just need patience now.”

Wang Jian agreed, “Yeah, There are still 17 hours until the City War ends. Fort Zi Feng has still not been taken by anyone, and the winner in the NPC war between Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City is still undecided. Therefore, we still stand a chance.”

Misty Cloud said, “Actually, [Legend]’s 10,000 men are the only ones that we really cannot win against. If we can annihilate them, then.....then maybe the rest of the 40,000 Jiu Li City Players are all just cannon fodder.”

I took a deep breath and said, “Everyone, rest for some time. There are still almost 3000 Jiu Li City players defending against us under the highland. We don’t have a lot of potions, equipment, and cards in stock, so now isn’t a good time to struggle in a battle.”

Qing Qian pulled my wrist and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, Look. I think they withdrew their garrison?"

"Oh?"

I looked down the mountain with the help of the moonlight and saw one of [Legend]'s flagbearer leading the evacuation of 3000 men. However, a small guild soon came, and guarded the bottom of the mountain with the same number of 3000 people. Seeing this, the corner of my mouth curved up as I replied, "They are not withdrawing their garrison, but relieving their garrison!"

Wolf looked down the mountain and asked, "Does Jiu Li City plan to use just 3000 people to trap us?"

I shook my head and answered, "Unlikely. Fang Ge Que also knows that these 3000 people definitely cannot trap us. He is probably just trying to gain some time. Now, the thing that Fang Ge Que most desires to do is to annihilate [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Flying Dragon]. Once these three guilds are destroyed, the last hope of Ba Huang City will disappear as well."

Misty Clouds chuckled, "I smell a massacre again."

I laughed out loud, "Have everyone prepare, we will charge down the highland five minutes later, and get rid of these 3000 people. Then, we will attack the tail of [Legend] and suppress them!"

"Okay!"

.....

Five minutes later, 1500 people charged down the highland, and wiped out their 3000 people like fierce tigers springing down on prey from the top of the mountain. We slaughtered them with only a loss of 100 men. The difference between the strength of the individual players is too big. Our first class players would suffer almost no damage when slaughtering them.

Yet, news arrived at this moment——

[Prague] defeated!

Yan Zhao Warrior dead!

[Prague] has only less than 50 members left and retreated into the city, struggling to eke out a living by relying on Ba Huang City's NPC army.

[Flying Dragon] defeated!

Soaring Dragon and Drunken Spear all dead!"

[Hero's Mound: First Division] defeated!

Cang Cheng dead!

[Thousand Burial] defeated!

Not Ordinary, You Yi and Bai Mo Yan all dead!

Under the attack of [Legend]'s major force, [Vanguard] also suffered a disastrous defeat!

With less than 200 people, [Vanguard] traveled to the south of the Fort, and was no longer able to battle.

A harsh reality was laid before our eyes. Ba Huang City's 10,000 combined elite force was slaughtered by the 20,000 [Legend]'s members. Most of our major force had been annihilated. In fact, [Enemies At The Gate] is now the only guild that remains somewhat intact.

.....

Staring at the data and information floating on my screen, I gritted my teeth, and clenched my fists tightly and asked, "How did this happen..... How are our men so vulnerable?"

Li Mu patted my shoulder and said, "It's because Fang Ge Que is too powerful. This has nothing to do with our strength....."

Chapter 400: The Thorn in His Eye

After cutting down several hundred of the Jiu Li City players, there were still 1500 people trying to break the main formation. Only when I was practically surrounded by Jiu Li City players did I notice that there weren't many Ba Huang City players left. Most of them had already left. Of the top ten players in Ba Huang City, only [Vanguard] still had some strength left. Jian Feng Han took Don't Be Foolish, Goodbye Tears, and North Pole to the city wall, and continued to defend themselves from a corner.

.....

In the distance, the sounds of battle rose from everywhere. The players from Jiu Li City were starting to help the Heaven's Army and Huo Li Army to fight the remaining big armies of Ba Huang City. [Legend] quickly became the main character of this battle, forcing back the armies of Ba Huang City. This was where Fang Ge Que was so ingenious. From the very beginning of the City Battle, Fang Ge Que had been hiding his true strength, and biding his time as he let [Judgement] and [House of Prestige] charge in his stead while he preserved most of his strength. Currently, the two city's guilds had all been withered away, while the 10,000 [Legend] players were completely unrivaled.

"Look over there!"

In the distance, one of the [Legend] flagbearers pointed his longspire at us and laughed, "[Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] those guilds are actually still alive. Even Xiao Yao Zi Zai is still alive. Motherf*cker, let's go and kill them! Let's tear Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu, and Misty Clouds to shreds!"

Li Mu furrowed his brow and raised his sword, "F*ck, this is just too crazy. To think that they take us to be fish on a chopping board. That's just unacceptable!"

Misty Clouds crossed his arms in front of his chest, his Bleeding Star Sword floating next to his shoulder. He murmured, "Honestly, we only

have 1500 people. [Legend]'s army can completely annihilate us. Now is different from earlier, we can't fight head on like we have been."

Han Bei Song rubbed his nose, "Why didn't that f*cker call out my name when he was calling out names. Is the existence of [Blood Contract]'s Guild Master so insignificant? No respect..."

Who's Blue choked as she laughed, "So you want to be humiliated by other people that much?"

Old K snickered, "Why don't I fulfill that dream, Little Song Song...."

As he said that, Old K leaned his battle axe in the desert sand, then cupped his hands in front of his mouth and yelled out, "Hey, that "Little Scholar" flagbearer from [Legend], the [Blood Contract] Guild Master Han Bei Song says that your woman has a really nice moan in bed!"

After hearing that, the little scholar was thoroughly infuriated. He raised his iron spear and roared out, "You sh*t Han Bei Song! Just you wait, I'll definitely give your [Blood Contract] a blood bath! I'll make Who's Blue, and Not Yet Red into my mistresses. Who's Blue will serve me during the day, and Not Yet Red will serve me at night. Just you wait..."

Han Bei Song raised his sword, "F*cking sh*thead, if you have the guts, then fight me!"

Who's Blue flushed, "Why do I get the feeling that I was slandered. When you guys are cursing each other during battle, can you guys not bring me up... I might as well not say anything..."

In the distance, the little scholar swung his spear, and took 1000 of [Legend]'s men to charge at us.

"Peh....."

I shivered, "You actually provoked them. Old K, you sh*thead!"

"Whatever, I'll just cut them down!"

I was speechless. Finally I said, "That little scholar can get 5000 more soldiers at any point in time. We only have this many people right now.

Even if we were to fight them in a fair battle, we're probably still a little weaker than them. What are you gonna use to parry them? Your dick??"

Qing Qian's face turned red, "Brother Xiao Yao! Don't say such bad words...."

I rubbed my chin, "Alright then, what should we use to defend against that little scholar's army, ding dong's?"

Qing Qian scrunched up her face, "Enough already...."

Matcha giggled, "Boss, we're only 200 yards away from Ba Huang City's number one army – Desolate Dragon Army's, formation. Why don't we retreat to there. That way, even the little scholar will be somewhat wary. Plus, we can take this last opportunity to kill some more NPCs while everyone gains a few more City Battle points. Even if we lose, then we won't lose too much. Besides, we can also wait for the right opportunity to attack [Legend]. What do you think?"

I pondered for a second, then nodded and said, "Brothers, let us go! We'll retreat into the Desolate Dragon formation, and help them kill the Heaven's Army tribe!"

"Alright!"

1500 people majestically advanced. Just like that, they formed a formation next to Desolate Dragon's formation. Old K, Li Mu, Han Bei Song, and Misty Cloud all stood at the edge of the formation. Qing Qian and Wolf stood at the formation's flank and took control, killing the Lv 80 Phantom Tier NPC's. The experience and drops gained from them was still extremely abundant.

.....

As predicted, after [Zhan Long], [Enemies At the Gate] and [Blood Contract] changed their formation, the little scholar immediately raised his long spear, and yelled to his brothers, "Alright, stop your advance. They went under the protection of the NPCs. There's no need to go against those high tier NPC's like Luo Han, Purple Star, and Angela. Unless it is absolutely necessary, there's no need to battle them!"

“Yes! Boss is brilliant!”

The group of people arrogantly left and [Zhan Long] managed to dodge this danger.

After putting away my Cold Iron Sword, I noticed that it still had 57% durability. I needed to save it up, so I used my Emperor Qin’s Sword to cut down the NPC’s. The Emperor Qin’s Sword wouldn’t wear down, an advantage that was extremely useful in a long battle like this. Li Mu and Wang Jian always prepared a backup sword before each big fight. Even if the attack wasn’t as good, it was still better than having no weapon. On the other hand, I didn’t have that kind of worry.

In the distance, [Legend]’s formation, Lu Chun Yang and Xuan Yuan Feng lead their armies to alternate between attacking and defending, thus lessening the losses that they suffered. Fang Ge Que, on the other hand, waved his paper fan, fanning a blaze of fire into a group of people in the back. He looked at us, the light in his eyes shining across the kilometer long battlefield. I could feel the sharpness of his killing intent. Fang Ge Que wanted to kill me, and it wasn’t any ordinary desire!

Li Mu seemed to have sensed it too, and swung his sword, “Guild Master, you really are a thorn in Fang Ge Que’s eyes. [Legend] lost so many people; I’m afraid that most of them were killed by [Zhan Long]. Fang Ge Que’s desire to annihilate us is probably extremely large, or else he wouldn’t have let that little scholar try and kill us.”

I swung my sword and said, “Yea. The more he hates us, the better. This way, we might have the chance to use that hate.”

“Yea, keep fighting. There’s no other choice!”

“Yup!”

.....

With the blink of an eye, darkness fell. We had persevered on the frontlines for 11 hours. It was already 11 o’clock at night. The city points rankings had changed quite a bit. Many of the experts that had been killed in battle had naturally fallen—

Fang Ge Que [Points 3941770]

Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Points 3932790]

Jian Feng Han [Points 3112830]

Mu Xuan [Points 2991770]

Ye Lai [Points 2542710]

General Li Mu [Points 2273980]

Yue Qing Qian [Points 2217440]

Hero Ran Min [Points 2138900]

Bai Li Ruo Feng [Points 1892650]

Simple [Points 1823710]

.....

Ye Lai, Bai Li Ruo Feng, and Simple fell in the rankings because they had died. Jian Feng Han's points had been slowly rising as he struggled on the battlefield. On the other hand, [Zhan Long]'s Li Mu, Qing Qian, and Old K all made it into the top ten. We had killed way too many players on the battlefield. It was only natural that these members of [Zhan Long]'s main force would enter the top ten. After Qing Qian's continuously killed several top level experts, her points overtook Old K's. On top of that, she was able to get 10% of all of their points, resulting in the exponential increase in her points.

Matcha was also looking at the rankings. She fluttered her eyes, then smiled, "There's only a thin line of difference between Boss and Fang Ge Que. If you manage to kill Fang Ge Que, you'll become the MVP of this battle. Vice Versa, if Fang Ge Que were to kill you, then he would have stabilized his position as number one. I think, this is biggest reason why Fang Ge Que wants to kill Boss so much, right?"

I smiled, "Yea, I know this. However, killing Fang Ge Que is easier said than done. Besides, I'm completely handicapped, I'd practically be crushed. What else would I use to kill Fang Ge Que?"

Qing Qian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, it's already 11 at night. Everyone's extremely tired by now. What should we do? Should we all log off, and rest for a bit, then log on again?"

I looked towards everyone, "What do you guys think? Can we log off right now?"

Wolf shook his head, "There's no need, it's the last stretch!"

Wang Jian nodded, "Yep. Brother Xiao Yao, you have to be careful. We can persevere. It's the last 12 hours, every minute is precious. I'm planning on at least exchanging my points for three levels. Ha ha...."

"Yea! Then let's continue!"

.....

Behind me, rows of siege machines had been moved over. They came from Ba Huang City's catapults. There were around 20 machines, all of them making "Ji Ji Ya Ya" sounds as they catapulted boulders into the Heaven's Army and Huo Li Army. The screams of pain didn't stop.

Ba Huang City's Duke Luo Lei had a cold expression as he raised his sword, and yelled out, "Keep up the pressure. In the end, victory will be our Ba Huang City's!"

Unfortunately, before he even finished talking, a person covered in lightning rose from the ground. It was the youngest Sword Saint, Lin Qiong. The Thunder Wind blade in his hand began to dance. "Shua Shua" several blades of wind fell upon the people from Ba Huang City. The catapults were crushed to pieces. Lin Qiong let out a maniacal laugh. A man who could rise and fall like a kingfisher on water dashed across the sky. Another vice-commander general's head appeared in his hand, it's blood dripped splattering everywhere. Lin Qiong's face was filled with arrogance as he laughed. "Luo Lei, you old b*tch. You still don't understand the situation? Ba Huang City's done for. This Fort Zi Feng is Jiu Li City's! If you're good, then take your people back to Ba Huang City! Go back to being the king of the eastern side, you old bastard. This isn't your time anymore!"

“Die!”

In the middle of Ba Huang City, a ferocious general carried his battle axe and leapt up. It was the Fierce Tiger Army Commander, Lachlan. The battle axe was surrounded by the constellation of a tiger as it attacked in a flash!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew and Lin Qiong was forced backwards several steps. However, a smile appeared on his lips, “Lachlan, your legend has already disappeared.....”

“What?”

Lachlan’s eyes grew cold. He fiercely turned his head. Behind him, a red shadow gradually began to form. It was a teleportation skill. Raging flames suddenly began to burst as the young general opened his palm and flames burst from his palm!

“Peng!”

A palm struck through Lachlan’s armor, melting the copper chest plate. It burnt his chest so much that the skin turned black. If he hadn’t protected himself with the energy from the star, then he probably would’ve been killed.

“You..... Huo Li!” Lachlan’s voice carried fear.

Behind him, Lin Qiong raised his sword with both hands and laughed, “Why don’t you just spend your time waiting in hell!”

As soon as the blade fell, it cut into Lachlan’s shoulder guard, sending him straight back down to earth!

.....

“Keng!”

The commander of the Fierce Tiger Army, was actually defeated within one move.

Chapter 401: The Strength of a Vice-God

TL Note: I accidentally misnamed one of the NPC Generals previously, his name is not Luo Hai, it's Forgotten Sea. I will correct the previous chapters, sorry about that guys!

"This...."

Angela looked up to the sky, her beautiful pupils had a glint of fear, but even more so, hatred. She gripped her godly weapon Destroyer, and whispered, "Huo Li has finally taken action. Exactly how strong is this bastard? Damn it, what should we do? Exactly how can we save Ba Huang City?"

Behind her, the imperial army commander Purple Star clutched his longbow, his eyes shined brightly, "Your highness, why don't I help you. We can attack together, and kill that crazy Lin Qiong bastard. How's that?"

Angela turned around and looked at him, "Lord Purple Star, you mean...."

"Exactly." Purple Star raised his longbow and smiled, "I meditated about it for a whole 17 months in the Snowy Lands, and I finally understand where the strength of the Ice Element comes from. Now, my [Ice Sealing Arrow] can stop time in this dimension. Maybe if we use this precious skill, we can kill Lin Qiong. I'll personally go to bait the enemy. Once Lin Qiong gets close, I ask that Your Highness use this opportunity and kill Lin Qiong, or else Ba Huang City will truly be in danger. As for that terrifying Huo Li, we'll leave him to Lord Forgotten Sea!"

Angela nodded and tightened her grip on the Destroyer, "Then.... let's give it a try. You must be careful!"

"Alright!"

.....

Purple Star abruptly lifted his shoes, and leapt into the air as he loosely pulled his longbow. The bow had been pulled until it formed a crescent, and a purple arrow began to materialize. The bow was pointed right at

Lin Qiong's back. "Sou!" The arrow cut through the air, leaving a purple trail across the sky. "Keng!" it lodged itself into Lin Qiong's back. At that moment, all of his star energy scattered, and he managed to break down part of Lin Qiong's shield.

"Pu...."

After Lin Qiong took the surprise attack, blood dripped from the corner of his mouth. He wiped it away with his thumb as his eyes filled with killing intent, "Purple Star, you bastard who only knows how to stab people in the back. I'm coming down to take your head, just you wait!"

"Shua!"

Lin Qiong raised his sword and charged down straight from the sky. He tightly gripped his sword with both hands, and threw a slash from right above Purple Star!

The dimension around Purple Star was completely under Lin Qiong's control. With no way to get out, he could only raise his bow and block it!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew, and Purple Star coughed up some blood. He was but an archer, how could he possibly take an attack from a Sword Saint close combat expert like Lin Qiong? The fact that he hadn't been instantly killed was already lucky.

Lin Qiong fell to the ground, his boots gently stepping upon the earth. "Pa!" He leapt from the ground, and dashed right towards Purple Star. He rested the tip of his blade against Purple Star's chest and laughed, "Your life has come to an end!"

"Pu!"

The blade went through, and Purple Star was pitifully pushed back to retreat into his Purple Star formation. A group of Purple Star Army NPC soldiers tried to help, only to be brushed away with a sweep of Lin Qiong's hand. Several bursts of flame passed through the army, burning countless soldiers to ash. Lin Qiong's eyes flashed with cruelty as he roared, "Die!"

Like lightning, he dashed through the air with his blade covered with electricity. This time, he was going in for the kill.

“Wu.....”

Purple Star spit out a mouthful of blood and struggled to stand up. He suddenly pulled back his longbow as frost began to dance in the air around his body. The air around him seemed to freeze around him. It was so intense that even some of the [Zhan Long] players couldn't move. Old K, who had also been frozen in time and space, exclaimed, “F*ck, what is this? I.... I can't move....”

Qing Qian's dagger was raised in the air as she said, “Me too.....”

“Shua shua...”

Streams of a deep blue frost energy began to coagulate into an arrow on Purple Star's bow, his entire body trembled as he used the last of his strength to release one last arrow. He coughed up blood and yelled, “Lin Qiong! You killed my brother, this is for you!”

“Sha Sha...”

Lin Qiong's armor was completely sealed with frost as Purple Star had used up all of his energy to seal all of the movement in that area. Lin Qiong would take the full brunt of this attack no matter what!

“Shua!”

The [Ice Seal Arrow] flew out, creating a blizzard in its wake as it struck Lin Qiong's body.

In the air, Huo Li suddenly jolted, “F*ck, Lin Qiong that bastard....”

.....

“Keng!”

The [Ice Seal Arrow] buried itself inside Lin Qiong's chest. From his side, Princess Angela picked up The Destroyer and raised both of her arms. She drew an arc through the air, her movements filled with hatred as she yelled out, “Lin Qiong, Die!”

“Keng!”

The Destroyer’s blade cut through his battle armor. “Ka cha!” The attack cut off Lin Qiong’s left arm in one clean cut. Even the blood that was about to flow out was frozen in place. At the same time, Lin Qiong cried out in pain. With great effort, he used all of his strength to force his body to move, making the frost seal weaken and retreated. Fortunately, Angela immediately drew close and raised her foot. “Keng!” She stomped onto Lin Qiong and forced him to the ground. With both hands, she raised her sword, and stabbed right at his mouth!

Lin Qiong’s pupils dilated. He seemed to realize that his life was about to end.

Then, right at that moment, an imposing flame came down from the sky. It was an attack shaped like a dragon’s claw, slashing right into Angela’s chest!

“Keng!”

Ba Huang City’s princess was thrown into the air, her armor burnt black. Even her snow white chest and long legs were covered in ash. Her mouth was full of blood as she was thrown into the crowds of people where she smashed through a catapult, and hit the wall before finally stopping. As she brushed her hair from her face, her eyes were full of defiance. Tears of humiliation dripped down her face, “I’m going to kill you, Lin Qiong, you bastard...”

.....

In the sky, the flames on Huo Li’s arm began to recede and he smirked, “You want to kill one of Jiu Li Kingdom’s youngest Sword Saints right under my nose? Keep dreaming!”

As he finished talking, Huo Li glanced at Purple Star who stood in the ruins. His killing intent shifted as he waved his hand, and activated another skill. At that moment, the strength of a dragon’s claw came down from the sky!

“Hong!”

The ground seemed to cave in as Purple Star let out a dying scream. His body was burnt to dust, and a fragment of light soared into the sky.

Seeing this, Angela trembled in fury, her tears continuously flowed, “Lord Purple Star, it was because of my uselessness, I was the one that did this to you.....”

.....

Huo Li stood in the sky, and stared at the warriors on the ground with apathetic eyes. He suddenly raised both of his arms and roared furiously, “Fallen humans of the earth! You all cannot fathom the power of God. However, I, Huo Li, can let you experience the power of a vice god. Come! Accept the judgement of a vice-god, and let us end this war!”

In the sky, a round fiery sun suddenly appeared. It was nighttime in the game, yet the sun appeared. What is this?

“Oh no.....” Qing Qian widened her big eyes and said, “This must be the forbidden tier spell.

Li Mu’s eyes flashed as he spoke, “His target is Angela. The princess of our kingdom is doomed.....”

I held my sword, and looked towards the Angela in the distance and exclaimed, “It’s too late. None of us can save Angela. F*ck this! The disparity between the battle strength of the NPCs is so huge. Huo Li is like a God!”

“It’s coming!” Matcha opened her tiny mouth.

From the sky, the round sun fell on the ground, and directly smashed into the battlefield!

“Your highness!”

Among the crowd of NPCs, the commander of Ba Huang City’s Lin Huang was sprinting. The young general, Lin Huang held his sword and dashed towards Angela. He suddenly stopped right in front of Angela and opened his arms wide. He condensed his qi into a protective shield as he roared loudly, “Huo Li, I will never let you.....succeed.....”

“ Hong!”

The fiery sun smashed into the ground and a scene of hell on earth appeared right before us. At least 30,000+ people of Ba Huang City’s NPC Army were instantly destroyed as howls and cries were heard. Numerous soldiers evaporated from the battlefield.

Under a huge rock, a soft crying sound was heard. Almost all of Angela’s battle robe was burned, and she sat with her knees on the ground while The Destroyer was placed at her side. She stretched her hand out towards the sky, the direction towards Lin Huang. Lin Huang turned around, and looked at her with a faint smile on his handsome face as he said, “My dearest one. I really didn’t want you to witness my death. I am sorry, your highness. I can only accompany you until here…….”

The wind blew and Lin Huang’s body instantly broke into pieces, and became sparks of fire and dust. One strike from Huo Li was enough to destroy him.

“Pa…….”

A melted gold badge fell into Angela’s hand. The words, “Commander of Yun Huang Army” was carved distinctly on the badge. Just like that, the youngest Sky knight of Ba Huang City died.

“Waaahhhh…….”

As Angela trembled, she suddenly burst out in tears and sat on the ground with her knees on the ground. Her face was covered in tears as she yelled towards the sky, “Can there be no more deaths? Can there be no more wars? I don’t want things to be like this…….”

Her voice echoed in the midst of the wind, yet only the cries of three armies could respond to her.

……

“Peng!”

In the mid air, the sound of the metal fist smashing into rock was heard, and Ba Huang City’s last line of defense fell.

The commander of the first army —Forgotten Sea spat out blood as he retreated. After fighting Huo Li numerous times, he still lost. The disparity between their ability was just too enormous!

“Peng!”

Forgotten Sea dropped to the ground on his knees, and slid away on the ground for almost a hundred meters. The battle sword in his hand had already broken in half. With bloodshot eyes, he looked towards the sky and said, “My King, your subordinate will no longer be able to protect you.....”

Huo Li stared at Forgotten Sea with pity in his eyes as he uttered, “Humph! What number one general! You’re just another useless fellow sitting around, waiting to die. Number one general! And now, let me take the head of Luo Lei. What do you think?”

Duke Luo Lei held his sword and bellowed furiously, “Come! You demon!”

As Huo Li guffawed, his eyes fell on Angela and said, “However, I want to torture you a little more. How about I kill the Moon Elf Princess, Angela first. This way, Luo Lei, you old bastard, will truly have nothing left.....”

Luo Lei’s shoulder trembled as he said, “Monster. You.....you are a monster.....”

.....

“Sha Sha.....”

Stepping on the charred grassland, I led Li Mu and Wang Jian to Angela’s side. I took out a purple tier cloak, and wrapped it around Angela’s body. I softly said, “Your Highness.....”

Angela looked up at me and responded, “You.....Warrior of Ba Huang City.....”

I felt slightly grieved as I spoke, “We have lost. Please forgive our inability.....”

Tears flowed from Angela's eyes as she said, "It has nothing to do with you guys. This was destined....."

.....

As I turned around, I saw flames enshrouding Huo Li's hand. He bellowed horrifyingly, "Come! No matter how many people protect you, you must die! Try a taste of my [Flame of a Dragon's Palm], Princess!"

"Shua!"

A fiery red dragon claw that seemed to blot out the sky, and cover the earth flew towards me, and I was paralyzed.

Li Mu also couldn't move and he screamed, "F*ck, the disparity between the NPCs in this city war is too huge! Shame on them. We have no hope....."

Wang Jian sighed and exclaimed, "So helpless!"

.....

"Shua!"

As we were waiting for our death, a resplendent figure suddenly fell from the sky. As her battle cloak fluttered along with the wind, her snowy fair long legs in battle boots were seen beneath the battle cloak. Seeing this, I felt a sense of familiarity. As she stood with her back towards us, she raised her right hand abruptly, and swung out with all her strength!"

"Peng!"

The flames splattered and Huo Li's confident attack was resolved by the strike of the beautiful girl!

.....

In the sky, the shadow of another young looking figure appeared. In the end of the horizon, the stomps of hooves thundered as huge swarms of people charged forward from the north. The young man in the sky held a longsword circulated by flames. He looked towards Luo Lei who was on the ground and said softly, "Father, I am back....."

Chapter 402: Frost's Feeling Petty

Duke Luo Lei stared into the sky with tears in his eyes, then he stood up proudly when he saw Luo Lin, "My child, you.... finally you are willing to call me father...."

Luo Lin smiled, "Yes father, I brought 3000 troops from Dragon City, hopefully this will be of some use to you. This is my trump card!"

"OK!"

.....

I stood dumbfounded on the blackened land, my Emperor Qin's Sword & Cold Iron Sword trembled in my hands. In front of me, Frost's beautiful body appeared, with a trace of loneliness, she turned around and looked at me. She smiled, "Didn't I tell you before? As long as I'm alive, I'll never let them lay a finger on you."

I was speechless.

Li Mu's body quivered, "Guildmaster, who is this super beauty..."

I softly replied, "My master, Frost..."

"This...body and face is outta this world, what's her number?"

"F*** off!"

.....

With Luo Lin's and Frost's arrival, Duke Luo Lei's expression was filled with relief and gratitude. Drawing out his sword, he glanced back at Ba Huang City's ground troops, "Soldiers who have shed blood in this war, the empire will forever remember your name. Even if our opponents are gods, we will still use our swords, cast with iron, to bring them to hell. Kill and bring glory to the name of Ba Huang!"

The galloping of war horses and sounds of slaughter could be heard all around.

Over at Jiu Li City, smoke signals filled the air, a densely packed group of calvaries, clad in golden armor, emerged from the smoke and dust

clouds in the horizon; only those who belonged to the royal army could don the gold armor. The king of Jiu Li City had finally arrived. He appeared to be an old person, however his eyes carried a certain radiance. Looking at Ba Huang City's position, he raised his sword up high and shouted, "Brave warriors of Jiu Li City, this battle is for honour and glory, tear their defenses to shreds and bring me Luo Lei's head. Whoever slaughters Luo Lei will be conferred the title of Marquis. You will claim ownership to vast fertile lands, and the company of numerous beautiful women. You have my word!"

In the air, Huo Li licked his lips and laughed, "Although I have no interest in being a Marquis, a thousand beauties still sounds interesting. Your honor, I will bring you Luo Lei's head!"

The King nodded, "Be careful!"

.....

Huo Li slowly soared up and faced Luo Lin from a distance, he sneered and said, "Luo Lin? HAHA, so Ba Huang City's reinforcement is you. I wonder if the cold of Dragon City has weakened you, let me try it out!"

As he spoke, Huo Li shook his hands as raging flames encircled them. All of his attacks were fire-based, moreover, they were considered unsurpassed in terms of fire elemental offensive techniques.

Knowing how strong his opponent was, Luo Lin raised his sword with both hands and tread the sky with his feet. A powerful wind energy then emerged from his body, causing his battle robes to flutter. Looking at Huo Li from afar, Luo Lei smirked and said, "Come, you who is known as God Huo Li. In the past, you were a War God who fell in deep slumber inside an ice cold glacier only to be dug up by the Jiu Li City's king. Then, when you were thawed, you became their number one soldier. I really wish to fight you, to see how strong the power of a God truly is!"

On the ground, Frost looked up, revealing a beautiful neckline. Her sword, Severing Beauty, trembled, "My Lord, you have to be careful. I can feel that Huo Li's strength with fire had already surpassed the Sword Saint realm, if not he wouldn't have been able to single handedly defeat

the experts of Ba Huang City...”

Luo Lin nodded, “I understand, Frost. Make sure to protect my father!”

“Yes, my Lord!”

Behind me, Angela was enveloped with the battle robe that I had presented to her. She stood up as the winds howled and swirled. Her cloak wrapped around her exquisite body, revealing her slender waist, a pair of flawless legs, and above her belly two voluptuous peaks. The cloth also revealed two tips that would cause any heart to skip a beat. Angela looked up at Luo Lin above, and through gritted teeth said, “Brother can’t compete with Huo Li. Why is he sent to face this battle? It’s too dangerous...”

Frost looked at Angela and smiled, “In this world, there is no one that can remain undefeated, Angela, with your meekness and personality, how would you lead the Blizzard Wind Army? If you weren’t Duke Luo Lei’s daughter, did you think your submissive personality is worthy of a Blizzard Wind commander?”

TL Note: Just in case, Blizzard Wind Army = Han Feng Army

Angela’s body shook, “I....I....”

I said, “Frost, isn’t that being too harsh...”

Pressing her lips together, Frost nodded a little and said, “Yes I know these words aren’t very pleasant, but I just want to say that since you are already in this battle, you are considered a soldier, and you can’t show any hint of weakness. This is a world ruled by sword and blood, and tears are not worth anything. All those things that I’ve said are because I hope that it’ll allow you to survive longer and become stronger!”

With a nod, Angela clenched her hand and said, “I will!”

Frost smiled, “Since you understand what I’m telling you, pass the battle robe to my student as it doesn’t belong with you...”

I grinned, “Frost, that’s enough...”

Frost turned around and smiled, but said nothing else.

Angela's eyes were filled with determination. She removed the armor with a "crash", allowing an attractive body to be paraded in front of us all. Besides a metal armor that barely covered the secret spot between her legs, she was totally naked.

"Here!" Angela looked at me eagerly.

"Pu Pu Pu..."

Behind me, Misty Cloud, Han Bei Song, Li Mu, Song Han, and the rest were all bleeding from their noses. I quickly grabbed a cape, and wrapped it around Angela's body, "Please give me a break Princess, please wear this armor. I don't need it, just treat it as a tribute that I offer to you as a warrior of Ba Huang City. Don't listen to Frost, she.. she's just making things difficult for you..."

Frost turned around and stared at me, her eyes filled with provocation, "Hmmm, was I? Was I making thing difficult for her?"

I hurried forward and stopped beside Frost, nudging her with my shoulder, "Ju.. Just stop it, will you? Treat it as a favour to me.. thank you.."

Frost secretly grinned as she lowered her head. She then looked intently back up and observed the battle in the sky.

Behind me, Qing Qian pouted her lips, "Hmm, why do I feel that.. Xiao Yao brother has a romantic relationship with these two NPCs....."

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands lifted her staff, "This fellow is truly a lady-killer,.Damn, worthy of being my leader...."

Li Mu was speechless.

.....

As flames surged through the sky, Huo Li stood within the blaze. He waved his hand, and sent out a fiery palm. Luo Lin did not dodge but strode forward in the air as streaks of frost formed a shield before his body. Unexpectedly, Huo Li's fiery palm did not strike through the shield, and the multitude of Ba Huang City felt relieved after seeing Luo Lin's

first move.

“Oh?”

Huo Li was slightly surprised and laughed, “You actually broke through the Sword Saint tier! Hahaha. Interesting! This tiny Fort Zi Feng actually has someone so powerful. How surprising.”

Luo Lin encircled the sword in Luo Lin’s hand as he gave a smile, “You will die here today, Huo Li!”

“Really? I am waiting!”

“Take this!”

Luo Lin suddenly moved and darted forward at a lightning speed. He slashed his sword ferociously and ice and fire clashed, making a “Peng” sound. Huo Li guffawed as he blocked Luo Lin’s strike, and lifted his leg in an enraged kick!

“Peng!”

The frost shield on Luo Lin’s chest crumbled after the kick, and he hastily retreated. As he was retreating, he opened his left hand abruptly and yelled, “[Astral Strike]!”

Condensing the powers of the starlit sky in the center of his palm, Luo Lin sent a out a strike, and angrily slashed Huo Li’s shoulder by using his hand as knife. A “Peng” sound was heard and Huo Li was wounded. His complexion changed slightly, and a drop of blood oozed out of his mouth. Taking the opportunity, Luo Lin spun, and slashed down heavily with his long sword while roaring furiously, “Now, can you die?”

“Muahahaha.....”

Yet, Huo Li’s response was a sinister laugh. He raised his arm, and ancient runes appeared above his arm like lava breaking out of the shell. The ancient runes instantly condensed into a golden shield of runes. When Luo Lin’s long sword crashed on the shield, a “Keng” sound burst forth, and his long sword was knocked away!

“How’s this possible?!”

While Huo li was still guffawing, Frost leaned close to him, and hit his chest with her kneecap heavily, causing a “Peng” sound. As blood splattered, Huo Li crossed his arms, and struck forward. After a “Keng” sound rang out, Luo Lin’s long sword was actually broken in half!

“Ah Ah.....”

Luo Lin humphed in pain as a burning hot flow of air spouted from the broken sword. Gnashing his teeth, he abruptly grabbed Huo Li’s arm, and sent the broken sword into his neck while enduring the burning pain!

“Pu Chi!”

Blood as hot as lava splashed out as Luo Lin fell from the sky like a kite with broken strings. More than half of his strength was lost, while a long sword was pierced into Huo Li’s neck. Blood flowed out, and howls of pain were heard continuously.

For several minutes, Huo Li endured the tremendous pain. He looked towards the ground, and gave a roar in anger, “I will kill you. I will destroy Dragon City!”

“Keng!”

Frost unsheathed her Severing Beauty. She stomped on the ground fiercely with her battle boots, and rushed out as a “Pa” sound was heard!

“Frost, be careful!” Luo Lin clutched his chest, and shouted out.

.....

Huo Li also darted down. He peered towards Frost’s body figure, and licked his lips, “What a beautiful person. I feel so sad knowing that you are about to become a pile of dust!”

Frost positioned Severing Beauty in her hand and yelled, “Go feel sad in hell! [Cosmic Blade]!”

“Peng!”

The energy shock wave surged through the sky, and [Cosmic Blade] was actually shattered by Huo Li. Frost’s and his strength couldn’t even be measured by numbers.

“Die!”

Huo Li’s heavy fist smashed down, and fell on Frost’s shoulder, making a “Hong” sound. Frost’s Ice Armor was crushed, and she spat out blood. As she fell towards the ground, she looked towards the sky with her beautiful eyes, and opened her hand, [Razor Rotation] !

“Pu!”

The extremely fierce strike of Severing Beauty slashed right through Huo Li’s right arm, leaving a horrifying bloody hole!

Huo Li roared in anger, and sent out another heavy qi punch!

“Hong!”

Frost dropped heavily on the ground. Dust covered her snow colored battle robe as she knelt there. She then lifted her face as defiance filled her beautiful eyes. Her arms shuddered as frost began to encircle her!

I could tell that it was [Decimating Ice Dragon], Frost’s ultimate skill !

.....

“Keng!”

Drawing my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword, I yelled, “Brothers, help her. We need to gain some time for her!”

Chapter 403: Can't Fight Anymore

“Hua!”

My War Swept Cloak fluttered behind me as I stood in front of Frost to protect her. After calculating the distance, I loftily opened my left hand,, and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“2217 ! ”

Huo Li's body trembled. My attack had actually broken through his defense. He glared right at me his eyes filled with killing intent. A golden flame revolved around his fist as he said, “You miniscule ant, why don't you have a taste of godly power!”

I immediately raised my two swords, and dipped my body. I entered into a defensive stance, and activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]!

Huo Li rushed at me and bashed me with a heavy punch, breaking through the defense of my Cold Iron Sword and the Emperor Qin's Sword. Even more so, I could feel my ribs shatter as I flew into the air! I was thrown heavily against the stone wall a dozen meters away. A shocking damage number flew above my head—

“7417 ! ”

.....

Old K roared out, throwing [Battle Axe Throw] right into Huo Li's shoulder. At the same time he abruptly activated [Whirlwind Slash], and yelled out, “I don't f*cking care if you have some ‘godly’ power. Go die!”

Huo Li exploded, “Move the f*ck away!”

Huo Li's arm was engulfed in flames as he began charging up a skill. The aura emitted was so strong that Old K's health suddenly fell, and he automatically activated [Oppose the Heavens] . However, Old K didn't retreat, and used this precious opportunity to raise his battle axe and ferociously attack. Huo Li then threw several bone shattering punches

into Old K's body. His skill inhibited death, so Old K was able to take all of the damage without falling!

"Time's almost up, Old K, get ready to retreat...." I said as I shakily stood up from the ruins.

Frost had finally finished accumulating Dou Qi. She raised Severing Beauty, as streams of ice energy began to materialize. Quickly it formed into the image of an Ice Dragon. [Decimate the Ice Dragon] activated!

"Hong!"

In the midst of the soaring dragon's flight The soaring Ice Dragon roared as it flew right through Huo Li's body. As expected, this flawless skill could even break through this god tier BOSS. As the Ice Dragon wreaked havoc, Huo Li's wretched screams were endless. The vice-god armor that was created around his body was stripped piece by piece, exposing his tender skin. Then, red scales suddenly appeared on top of this layer of skin. The sight of this froze people's hearts, what exactly is Huo Li?

Once [Decimate the Ice Dragon] finished, all of the strength in Frost's body was used up. "Pu Tong", she weakly sat on the ground with her snowy legs sinking onto the burnt ground.

.....

"Ahhhhhhh....."

Huo Li rushed into the sky in a fit of anger as his body continuously convulsed. It was only until half a minute later did the ice energy in his body finally recede. Covered in blood, he maliciously looked down at Frost and laughed, "Dragon City's beautiful Dragon Knight Commander Frost truly lives up to her name. This skill came from the ancient times. I've experienced it before. It's from the forgotten school, Dong Hai Sheng Xuan Yu. However, if you thought that you could use this [Decimate Ice Dragon] of yours to kill me, then keep on dreaming! Hand over your life now!"

Huo Li clenched his fist once again, activating yet another ferocious

skill!

My heart trembled. I immediately tossed away all desire to survive, and charged forward throwing my body on top of Frost's lap. Putting my hands around her waist I activated [Haste]. I yelled out, "Brothers, help me shield her for a moment, Frost cannot die. If a BOSS level NPC dies, they cannot revive. I definitely cannot lose my master!"

"I'm coming!"

General Wang Jian dashed forward, and pressed his blade against Huo Li's neck. His blade began to glow with a hexagram, and he quickly activated [Skyshaker Slash]. Huo Li's neck still had Luo Lei's broken sword lodged in it. At that moment, fresh blood began to flow out, and the aggro was immediately drawn towards Wang Jian. Angrily, he raised his fist and gathered flames around it. He roared out, "Ant, go die!"

"Hong!"

"13482 ! "

Wang Jian was killed in one stroke as his body burnt to ashes, and were scattered by the wind.

Li Mu raised his blade and roared out, "Holy motherf*cker, if this Jiu Li City's BOSS doesn't die, then our Ba Huang City will never have a chance at victory. Brothers, charge with me! Let's put our lives on the line!"

Wolf and Old K also rushed forward together!

"Shua!"

A shadow suddenly sprinted past them. Misty Clouds raised his arm and blocked everyone, his eyes filled with determination. He said in a low voice, "No, this BOSS will instantly kill anyone. You guys can't die just like that. Let me go by myself!"

At his command, the 100+ players from [Enemies at the Gate] charged forward, and surrounded Huo Li. They launched attacks at him from every direction. Huo Li immediately became infuriated, and conjured clusters of flames to sweep the area around him. Within a short ten seconds, all the

100+ men had been annihilated while I took those ten seconds to carry Frost to the main formation. From a distance, I nodded to Misty Cloud, and he nodded back with his eyes drooping. We both knew that this battle was getting harder and harder to fight.

.....

On our Ba Huang City's side, Duke Luo Lei sat on his mount at the frontlines. Luo Lin was wrapping up his wound as I gently set Frost down before him.

Frost had recovered some of her energy, and her face was not as pale as it was before. She struggled to stand up, and finally knelt on one knee before Luo Lin, "My lord, I....I have already done all I can, but....but that Huo Li has the body of a vice-god. He's gone through the training from the ancient times. With my current strength, I have no way of actually killing him....."

Luo Lin nodded, "I understand. Frost, you have done well. Huo Li is Jiu Li City Duke's trump card. Killing him will need much more than just you alone. We still have more cards to play...."

"Got it!"

In the distance, Dragon City's soldiers had finally arrived. A big man carrying a battle axe rode his sturdy battle horse towards us. He swung his battle axe around and roared out, "Huo Li, you mass murderer, your grandpa Su Ke has come to play with you!"

Dragon City's Dragon Knight's Vice commander had finally arrived!

Su Ke jumped right off the battle horse, and swept his battle axe through the air. The image of a mountain started to condense. With great force, he swung the axe onto Huo Li's shoulder!

"Keng!"

Dust flew into the sky as a shock wave was created.

"Pu!", Huo Li spat out another mouthful of blood, but his face remained as calm as ever. He looked at the battle axe lodged into his arm and

revealed a cold smile as he raised his hand and punched. “Keng!” it let out a sound that caused the earth to tremble. Su Ke’s ribs were practically shattered as he flew several hundred meters away, and landed heavily on the ground, his screams unending.

“Vice Commander Su Ke!”

At the rear, the few cavalymen’s faces turned green, and they held up their spears while shouting out loud, “Attention all! Vice Leader Su Ke has died! Everyone, throw your spears, and turn Huo Li into a porcupine!”

.....

“ShuaShuaShua.....”

The cavalymen separated, and set up on the left and right of Huo Li. All of them then raised their spears. The next second, thousands of spears flew simultaneously, and the light from the stars was almost covered by the spears. This was the strength of a big army. As “Pa Pa Pa” sounds were heard, numerous spears blasted on Huo Li’s body. Yet, Huo Li stood still in an arrogant manner, guffawed, and let the spears shoot towards him. His golden colored fiery armor had reformed, so it was obvious that he was not afraid of these attacks.

He suddenly waved his hand, and flames surged out. Dozens of cavalymen from Dragon City turned into dust while endless cries and howls of pain resounded.

“Muahaha. It’s still death no matter how many people come. You’re all ants that only possess the name of Dragon City, but do you guys deserve the name Dragon Knights?”

A sneer formed on Huo Li’s face as he said, “You all have never even seen a gigantic Dragon, so what gives you the right to name yourselves as Dragon City Warriors? Hahaha. Today, shall I let you see the grandeur of a true dragon!”

While he was still speaking, Huo Li raised both of his arms high up, and a hideous image of a fiery dragon head immediately materialized above him. As he forcefully threw down his arms, he gave out a loud roar and

shouted, “[Dragon’s Cry]!”

“Hong!”

With Huo Li as the center, a shock wave spread out. This sound wave attack was like a roar from my Flaming Tiger God but much stronger. With just one strike, more than half of the soldiers from Dragon City went into a state of coma. The ones with slightly lower levels bled from every orifice and died. The war horses neighed, and almost all of the Dragon City warriors lost their ability to battle.

“Hahaha.....”

Huo Li laughed, “Ants, really a bunch of ants. Hilarious humans.....”

.....

At this moment, a deep roar suddenly resounded from afar. An enormous object flew down from the sky, and shot towards Huo Li like a cannonball!

“What is it?”

Huo Li shuddered as he quickly hurled out his fist, and soon noticed that it was not a person, but an enormous boar that weighed at least ten tons with a body like a small hill. Its dark eyes stared at Huo Li in terror as saliva flowed onto the two fangs in its mouth. The boar yelled with “Hu Hu” sounds, seeming to know that its death is coming soon.

“Pu!”

He punched through the body of the boar and blood splattered. The internal organs of the boar splattered and splashed on Huo Li’s head and face. This made him burn with rage as he shouted, “Which idiot threw the boar?!”

Among the dead boars, a person dashed out with a thick and heavy iron chain in hand. The Beast Tamer Da Lin came and roared in anger, “It’s me, your grandpa, who threw these boars! What are you going to do about it?”

“Shua!”

His iron chain danced around, and forcefully bound Huo Li's arm. When Huo Li was about to retaliate, Da Lin's arms shuddered, and the chains wrapped around Huo Li's other arm like it had a mind of its own as well as his legs. As Huo Li was bound tightly, Da Lin opened both of his hands, and the iron chain flew out, and thrust into the earth, making "Pu Pu Pu" sounds. A powerful vice god had been bound in this manner .

Da Lin raised his hand, and smoothly unsheathed the sword on his back, and with an angry roar he thundered, " Haiyaaaaaa, try the taste of my [Kill the Dragon Slash] ! "

"Peng!"

As dust flew everywhere, Da Lin ferociously struck Huo Li's forehead with his sword.

However, Huo Li raised his head, and glared at this mighty being who was responsible for food in Dragon City. The corners of his mouth curved up into a smile as he spoke, "You have already enraged me. If you only possess such low ability, then accept your death!"

As he was still speaking, Huo Li suddenly opened his big mouth, and spouted a breath of hot flames!

"Peng!"

Although it was just a breath of air, it blasted Da Lin away like a heavy cannon. Da Lin was thrown far away, dragging a sad curve in the sky, and crashed just right beside Su Ke who was injured.

.....

"Cough Cough Cough....."

Da Lin struggled to climb back up, as fresh blood ran from his mouth, but was surprised to see Su Ke glaring at him from the side, saying, "Why do you bother getting up, are you seeking death? We have no need to give our lives to the Lords of Ba Huang City!"

"You..... you are faking death?" Da Lin said in surprise.

Su Ke grinned and replied, "Idiot. if you really want to die, I won't stop

you.....”

Da Lin shuddered and made a “Pu” sound as he spat out blood. He collapsed with his back on the ground, and seemed to have only one last breath left as he spoke, “I am so tired. I think I can’t fight anymore.....”

Su Ke did not talk, and rearranged his limbs into a slightly more comfortable position. His legs twitched and shuddered for a few a times, but after that he never moved anymore.

Chapter 404: Will There be a Miracle?!

“Be careful”

Li Mu stared from afar and said, “There is movement from Fang Ge Que again!”

I looked ahead and it seemed like a bunch of people from [Legend] were facing forward. With the fan in his hand, Fang Ge Que looked at us indifferently without attacking. Once he starts the attack, he’s going to try and destroy us.

“What are they planning to do?” Qing Qian asked.

Matcha widened her eyes, “There is only one reason for this situation... Decapitation...”

“Decapitation?” Old K quivered, “This bloody faggot Fang Ge Que. Whose head is he going for?”

I turned around and looked at Luo Lei then replied, “Of course it is to kill Duke Luo Lei. Once he dies, it will be a conclusive defeat for Ba Huang City, and there will be no one to turn the tables anymore.”

Misty Clouds clenched his fists and said, “To hell with him. Who is he to kill our Ba Huang City’s Duke. Has he even asked us??”

Han Bei Song replied, “So, how do we deal with this issue specifically?”

I pondered for a moment and said, “We should stay close to the NPC’s array, protecting them is our top priority. Huo Li is too OP as there is no one who can contend against him, and Fang Ge Que understands this. Since Da Lin, Frost and Su Ke are heavily injured, it is up to us to withstand [Legend]!”

“OK!”

.....

Huo Li stood proudly in the sky, and as he opened up his palms flames once again engulfed a group of cavalymen which emitted a pungent smell of charred bodies. However, we were already immune to this scene,

as this was a war.

As the war was reaching its final hours, very few players and NPCs from both Ba Huang and Jiu Li were left. The initial battle on the plains consisted hundreds of thousands of people however thousands. Even Dragon City could only deploy a few hundred troops to hold the fort, but, no one gave up yet. This Fort Zi Feng stood in the middle of the 2 cities, and had a very strategic location. This was far too important to lose.

“Kang!”

Luo Lin shuddered as he stood up. He wielded a new sword as he shouted, “Dragon City! Charge forward, and destroy everyone from Jiu Li City!”

On the ground, 1000 Unsullied Cavalrymen had already prepared for action. One after another, they rode their robust Snow Wolves. Each of the Snow Wolves had rippling muscles and crimson teeth. Ferociously, they roared at the Jiu Li City Soldiers as if they thirsted for their flesh and blood. Finally, Luo Lin has decided to use his last card.

Frost supported herself against a white battle horse and softly said, “My Lord, do you really want to use the Unsullied? They..... they are our last soldiers...”

Luo Lin nodded, “Yes, I understand that, but for the sake of Ba Huang City, and for my father I must do this. Frost, do not say anymore. I know what I am doing!”

Frost nodded, “I understand....”

.....

A thousand Unsullied cavalrymen raised their sharp blades, and rushed forward as they swept across the fields right at the ruins of Heaven’s Army. Lin Qiong already had an arm cut off by Angela. He was so injured that he couldn’t continue to battle anymore. In that state, he led several of his personal soldiers, and ran back towards Jiu Li City. It looks like Heaven’s Army will soon be annihilated. Except as long as Lin Qiong doesn’t die with the 80% of the dead NPCs being revived, Heaven’s Army

will still be Jiu Li City's main pillar.

The remaining seven armies of Ba Huang City also sent out their remaining forces to battle, and help the Dragon City Army to attack. Around 15,000 men were attacking the 20,000 enemies and the outcome of this battle was still unclear.

Luo Lin and Frost looked up at Huo Li, as he returned their stares nobody made a careless move.

“Pa da,..... Pa da.....”

Drops of golden blood dripped onto the desert sand, and Huo Li's body seemed to be on the verge of collapse.

Frost rubbed her lips, “Huo Li has already lost a lot of blood, so he has probably lost a lot of strength as well. If we keep on wasting him away, maybe we will be able to cut off his head. If we can kill Huo Li, then the Jiu Li City Army won't be that fearsome anymore.”

Luo Lin nodded, “Exactly, I was also waiting for this opportunity!”

.....

Right at that moment, the sounds of players fighting traveled to us. My gaze froze, and I raised my sword, “[Legend]'s people have finally arrived. Motherf*cker, can Fang Ge Que not resist anymore?!”

Li Mu raised his longsword, “Brothers, get ready for battle!”

[Legend]'s 10,000 men came, filled with energy and pride. Fang Ge Que was personally leading them. He lightly waved his fan, “No matter if it's a player or a NPC, kill whoever tries to block our path!”

An army of a hundred of Ba Huang City's royal army charged forward, only to be killed by [Legend]'s bombardment of arrows, bullets, and spells within half a minute!

“F*ck....”

Misty Clouds' pupils dilated in fear, “There are only 100 knights to protect him, and he just uses his long range players to open up the path. Fang Ge Que truly has guts. Does he want to use guerilla warfare to

devour us, and all of the high tier Ba Huang City NPCs?”

“It’s exactly like that....” Han Bei Song’s arms slightly trembled, “Fang Ge Que’s been saving these 10,000 elites just for this moment. Now, his time has finally come....”

I didn’t say anything, and just picked up my Emperor Qin’s Sword. As I rushed forward, I roared out, “Protect the front line! Once they get within 50 yards of it, we’ll charge forward. The more we kill, the more we benefit!”

“Alright!”

15,000 men from all three of the big guilds stood still, watching and waiting for Fang Ge Que’s men to kill their way to us.

“70 yards!”

“60 yards!”

“50 yards! Charge!”

The line raised their longswords, and charged forward. Old K, Li Mu, Misty Clouds, and Matcha all followed behind me, while we kept receiving long range heals. This was our last counterattack.

.....

“Pa pa pa.....”

Arrows and spells all fell upon me, and I furrowed my brows. I waited for healers to heal me while I gave myself my own heals. When we were only 30 yards away, I pulled out God’s Army Cards, and cast [Soul Army] and [Seven Star Teleportation] at practically the same time. I entered into the Seven Stars, and suddenly appeared within the [Legend] formation!

“Hun!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword exploded with skills as I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and with a turn of my body I used my Cold Iron Sword to cut down an archer’s neck. I rotated my two blades, and my entire body was like a windmill as I cut through the crowds. As I was attracting a large amount of firepower to my position I was also draining a lot of the

health from the enemy!

Behind me, Li Mu charged at Lu Chun Yang. The two didn't say a word as they attacked each other with their unique skills. After a round of attacks, they were both left with critical health. After the barrage of skills, Li Mu's health almost hit rock bottom. He raised his blade, and "Pu!" Stabbed it through Lu Chun Yang's shoulder!

"2327 ! "

Silent, Lu Chun Yang threw a [Skyshaker Slash] cutting down General Li Mu's remaining health, but before he could even take pride in his kill, a fiery fox claw slashed his body which was closely followed by Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands' [Indigo Sea Arrow]. Lu Chun Yang roared out in frustration, and knelt on the ground. Like that, [Legend]'s vice-guildmaster and Li Mu dueled to the death.

"Hong!"

A [Spiral Ice Dance] began to rise, binding Old K in place at the front. In a fit of fury, that crazy bastard leapt up, and threw a [Savage Jump Slash] right at Fang Ge Que!

"Shua!"

"MISS!"

Fang Ge Que jumped backwards, dodging Old K's attack. In the end, the [Savage Jump Slash] killed an archer, and Old K was still trapped by the [Spiral Ice Dance]. His chest peppered with arrows. He started to enter critical health, and activated [Oppose the Heavens]. Unfortunately, that only lasted 7 seconds, and by the end of it Fang Ge Que had sent a [Blazewind Lock], taking away the life of our number one berserker.

In the midst of all the Wolf's charge was also halted as he was instantly killed by a salvo of gunfire!

.....

"F*ck....."

Misty Clouds was enraged, "How did they die so quickly....."

Not too far in the distance, Xuan Yuan Feng sent a wave of attacks, forcing Misty Clouds to immediately retreat several steps backwards. As he faced this top tier player, he sent me a message, “Xiao Yao, give me some support so that I can kill Xuan Yuan Feng!”

“Alright!”

Facing Xuan Yuan Feng’s long spear, Misty Cloud roared out as Azure Dragon energy encircled his left arm. “Peng!” The spear was forced backwards because of the [Divine Shield of the Tortoise], and he also threw a [Phoenix Slash] onto Xuan Yuan Feng’s shoulder. After that, he sent a [Combo Slash], and continuously advanced forward and attacked. Despite all of his efforts, he still wasn’t able to instantly kill the enemy. There were just too many people healing Xuan Yuan Feng!

“Ding!”

The Emperor Qin’s sword suddenly had a glowing hexagram on its tip, as I stepped into the Seven Star positions, and was teleported to right behind Xuan Yuan Feng. At the same time my combo exploded, I let my two swords dance, sending out 5 slashes within a moment!

“Ahhhh....”

XuanYuan Feng yelped in pain, and like that was killed by Misty Clouds and I. Then, at that moment, my feet grew cold and [Fire and Ice Storm] activated. It was Fang Ge Que’s custom skill!

“Kill him!”

Misty Clouds picked up his long sword ,and rushed at Fang Ge Que. However Fang Ge Que only loftily glanced in his direction, and used magic to increase the distance. In the end, Misty Cloud’s health had been wasted away, and he weakly knelt to the ground, his eyes filled with frustration, “Kill.... kill him.... How can I lose like this...”

.....

The guildmaster of [Enemies at the Gate] died like that which was a great loss to our forces. Han Bei Song carried his iron sword, and rushed into the crowds, only to also fall weakly to his knees. Without Han Bei

Song's protection, Who's Blue and Not Yet Red were killed by [Legend]'s swordsmen. In the blink of an eye, our entire plan had crumbled.

“Brother Xiao Yao....!!”

Qing Qian's voice carried a slight tremor, “We almost have no one left. We can't go on like this, we can't....”

I tightened my grip, and charged into the crowd recklessly hacking away, unable to help in any other way.

General Lian Po said in the guild chat, “Guildmaster, why don't we retreat? If we keep on fighting like this, we'll have no one left. We've already killed a lot of [Legend]'s players. We've already achieved the effect of an ambush....”

“Alright then, retreat!”

I waved my sword, about to charge back into the fray, but when I saw that the ground was covered in corpses I stopped. The fact that Wolf, Li Mu and Old K were among the fallen, made me realize that even though I had wanted to take them with me to dominate the world, and win a hundred battles, they had already fallen under the blades of the enemy. I have a lot more work to do to realize that dream.

.....

“Keng!”

Behind me, sparks flew. Matcha was being forced backwards by a swordsman. She resolutely held her shield there, and looked at me with her beautiful big eyes. Lovingly, she glanced at the [Zhan Long] badge on her shoulder then looked over at Fang Ge Que, “I'll cover for Boss, [Zhan Long] will never lose to you!”

Fang Ge Que's gaze turned cold, “Kill!”

Swallowed up in flames and ice, Matcha's dainty little body weakly fell to the ground.

.....

My heart broke as I watched her death. Against a goliath like [Legend],

was there really such a thing as miracles?

Chapter 405: God Tier Dragon

“Keng Keng Keng!”

The battle axes of three level 70 berserkers from [Legend] crashed together on my sword. My Emperor Qin’s Sword quivered, and almost flew out of my hand. My health nearly reached the bottom as I tumbled, and slid very faraway down the sand. Killing intent immediately filled the eyes of a group of [Legend] players as someone yelled, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai is nearly dead! Kill him! We can’t let this person live anymore!”

I felt a cold wind from behind, and my shoulders were held by a pair of warm hands as I backed away. Frost said towards me tenderly, “You have worked hard enough. Just let me handle the rest.....”

As she was still speaking, Frost leaped forward, and stepped gently in the sand covered by a river of blood. She opened her left hand; her five fingers were snowy white and trembled slightly as streaks of ice encircled, and danced between her fingers. The next moment, she shouted softly, “[Ice Spear]!”

A flurry of snowflakes suddenly formed in the sky. These snowflakes were able to deal damage to the players. On top of that, countless ice spikes sprung from the ground, injuring many more. The damage power wasn’t extremely strong, but it was enough to kill many of [Legend]’s players. Within a moment, at least a hundred players had been killed by Frost’s one attack.

.....

“Uh oh, this NPC bitch is really strong. She even has a big chest!”

[Legend]’s flagbearer, Little Scholar raised his long spear, “Brothers, retreat! This NPC still has the strength to fight again. We can’t break through them from here, or else all of our people will die!”

A group of [Legend] players retreated like a tide. Several of the people that Fang Ge Que lead to kill many more NPC’s had been shot to death by Ba Huang City’s archers. They could only leave disappointingly. Fang Ge

Que had underestimated the counterattack strength of Ba Huang City's NPCs. His one strike to kill strategy had been shattered.

.....

“Hahaha....”

The vice guildmaster of [Enemies at the Gate], Sword Reborn, stood up from the midst of ruins, and looked at the bodies that surrounded him, his heart crushed by all of the losses. He finally said, “To think that we would fight to this point. Even guildmaster Misty Clouds had been killed. [Legend] is just too OP!”

I made a fist, then asked Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, “Tang Xue, can you take count, to see how many of [Zhan Long] are left?”

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands rubbed her small nose and said, “There's no need to, we still have 37 people, including you, me and Qing Qian.....After this battle, our main force has practically been wiped clean.....”

Qing Qian gripped her dagger and cried, “Brother Xiao Yao, we're going to lose this City War.....”

I looked at the distant [Legend] guild, and shook my head, “Not necessarily. We can't give up so easily. Let's just wait for a little longer, maybe there'll be other opportunities....”

“But..... but.....”

Qing Qian's eyes were red and swollen, “In Ba Huang City, many of the guilds have already logged off. They've already given up this City War, thinking that there's no chance for victory....”

I let out a deep sigh, “Either way, everyone from [Zhan Long] must follow me to battle until the very last second!”

“Ok!”

Qing Qian and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands nodded together.

[Blood Contract]'s vice guildmaster, Sheltering Guest, walked over, “Guildmaster Xiao Yao, the total force left of all three guilds is around

500 people. Why don't you command them. The fate of these 500 people, and this battle is now in your hands."

I nodded, "I understand. For now, tell the players to stand down. We are waiting for the right moment!"

"Got it!"

.....

In the sky, Huo Li raised flames in both of his palms and had just killed several War Hawk Knights. These Warhawks had been trained since they were young, their bodies were sturdy and burly enough to bear the weight of a fully armored knight. On top of that, they flew extremely fast, creating a high aerial attack power. Every Warhawk Knight had been practically made from gold coins, and were extremely expensive to create.

Unfortunately, before Huo Li, a man with the power of a vice-god, these Warhawk Knights were average. Within moments, they had all been cut to pieces, and burnt to dust. For some of the Warhawks, their feathers had been turned to dust, causing them to fall from the sky. Their screams constantly rang out.

"We can't continue on like this...." Luo Lei gritted his teeth, "If we keep this up, then Ba Huang City might actually be completely wiped out by Huo Li. What should we do?"

Luo Lin gripped his sword, "Father, maybe there's another way to control Huo Li."

"What way?" Luo Lei's eyes lit up.

Luo Lin looked up at the sky and said, "On the deepest floor of Dragon City, I dug up a secret skill book, it even had some ancient martial secrets. In there, it talks about a certain skill that uses the strength of many people. It uses life in exchange for an extremely strong attack, called [One Heart].

Frost was stunned, "But my Lord, [One Heart] has never been used before. Besides.... this uses life as a price!"

Luo Lei softly smiled, then walked over and patted Frost's shoulder, "Don't worry, I understand. Girls will worry about their appearances suffering the damages of time, so I will be the one to activate [One Heart]. I will lead the 100 generals of Dragon City together and activate it. Frost, you recover your strength once [One Heart] passes, I and the 100 other generals will become incapacitated for a short time. After that, I will rely on you to protect Ba Huang City...."

Frost grit her teeth, "No, my Lord, I wanted to activate it with you. I also understand that you guys need my strength!"

Luo Lin shook his head, "No, you have to live. Listen to my command, it is the command of Dragon City's lord!"

Frost still couldn't bear it. She bit down on her lip, "Yes....your underling listens to your command..."

.....

Luo Lin strode forward and raised his battle sabre and roared out, "Where are the generals of Dragon City?"

Behind him, a group of Dragon City generals all stepped out of their lines. Everyone began to chant, and streams of crimson air began to revolve around their bodies. Gradually, the streams of air began to centralize into some kind of spell. It took everyone's strength and poured it into Luo Lin's body, giving his strength an enormous boost. Of course, this was a skill that used people's lives as the price, something that was a bit terrifying.

After a short ten minutes, the 100 Dragon City generals seemed to have all had their life energy sucked away, and weakly retreated several steps before falling to the ground. The Ba Huang City soldiers rushed to their sides to help them up. Luo Lin on the other hand, was covered in a bright glow that made him look tireless. All of his earlier wounds had completely healed, and the blade in his hand slightly trembled with power. He looked at the fire in the sky, and grinned, "Come on, why don't we fight a second round!"

"Keng!"

The air around his feet began to revolve, propelling Luo Lin into the sky. With a swing of his longsword, he threw a sharp attack at Huo Li. Huo Li had sensed a change in Luo Lin earlier on, and raised his arm to parry the blow. The golden flames materialized into an armor, it was a shield created from his vice-god energy.

“Hong!”

A shock wave formed in the middle of the air, and crazy winds began to sweep across the field. With a single attack, Huo Li’s arm had been hacked so much such that the blood, and meat was just a mess. The vice-god strength had been broken!

“F*ck!”

Huo Li retreated several steps, and then raised his palm sending another [Dragon Palm Strike]!”

Luo Lin waved his sword, and lowered his body to rush forward. He violently kicked with his battle boots, and “Keng!”, Huo Li’s chin had almost been kicked out. Fresh blood started to drip as a savage scene laid out before us. Luo Lin sent out another slash!

“Ka Cha!”

Huo Li’s left arm had been cleanly cut off as blood spurt out. What truly shocked us however was the fact that the open wound was wiggling around. “Shua!” he grew a new arm!

.....

“Oh?”

Luo Lin was stunned, then he coldly smiled, “To think that you had such strong life energy. However, Huo Li, your strength has been continuously decreasing, while my strength has been increasing!”

Huo Li laughed in spite of himself, but didn’t say anything. He rapidly collected some vice god energy in his body and immediately created a new layer of the vice-god shield. His entire body had been enveloped in the flame armor. He maniacally laughed, “Come at me, Child of Luo Lei. Let

me see exactly how much skill the King of Dragon City really has. Come, let us duel!”

Luo Lin’s expression grew cold. He forcefully stabbed his sword into Huo Li’s abdomen, only to be sent flying away with a kick. Closely after that, he crossed his arms as “Peng Peng Peng”, continuous explosions burst. Huo Li was completely bloodied, unable to counterattack at all.

On this great Earth, almost everyone was watching this god level battle.

“Gu Dong...”

I raised my eyebrows, “ Looks like Luo Lin is about to win...”

Frost however bit her teeth, “ No...”

“Whats wrong?”, I looked at her.

Frost’s full face was full of worry, “ Duke Luo Lin’s strength may be astounding, however that is not his. It is rapidly declining, he will very soon be back to his original power. Huo Li is using his soldiers as meat shields. He’s waiting for Luo Lin’s power to decline. If it comes to this, he will beat Duke Luo Lin... We must help decrease the time in killing Huo Li, or else Duke Luo Lin will be in big trouble!”

Saying this, Frost tensed up and lowered her head to start searching. Suddenly she reached her arm out, and picking up a bow amidst all the rubble. It was General Purple Star’s weapon that he left when he died!

“Weng!”

Frost pulled back on the string of the bow, condensing all the power onto the arrow. A frosty arrow flew out.

.....

“Peng!”

The arrow landed directly onto Huo Li’s back, however it was ineffective, and cost Frost most of her energy as her face turned white again.

“Don’t push it... “ I said concernedly.

Frost bit her lips, "I'm.. I'm useless. I can't help him at such an important time. I'm.. so useless...."

I replied, "Don't worry, maybe the situation isn't all that bad..."

"Alright."

Right at this moment, a nearby Dragon City soldier glanced at me, retorting, "Kid, apart from caring about General Frost, what else can you do? Shut your mouth, this is no place for you to be saying such things!"

I looked back at him, the vice general of Dragon City, Jack, who seemed to be a trusted follower of Luo Lin.

"Jack, you shut your mouth!"

Frost's beautiful eyes carried coldness, "Out of the entire Dragon City, who dares to not do anything. I, Frost will die unburdened!"

Jack's face turned cold, he had nothing else to say.

.....

In the air, the fighting was intense. Huo Li raised his hand, and caught Luo Lin's long sword. his hand struck down!

"Peng!"

As the sound resonated out, Luo Lin went from flying upwards to hurtling straight down. He heavily struck the blood covered floor. His body spasmed, almost losing all his power. Even the Dragon City Duke, was forced into such a horrible position.

.....

Huo Li guffawed as the skin on his body began to peel off. He roared furiously, "I will slaughter all of you. Definitely!"

His head gradually became hideous. Huo Li's body expanded rapidly as skin covered with scales broke through his original human skin. Flames burst in the air, and as the flames dispersed an enormous Dragon appeared in the sky. He spewed fire, and flapped his wings.

"Ahhh....."

Frost retreated several steps back with her face wracked in pain as she uttered, “Huo Li, he.....he’s actually an Magic Dragon. God! We have been battling a God Tier Dragon.....”

Chapter 406

“I can’t go on...”

Ba Huang City’s General Angela, switched into a new set of armor, held on to her injured left arm and moved forward. “The Magic Dragon’s power is just too strong. If we continue fighting like this, then Ba Huang City will really be killed to the last man. Duke, say something, I cannot allow our soldiers to run to their deaths!”

Luo Lei hurriedly raised his long sword, yelling “I need help! Help Luo Lin, and the Dragon City soldiers retreat. We are going to Fort Zi Feng. Once we are inside the walls, have all the defenders go up on the walls. Hmph, no matter how strong Huo Li is, he has already suffered so many injuries. Even if he is a dragon, his time of death will eventually come!”

The crowd all nodded their heads. Frost carried her injured body over, and and flicked my head. “You should also come with everyone, and retreat into Fort Zi Feng...”

I looked at the ongoing battle. All of Ba Huang City’s guilds had been wiped out. I nodded my head, “Got it...”

.....

From afar, groups of cavalrymen were charging at Jiu Li City’s frontlines while Ba Huang City’s main soldiers flanked from the west side. As we came into the fort’s walls, a group of heavy armor class soldiers headed up the walls. They then moved the crossbows and large amounts of catapults such that they were lined up along wall, all aimed at the Magic Dragon.

The Magic Dragon Huo Li arrogantly twisted his body in the air. With a single dragon breath, he burnt a huge amount of Unsullied cavalry into ashes. Once he killed all of the Unsullied, the Demon Dragon spread his wings, and directed his crimson pupils towards the city walls. He opened his enormous mouth, and with a voice so loud that it shook the earth, he taunted in dragon tongue, “Luo Lei, does Ba Huang City only have so little skill? You guys actually lowered yourselves to hiding in the dirty

Barbarian's city. Did you guys want to fight like a cornered rat? If I were you guys, I'd stretch my neck out, and wait for my execution. That way, there'd be much less pain!"

Duke Luo Lei personally raised his sword, and stood at the border of the city wall as he roared out, "Huo Li, if you have the guts then come at us! Why are you saying so much useless stuff!?"

"Oh?!"

Huo Li laughed. Then, a gigantic fleshy wing suddenly flashed before us as he charged with his front claws raised. He flew straight at Duke Luo Lei. Clearly, he wanted to rip Duke Luo Lei to shreds with one slash.

"Target the dragon's wings!"

Luo Lei's eyes were cold. He raised his sword, and suddenly jumped forward. He rolled a distance along the city's bricks. "Peng!" Huo Li's claws made a deep cut into the city walls, and huge blasts made the bricks fly out. Massive arrows also flew into the air, "Pa Pa Pa", they bombarded Huo Li's body. Even though they weren't deadly, they at least dealt a great deal of damage.

"Hong!"

Huo Li barreled through the sky, as he flew high, up and then made a turn. He began to fan flames with his wings, and suddenly spit out another dragon breath onto the city walls. Dozens of crossbows were burnt to ashes. However, in the blink of an eye a bunch of boulders bashed into his head. The barbarians in Fort Zi Feng had all been killed, but the city's defense machines were still very useful.

Frost raised her Severing Beauty, and calmly stood at the corner of the city wall. Her beautiful eyes swiftly turned cold as she pointed the sword right at the Demon Dragon's left eye, and yelled out, "All of Dragon City's Warriors, target the Demon Dragon's left eye, and throw your lances. Let's make him blind!"

At her command, countless lances flew into the air with a "Shua Shua Shua". The Demon Dragon was too focused on the boulders. Why in the

world would he expect a surprise attack like this? At that moment, several lances stabbed the dragon's eye, and fiery red blood flowed out. The immense eye turned into a hedgehog within seconds. Huo Li screamed in pain as one of his eyes was crippled.

“Rrrrrggggghhhh!”

In the midst of the dragon's roar, he threw another dragon's breath across the city wall. A group of Dragon City warriors screamed as they died in flames. Frost stood in her original spot, her body protected by an armor of ice. At the same time, her beautiful eyes were filled with surprise as she murmured, “The Magic Dragon is much weaker now. To think that the dragon's breath couldn't even get past my Frost Armor.....”

Out of breath, Luo Lin leaned against a totem on the city wall. After he gasped for air, he said, “Alright. If that's the case, then even if it means wasting away all of his energy, I will kill Huo Li today. Otherwise, this Magic Dragon will definitely become Ba Huang City's calamity. After this battle, he could fly over all by himself, and destroy the entire city!”

Luo Lei jolted upright, “Then, that monster must die here!”

.....

At the distant Northern Gate, there was suddenly an explosion. A big group of Jiu Li City NPCs and players rushed into the city. They had finally breached the fort. To top it off, at the center of the fort was the City Hall, where Fort Zi Feng's final BOSS was at. He had yet to appear, but he carried with him the Citadel Defending Decree. No one knew who would become the ultimate owner of that decree!

“Pa pa pa.....”

With hurried footsteps, Jian Feng Han rushed up the city wall with his sword in hand, and yelled out, “Bad news! Jiu Li City's people are storming at us. [Zhan Long] and [Enemies at the Gate], you guys have more people, you must be careful. Fang Ge Que has at least 5000 people left. The ones he wants to kill the most are you guys. You have to be weary. [Vanguard] will go to the Northern Gate to block them.”

I exclaimed, “Jian Feng Han, what did you say you were going to do?”

Jian Feng Han grinned, “[Vanguard] only has 100 people left in total. I have no way of getting anything more out of this City War. I’m gonna leave the rest with you. Fang Ge Que had killed Simple, massacred the fort, and killed all of Ba Huang City’s players at Fort Zi Feng. At this rate, the Citadel Guarding Decree will probably go to one of the players of Jiu Li City, and Ba Huang City will have completely lost!”

“And then?”

“And then, [Vanguard] will cover for you guys while [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] immediately leave the city. [Legend] will probably use their main force to chase after you guys, so you need to think of a way of losing them outside of the city. After that, Xiao Yao Zi Zai you will bring people back, and trap [Legend] in Fort Zi Feng. This seems to be the only hope we have.”

“This....”

I gave a deep breath. Jian Feng Han’s assessment was very accurate. This was truly a last resort situation. If we didn’t do that then we would probably be completely annihilated by Jiu Li City without a single person left. To be killed like that after fighting for 48 hours was really not worth it.

Qing Qian softly said, “Brother, Jian Feng Han is right. We can’t take them on head on....”

I nodded and yelled, “Everyone, immediately get off the city wall, and follow me out of the city! We’ll lure [Legend]’s main force out of here, right now!”

.....

A group of [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], [Blood Contract] players all got off of the walls. I brought up the rear as I watched Qing Qian and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands wait for everyone to leave the city. In the distance, Fang Ge Que lead [Legend]’s players around the city, and straight at the Eastern Gate. It was just as Jian Feng Han had said, [Zhan

Long] and [Enemies at the Gate] had long become Fang Ge Que's thorn in his side. If he didn't kill us all, Fang Ge Que would never be able to rest.

"Chase after them! Kill [Zhan Long]!" Fang Ge Que bellowed.

[Legend] had at least 5000 people. Flocked together they stormed in our direction, it would freeze any heart in terror.

At this moment, movements were heard from the east wall of the Fort. It was a group of [Vanguard] about 100 people led by Jian Feng Han. This guildmaster of [Vanguard] did not put on his past grave expression. Instead, he held his longsword to his chest, and sat at the edge of the city wall, as his lips carried a carefree smile, "To hold back [Legend], what's the easiest way? Hei hei, of course, a diss war. From now on, I leave everything up to you guys....."

The elites of [Vanguard] shuddered, and their eyes all fell on the three people at the front of the array. These three were the big shots of [Vanguard]. It seemed like everyone thinks that they are most suitable for this job—

Stepping on top of the city wall, Goodbye Tears stared at Fang Ge Que with blazing eyes as he took a deep breath, and shouted with a voice as loud as the bells, "Fang Ge Que, do you really think of yourself as number one in the China Server? Do you really think that [Legend] can cover the sky with one hand in the China Server? You are wrong. This game wasn't made for just one player and [Legend] won't be the winner forever. Did you not strive to protect your name as the first of China? Do you think you are a symbol of the age? Pfft. I will give you eleven words for free, "If you are a flower, bulls won't even dare to defecate on you!"

Don't Be Foolish carried his long spear and chuckled, "Don't say that. I think Fang Ge Que is not that bad. He is rather handsome. Although your looks are like flying sand and rolling pebbles, a supernaturally fined craft....."

North Pole laughed, "What do you two know? Fang Ge Que was originally a penniless vagrant. He went coalmining and got rich. He earned millions of dollars, and exchanged all his belongings into cash. He

then went to a gold shop, and bought a really thick gold necklace. However, when the gold necklace went into the water, it started to float. Hahahaha.....”

Goodbye Tears pointed at Fang Ge Que with his fingers and laughed out loud, “To put it bluntly, Fang Ge Que, you’re a very certain type of guy. The type that would, for the rest of their life live like a pig, and be a bastard until the knife drops. Do you think I should get the knife, or should you? To be honest, I really want to just slap you all the way out of this city, so much that I can’t even stop myself. It’s all because Lu Chun Yang, and the others have been rushing me. Oh, I’m sorry. I forgot. Your vice guildmasters have all been killed by Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Wahahahaha, no matter how many more people you have, it won’t matter, because you have no more commanders!”

Don’t Be Foolish laughed wildly, “Yeah. Yeah. And he even said arrogant words about slaughtering Ba Huang City. Tsk. Tsk. Don’t bluff. Fang Ge Que, I would suggest that you lower your volume next time, otherwise your words will be at fault if the outer skin on the walls of Fort Zi Feng peeled off.....”

.....

“You guys!”

With the fan in his hand, Fang Ge Que’s face flushed with anger. He was a gentleman, and had never experienced such abuse to his pride in battle. Plus, Goodbye Tears, Don’t Be Foolish and North Pole spoke no vulgar words, but still had the power to anger Fang Ge Que until his insides bled.

The flagbearer of [Legend], Little Scholar, was the first one who couldn’t restrain himself. He pointed at the eastern city wall with his long spear, and shouted out loud, “We.....we must go up the east city wall, and cut Goodbye Tears’ bald head off. I am F*cking mad!”

With a stern expression, Goodbye Tears touched the scar on his forehead and said, “I have trained myself to have an invincible golden body ten years ago. You, a dreg with only such low battle strength, want

to take my head? In your dreams! Come! I will wait for you. If you, little scholar, have the guts to come up the city walls, do you not believe that I will slash you dead?

Little Scholar did not speak anymore, but held his gun as led a group of people forward.

.....

“They are really here!”

Don't Be Foolish's jaws almost dropped on top of the city wall. He then turned around with his spear in hand, and jumped down from top of the city wall, as he shouted out loud, “Brothers, see you in the next life!”

Jian Feng Han's face twitched and said, “F*ck. Are you guys really that scared of death?”

Goodbye Tears held his long sword, and patted on Jian Feng Han's shoulder, “Guildmaster, rest assured. With me here, these [Legend] players won't even get to touch your hair. Ah..... ahh. The wind is too strong. I can't stand firmly.....”

With a “Shua” sound, another man fell down from top of the city wall.

Holding his staff, North Pole flew into the wind, and in a flash and went out of the city wall. His voice resounded from the wind, “Fang Ge Que, fight us outside the city of you dare! Aha! Guildmaster, we really aren't afraid to die!”

.....

Jian Feng Han's face became green and turned around with his long sword in hand while shouting out loud, “All men of [Vanguard], jump out off the city wall with me! We have achieved our goal!”

Chapter 407: Predicament

“Go! No one turns back!”

Holding my Emperor Qin’s Sword, Qing Qian and I were at the rear of the array. Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands flew up in the sky, and gazed anxiously at our rear as she said, “Guild Master and Qing Qian, you two must be careful. We can’t lose you guys either. Otherwise, we would have to depend on someone like Sheltering Guest to lead us. We can’t have something like that happen.

Sheltering Guest sneezed, “Damn, that burns!”

Sword Reborn raised his blade, “Everyone, head out of the city! The farther apart we pull from [Legend]’s forces, the safer we’ll be!”

A group of 500 players left the city as bait. They ran eastwards towards a high level training area where players seldomly visited. Even I have never been there. However there was one thing that I was certain of. The further we led them into this area, the more favorable it would become for us. There were too many players in [Legend], so they couldn’t be as agile as us. In a chase, they would run into many more obstacles.

Glancing back, the Magic Dragon Huo Li was soaring in sky unleashing his dragon breath upon the city walls. However, the Ba Huang City and Dragon City NPCs remained resilient, and continued to launch arrows and boulders at the dragon. After a while, a liquid began to ooze out of the numerous wounds the dragon’s body. I couldn’t tell if it was blood or something else. Either way, the anatomy of a dragon was something players wouldn’t understand.

.....

Within the city, Little Scholar led a group of people and charged towards the city wall while [Vanguard] still had dozens people defending the city. Arrows flew down and made “Pa Pa” sounds as they hit Little Scholar’s shield.

Fang Ge Que knitted his brows tightly, and spoke with a voice that was

not loud but with authority, “Little Scholar, don’t go after [Vanguard]. They are nothing to be afraid of. Jian Feng Han won’t be able to make any big ripples. Everyone, go out of the city! Pursue and slaughter [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract]! Mages use [Dimensional Leap], and Swordsmen use [Blade Rush] to advance. We must use whatever means we can to shorten the distance between us, and overtake [Zhan Long]. I must see the corpses of Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Yue Qing Qian within 2 hours!”

“Yes! Guild Master!” Without asking any questions, Little Scholar carried his spear and leapt down from the city wall. He lead a group of [Legend]’s elites out of the city. Fang Ge Que also followed, leaving Fort Zi Feng an empty city. The slaughter was now happening outside the city.

Seeing the dust flying far behind us, Qing Qian was slightly worried as she said, “Brother Xiao Yao, [Legend] has at least 500+ Wind Elf players. They have high movement speed, and it’s game over once they catch us.....”

I glanced at the map and replied, “Keep moving east through the Moonlight Forest. Everyone with more than a 10% movement speed bonus stay at Moonlight Forest with me. We shall wait for their Wind Elves, and attack them for some time before we talk about the next plan. Sheltering Guest, you lead the others, and continue east. Focus on the goal—the snowy lands! You’ll reach Ice Ridge Mountain if you continue East. We’ll find our new battlefield at the foot of Ice Ridge Mountain where there’s a tundra map.

Hearing my words, Sheltering Guest was shocked and asked, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, are we still going to battle [Legend]?”

I responded with a smile, “If we’re not fighting them, then are we sitting down and having a nice cup of tea with them? Go! Always be prepared for battle! Humph! Fang Ge Que thinks that he will win because his army is ten times the size of ours. Well, I will teach him a lesson today!”

Sword Reborn grinned, “What would you do if you were taught a lesson by him?”

I also grinned, and shrugged as I answered, "Then the 500 brothers will die with me. What else is there to discuss?"

Sheltering Guest burst out in laughter and said, "I am leaving. Only you guys can actually joke around at a time like this. I salute you two!"

.....

Outside the city, [Vanguard]'s group of people scattered, and fled under the command of Jian Feng Han. Jian Feng Han was indeed a smart fellow to break up the whole into parts. As a result, Fan Ge Que had lost interest in such a disintegrated [Vanguard], and the 5000 people of [Legend] went straight towards the east of the fort, billowing dust as they came straight towards us. A huge mass of Wind Elf players soared high up above the sky. Tsk. Tsk. They are coming as according to plan.

The flying speed of the Wind Elves increased by 100%, therefore, they drew farther away from the whole formation within a short time. Feng Ge Que had to be very confident to be able to send 700 Wind Elf players to charge at the front while more [Legend] members were pursuing at their rear.

.....

In the Moonlight Forest, the sunset glow hung over the sky, and the night fell. The sky darkened extremely fast.

I stood in the middle of the forest, and secretly chuckled. F*ck yeah! The night came at the right time! I glanced at the 500 people and ordered, "Sheltering Guest take 400 people, and choose some to stay behind in the forest and ambush with me. All those with more than 200 points of agility climb up the trees. For now, the flying altitude of the Wind Wlves is only about 30 yards. The uneven layout of the forest will affect their flying. Therefore, they can only fly below 30 yards, and won't be above the trees. This is our chance! Sword Rebron, you lead a group of Swordsmen and Berserkers to ambush on the ground of the forest, and hide yourselves by using the vegetation as cover. Once we strike down those Wind Elves, you can slaughter them on the ground."

Qing Qian and Sword Reborn answered simultaneously, "Yes!

Understood!”

I emphasized one more thing, “Most importantly, we shall only battle for five minutes, and retreat immediately when the time’s up. No matter how the situation of the battle is, we must leave. Otherwise, the team coming from the rear will catch up to us and we will be destroyed!”

Everyone nodded.

Sheltering Guest led 400 people, and darted stealthily through the Moonlight Forest. With two long swords on my back, I jumped a few times up an enormous tree, and stood firmly on a tree branch. I hid myself in the dense leaves of the tree, and used the concealment of the night sky. Almost all the players out there wouldn’t notice my tiny dot on the map.

Carrying the dagger, Qing Qian stood above the tree opposite me and flashed a smile as she said sweetly, “Brother Xiao Yao, do you think Fang Ge Que knows we are ambushing them here?”

“Yeah.”

I nodded, heavily, “Based on the fact that Fang Ge Que could tower above the rest in this city war, he must be very smart. He must have guessed that we’re planning an ambush here. However, we must ambush in this area. Fang Ge Que wants to annihilate us, so he would never waste the time to go around the forest during the pursuit!”

Sword Reborn hid his whole body within the plants as he spoke in the team channel, “It is said that Fang Ge Que possesses a magical mind reading ability. Our thoughts were probably exposed before him, right?”

I burst out in laughter, “Haha.....”

Sword Reborn was speechless and asked, “What are you laughing at?”

I shrugged my shoulder and answered, “What do you think mind reading is? Let me tell you. Mind reading is a kind of mental energy that is similar to invading the brain waves. We are now located 1000 yards away from Fang Ge Que, which is 914 meters or about two miles*. Fang Ge Que is not God. He will read nothing!”

TL Note: This is referring to the Chinese mile while is about 1/3 of an English mile. Sorry for the confusion! Thank you commenters for pointing out the confusion https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Li_%28unit%29

Sword Reborn laughed, “Okay. I have learned something. Then, everything will be fine!”

.....

“Pa Pa Pa” sounds were heard from the sky soon. They were the sounds of the Wind Elves flapping wings. They came as expected, a mass of 700+ people. The array was seriously too powerful. It was smart of Fang Ge Que to use the advantage of race at a time like this time as the 700+ Wind Elves possessed extremely high maneuverability with an overall ability that was able to crush us. They were the trump card!

“Hold your breath!”

I stared outside at the Wind Elves flying past continuously, and said in the team channel, “Let’s attack after 100+ people go past. Everyone, clear the area around you. The Archers and Mages on the ground, prepare to target and shoot them down. It’s very easy to kill disconcerted wind elves. Everyone..... do your best!”

The crowd answered simultaneously, “Yes!”

.....

As more and more people were seen flying over, my heartbeat accelerated. I counted to three , and immediately held my sword as I shouted, “Now! Launch an attack!”

“Pa!”

I stomped on the branch as I leapt out, and waved my Emperor Qin’s Sword. [Seven Star Fragment Slash] crashed into the bodies of 4 Wind Elves, smashing all four of them. One of the Archers was even killed instantly. Next, while I was still falling, a Wind Elf Knight directly below me suddenly looked up and exclaimed, “F*ck. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is really ambushing here!”

I laughed out loud, and gave him a fierce kick with my battle boots on his shoulder!

“Peng!”

As I kicked him down, I used my strength to leap up several meters, and smashed my Cold Iron Sword on the head of a Wind Elf Archer, ruthlessly stepping on him with my Divine Battle Boots. My calculations were very precise, and I dashed towards my third targets, two Wind Elf Swordsmen. The instant they saw me, the two immediately activated [Combo]!

“Keng Keng Keng.....”

At the same time his [Combo] struck on my Magic Spite Armor, my swords slashed one of the Wind Elf Swordsmen in two. With a flash, I sheathed my Cold Iron Sword, and grabbed the other Swordsman’s hilt, forcefully pulling him down towards the ground with me. His eyes were filled with terror, and he hastily wielded his sword, using [Skyshaker Slash]!

I lifted an iron fist and punched his forehead!

“Peng!”

It was obvious that the speed of my fist was faster than the Swordsman’s sword. After continuously throwing messy punches, the Swordsman was killed before he fell to the ground. I then raised my arm, and opened my hand. A Wind Elf Mage was directly hit by my [Great Realm Of Desolation], collapsing after howls of pain. Simultaneously, a firefox swept past in the sky, and Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] struck down a group of Wind Elves.

“Shua Shua Shua.....”

Above the ground, arrows and magic flew causing the Wind Elves in the sky to become living targets. When they fell onto the forest floor, they were immediately cut down by a group of melee players led by Sword Reborn.

I held both of my swords, and darted again and again as the Flaming Tiger God roared. The light of the flames in the forest flashed repeatedly,

and they illuminated the surroundings as the fierce battle started within a short time.

Practically every kill gave an abundance of points. These people had experienced numerous battles, and so the points they possessed were not just ordinarily high. Your own points would increase drastically by just taking 10% of their points.

.....

The battle had continued for 5 minutes, and resulted in 100+ Wind Elf players being killed, and even more were wounded. However, not many of our people were left. I held my swords and retreated along the grassland towards the rear as I yelled, "Retreat! No one yearns to continue fighting!"

Qing Qian, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, Sword Reborn and the others all retreated. About 30+ people flew out of the forest. Although we did not kill that many people, at least we succeeded in slowing them down.

The moment we left the forest, I heard Little Scholar's laughter coming from behind us, "Humph, the battle result was not bad. We sacrificed 117 lives in exchange for their 72 lives. I would like to see how many more people Xiao Yao Zi Zai has that could be exchanged with us!"

.....

Hearing his words, my heart sank. I did not know whether it was us who were tricked or them.

When facing adversity, we could only fight with determination! Otherwise, we could only expect failure!

Chapter 408

The further East we traveled, the closer we got to Ice Ridge Mountain. The sky brought out a frosty breeze, as the landscape begin to become dotted with brambles and pine trees filling the map. Everything was covered with piles of fresh powder, and flurries danced in the air. I was in the middle of a ditch, and my battle boots were knee deep in muddy water: the breeze cut to the bone.

“They’re almost here....”

Qing Qian glanced back to look, “Their Wind Elves are flying extremely fast, we won’t be able to lose them,” she said anxiously. “Not only that, Fang Ge Que ordered his Mages to use [Dimensional Leap] to move. It won’t take them much more than 10 minutes to catch up to us.”

I also looked back, and just as she had said, a mass of [Legend] players had already appeared behind us. They were less than 500 yards away, and they were going to catch up sooner or later.

Sword Reborn’s face was completely ashen, “What do we do? How about.... We just face them head on right here!”

I immediately shook my head, “No, we don’t have any advantage here. The further away we lead [Legend], the greater chance Jian Feng Han has of obtaining the Citadel Guarding Decree, so we must advance!”

Annoyed, Sheltering Guest exclaimed, “We...If we do that, aren’t we basically stitching Jian Feng Han’s wedding clothes with our own hand*?”

TL Note: Slaving away for Jian Feng Han’s benefit

“Yes.” I didn’t deny it. Instead, I softly said, “But at least this way is better than letting Fang Ge Que steal the Citadel Guarding Decree, and become the ultimate winner at the end of this. This way at least we can protect the dignity of Ba Huang City players!”

Darling Duck nodded, “Yup, Guild Master is right! The big picture is most important..... Even though I also hate Jian Feng Han, that arrogant bastard....”

I opened up the map, and scanned it, “If we continue east another 200 yards, we’ll get to “Glacial Peak”. This peak is around 100 meters tall. Maybe we can use it as our defense line. We’ll defend for a moment at Glacial Peak, and then continue advancing east. A little further away is the mythical “Glacial River Valley”. If we can bring [Legend] to “Glacial River Valley”, then we’ll have achieved our goal!”

“Glacial River Valley?”

Qing Qian furrowed her slender brows, “Brother Xiao Yao, isn’t that a little too crazy? I’ve studied the Glacial River Valley map before, and Glacial River Valley. No one is quite sure how thick the ice is. We can at the very least assume that the monsters under the ice all have extremely high levels. It’s rumored that there’s a Coelacanth that was frozen there from the ancient times. It has extremely sharp teeth and high attack power. Once we fall into the Glacial River Valley, there’s only one fate, death.”

(Interjection: Coelacanth, a marine animal that existed on Earth 400 million years ago. It is one of the primogenitors of reptiles. In this novel, the attack power has been exaggerated for the sole purpose of the plot. Please don’t take it for real.)

I looked towards the Glacial Peak, “No matter what, we must fight this battle. Even if we all end up dying in the stomach of a Coelacanth, at least that is better than getting killed by Fang Ge Que. How about this, everyone listen, we’ll scatter right now and meet up again at Glacial Peak. Once we fight a short battle to delay them, then we’ll head towards the Glacial River Valley and cross it!”

Sword Reborn and Sheltering Guest nodded, “Understood!”

.....

400+ people quickly dashed across the Glacial Peak. True to expectations, this 100 meter peak was like a natural protective screen. It was like a city wall in the middle of the plains; it also provided an extremely good bunker for us.

I sat down at the top of the peak and let my Emperor Qin Sword rest at

my feet. I looked at the distance [Legend] players and spoke, "They're attacking uphill, so their attack power will be cut down by at least 50%. On the other hand, we're attacking downhill, so our long range attack power will increase. Once they are 60 yards away from us they will have already entered the range of our long range players and we'll ruthlessly attack them. Once they are 20 yards away from us, then I will lead our close combat specialists to charge down at them. At that point, we'll them directly!"

Sheltering Guest raised his battle axe with a barking laugh, "Alright! I've been waiting for this moment!"

As the distance between us was closing, we could see the countless Wind Elves flying right us. But since the peak was too high, they couldn't fly up to the top so they all lowered their speeds. It was clear that they were under Fang Ge Que's orders to wait for the close range division to assist them during the charge.

Everyone held their breath as they closely watched the distance between us and [Legend].

"Pa pa....."

Droplets of sweat rolled off Qing Qian's chin and landed on the grass. She must have been extremely nervous to be sweating in such a cold environment. In reality, it wasn't just her; almost all of us were completely drenched in sweat, after all, our enemy was 12 times more numerous than us!

.....

In the distance, Little Scholar had his spear in hand as he raised his head to look up at the peak, "Guild Master, they're planning on stopping us at Glacial Peak. What should we do? Do we... attack head on?"

Fang Ge Que's cunning eyes shone, "There's no need. Send out two teams of 1000 men and go around the peak to cut off their retreat. Little Scholar, you'll take 3000 people to attack their front and I'll bring up the rear. This time, we'll send Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the rest of them to their graves right here! Not one of them will escape!"

“Got it!”

[Legend] split into three teams, and there wasn't a thing we could do counter. They had the advantage in terms of numbers, we could only fight them on the front for a moment.

“Keng!”

I suddenly pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and roared out, “Brothers, gauge the distance and prepare to attack!”

.....

Hordes of [Legend]'s players charged up the peak, and we all pulled out our swords, our bows and notched our arrows. Once the enemy entered the 60 yard range, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands sent a chain of spells out, instantly killing three people. The other Archers, Mages, and Musketeers also went full out. Within moments, spells, arrows and bullets barraged the enemy, washing the peak in blood. The short 100 meter peak had become littered with the dead. Once the [Legend] players were within 20 yards of us, they had already lost over 200 people.

“Now, close combat specialists, follow me!”

I gripped my two swords and summoned my Flaming Tiger God and charged straight at the [Legend] players. With a slash, I sent out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and another [Great Realm of Desolation], destroying a Mage who's shield had been broken. My Flaming Tiger God roared out and activated [Burstfire Raid], pouncing right into the midst of enemies. Qing Qian followed behind me, dropping a [Grip of the Firefox] into the crowds. She carried her dagger and used [Absolute Step] to charge forward. With a chilling speed, she passed by two Archers, immediately forcing them to their knees. On top of that, Sheltering Guest and Sword Reborn both charged forward. No matter how strong [Legend] was, they couldn't defend against our fierce attacks.

“Pa pa pa.....”

Several arrows buried themselves into my chest and I retreated several steps. Soon after, I was surrounded by magic spells and my health quickly

dropped to the bottom of the bar. I retreated again. The firepower of the [Legend] players was much greater than average!

As I was receiving heal from Darling Duck, I looked at the group and my gaze turned cold, “Careful, Fang Ge Que has arrived!”

Once my words fell, Fang Ge Que suddenly advanced 40 yards. With a wave of his paper fan, he activated [Fire and Ice Storm] + [Blazewind Lock], swallowing up Sheltering Guest. He was instantly killed –Fang Ge Que didn’t need any time to target his spells. Closely afterwards, he sent an [Ice Rock Blast], killing one of [Zhan Long]’s Archers. On his shoulder, his Thunder Beast started barking, and in the blink of an eye, his entire body changed shaped.

.....

“Qing Qian, support me as I kill Fang Ge Que!”

My eyes filled with malice and I immediately roared under my breath. I let my two swords dance, hacking through the crowd. I suddenly used a [Seven Stars Teleportation] and locked the skill in front of me!

“Shua!”

With a cold flash of my blade, I hacked right at Fang Ge Que’s shoulder.

“Huh?”

Fang Ge Que seemed to have predicted that I would attack given that he activated [Black Tortoise Shield]. At the same time, his feet slid backwards with an impeccable line, he dodged my [Wind Blade].

“Whoosh.....”

My War Swept Cloak fluttered, as I made a complete turn. My Cold Iron Sword cut down at an angle, its speed extraordinarily high. Even Fang Ge Que didn’t have the time to completely react to the surprise attack. His pupils flashed with terror and he raised his paper fan. He did that to... block?”

“Keng!”

Indeed, the blade created sparks as it clashed with the paper fan; the

paper fan had iron ribs!

Even though the attack was blocked, I was still able to shake Fang Ge Que's balance. I immediately sent out another skill: the combo [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

"Peng!"

A white glow began to rise from my feet and a chain of five attacks suddenly hit against Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield]. It had brought the durability all the way down to 21%. With a wave of my hand, I sent out another Lv 8 [Combo]!

Fang Ge Que's attention was not only on myself, but also on Qing Qian. The second [Grip of the Firefox] activated, Fang Ge Que used his third [Dimensional Leap], dodging both my [Combo] and Qing Qian's attack. A group of heavy armor [Legend] Knights suddenly rushed forward. "Peng!" they pushed me back and Fang Ge Que waved his fan, [Spiral Ice Dance]!

"Crash!"

I activated [Blade Rush] as I thought of attacking back and dodged the [Spiral Ice Dance]. Frustrated, I gripped my long sword, and angrily roared out, "Brothers, scatter or else if we're surrounded then all is over!"

[Zhan Long], [Enemies At The Gate], and [Blood Contract] had all suffered great damages. Within the 5 minutes of brutal battle, the number of our people went from 400+ to only about 200+. Not many remained. Although we also killed many [Legend] players, it was obvious that we had suffered losses.

My eyes widened as I saw Fang Ge Que in the distance. I had finally realized that he was the most powerful enemy. I had never gained the upper hand during all my clashes with Fang Ge Que! Everything was going as he predicted. He was indeed an extremely terrifying opponent.....

"Retreat!" Qing Qian also shouted out loud.

.....

The players of [Legend] charged after us from behind. With a

bloodthirsty look, Fang Ge Que yelled, “Don’t let them get away! Go! At least kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Holding his long spear, Little Scholar laughed, “Brothers! Let’s go! Slay Xiao Yao Zi Zai with me! The one that kills Xiao Yao Zi Zai will be rewarded a high rank, richest silks, gold, and silver. Hahaha..... To them I will give a king’s ransom of wealth.”

The crowded [Legend] players hiked up the mountain and went after the defeated players of the three allied guilds.

My Cold Iron Sword and Emperor Qin’s Sword were covered with fresh blood. I had slaughtered others until a slight helplessness was felt within my heart. I was about to see my own failure and this was a most pathetic thing.

.....

At the moment, a sudden loud bang was heard coming from the west. As everybody turned to look at the sky, a ball of flames came down like an enormous meteorite right at us!

“What’s that?” Little Scholar asked in shock.

“Bang!”

The enormous ball of flame crashed on the mountain and Little Scholar was the first to be devoured by flames. His location got it the worst. He was directly smashed to death by the ball of flames. In addition, more than 200 [Legend] players in the surrounding area were killed by the spurts of fire. Everyone glared at this monster—

Fang Ge Que draw in his breath and asked, “Why.....why are we so unlucky?”

Chapter 409: Kill the God

From within the fire, a pair of crimson eyes suddenly blinked open. They were the eyes of Huo Li. Only god knows why he would suddenly appear on Glacial Peak, but based on his body full of injuries, he must've undergone an extremely fierce battle. On top of that, Huo Li's strength and health were drastically lower than they were before. He was even panting through his nose.

"Ah....."

After a series of painful screams, a man got up from under the dragon's foot. It was Little Scholar! Such a strong will to live, he didn't even die after all of that?

After standing up, he touched his bloody shoulder and said, "Motherf*cker, it hurts...."

Fang Ge Que yelled out from afar, "Little Scholar, look out!"

"Huh?"

Little Scholar looked back, only to see the Magic Dragon Huo Li's cruel smile. Immediately, he pulled out a sharp claw and suddenly, with a "Pa!", [Legend]'s flagbearer was flicked into the distant sky. As his body was flying through the air, it evaporated into light and scattered in the wind, finally killed by Huo Li.

.....

"Wahhh....."

There was another shriek. I walked over to look, only to see that there was a beautiful female general on the dragon's back. It was none other than Frost! Her Severing Beauty Sword was stabbed through the dragon's back. She had clutched on to this sword in order to stay on the dragon's back the entire time. There was also a chain that circled around the dragon's neck for her to hang onto. The chain had been heated to a burning red. One could imagine the lengths she went through in order to kill this magic dragon. On top of that, I could tell that Frost only had a

sliver of health left. She was just about to die. It was horrifying to see how weak she was!

“Frost!”

I yelled out, then charged forward three strides. With a lift of my battle boots, I kicked off Huo Li’s nose and leapt into the air, picking up Frost in one swift motion. Seeing her injuries made my heart break. Not so long ago, my master was a peerless beauty, and could even be said to be the most beautiful woman on the China Servers, yet now she was in such a pitiful state.

Frost’s emotionless eyes swept over me. She then cracked a smile, “I was able to see you one last time.....”

At that moment, the Magic Dragon Huo Li roared from underneath us and suddenly rose up. With great effort, he shook his head and neck. It looked as though he was trying to shake us off.

“Hold on to me!” Frost quickly yelled out.

I immediately reached out to hug my beautiful master’s shoulders. Soon after, in the midst of the dragon’s roar, Frost and I flew into the air with the Magic Dragon. Huo Li twisted his head to look at us, his beady eyes filled with anger. He let out a low roar and said, “Frost, you b*tch, are you planning on throwing away your life for Luo Lin?”

Frost’s bloody cape fluttered in the wind behind her, “Lord Luo Lin is the only hope for Dragon City. In order to let him survive, my life is but a small price. Huo Li, today is your doomsday. If I don’t kill you, I won’t pass away peacefully!”

Huo Li roared out angrily and began rolling in the air, leaving a fiery line across the horizon. He continuously twisted, jumped, and spouted a round of curses in dragon tongue.

I hugged onto Frost, fearful that I would be thrown off. If I fell from this height, I would definitely die.

.....

“Di!”

I got a message from Qing Qian, “Brother Xiao Yao, you.... why did you go up into the sky with the magic dragon? Are you alright? Make sure you don’t get burned to death! Wu wu, what should we do?”

With a single heal, I was able to return some of my health. I responded with, “I won’t. Qing Qian, lead everyone towards the river. Once you step onto the ice, never look back. There are just too many people from [Legend]. On top of that, if Fang Ge Que doesn’t die, we won’t be able to defeat [Legend]!”

“Understood!”

As I overlooked the Earth, I could see Qing Qian leading the 200 people from [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] across the Glacial River Valley. Behind them, there were the 4000 elites from [Legend], along with Fang Ge Que. After a series of intense battles, Fang Ge Que had already developed a wariness of [Zhan Long]. If [Zhan Long] doesn’t die, he won’t be able to relax!

Watching Fang Ge Que continuously chased after us, I could tell that [Zhan Long]’s people were suffering enormous losses. Within moments, we only had around 100 people left, while the enemy maintained their 4000. At that point, I realized that it was too late to do anything. We had actually lost....

.....

“Grrr.....”

In the sky, the Magic Dragon Huo Li angrily roared out and continued to twist around, using flames to burn Frost and me. Frost’s frost armor had already broken several times and it seemed too difficult for her to even condense the frost energy in her body to create another armor. Huo Li had to die soon, or else my beautiful master would disappear forever.

I analyzed the situation and suddenly seized one of the chains. I slid down the dragon’s back, and “Pa!” landed on one of the dragon’s blind spots. Here, Huo Li had no chance of reaching me. There was even a short

sword lodged into the dragon, it was Luo Lin's sword!

“Pa!”

I grabbed onto the hilt and wrapped the chain around my waist, stabilizing my position. Afterwards, I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and with a “Pu Chi!” I stabbed it into the dragon's neck. Fresh blood oozed out of the wound. With this, I could better balance myself on the dragon. As Huo Li screamed in pain, I pulled out my Emperor Qin's Sword and started hacking away at his neck. Lava-like blood began to seep out of the wounds. Huo Li could only endure the pain and angrily cry out, unable to do anything but claw away at empty space.

Frost's weak voice travelled to me, “Good. Now move up half a meter from where you are. That's where the dragon scales change direction, in other words, it's where your attacks will hurt the most. It's also where his dragon power comes from. If you attack there, you will be able to drain away his strength. Without his dragon strength, Huo Li is nothing but an enormous rabid beast. Hurry!”

I nodded, “Understood!”

I continuously swung my Emperor Qin's Sword and “Pa pa pa” kept hacking at the area. Huo Li's painful screams cut through the clouds. With a shriek, he rushed towards the ground, as if he had gone crazy!

I could see on the ground, the Glacial River where a large number of players were being chased to death.

“Peng!”

The Magic Dragon Huo Li suddenly smashed into a layer of ice, causing a crack in it. Then he flew up again, trying to get rid of the pain. However, it didn't seem to do much and he wasn't able to throw Frost and I off of his back either.

.....

“Pu!”

I fiercely stabbed my Emperor Qin's Sword into the dragon, making his

neck suddenly bulge up from the pain. I actually managed to force a dragon's breath out of him with my stab. Flames soared into the sky, leaving behind trails of smoke like that of jets.

“Sha sha.....”

I gripped Luo Lin's broken sword in my left hand and began swinging my body, opening up the wound even further. Huo Li twisted in agony. There had to be a cluster of nerve cells here. Huo Li's flight pattern suddenly shifted, it seemed as though he was going in the opposite direction of my swings?

Now, this was pretty interesting. I twisted the broken sword again, making Huo Li fly left. Just to make sure, I twisted the sword left again and Huo Li agonizingly immediately flew right. It was as though he couldn't control his flight direction anymore. I was right, this was where the nerve cells connecting to his wings were located!

A gust of wind blew back my War Swept Cloak as I came to a realization. Even though this was a dangerous situation, I was ecstatic. A new brainchild* popped into my head and I couldn't stop thinking about it. I immediately put it into action!

*[Editor's Note: an idea or plan that a person is particularly proud of. Our translator is showing off their vocabulary :P] Needed to put those SAT words to some use >.> <.< -Ciel

I began twisting the broken sword, forcing Huo Li to make a dive. I carefully maneuvered him so that Huo Li would fly right at the [Legend] players that were chasing after [Zhan Long]. With a swing of my Emperor Qin's Sword, the enormous dragon's neck began to bulge. In the next second, a long stream of dragon breath was spat out onto the layer of ice, melting 500 meters of ice!

“Huh?!”

Qing Qian immediately dashed forward, her eyes filled with excitement, “Brother Xiao Yao, he...he's just too amazing....”

All of the [Legend] people's jaws dropped.

I continued to maneuver Huo Li and made a turn. I then threw another dragon's breath at the 4000 Legend players that were following behind us. I melted another layer of the ice, but the ice was too thick and didn't collapse!

With another forceful jab of my Emperor Qin's Sword, Huo Li's energy disappeared. I had used up the dragon's energy and had no way of using another dragon's breath.

"This is illogical...."

I gave another jab and only heard a "Ka Cha". My heart grew cold. Frost's soft laugh suddenly traveled to my ear, "Kid, you didn't find anything interesting, did you?"

I panicked. All I could see was the numerous [Legend] players crowded together on the ice. A new crazy idea popped into my head. I checked out Huo Li's remaining health, only 1%. He was about to die. Yup. I'll just use his last breath to help us!

With a twist of the broken sword, Huo Li cried out and made a dive. My target was Fang Ge Que and the other commanders!

.....

"Peng!"

A dragon with a body the size of a mountain suddenly broke through the ice. As if a key had fit into the lock, a large piece of ice broke and 4000 players from [Legend] fell into the water. After that, a "Shi Shi Suo Suo" sound came out from the river. An enormous Coelacanth appeared and began ripping apart the players that fell into the water. The agonizing screams were endless!

"I'm going to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, even if I have to use my very last breath to do so!" Fang Ge Que shouted out while standing on a piece of ice.

Li Mu, Song Han, Matcha, and Old K's tragic deaths suddenly replayed in my mind. It was almost all because of [Legend]. At that moment, a fierce anger began to rise up in my chest. I suddenly jumped off of the

Magic Dragon with a sword in both of my hands and yelled out, “Fang Ge Que!”

“Peng!”

In a fit of anger, I hacked the piece of ice underneath Fang Ge Que into pieces. On top of that, I grabbed onto the neckline of his Mage robe, keeping him from jumping off the ice. The two of us fell into the freezing river as coelacanths were ripping people to shreds all around us. The icy water seemed to clear my mind. Fang Ge Que’s eyes were filled with a stunned rage.

With a wave of his paper fan, he sent a [Blazewind Lock] and an [Ice Rock Blast] which exploded consecutively around my body.

The second I let go, I swung my two swords. “Pa pa pa” I threw a chain of even slashes, then activated [Fierce Ice Blade] and shouted, “It’s time to pay your debts!”

“10278 ! ”

The [Fierce Ice Blade] immediately took his life. Fang Ge Que’s eyes widened. [Legend]’s Guild Master, [Destiny]’s number one player, had been killed, just like that, in the middle of the Glacial River!

Chapter 410: Wings of Freedom

“Di!”

System Notification: You have killed player [Fang Ge Que], and received 10% of his city war points: 494370 points!

“Di!”

System Notification: You have successfully killed [Magic Dragon Huo Li]. Since you have killed a BOSS that possessed the power of a Vice-God, you received an additional reward: Charm+25!

With a cascade of golden light, I gained three levels, and was now level 78.

As I turned around, Magic Dragon Huo Li's body began to sink slowly. It seemed like he had also dropped some equipment. Seeing this, I hastily threw off a Coelacanth and swam directly towards the equipment as I ignored the bites of the Coelacanth. I held the equipment that burst out of Huo Li. There were only two pieces of equipment, a fiery red helmet, and a dagger glowing with a fiery radiance. With no time to check, I quickly placed these into my bag, and darted up to the water's surface. Behind me, a Coelacanth magnificently followed me out of the water, and chomped on the end of my battle cloak.

Frost sat on the back of the dead Magic Dragon and raised her hand, cutting the Coelacanth into two. She then glanced at me with faint breath, and smiled as she said, “Finally killed this animal. I am so exhausted.....”

She closed her eyes slowly and collapsed.

I hurriedly held her, and checked her breathing. Although it was faint, she was still alive. Knowing this, I felt relieved, and scanned the surroundings. There were already many Coelacanths tearing the corpse of the Magic Dragon apart. The number of Coelacanths in this river was unknown by men. The Magic Dragon might be eaten in no time, therefore I must take my beautiful teacher away. Otherwise, she would also die in

the bellies of these fish.

I bent down and picked her up. I took a deep breath, and forcefully leapt onto an ice block. I placed her down, and rowed the ice block with my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword. This small ice block was carrying two lives as it slowly floated to a bank. At the same time, I glanced back and saw that almost all of the 4000 players from [Legend] had died. Numerous corpses were floating on the surface. These coelacanths were Lv 100 Phantom Tier monsters, if these players were able to defend against them, then that would truly be a phenomenon.

Slowly, the block of ice kept floating forward, and I let Qing Qian know to bring everyone back to Fort Zi Feng. The City War was coming to an end. I finally had the time to look at the equipment that Huo Li dropped. As I raised that awesome flaming helmet, I felt a scorching energy surging into my body. I looked at the stats. As expected, it was a treasure

—

[Magic Dragon's Helmet] (Saint Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1140

Strength: +105

Endurance: +102

Magic: +100

Extra: Raises the user's magic defense by 55%

Extra: Raises the user's attack by 500 points

Extra: Raises the user's health by 2000

Special Skill: [Dragon Transformation] For a short period of time, it gives the user a dragon's power in the form of the Magic Dragon.

Duration: 60 seconds. Requires: 60 Rage points

Special Effect: [Level Ignore], decrease the user level requirement by 20 levels.

Level Requirement: 100

I stared at the Magic Dragon's Helmet's stars and tears almost streamed down my face. This was a Lv 100 equipment, but with a [Level Ignore] effect. In other words, I could use it even at Lv 80. Tsk tsk, the system really was considerate. They knew that at this point, none of the players would be able to use a Lv 100 equipment. On top of that, this Magic Dragon's Helmet's stats weren't just strong, it added more than 90 points to three of the stats, and has a 55% increase in Magic Defense. That alone was already savage, and then it adds another 500 points to attack. 500 points of attack was practically equivalent to all of the attack of a Lv 50 player. You could tell how strong it was with just one look. On top of all of that, it even added another 2000 points to health. It was savage to the max.

The most important part was probably the [Dragon Transformation] special skill. For 60 seconds, you would possess the attack of a Magic Dragon. Tsk tsk, what did that mean? Well, even if it wasn't clear for now, I'll just wait for my level to get there to use the equipment, and try out the skill. Either way, I could predict, that after using [Dragon Transformation], my attack will evolve to an entirely new level!

I put the Magic Dragon Helmet into my bag. Yea, after this City War, I'd have the highest number of points, so I'd definitely be this battle's MVP. The reward should take me to Lv 80 without a problem. On top of that, I took off a level from Fang Ge Que. It's possible that I'd be the first player to reach Lv 80. After that, we'll just have to see who gets to the 4th class advancement first.

Continuing, I peered at the flaming dagger. The stripes of an enormous dragon carved onto the blade. Its stats floated in the air. Looking at them, my heart started pounding. Motherf*cker, a Saint Tier equipment really wasn't the same as a Valkyrie Tier or Emperor Tier —

[Dragon's Kiss] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2240 – 3050

Agility: +101

Endurance: +97

Strength: +94

Extra: Increases the user's attack by 30%

Extra: Ignores 45% of the target's defense

Special Skill: [Shield Breaker], penetrates the target's armor and Mana Shield and deals 50% of the damage after penetration to their health.*

Allenwa note: Basically she gets to use a skill that nullifies the target's defense, but only deals 50% of what that damage would do

Special Effect: [Dragon's Kiss], has a 30% drain effect. On top of that, once the user attacks their target, it immediately decreases their speed by 50%

Special Effect: [Level Ignore], Decreases the Level Requirement by 20 levels

Level Requirement: 100

Holding this [Dragon's Kiss] dagger, my heart was in the midst of confusion as heavy thoughts filled my mind. F*ck Yeah! A Saint Tier Weapon finally appeared. This was probably the first Saint Tier Weapon of the whole server? Plus, this Lv 100 weapon only has a level requirement of Lv 80 which inconspicuously increased the attack stat by 20%. A player that was able to wield this dagger was basically invincible before he or she reached level 120. With a 30% drain effect, the recovery during battles would be extraordinarily strong. In addition, the wielder would be able to break shields. One can imagine that once [Dragon's Kiss] approached, any Mages, Knights, or Swordsmen would be powerless. Especially Mages, they would be killed in one strike even if their shields were used!

"Pa Da!"

I threw the [Dragon's Kiss] dagger into my bag. Wan Er said that she would give me a gift, then this [Dragon's Kiss] dagger would be my gift to her. How could the future Vice Guild Master of [Zhan Long] not have an unearthly weapon!

A soft sound was heard as the block of ice that Frost and I were sitting on floated to the shore. Glaciers were burned and melted all over the shore, and thousands of dead [Legend] players floated in the river behind me. The scene was horrifying!

Holding an unconscious Frost, I leapt onto the shore, and went westward. I was battered and exhausted with my armor covered in burn marks and slashes. The War Swept Cloak on my back, which was originally white, had been dyed red by the fresh blood, and holes made by arrows and spears were all over the cloak, even my face was covered with bloodstains. These dried bloodstains weren't even washed away when I went into the water to kill Fang Ge Que.

On the Hell's Core Plains, the strong smell of blood filled my nose. Bodies were everywhere, especially the few fields that had experienced big battles. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say the fields had transformed into mountains of bodies.

As I gazed towards Fort Zi Feng, Ba Huang City's flags fluttered above the fort which was not unexpected at all. After losing Huo Li and Lin Qiong, the two killer machines, Jiu Li City lost the war in the end. When Fang Ge Que, the spiritual leader of the players, and the 4000+ [Legend] players were killed by the broken ice at the Glacial River valley, the whole battle formation of Jiu Li City collapsed in an instant.

Holding Frost, I stepped forward, unable to move fast enough. Behind me, footsteps rang out. Yue Qing Qian had led Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, and the remaining [Zhan Long] players here. There were only 20+ [Zhan Long] people left, and the rest of the players here were the members of [Blood Contract] and [Enemies At The Gate]. Yue Qing Qian ran towards me as her chuckles rang like the sound of silver bells. She exclaimed happily, "Brother Xiao Yao is so awesome! We have won!"

I turned to scan each and every one of them, and everyone looked terrible. I burst out in laughter and shouted, "Everyone has worked hard!"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands hastily said, "Guild Master, Hurry and go take a look in Fort Zi Feng. Right now, the important thing to us

should be the Citadel Defending Decree. Whoever receives the Citadel Defending Decree is the biggest winner.....”

I nodded and dashed forward with all of my efforts but my speed still could not catch up with the others.

One of the [Enemies At The Gate]’s players felt puzzled and asked, “Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai, why do you have to hold this NPC Beauty? Don’t you want the Citadel Defending Decree?”

I answered with a smile, “I do, but..... to me, she is a million times more important than the Citadel Defending Decree.....”

“Okay.....”

Our group of people climb up the east wall of the fort using the cloud ladder. In the end, just when we were about to reached the top of the wall, the battle within the city had ended!

“Ahhh. You damn intruders! We barbarians will never forget this! Await the battle of vengeance!”

The sturdy king of the barbarians collapsed at the front of the city hall, and equipment busted out to the ground with a purple and the red decree seen in the midst of the equipment!

“Pa!”

Jian Feng Han held his bloody sword, and picked up the Citadel Defending Decree from the ground. He then raised the Decree high up and guffawed, “The final victory belongs to Ba Huang City! Hahaha..... All hail Ba Huang City!”

A group of [Vanguard] players and some players from small guilds immediately raised their weapons and yelled, “All hail Ba Huang City!”

I stood on top of the wall and was speechless. I absolutely did not expect that the Citadel Defending Decree would fall into the hands of Jian Feng Han in the end.

On top of the Fort, one of [Zhan Long]’s elite Swordsmen drew his longsword forcefully, and pointed directly towards Jian Feng Han who was

within the fort shouting out loudly, “Jian Feng Han, don’t you think this Citadel Defending Decree is too hot for you to hold? Don’t forget that it was our Guild Master who came up with the plan at Bowl Valley which annihilated the men of [Legend], [House Of Prestige] and [Appearance Alliance]. It was also [Zhan Long] that blocked [Legend] at Hell’s Core, and it was also us who defeated [Legend] at Glacial River Valley. This Citadel Defending Decree should belong to our Guild Master. Jian Feng Han, you actually have the thick skin to take it from him?”

Jian Feng Han gripped the Citadel Defending Decree, then looked up at the wall, “Guild Master Zi Zai, if you want this Citadel Defending Decree, then take it. I, Jian Feng Han, do not care about things like this. All I care about is that Ba Huang City is the final victor!”

I gritted my teeth and coldly said, “Nevermind, it’s already in your hands, what more can I say? Go turn in the quest and end this event, everyone’s tired.”

“Alright!”

In reality, I wanted the Citadel Defending Decree, and I also wanted to use it to help bring more reputation to [Zhan Long]. But, at this point in time, if I were to take the Citadel Defending Decree, my name would be blackened. Gossip is a fearful thing, and three men talking can become a tiger. In the mouths of haters, even innocent people can become convicts. Even though I don’t care much about it, this is tied with the future of [Zhan Long]. I can’t let our future turn to dust over a mere decree!

Jian Feng Han held the decree, and turned in the quest. In an instant, the sound of bells resounded on top of the two big main cities. A beautiful period was finally drawn for the fierce and terrifying city war—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Player Jian Feng Han successfully handed in the “City Defending Decree,” therefore Ba Huang City received the ownership of Fort Zi Feng. All players of Ba Huang City receive Fort Zi Feng’s BUFF effect, their attack increases by 7% for 30 days. Player Jian Feng Han received reward: level+4, Charm+12 and received [Wings of Freedom]

(Level 80 Saint Tier Cloak)!

“Ding!”

System Announcement: This City War has ended. The final player points rankings are listed successively as follows: Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Fang Ge Que, Jian Feng Han, Mu Xuan, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu, Hero Old K, Ye Lai, Misty Cloud, and Bali Ruo Feng. Congratulations to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai on receiving the MVP qualification of this City War. Rewards received:level+2, Charm+20 and [City Battle Bell] (Level 80 Additional Equipment)!

Chapter 411: City War Bell

“Shua Shua!”

Two rays of light fell upon me, this time the rewards from the City War really pulled through. Aside from the two levels, I also got 20 points in charm. With that, I have 180 total points in charm. On top of that, I also got a [City War Bell], but I have no idea what it is.

Opening up my bag, I saw an enormous blood red bell quietly sitting at the corner of the bag. I wasn't sure what material it was made out of, but a line of ancient words encircled the bell. There were also faint shadows of swords, polearms, battle axes, bows and arrows dancing and moving around the bell. Jagged edges surrounded the bell, and the bell looked extremely magnificent. I glanced at the effect, and it was even more surprising than the appearance—

[City War Bell] (Saint Tier)

Type: Armband Emblem Accessory

Strength +100

Stamina +100

Agility +100

Effect: Increase the Attack and Defense of friendly players within 1000 yards of user by 10%. Also increase the Magic Attack of friendly players within 1000 yards by 100.

Required Level: 80

Qing Qian who was standing next to me saw the effect of the [City War Bell]. Her jaw dropped from reading the effect, “Wow. This is a super strong support item! Brother Xiao Yao, now you're a moving buff. You're basically a war machine!”

I nodded, and immediately wrapped the [City War Bell] around my emblem. The effects of the bell immediately activated. A system option appeared, and there were many options on the right side. Anyone could

get the buff as long as I added their ID into the system. I first added everyone from [Zhan Long], and all of our alliance members. As for the others, I'll slowly add them later on.

Soon after, I took out the level 100 Saint Tier item, Magic Dragon's Helmet, and wore it on my head. The effect of the battle helmet flashed past my forehead and disappeared slowly. I tacitly approved to cancel the effect of the battle helmet. My fluttering short hair was covered within my [War Swept Cloak]. Once, the battle starts, my cloak would fly up, and this would made me look much more handsome. Stats and stuffs are all secondary as being handsome is the most important thing!

Wearing the Magic Dragon's Helmet, I felt a warm sensation enter my body. I felt the power surging throughout my body. After putting on the [Magic Dragon's Helmet] and [City War Bell], my stats soared—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Nightwatch)

Level: 80

Attack: 3777-4886

Defense: 4218

Health: 11245

Magic: 3646

Charm: 180

The Saint Tier item's effect was too strong. Just by equipping these two items, my attack had almost reached 5000. Even more surprisingly, my defense had reach 4218. Not even a Knight or a Monk could match my defense. The [Magic Dragon's Helmet] gave +1100 defense. It was worthy of being called a Lv 100 Saint Tier item. It's effects were out of the world!

I looked at the Emperor Qin's Sword in my hand. Yes! 4886 basic attack strength would be enough. As players leveled up and upgraded their equipment, there are many players with more than 3000 base defense points. Even players like Fu Shen Thousand Blade, and Don't Be Foolish have a defense of more than 3500 points. Without a super-high attack

strength, it would be impossible to break their defense. In addition, possessing both attack strength and defense is the main trend for players today. Even Ye Lai, a Berserker that gave up on building his defense, has a defense of more than 3000. The interest in this matter could be understood without any further explanation. If you have no defense, it would be useless no matter how high your attack is.

“Owh.....”

Frost finally opened her eyes slowly as she laid within my arms. She stared at me with her beautiful eyes and suddenly grinned, “Being alive is good.....”

I nodded and smiled, “Yeah, it’s good to be alive!”

Frost held onto my shoulder as she stood up slowly. She then said to me, “Thank you. But I have to return to my position. Dragon City still needs me to guide and lead them with all my heart and strength.....”

“Yeah! You go first. I will also be going there later.”

“Alright!”

Frost propped herself up on Severing Beauty, and staggered forward with her left leg bent. Bloodstains covered her left leg. It was obvious that she had injured herself during the battle against Huo Li however this little wound is nothing when you are as powerful as Frost.

Within the city, Jian Feng Han wore a white cloak across his shoulder. It was the legendary [Wings of Freedom]. He was laughing and talking delightfully with Goodbye Tears and Don’t Be Foolish about something. Seeing this, it was obvious that Jian Feng Han was satisfied with the battle result.

“Keng!”

Raising my hand, I drew out my Cold Iron Sword. I wield both of my swords and forcefully activated the special skill—[Dragon Transformation]!

“Hong.....”

As flames encircled me, Dragon cries resounded all around my [Magic Spite Armor], [War Swept Cloak], [Dragon Knight's Leg Guards], and other equipment went through a transformation. Streaks of dragon scales with a fiery glow materialized on the surface of my equipment, and a floating energy gathered beneath my feet. It was as if the air around me was under my command. A pure and forceful power surged above my arms. I won't be satisfied if I don't unleash this power!

"Brother Xiao Yao, what's wrong?!" Qing Qian asked as she stared at me with a shocked expression.

I laughed, "Wait for me here!"

A "Pa" sound rang out as I stepped on the city wall with my battle boots, and dashed into the air. My body could actually fly naturally in the sky. I glided forward and darted towards Jian Feng Han who was within the fort. Besides Jian Feng Han, who else could be more suitable to test out the power of the [Dragon Transformation]?

"Ah?!"

Jian Feng Han lifted up his head abruptly as he saw me flying towards him. He immediately shuddered in shock, and drew his longsword. With a deep roar, the [Wings of Freedom] behind his back actually spread out into enormous azure-colored wings as a "Hua" sound was made. This explained the origin of the name, [Wings of Freedom]. In the future, Jian Feng Han would be able to soar through the sky on the [Wings of Freedom]!

"Keng!"

My strike cut through the air, and hit Jian Feng Han which caused him to tremble fiercely. He seemed to be unable to withstand my great attack power. I released my right arm, and withdrew my Emperor Qin's Sword. Simultaneously, my left arm wielded my Cold Iron Sword, and I slashed it out furiously. The Dragon's breath which encircled my left arm instantly suffused onto the sword. This time, the force of my Cold Iron Sword became even more pure and powerful!

"Bang!"

A loud bang sound was heard. Jian Feng Han was helpless against my strike, and flew out like a cannonball. With a “Hong” sound, he crashed into the internal walls of the fort. The bricks of the wall broke into pieces, and a deep hole was created. Jian Feng Han humphed in pain as fresh blood sputtered from the corner of his mouth. He forcefully blocked my strike in the end, but my strike caused him 3217 damage which was one-third of his total health. This fellow’s health had become very high too.

“Keng Keng!” I sheathed both of my swords, and crossed my arms. With my feet floating above the air, I laughed, “Jian Feng Han, you have enough health, but inadequate strength. You will be easily knocked back this way!”

“Sha Sha.....”

As Jian Feng Han left the deep hole in the wall, the pieces of broken stone fell behind him. He spread his [Wings of Freedom] slowly, and looked directly towards me while smiling, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, thanks for reminding. I will focus more on elevating my strength. You..... what equipment did you receive? Normally, your attack strength isn’t that high.”

I waved my arm and replied, “Military secret. I am leaving!”

As my feet began to step softly on the air, I flew up towards the east wall of the fort, and descended steadily.

Qing Qian narrowed her beautiful eyes and smiled attractively, “Brother Xiao Yao is so handsome! Sniff. Sniff. You knocked Jian Feng Han back with just two strikes. Jian Feng Han is really unworthy of being the receiver of the Citadel Defending Decree.”

I lowered my voice and said, “Shh.....actually, I just used the special skill [Dragon Transformation]. Otherwise, how would it be possible to knock back Jian Feng Han with such a great disparity? He does have the [Wings of Freedom]. Cough. Cough. Show him the strength now, so he doesn’t cause us any trouble when we return to Ba Huang City.”

Qing Qian giggled, “Ya! Ya!”

“By the way, Qing Qian. You ranked fifth in the city war points ranking. What reward did you receive?”

Qing Qian waved the dagger encircled by wind blades, and grinned as she answered, “[Winds of Pursuit], a Lv 77 Valkyrie Tier dagger, with the high attack of 1900+. Not bad, right?”

I smiled as I nodded and answered cutely, “Yup. Yup. It is very good! Keep it up! Also, excluding me, you are the one in [Zhan Long] with the highest points. Therefore, according to the agreement I made, I will arrange for you to enter the House of [Zhan Long] after the City War ends.”

Qing Qian’s face brightened, and she jumped up happily while exclaiming, “Yeah! It was actually me who entered the House of [Zhan Long]! Awesome!”

“Haha!”

After making the arrangements regarding our guild, everyone was extremely tired. The City War had officially ended, and the system needed maintenance. All of us could only be online for 30 more minutes. Qing Qian yawned, and signed out to go sleep along with Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Darling Duck, and the other [Zhan Long] players. Yet, I had something on my mind, and went straight towards the other side of the city wall. All the major NPCs of Ba Huang City were here.

“Cough.....cough.....”

Duke Luo Lin sat in the middle of the city’s ruined walls that was burned black and coughed severely. Patches of blood appeared at the center of his palm, and he knitted his brows tightly, saying, “These years, my body is getting weaker and weaker as days pass by. However, son you have finally returned.....”

Luo Lin was covered in wounds as he knelt on one knee and pleaded, “Father, please forgive my unfiliality. For the future of Han Huang Dragon City, and to defend the human’s northern border, I have used the all of my efforts to rebuild Dragon City. Now, these dauntless warriors are the result right before your eyes. Although I am not able to be by father’s side

to fulfill my duty as a son, I Luo Lin, can face all races of the human world with a clear conscience! I hope father can understand!"

Luo Lei nodded, "I know. I know it all. Son.....it has been hard for you....."

Angela, who was at the side, spoke, "Brother, since you have now returned, shouldn't you lead the warriors of Dragon City back to Ba Huang City? After all, this is your home....."

Luo Lin clenched his fists tight, and said with a resolute look in his eyes, "Father, Angela, It is not that I am unwilling to return to Ba Huang City, as Dragon City is a bitter and cold place with inadequate food supplies and clothes. However, I can feel that the undead located northward of Dragon City, beyond the Blood Plains, are itching for action. I can hear the unreconciled furious howls of those ancient heroes from before they died. Therefore, I want to stay at Dragon City. As long as I am there, those malicious souls from the outside areas will never pass through the Ghost ropeway to attack the seven big empires. As long as I am here, Ba Huang City will have peace....."

Luo Lei let out a long sigh, and opened his mouth slowly, "I understand. You are my son, and we have such a similar destiny. We were destined to battle....."

While he spoke, he looked towards the corpses on the fertile field and continued, "Since you are unwilling to return to Ba Huang City, then I shall aid Dragon City with all of my effort. The commanders of the four major army forces, Ba Huang City's Purple Star Army, Nightmare Army, Yun Huang Army, and Han Wei Army, died in battle. Therefore, from today onward, you shall take command of these four major army forces. Son, the boundless farmland southwest of Ba Huang City which is all used for military purpose will also be given to you. This way, Dragon City's food supplies will never be a problem.

Hearing these words, Luo Lin froze and stood there.

Frost who was also surprised immediately said, "King Luo Lin, quick..... quick thank his grace."

Luo Lin then knelt and bowed with his face to the ground and said;
“Tha.....Thank you, Father. Dragon City will remember your kind favor
forever.....”

Chapter 412: Guardian of Dragon City

I was secretly shocked: the City War actually caused such a thing to happen? After his battle with Jiu Li City, Luo Lei will rely heavily on his son, Luo Lin. And, because of Luo Lin, he will have to value and depend on Dragon City. With the full support of Ba Huang City, Dragon City will be recruiting soldiers and purchasing horses. It will no longer be difficult for Dragon City to develop its strength and ability. It would seem that that besides Jiu Li City, Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City, the three main cities in the China Server, Dragon City will also be rising rapidly.

This is good. As I am an occupant of Dragon City, this should definitely count as a blessing for me.

Under the command of Luo Lei, the four blood red Military Seals were placed in Luo Lin's hands. Holding the Military Seals, Luo Lin's shoulder trembled slightly as tears filled his eyes. He then spoke in a choking voice, "Dragon City.....is finally saved. I.....I can finally have the warriors of Dragon City battle the terrifying monsters without making our city suffer from hunger....."

Luo Lei's face was filled with a gracious smile, "Alright already. Fort Zi Feng is already ours. Let's just settle it like this, and withdraw our troops. The story of Ba Huang City's strength will travel across [Destiny]!"

Luo Lin nodded heavily and answered, "Yes!"

As he was saying this, Luo Lin turned around and said with a deep voice, "All Dragon City generals and soldiers, prepare yourselves immediately. Take the corpses of our fellow companions back to our city. We shall bury these warriors that battled courageously beside the Dragon Grave!"

The vice commander of the Dragon Knights Su Ke raised his battle axe, "Yes my King!"

Da Lin held his chains and asked, "My king, seeing as Ba Huang City has give us a vast space to help feed our Dragon City soldiers, should my job change?"

Luo Lin wryly smiled, "Yes it should. The Lord Da Lin will become Dragon City's Patrol Commander. However, as you are patrolling you will still need to hunt some big animals for rations as the rations we are getting from Ba Huang City are still just vegetables. Dragon City is a frozen environment, and we need large amounts of meat to help us stay warm through the long winter days."

Da Lin nodded, "Yes, my king!"

As a group of Dragon City's men were about to leave, I hurriedly went after them.

Frost turned around, her eyes smiling, "What's wrong?"

I patted my chest and said, "I am already Lv 80 which is strong enough. I want to challenge a class of a higher level. Frost. What do you think?"

"Oh?"

Frost stared into my eyes, then smiled, "You are one of the Dragon City Night Watch, but based on your current strength, that title is a bit unbecoming of you. How about this, I'll ask Lord Luo Lin, maybe he will give you a higher ranked job?"

"Yes. Alright!"

And so, Frost walked forward, and uttered a few words to Luo Lin before she turned to look at me with an extremely beautiful smile on her face. She then said to me, "Lord Luo Lin has decided that based on your impressive performance in this City War, you shall be allowed to join Dragon City's defensive battle formation. The main responsibility of this formation is to defend Dragon City. For now, in all of Dragon City, there are 700+ warriors which are called 'Guardians of Dragon City' by us. Are you willing to join the Guardians of Dragon City, and be a member of the defense force?"

I nodded, "Yes, I want to!"

Frost lightly laughed, "Alright, I got it. There's still too much work for me to do in Dragon City today. I won't have time until tomorrow to conduct the ceremony for you. How about this, come find me in Dragon

City tomorrow. On top of that, prepare 10,000G, 1000 pounds of wild boar meat, and 1000 pounds of wild pheasant meat. Consider that an adventurer's tribute to Dragon City. With these, I'll be able to raise your rank!"

I was at a loss for words, "This...isn't it enough to just have some gold? Why do I also need to bring this boar meat and bird meat...."

Frost let out a laugh, then in a low voice, "Because Dragon City's low on supplies. With the Unsullied, we are over the 3000 person limit. Every day, we eat more than 2000 pounds of meat. Therefore, Lord Luo Lin and I believe that for an adventurer to join Dragon City's highest ranks, they must bring some meat with them...."

I was slightly speechless as I replied, "Okay, I got it. I will bring enough meat and gold coins tomorrow. "

"Yes, I will be waiting for you!"

"Okay....."

I watched my beautiful teacher leave Fort Zi Feng with the generals of the Dragon City. The time for me to log off was almost here, as otherwise the system will force me to sign out. Glancing at my friend list, I noticed that Miss Cang Tong was still online, and so I sent her a message—

"Wan Er, you're still online? When will the Fan Shu City War be finished?"

Wan Er quickly responded, "This is the last BOSS. The City War will probably finish in 30 minutes or so! Hehe, congratulations to you! I saw the final rankings for the Ba Huang City, Jiu Li City War. You're the MVP! Even though I don't know why you didn't get the Citadel Guarding Decree, there must be some hidden reason. Either way, congratulations to you! I also heard that you killed Fang Ge Que!"

I opened the voice system and replied, "Yeah! I was lucky. Wan Er, I also saw the points ranking in Fan Shu City, and you are the second place. You were only around 5% lower than Q-Sword. Keep it up! Take first place!"

Wan Er's voice was a bit annoyed, "Wu wu, what do you take me for? Q-

Sword has so many AOE skills, while I..... I'm just some unknown Assassin. Even that melon has a skill like [Grip of the Firefox]. It's hard for me to get points. In this battle, I was basically used as a soldier. I killed a bunch of BOSS-es, how else would I get so many points...."

"Alright alright, keep up the good work then! I'll wait for you offline. After that, we'll eat something together, and get a good night's rest. After that 48 hour long ordeal, I haven't had a good night's rest in a long time."

"Ok. I'll call you when I log off."

"Ok!"

I signed out. The moment I took off my helmet, I felt as if I had been reborn. I took a deep breath of the fresh air. The sun outside the window was nice and bright and the warmth during late autumn makes people lazy. I really want have a good sleep. However, I still had to wait a while as my stomach growled. I must feed myself before I could get a good sleep.

After getting up from my bed, I took a quick rinse, and changed into a clean set of clothes. I leaned against the edge of the bed and closed my eyes. I slowly let my Yi Hai reach around my surroundings. Everything in my Yi Hai seemed extremely clear. In that short 48 hours, it felt like my Yi Hai had improved in leaps and bounds. I slowly expanded it to 500 meters, and felt the aura of a top level Royal Air expert. I immediately knew that it was Tang Qi. I expanded further out to four kilometers out and felt the breathing of five other Royal Air beginners; it came from the Guardians' headquarters. As Wang Xin had said, the Guardians can't just be made up of only myself. Hangzhou is so big, and there's so many Artificials here, we need to rely on above average people to deal with our extra special enemy.

Unfortunately, these five people were all beginners in Royal Air, and had no idea of how to control their aura. They didn't even try to control the amount of aura they were leaking. Once they face people stronger than them, they would fall entirely under the control of others.

As I continued to reach out with my Yi Hai, I suddenly felt my entire

body jerk. There was another unnaturally strong aura. It's a top level Royal Air.... No, maybe even stronger than that, because once my Yi Hai noticed it, the aura suddenly decreased a lot. The other person must have noticed me. This level of training was definitely not below my own!

I made sure of the direction of the aura. It was South East, 11 kilometers away, the Shang Cheng District?

Gritting my teeth, I opened my eyes and withdrew from Yi Hai. I cannot deliberately provoke this aura. A person with such training would either be a talented newbie or an experienced old practitioner. These two kind of people should not be provoked easily. Plus, the thing that worries me the most was not the aura. But if this person was of the Yang Yan tier, then what should I do?"

There was an entire tier of difference between us. A strong Yang Yan tier person could easily kill me, and there was no exaggeration whatsoever in that.

I should be less nosy, and obediently play games with the little miss, and protect her... I silently said that to myself. After a while, my phone rang. It was Wan Er—

"Li Xiao Yao, Dong Cheng and I have logged off the game. Hurry on over and let's eat some lunch!"

"Alright!"

After hanging up, I quietly left through the door*. By the time I reached the girl's dorm, Tang Qi was already there, and the two girls were gracefully stepping down the stairs of the girls dorm.

editor note:he's too used to entering and leaving through other means

"Li Xiao Yao, not bad! You obtained the MVP of Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City.Tsk.Tsk. Even Fang Ge Que got killed by you. Are you trying to shock everyone?" Tang Qi smiled and said.

I shot him a glance, "How was Fan Shu City?"

Wan Er walked up to me with a smile, "Q-Sword got MVP and the

Citadel Guarding Decree. I got second, Dong Cheng got third and Death's Contract got fourth. That was basically it...

I smiled, "Wan Er, what did you get?"

"A Valkyrie Tier leather helmet and 15 charm....." Wan Er answered gloomily. Frustration filled her beautiful eyes as she continued speaking, "While the MVP reward was actually a Saint Tier item. Sniff Sniff. This is unfair....."

Seeing the beautiful little miss trying to act cute, I was at an even greater loss for words. I tugged her sleeve, "Let's go and eat. Once we finish eating a meal, we'll forget about all of the bad things that have happened. Wan Er, when you have time, stop by Ba Huang City. I have a present for you....."

"Wu....."

Wan Er blinked a few times, "What present? Hehe, it must be a treasure....."

I nodded, "Yup. Either way, you won't be disappointed. Think of it as a gift for when you join Zhan Long....."

"Alright already. It isn't too precious is it? Otherwise, I'll be a little embarrassed for having received it..."

"It's fine, you even gave me the Cold Iron Sword...."

"Alright then, let's go and eat...."

"Ok."

After accompanying the two beauties for a meal, I immediately returned to my dorm, and slept for a restful 9 hours. As I awoke to the sound of my alarm, I picked up my phone, and noticed that I got a notification. It was notifying me of a change in the CBN rankings. After that city war, there was a small change in the CBN rankings—

1. Fang Ge Que
2. Q-sword

3. Little Demon
4. Bai Li Ruo Feng
5. Jian Feng Han
6. Cang Tong
7. Mu Xuan
8. Simple
9. Ye Lai
10. Yan Zhao Warrior
11. Death's Contract
12. Wild Beauty
13. The Seventh Tang
14. Lu Chun Yang
15. Xiao Yao Zi Zai
16. Xuan Yuan Feng
17. Yue Qing Qian
18. Cang Yue
19. Quick Thunder Swift Wind
20. General Li Mu

I rose from 17th place to 15th. Qing Qian and Dong Cheng also moved up 1 or 2 places. Also, General Li Mu had finally fought his way into the top 20 on CBN Battlenet rankings.

Chapter 413: Fourth Job Advancement Quest

“Di!”

I got a message from the beautiful little miss Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao, I’ve already left, and will arrive at Ba Huang City in about 90 minutes. Will you be waiting for me there, or someplace else?”

I immediately replied, “No. I’m about to go to Dragon City to get my fourth job advancement quest. But Wan Er, can you wait for me in Ba Huang City, I’ll just use a City Return Scroll to get back. My fourth advancement quest might be a bit hard, so you might as well help me with it while you’re here....”

Wan Er sent back a smiley face, “☺ Ok~”

A golden crest floated above my head as I strolled through the streets of Ba Huang City with my two swords on my back. I was level 80, and ranked number one in the city, just ahead of Jian Feng Han in terms of experience points. To get the first advancement reward I need to finish my fourth advancement quest, or else getting that spot would be rather difficult. Based on what I knew and speculated, in all three cities there were at the very least three others who were competing with me for the glory of having the first, fourth tier advancement: Jian Feng Han, Q-Sword, and Fang Ge Que, the strongest enemies I had before me.*gonna use this one

I headed towards the Ba Huang City food store and for 1G a jin I bought 1000 jin of wild boar and 1000 jin of wild pheasant. I bought enough to fill a whole twenty inventory spaces –each space holding about 100 jin of meat. This was probably more than enough to fill up Dragon City. After my huge purchase, I checked how much gold I had left –more than 200,000– and took my Flaming Tiger God with me as we dashed out of the city, straight for Dragon City.

My War Swept Cloak’s [Ride the Wind] skill was actually quite useful. I

was able to raise my movement speed by 15% and within 30 minutes, I was past Ba Huang Forest and had arrived at Dragon City. Once I got there I noticed that Dragon City was bustling as usual. A large number of soldiers were currently garrisoned in the city, and smoke drifted from the chimneys. In the distance, a countless number of soldiers were digging their shovels into the ground. Others were sowing seeds. It was clear that Dragon City was beginning to prepare to cultivate the forest. Luo Lin was having soldiers practice before they farm the lands of Ba Huang City.

After scanning the area, I also noticed that there were quite a few Ba Huang City soldiers there as well. They were all from the Imperial Defense army. It seems like Dragon City warriors were still going to train as well. Once the battle begins, the truly valiant heroes at the frontlines will definitely still be these people. The seven great armies of Ba Huang City were significantly weaker than the Unsullied in battle, after all, they weren't the main pillar of support in battle.

The sound of hoofbeats echoed across the ground in the distance. It was the sound of the hundred Dragon City warriors patrolling the area. In the midst of them, with the emblem of a commander floating above his shoulder was the Beast Tamer Da Lin. He rode atop a mighty war bear which was 5 tons of bristling muscle. Eh. Honestly, even if I were at Da Lin's rank, I still wouldn't be able to get used to the idea of riding a such a regal animal....

Da Lin raised his chain and laughed, "Hey you little bastard! You still know how to come back to Dragon City? I thought your brain was only filled with those pretty Ba Huang City adventurer girls. Haha. Did you stop getting excitement from their bodies?"

My mouth twitched, "Master, please be more dignified. I came to Dragon City looking for Frost for a job advancement...."

Da Lin nodded, "Frost is on the observation deck of Dragon City, go find her yourself!"

"Ok!"

With a shout, I called down a chain from the top of the wall. I grabbed

it with a single hand, and lightly climbed up to the top. Within 3 to 2 minutes, I reached the top as flurries of snowflakes flew around the area. This place snowed four seasons a year. A few Dragon City warriors were swinging enormous brooms to brush away the snow which caused big blocks of snow and ice to tumble down from the wall.

On the observation deck, Frost's lone body stood at the edge of the deck, her hand resting on Severing Beauty as she stared into the distant night sky.

I silently walked up to her, "What's wrong? Are you thinking about something else again?"

Frost didn't look back at me and only smiled, "It's nothing, I'm just thinking. Now that Dragon City has reinforcements from Ba Huang City, our army has at least 200,000 men. Right now, Dragon City can be considered to have a well-trained army. I'm deciding what our next steps should be...."

"Guard Dragon City, and block any invasions from the North?"

"Maybe...."

I stared at Frost, "In the past, Dragon City was short on resources, even eating was a struggle. But now, why are you suddenly worried again? You.... what exactly are you worried about?"

Frost bit her lip, "I just feel like.... Now that Lord Luo Lin has returned to Duke Luo Lei's side, and the fact that he's such a loving father, and now that he has such a beautiful sister like Angela, maybe.... maybe he doesn't need us underlings anymore...."

I took a deep breath, "Are you jealous of Luo Lin right now?"

Frost jolted, "I.....I.... don't think I am?"

"You sure?"

I smiled, "It doesn't matter. No matter who is by Luo Lin's side, I will always follow you. Afterall, you are my master. Come on now, I've brought all of the things Dragon City needs. You should tell me what I

need to do to get a promotion.”

I fished out the 1000 pieces of wild boar meat and wild pheasant meat, and then took out another 10,000 G. At the moment, Frost giggled, “Oh. Alright.... Dragon City can eat meat for a few more days....”

After taking my tribute, Frost muttered for a second, and finally said, “I discussed this with Lord Luo Lin. If you want to become one of the valiant Guardians of Dragon City, you have to undergo a difficult test. It’s like this, Southwest of Ba Huang City, there’s a piece of fertile land that has been named “Wan Qing Land” by the people of Ba Huang City. That piece of land is also Ba Huang City’s storage space. It’s where most of the rations for the Seven Great Armies come from. However, as of late, a large group of monsters suddenly invaded the land. Not only did they knock over all of the corn, yams, and plants, they also killed a lot of the sentinels there. These monsters have been extremely hard to deal with, even the Seven Great Armies had no idea what to do. I’ll leave this task to you. You have to kill at least two emperor tier magical creature BOSS-es. After that, go kill the leader of these BOSS-es, “Lei Qian”. Once you have completed these tasks, you’ll be promoted!”

*Sara note:[Wan Qing Land 万顷良田: a vast agricultural field, or literally 10,000qing agricultural land][1 qing is 6.67 hectares]

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have received S ranked quest [Kill Lei Qian]!

Quest Objective: Continue towards the fertile lands southwest of Ba Huang city and kill at least 2 emperor tier BOSSes. In addition, you need to find the mastermind pulling the strings – Summoner of the Dark Void, Lei Qian. Kill Lei Qian, bring his head back to Dragon City and hand it to Frost. Once completed, you will have passed your 4th Job Advancement quest.

Quest received! Time to set out!

After saying goodbye to Frost, I fished out a City Return Scroll, “shua” and was immediately returned to Ba Huang City. I ran straight Southwest from there. The army’s storage area isn’t too far from Ba Huang City, at

most it would take 20 minutes for me to get there. I joined a party with The little miss Cang Tong and the map immediately displayed her location. She was already at the border of Fan Shu City and Ba Huang City.

“Wu.....” The beautiful little miss smiled, “you want me to just find you?”

“Yup.” I grinned, “I’ve already received my fourth advancement quest. Wan er, you’re already level 79, how much more until you level up?”

“13%”

“Great! If you accompany me in killing this quest’s BOSS, it should be just enough to level up. At the same time I’ll help you finish your promotion quest too.”

“Ok OK! I’ll be there soon!”

“Ok!”

After passing through a small forest, a great plain suddenly appeared before me. In the midst of the plain was a strip of cultivated land. A fragrance wafted to me in the autumn wind. There were stocks of corn and potatoes, soybeans, sweet potatoes, etc. A group of soldiers carrying weapons were walking along the rows of plants. This was too close to Ba Huang City, there weren’t going to be any magical creatures here.

Passing through the depths of Wan Qing Land, I came across a mischievous Wild Boar and Hyena wrecking the fields, as expected. But they were just Level 85 Phantom-tier monsters. I raised my sword and hacked at them; at the very least, I couldn’t let them disrupt my pace.

After walking for another few minutes, I finally saw my first target. It was a long-toothed wild boar – a level 85 Emperor Tier monster. It had probably just spawned after I got my quest because above the boar’s head floated the words “Quest BOSS”. If anyone else were to kill it, they wouldn’t get much experience or loot; only if I were to kill it, would I get the good drops. This was probably one of the game’s rules for protecting special quests.

The attributes of the Wild Boar were presented in front of my eyes –

Attack: 2750-3420; Defense: 2100; Health: 2,000,000. Very good, the capabilities of this Emperor-tier BOSS was not too high. I glanced at my own stats: 3777-4886 Attack and 4218 Defense. Maybe I can solo this Emperor-tier BOSS all by myself!

“Klang Klang!”

With my dual swords unsheathed, I led my Flaming Tiger God and charged forward. I attacked with my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword, I launched 4 strikes onto the neck of the Wild Boar, bringing up some damage numbers.

“4727 ! ”

“5012 ! ”

“4981 ! ”

“4427 ! ”

It looks like my attack power has reached a new level. Every slash, with the ignored defense, would deal more than 4000 damage! As I dodged the Wild Boar’s charge, I sent out another [Wind Blade]!

“6129 ! ”

As I watched the huge damage numbers, I really couldn’t stand it, myself; much less the wild boar. It raised its head, and kept breathing heavily as it rammed into my chest plate and breaking my defense.—

“1726 ! ”

Looking at the damage, I knew there would be no problem finishing off the BOSS. With my dual blades dancing, “Ka ka ka” the Boar had been inflicted with damage. Soon after, the boar was left with only 10% of its health remaining. Added to that, my Flaming Tiger God; the battle only took 7 minutes as I finished off the last bit health.

System Notification: BOSS killed + 1

Looking at the BOSS’ drops, the effort required was not worth it at all. The best loot was a Gold Tier battle chest plate. It would only sell for a good 100RMB, and that’s only if the other party was blind.

At this time, the small orange dot on the map flew towards me; looks like the beautiful little sister had arrived.

“Whoosh!”

The Little Miss made her way out of a field of wheat as she carried Valkyrie Tiered daggers, dressed in a snow white cloak made from leather. She was breathtaking. In her hair were a few fresh corn leaves, her well-shaped legs baring a few scratch marks. Two very impressive breastplates jutted out like peaks. She was even covered in watery drops of morning dew.

“Pa...”

When I stood up, I wasn't steady, and fell onto the head of the wild boar. With a forced straight face, I stood up, “Wan Er, you came....”

Chapter 414: Presumptuous Demands

“Pfft. Loser!”

I scolded myself in my mind, and looked up at Wan Er, “You made it here in time. I just killed the first BOSS, but there are two more. It’s good that you came, otherwise I would have no confidence in killing the Saint Tier BOSS!”

Wan Er moved her long hair, and a corn leaf swayed by the wind landed on the ground. She grinned and said, “Yeah. Let’s go!”

“Oh. Almost forgot. Your gift…….”

“Yes. Right…….” The beautiful Missy opened her right hand which was as fair as snow and uttered, “Come on! My gift!”

I stretched my hand into my bag, and took some time fumbling for the gift. I then raised my hand, and a dagger enshrouded by flames appeared in my hand. As I waved it towards Wan Er, the stats of the dagger floated in the air——

[Dragon’s Kiss] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2240 – 3050

Agility: +101

Stamina: +97

Strength: +94

Extra: Increases the user’s attack by 30%

Extra: Ignores 45% of the target’s defense

Special Skill: [Shield Breaker], penetrates the target’s armor and Mana Shield and deals 50% of the damage after penetration to their health.*

Allenwa note: Basically she gets to use a skill that nullifies the target’s defense, but only deals 50% of that damage

Special Effect: [Dragon’s Kiss], has a 30% drain effect. On top of that, once the user attacks their target, it immediately decreases their speed by

50%

Special Effect: [Level Ignore], Decreases the Level Requirement by 20 levels.

Level Requirement: 100

“Ah!”

The stats of [Dragon’s kiss] gave Wan Er a shock, and she took several steps back with her mouth agape. She stuttered “Is..... is this possible? How.....how did you get such a strong dagger? A Saint Tier Item! I thought this dagger was on foreign servers. Why.....why do you have it?”

I flashed a smile and answered, “If you had seen the last battle of [Zhan Long]VS[Legend], then you would know.....”

“Is it the battle at the Glacial River Valley? That Magical Dragon.....is it that Magical Dragon? That Boss named Huo Li dropped this?”

“Yup!” I nodded solemnly, “It was Huo Li. The damage I had caused him was enough, therefore the system approved the item to be dropped. Also, when I slayed Huo Li, I took the chance to kill Fang Ge Que too. Look! You see my helmet, the Magic Dragon’s Helmet, was also dropped by Huo Li. Two Saint Tier items! Very prestigious, right?”

Wan Er stuck out her tongue, and grinned cutely, “This BOSS’ s drop rate is so shameful. Dropping two Saint Tier Items at once..... How are other people going to play..... Anyway, I can’t accept this [Dragon’s Kiss] dagger. It’s too valuable. If I accept, what would it be counted as.....”

I raised the dagger and inquired, “You..... don’t want it?”

“Well, I do want it.....” Wan Er held her right hand in her left hand, and stared at me as her face reddened, “But this dagger is so valuable. What if after you gift it to me, you make some presumptuous demands. Ahhh.. Should I reject or accept.....”

Hearing her words, my mouth twitched and exclaimed, “You! Enough okay?! If you really can’t, then giving me some money as a small token would be fine too.....”

“Okay.....”

Wan Er accepted the dagger, and held it in her hand. She was so fond of this new weapon that she could not take her hands off it. Her face looked rosy and lively as she said, “What high attack strength..... There you go. Here’s 20,000RMB. I have transferred it to your bank account.....”

“With a “Di” sound, the money was in my hands. Although this [Dragon’s Kiss] was worth a lot more than this price, I also knew that I had taken almost all of Wan Er’s ‘Activities Funds’. I then smiled, “For the coming month, I will pay for your food.....”

Wan Er pouted and replied, “Humph! Humph! You do have some conscience.....”

I lowered my head, and approached her pretty face as I smiled while I asked, “Miss, did you give me all your money, and now you don’t even have the money to buy SPACE 7? If you don’t, tell me!”

GT Note: SPACE 7 is the brand of Err.....Sanitary Pads.

Wan Er’s pretty face immediately reddened and scolded, “Asshole! Enough of you..... I will tell you if I don’t have money.....”

“Good. Let’s work on the quest!”

“Okay.....”

As we continued moving forward, a cackle of hyenas appeared in the field. Level 85 Phantom Tier monster with a number of at least 50+ and were blocking our way. Wan Er patted my shoulder and grinned, “Let’s go. You attract their firepower, and I will attack them for you..... What do you think? There are so many of them, are you confident in defending against them?”

After experiencing the battle with the King of the Boars, I had a specific understanding of my 4200 defense. If I could defend against the BOSS, these Phantom Tier monsters should be nothing. I drew both of my swords and charged forward while I slashed crazily among the hyenas. At the same time, I withstood the attacks coming from the hyenas. However, they could only cause a weak amount of damage. It was between 100-300

points per hit and my total health of 11,200 had nothing to be afraid of. I waved my longswords, and many different AOE skills fluttered and danced wildly.

Wan Er stood at the periphery and raised her dagger. With “ShuaShuaShua” sounds, streaks of icy cold air began rising up around her. The next second, ice picks rushed around madly above the earth. As Wan Er opened her hand, hundreds of ice picks condensed within an area of 20×20 yards, forming a whirlpool. “Huacha Huacha” sounds were made as ice picks thrust through the hyenas’ bodies, which dealt high damage—

“4129!”

“3918!”

“4013!”

I stared in astonishment with my eyes widened and mouth agape. I asked, “Wan Er, you have an AOE skill?”

Wan Er chuckled and answered, “Yeah. My reward in the City War Points Ranking was one equipment and a skill book. This skill is called [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. What do you think? Isn’t it very cool?”

I was speechless and muttered while slashing, “Why did I get only the [City War Bell].....”

“Okay. Don’t whine when you got something nice. The [City War Bell] is a lot more powerful than the two of mine added together. The [City War Bell] is a BUFF equipment with a range of 1000 yards. A treasure that can’t be bought with thousand of gold coins. It would be extremely useful even during the war between nations.”

“Alright. Stand closer. Let me give you a [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]. It adds 40% of attack strength and defense.....”

“What a powerfully perverted guy..... Wait for me.....”

While the Little Missy approached, I released my skill. Our attack strength increased explosively, and we speedily cut down all the hyenas.

We hastily cleaned the battlefield and continued forward. We were trying to save time, and I just hoped that the classes of Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, and Jian Feng Han, would have extremely troublesome fourth job advancement quests, so that I would win first place!

As we advanced forward, the howl of a wolf rang out, and the leader of the hyenas appeared. It had the figure of an enormous wolf, a huge animal with a height of two meters. A Lv 85 Emperor Tier BOSS. There was nothing more to say. I defended as I attracted their agro towards me while Wan Er attacked. Within five minutes, the leader of the hyenas was hacked to pieces. We obtained two Gold Tier equipment, and a canine head as we continued to advance.

Looking at the time, the server had already reopened for 120 minutes. I was slightly anxious as I proceeded into the heart of the boundless fields. Wan Er could see what was going through my mind and grinned as she comforted me, "Don't force yourself. Plus, you don't need that little bit of charm*. Let's just try our best. As the saying goes, Man proposes, God disposes!"

Allenwa note: That's so true.....

"True!"

However, the gods were still on our side. The moment we reached the edge of the boundless fields, gloomy clouds shrouded the forest in the distance. It looked like dark forces occupied that area. I immediately pointed towards the clouds with my sword and said with a smile, "The final BOSS, the summoner Lei Qian must be there!"

"Let's go! Kill him! I just need 9% more experience to level up!"

"Ok!"

As I approached the edge of the forest with the beautiful Missy, a dark air column could be seen rising up from the forest. The instant I stepped on the fallen leaves, those leaves became crushed mud. Under the erosion of the evil forces, the forest no longer had the flourishing look it once possessed. Looks like the reason Frost sent me here was to eradicate the source of this evil.

I stepped into the meadows cautiously, and [Camouflage] activated. Wan Er positioned her arm softly, and used [Stealth] as she followed closely behind me. We began to feel our way deeper into the forest. When the dense leaves were pushed aside, we saw what we expected. A dark magic circle appeared before us. There were a total of six mages standing at the pointed ends of the hexagram. They were all Emperor Tier Vice BOSSes. In addition, an old man dressed in black stood in the center of the magic circle, and that was Lei Qian!

“Di Di Di.....”

A bloody and beating human heart was gripped in Lei Qian’s hand. He lifted the heart high up and shouted loudly, “The sacrifice has been fully prepared. Awaken from your sleep and tear the hypocritical order of the human world apart with your sharp claws. Let those hypocrites that protect the order try the taste of despair! Let their cries resound all around the earth!”

“Roarrrr!”

A crimson hell hound appeared in the middle of the magic circle. The Lv 85 Emperor Tier BOSS opened its sharp claws, and darted towards the periphery of the forest.

“What should we do?” I asked.

Wan Er held her dagger and answered, “When we kill Lei Qian, the other six Vice Bosses will definitely attack. Lei Qian is a Valkyrie Tier BOSS with at least 500,000 health. We won’t be able to kill him within a short amount of time. Therefore, I suggest that we stun Lei Qian and kill the six Vice Bosses one by one. This way, it would be 2 VS 1 during our fight with Lei Qian, and it won’t be a problem for us to kill him.”

I nodded in response while adding, “We must have something that can attract firepower first.”

As Wan Er opened and waved her hand, an ice bear appeared. It is an Emperor Tier BOSS level pet. She petted the Ice Bear’s head softly and said to me with a smile, “My cub is Lv 77, I added 3 strength and 7 endurance per level. It has a super high physical growth, and a passive

skill that increases its health limit. It now has 21000+ health. If it attacks first, it will attract the firepower, and I will stun after that. You mark the other Vice BOSSes. The Vice BOSSes only have 20,000 health, so try to kill around three of them before my Ice Bear dies.

“Okay! Understood! Let’s go!”

“Alright!”

With a loud furious roar, Wan Er’s Ice Bear had already darted out, while pouncing and biting angrily. As it thundered simultaneously, a blue glowing shield materialized around it. This was its skill that absorbs attacks. It is truly great to have this pet be the Tank!

“Shua!”

Wan Er activated [Absolute Step], and dashed out with her dagger in hand. I strode into the summoning circle, and waved my sword. I successfully stunned Lei Qian, and caused him to be stunned briefly.

With my sword held high, I darted towards one of the VICE BOSS summoners, and attacked fiercely with Flaming Tiger God. The Ice Bear endured the attacks of the other five summoners while I struck continually five times with both of my swords. I sent forth a [Combo]+ [Strength of a Thousand Men] right after the previous five strikes. The fierce attacks instantly took half of the Vice BOSS’S health. One more round of this, and he would be dead!

Wan Er continued to ambush and stunned the BOSS again, as the Ice Bear roared angrily. Everything was going smoothly. When the Ice Bear’s health reached bottom, Wan Er changed her pet and her Tigerman was released. As for me, I slashed the fourth summoner down. I slid away while I searched for the right angle for [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. I then laughed and said to Wan Er, “Let’s use AOE skills and slaughter them altogether at once! ”

“Yeah!”

The whirlpool of ice picks descended. Wan Er’s speed in killing monsters wasn’t much slower than mine. The Flaming Tiger God could

finally use [Fierce Roar], [Burst Fire Raid] and other AOE skills.

Chapter 415: Blade Spin

We quickly finished off the six BOSS-es, however the Tiger Beastman was killed in one shot by an ambush from one of the Lei Qian summons. On top of that, Lei Qian glared at us, his face filled with ferocity. He waved the mage staff in his hand, and a raging flame suddenly appeared in the darkness. He roared, "You two nameless adventurers, you actually dare to break my summoning circle. I'm going to kill you guys, and take your bodies to an endless hell where it will burn you all the way down to your soul. You'll become the most pitiful worms in all three realms!"

"Peng!"

The dagger in Wan Er's hand suddenly flashed, and was switched with the iron umbrella on her back. "Hua!" The umbrella opened up, and blocked the flame. The force of the attack pushed the beautiful little miss backwards several steps. With a "wu wu" cry, she lost 2100+ health. From the look of it, even though she had [Heavenly Armor], it didn't raise her magic defense too much. On top of that, Wan Er had at most 5,000 health points, there was no way she would be able to take this kind of an attack.

"How about you do this...." She looked up at me.

I had already raised my sword by the time her words fell. I lowered my head, and used my shoulder to slam into Lei Qian's chest. "Peng!" I forced him backwards. I then raised my two swords, "Ka ka ka" I executed five consecutive slashes, and jet black blood seep out of his wounds. Lei Qian didn't have any defensive skills, but a black spell began to form under my feet. It forced me to move as though I was in mud. However, this was also ok, I wasn't planning on fighting him head on in the first place.

Lei Qian opened his palm, and cast another flame spell. He threw a fireball right at me!

"1827 ! "

Ok, my magic defense is extremely high. With a flash of my blade, I activated [Combo] + [Strength of a Thousand Men]. After that, Lei Qian

only smiled. A layer of black armor began to form around his armor. At that moment, my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword slashed against it, which created many sparks. Motherf*cker, this was a Steel Iron skill that raised his defense by about 7 seven times for 3 seconds. Naturally, I wouldn't be able to break through it.....

Seeing that my attack failed, I could tell that Lei Qian's AI is pretty high. He suddenly raised his staff and roared, "Death god that has sunken to hell, please open your eyes, and release your judgement on this earth — [Hand of the Death God]!"

"Hong!"

A bloody cloud passed through the sky, and a crimson hand fell from the sky. I immediately yelled out, "Wan Er, back up!"

Wan Er hurriedly retreated, while I had to take the attack head on since I didn't have as much agility as her. My body trembled as the [Hand of the Death God] practically shattered my bones. The damage number was also extremely shocking—

"7259 ! "

"F*ck....."

I immediately gulped down a 3000 health potion. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword, and threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] into the BOSS' chest. At the same time, I used a [Heal] on myself and cursed under my breath, "What kind of f*cking summoner is this, how come it has such a high attack....."

Wan Er raised her dagger and came in for another attack, "Of course a Lv 85 Valkyrie Tier BOSS is difficult. We need to focus more. Later, when the BOSS uses [Hand of the Death God] again, I'll interrupt it. That way, we'll be much safer. You really need to watch your own health!"

"Got it!"

The second time, as Lei Qian raised his palm to activate [Hand of the Death God] again, Wan Er was much faster, and immediately used [Gouge] on him!

“MISS ! ”

This time, [Gouge] didn't succeed, but Wan Er quickly reacted and entered into [Stealth]. In a flash she threw another stab into his back, and finally she stunned him! As I saw that I secretly applauded her. This was an ability that only top tier Assassins had. To be able to think of not just one plan, but also a backup in case the first attack failed, and not feel any panic, that was truly amazing.

Like this, there was basically no suspense. Even though I had activated my [Dragon Knight's Recovery] twice, with 11,000 health, I wasn't worried about being able to kill Lei Qian at all. After all, I had an Assassin like Wan Er who could both attack and defend. Killing a Valkyrie Tier quest BOSS was no problem.

With an agonized cry, Lei Qian finally fell. “Shua!” a golden light fell and Wan Er leveled up to 80. She immediately switched to her Dragon's Kiss dagger. At that moment, the dagger in her hand suddenly started shining, lighting the entire forest. She waved it and smiled, “Oh, its almost too strong, my attack is above 5100 now....”

As I looked through the dropped equipment from the BOSS, I muttered, “Even I, an entirely strength based Swordsman, don't have that high of an attack. This is completely illogical. If you were to strength it to +7, then your attack would be above 6000....”

Wan Er clasped her hands behind her back, then looked at me with a beautiful smile, “This is all because you sent me this Dragon's Kiss dagger, otherwise, how else would my attack be so strong....”

Awkwardly, I coughed, “He he, I pretty much sold it to you, it wasn't a gift...”

“At least it was half sold and half gifted..” Wan Er giggled, “I'm not some heartless bastard, I know at least this much!”

“Alright!”

I picked up Lei Qian's head from the ground. As for the equipment, the best one was Purple Tier, and wasn't worth much. Holding up his head,

“Then...we’ll split up? You go back to Fan Shu City to get your job promotion, and I’ll go back to Dragon City to turn in the quest. After that, I’ll go to Fan Shu City and help you finish your quest. How does that sound?”

“Sounds good!” Wan Er slowly nodded, then fished out a City Return Scroll and smiled, “Then I’ll go back now. I’ll see you later?”

“Yup, I’ll see you later!”

“Shua!” The beautiful little miss was sent away. I also fished out a City Return Scroll, and activated it. After I was sent straight back to Ba Huang City, went straight north, back to Dragon City.

I arrived at Dragon City and climbed up the city wall easily. I went directly towards the watchtower, and Frost was still here as expected. It seemed like she was unable to be at ease if it was someone else guarding the watchtower. On the wide platform, I strode forward. The sound of my boots stepping on the snow shocked Frost, and she immediately turned around. As she saw that it was me, she flashed a smile and asked, “How was it? Did you finish the quest?”

“Yeah!”

I took out the bloody human head from my bag and said, “The summoner Lei Qian had been killed by me. This is his head. Now, can you promote my job?”

Frost chuckled, “Yup! As expected, you never let me down!”

Frost took the human head from me, and threw it away. That head went along with the wind, and flew north of Dragon City. Finally it disappeared into the midst of the snow. She then walked in front of me, and put her one of her hands onto my chest. With a stern and firm voice, she spoke, “The land of Dragon City is cold, but good faith will exist forever. Even if Dragon City falls, you will fulfill your responsibility, and guard the barrier of this cold and desolate land.....I, Frost Hua, as the leader of the Dragon City Cavalry, hereby gift you the honor of the Guardian of Dragon City. From now on, you are an inseparable part of my life. Even transmigration will not stop you from fulfilling this responsibility! ”

I nodded resolutely, “Yes!”

A golden light cascaded on me, and the system bell rang out—
“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations for successfully getting your fourth advancement job. As you are the second fourth advancement player, you received an additional reward: Charm+7!

F*ck. I actually didn’t take the first. Looks like the winner of the first place was either Fang Ge Que or Q-sword. Only these two could have such rapid efficiency!

On my shoulder, the name of my job in Dragon City transformed into four golden words ‘Guardian of Dragon City.’ It looked much more magnificent than Scavenger of Dragon City or Tomb Guardian of Dragon City or whatever. At least I looked like a proper warrior, and not someone with his jobs on the edge.....”

Looking towards Frost, I inquired with a smile, “Teacher, do you have anything you can teach me?”

Frost also smiled and stretched out her hand and waved. The lists of two new skills appeared before my eyes while she answered, “Look. These are the skills that Fourth Advancement Swordsman are able to learn. Do you like them?”

I scanned the list and it looked very ordinary—

[Flying sword]: Wield the sword with air. The sword is able to attack the target in a straight line. It has a range of 15 yards. The cost of learning is 100 gold coins!
[Dou Qi Armor]: Activates Dou Qi to create a shield and lessens the damage done to the user by 50%. The durability of the shield is proportional to the user’s attack. Cost: 100G!

“Flying Sword attacks in a straight line.....” I muttered to myself, and looked towards Frost as I said, “Only attacks in a straight line. The style has far too little variability. Plus, I am your student so I should learn some rather special sword skills, right?”

Frost smiled sweetly in response. Her beautiful smile charmed all who stared at it. She then pursed her lips and stopped smiling. She looked towards me with a bright and profound eyes as she asked, “Do you really want to learn special sword skills?”

I nodded and answered, “Yes. Look at my serious facial expression....”

Frost grinned again, “Okay. I originally swore to never teach this ancient skill to a second person, but.....but you are special, then.....Nevermind. It wouldn’t matter even if I taught you. No one heard it when I swore anyway.....”

I burst out in laughter, “Are you teaching me or not.....”

“I am, but.....the price is very heavy. Are you still willing to learn?”

“Yes!”

“Good!”

“Alright. Look careful.....”

Frost lifted her Severing Beauty Sword horizontally and suddenly loosened her grip. Her Severing Beauty Sword floated in the air. Under the control of Frost’s aura, her longsword cut through the blowing snow as a “Shua” sound rang out, and spun in the air. Frost snapped softly and Severing Beauty Sword immediately changed it’s path. It spun and cut through the air, producing winds as it whirled around and made “Hua Hua” sound. Pain was induced as the wind produced by the sword blew on my skin.

After countless of continuous revolutions, Severing Beauty fell before Frost, making a “Keng” sound. The sound of the sword echoed incessantly.

Frost looked at me with a smile, “[Blade Spin] belongs to a subfield of the Flying Sword, but it is much more advanced. Are you sure you want to learn this? ”

I nodded in response, “Yes!”

Frost flashed a smile and a list of the learning skill appeared on my game interface.

[Blade Spin LV-1] (SS tier): Wield the sword with the air. Able to revolve the sword freely in the air to attack the target. The higher the level of the skill, the more attacks dealt. Consumes 70 mp with a cooldown of 30 seconds. The cost of learning is 100000 Gold coins and learning requires a use of 30 charm points.

30 charm and 100000 gold coins! This was not an ordinary price, but I.....must learn it. I have already realized the importance of this skill. To attack by revolving the sword in the air, and the higher the level of your skill, the more the sword is able to keep revolving. This is absolutely better than any AOE skill.

A “Ding” sound rang out, and I successfully learned the skill. On my skill bar, the skill, [Blade Spin] appeared!

Chapter 416: Wall of Dou Qi

[Blade Spin] Lv 1: Wield the sword with the air. Able to revolve the sword freely in the air to attack the target. The higher the level of the skill, the more attacks dealt. Consumes 70 mp with a cooldown of 30 seconds.

The skill list displayed the details with clarity. However, I knew nothing about this skill and thus, had to try it out once first.

Activate!

“Weng!”

The system prompted me asking which of the swords was to be used in the skill. My Emperor Qin’s Sword was the main sword used in attack and defense, thus, I decided to use the Cold Iron Sword instead. Soon after the interface flashed before me, and prompted me to choose a trajectory path. The range of the attack was 50 yards. I could also choose between a straight or curved track. The trajectory and angle were fully customizable. Tsk, this skill sure does take up a lot of energy.

In my heart, I was secretly happy. Our Godly Commander Miss Matcha once told me: the harder the skill is to release, the more advantageous it is for you in raising your individual ability. The operation of [Blade Spin] at merely Lv 1 was already this difficult; it goes without saying how much harder Lv 10 would be!

Upon choosing my trajectory arc, and confirming the route it will take, the official attack launched soon after.

“Keng!”

The Cold Iron Sword unsheathed, and floated in the air beside my shoulder, like a ice cold guardian. Under the influence of my thoughts, the Cold Iron Sword flew out with a “Shua!” The fierce tip of the blade swept through the air, bringing forth numerous bouts of cold wind. Following the predetermined path, it soared forward. I launched two strikes with my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and hit the Cold Iron Sword

squarely as it revolved along the path. From this, the imaginary enemy suffered two serious blows, and would have died, or at the very least was seriously injured.

“Pa!”

With one hand gripping the Cold Iron Sword that cycled back, my heart was filled with excitement. Towards this skill, I had gained quite a bit of insight. The next step was to quickly practice, and familiarize myself with the execution of this technique. Although it might merely be an SS ranked skill, in reality it was way more useful than many other SSS ranked ones. Once my proficiency in attacking with it improves, it will be the focal point in killing enemies. Moreover, this tactic would be classified as one where the wielder separates with his sword. The ability to catch the enemy off guard would prove to be lethal. On top of that, this type of battle tactic is called “Separation of man and sword” and uses uncommon sword attacks to deal critical damage.

Proud of my success, I sheathed the two swords. I turned around and arrived beside Frost. Frost gazed at me, the corners of her mouth raised into a slight grin, “How is it? Are you satisfied?”

I laughed as I bowed, “I have nothing else to say, other than cool!”

Frost couldn’t help but let loose a smile, “So, what else do you want to learn?”

I proceeded to enquire, “[Dou Qi Armor] is the mainland adventurers’ common ability. Teacher, do you have a stronger protective skill to impart? I am from Dragon City and thus, shouldn’t be learning the same skill as them.”

Frost nodded her head in agreement, “Actually, I followed King Luo Lin in practicing since I was 14 years old. It has already been 9 years. Regarding the [Dou Qi Armor] technique, I had already grasped and reached the Royal Air Level in proficiency when I was 17. Therefore, when I had free time, I created a different set of defense techniques similar to [Dou Qi Armor]. It is a mixture of Dragon City’s ancient secret martial arts. I wonder if you would be willing to learn it?”

“Yes! What’s it called?”

Frost extended her hands as another column of text appeared before me.

[Wall of Dou Qi] Level 1 (SS rank): Condenses battle qi into a wall that protects the user’s body. An enormous defensive wall that is capable of resisting magic. Currently, raising a level will increase defense and magic resistance by 20%. Durability depends on the sum of your attack and defense values. Consumes 70 mana; Cooldown time: 60 seconds. Needs 1000G to learn.

I was astonished. This [Wall of Dou Qi]’s effect was obvious. It used the skill’s Dou Qi to add to your defense rather than protect the user from 50% of the damage. And, since the effect is proportional, and Dou Qi itself naturally raises the user’s defense, 1 level would raise physical and magical defense by 20%. By my estimate, by Lv 10, [Wall of Dou Qi] would increase defense by 200%. It could be said that this effect was the exact opposite of [Dou Qi Armor]. One level of [Wall of Dou Qi] was not as strong as [Dou Qi Armor], but 10 levels of [Wall of Dou Qi] would completely overpower [Dou Qi Armor]. What more was there to think about?

Especially with the fact that my attack and defense is much higher than the average player, three levels of [Wall of Dou Qi] would already beat a Lv 10 [Dou Qi Armor]. After all, I have 4200 defense, and with a 60% increase, no one will be able to break my defense. Of course, that is excluding players like Wan Er who have an extremely high defense ignore, but those are rare examples.

Looking at the effect of [Wall of Dou Qi], I couldn’t help but doubtfully ask, “Frost, this..... you took so much for that [Blade Spin], then you would probably want at least 1000G for this [Wall of Dou Qi]? Then why so little, it seems illogical....”

Frost grinned, then glanced around with her beautiful eyes. Seeing that no one was behind her, she quickly walked up to me, and pressed her pretty face close to mine and whispered, “Because this [Wall of Dou Qi] is

a skill that I created, giving this [Wall of Dou Qi] to you doesn't go through any regulations. Dragon City wouldn't notice anything either, and so I'm just taking the price of creation....."

"Copyright...." my lips twitched, "You even know about copyright fee?"

Frost squinted her eyes, "I saw the phrase in some ancient books, and so I used it. There isn't a problem with that is there?"*

*Allenwa note:copyright in China hmmm seems legit

"Nope, there's no problem at all haha...."

With a wave of my hand, I learned the skill. [Wall of Dou Qi] appeared in my list of skills. Like this, I obtained the two main skills from the fourth advancement. [Wall of Dou Qi] increased my survivability, while [Blade Spin] increased my battle power, this was clearly the perfect combination.

"ARGH!"

With a low roar, I activated the skill, and snakes of red colored Dou Qi began to condense around my body, and formed a wall of Qi similar to magma

"Eh....."

Before I even said anything, Frost's pale fist was already surrounded by ice energy, and came flying straight at me!

"Peng!"

The [Wall of Dou Qi] shuddered, and I took 4427 damage as my body flew backwards. "Peng!" I hit the stone pillar at the edge of the observation deck, the force of my impact caused the entire deck to shake. Frost rushed over and helped me up, her expression apologetic, "Wu, I'm sorry. I didn't think that your defense was that weak. My attack was still a bit too much...."

I coughed a few times, then looked at the [Wall of Dou Qi]. There was only 7% durability left. Only God knows just how much strength Frost really has. I asked, "Exactly how much of your strength did you use?"

“10%.....” Frost said a very disheartening number for me. Seeing my sorrowful look, she seemed to realize something, and suddenly tugged on my arm as she tried to remedy her mistake, “Don’t be disappointed. You’re actually really strong, at least compared with other adventurers. Now that I’m in Dragon City, I can absorb dragon power. I didn’t get this strong without training for many years. You’ll also get here at one point....”

I nodded, “En, I understand!”

Standing up, I patted off some snow from my shoulder, “Then, I will go out to train. Frost, will you continue to guard this observation deck in Dragon City?”

Frost licked her lips, “Dragon City is a protective barrier for people, moon elves, and wind elves. The evil power in the north is becoming stronger and stronger. I’ve been feeling a bad premonition, so I will personally guard this spot. I don’t trust anyone else to do it. Don’t worry, once Dragon City is truly in danger, I will light a beacon, letting the Seven Kingdoms know to rescue us!”

I nodded, “Ok, then I will leave now!”

“Alright. Train hard!”

“Ok!”

I fished out a City Return Scroll, and crushed it. As I was turning into a light, I looked back at my beautiful master. Frost also looked at me, her lips carried a bitter smile, “Remember to come back....”

“Shua!”

After returning to Ba Huang City, I repaired all of my equipment. After leaving the city, I messaged Wan Er, “Little Miss, how’s your quest? I’m coming right now!”

Wan Er replied, “Ok. Come straight to where my target is. My quest is different from yours. I have to continuously kill Lv 85 Phantom Tier monsters. I need to kill 3000 of them. Come quick, Dong Cheng already came to help. With your firepower, I should be able to complete it.”

“Ok ok, I’m coming!”

I rushed out of Ba Huang City, and ran straight towards Fan Shu City. Along the way, whenever I saw a monster I would purposely use [Blade Spin]. My Cold Iron Sword was almost constantly in the air beside me, flying along as I ran. After continuously activating the skill, my [Blade Spin] was already Lv 2 by the time I reached Fan Shu City!

At the same time, the details of the skill began to change. It can spin two times in the air now!

Right in front of me, a Lv 77 hyena-like monster had just finished eating a rabbit and was breathing softly. I’ll use that as a target. My Cold Iron Sword whistled through the air and “Pu Chi!” penetrated the hyenas body, and then immediately came back with a spin. With a wave of my arm, the Cold Iron Sword was suddenly controlled by Dou Qi, and began its second attack. It stabbed the hyena again. It was a normal monster, and so it was immediately killed with a wail.

“Keng!”

The Cold Iron Sword automatically returned to its sheath. I carried my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and continued running forward. This truly deserves to be called Frost’s unique technique. Yup, in my hands, I must definitely make its name known around the world!

As I rushed towards Fan Shu City, farmlands began to appear before me. After I entered the valley, I could see the two beauties in the distance, slaughtering hyenas. They had to kill another 1000. Then, they had to kill 1000 tigers, and 1000 leopards to finish the quest!

A group of hyena cubs nipped at Wan Er’s feet. The beautiful little miss let her Dragon’s Kiss dance in the air, finishing them off one by one. After that, she activated a last [Ice Pick Whirlpool], and the group of cubs all cried out, instantly losing over half of their health.

I dashed through the brushes, and started killing monsters. From the distance, I waved my left hand, and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out of its sheath. “Shua!” it created an arc in the air and flew around Wan Er as it cut through the group of hyena cubs. After that, it quickly flew back

through the cubs, slashing them a second time. Within one second, they were sliced two times. The cubs all fell with a cry. With just one [Blade Spin], I killed 20 hyenas.

Wan Er turned around to look at me and sweetly smiled, "You finally came!"

I nodded with a smile, "Yup. I'm a bit late, so don't be mad. It's just that Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City are too far apart, and there's no teleportation between the main cities. Such a pain in the ass....."

Wan Er smiled softly, "Yeah. I was told that teleportation between main cities in the game is not allowed. If players wanted to assist other main cities, they must run there themselves!"

"Yeah." I cast a glance at Dong Cheng Yue, but noticed that she was looking at me with teary eyes. Her beautiful big eyes were filled with tears. Seeing this, I was surprised and asked, "What's wrong? Dong Cheng?"

Dong Cheng Yue pursed her red lips and said with a delicate and touching tone, "Brother Xiao Yao, I missed you....."

I narrowed my eyes and asked, "What's going on? Your Aunt Flo is here?"

Dong Cheng Yue cried, "How did you know....."

My mouth twitched and replied, "Never mind. Let's kill monsters....."

Chapter 417: Internal Strife at [Hero's Mound]

“Hong!”

My sword revolved crazily in the air and voluntarily returned to my hand after slashing the pack of wolves dead. I brandished both of my swords and slayed a few monsters. My Flaming Tiger God was also beside me, assisting me during the fight. The quest was progressing very smoothly.

Wan Er tilted her head and stared at me, “This.....[Blade Spin] is your fourth advancement skill?”

“Yeah!”

“Normally, there should be 1-2 new skills, right?”

“Oh, there's one more. It's a defending type of skill!”

“Oh? Let me see.....”

I roared deeply and Dou Qi was suffused through my whole body. The fiery red Dou Qi around me condensed into streaks of broken armor shields. They surrounded my body and formed a wall. This was the effect of [Wall of Dou Qi].

“Wow.....” Stars filled Dong Cheng Yue's eyes as she exclaimed, “Such a handsome [Wall of Dou Qi]!”

Wan Er also narrowed her beautiful eyes and said, “Yeah. Looks really handsome.. Seriously very handsome.....”

I grinned, “The defense effect is also really strong. A Lv 10 [Wall of Dou Qi] can increase my physical and magical defense by 200%. As long as the wall's durability isn't completely wiped out, the skill will remain in effect.”

Wan Er stuck out her tongue, “Isn't this too buggy.....”

Dong Cheng lightly smiled, “Well now, nobody can even dream of

killing Brother Xiao Yao... that bastard's attack power is way too high, even his defense power is high. On top that, he's a thousand kill close combat specialist. With this kind of bastard, he's practically a thorn in the eye for people like Fang Ge Que and Jian Feng Han...."

I hacked down a hyena and said, "It's alright I guess. Before, it was just because I'm a close combat type that I was able to rival Fang Ge Que. Technically speaking, [Zhan Long] didn't even actually take on [Legend]. Besides, once the Country Wars start, we'll be on the same side, and we won't be fighting among each other anymore."

"Yea, that'll be the best scenario, [Legend] isn't a good enemy to provoke..." Dong Cheng cautioned.

Wan Er waved her Dragon's Kiss dagger and smiled, "Hmph, let's just say Fang Ge Que actually wants to kill Li Xiao Yao, I don't care if it's good or bad to provoke him, I'll fight him even if I can't defeat him!"

My heart warmed, "I'll repay the little miss' kindness of protection with my kidney."

Wan Er giggled, "You pig head, hurry up and kill these monsters!"

"Alright...."

.....

Not long after, we killed all 1000 hyenas. Wan Er pointed to the front, "Let's continue in the shrubbery up front. There's a monster called "Forest Tiger", its a Lv85 Phantom Tier monster. We need to kill 1000 of them. Come on, we're almost done!"

The three people rushed through the forest like a tornado. The firepower of three people and three pets had completely overpowered these Lv 85 Phantom Tier monsters. Especially after I had obtained the Magic Dragon's Helmet and my [Wall of Dou Qi], my defense increased exponentially and I could basically block all of them without needing another Healer to heal me. My own [Heal] and 10% [Drain] was more than enough.

After a short period of time, 500 Forest Tigers fell at our feet. After we

continued to go further into the forest, we noticed the light of flames and blades. Clearly, there were other players killing monsters here too.

Wan Er walked in front and reached out to brush away the leaves. Before us was a large group of people killing the Forest Tigers. With a single glance we could tell that they were all from [Hero's Mound: Second Division]. There were around 300+ players, not that many. They seemed to be having a hard time against these monsters.

I followed close behind Wan Er and walked out of the forest. Slightly astonished, "Dang, so many people are here to steal monsters. The quota of our quest is pretty high. Wan Er, these are all [Hero's Mound] people. Why don't you tell them about our situation?"

Wan Er nodded, "Yup, I know...."

.....

With a flash of Dragon's Kiss, Wan Er stepped out of the forest and walked into the open area. Her clothes fluttering in the wind, she swept her cloak out from behind her, displaying her pretty face and mystifying body to the crowd. She stood in front of the crowd with one hand on her hip and one hand flicking her dagger, "Friends from [Hero's Mound: Second Division], I'm here for a quest. I need to kill a large amount of Forest Tigers, so I politely ask that you move to another place. Otherwise, I don't know how long it would take for me to get my fourth advancement...."

Among the crowd of people, a young Swordsman walked out, the emblem of a Vice Guild Master floating above his shoulder. He was completely clothed in a heroic armor and a longsword in his hand. He grinned, "Oh, so it was the main guild's Vice Guild Master beauty Cang Tong. Seeing as it is a quest that you are doing, then we'll just let you do your quest. After all, you are one of us!"

Wan Er nodded with a smile, "Ok! Thank you!"

However, the second division Guild Master glanced at me, "Huh? Isn't this Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Aren't you supposed to be in Ba Huang City? What are you doing in Fan Shu City...."

His glare carried hostility. I coughed, "It's nothing. I'm just here to help Cang Tong with her quest. Is there a problem, Guild Master Ai Ye?"

Ai Ye, a Lv 77 Swordsman, the Guild Master of [Hero's Mound: Second Division], can be considered an elite person. He doubtfully looked at me, his hand gripping the hilt of his sword. Then, he suddenly laughed, "To be honest, I'm really puzzled right now. Why would people like Cang Tong and Cang Yue, who have so much importance placed in them at [Hero's Mound] and are treated like goddesses, always try to leave [Hero's Mound]. Q-Sword has always doted on you guys, but all you want to do is leave. Do you know how much this has disappointed our players?"

"That's enough!"

Wan Er's pretty face had a cold expression, "I joined [Hero's Mound] because I thought of Q-Sword as my friend. I'm leaving [Hero's Mound] because I've already fulfilled my promise to Q-Sword. Don't tell me anything about disappointing others. I just ask, have I done anything that harmed [Hero's Mound] during my time here? If you take me as a friend, then you wouldn't be disappointed because my friends will always wish for my happiness. If you're disappointed, then you don't think of me as your friend, you just think of me as a tool. Would I care about people like that?"

"You!"

Ai Ye's face was completely green. He softly threatened, "Cang Tong, do you know the proverb, Eat my pear, but help my neighbor*? You are one of [Hero's Mound], yet you're always with Xiao Yao Zi Zai. What does that mean?"

*TL Note: Means to take benefits from one person but help others instead.

Wan Er suddenly grinned, then flashed her Dragon's Kiss dagger, "To be honest, people from other worlds really do have different logic. Did you think that I joined [Hero's Mound] to be Q-Sword's servant? Did you think that just because I joined [Hero's Mound], I have to listen to everything you guys want me to do? You're wrong. I only listen to my own heart. I'll

be with whoever I like to be with. I'm very conscious of my decisions. There's no need for nosy people like you to tell me what to do!"

Ai Ye's face turned even uglier, "If it's like that, then I can't let you have these monsters...."

Behind Ai Ye, a vulgar looking Undead Assassin came out from the shadows. Lifting his dagger, he cackled, "For a beautiful bitch like Cang Tong, only our Guild Master Q-Sword is worthy of her. Too bad, he didn't even get her before Xiao Yao first caught her. Us brothers, we can't just sit here and do nothing, am I right?"

Ji Yuan, a Lv 77 Undead Assassin, he was the Vice Guild Master of [Hero's Mound: Second Division].

.....

"Can you guys clean up your mouths a bit?" Dong Cheng Yue angrily shouted.

Ji Yuan furrowed his brows, "How do you expect it to be clean? The truth is right in front of us. Cang Tong, Cang Yue, if you guys want to go, I won't stop you. However, if you want to take brothers from [Hero's Mound] with you, I definitely won't allow it! Cang Tong, I don't care who you like, all I care about, is the negative impact you'll create on [Hero's Mound]. If your resignation negatively impacts [Hero's Mound], then even if I have to fight to the death, I still won't agree to it!"

"Did she need your permission?"

I stepped forward and stood in front of Wan Er. I slowly pulled out my Emperor Qin's Sword and softly said, "You better get the f*ck out of the way, or else don't blame me if I'm too harsh. Seeing as you guys are from [Hero's Mound], I didn't immediately fight you. Don't think that means that us three are easy people to bully!"

Ai Ye said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you better f*cking crawl back to Ba Huang City to make your bluffs. Right now, you're in Fan Shu City. Is this your place to talk?"

I didn't say anything, instead, I pulled out a Pardon Card, then raised my

sword and rushed forward. Once I accelerated, my blade fell upon him, and Ai Ye was completely caught off guard. All he could do was raise his sword to block!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew, and with a great slash, Ai Ye tumbled backwards. “Peng!” he knocked into a dozen other [Hero’s Mound: Second Division], forcing them to retreat backwards. Based on my power now, I could definitely do at least this much.

He miserably stood up from the crowd of people, his face filled with rage, “Kill. Go and cut down Xiao Yao Zi Zai. If Cang Tong and Cang Yue try to stop you, then kill them too! Don’t let a single one of them live!”

My eyes turned cold, and my Cold Iron Sword already flew up into the air beside my shoulder. I coldly said, “Ai Ye, you’re looking for your own death. Don’t blame me!”

“What is this?” Ai Ye was stunned.

“Shua!” My Cold Iron Sword already flew out, it was the effect of [Blade Spin]. “Hua Cha!” it flew right through Ai Ye’s chest, bringing out 4417 damage. It suddenly spun around, and cut through the crowd of people a second time, bringing out another 5128 damage. All of the Healers behind Ai Ye kept healing him, barely sustaining his life. The moment I opened my palm, however, Ai Ye’s face turned green,

“F*ck!”

[Great Realm of Desolation]

“5871!”

An instant kill in one strike! Any more healing would be useless!

Ji Yuan was enraged and darted towards me with his dagger in hand. He yelled furiously, “How dare you kill our Guild Master! You’re looking to die!”

As a “Pa” sound rang out, I held the Cold Iron Sword which had revolved back to me. I then slashed with both of my swords, knocking Ji Yuan with

a “Keng”, forcing him to tumble backwards. He looked battered and exhausted, but the moment he stood up, an electric current flowed through his body, electrifying him into a roasted pig. These people had angered Dong Cheng Yue, the Missy of Dong Cheng.

.....

The [Hero’s Mound] players charged towards us with their swords held high, while I also ran at them with a smile on my face. I roared deeply and [Wall of Dou Qi] surrounded my body. Any kinds of [Combo]s, [Skyslayer Slash] and other skills could only fall onto the [Wall of Dou Qi]. Unfortunately for them, it was like bullets hitting a tank; it was impossible to break through my defense. At most, I would only get an attack damage of 200+.

“Shua!”

A beautiful figure came in front of me in a flash. Wan Er raised her hand, held out the Iron Umbrella and swung it out!

“Peng!”

Raging flames surged out, and forcing the group of [Hero’s Mound] players backwards. All of the players were stupefied. They stared at this Vice Guild Master of the main division, unsure as to whether they should fight or retreat.

Wan Er scanned the crowds with her bright eyes and opened her mouth calmly, “Ai Ye and Yuan Ji started this conflict. I will talk to Q-Sword about the details. If you guys continue to be blinded and provoke me again, then don’t blame me for having no mercy!”

The group of people stared in astonishment and soon dispersed. As expected, no one was willing to offend Cang Tong, the beautiful Vice Guild Master of [Hero’s Mound].

Chapter 418: Not Enough Muscle Power

“Guess, will Q-Sword punish Ai Ye and Ji Yuan?” Dong Cheng asked as she killed a monster.

I shot another [Blade Spin] into the crowd of monsters and smiled, “I don’t think he will.”

Wan Er asked, “Why not?”

I explained, “It’s simple. Q-Sword also knows that you and Dong Cheng are going to leave [Hero’s Mound], so there will be even less people that he can use. Ai Ye and Ji Yuan are all elites. Even though they aren’t as strong as Jian Tan and Sword Tears, they are still talented people. And so, why would Q-Sword stand up for two people destined to leave the guild, and punish two people who will later become capable generals? At least, from where I stand, I would never punish those two. That’ll only disappoint the people of [Hero’s Mound].”

“So it was like that....”

Wan Er’s Dragon’s Kiss swiftly killed a Forest Tiger. She smiled, “People’s hearts are so complicated. I’ve never thought of these kinds of things before. Li Xiao Yao, how did you think of it?”

I patted my chest, “I’m older than you and Dong Cheng by 5 years. Those 5 years weren’t spent doing nothing. Even though I’m not as good as those wise old men, I at least know enough to not be ignorant anymore.”

Dong Cheng pursed her lips, “Hmph, and yet you were still willing to offend guilds like [Flying Dragon] and [Vanguard] for some people that you don’t know?”

“That’s not the same.....”

I ducked to dodge the tackle of a Forest Tiger, then raised my two swords, and cut it into eight pieces before saying, “There are a lot of things that I see clearly, and I know how to truly protect myself. But, I don’t want to be that kind of person, so I will act, time and time again,

against “common sense”. It’s really not a problem. As long as [Zhan Long]’s fist is hard, then I’ll make the rules of this virtual world myself!”

Wan Er couldn’t help but grin, “Alright then. At least it sounds pretty impressive!”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Isn’t this why you’re so charming?”

“Is he charming?”

I looked at her, “Alright already, go kill monsters. Let’s try and finish this quest within 3 hours. After that, we can sleep a bit earlier, and fix up our internal clocks.”

“Ok!”

.....

Once we helped Wan Er finish killing the 3000 monsters, all of our weapons had been greatly damaged. After my Cold Iron Sword had repeatedly used [Blade Spin], it was down to only 27% durability, and had killed a countless number of monsters. On top of that, I had almost used up all of the mana pills that I had in my bag. [Blade Spin] and [Wall of Dou Qi] were all extremely high MP consuming skills. After using them continuously to train their levels, they had used up far too many mana pills in such a short amount of time. I needed to go back to the city to replenish them, or else next time I go out I’ll only last a minute before all of my equipment is hacked away.

I looked at the skills’ stats. [Wall of Dou Qi] was already Lv 3, and could raise my defense by 60%; the Lv 3 stats were already terrifying, and the skill basically made it such that even against a crowd of Lv 85 Phantom Tier monsters, I still wouldn’t be pushed back! My [Blade Spin] was Lv 4 already, and based on my calculations, I could make the sword spin back 4 times within the 60 second cool down. This would greatly increase my ability to kill at long range. On top of that, my [Blade Spin] would be a great support for any close combat duels. The fact that they complement each other would greatly augment my attack power.

I bid farewell to Wan Er and Dong Cheng, then took out a City Return

Scroll, and went back!

“Shua!”

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City. I took a look at my experience; I only needed 3% more before I would level up to 81. Looks like helping Wan Er kill so many monsters gave me quite a bit of experience.

Song Han and Matcha stood in the northern marketplace. They were recruiting new members for [Zhan Long]’s main guild. In the middle of the night was the best time as that’s when all of the high level all nighter players came out. That’s why Song Han and Matcha were so busy trying to recruit.

[Zhan Long]’s main guild was already Lv 5, and was a top tier guild. We could take 10,000 people, and right now, we already had 4000. Of those 4000, we already took 1000 from each of the separate divisions. Finally, we had to recruit new members for the remaining 6000 spots.

With long swords on my back, I slowly walked over and smiled, “Little Wolf, Matcha, what’s the situation with recruiting new members like?”

Little Wolf turned around with a smile, “Brother Xiao Yao is here! It’s alright, our requirements for entering the guild are somewhat high. They have to be higher than Lv 75, and on top of that, they can’t be on for less than 10 hours a day, and they have to have at least 3 pieces of Purple Tier equipment. So, the recruiting process has been a little slow. On the other hand, everyone that we have recruited are true elites, and won’t dilute the guild’s talent.”

Matcha smiled, “Boss, I just recruited a CBN ranked 347 expert. Little Wolf also recruited a CBN Ranked Top 1000 person. Looks like our [Zhan Long] did get some prestige out of that City War. These ranked experts all came to join [Zhan Long] on their own. That’s extremely hard to find.”

I nodded with a smile, then lowered my voice and whispered, “You have to make sure to check out their backgrounds. If there’s anyone that has ties with any of our enemy guilds we definitely cannot take them. I don’t want to take a whole bunch of spies into our guild.....”

Little Wolf smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, don’t worry about it. Matcha and I aren’t idiots, we will be careful.”

“Ok.”

I turned around and faced a wall of Ba Huang City players, all of whom were staring at my face and ID. A few girls were filled with excitement, “Woah, isn’t this.... isn’t this the Guild Master of [Zhan Long], Xiao Yao Zi Zai? He really is as good looking as the rumors. A dual sword specialist, he’s just too handsome. That cloak should be the newest one, the [War Swept Cloak] right? Too amazing, too amazing.....”

One of the misses picked up a sharp knife and walked forward as she excitedly said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, take me into your guild please! I’m a Lv 76 Swordsman with 5500 health, 3200 attack, and 2200 defense. Please take me!”

I glanced at her ID. She had joined a small guild before this, so there didn’t seem to be any problem with her background. Thus I gladly consented, and let her join [Zhan Long]. On top of that, recruited people are all on a probation list until they earn a certain amount of guild points. After that, they become official members. This way, we create a competitive environment, and the guild won’t come to a standstill.

Either way, I wasn’t in a hurry to sleep early. I stood at the Northern Gate along with Little Wolf and Matcha and recruited people. Old K and Li Mu were at another gate recruiting people as well. After that City War, we needed to ride the waves of change. Truly strong people had broken free from their shells and metamorphosed. This was the perfect time to recruit. Plus, the earlier we fill up our main guild with people, the sooner we hit 14,000 members total, With the 3000 members from our Lv 4 First Division, and our 1000 members from our Lv 3 Second Division. Even if we don’t make it, we’ll easily have more than 12,000 members. With that, we won’t be easily pinned down by others. With 14,000 of [Zhan Long]’s elites, no matter where we are people will cower at our might.

It wasn’t until 4 a.m., when we finally too tired to continue that we decided it was time to sleep. On my friend’s list, Dong Cheng and Wan Er

had already logged off to sleep earlier on.

.....

I logged off and rested.

After waking up from my sleep, it was already close to noon. “Du du” my phone rang. It was Wang Xin’s number—

“Do you need something, Captain Wang?”

“Yeah, come to HQ” Wang Xin’s voice was heavy. He said, “Something’s happened.”

“What happened?”

Wang Xin said, “Last time, do you still remember Qin Meng? There’s some hints as to where he is. Shen Bing’s gotten pretty close with Wei Fan, and a person called You Yi in the game. From them, she was able to get some information. Qin Meng’s name was mentioned. It was in a list of failed products. Based on the records after he was injected with the medicine, his body underwent a sudden change. There was a 30% risk, and so all of the people that participated in that experiment were labeled as “Evolution Failure”. Qin Tai was one of them. We’re still not sure how Blood Scythe buried the bodies, but..... Shen Bing got some information from You Yi in the game. You Yi said that once every month, at 3 o’clock in the afternoon, they’ll deal with some failed experiments at a chemical plant south of the city.....”

“Chemical plant?” I was puzzled.

“Yup, so they can use the big furnace, and burn the bodies!”

“This....” I made a fist, “Once we find the chemical plant, are we just going to clean it up?”

“You could say that.” Wang Xin gave a frustrated sigh, “There are some workers that are protesting at that chemical plant today. On top of that, it might get violent really quickly. The people up top are focusing on this event, and have already sent out some cops to maintain the safety there. However...I think that this might be some ploy by Wei Fan. He’s probably

using his contacts on the web, and trying to make the situation bigger than it is so that he can burn the failed experiments in the midst of the chaos. Who would've thought that a place covered with so many Special Forces would have such a sinful act be committed, right under their noses?"

I squinted my eyes, "I understand. Captain Wang, you want us to....."

"Exactly!"

Wang Xin said, "I need you to wear a Special Forces uniform, and go to the scene. I want you to mix in with the other Special Forces members, and investigate the specifics of the situation. I won't bore you with any other details, just hurry over. How many people will you need?"

"10! And I need two Royal Air tier experts to go with me."

"Got it!"

.....

I quickly brushed my teeth and washed my face, then put on a clean set of clothes and walked out the door. At the school gate, a black and white car was waiting for me. The driver poked his head out the window, "Head, over here!"

I recognized him. He was one of the officers at HQ. I hurried onto the car, and quickly arrived at HQ. Shen Bing stood at the door, dressed in a crisp uniform. She welcomed me with a smile, "This time we have to complete the task successfully. But, I can't go with you this time. Commander Wang said that I don't have enough muscle power, so going would just add to your troubles...."

I laughed, "Ok, where are the clothes?"

"In the car! Change quickly!"

"Ok!"

In the car, I quickly changed into the new attire. On my chest, rested my old police badge, the three words, Li Xiao Yao, were printed in silver. I thought, there must be plenty of other police officers like me, who were

out there risking their lives for the sole sake of making sure that this holy police badge would never have dirt on it. Without a strong purpose, how else would people continue down this path?

.....

As we rode in the car another ten other officers rushed to the scene with me. Of them, there were two who were around 35-40 year old uncles that didn't say much. Their eyes belied a radiant light, and their aura was above average. These were definitely not normal people. This type of Qi control was not something that normal people had. It looks like these were veterans, but they were still not at the level of top tier Royal Air experts.

Apparently they were very expensive. Just two Royal Air tier specialists' annual income was around 2 million. Just thinking about it made me indignant. Goddamnit, even my monthly income was only around 4000 RMB..... and to think that I'm practically their commander!

Chapter 419: Sad Tears

This chemical plant is located outside the urban district. However, it is near the main road to the city. Therefore, many people passed to and fro, and also an elementary school is located not far away from the chemical plant. All of these factors increased the difficulty of this mission.

As the police sirens blared, three police cars had already stopped outside the chemical plant. The police lines had already been set up. Outside the police lines was a group of onlookers, and within the police lines were around a hundred strikers. These strikers were screaming and yelling about months of unpaid wages, and no compensation for work injuries.

At the office in the factory building, the plant manager had wounded his head. Bloodstains were all over the gauze while he howled in pain.

I got off the car with a loaded rifle in my arms, and joined the police line, as I lead the ten people behind me. Immediately, the police officer at my side peered at me, and inquired, "Brother, which division are you guys from? Also on duty for this mission?"

I nodded, "I'm from the Xi Hu District, commanded to assist you guys to carry out this mission."

"Why didn't I receive an order?"

"No idea. Probably a last-minute decision."

"Yeah. Probably."

I flashed a smile, and gestured the middle-aged policeman with my eyes. He immediately understood me, and led the other four police officers past the police line and into the factory.

Voices rang out from the walkie-talkie—

"Boss, the three exits to the factory had been sealed off."

"Boss, there are no suspicious 'packages' found within the factory!"

"Furnaces number 1 and 2 are under surveillance!"

I lowered my volume as I spoke into the walkie-talkie, "Remain under control, and don't beat the grass and startle the snake. Most importantly, keep an eye on the furnaces. Is there fire in the furnaces?"

"Yup. It's on! This is slightly weird. There are so many workers on strike, What's the use of starting up these furnaces?"

I casted a smile and answered, "It would be normal if the furnaces are on. Everyone, steady yourselves. Let's wait for them to send the packages here. They will probably arrive around 3 o'clock."

"Yes!"

We waited very patiently until around 3 o'clock. Finally, a heavy truck slowly halted outside the factory. The driver said something to the guard, and was immediately allowed to pass the police line.

As I saw this, I narrowed my eyes. This showed that things are even more abnormal. The truck passed through the police line as if it was an invisible setup. The things inside this truck were obvious. In addition, the relationship between the owner of this chemical factory and Wei Fan was inextricable. As I had expected, there must be countless of innocent evolution failures disposed secretly here.

"Boss!"

A voice rang out from the walkie-talkie, "Seven workers entered the factory building, and are carrying the boxes from the truck. The stuff is stored in wooden boxes, and we are unable to see the contents clearly. They are heading towards the furnaces, what should we do?"

I whispered, "Get the sniper to search for the best hiding spot. As for the others, prepare to follow me there. Since the 'goods' have already appeared before our eyes, they won't escape."

"Yes!"

I gestured with my eyes, and the four special officers behind me immediately followed me past the police line. A second gate must be passed before we could enter the furnace room. Yet, that gate was now guarded by special forces from a different district. As I walked towards

the door, one of the special forces' members opened his hand and warned, "Brother, this area inside this plant is off-limits. You can't enter!"

"Off-limits?" I raised my brows and asked, "You guys took rifles and bullet proof shields here just to guard a few pots? I really want to know. Who gave you this order?"

He paused for a second and answered, "We are just following orders. There's no other meaning. However, I won't let you pass this alert line. This is an order and I must obey."

I darted directly before him, and suddenly raised my arm. As a "Peng" sound rang out, I pressed him onto the wall with my arm across his throat, and pointed at the off-limits area with my right hand as I yelled, "Someone is killing people inside. I must enter. Is this answer clear enough?"

The special police's face turned blue due to the lack of air. Even if he had went through special training, he was still a lot weaker than me. The other five special forces members around immediately lifted up their pistols and asked, "Who.....who are you guys? What's the meaning of this?"

My eyes turned cold. I moved like lightning, I punched away the pistol of another officer, and roared deeply, "Disarm them!"

Immediately, the Guardian team that came with me acted, and the special forces members were disarmed within seconds. The disparity in our battle strength was too big. These special forces' members could do nothing to us.

"Who are you guys?" An officer that was pressed into the ground furiously reacted while his arms were almost twisted off.

I pointed at the police badge on my chest and answered, "Xi Hu District, I'm part of the small team the Guardians. We obey the orders of the Southern Capital Military District. Is this clear enough? Give up on resisting. We will soon make our move, and you guys will also understand the situation here!"

“You guys.....”

I turned around, and led the group of people into the factory building. As the few workers saw me walking in, their facial expression immediately changed. The driver of the truck even yelled in shock, “F*ck. We have been betrayed. These aren’t our people!”

While he was still saying this, he stepped on the gas, and drove the truck towards the pots on the furnaces. He’s trying to destroy the evidence forcefully?”

“Pa!”

I leaped up towards the truck, and smashed open the truck window forcefully, as I kicked the driver out of the truck. I then stopped the truck while the sounds of guns being loaded and cocked came from behind me. With a “Bang” sound, a gun fired, and broke the window beside me into pieces while the bullet swept past the tip of my nose.

The sounds of gunfire resounded. Our snipers hiding on the rooftop had finished off almost all the workers one by one.

I jumped off the truck. Under the fierce bumps, a few boxes also dropped down from the truck. As a “Pa” sound rang out, the boxes broke, and ice cold corpses were actually hidden within each of these boxes. I could not feel any life energy in these corpses. My heart immediately turned cold. These animals! Did all these experimental failures get frozen to death?

A few workers took out their pistols; one of them was already aiming towards me with his teeth gritted, and a hateful expression. Fish scales began to appear on the skin of his neck. These are all Artificials! As expected, this chemical plant was actually Blood Scythe’s trash bin! It’s all under their control!

Before he fired, I had speedily pulled out the C9 pistol wrapped on my leg while moving rapidly I raised my hand and fired!

“Bang!”

Fresh blood splattered. Headshot! I used Nano bullets, even these

Artificials had no defense against them.

“Roar.....”

An Artificial suddenly pressed the ground with both of his hands, and emitted the roars of a wild beast. Horrifying fangs began growing out of his mouth, while blood red scales covered his body. He became a blood-red lizard, and he darted towards me with abnormal speed while he roared, “Whoever you are, we want you dead! Die!”

I shot his face, but the nano bullets only left a bullet hole on his face, unable to pass through. F*ck. This is the next level of the evolution. Even the nano bullets couldn't punch through their scales!

With determination in my heart, I raised my arm, and condensed the whirlwind on my fist. I charged directly towards him, and lowered my body, dodging his claws which came flying towards me. I raised my fists, and smashed it into his face!

“Peng!”

As his two fangs broke off, I took the chance to punch him to the ground, and added another punch. I lifted my pistol, and shot it at his forehead. The bullet pushed through his head this time. As his defensive layer had been smashed by my whirlwind, he wasn't that tough anymore.

As the scattered gun fight sounds died out, the eight Artificials had all collapsed within the factory building. A group of special forces' members rushed in together, but were shocked by the scene.

The police officer that was disarmed by me stared at the frozen corpses of the Failed Artificials. He was extremely shocked as he stuttered, “These.....these are the killing machines which Blood Scythe are raising.....The legendary Artificials?”

I smiled softly, and patted his shoulder, “Brother, no need to be shocked. The thing that will make you more surprised is that.....Your immediate superior had ordered you to protect the ones that were destroying the corpses. I am afraid he doesn't have clean hands.....”

I scanned the frozen bodies on the ground, and as I checked one by one,

I finally found a handsome young man from within these corpses. He was around 22 years old, and had been dead for quite some time. A tag was strung around his neck. On the tag, Qing Meng was written clearly. Plus, his face was identical with the picture I had seen. The corpse of Rainy's brother had been found.

I felt pain in my heart. Rainy was still imagining that her brother was alright. How should I tell her the truth?

"Everyone, take the packages. Check for bombs, and return after you all have finished checking!"

"Yes!"

The two cars slowly set off along the road. The corpses of the Artificials had been handed over to the other team to deal with.

Within the base, the corpses had been stored in rows.

Shen Bing stared at Qin Meng's body and her brow furrowed, "How should we tell Rainy?"

While my heart felt heavy, I took out my phone and called Wolf, "Wolf, bring Rainy out here. Catch a cab to Xi Hu District 1087 on Third Road. Someone will lead you guys in here."

Wolf asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, What's the matter?"

"Don't ask. Just bring Rainy here."

"Okay!"

Soon, through the guidance of two Guardian team members, Wolf and Rainy went into the storeroom together. As she saw my uniform, Rainy paused for a second and asked, "Boss, why

..... are you dressed like this?"

I put my hand on her shoulder and answered, "Cause I am a police officer..... Rainy, your brother has already..... but you can still see him once....."

"What?"

Rainy shuddered and tears fell down her eyes as she cried, “No. No..... Why would brother leave me? Brother..... Brother. Sniff. Sniff.....”

Shen Bing pulled open an ice locker, and Qin Meng’s body laid in there quietly. He still had the same appearance.

Seeing this, Rainy immediately cried her heart out. She threw herself onto her brother’s corpse and held her brother’s face. Overwhelmed by grief, she cried fiercely, “Brother, brother, What’s wrong..... Brother, I am Little Rain. Brother, please talk to me.....”

Standing behind Rainy, I whispered, “Your brother was murdered. Although I do not know who did this, I will catch him, and let him pay with his life.....Little Rain, though your brother is no longer here, [Zhan Long] will be your new home. I will take care of your future living expenses, and other things. As long as [Zhan Long] is here, as long as I, Li Xiao Yao, am alive, you will never be mistreated again!”

Rainy turned around to face me. Her face had turned purple from the cold in the morgue while she leapt into my arms and wailed, “Boss, Boss!! Brother is such a good person. Why did they kill him? Why did they kill him? What should I do in the future..... Boss, I.....”

While she was still crying, she glanced back at Qin Meng’s corpse, and tears flowed uncontrollably.

Shen Bing stood there as her eyes reddened, and she turned around to wipe her tears.

I stood there without a word, while Wolf patted Rainy’s shoulder and comforted her, “Little Rain, trust in brother Xiao Yao. He has the strength to get revenge for your brother. He definitely can.....”

Chapter 420: The First Yang Yan Master

“Seal up and store all these corpses. They can be used as evidence when we charge Blood Scythe in the future.”

Wang Xin glanced at Rainy's back, and spoke with a trembling voice, “Poor little girl. Wei Fan, that son of a bitch! His hands are covered in blood. If he continues to do as he likes, God knows how many other people will be devastated like Rainy. Each person that Blood Scythe kills not only causes more blood to flow, but also more tears.....”

Sitting on the windowsill, I sighed quietly and asked, “We really can't make a move directly against Wei Fan? Captain Wang, it'll only take one word from you for Shen Bing to find Wei Fan's lodgings, after that I can bring Wei Fan's dog head to you tomorrow morning!”

Wang Xin shook his head with an agonized expression as he responded, “It's not as simple as you think. We..... we are a military formation, and must comply with our fundamental principles. If we break our own rules, what's the difference between us and Wei Fan, that animal?”

I leaned onto the window and closed my eyes, “There is no criterion in my world. Sigh.....”

Wang Xin stared at me deeply and said, “Actually, I am also very scared.”

“What are you scared of?” I questioned in surprise.

Wang Xin answered candidly, “I know, you are a wolf. A wolf that can devour everything. I am very grateful, and happy that you are able to serve the Guardian Base. But I am also afraid that I might not be able to control you one day. If so, my injuries might be even worse than my enemy's. Li Xiao Yao, you have an extremely strong power. However, can you, yourself, control it?”

I leapt to the ground lightly, and gave Wang Xin a perfectly straight military salute as I declared in a low voice, “No matter how strong I become in the future, even if I'm stronger than everyone in this world, my

heart will definitely serve under my country and my people!"

Wang Xin laughed and patted my shoulder, "Haha, I like your character. Go back and rest soon. You've worked hard today. Although we didn't catch any of the major figure of Xue Lian, you've at least killed a few Artificials and taken control of their dumping grounds. This is a huge blow to Blood Scythe."

I nodded, "Yeah. Then I am heading back."

"Alright!"

.....

In the Guardian Base's specially prepared car, Wolf and Rainy sat at the back, while I sat in the front passenger seat.

"Rainy." I turned back to glance at a teary-eyed Rainy, and asked, "What's your next plan? Are you going to return to Suzhou or stay in Hangzhou?"

Rainy shook her head and cried, "I don't know. I don't know. Brother is gone.. Sniff. Sniff. If mom knows....."

I took a deep breath and ordered, "Wolf, redraw 200,000RMB from the National Beauty and transfer the money into Rainy's account. At least let her have money to live. Rainy, transfer money to your mom on behalf of your brother. This way, she won't be sad. In addition, Zhan Long is your new home. We will soon establish a game club that belongs to Zhan Long. You can move to Hangzhou when it's done."

Wolf answered, "Yes. I got it, Brother Xiao Yao. Oh. By the way, a real estate company in Hangzhou found me few days ago, saying that they would like to sponsor us to establish Zhan Long's game club."

"Nevermind. I am ashamed to spend the money we earned by bringing up the real estate prices. Let's continue to wait for a new sponsor. If there is really no result, I will contribute money to establish the club, and we can search for investors later."

"Okay. I got it!"

.....

At this moment, my phone suddenly rang. It was Wan Er's number, and I immediately answered—

“Li Xiao Yao, aren't you at school?” Wan Er inquired with a worried tone.

I nodded, “Yeah. I just finished my mission. On my way back now. What's the matter, Wan Er?”

“It's my dad's birthday today, and he's having a small birthday dinner party at the restaurant in Fortune Mountain Villa. Therefore, he asked me to bring you along. I must be there at 7 o'clock at night, so prepare yourself.”

“Okay. Got it.....”

This was part of Wan Er's normal outings, and as her personal bodyguard of course I needed to go. This was beyond question. However, since it is Lin Tian Nan's birthday party, the ones invited must be people of great importance. Yup, I must be well-prepared. At least I cannot embarrass Wan Er.

.....

After I sent Wolf and Rainy back to the studio, I returned to the university. As it was still early, I went online to grind my level. Facing the Firestone Canyon, I grinded my level to 81 while both my [Dou Qi Wall] and [Blade Spin] reached level 6. My [Dou Qi Wall] now increased the physical and magical defense by 120%, while my [Blade Spin] could now initiate 6 consecutive spins to kill. The two skills were abnormally powerful, but used an enormous amount of my mana. Using [Dou Qi Wall] once would use up 420 of my mana, yet I only had a total of 3600 mana. Just a few more times of use, and my mana would be empty. This mana consumption was extraordinarily fierce. Looks like my equipment still need upgrades. During the later stages of the game, there will be Divine Weapons and Epic God Tier Weapons. Equipment that will increase my four stats would be the best! By increasing my strength, endurance, magic and agility, my attack, health, mana and speed would

all increase as well. Otherwise, it would be impossible to break thousands with the strength of one.

I scanned Ba Huang City's level rankings, and saw that I was still in first place while Jian Feng Han was the second. Simple and Yan Zhao Warrior had already reached level 80, and got their fourth advancement. In addition, the players ranked 5-47 were all level 79. F*ck. These players are all at my heels. However, I also predict that there will be scenes of fourth advancement players fighting in the coming future. The numbers of fourth advancement players will also become the main foundation of guilds in battle. Since the new skills are all extremely strong, even the swordsman's skills that I know, the [Flying Sword] and [Dou Qi Armor] are rather imbalanced.

I killed until around 6 o'clock. My stomach was growling, but I had only gained 7% experience of level 81. The road to the next level up still lay over the horizon. Purely relying on killing normal monsters to level was too slow, so I shall wait for the next main city scale server activity!

"Di!"

It was a message from the beautiful little miss, "Hey! You can log off now. Come to the girl's dorm, and pick me up. Dong Cheng won't be going. It's just the two of us today!"

"Okay. Okay. On my way!"

"Alright!"

I signed out, and darted to the girl's dorm at full speed. Lin Wan Er was just heading downstairs. As she walked down, she lifted her cream-colored long dress. She was dressed like a princess today, an innocent and cute little princess. She tied up her long hair, giving her a refreshing feeling. Along with her bright eyes and white teeth, she had amazed me to the point that I froze to stare at her dumbly.

"Hey!"

Wan Er walked in front of me, and hit my chest with her fair arms as she giggled, "Have you seen enough? We should set off, otherwise we will

be late. I'm wearing high heels, so you drive."

"Okay!"

The Audi TT drove slowly out of the campus. Fortune Mountain Villa, an expensive project, was built near Xi Hu. It is basically used to entertain public figures, and foreign friends. But to put it bluntly, there isn't much of an upper class here, just a bunch of political figures, and wealthy people weltering in luxury and pleasure.

At night, 7 o'clock, the sky had darkened, and the headlights of the Audi TT beamed far away. After we drove into Fortune Mountain Villa, we handed the key to the valet to have him park the car. As I walked shoulder to shoulder with Wan Er into the restaurant, the receptionist immediately came up to us, inquiring the room name. Wan Er answered Blue Lagoon, and we were immediately guided to that room. The instant the room's door opened, I was slightly astonished. It was a room with 18 tables, and there were already many people seated, while Lin Tian Nan was among them.

"Wan Er is here!"

Lin Tian Nan stood up and said to some old friends seated at a table with a smile on his face, "This is my daughter, Lin Wan Er. The one that came with her is....err her friend, Li Xiao Yao....."

Immediately, the group of weird uncles seated at the table stared at Wan Er and laughed, "Aiyo, the daughter of Lin's family is growing more and more beautiful each day. But say, how did your daughter grow to look so beautiful while you look like this?"

Lin Tian Nan smiled, and responded to each one of them. He then signaled Wan Er and I to sit beside him. Simultaneously, four bodyguards sat, and drank tea at a corner of the room. Looks like it is an unusual glory for me to be able to sit at this table.

.....

"Are there anymore people coming? If not, let's eat?" Lin Tian Nan smiled and asked.

At this time, a middle-aged man around 40 years old, glowing with health, smiled and interrupted, "Wait, wait. I still have one friend who said he's coming to wish Boss Lin happy birthday!"

"Oh? Who?" Lin Tian Nan asked in surprise.

"He will be here soon. Just wait a moment!"

"Okay!"

A few minutes later, the room door opened again and a black, big dude walked in. He was dressed fully in Louis Vuitton with a big gold chain strung around his neck. He had a crew cut, with two scars on his face. Immediately, Wan Er and I froze for a second as we both thought of how familiar this guy looked. We then realized that this guy was someone that we both know, the guildmaster of [Thousand Burial]—Not Ordinary. At the same time, he is also the Boss behind Blood Scythe!

"This....."

Lin Tian Nan recognized Wei Fan at first sight, and his fists immediately clenched below the table as he knitted his brows and asked, "Old Ding, why didn't you tell me this earlier?"

Yet, Wei Fan only went forward, and saluted with folded hands. A smile was on his face as he said, "Hello, Chairman of Tian Xin Corporation, Lin Tian Nan, Boss Lin. I have wanted to meet you for a long time but there never was a chance. This time, Chief Ding happened to introduce me, giving me this opportunity. This is a small gift from me. I hope you will like it....."

As a bodyguard took the gold-colored gift box from Wei Fan's hand, Lin Tian Nan stood up and grinned courteously, "Oh, it is the CEO of Song Feng Entertainment Company. Hehe, nice to meet you. It is my honor to have you here. Please be seated! Oh, and the one behind you is?"

Behind Wei Fan stood a man around 60 years old, who possessed the outstanding demeanor of an immortal. He was dressed in traditional chinese cloth while his eyes shone brightly. As his eyes swept past, they seemed to have the power to read minds.

“Oh. It’s like this.....”

Wei Fan laughed, and respectfully let the old man behind him into the room as he said, “My bad. My bad. I almost forgot to introduce. This is my old friend, Ou Yang Chuan. He normally doesn’t attend these kind of dinner parties. How should I introduce him... This friend of mine is very special. He doesn’t work for any company. He just likes to travel by foot and be free.....”

Ou Yang Chuan walked upfront, and folded his hands while he smiled and said, “I am Ou Yang Chuan. Thanks CEO Wei for holding me in high regard. Starting today, I will be employed by Song Teng Entertainment Company. To be honest, I am just a doorkeeper. Everyone, there’s no need to think too highly of me, an old fellow. Haha.....”

I remained quiet. My Yi Hai actually couldn’t see Ou Yang Chuan’s level of practice. It could only mean that this person has a higher, and deeper level of practice than me!

.....

Lin Tian Nan’s eyes flashed coldness. Though he was facing the crowds with a smile, but his glances towards me seemed to be asking something.

I looked towards Wei Fan and Ou Yang Chuan, while I placed my hand on top of Wan Er’s fair legs and lifted up three fingers towards Lin Tian Nan. The meaning of this could be understood without any explanation. The central plains* throughout history have only had four big realms of practice, and this person had already reached the third level.

TL Note: Central Plains is how wuxia novels refer to Mainland China
Yang Yan!

Chapter 421: Ou Yang Chuan

Once everyone had taken their respective seat, Lin Tian Nan had the waiters bring out the food, but the atmosphere was still very tense. Lin Tian Nan had invited quite a few military friends, all of whom were braced for battle because each and everyone of them knew who Wei Fan was. He was the boss of Blood Scythe, in other words, he had the most power in the underground world. Actually, Wei Fan was the main target of many Guardians, and now he was sitting right at the same table as them. Clearly, he was relying on Ou Yang Chuan behind him for protection.

Lin Tian Nan's military friends didn't seem to know the strength of the enemy they were facing. They were even ready to pull out their guns. But Lin Tian Nan knew how terrifying a Yang Yan expert was, and immediately signaled them to stop. Otherwise, I'm afraid no one would be able to leave this room alive.

.....

After pouring out a glass of wine*, Lin Tian Nan raised the cup and smiled, "We are fortunate that Chief Wei had the time to come and join us for this meal. Here's a toast to you, Cheers!"

TL Note: Technically, this should be a shot of Chinese Bai Jiu, which ranges from 40-120 proof, in other words, alcohol poisoning.

Drinking it in one gulp, Lin Tian Nan raised the cup once again to indicate the end of his turn*. Wei Fan didn't skip a beat and immediately stood up, and respectfully finished his cup of wine and smiled, "In the past, I've always admired the reputation that you, Chief Lin, has made for yourself. Now that I meet you in person, you are indeed as impressive as the rumors say. Lockheed Martin's center of technology, the founder of Tian Jin Group, you truly are a complicated man...."

TL Note: A Chinese table manner, where a person makes a toast, drinks the wine, and the person being toasted then also stands up and drinks his wine in appreciation.

Lin Tian Nan wryly smiled, “What are you talking about? Compared to the achievements of Chief Wei in the entertainment world, mine are quite insignificant. I’m just a simple weapons merchant. I’m incomparable to you, who can cover half the sky with one hand.”

Wei Fan hesitated, then laughed, “Chief Lin, surely you’re joking. I’m just a modest merchant that follows the law. I haven’t done anything sinful.”

As he said that, Wei Fan looked towards Wan Er, “The little miss Lin can attest to that. She’s Fan Shu City’s number one most beautiful Assassin, Cang Tong, while I’m Ba Huang City’s [Thousand Burial]’s Guild Master, you can even say we’re allies. Recently, I’ve been obsessed with this game, I’ve even been dreaming about it. I don’t have the time to get involved with any dirty work. Little Miss Lin, isn’t that right?”

Wan Er smiled, “I heard that your [Thousand Burial] has been tyrannically reigning over training grounds, maliciously PKing, and all sorts of unfair gaming practices. In the eyes of the Ba Huang City players, you are perhaps the most evil power there....”

Wei Fan was clearly embarrassed. He laughed, “That’s just paying my respective debts. Some people were just looking for problems, so I could only return the favor tenfold. I’m already this old, I can’t just let myself get bullied by the young ones, right?”

Wan Er nodded, “Yes, you’re right.”

Wei Fan glanced at me, “This little brother is Xiao Yao Zi Zai, right? Just as expected... your looks betray your talents in real life, just like in game. Do you still remember how many deaths your [Zhan Long] has brought to the battlefield?”

I lost my smile, “What, did Chief Wei want to clear up those in game debts offline now?”

Wei Fan rubbed his nose, “That’s impossible, I’m not that kind of a person. Besides, you are one of Chief Lin’s guests. I should at least respect him that much. It’s just.... Even if the mountain doesn’t turn, the water will. Sooner or later, I will take revenge for [Thousand Burial]... So [Zhan

Long] better watch out, [Thousand Burial] will come looking for you at any time, and make you regret your past actions..... I am not the type that will seek revenge in real life, so you can at least relax on that part.”

I nodded with a smile, “That’s good. [Zhan Long] will always welcome a battle with you!”

.....

We began to eat. I didn’t drink any wine, instead I only ate the food on the table. After that, I picked out some food for Wan Er to eat. Lin Tian Nan seemed to also agree with this, as he didn’t say anything. After all, I have a close relationship with Wan Er. He can tell as well. With all the spies he had placed around us, it’d be strange if he didn’t know.

After passing the wine around three times, Wei Fan’s face turned red. He raised his cup and stood up, smiling at Lin Tian Nan, “Boss Lin, let me make another toast. I.... I, Wei Fan, have never really admired anyone else, but you, you are the first. Truly. Tian Jin Group’s weapons manufacturing is just too great. Around the entire globe, you’re one of the top manufacturers. I heard that you created an Oracle System that can even rival the Aegis Combat System. All those Americans are freaking out over this, haha.....”

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “It’s nothing. I’m just a merchant, not some gifted man. The one in charge of my company’s technology is the real backbone.”

Wei Fan squinted his eyes, “The weapons that the Tian Jin Group have most recently been creating are nanobullets. These bullets can fuse a tank’s armor together and is the hottest new weapon. I heard that even the “Scientific Strangers” from TV can’t block these. He he, if I may ask a favor.....”

Lin Tian Nan chuckled, “What is it?”

Wei Fan smiled, “It’s like this. I want to buy a stack of nanobullets from you. Hei Hei, I don’t know if that is ok with you.”

Lin Tian Nan coldly laughed, “You want to buy some nanobullets for

personal use? That's against the law. I remember half an hour ago, Chief Wei had said that you were just an average merchant. How did it all suddenly change?"

Wei Fan remained cheery, "This.... you know what I mean. Us organizations, we need some of the real stuff to get people to respect us. Hang Zhou's delinquents are getting more and more rebellious these days. If Chief Lin sells a few boxes of nanobullets to me, then I just need to shoot once or twice, to let those delinquents know that we're living in a technological age, and the time for swords and knives is over...."

Lin Tian Nan wryly smiled, "Give up on it. Unless you have a permit from the government, I will never sell a single bullet to you."

"Hey, Old Lin, you won't even give me this much respect!?" Wei Fan said with a fake smile, "This doesn't sound like something brothers would say. At least give me a few thousand bullets....."

Lin Tian Nan's eyes turned cold, "If I said I wouldn't then I wouldn't. You should be clear of the rules for manufacturing weapons. They definitely cannot be broken."

"Oh?" Wei Fan softly said, "He he, Boss Lin really is an iron chicken. You won't even give a single feather. Hmph, you really don't give any favors. If it's like this....."

"Shua Shua!" Two middle aged military officers stood up, holding their guns to Wei Fan's head. One of them coldly said, "Wei Fan, don't turn down the favors that have already been offered. Who do you think you are? I just don't want to pluck you from Hang Zhou, that's all. Don't you dare threaten Tian Jin Group, or else I'll make sure you don't have a good ending!"

Wei Fan hesitated, "Haha, why are you all pulling out the guns. Everyone should talk peacefully. I was just going to say, even if Old Lin doesn't give me the respect, then he'll still be my Boss. I didn't say anything else....."

The lieutenant general slowly lowered his pistol, his eyes filled with killing intent, "You street thug!"

The other general softly said, "Even if this is a small birthday celebration, there's a military force encircling this place in a one kilometer radius. Wei Fan, if you really think you can use one hand to cover the sky in Hang Zhou, then why don't you try and see, if your head will burst before we fall!"

Wei Fan nodded with a smile, "I got it. It's not like I'm an untactful person..."

Ou Yang Chuan slowly stood up, and pressed his hand on the general's gun with a smile, "Young man, why's your temper so short? Hurry up and put those away. Today, we're all here to celebrate Chief Lin's birthday, why would we need to take out these swords and guns....."

As he was talking, a flame rose from his fingertip. In the next second, the general suddenly let go of his gun with a yelp. The gun's entire barrel had been melted away and dripped onto the table. Anyone could tell that it was because of Ou Yang Chuan....."

.....

"This....." The lieutenant general suddenly stood up. Before he could pull out his gun, the air around him seemed to freeze. It was Ou Yang Chuan again. He managed to control the aura of a top tier Royal Air Expert, and thus in a short time completely stopped anyone else's movements.

Lin Tian Nan sat there, his entire body shaking, but unable to move.

Wan Er immediately looked towards me.

I slowly stood up and raised my cup, "Why doesn't everyone just cool down a little and drink some wine. This was never any kind of big thing. Isn't that right?"

Ou Yang Chuan looked at me, "Oh? This young man is pretty strong...."

I looked at him, and I could feel the edge of Ou Yang Chuan's aura. The pressure from this Yang Yan expert's energy was enough to stop me in my steps. However, I was able to gather up my energy to overcome the pressure. Ou Yang Chuan didn't move an inch as he watched me. A drip of sweat rolled down his nose, but his breath was not as harsh as my own.

It was clear that he hadn't been in the Yang Yan level for long, or else I would've already been forced to the ground.

“Ha ha ha ha....”

Ou Yang Chuan suddenly raised his head and laughed, “The young ones are going to surpass us old geezers... Here, let's drink. Just now, we just had a small misunderstanding. Everyone, please don't think too much about it!”

.....

The tension was released, and Lin Tian Nan gratefully glanced at me. If I hadn't stood up in time, Ou Yang Chuan would've probably continued as he pleased.

I, on the other hand, was feeling a bit of fear. The old geezer had once told me, that before I reached Yang Yan level, I was to never cross swords with a Yang Yan level expert, or else I was practically looking to die. Looked like it truly was the case. I was so scared, my legs felt like jelly, and I weakly sat down on my seat as my face turned green. Wan Er quickly held my hand and softly whispered, “How was it?”

I took a deep breath, “Nerve wrecking, haha....”

“You can still laugh....”

.....

The meal continued. I could faintly hear the generals plotting to kill off Ou Yang Chuan, but they were all stopped by Lin Tian Nan. Everyone here was an important person, and Lin Tian Nan couldn't let any one of them get harmed. After all, he somewhat understood the different levels of Qi training, and he also understood whether or not one would be able to resist an expert like Ou Yang Chuan.

After eating the birthday cake, the dinner was considered to be finished.

Lin Tian Nan went downstairs to wait for his car with four other body guards. I tightly gripped Wan Er's hand, and took her with Lin Tian Nan's team. This way, I would not only be able to protect her, but also protect

Lin Tian Nan.

Only after seeing Lin Tian Nan's car slowly drive out of the garden's parking lot, was I able to relax a little.

After slowly starting up the car, the TT was ready to set off!

“Peng!”

Suddenly, a loud sound came from above. A fiery light appeared from the roof. A person landed on the rooftop!

Ou Yang Chuan's hand was filled with flames, his veins pulsing with a light. He flashed a sinister smile at me, “Li Xiao Yao, why are you leaving in such a hurry? How about you let me send you on your way*?”

TL Note: This is a play on words, it's what you usually say to someone “on their way to death”.

Chapter 422: The Strength of Absolute Power

“This.....”

As I looked at Ou Yang Chuan kneeling on the car roof, I immediately leapt into action. I stepped onto the gas peddle, “Go die!”

However, I did not expect Ou Yang Chuan’s malicious face to be staring back at me. He abruptly raised his arm and his palm filled with a crimson flare as he punched right through the car hood!

“Peng!”

With a loud sound, the Audi TT suddenly stopped moving. Closely afterwards, Ou Yang Chuan roared in anger as his arm became completely surrounded in flames. Just like that, he managed to pull the car’s engine out. Even though the wheels were still turning, without the engine it could only roll to a stop. Then, “Peng!” it exploded.

The moment the car stopped, I immediately opened my palm, and began to gather my Qi. I burst the right car door open, and with a loud voice, I told Wan Er, “Quick, get out of the car! The further you hide, the better!”

However, I myself did not get out of the car. I slammed a palm into the car seat, and my Qi began to move throughout my body as I crashed through the front window. I began swinging my fists, throwing a punch at Ou Yang Chuan’s abdomen.

Ou Yang Chuan didn’t make any attempt to dodge. All he did was smile, and a 30 cm radius circle of Yang Yan energy suddenly appeared from his stomach. This was the legendary Yang Yan Armor. It used life energy, and condensed it into a sheet of armor to protect the user from receiving any damage.

“Peng!”

A heat wave was reflected back at me as my punch went into Ou Yang Chuan’s abdomen. My fist had gone numb from the impact, and caused

Ou Yang Chuan to fly backwards. He lightly landed on his feet and smiled, "Well you bastard, you truly do have a few tricks. No wonder Lin Tian Nan would let you protect his little girl. Too bad, you have to die here today because there's someone here that wants your life!"

Raising both of his arms, Ou Yang Chuan's sleeves were burnt away. As he crossed his arms, and made a stance, the Qi in his body suddenly exploded. His entire body seemed to fly at me like lightning, and used two knife hands to throw energy waves right at me!

Against such a strong attack, I couldn't bluff any longer. I raised my arms in front of my chest, and began to gather my qi as I used Royal Air level strength to block a higher level Yang Yan attack!

"Peng peng!"

I wasn't even able to block the first attack, and the second attack slammed into my shoulder. With an enormous force, it shattered my shoulder blade. And right as Ou Yang Chuan's attack hit me, I lost my balance. My Qi began gathering in my right thigh, and I abruptly kicked at Ou Yang Chuan. It was Flying Swordplay's first strike.

"Pa!"

Unprepared, I connected my kick on Ou Yang Chuan's left side of his chest and he was forced to retreat several steps. I, on the other hand, slid backwards on the stone floor from the enormous impact. I felt as though my shoulder had cracked. Miserably, I sat up on the grass bushes. I shook my arm, making the remnant flame energy fall into the grass.

"Li Xiao Yao.....!!"

Wan Er's eyes immediately turned red. She ran up to me, and suddenly spread out her arms to block for me. Teary-eyed, she shouted at Ou Yang Chuan, "You bastard! You'll have to go through me first to kill him...."

Ou Yang Chuan softly said, "Get out of the way little miss Lin. I can't deal with you...."

Wan Er continued to kneel in front of me. The night breeze blew across the area, and her dress fluttered up. In the light of the fire, it was a

beautiful sight beyond compare. She looked at Ou Yang Chuan without the slightest bit of fear and cried out, "You get out of the way. You.... you leave....."

I miserably crawled up from my spot in the grass, and reached out to Wan Er's fragrant shoulder and softly groaned, "Wan Er, leave this place. Don't become my burden.... Hurry on to the street. The more people, the safer you will be. Go call your dad, and tell him to send out some people to protect you. Ou Yang Chuan's target is me. Hurry up and leave! Don't make me worry about you and be a good girl....."

Wan Er was unwilling. Without looking back, she cried, "I don't want to. Even if it means I'll die, I still want to be with you. I.... I can't run away on my own... I don't want to!!"

I felt a stab of pain in my heart, "Don't make me feel guilty. If you're here, then we'll all die. Go call for some people. Maybe I'll survive until then. Believe in me, I'll last until you come back. Don't waste our time. Hurry up and go. Don't make me think of you as a stupid little girl...."

Wan Er wiped away her tears, then looked back at my injuries. She then turned around, and ran out of the parking lot.

.....

"Hong!"

Flames began to rise. Ou Yang Chuan's martial arts consists of splitting and then bringing the energy back together. It wasn't part of any specific school, and yet he was able to beat me to the point where I had no way of counterattacking solely by relying on his Yang Yan energy. However, Ou Yang Chuan was too overconfident this time, and didn't even try to hide his aura, making it easy for me to use my control over energy.

I slammed a hand against the ground, and flipped up into the air.

"Hong!"

Behind me, a giant stone suddenly shattered. Ou Yang Chuan's attack didn't connect. He immediately chased after me again, his body high up in the sky, and his left leg started to slightly bend. He was getting ready to

drop a kick!

My arms withstood the pressure from above, but it felt as if they were melting. The second my defense fell apart, Ou Yang Chuan kicked me straight in the chest. I heard a “Ka Cha” as my rib cage broke in two. It was incredibly painful.

I forcefully changed my fist to a Palm strike as a whirlwind encircled it. I endured the pain, and swept my left palm past Ou Yang Chuan’s ankle while my right palm struck the Ji Men point* on his right leg. The strike went into his muscles’ deepest layers. Simultaneously, I dropped to the ground, and raised my left leg. With a “Peng” sound, I kicked Ou Yang Chuan’s back and sent him tumbling away.

TLN: An acupuncture point. Somewhere on the inner thigh.

“Peng!”

Embarrassingly, Ou Yang Chuan tumbled several meters. His right leg shuddered until he could not stand firmly while a shocked expression dawned on his face, “What an accurate technique. F*ck! Punk, what’s your relationship with Lin Cheng? This is the Artery Breaking Palm Technique, I have only seen it from him!”

I breathed heavily while the blood on my shoulder had already seeped through my shirt. Almost more than half of my half shirt was dyed by the fresh blood. In addition, due to the string of attacks, my strength decreased drastically. I responded calmly, “Lin Cheng is my teacher. Do you know him?”

A terrifying smile formed at the corner of Ou Yang Chuan’s mouth as he answered, “So you are the old man’s apprentice. I thought an unrestrained lad like him would never take an apprentice. I can tell he must have taught you the Break Artery Palm Technique. He must have really liked you as his apprentice. I will kill you today, and take your life as revenge for what he did years ago!”

He still wasn’t giving up easily.....

I felt a cold tingly sensation in my heart as I panted, while continuing to

concentrate on the intensity of the energy inside my body. I must hang on until Lin Tian Nan brings people back here, otherwise I would definitely die here.

.....

Ou Yang Chuan stood silently on the grass. Suddenly sparks of fire flew up from his palm as he asked, "How is it? Are you prepared to die?"

I remained quiet while surrounding my fist with more energy.

"Hong!"

The smoke from the flames was very terrifying. I sent him a palm of energy. A strike like that could blast Tang Qi away like he was a clay oxen plunging into the sea. But before the power of the Yang Yan level, my strike vanished. Ou Yang Chuan opened his palm, and grasped my throat.

With no hesitation, I drew out an army knife with my right hand, and slashed towards Ou Yang Chuan's neck with lightning speed!

"Pa!"

Unexpectedly, Ou Yang Chuan's right hand suddenly appeared, and grabbed the army knife, melting it in an instant!

My throat was under his control; I gnashed my teeth, and released the knife handle to grab Ou Yang Chuan's neck while I smacked his forehead hard once with my head!

"Peng!"

Feeling dizzy, Ou Yang Chuan released me, and staggered several steps backwards. Even though he was a powerful master with Yang Yan level strength, he was still very old. He would definitely suffer slightly if he had a physical fight with me!

As my left hand skimmed past my waist, I grabbed my M9 pistol. In a flash, I had loaded and cocked my gun. At close range, I fired continuously towards Ou Yang Chuan's body, making, "Bang Bang Bang" sounds, and instantly emptying 15 bullets.

Ou Yang Chuan's body trembled tremendously, yet every wound on his body was under the protection of the Yang Yan Energy. These wounds only caused pain but no harm. The Nano bullets actually couldn't go through his protective flow of air. How strong is the power of a Yang Yan level expert?!

"Die!"

In a big stride Ou Yang Chuan went forward and lifted his palms. He smashed my chest as a "Peng" sound resounded. I immediately tasted sweetness in my throat and spat out blood. My whole body crashed onto a Benz like a cannonball as police sirens started blaring while the Benz almost broke in half. I had no strength left, and a burning pain spread to every part of my body. Every strike that came from Ou Yang Chuan not only wounded me, but even sent his energy into my body, causing substantial "internal damage."

.....

As I stood up slowly, I raised my hand, and pulled out another military knife. I panted loudly and glared at Ou Yang Chuan as my eyes showed no signs of giving in. I exclaimed slowly and distinctly, "You'd best kill me today, otherwise each time you humiliate me, it will only serve to make me stronger!"

"Brat!"

Ou Yang Chuan's arms were suffused with flames as he walked step by step towards me with a sinister smile, "I admit you are an especially gifted one, the likes of which is rarely seen. Unfortunately, you have provoked someone you shouldn't provoke, so you must die today!"

My body trembled involuntarily. With my left hand, I infused the remaining strength of my whole body into the army knife, and a flow of air encircled the sharp blade. This will be my deadliest strike!

"Die!"

Ou Yang Chuan came up towards me, and struck my chest with his metal fist!

“Peng!”

Under the heavy blow, my shirt was almost burned in an instant. I broke a few of my ribs again. As the severe pain coursed through my body, I waved my left arm forcefully, and the military knife swept past Ou Yang Chuan’s chest!

“Kacha!”

Fresh blood splattered. Without his Yang Yan Shield condensed, his chest was sliced. I cut a deep wound measuring at least 30 centimeters. Unfortunately, my strength was greatly reduced, thus I could only cut that deep. Otherwise, I would have definitely cut his heart in two!

.....

“Ah.....”

Feeling the pain, Ou Yang Chuan backed away, and hastily took a deep breath to heal the wound.

At this time, flashes of light suddenly beamed before my eyes, and a few cars drove here speedily. Next, a group of special forces got out of the cars, and pointed their guns at Ou Yang Chuan. I could hear the guns being loaded and cocked.

Lin Tian Nan walked out of the crowd and spoke calmly, “Ou Yang Chuan, I respect you as a senior, so don’t force things into an impasse!”

As soon as Wan Er saw my battered appearance, tears burst out of her eyes as she uttered, “Li Xiao Yao.....”

Facing the aim of about one hundred special force members, a sneer still formed on the corner of Ou Yang Chuan’s mouth as he said, “Lin Tian Nan, You know that if I wanted to kill you or anyone beside you, no one can stop me. Even Li Xiao Yao was not able to compete against me. You guys are nothing to me. However.....I do not want to be hounded anymore. This will be it. Don’t screw around with Blood Scythe, otherwise there will be consequences.

With his hands folded behind his back, Ou Yang Chuan leapt up and

disappeared into the night sky.

Lin Tian Nan clenched his fists and muttered, "This son of a bitch....."

.....

From afar, Wan Er rushed towards me, and helped me up. As her eyes overflowed with tears, she exclaimed while crying, "How are you? Are you alright? Don't scare me....."

I only felt a tremendous pain in my chest while my vision began to blur. Holding onto Wan Er's soft and smooth hand, I squeezed a smile out, "Wan Er, I am alright. I won't die....."

.....

The moment I finished those words, a sense of drowsiness overcame me and I felt dizzy as I lost consciousness. I had no knowledge of the events that happened after I had fainted.

Chapter 423: Pieces of Memory

“Li Xiao Yao.....”

As the morning sun shone lightly, I opened my eyes slowly, and saw a woman more beautiful than a dream. She rocked the cradle slowly, and stared at me with a happy smile at the corner of her mouth, “Quickly grow up so you can protect Mama.....”

I turned my head to look, but only found myself lying in the cradle. I raised my young, tender and tiny hands with all my effort, wanting to touch the woman’s face. Yet, my hands were unable to stretch higher. Instead, I uttered in a squeaky voice.

“Mama, Mama.....”

I widened my eyes, trying as hard as I could to see her more clearly. Was this an illusion or reality?

Suddenly, the images disappeared and the gentle face of the woman disappeared, along with the scenery. A wide, desolate meadow then appeared. I was carrying a bag of broken long swords, and staggering as I walked through the field in the dark of night.

“Bang!”

A gunshot rang out, and flashes lit up the side of the mountain. Right in front of me, one of my teammates collapsed on the ground with a hole through his skull. Blood kept flowing out in a seemingly endless stream. His body twitched involuntarily, but his young soul had already withdrawn rapidly from his body.

“It’s an ambush! Find cover!” Someone shouted loudly.

With lightning speed, everyone dropped into the bushes. Yet, the sounds of gunfire on the mountain rang out incessantly. Every gunshot was accompanied by the loss of a life. I tumbled in the mud, and suddenly leapt up. With my top speed, I dashed towards the faraway forest. As bullets flew past my ears, I raised my hand, and flung the long sword I was grasping!

“Ah.....”

With a groan one of the enemies was killed by my long sword. At this moment, I felt a burning sensation in my arm – I had been shot. I waved my fist and drove it towards the other direction. One by one, I slaughtered the enemy like a trapped beast that fought with a desperate determination. Yet, the sounds of gunfire did not stop. It was only until the end that the sounds finally died down, and the fertile field regained its calmness.

I returned with bloodstains all over me, only to see my buddies lying dead in a pool of blood. They had been aiming and searching for the ambush spot, yet all of them were killed as easily as oxen were slaughtered.

“Ahhhhhh.....”

My long sword dropped to the ground as I lifted my head and roared furiously. The lightning tore the earth, and heavy rain poured down. The icy cold rain pattered on my face; no one cared about my agony and pain, and no one understood the grief of losing a brother. I held Tian Tong’s corpse in my arms, and I felt his warmth disperse as sadness and rage filled my heart.

.....

“Ah.....”

I suddenly woke up. My whole body started trembling while the dreadful scene of Tian Tong’s body being shot several times to the point that it was almost mashed, danced through my mind. I clenched my fist, and sat up straight on the sickbed while uttering with a lump in my throat, “I..... I.....”

Beside me, a pretty little beauty sat there. As soon as she saw that I was awake, she immediately leapt into my arms and cried furiously. Yet, not a word was spoken.

My body also trembled. My mind was filled with pieces of my memories. The scenes that I had almost forgotten, or the scenes that I had never

remembered, lingered. Until the moment I raised my hands to hug the girl in my arms, I didn't realize that I had returned to reality. Wan Er couldn't stop crying, and her tears rapidly wet my shoulder.

“Wan Er.....”

I held her, and caressed her back softly, “I'm awake. It's alright. It's alright.....”

Wan Er's delicate shoulders quivered continuously as she spoke with tears in her eyes, “Do you know how long have you been unconscious? Three days, three whole days. Everyone thought you wouldn't wake up again. Sniff. If you had left, we..... we.....”

“Three days?”

I asked in surprise. Wan Er left my arms, and answered with red puffy eyes, “Yes.....”

On the side, Shen Bing, wearing a white doctor's uniform, also answered, “Yeah. For three whole days. We didn't expect that this battle would injure you this badly. That..... that Ou Yang Chuan, who is he?”

I glanced at the bandage on my arm and shoulder and replied, “He is an existence that is equal to God, but don't bother. In this world, there are not many people like this. However, I did not expect that such an unearthly professional would participate in earthly battles, and even become Wei Fan's watchdog. This thing is getting more difficult..... “

Shen Bing agreed, “It is getting more and more difficult. Captain Wang has been overwrought. If you didn't wake up, I think Captain Wang would've had a mental breakdown!”

“Pa!”

The door of the sick room was pushed open abruptly. Wang Xin rushed in with a few Guardian Team members. With a worried face, he came up, and hugged me while grinning excitedly, “Li Xiao Yao! Li Xiao Yao! You finally woke up. How do you feel coming back from the jaws of death?”

Feeling speechless, I answered, “Alright. Leader Wang, don't hug so

tightly. My wounds hurt.....”

“Ahhhh, sorry.....”

Wang Xin hastily released me while Shen Bing chuckled and said, “Captain Wang, you are really not the romantic type. You came up and immediately squeezed Li Xiao Yao’s girlfriend away. What was this thing that you did?”

Lin Wan Er’s face reddened in an instant as she stammered, “I, I.....”

I didn’t speak, but stretched my hand to hold Wan Er’s hand lightly, while she consented tacitly. Looking at the surroundings, I inquired, “Where is this place? It seems like there isn’t even any sunlight.....”

Shen Bing answered, “This is the recuperating room in our base. You just never came here before. Err..... The Lin family’s Missy was so worried about you. Your relationship with her must not be as simple as an employer and an employee.....”

“What do you mean?” I was slightly puzzled.

Shen Bing chuckled, “During the three days you were unconscious, Miss Lin also guarded you for three days, and never moved a step from you. Lin Tian Nan couldn’t take her away even after trying many times. He was almost going to bring people to take her away forcefully. Fortunately, you regained consciousness.”

I gazed toward Wan Er; her face had turned even redder as she lowered, “I.....I was just worried that you might die.....”

“Why would I die.....”

“Well, what if you did? That Ou Yang Chuan was so ferocious and scared me to death.....”

“Alright. It’s over now.....”

I opened my hand and flashed a smile. Wan Er’s face was red, but she did not say anything. She drew closer to my chest and whispered in my ear, “Dad sent a bodyguard to hide in the surroundings, you aren’t even scared that he might kill you...”

I couldn't help but smile, and turned my head to give her a kiss on her rosy cheeks, "It's alright. If he dared to kill me, I will fight with him and elope with you....."

"Cough Cough....." Shen Bing uttered with a helpless expression on her face, "Do you really have to be so melodramatic. There are still people here, you know? Sigh, My heart is so hurt. The fellow that I had a crush on for five to six years got taken by a missy this way....."

Wan Er hastily left my embrace, and stuck out her tongue, and smiled while explaining, "Nah. I am just too concerned about him...."

"Explaining is hiding." Wang Xin said while holding up a cup of tea.

Wan Er responded, "Alright, then I won't explain....."

"Then you admit it. I will tell your dad next time....." Wang Xin continued saying calmly.

Wan Er stood up abruptly and pointed at Wang Xin as she exclaimed, "You..You..You..You are a big bully. How could Li Xiao Yao work under you, a bad egg. Humph! I am going to tell grandpa!"

"Grandpa?" Wang Xin asked in surprise, "Who's her grandpa?"

Shen Bing wrapped her arms around her chest, pushing her breasts up as she smiled and answered, "If I remember correctly, there's a general called Lin Yuan Shan at the Lan Zhou Military District. I checked his profile before; he has only one son named Lin Tian Nan and a granddaughter named Lin Wan Er..... If there wasn't this general grandpa, why do you think the Tian Xin Corporation could get to work with the military this smoothly?"

Wang Xin shuddered and immediately showed a gratifying smile as he said to Wan Er in a flattering manner, "Miss, what would you like to eat this afternoon? Would you like SiChuan food or HuNan cuisine? The food that comes out from the kitchen in our Guardian base is unique and awesome. Do say your request, and I will immediately instruct people to cook it for you....."

Lin Wan Er curled her lip and replied, "Now you know who you are

talking to. Don't ask me what I want to eat. Ask Li Xiao Yao what he wants to eat.....”

I lifted my head and said, “Now that you say that, I am starving to death.....Just give me everything that you have.....”

Shen Bing interrupted, “Don't. The doctor said you should have a bland diet!”

“No need!”

I waved my arm, and said with a deep voice,”I understand my body more clearly than anyone else. Even though I was wounded deeply, my diet won't affect my injuries. I want HuNan cuisine...I want to eat fish fillet boiled in hot chili oil.....”

With her hand placed on her forehead, Shen Bing said speechlessly, “Really a master that is not afraid of death..I will instruct them immediately.”

“Yes!”

.....

The moment Shen Bing left, Wan Er continued to snuggle up to me. Wang Xin coughed and said, “Li Xiao Yao, you also know the things about Wei Fan, right? About Ou Yang Chuan.....”

“Yes. What exactly happened during the three days I was unconscious?”

“Well, not much happened. However.....” Wang Xin paused and continued, “However, we received confirmed information that Wei Fan had arranged Ou Yang Chuan to guard the office building at Blue Water Street, which meant that we are unable to do anything to the Xue Lian gang at Blue Water Street. With Ou Yang Chuan, this demon, we would be seeking death no matter how many people we send!”

I twitched my mouth and exclaimed,”Easy! Just make a request to Nanjing military district, and ask them to send 8 SU-27 jet fighters with a bunch of heavy bombs loaded. Just bomb the whole Blue Water Street. I don't believe that Ou Yang Chuan won't die after this.....”

Wang Xin glared and asked, "Practitioners of such a level are as strong as monsters. What if he isn't killed by the bombs?"

I grinned, "Then get SU-27 to carry a heavy nuclear bomb. One down, and everything will be wiped out."

Wang Xin pounded the table and stood up, "Punk, I'm talking to you about a serious matter, and here you are making fun of me! Quick tell us, what should we do? Ou Yang Chuan's appearance has bewildered me....."

I pondered and answered, "Nano bullets couldn't pass through the protective air of a Yang Yan level Practitioner. You should contact Tian Xin Corporation, and have them increase the fusing temperature of the bullethead. That might be effective.....Anyway, before we make any breakthrough progress, let's pause the investigation of Blood Scythe. It's too dangerous. Sending people there is totally sending them to their grave....."

"Ya, Alright....."

.....

During the afternoon, I sat on the wheelchair while Wan Er pushed me forward gently. We strolled in the Base's garden. During the autumn days, falling leaves danced lightly as the colors gave off the faint fragrance of flowers.

I looked up at her and smiled, "Wan Er, they said you are my girlfriend. What should we do about this?"

Wan Er face turned red, and she gaze towards the sky and asked,"Erm.. what are you saying? Why can't I understand. Are you full?"

"Yup!"

"Is the fish fillet boiled in hot chili oil delicious?"

"Delicious. Yes,yes!"

"Sigh. Idiot, you got sidetracked so easily....."

"I....."

I pounded my legs with unutterable sadness as this impulse of not wanting to live filled me.

Behind me, Wan Er let out a laugh that sounded like silver bells and exclaimed, "You are a pig"

I was speechless.

Chapter 424: The Warring States Period

For the next five days, I stayed at HQ. This time, my injuries were just too great. I broke quite a few bones in my chest, legs, and arms. On top of that, it wasn't easy getting the Yang Yan expert's flame energy out of my body. I had to bathe in an ice bath every day, and heal the wounds from the outside. That way, I could slowly force the energy out.

Ou Yang Chuan didn't seem to make any moves in those five days. Wang Xing made sure to observe this person very closely. Even though he wasn't going to make any moves that would inadvertently alert the enemy, he wasn't going to let him roam freely. However, based on my guess, Ou Yang Chuan is just a way to put Wei Fan's mind at ease. With him at the Blood Scythe base on Blue Water Street, we Guardians can't go and ruin his operations there.

Naturally, I had to set game matters aside for a while. I had not logged on for 8 whole days. Apparently, my first place in Ba Huang City had already gone to someone else.... Little Wolf, Old K, and Matcha all wanted to see me, but I only thanked them and denied it. The Guardian's HQ location needed to be kept secret. Only someone with a special identity like Wan Er can come here often.

.....

It wasn't until the eighth day that I was able to freely walk around. I put on a robe from Wang Xin, and walked out of the recovery room. My body seemed to have recovered to its full potential. On top of that, the recovery of my rib bones was far faster than Shen Bing and Wang Xin's original diagnosis. In a short five days, my rib cage managed to completely recover. Top tier practitioners could easily do this. A Royal Air physique isn't just a little better than the average person's, the durability and function of our muscles, bones, veins, and organs are as different as heaven and earth.

“Ka cha!”

The front door opened up, and a ray of sunlight shone onto my face. I

took a deep breath and, enjoyed the moment.

Beside me, Wan Er carried a small purse and smiled, "Let's go, I switched to a different car...."

It wasn't until this that I thought of how Wan Er's TT had been decimated. Apologetically, I said, "I'm sorry, when I was fighting with Ou Yang Chuan, our attacks were too strong, thus we destroyed your car...."

"That's nothing...." Wan Er pouted, "You guys also smashed up a Benz. My dad covered all of the expenses. On top of that, my dad gave me a new car. Come come, let me show you...."

"Eh, ok...."

Wan Er grabbed my hand, and ran to the parking lot. Astonished, I saw a white BMW760 parked in a spot. When Wan Er fished out the key, the car lights had already lit up.

I pursed my lips, "Rich man, let's be friends, ok...."

Wan Er grinned, "Go drive. Why say stupid things.... Dong Cheng's still waiting for us to eat lunch with her...."

"Ok...."

.....

After getting in the car, I sat in the driver's seat. Compared to the TT, this BMW 7 series seemed to have a lot more space. On top of that, it was extremely quiet. I slowly backed out of the spot and drove off. When we arrived at Liu Hua University, it was already 12 o'clock. Dong Cheng stood at the school gates, wearing a light green miniskirt. Seductively, she tapped the car window, "Handsome, wanna take me for a ride...."

I nodded, "What are you going to give in return?"

"Smooches or pa pa pa, whatever you want...."

I hit my head against the wheel, "I can't keep this up Dong Cheng. Get in the car, I want to grind levels soon!"

"Alright alright. I just happen to have some presents for you!"

“Oh? What presents?”

“Eh....” Dong Cheng got into the car, then grinned, “A pure gold Tiger Talisman. It’s an item for accepting an SSS tier main quest. The only problem is that it’s considered Ba Huang City’s quest, and a maximum of 10 people can take it. I got it three days ago, but I haven’t been able to use it. I’ve been waiting for you and Wan Er to come back, so we can do the quest together!”

Excited, “Ok ok! Just in time, my level has fallen behind a lot. I’ll just use your SSS tier main quest to level up. Don’t worry, even though my level isn’t at the top right now, my stats can make up for it!”

“I got it already. Just pay attention to your driving, you almost ran over a person. Wu, isn’t that Tang Qi that idiot....”

It really was. Tang Qi dashed away to dodge the car. Indignant, he glared at the seven series, “Hmph, you f*cking richman, just you wait. Sooner or later, I’ll buy a seven series too. No, I’ll buy a Bugatti, and scare the sh*t out of you!”

I laughed and sped towards the parking lot.

At noon, I ate lunch with the two girls. Feeling refreshed, I returned to the dorm, and was about to get online and grind while raising my new and old skills to Lv 9. The greatest advantage of a fourth advancement player wasn’t the new skills, but the fact that all of their skills can be raised to Lv 9, increasing the power to a whole new level!

.....

“Shua!”

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City, my body clothed entirely in armor with my Cold Iron Sword and Emperor Qin’s Sword on my back. I opened up the ranking list immediately. Sure enough, after eight days of being inactive, I wasn’t first place in Ba Huang City anymore....

Jian Feng Han [Level 83] Job: Swordsman

2. Simple [Level 83] Job: Mage

3. Yan Zhao Warrior [Level 82] Job: Swordsman
4. General Li Mu [Level 82] Job: Swordsman
5. Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Level 81] Job: Dragon City Nightwatch
6. Yue Qing Qian [Level 81] Job: Assassin
7. Misty Clouds [Level 81] Job: Four Divine Symbols Guardian
8. Drunken Spear [Level 81] Job: Nature's Knight
9. Han Bei Song [Level 81] Job: Swordsman
10. Hero Ran Min [Level 81] Job: Berserker

.....

Fuck. It's fine if I'm not first, but to drop to fifth place? And there's as many as 21 other players that are Lv 81. This is too close.

I went online and the Guild Master icon in the guild list lit up. As a result, there was an uproar in the guild.

Qing Qian excitedly said, "I....I'm not seeing things right? Brother Xiao Yao is actually online? Wow. Brother Xiao Yao is finally online!"

Li Mu joined in as well, "Guild Master. I heard you were injured. You were gone for eight days. Are you alright?"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands asked as well, "Guild Master, are you alright?"

Old K chirped in too, "Little Li, how are you feeling?"

Seeing that everyone was concerned, I couldn't help but smile, "I'm doing well. I can eat and sleep normally now. I've basically almost recovered. I should thank you guys for your hard work while I was gone. Wow... There's already ten thousand people in the guild. And the average level is 77.3! Good! Very Good....."

Matcha smiled, "Boss, while you weren't here, everyone has worked very hard....."

I nodded, "Mhm. [Zhan Long] will forever remember everyone's hard

work. How many fourth advancement players do we have right now?”

Qing Qian replied, “I’ve already counted. There are 1449 fourth advancement players in Ba Huang City. [Zhan Long] has a total of 214 Lv 80 and fourth advancement players.

“Not bad. Hehe.” I laughed. “Okay, I won’t chat any longer. I’m gonna go level up. Let me catch up in level first and then we can chat. God damn. Jian Feng Han and Simple are already two levels ahead of me.

“Work hard brother Xiao Yao!”

.....

After closing the guild chat, Dong Cheng sent a party invitation over. I immediately joined the party. Dong Cheng, Wan Er, and I were the only ones in the party. It seems like they haven’t decided on the other members yet. In the party chat we began to discuss our plans.

Wan Er started the discussion, “As you all know, a SSS tier quest is very hard. We need to get some strong party members for it.”

Dong Cheng replied, “How about Healers? We need at least two....”

I thought about it and replied, “It’s better if the members are all from [Zhan Long]. We shouldn’t let our fertile water flow into another’s field. As for a Healer, we can have Darling Duck and also Thousand League Spring. Oh..... I forgot, Thousand League Spring is our Zhan Long’s number two Healer. She’s a 20 year old schoolgirl. Her healing senses are on point. She’s not much worse than Darling Duck if not the same.”

Wan Er smiled, “That sounds good. With us three, that’s five people. We need five more. I’m thinking that we need a DPS, a mob control, and a tank.

I thought about it for a second, “For our main tank, we can use Matcha. With her level, equipment, and skills, she should be perfect. She should have the normal skills for a fourth advancement knight meaning she has [Justice Provocation] which will force the enemy to herself, lasting for 7 seconds. On top of that, it’ll greatly increase the user’s defense. [Fierce Ram] rams into a target that is 10 yards away, and has a 70% probability

of interrupting a skill. These all strengthen our party, and make her a first choice for main tank.

Dong Cheng smiled, “Yeah Yeah. That little girlfriend of yours in the studio. Everyone knows. Just bring her along. Who else? We still need some DPS.....”

“Dancing Forest to control the mobs, and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands for magic attacks. There’s two spots left, and I recommend Little Wolf and Li Mu. Little Wolf pretty much mastered the Assassin class, and Li Mu can fight; Li Mu is basically a tank and a DPS combined.

Wan Er couldn’t help but smile, “Okay. You suggested all these people from your guild but not that little melon sister*. This isn’t normal.....”

*Tl Note: referring to Qing Qian

I had nothing to say, “A total of ten people. It’s normal if I didn’t get to Qing Qian. I can’t be picking favorites. Besides, if I didn’t bring Little Wolf for the quest, he won’t see me as a brother anymore.....”

“Haha. Okay. Get them over here. When we all meet we’ll start the quest!”

“Okay!”

.....

In just a short while, all ten people joined the party. Dancing Forest, Little Wolf, Li Mu and the others were all confused. They didn’t know what was happening. Dong Cheng revealed a mysterious smile, “In just a bit, we’ll be starting Ba Huang City’s Nth SSS tier quest. Just wait a bit. Wan Er and I’ll be over in around twenty minutes.”

“Okay!”

I brought the seven Zhan Long members to wait for them to the Northern Gate. Twenty minutes later, the two beauties arrived in Ba Huang City. Holding the golden tiger talisman in her hands, Dong Cheng who was wearing a long robe that showed off her long legs smiled, “Since everyone is here, we should start the quest immediately.”

“Yeah.” I nodded.

Dong Cheng activated the tiger talisman, and a bright light pierced the sky.

Ding!

System Notice: You have accepted the SSS Tier Quest [Warring States Period]

Quest Information: Bring the Tiger Talisman to the City Lord of Ba Huang City, Luo Lei. Once he sees this, he will naturally know what happened.

Chapter 425: Grave of the Warring States

“Eh, go talk with the Ba Huang City Duke....”

Dong Cheng held up the Tiger Talisman and pouted, “I don’t know what kind of poignant story this will bring out.... but, with a Tiger Talisman, it should be related to wars right?”

TL Note: Tiger Talisman’s represented control over the army in Ancient China. Whoever has the Tiger Talisman, can command the army at will

I opened up my palm, “Come on Dong Cheng, give the Tiger Talisman to me. I’m pretty familiar with Ba Huang City’s Duke. Maybe if I get the quest, we’ll get something extra.”

“Ok Ok.”

Once the Tiger Talisman was in my hands, and Wan Er made me the party leader, everyone had a mutual understanding. I was the Guild Master of [Zhan Long] so I should be the party leader. Besides, all nine of the people in the party were close friends, so there was no need to be polite.

Everyone went through the plaza, and ran straight to the castle. Right after the Battle of Fort Zi Feng, Ba Huang City revived 80% of their NPC armies. Once again, the horses and soldiers were a plenty. One group of sentries were clothed completely in silver armor, and stood in front of the castle. Once they saw all of us coming, one of them immediately raised his sword, “Who are you. Don’t cause a ruckus here. If you want to get the approval for a Guild Prestige Battle please turn right, and find an administrator to approve of it. The Duke hasn’t been feeling well lately, and will not meet any guests!”

Wan Er hesitated, and pouted her lower lip, “Hmph, Ba Huang City’s NPC’s are all so arrogant.....”

I smiled and walked up, “I’m looking for Ba Huang City’s Duke Luo Lei. It’s for something extremely important. I have to see him!”

“You are?”

The NPC sentry looked at the Dragon City insignia on my arm and suddenly jolted. He immediately became respectful, "So it was Mr. Dragon City's Guardian. I was impolite. Seeing as you want to meet the Duke, then please enter. The Duke is currently in the office discussing some important matters about the Barbarian Tribes. Please come in!"

I nodded, and took Wan Er's hand in my own and stepped onto the steps of the castle. Wan Er indignantly pouted again, "Hmph. Mr. Dragon City Guardian. Such prestige...."

I couldn't help but lose my smile, "Little miss, don't make fun of me, please and thank you...."

Wan Er grinned, "Alright already. Go see the Duke. Time is precious. We need to try and finish this quest within the next 48 hours."

"Ok ok. Let's go!"

.....

I took the group of people and ran into the castle. Just as the guard had said, Luo Lei had his royal guard, and was standing in the great hall. He stared deeply into the eyes of the officials that stood before him and roared, "The Barbarian Tribes are deep within the Eastern Sea Mountains, on a small island. Even though it's rather remote, it has time and time again been invading my borders. Therefore, I will not show them mercy. In the next few days, prepare our troops to set out and suppress the Barbarian Tribes in the Eastern Mountains. Does anyone dare to question my order?"

All of the officials were silenced by this. After half a minute one of the officials stood up. It was the Fierce Tiger Army's commander Lachlan. He was carrying his battle axe over his shoulder as he respectfully said, "My king, I myself am a Barbarian, and I came from the tribes in the Eastern Mountains. On top of that, my injuries from the Battle of Fort Zi Feng have yet to fully recover. Therefore, your general cannot fight in this battle for my king."

Luo Lei nodded, "General Lachlan, I understand your difficulties. Fierce Tiger army can rest, and is not held to this command!"

“My King, thank you for your consideration!”

Among the people, another person stood up. It was the commander of Desolate Dragon, Forgotten Sea. He softly said, “Desolate Dragon lost too many soldiers at the Battle of Fort Zi Feng, and is not ready for battle. On top of that, the injuries of our generals have yet to fully recover. I also hope that my king will show mercy....”

Luo Lei’s eyes turned cold for a second. He then smiled, “I understand. General Forgotten Sea, go recover your injuries then!”

After that, Luo Lin who stood next to Luo Lei couldn’t help himself. He walked up to the throne and said, “If it must be. My Royal Father, why don’t you have me, your son, take the Desolate Cloud and Imperial Defense armies to clean up these rebellions. There’s almost a total of 10,000 men in these two armies, and is more than enough to stomp down this mountain!”

Luo Lei furrowed his brow, “Lin, you’re the king of Dragon City. You’re just under Ba Huang City’s command for the moment. Are you sure this is ok?”

Luo Lin, “Then, can you still fight?”

Finally, the beautiful princess that stood at the side of the room couldn’t stand anymore either. Angela gripped her Destroyer, and walked out of the line and said, “Royal Father, there’s no need to discuss any further. Your daughter is willing to lead her Blizzard Wind Army to fight. Blizzard Wind was able to stay rather unharmed comparatively, and my injuries have completely healed. I’ll take this as a chance to train myself. I don’t want people to see me as a frail royal highness. I’ll use this as an opportunity to shut them up!”

Luo Lei became excited, “Good. I’ve been waiting for you to say this. Then you’ll be the one to go out to battle. Angela, this battle isn’t just about the pride of Ba Huang City, but also the pride of the Moon Elf Tribe!”

“I understand. Thank you father for fulfilling my wish! I’ll go now to prepare my army. Can you prepare an itinerary and some supplies for my

army?”

“Yes, godspeed!”

.....

Angela turned around and brushed past my shoulder. At the same time, she glanced at me with a surprised look, and then gave me a beautiful smile and nod.

Wan Er’s eyes widened. She looked at me, then looked at Angela’s receding figure and said, “Eh.... she just.... was she flirting with you?”

Shocked I replied, “It definitely wasn’t. You’re way too sensitive!”

“Hmph. If I find out it was, then you’re dead. You even dare to try and pick up Ba Huang City’s princess? Aren’t you getting more and more daring....”

“Watch what you say, am I really that kind of person.....”

“Hurry up and get the quest, pig.....”

“Alright!”

I majestically walked forward, the army talisman in my hand. I walked past the great hall, and caught Luo Lei’s attention. He immediately smiled, “So it was you, the brave adventurer. Why did you come to this great hall today?”

I nodded and raised the Tiger Talisman as I said, “One of my subordinates found this, and so I have brought it over. I wanted to ask my lord, what is this?”

“This....”

Luo Lei glanced at the Tiger Talisman, and suddenly his enormous body trembled, “This.... this is a pre-ancient item. My god, where did you find this? This.... this is the pre-ancient kingdom’s Tiger Talisman. Could it be.... Could it be that these items have reappeared in the human world?”

In a serious tone, I asked, “What exactly is this?”

Luo Lei’s face was troubled. He muttered, “In the pre-ancient times,

China had been split into four or five kingdoms and was torn by war. During that time, Tian Ling City's territory had been split into seven pieces, and they all fought against each other. That period of time has been known as the Warring States Period. Many heroes rose up during that time. Of them, there were four talented princes that recruited the heroes of the world to help them. They were extremely popular for a time, and were known as the "Four Noblemen of the Warring States". Then, when the wars came to an end, the four noblemen died with the heroes they commanded, and their bodies have thus been buried deep in the earth. After the Battle of Gods and Demons, their souls have begun to stir and do not want to suffer from the flames of hell any longer. Once their seals are broken, they will appear on this earth once again. Possibly leading to a massacre"

I was astonished, "The Four Nobleman of the Warring States? Damn, is it Xing Lin Jun, Ping Yuan Jun, Meng Chang Jun, and Qun Sheng Jun, those pieces of trash...."

TL Note: These are all historical figures from China's actual Warring States Period

"You actually know of them!" Luo Lei was astonished, "Looks like you are also a well educated person that knows his history well...."

I wryly smiled, "My king, you're exaggerating...."

Luo Lei gripped the Tiger Talisman, then returned it to me, and in a flat voice he said, "Now that the Tiger Talisman has reappeared, the doors of hell have begun to move. Now that it's like this, then I have an extremely dangerous quest to give to you guys. Take this Tiger Talisman, and go North of Ba Huang City, then east of the Forest of Sword Saints. There, you will find a bleak map filled with danger and an unclear future. It has been called the [Grave of the Warring States]. That's where the four noblemen have been buried. Go, and before they completely recover their strength, send them back to hell, or else China will be submerged in war and chaos!"

"Ok!"

I nodded, and immediately received a Quest Notification——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Your quest [Warring States Period] has entered its next stage. Please prepare to head towards the northern part of Ba Huang City to the map “Grave of the Warring States” and find the entrance. Bring with you the Tiger Talisman to be able to enter. You will then meet some extremely powerful pre-ancient generals. Kill all of those generals. On top of that, reseal the souls of the Four Noblemen and stop this peril from surfacing.

I turned around and looked at everyone, “Yup, this quest is pretty clear. Let’s head out then. The Grave of the Warring States awaits!”

“Ok, let’s go!” Li Mu raised his longsword and laughed. “Looks like this quest has to do with the Four Noblemen of the Warring States. He he, our General Family is based off of these famous generals. These four noblemen come from the same place as us, so interesting!”

Little Wolf then said, “The Grave of the Warring States. To be honest, of all of the maps of Ba Huang City, I’ve never heard of that name before....”

I explained, “That’s because we’ve only gone as far west as the Glacial River Valley, and as soth as Green Qilin Valley, or Magic Tracking Forest. This Grave of the Warring States and Forest of Sword Saints are all even further east than the Glacial River Valley map. The monster levels aren’t going to be just average, so we’ll have our fair amount of troubles. This time, our journey can be considered pioneering.....”

Dong Cheng pursed her lips, “Don’t be foolishly brave and we’ll be fine....”

Thousand League Spring widened her eyes, “Eh.... here, we have Guild Master Xiao Yao, Beauty Cang Tong and Beauty Cang Yue. With all these top tier experts, we shouldn’t have too much trouble, right?”

Darling Duck grinned, “That’s hard to say. Let’s head out. We’ll talk when we get there!”

“Ok, ok!”

Our ten person party left Ba Huang City, and passed through Ba Huang Forest. After 30 minutes, we arrived just east of Glacial River Valley. But at the place where the quest was marked on the map, there didn't seem to be the Grave of the Warring States from the legend. There just seemed to be a boundless plain. In there were leaping deer and wild bunnies and a group of Lv 90 wild cattle that looked really strong.

"Huh, this Grave of the Warring States..... Did the quest mark the wrong place?" Wan Er's mouth formed a big "O". It was hard to believe that the map in front of us was the place. After that, she tugged on my arm, "Tell me, where's the Grave of the Warring States?"

I glanced at her, "Why are you so nervous, let's just look around...."

As a result, we looked for ten minutes, but still couldn't find the entrance to the Grave of the Warring States.

Nobody had a clue. Annoyed, Thousand League Spring said, "What's with this?"

Matcha squinted her beautiful eyes, "I think.... we just wait a little longer. Let's wait for the game to turn to night. Maybe this place will change...."

"Oh?"

Slowly, the sun set behind the mountain and night fell. When the last rays of sunlight vanished and stars began to light up the sky, a ray of light began to interweave across the plains. It slowly began to change, revealing a tall Chinese Totem. A weird ball of fire was dancing around the totem in the air!

It actually appeared, the Grave of the Warring States!

Chapter 426: The Soldiers of Chu Kingdom

“Sha sha.....”

I raised my sword, and took Matcha and Li Mu into the bushes. Us three heavy armor types rushed in between rows of ancient totem poles with Dragon Tongue words inscribed on the sides. Screams of agony came from all four directions. On top of that, the sound of a system notification travelled across the horizon, as if to warn us ——

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have entered the dangerous zone [Grave of the Warring States]!

Map Description: Grave of the Warring States, during the pre-ancient Warring States Period this was the burial site of four extremely talented heroes. Not only is this place inhabited with numerous souls of soldiers, but it is also filled with intelligent Spectres. Please be extremely careful. They have been suffering the agonizing flames of hell for over ten thousand years, and their hearts have been filled with vengeance. Once their seals have been released they will bring destruction to the human world.

.....

“Where’s the entrance?” Matcha asked as she inquisitively blinked a few times.

I shook my head, “I still haven’t figured it out. Everyone come over here, and split up to look for the entrance....”

Wan Er lifted her Dragon’s Kiss dagger and passed by my shoulder. She gave me a sweet smile and didn’t say anything, but I could tell that her heart was filled with joy. After the battle with Ou Yang Chuan at Fortune Mountain Villa, the relationship between Wan Er and I was a step closer. Even though our hearts seemed to understand this emotion, neither of us was willing to break the status quo, as we are afraid that once it changes

there will be no way of continuing the relationship.

After looking around, we counted that there was a total of 27 totem poles. In the middle of them all, there was an enormous statue of a Dragon Turtle. But, as if a mountain had moved, the Dragon Turtle's head had vanished, and was replaced by the statue of a hero. This was to display the ferocity of an ancient general. In the hand of the general, was a sword that cut into the earth. On top of that, the blade had two Zhuang* words written on it. I couldn't tell what they said.

*TL Note: A type of ancient calligraphy

"What kind of words are those? Does anyone recognize them?" I asked.

Wan Er shook her head, "I don't..."

Matcha walked up and wiped the dust off of one of the characters. She furrowed her brow and said, "I think..... it means "Eh Lai"...."

"Eh Lai?" Li Mu was shocked. "Isn't Eh Lai a famous general from the Shang Dynasty? Why would he be here? Based on historic texts, the Warring States period didn't come until after the Zhou Dynasty. There's at least several hundred years between the Shang Dynasty and the Warring States Period... There shouldn't be any connection between the two, right?"

I shook my head, "No, there actually is a connection."

Wan Er's jaw dropped, "What connection?"

I thought about it for a second, then said, "I remember... that I read a history book before. In it, it was recorded that the Qin Dynasty's royal family's ancestor is Eh Lai from the Shang Dynasty. In other words, the famous general is the ancestor of Qin Mu Gong, Qin Xiao Gong, and Qin Shi Huang. The fact that Eh Lai's statue is here is without question that he's here to seal the four ghosts of the Four Noblemen. This Grave of the Warring States should have been created by the Qin dynasty, and so they used Eh Lai's soul to seal this grave. Like this, it would easily explain why he was here."

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled: "This I know... Cao Cao once called his

powerful generals Dian Wei, “Ancient Eh Lai.” This proves that Eh Lai was indeed very powerful, right Brother Xiao Yao?”

I nodded and chuckled: “That’s about right, Everybody look closely around the Eh Lai idol. The entrance to the “Grave of the Warring States” should be close by.”

“Yeah!”

The group split off to search for the entrance, while I continuously stabbed the sedimentary ground with my sword. With the sound of “Keng, Keng, Keng”, it allowed me to confirm that the material this place was made of was stone. Then after stabbing for awhile, the Emperor’s Qin Sword suddenly sunk deep into the sediment. Was there a gap or a hole there? That’s weird, Ancient Chinese constructions were more bulky and sturdy than the flimsy and inferior material used currently. There’s no way that there should be a defect similar to that of modern constructions.

I dug out the sediment furiously and rapidly as if I were possessed. Very quickly a 3 cm slot appeared in my vision. I forced the Emperor’s Qin sword into the slot. A “Pu Che” rang out as the sword fit into the slot. I pulled the sword out, and instantly a big piece of stone on the ground slowly moved and rumbled out of the way. There was a blood red glow that shined from a small opening that previously had not been there. Found it!

“Everybody, come over. The entrance has appeared!”

I used my strength to move the big piece of stone further away from the opening. An almost 50 cm wide hole appeared. There were stone steps in the hole that led downwards. I can’t believe this was the entrance to the Grave of Warring States. The Tiger Talisman in my bag buzzed to warn us that danger was close by.

I clapped and said “I’ll go first, you guys wait for my report!”

“Okay. Be careful boss!” Matcha replied with a grin.

I jumped down into the hole. A “Pa” rang out as I landed on top of the steps. I held up my Emperor’s Qin Sword to light up the area. The space

around me was brightly lit up. The stone walls around me were littered with ancient Chinese letters. As I wasn't an archaeologist, I have no interest in these type of things. I'm more interested in the what treasure the Four Noblemen left for us to discover.

Up ahead, there was enchanted horizontal red boundary marker. It was a barrier that blocked the way. Somehow we would need to get past that line to continue on with our quest.

I used the blade of my sword to experiment on it. I lifted the blade towards the marker, and tried to poke through it. But only a "Keng" sound came of it as it couldn't break through the barrier. It was like stabbing into steel. I swung a punch into the barrier, but all that happened was my fist shook with a stinging pain. The Tiger Talisman in my bag started to shine a lot brighter. I dug it out of my bag and pushed it towards the boundary marker. Immediately the barrier parted aside like a wave by the Talisman and we had access to the passageway once again. So that's why Luo Lei had given me the Talisman. The Tiger Talisman was actually the entry ticket. Without the Tiger Talisman, there was no way a person could enter the "Grave of the Warring States". This was a major advantage to us as this meant that we wouldn't have to worry about someone stealing the treasure while we were battling the BOSS.

"Everybody come in!" I said into the group chat.

Very quickly Li Mu, Lin Wan Er, Wolf, and the rest of the group entered into the hole and onto the steps. I just held up the Tiger Talisman and smiled. "Hurry up and enter, I helped open the way for you guys!"

"Great work!..." Lin Wan Er shallowly laughed back. She held the Dragon's Kiss Dagger as she jumped down. She got swallowed up in the darkness as she went down.

Li Mu, Wolf, Matcha and the others followed suit. One by one they went past the area where the borderline marker had been. I was the last one to pass by it. In my hand was the Emperor's Qin Sword that I was still holding up. Unfriendly and blistering winds were blowing against us as powerful growls rang in our ears. The system notification appeared: You

have entered the danger zone a floor below the Grave of the Warring States [The Grave of the Silent Emperor]. Please be extra careful, death is at every corner!

.....

Looking ahead, rows of statues and ancient lanterns were everywhere. This was a vast and mighty underground tomb. The whole area appeared as a spiral formation on the map. There was only one path that went towards the middle. That was probably where the area's Boss, and the entrance to the next floor were. But that also means we will have to kill quite a lot of smaller monsters. That's okay though, an SSS ranked main quest's monsters will give out tons of experience which is very beneficial. The monsters here give about 2 or 3 times more experience than those of the same level that were outside of this quest. This is a great chance to level up as well as well as the perfect chance for me to reclaim the number one rank in Ba Huang City.

"Hou Hou....."

Twenty yards ahead, a shadow at the bottom of one of the Ancient lanterns became distorted. A old and withered Undead Soldier rose up from the shadow. It held a short sword and the armor it was wearing was super rusty. Only a glimpse of it was needed to tell that it couldn't be worn again. The armor was from the Warring States period. The craftsmanship of the armor was a bit awkward, and above the top of its head was a line of words which I had already read.

[Chu Kingdom Soldier] (Phantom Tier Monster)

Level: 90

Attack: 2700-3400

Defense: 2700

Health: 90000

Skills: [Ressurrection] [Heroic Cleave] [Brave Force]

Description: Early Warring States Period Ancient Chu Kingdom's

soldier. These fearless and heroic warriors followed their leader into battle. After tens of thousands of years of slumber, its spirit is consumed by violence and hatred. Once any person enters the grave, they will shred him or her.

.....

“Hou!”

That loud roar confirmed the description. The Chu Kingdom Soldier carried it’s short sword and charged at us. It’s mouth was wide open, showing us it’s rotting teeth as well as its frail body.

“3400 attack, be careful it’s pretty strong....” Dong Cheng Yue said smiling along with her glittering beautiful eyes.

Dancing Forest held her long Bow “This can’t be right, Guild Master is only Lv 81. How come he can find out information of something that is nine levels ahead of him. This is illogical

Lin Wan Er laughed and said “That’s easy, 4th advancement players have some extra hidden skills. This is one of them: the ability to scan information about things that aren’t ten levels higher than yourself.

“Okay that’s why.... Guys, let’s slaughter them!”

Li Mu had already jumped into the battle swing his sword at the enemy. “Pa Pa” as he hit the Chu Kingdom Soldier twice as the monster’s body shook. After all, his enemy was a Lv 90 Phantom Tier monster, he didn’t want to be overconfident. Two damage numbers flew up. This reality proved that the decision to bring Li Mu was a smart one —

“3128 ! ”

“3217 ! ”

Wolf gaped, “Damn, Brother Li Mu’s attack is so powerful!”

Li Mu smirked “it has to be, a Superior Emperor Tier long sword’s attack power isn’t fake.....”

Just when he finished talking, the Chu Kingdom Soldier’s activated it skill [Heroic Cleave] with it’s short sword and it hit Li Mu’s shoulder.

“Keng” as the sound rang out and sparks flew. A very large damage number flew up with it.

“1828 ! ”

“Holy crap.....” Li Mu backed away continuously with stern eyes. “that attack is so strong....”

Wan Er narrowed her beautiful eyes, “The monster has a basic attack strength of 3400. In addition to the level advantage and Phantom Tier bonus, it’s attack strength is at least more than ten thousand. How can you defend against that.....”

I burst into laughter, and I bellowed as I used [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] giving everyone a 40% stat boost to attack and defense. As the [City War Bell] on my arm flashed, I gave everyone another 10% attack and defense bonus. I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and leapt high up as [Wind Blade] drew a beautiful line in the air. It struck the forehead of a soldier of Chu forcefully, causing a huge damage number to fly up—

“6528!”

My Cold Iron sword and Emperor Qin’s Sword slashed four successive times, and the damage numbers all added together totaled more than 5000 points. Seeing this, Li Mu’s eyes widened while his mouth became slightly agape, “Guild Master, can your attack strength be any more shameless.....”

I raised my arm forcefully and blocked the monster’s fierce slash. Immediately, a damage number flew up—

“471 ! ”

Li Mu’ eyes became blank as he asked, “What kind of defense is this? So shameless.....”

Wolf shook his head and said with a smile, “Brother Xiao Yao has 4220 points of base defense. In addition to the 50% bonus added by [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] and the [City War Bell], he has the Fourth Advancement Skill, [Dou Qi Wall] which increases his defense by

120%. The now overall defense of more than ten thousand makes it impossible for him to get hurt.

Li My placed his hand on his forehead and smiled, “Yup. Fortunately, it’s someone on our side. Otherwise, it’s too terrifying to have an opponent like this.....”

Wan Er pouted her lips and said, “It’s not like you never killed one before.....”

Li Mu burst out in laughter, “Cang Tong, please don’t hold grudges. Although we killed each other before, Xiao Yao and I are still good friends.....”

Dong Cheng Yue sighed sadly, “Is another good man gay again? My brother Xiao Yao. Noo.....”

Darling Duck quickly retorted, “Enough, you all. Be more serious when you are killing monsters.....”

Chapter 427: Li Yuan of the Chun Kingdom

The first soldier of the Chu Kingdom was quickly killed, but not a thing was dropped. However, the experience points jumped, and that was enough. The rules of distributing the team's experience had been adjusted. The experience obtained by killing monsters that aren't BOSSes would be divided equally. This is much more impartial. Plus, the goal of this outing was to help everyone level up. Otherwise, it would be unfair for Darling Duck, and Thousand League Spring, the two beauties.

We continued moving deeper while stepping on the corpses of the Soldiers of the Chu Kingdom. In the distance, more and more monsters concentrated, and soon more than 20 soldiers of Chu Kingdom appeared.

Li My took a deep breath and asked, "How should we kill them?"

I responded with a smile, "Don't be nervous. I will attract the monsters and you use [Covering Sword Slash] while Dong Cheng and Wan Er use AOE skills. Try to use just AOE skills to attack, so I can lock the aggro. If the monsters keep attacking me, then there will be no problem....."

"Yes!"

With this, my arm shuddered and with a "Keng" sound, armor condensed from the Dou Qi appeared around me, and circled slowly. This was the effect of the [Wall of Dou Qi]. This skill was really useful as the difference between the effect of being attacked with [Wall of Dou Qi], and without [Wall of Dou Qi] is immeasurably vast. With my incredibly high attack and defense, and the high durability of my [Wall of Dou Qi], there was absolutely no pressure when killing monsters.

"Pa pa....."

My Divine Battle Boots slid across the stone floor as I dashed forward. Twenty-one Chu Kingdom Soldiers all started chasing after me. One of them angrily shouted, "What hole did this little bastard come out of? You actually dare invade Chu Kingdom's border? You looking to die!"

I spun around and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the middle of the crowd. At the same time, I used a [Blade Spin] and let my Cold Iron Sword fly through the air. “Shua Shua Shua” it spun out six times and cut through the crowd. All of the monsters’ health was cut in half. Wan Er’s Dragon Kiss lightly danced, activating [Ice Pick Whirlpool] and Dong Cheng Yue’s [Magma Lance] also activated. Adding on to those were Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot] and Little Wolf’s [10 Way Blade], creating an extremely powerful move that finished off a large group of people.

“Grrr!”

Li Mu stood firm and condensed strength onto his index finger. The long sword immediately floated, and flew out forcefully, as he activated [Flying Sword]. With a “Shua” sound, the sword cut through, and splattered a total damage number of more than 3000 among the swarm of monsters.

“HoHo.....”

Dancing Forest chuckled, “The fourth advancement swordsman’s [Flying Sword] is so cool!”

Li Mu placed his hand on his forehead and smiled, “Indeed, it is very cool. There’s a fourth advancement Swordsman in the First Division who is good at using [Flying Sword], and so he got a seven point beauty. I was so jealous.....”

Wolf asked with a smile, “Brother Li Mu, your [Flying Sword] skill is also very cool, but why are you still single.....”

Wan Er gave a dimpled smile, “Because no matter how cool the [Flying Sword] skill is.... The man himself has to be handsome in order for it to work.....”

Li Mu shuddered, “The beautiful Cang Tong spits out such harsh words. I feel as though I won’t be able to love anymore. I need to sing to express the feelings I have inside my heart right now....”

Wan Er touched her lip, “Oh? What song does this uncle want to sing?”

Li Mu stretched out his neck and sang out, “Lalala, lalala, brought Wan Er back home for both kissing and banging, for the low low price of, not

998, just 9.8!””

TL Note: This is a joke referring to a song that always plays in Chinese commercials

By the end of it, Wan Er’s face was completely red, “You really are looking to die! Li Mu, looks like you don’t want to enter the Hall of Zhan Long....”

Li Mu jolted, “I was wrong, please forgive me. The beauty Cang Tong is the cutest ever....”

I on the other hand, rushed forward and aggro-ed the second wave of monsters over. I glanced at my [Wall of Dou Qi]. After undergoing the chaotic attacks from the monsters, there was still 57% durability left. On top of that, the skill’s cooldown was over. With the 60 second cooldown, even if the monsters were to break through the shield, I can just recast the skill. The only fear I have with this skill is if my opponent were too strong, and can break the shield so fast, and kill me within the 60 seconds. At that point, all would be too late.

.....

Soon, an entire hour passed. I have no idea how many monsters I had killed. Either way, my experience increased by 17%, and Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring had both leveled up.

I continued forward, but suddenly I stopped.

“What’s wrong?” Wan Er softly asked.

I reached out, and pointed at a groove in the wall, “Look.... There seems to be a woman kneeling there. What’s with this situation?”

“A woman?”

“Yup!”

Everyone looked in the direction I was pointing. Indeed, there was a woman whose wrists were chained and suspended to the wall, and her long hair was drooped over her face. She looked as if life had taken everything from her.

I gripped my Emperor Qin Sword, and carefully stepped forward. Wan Er followed close behind and whispered, “Be careful....”

“Ok....”

I knelt down in front of the woman, and reached out to raise her chin. One look, and I was scared shitless. The face had long since deteriorated, and lost all possibility for her beauty to return. All that was left was a few slivers of muscle. However, there still seemed to be some water in her eyeballs. As she looked at me, she immediately revealed an indignant expression, “F*ck off!”

“You.....” I looked at her name, “Mistress Li of the Chu Kingdom”. It wasn’t a monster. The system introduced her as “The sister of Chu Kingdom’s Li Yuan, the mother of the Chu Kingdom’s Silent Emperor” This.... This didn’t seem to make sense.

Li Mu crossed his arms over his sword, “Huh, is the Guild Master planning to pick up a woman halfway through the adventure to bring home as his Ba Huang City mistress?”

I glared, “For someone who looks like this, if you want to take her then you take her. I don’t have such a hardcore taste. Either way, you don’t have a b*tch.....”

“F*ck off, I had lots of girlfriends in my day....”

“And yet you’re still single now....”

“Enough already....”

Wan Er walked up front, “Alright already. Why don’t I ask her!”

As she said that, she knelt down, and her cape spread out on the ground. She looked at Mistress Li of the Chu Kingdom and said, “Mistress, what has happened? Why are you locked up here?”

Li Mistress glared resentfully, “This is all because of those ungrateful males. Without them, how else would I fall to such a miserable fate? I’m the magnificent Dowager of the Chu Kingdom, and to think that I’d have to be subjected to such disgrace. God damnit. I refuse to accept this, I

refuse to accept such a fate!”

Wan Er was puzzled, “Mistress, exactly what fate is it?”

Mistress Li’s face was full of hatred and said, “I’m the sister of the Chu Kingdom’s Li Yuan, and was wed to Huang Ge. After that, when I was pregnant, he actually offered me as a present to King Chu Kao Lie. Once I gave birth to a son, I was immediately made the Queen, and my child would then become the Silent Emperor..... I hate their wiliness, I hate how helpless I am. One day, I will have my revenge!”

I asked, “What revenge?”

Mistress Li gritted her teeth, “Kill Li Yuan, Kill Chun Sheng Jun. I will use their heads as my revenge!”

“Alright.....”

I nodded and immediately took the quest—

System Notification: Your team has accepted the quest [Revenge of Mistress Li]!

Quest Details: Take Mistress Li and kill Li Yuan and Chun Shen Jun. Give their heads to Mistress Li, and you will get an extremely generous reward!

.....

Li Mu excited said, “Damn, you can actually just get a quest like that. Li Xiao Yao and Wan Er are truly godly people....”

I stood up and cut apart the chains holding down Mistress Li. Once she was free of the chains, she floated in the air, and followed close behind me. Looking back at her face gave me a scare. I don’t think my heart can take much more of this.

As we continued forward, we killed another wave of monsters, and finally in the middle stood a man clothed in an embroidered robe. He held a longsword in his hand and stood in the air. In an elegant voice he sang, “Wade against the stream, the road will be long and hard, swim against the current, and drown in the middle...”

Above his head floated a line of words ——

[Li Yuan's Ghost, Level 90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS]. It was one of the BOSSes that we were looking for.

“Shiinnng!”

I pulled my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword out of their sheaths and smiled, “It's just a Valkyrie Tier BOSS, nothing else to say. Prepare to attack. For the sake of this quest, even if Li Yuan's chant is accurate or elegant, we still have to cut off his head!”

Li Yuan's ghost turned around and looked at me. A look of surprise appeared on his face, “Who are you? Why are you trespassing in this mansion? Don't you know that it warrants a death penalty? Security, capture them for me and execute them all!”

Once his words fell, “Hua Cha!”, his chest had been cut by my Cold Iron Sword. The sharp sword spun in the air as I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword to charge forward. I used a [Combo] + [Strength of a Thousand Men] and targeted the BOSS. This isn't the time for me to be scared!

As I expected, Li Yuan's Ghost began a counter attack. With one attack, he was able to cut down 2000+ of my health. This wasn't too much of a problem since we brought along two fourth advancement Healers. Killing this BOSS was no problem!

“Sister!!”

Li Yuan shouted as he fought with me, “Are these people you brought? Why.... why do you want to kill me?”

Mistress Li angrily shouted, “Just so that you could gain power in the Chu Kingdom, you actually dared to use me as a tool, and wed me to Chun Sheng Jun. Then wed me again to the king. Hmph, I'm done with this life of being used by people. I'm the Queen, not some puppet. Only by killing you and Chun Sheng Jun, that heartless bastard, can my soul finally rest!”

Li Yuan was shocked, “Sister, you.... you.....”

Wan Er and Little Wolf both attacked at the same time. With the dance of daggers, Li Yuan's Ghost quickly lost large amounts of health. Soon, he gave an agonizing cry, and I cut off his head. I picked it up, and brought it over to Mistress Li. The quest had been 50% completed.

"Alright, let's continue...."

I looked into the distant dark pathway and smiled, "The next one we kill should be the mythical Chun Shen Jun of the Four Noblemen. He he, all these legendary people.... it's like borrowing a chicken to lay eggs*, oh no, it's borrowing sperm to give to the master It's just too smart...."

TL Note: This is an ancient story that's about a man who borrows a chicken from someone and has it lay eggs to get his own chicken so he can sell those chicken/eggs. It's the idea that he's creating a business at a very low cost. In this case, they used Mistress Li by impregnating her and then marrying her to the king so he has a son.

Wan Er smiled, "Don't joke around, hurry up and move forward...."

"Ok!"

.....

Our group of people continued through the Grave of the Warring States and killed waves of small soldiers. Finally, we made it through the first level. In the distance, an enormous palace appeared. In the middle of the palace, a group of armored generals stood there. They all carried copper halberds and wore golden helmets. This was out of my expectations... Chun Shen Jun was actually a military general?!

Chapter 428: Raid Helmet

[Chun Shen Jin – Huang Xie] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS)

Level: 90

Attack: 3100 – 4200

Defense: 3500

Health: 510000

Skills: [Willful Sweep] [Betraying Tactics] [Dance of Beautiful Women]
[Three Thousand Elders]

Introduction: Chun Shen Jun, the Minister of the Chu Kingdom. An extremely educated recruiter with over 3000 talented elders at his beck and call who he has spread far and wide throughout the region. No one in the Kingdom of Chu can win against his iron spear. After he was backstabbed by Li Yuan, he was unwilling to resign to his fate, so his ghost has been trapped in this place for over ten thousand years. Recently it has begun to stir, as he tries to rise up, and bring the armies of hell to battle the human world.

.....

“Careful....”

Wan Er tightly gripped Dragon’s Kiss, “An SSS tier main quest BOSS’s difficulty is much higher than the ones outside. To start, Li Xiao Yao will be the main tank and attack. Make sure to keep his health up. After that, I and Little Wolf will circle around him. Once we have the chance, we will interrupt the BOSS’s skills. Matcha will follow behind, and when Xiao Yao can’t take it anymore, you’ll use [Justice Provoke] to take some of the hits.”

Everyone nodded. Wan Er was [Hero’s Mound]’s Vice Guild Master, and has killed numerous other BOSS-es. Naturally, her skills in battle control were very strong.

As I held both swords in my hands, I gave a low roar, and activated

[Wall of Dou Qi]. I took my Flaming Tiger God, and rushed into the center of the Hall at Chun Shen Jun. This cruel nobleman was planning on fighting this duel on his own.

As he turned around, Chun Shen Jun's face remained unchanged, and actually carried a youthful shine to it. He angrily shouted, "Where did you little bastards come from? To think that you'd actually dare trespass in my mansion. You're looking for your own death!"

With a jolt of his iron halberd, Chun Shen Jun's ghost also charged at me. Suddenly, he threw an unbelievably fast stab at me!

"3198 ! "

Tsk tsk, even a normal attack can deal 3000 damage on me. Just as Wan Er said, this main quest BOSS's experience and drops will definitely be better than those monsters outside of this map, but the difficulty will also be much higher. To top it off, this was under the condition that I was using [Wall of Dou Qi]. Otherwise I would truly be in danger. That one stab would have given me at least 4000 damage otherwise.

My Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword danced through the air. With one shoulder, I rammed into the BOSS, and knocked away his halberd. My body suddenly got close, and I used both my arms to initiate a chain of five attacks. The autumn breeze blew the leaves up while I cut into the BOSS's chest plate creating sparks—

"3891 ! "

"3724 ! "

"4019 ! "

"4224 ! "

"3918 ! "

.....

Once I had attacked enough times, I managed to lock the aggro on myself. I loosened my left hand, and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out. I had already activated [Blade Spin], and activated [Fierce Ice Blade] + [Wind

Blade] with my right hand's Emperor Qin's Sword!

“5212 ! ”

“5008 ! ”

Chun Shen Jun angrily roared. At the same time his health rapidly dropped, he swept out his halberd. With a single attack, he had just happened to hit me, Matcha and Li Mu!

“3721 ! ”

“4727 ! ”

“5319 ! ”

I fared a bit better than Matcha and Li Mu. Especially Li Mu, with that one attack he had been thrown into the air. A look of shock fell on his face, “F*ck, a Lv 90 Valkyrie Tier BOSS is that strong?”

Wan Er picked up her Dragon's Kiss and used [Absolute Step] to get closer, and used a [Backstab] on Chun Shen Jun's back. Right after that, she used [Twin Blade Harmony]. At that moment, two large damage numbers flew up. They were both critical attacks. The beautiful little miss's critical chance and damage was way too high.

“11244 ! ”

“12382 ! ”

Once her attacks hit, Wan Er immediately retreated backwards so that she wouldn't be caught up with the BOSS. This was a very clever move, and it was the true job of an Assassin. Once the BOSS takes the attack, one must retreat, and never give the BOSS the chance to land an attack.

Li Mu's jaw nearly fell to the floor, “You're kidding right Cang Tong's attack is even higher than Li Xiao Yao? This damage.... it's too much isn't it?”

As I hacked away, I said seriously, “This is real. Wan Er's main dagger's attack is much higher than my own. On top of that, she's an Assassin, so her ability to break through defense is pretty high. Therefore, she has a higher advantage against heavy armor type BOSS-es than I do. She's just

too squishy, so she can't last too long....”

Wan Er pouted her lip and smiled, “I just don't have a shameless skill like [Wall of Dou Qi]....”

As she finished talking, the beautiful little miss ran forward again, and waved her two daggers. She let loose seven attacks, and each one landing more than 3000 damage. This was an Assassin's fourth advancement skill, [Chain Attack]. It has seven attacks, each with 50% of the damage of a normal attack. All in all, it raises the damage by quite a bit.

“Roar!”

Chun Shen Jun angrily roared out. He had been heavily injured, and he spun around as he swept out his spear. Wan Er saw the attack coming, and took her iron umbrella out. “Peng!” she blocked the attack, but slid backwards. At the same time, she raised her snow white arm and threw her Dragon's Kiss. “Shua!” it struck the BOSS. It jumped out and instead of going to find it's next target, it automatically flew back to its owner.

[Flying Dagger], an Assassin's Lv 80 skill. It creates a long range attack on the target and can automatically leap towards the next target, creating numerous hits. It basically is a stronger long range skill for Assassins. With [Flying Dagger], there's no need to chase after a critically wounded opponent. An Assassin just needs to use [Flying Dagger] and kill them.

Chun Shen Jun was about to chase after her. Wan Er decided to just stand and wave out her hand, and cast [Reflect] to buff herself. She smiled, “That's right, come at me”

“Peng!”

When the halberd fell, it was reflected right back at Chun Shen Jun, dealing 5272 damage. Extremely happy, Matcha also raised her shield and rushed forward to stand in front of Wan Er. She activated [Heavenly Shield Wall] and blocked Chun Shen Jun's third attack. Matcha was a Knight with over ten thousand health, there was no way to kill her, especially with [Heavenly Shield Wall].

At this point, my health was full again. I activated [Blade Spin], letting

it cut through Chun Shen Jun's body six times. Finally, I had dragged the aggro back to myself. I raised my hand, and grabbed the spinning Cold Iron Sword. With both swords, I began to hack at the BOSS, and blood began seeping out of his wounds. The scene was too gruesome to look at.

.....

Like this, after 15 minutes, Chun Shen Jun only had 50% of his health left. With a great sweep of his halberd, he yelled out, "[Betraying Tactics]!"

"Shua!"

A crimson glow fell onto Wan Er's head. At that moment, the beautiful little miss widened her eyes at me,

"What?"

In the next moment, Wan Er's pupils suddenly turned red, and she picked up her Dragon's Kiss and rushed at me. She activated [Chain Attack], and threw one slash after another right onto my Magic Spite Armor.

"Wan Er, are you crazy?!"

I immediately retreated, and I raised my Cold Iron Sword and Emperor Qin's Sword to block. "Keng Keng Keng" I blocked the first three attacks, but the last four I had to take head on. In the blink of an eye, I lost 7000+ health!

"Huh?"

Wan Er suddenly stopped, and noticed that she was attacking me, "I.... what happened?"

Matcha yelled out, "It's the [Betraying Tactics] skill. It can make one of us attack another one of us...."

Wan Er's face turned pale, "Such a shameless attack. If I were to accidentally kill Xiao Yao, that bastard wouldn't talk to me again for a month!"

Dong Cheng smiled as she shot icicles, "Xiao Yao wouldn't be that

petty.... that, don't save your God Army Cards, use [Black Tortoise Realm] so you can decrease the BOSS's movements. It's starting to get hard to kill this guy!"

"Ok!"

I waved my hand, and [Black Tortoise Realm] appeared in the great hall. Chun Shen Jun's movements momentarily slowed down. Like this, our pressure decreased quite a bit.

No long after, Chun Shen Jun raised his halberd again and roared out, "Where dem hotties at?"

"Shua shua shua!"

Three incredibly beautiful women descended from the sky, and floated around Chun Shen Jun like mirages. They began to dance in the air. This was the [Dance of the Beauties] skill. It increases all of the enemies' stats by 15%. Tsk tsk, good skill.....

Luckily, Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring had been constantly healing me. Especially with the new fourth advancement skill, [Grip of Compassion], I was even more invincible. With every level of the skill, it adds another 700 health to the heal. The two girls both had Lv 7 skills, and so they could heal at least 4900. In addition, they had buffs from their equipment, and so one [Grip of Compassion] was more than 7000 health. It was basically for all those close combat players that had over 10,000 health. On top of that, they also had a skill called [Purification] that took away all harmful debuffs and also recovered 30% of the target's health. It was pretty good. The only problem was that these two skills had really long cooldowns. Once the battle gets too close, they wouldn't be able to keep up.

.....

As we slowly endured the battle, we finally were able to bring Chun Shen Jun's health to 10%. Just as we expected, the fourth skill appeared — [Three Thousand Elders]!

Chun Shen Jun raised his halberd and roared out, "Sleeping talents, your

sleep has come to an end. Wake up and rise from hell to follow your leader to battle on this earth!”

“Pa!”

With a low growl, Chun Shen Jun couldn't say anymore because Wan Er used [Gouge] and stunned him. It had interrupted the attack!

I almost laughed out. Instead, I continued my attack.

Less than a minute later, Chun Shen Jun tried to cast the skill again, but was stunned by Wan Er once again and was interrupted again....

And like that, all the way to the end, Chun Shen Jun gave out a cry, and fell to the ground. A little regrettably, we never saw what the [Three Thousand Elders] skill looked like.....

.....

“Ka Cha!”

I cut off the ghost's head and gave it to the female ghost behind me. Mistress Li cried as she hugged Chun Shen Jun's head and reluctantly said, “If you hadn't given me off to some other person, how else would I hate you.....”

“Shua!”

The quest was finished and we got the experience from it. Li Mu, Song Han and Dancing Forest all leveled up.

I then moved Chun Shen Jun's corpse away and looked at the equipment. He dropped a total of 4 pieces. As expected, there was at least one Valkyrie Tier one. My 157 points of charm wasn't for nothing!

There was a round crimson helmet, a dagger as sharp as a tooth, a ring and a crimson chain. I decided to first look at the helmet's stats. With a wave, the stats appeared in the air—

[Raid Helmet] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 550

Strength: +72

Stamina: +71

Agility: +65

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 11%

Additional: Increases the user's health by 1200

Additional: Increases the user's 21% Magic Defense

Required level: 80

.....

I raised the helmet, I said, "My Magic Dragon's Helmet is a Saint Tier equipment, so I don't need it. Li Mu, Matcha, who wants this helmet?"

Li Mu clapped his hands, then touched his chin and said nothing.

Matcha grinned, "It's alright. I'm already a 10,000 health Knight. My defense is just a little bit low. Why don't you give it to Li Mu. I'll just wait. Maybe later on, I'll get something better."

"Ok...."

After that, I tossed it to Li Mu and he immediately put it on, and didn't even take away the helmet's glow. Like this, he wore the crimson helmet and grabbed Little Wolf, "Little Wolf, am I handsome?"

Little Wolf didn't say anything.

Dancing Forest smiled, "A big pan face plus a red spittoon, what a perfect match."

Li Mu's face turned green, and he silently took away the helmet's glow.

Chapter 429: Fish Intestines

As we continued, we saw a deep red dagger. I gripped it in my palm. The stats vividly appeared in the night sky. At that moment, Little Wolf spat onto the floor and didn't say a word—

[Fish Intestines] (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1450-2050

Agility: +74

Stamina: +70

Strength: +68

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 21%

Additional: Ignores 25% of the target's defense

Special Effect: [Poison], when using this to attack the target, there's a 100% chance of the target being poisoned. For 7 seconds, they will lose 3% of their blood. Has no effect on BOSS-es

Special Effect: [Fish Intestines] 15% Drain

Introduction: There was a pre-ancient sword named "Fish Intestines". Later on this sword seemed to leave this earth as it was lost for many years. In later generations, the blacksmiths admired the dead name, and used pure steel to create a new dagger with the same name. "Fish Intestines". when this dagger was created, it was steeped in poison, making it such that every attack would quietly suck away a person's health.

Required Level: 80

.....

After weighing the dagger in my hand, I looked at Wan Er and smiled, "Little Miss, you already have the Dragon's Kiss, that OP Saint Tier weapon, so your main dagger's attack isn't a problem. Why don't we give this Fish Intestines to Little Wolf? Even to this day, that little bastard hasn't had a decent dagger. This Fish Intestines will be enough to make

him a first rate Assassin. This will also be good for our later BOSS-es. Otherwise, if the BOSS is a heavy armor type, he won't be able to break through their shield. Like that he won't be any help to us....."

Wan Er warmly smiled, "Alright, I'll listen to what you say. Give it to Little Wolf!"

"Ok!"

Soon the Fish Intestines dagger appeared in Little Wolf's hands. That little bastard couldn't believe his eyes, and stared at the dagger for a bit. Finally he broke out into a grin and said, "My base attack has finally reached 3700. Thank you everyone, this Fish Intestines is just too good of a present. Even the name sounds great."

Matcha grinned, "After we finish this Grave of the Warring States dungeon off, shouldn't you treat us to a meal?"

Little Wolf wryly smiled, "I'm not sure about that. For the next three BOSS-es, I think that between Brother Xiao Yao's charm and Miss Lin Wan Er's luck, we'll probably get a Saint Tier drop. Exactly who ends up treating everyone is still up for debate!"

I smiled and continued looking through the equipment. The third piece was a ring. With a wave of my hand, the stats appeared. Even though it wasn't that strong, it was still a pretty good piece—

[Sunset Ring] (Emperor Tier)

Magic: +55

Endurance: +52

Agility: +50

Additional: Raises the user's natural recovery by 24%

Additional: raises the user's Max HP by 900

Required Level: 80

.....

Raising the Sunset Ring, I said, "This is a Healer ring. Darling Duck,

Thousand League Spring, why don't you guys ROLL for this? Or do you guys want to decide amongst yourselves?"

Darling Duck pursed her lips "Boss, my healing ability is enough and I have over 7000 Max HP. Why don't you give it to Thousand League Spring? Her Max HP is less than 5000 because she added some defense, so her defense is enough but her health isn't....."

Thus, I tossed the ring to Thousand League Spring. After that, I took out the last piece of equipment the BOSS dropped. It was a crimson bracelet and the stats were not disappointing as it wasn't just an Emperor Tier, but rather a Valkyrie Tier Equipment!

[Phoenix Bracelet] (Valkyrie Tier)

Agility: +74

Endurance: +71

Strength: +70

Additional: Raises the user's range by 22%

Additional: Increases the user's attack speed by 17%

Additional: Raises the user's shield penetration ability by 50%

Special Effect: [Phoenix Feather] Increases critical attack chance by 40%

Required Level: 80

.....

As I weighed the Phoenix Bracelet in my hand and grinned, "A good bracelet.....These stats really aren't bad at all, 22% attack, 17% attack speed and has a special skill effect ... Hey Little Dance, [Shield Breaker Shot] is an Archer's fourth advancement skill right? Can you tell me about it? Just now when you shot at the BOSS I wasn't paying attention and didn't see it."

Dancing Forest smiled, "Boss, this [Shield Breaker Shot] decreases the target's defense by 3%. At most it can be compounded 5 times, meaning it

would decrease the target's defense by 15% in total....”

“If it's like this then after you equip the Phoenix Bracelet, the highest you can decrease the target's defense by is 22.5%. When you're fighting against a BOSS that would be extremely advantageous” I handed the bracelet to Dancing Forest and said, “You're the only Archer here right now, and it fits you the most. Make sure you work hard. [Zhang Long]'s number one Archer must be one of the world's top!”

Dancing Forest equipped the Phoenix Bracelet and said with a bright smile, “Yes, I know. I will do my best!”

I clapped my hands and distributed all the remaining soul gems. I then said, “The spoils of war have been distributed. Let's go! We should go to the second floor and begin a new round of journeys!”

.....

Behind the Ghost of Chun Shen Jun was a flight of stone steps to the next level. It was also the pathway which we had to pass through.

I lifted my longsword and walked in front cautiously. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword high up to illuminate the small passageway. Before long, the view suddenly cleared up, and it was another coffin chamber arrangement in the shape of a spiral ring. In the distance stood organized rows of soldiers. They were dressed in light armor, and held crossbows in their hands. Every one of them wore their hair in a bun and had a beard. However, their faces were horribly decayed. They are soldiers of the Zhao Kingdom that had slept underground for years, and all of them are archers. As I went slightly closer, the stats of these archers could be seen —

[Crossbowmen] (Phantom Tier)

Level: 91

Attack strength: 2700-3350

Defense: 2500

Health: 100000

Skills: [Crossbow Shot] [Penetration Shot]

Shooting range: 20 yards

Introduction: The warriors of Zhao Kingdom from the Warring States period. These crossbowmen are equipped with extremely excellent crossbows. They shoot and kill fiercely, and refill arrows conveniently and rapidly. These crossbowmen have slept underground for ten thousand years. They have experienced death, and were influenced by the strength of the magical region. With amazing arm strength, every one of them could draw the hundred rocks crossbow*. They are ferocious and ruthless, and the only thing they want to do is to transform everyone into “porcupines”.

TLN: A crossbow that needs to be drawn with thousands of kilograms of force.

.....

“ShaSha.....”

Wan Er lightly stepped up behind me and stuck out her tongue, “Wah, this time is the long range attackers, I don’t want to become a “porcupine.” Xiao Yao, go provoke the monsters, and then everyone else attack. With 10,000 health, it should take around 2-3 rounds of attacks to finish them off. However, these archers are in a square formation as if they are part of the Terracotta Army. When you’re provoking the monsters, you must be careful.....”

I nodded and said, “Honestly, killing them won’t be hard. Based on the rules of the system, these Lv 91 monsters can pick up aggro from around 40 yards away, but their range is only 20 yards. Therefore, I can lure them over here. Dong Cheng, Little Dance, don’t hesitate at all to use your AOE skills. I’ll definitely get their aggro.”

The two girls nodded, “Understood. Go lure the monsters, and make sure you don’t lure too many of them!”

“Ok!”

I gave a low roar, and buffed everyone with [Dragon’s Whistle of

Thunder and Lightning]. After that, I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] for myself, and raised my sword to charge towards the Crossbowmen. When I was 40 yards away from them, I immediately halted, and then turned around to run back. Behind me, a group of crossbowmen shouted, “What scoundrel is that? You dare trespass upon the imperial palace of the Zhao Kingdom?”

As I ran back to everyone, I raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword, and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] at them. At the same time, I let my Cold Iron Sword fly out with a, “Shua!” And it spun through the crowd of Crossbowmen. As I looked ahead, I saw Dong Cheng’s body slightly lower. A red glow began to rise around her feet, which made her robes fly up. The activation took an entire three seconds. Was this her fourth advancement skill?

“Hong!”

The ground shivered and the tiles of the palace floor began to shake. One after another, red volcanic craters suddenly appeared below the group of Crossbowmen. In the next second, they all exploded, and magma started blasting out of the ground. One after another, terrifying damage numbers flew up—

“5127 ! ”

“4821 ! ”

“4917 ! ”

.....

“F*ck....” I raised my sword and dashed forward as I said, “Isn’t this joke just a bit too much? This mage attack is just too cool isn’t it? It really lives up to the name of [Destiny]’s own son.... What is this skill called?”

Dong Cheng smiled, “This is the Lv 80 fourth advancement skill— [Magma Abyss]. Eh.... speaking of sons, I feel like your class, Dragon City’s Guardian, is the true son. With a massacre skill like [Blade Spin] what Mage wouldn’t shiver at the sight of you? Hmph, you actually have the shame to talk about my skill.....”

I laughed, “Continue killing, talking about this will just hurt our relationship.....”

Dong Cheng Yue was speechless.

As we were talking, I flipped through the fourth advancement skills for all the classes. Know thyself and know thy enemy will lead to a hundred victories. I have to read up on them all.

For Swordsmen, there was [Flying Sword] and [Dou Qi Armor]. As for Mages, they had that [Magma Abyss] and a skill called [Revealing Light] . This [Revealing Light] releases a ball of fire, and is used to investigate the surrounding map. At the same time, it can also be used to reveal an Assassin using [Camouflage]. It was clearly the most useful against Assassins. Berserkers also had [Dou Qi Armor] as their fourth advancement skill. There was also the skill [Berserker God]. [Berserker God] activate a transformation, turning the user crazy and lasts for 7 seconds. During this state, they will not suffer any debuffs nor damage from magic attacks. In battle, a Berserker with this skill would become the nemesis of Mages. Not taking any magic damage for seven seconds practically meant they would become invincible.

After that, there were the Archer’s fourth advancement skills, [Beast Trap], which buried hidden traps, and can paralyze any target that steps into it for 3 seconds, and [Shield Breaker Shot], which was basically a long range control type skill. A Lv 80 Monk also became much stronger. With [Holy Light], they can immediately recover 70% of their health, and [Holy Blessing] increased the natural recovery speed of all party members within 100 yards by 100%. [Jialan’s Mantra] increases the user’s attack by 40%. This skill was especially helpful because it would completely reverse the scales for when a Monk is being beaten. People like Goodbye Tears and Fushen Thousand Blades are probably celebrating right now.

.....

As we cleared our way through, our experience soared. In the end, I had leveled up to 82 before we even reached the BOSS’ s region. The 10 stat points I received were all added to my strength. The other members of the

team were also not slow in leveling up. Plus, the drop rate of these Crossbowmen is not bad. The best item dropped was a Purple Tier equipment. Although the percentage of obtaining isn't as high as a BOSS. But after killing for four hours, four high-class Purple Tier equipment had dropped. We had reaped a good harvest.

As we continued moving forward, another grand great hall appeared before our eyes. Also, four people stood above the great hall. One of them was dressed in fine clothes and adorned with beautiful jades. He held a green long sword in his hand. He wore the hat of a high official, and sat on the throne with the demeanor of an emperor. Below his throne, three people were taking orders respectfully. It was obvious that this person was none other than the soul of Lord Ping Yuan, a Lv 91 Valkyrie Tier BOSS. The names of the other three subordinates also floated above their heads.

[Soul of Mao Sui]: Level 91 Valkyrie Tier Vice BOSS, Lord Ping Yuan's follower and possessed a silver tongue.

[Soul of Zhao Kuo]: Level 91 Valkyrie Tier Vice BOSS. The son of the famous general Zhao She. He was held as commander by Lord Yuan Ping, but became an armchair strategist. Due to that, during the battle of Changping, the Zhao Army of 400,000 men was buried alive by the God of War, Bai Qi.

[Soul of Li Tong]: Level 91 Valkyrie Tier Vice BOSS. Government official of Zhao Kingdom, and died in the battle of Han Dan City.

.....

I took a deep breath and whispered, This time, it's about to be a team fight.....”

Chapter 430: Flames of War Magic Blade

Not necessarily, I feel like there won't be peace between those three...."
Wan Er wryly smiled.

Li Mu was puzzled, "Why do you say that?"

Wan Er said very seriously, "For one, Ping Yuan Jun made Zhao Kuo the commander, and yet Zhao Kuo lead Zhao Guo into a hole. Ping Yuan Jun probably really hates Zhao Kuo. On top of that, when Han Dan City was surrounded, from what I read in history books, Li Tong bravely charged in to meet the Qin Army, but Pin Yuan Jun didn't. And so Li Tong thought of him as a coward since then and has stopped associating with him...."

Song Han was speechless. "Little Miss, you're the prettiest girl in school, and instead of studying horoscopes and beauty you study history?"

Wan Er patted my shoulder and smiled, "Yup. Xiao Yao can also be considered the most handsome at Liu Hua University. A lot of the pretty girls from other majors are doing all they can to try and get his number. If he wasn't always playing games, and was more serious about everything, he would be much more than just the girls' eye candy....."

Dong Cheng hid a smile, "If Xiao Yao was really like Liu Ying then he would go through 7 girlfriends in a week. By then, you wouldn't be able to cry even if you wanted to....."

Wan Er blushed, "Why would I cry!"

Dong Cheng giggled, "I don't know, but someone said to me that throughout their entire life they have never crushed on a guy. But now....."

"Shua...."

Wan Er dashed forward and covered Dong Cheng's mouth, her face was completely red. She threatened, "Ugh, if you dare say anything more, I'll kill you to keep you silent!"

Dong Cheng quickly nodded, and took a deep breath, "Ah, I couldn't breathe. A friend like that is so scary!"

.....

Dancing Forest was speechless. “Well, are we gonna kill Ping Yuan Jun or not?”

“We will!”

I gripped my sword, “No matter what, we should probably lure one over here, and let us have a taste of how hard it is to kill them. Let’s see if we can kill them off one by one. The best case would be if we didn’t provoke Ping Yuan Jun, and killed his elders first....”

“Ok, good luck and be careful!” Wan Er said as she fluttered her eyes.

I turned around and walked towards the palace. I opened my palm, locking onto Li Tong’s ghost, and I cast [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“4417 ! ”

When Li Tong was ambushed, he immediately turned around and looked at me as he shouted, “Youngster, do you know where this is? You actually dare to trespass upon the inner palace of the Zhao Kingdom! You’re looking for death !”

Allenwa note: sorry guys but ancient people only seem to know one phrase

Li Tong raised his sword and rushed forward. I immediately retreated, and made sure to look back, therefore, I noticed that Ping Yuan Jun stood up and smiled, “Humph, to think that someone would dare to trespass upon Zhao Kingdom’s palace. You have only one fate, and that is to die! Zhao Kuo and Mao Sui, go forward and help him fight. Kill them all!”

Allenwa note: Seriously guys sorry

Ciel note: well I’m sorry >.> < .<

“Yes, my lord!”

Zhao Luo and Mao Sui also charged forward. My face turned green, “Eh, we have to kill all three BOSS-es together!”

Li Tong also also rushed over. With a sweep of his long sword, he hacked off 1100 of my HP. Like this it was still ok, at least I could withstand his attacks for a bit.

In the end, as Li Tong met swords with me, Li Mu, Little Wolf, Wan Er, and Matcha, the other two BOSS-es did not come in time to help!

Zhao Kuo gripped an army book. He stood majestically at the side, and said in a low voice, “Battle situations are constantly changing just as the tide always changes. As it is commonly said, make the army base like iron. Make the soldiers like water, and your army’s morale will be equal to that of a thousand man army. Please fight with all your might”—[War Inspiration]!”

“Shua!” a ray of light fell. Li Tong’s attack rose by 40%. Just one cut, and he could deal 2000+ damage to me.

Mao Sui crossed his arms over his chest and chatted, “Today, I ask that everyone listen and that the fleas in the cloth come out of their burrows. I do not only meet those who are special.... I only wish that all provide help. If we are to win, then that is the fortune of the country, but if we were to lose, then I will think of it as showing the enemy mercy”

“Shua!” Another ray of light fell and Li Tong got the BUFF, “Reveal Thy Talents”, increasing his defense by 70%!

.....

Annoyed, I said, “Damn, these BUFFs are too much. How are we supposed to fight him when his defense has increased by 70%? I’ll block Li Tong, Wan Er, Little Wolf, why don’t you guys support Dong Cheng and Li Mu, and kill the Ghost of Mao Sui. Little Dance will use [Shield Breaker Shot] to decrease Li Tong’s defense. That 70% increase in defense is too much. Even I can’t get past it....”

“Okay!”

Once our battle plans had been set, we threw a large amount of firepower onto Mao Sui. I on the other hand went to fight Li Tong. After Dancing Forest decreased his defense by 22.5%, I was still able to

somewhat fight him. Otherwise finishing this task would be nearly impossible.

Not long after, Mao Sui cried out and died under Wan Er's Dragon's Kiss. Her attack is just too strong, on top of that her attacks ignore a lot of defense. It'd be strange if Mao Sui the scholar was able to block her.

I let my two swords dance through the air. With Wan Er and Little Wolf's attacks, Li Tong was also about to fall. After a few minutes, he fell to the ground and cried out, "My king, your servant will be leaving now...."

The last BOSS, Zhao Kuo continued to hold onto his army book. With a puzzled expression, he looked at us, "Thou scoundrels dare hurt me? I am the general of the Great Army of Zhao, Zhao Kuo!"

I threw a heavy cut, "You tricked your kingdom, and conned your subjects. If you were to let Lian Po fight, how would Bai Qi have killed so many Zhao Kingdom soldiers....."

Wan Er used [Twin Blade Harmony] and [Chain Attack] together, and her attack didn't seem to be any lower than that of me, Song Han, Li Mu, Dancing Forest, and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. In less than 2 minutes, this false general Zhao Kuo gave a grunt, and fell to the ground. The three BOSS-es didn't seem to drop any good equipment as the best was probably an emperor tier staff that was taken by miss Thousand League Spring.

.....

Standing in the distance, I looked at Ping Yuan Jun, and I smiled, "Your three servants have all died. Without the BUFFs, this BOSS won't be too hard to kill!"

Wan Er waved her hand, and Zhao Sheng's stats appeared in our chat log --

[Ping Yuan Jun - Zhao Sheng] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS)

Level: 91

Attack: 3150 - 4250

Defense: 3400

Health: 5,500,000

Skills: [Blade Rush] [Calm of a Storm] [Loosen the Reigns] [Servants of the World]

Introduction: Ping Yuan Jun, the Minister of the Zhao Kingdom, is talented in both military and civil matters. Of the sons of Zhao Wu, he is the most talented. He has several thousand servants, and is well versed in the ways of a monarch. Once he led an army that was surrounded on all sides, and still managed to besiege the city, thus landing a great achievement for the Zhao Kingdom. Afterwards, the Zhao Kingdom suffered a large scale attack, and Ping Yuan Jun died in battle. He finally couldn't protect the city any longer.

.....

I quickly flipped through the list of skills and said, “[Blade Rush] is the same one that players use. As for [Calm of a Storm], it increases the user's defense by 50%, while [Loosen the Reigns] increases the user's damage on a target by 10%, and decreases their defense by 30%. [Servants of the World]. Eh, I can't see the details....”

As I finished talking, I swung my blade and smiled, “Li Mu and Little Wolf, don't charge forward yet. I'll start off by luring his firepower, and try out just how strong this Ping Yuan Jun is. Make sure to focus your heals on me!”

I leapt up and opened up my palm, locking [Great Realm of Desolation] on the BOSS!

“3319 ! ”

Just as expected, his defense is pretty high!

Ping Yuan Jun got angry, and raised his sword as he roared, “You scoundrel dare to attack me? I will behead you!”

The blade was immersed in flames, and Ping Yuan Jun's first attack took off 4000 points from my health. Motherf*cker, he really did already use

[Loosen the Reigns], and raised his attack by 10% while lowering my defense by 30%. No wonder my [Wall of Dou Qi] didn't block that much damage!

Dancing Forest continued to shoot, her [Shield Breaker Shot], and decreased the BOSS's defense by 22.5%. Dong Chen Yue opened her hand, and activated [Thunderbolt Finger] as she devastated the area around the BOSS. I swung my two swords, and continuously attacked!

“Keng!”

His blade cut through my armor, creating sparks. Even Little Wolf, who was beside me, also took some damage—

“4421 ! ”

“2919 ! ”

Little Wolf was shocked, “F*ck, what kind of splash damage is this?”

Wan Er immediately raised her dagger and retreated backwards. She softly said, “We can't go near this BOSS. We need to let Xiao Yao kill him on his own. That way, it's much safer. the BOSS has a 50% or higher splash damage. Let's not go in, or else we'll be splitting up the heals.”

Little Wolf, Li Mu, and Matcha all retreated.

I stood at the forefront by myself. Even my Flaming Tiger God retreated several steps. Afterwards, the BOSS began focusing his attacks on me. The two healers locked their heals onto me., and we were basically using a very reckless method. Honestly, even I could tell that Pin Yuan Jun didn't have the explosive power that Chun Shen Jun had. But, he had much more health!

When the BOSS only had 40% health left, one of his big skills came!

[Servants of the World] decreased all of our stats by 20%, making it harder for us to keep up. It got to the point where I even had to use potions since the two girls couldn't keep up with the damage I was taking. As I attacked, I also used a few [Heal]s on myself. The more healing I could get, the better.

.....

For this Valkyrie Tier BOSS, we needed a whole 30 minutes to kill him. Finally, in the midst of the light of a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], Zhao Shen fell to his knees!

“Hu.....”

I let out a sigh of relief. I wiped off the sweat on my head. Damn, the time it took to fight this BOSS was way too long!

I looked at my experience bar. After killing this Level 91 Valkyrie BOSS, my experience jumped a whole 27%. Indeed, killing BOSSes was the best method. Jian Feng Han, Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, and Yan Zhao Warrior probably also used this method to keep their levels high. Otherwise, how else would they pass my level in the short 8 days that I was gone? Not only that but I only had my number one status on the China server for 24 hours....

At the same time as Ping Yuan Jun fell, he dropped a pile of equipment. I glanced through, and noticed that there was even a Guild Creation Tablet. My luck is pretty good. On top of that there were 3 other equipment, all of them piled on the ground. Two flames surrounded cloth Battle Boots. There was also a deep blue cloak and a heavy blade. Hehe, you don't normally see those. This was a weapon that only monks and berserkers could use. Our [Zhan Long] didn't seem to have any really top tier monks.

As I raised the blade, I looked at the stats. I waved my hand, and the stats appeared in the air. Everyone was shocked—

[Flames of a Hundred Battles Magic Blade] (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1850 – 2245

Strength: +75

Stamina: +72

Agility: +70

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 24%

Additional: Ignores 19% of the target's defense

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 1400

Special Effect: [Hundred Battles] decreases the speed at which the durability decreases by 70%

Required Level: 82

.....

Chapter 431: Taking Life and Death Lightly

“Our luck isn’t bad....” Li Mu was drooling as he looked at the Flames of War Magic Blade. Regretfully, he said, “Too bad I’m a swordsman, using a magic blade won’t give me any additional advantages. On top of that, it has a long handle, and isn’t very flexible which makes its attack speed too low. It’s not good for [Combo] and [Skyshaker Slash]....”

I glanced at the magic blade, and threw it into my bag. “Then we’ll just hold onto it for now and we’ll sell the blade when we can. Right now it should be able to sell for a pretty good price. We’ll put it up for auction in National Beauty and give everyone a 10% cut. The best way is to sell this thing off since we won’t have to deal with it amongst ourself. Phew! It’s a good thing that it doesn’t fit either Old K or Bai Qi, because if it did, people might think we were favoring them.”

Wan Er nodded, “Yup, I agree.”

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands smiled, “I support guildmaster’s decision. Let’s look at the next piece....”

“Oh, alright....”

After putting away the Flames of War Magic Blade and looked at the next one. It was a pair of fiery magic boots, and the stats weren’t half bad

[Dark Flame Boots] (Emperor Tier)

Type: Cloth Armor

Defense: 340

Magic: +51

Stamina: +50

Agility: +47

Additional: Increases the user’s magic attack by 11%

Additional: Increases the user’s movement speed by 8%

Level: 81

.....

I held up the Dark Flame Boots and said, “Boots that add to magic attack. Dong Chen, do you want to ROLL for it with Thousand Suns?”

The two girls seemed to throw the dice at the same time, and Thousand Suns won the boots by 4 points. She immediately put them on, and grinned as she thought of how much it would increase her magic attack.

The last piece of equipment was a deep blue cloak. As I held it in my hand, I could feel the energy running up through my arm. I waved a hand over it, and the stats appeared in the air—

[Frozen Orchid Cloak] (Valkyrie Tier)

Defense: 700

Magic: +75

Endurance: +72

Agility: +70

Additional: Increases the user’s magic attack by 17%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 900

Special: [Bone Chilling] Allows all of the user’s ice based magic attacks to increase in damage by 50%

Required: 82

.....

It was another equipment that increased magic attack and health, and it was a cloak. This was probably set up by as it was the only type of armor that wasn’t considered for heavy armor classes only, so it’s defense was always pretty high to allow other classes a heavy defense boost. Mages and healers, are always trying to get higher level, higher tier cloaks for the defense bonus. Almost always 40% of their defense is dependent on the cloak.

Holding up the Frozen Orchid Cloak, I smiled, “Our mages’ luck is

pretty good. It's another one of your equipments. Dong Cheng, Tang Xue, why don't you guys ROLL again? Whoever has the most luck, gets this equipment!"

This time, Dong Cheng's face was serious. She took a deep breath, and "pa!" threw die onto the ground. Hehe, 91 points, this time her luck was pretty good!

Thousand Suns also threw a die, and her expression was extremely nervous. The die rolled on the ground a bit before coming to a slow stop on 70. At that moment, Thousand Suns bit her lip and smiled, "Wuwu, of course I don't have the luck to get two pieces of equipment in one drop...."

I smiled, "No problem, you'll have more chances next time!"

"Yup!"

Dong Cheng Yue took the cloak and "Hua" put it over her shoulders. At that moment, her delicate shoulders seemed to get even cuter. As she held her staff, a light breeze fluttered the cloak, and created a scene that was beautiful beyond compare.

"Alright...."

I clapped my hands, and put the soul gem into the list for rolling. Afterwards I said, "Let's go, the quest is already 50% done. We'll go to the third floor now. The sooner we finish this the better. I still have a lot of things to do outside in Ba Huang City...."

Little Wolf smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, what else awaits us?"

I muttered, "Green Qilin Valley, and Glacial River Valley aren't very far from each other, and Green Quillin Valley is [Zhan Long]'s training area, and we still need to conquer the surrounding area. Luckily [Vanguard], [Hero's Mound: Division One], [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of Heroes] won't be trying to provoke us anytime soon. Right now we have 16,000 players online. If we don't have a few courtesy battles, how else would our brothers be satisfied?"

Li Mu laughed and gripped his blade, "I've long felt we should do that. Right now, [Zhan Long] is much larger than it was before. Besides, we've

used to be continuously provoked. Hmph, there's quite a number of guilds out there where, if we don't show them some of our strength, they'll think that [Zhan Long] is easy to deal with. There're no other words to describe my thoughts about these guilds but with these nine words!"

Dong Cheng smiled, "What nine words?"

Li Mu straightened his back and stuck his chest out, "Life, Death, tasteless things : those who think otherwise, kill.*!"

TL Note: It's actually 8 words in chinese but can't work otherwise.

I couldn't help but smile, "That's right...."

Wan Er was dumbfounded, "Alright. Let's go, to the third floor. You guys are all battle crazy. By the time Dong Cheng and I join [Zhan Long], we'll just have to clean up the leftovers. This vice guildmaster.... is going to be really hard....."

I smiled, and pulled Wan Er's wrist, "Wan Er, let's go scout together....."

Wan Er tried to pull her wrist away but couldn't. Her face was completely red. She was embarrassed, yet didn't say no. As she realized how Li Mu and Song Han were staring, she probably was so embarrassed she wanted to die in a hole.

.....

"Sha sha....."

I stepped across the stones and walked onto the third floor. To be honest, you couldn't even really see the stone path, just a path that was filled with broken rocks. On top of that, there was an abyss at the end of the path. I stepped onto the broken rocks, "Hua lalala" pebbles fell into the darkness. It took ten whole seconds till the stones smacked the floor below. At that moment, I looked at Wan Er.

"Looks like we can only slide down...." I spread out my hands.

Wan Er pursed her lips then looked at me with her beautiful eyes, "This.... won't this hurt...."

I looked at her, clearly her equipment was different from mine. My

armor practically covered every inch of my skin, whereas Wan Er, having her Heavenly Armor, wasn't so lucky: a large amount of skin was exposed revealing her young attractive body. If she were to slide down it would be extremely painful.

Thus, I smiled, "Let's head down first, I'll deal with the rest...."

"Is that ok?" The beautiful little miss's eyes were filled with doubt.

I smiled and grabbed her cloak, and we jumped down.

"Pa!"

My stepped across the stone tiles and I immediately lost balance. As I fell onto the ground, I pulled Wan Er down as well which made her fall onto my lap. In the darkness, she stared into my eyes as we hit the floor. She rolled down with me as she laughed and said, "Are we there yet?"

Grinning, "Huh? What'd you say?"

"Hmph..."

Wan Er hugged my shoulders, making her fragrant perfume waft toward me as she gave a soft peck on my chin. Afterwards, she softly whispered, "How good would it be if I could spend the rest of my life in this game with you...."

I didn't say anything, just grasped her shoulders even tighter.

However, this hill was around a hundred meters tall. With a "Shua!" and a flash of light, we arrived on the third level. The third level's scenery was very different from the first and second levels. An intense wind blew throughout the map, and land was desolate. Several bodies lay in the desert sands and a broken flag fluttered in the wind. On the tattered flag was "Qi".

"This.... Is an ancient battlefield right?" Wan Er muttered.

I nodded, "Yea, this is. Tell everyone to come here. With just us two, and no other healers, we can't act recklessly."

"Yea, ok...."

.....

We shouted to them in the chat and not long after, Little Wolf, Li Mu and Dong Cheng all came down. The girls were all pretty miserable. After Dong Cheng Yue fell to the ground, she rubbed her shoulder and cried, “So unfair. I feel like I need a man now. Wan Er, won’t you lend me one?”

Wan Er’s face didn’t change, “Nope....”

Dong Cheng Yue muttered, “Dicks before chicks I see!”

Li Mu said, “This level’s map is pretty different. What’s the situation? Monsters.... where are the monsters?”

Dancing Forest squinted against the flying sand and smiled, “Let me try!”

“Sou!”

An Ice Arrow flew out, and hit the bones on a war cart. At that moment, the bones began to slowly rise and they held knives as they ran at us, yelling, “You thieves dare invade the Great Qi Kingdom! WE MUST KILL!”

I raised my left arm, and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out, “Cha Cha Cha!” The sword spun six times, and cut through the bone soldiers’ bodies. After, I threw a [Great Realm of Desolation], Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng Yue, and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands all let out their attacks. At that moment, the Bone Soldiers all cried out and fell. But once we had killed them, other Bone Soldiers also stood up. All of them were level 92 phantom tier monsters.

“I think we’ve done something wrong...” Wan Er smiled, “There’s so many different types of soldiers: blade soldiers, shield soldiers, spear soldiers and bow soldiers. There are even Bone War Carts. Wu.... Can we hold them all off?”

I grabbed my returning Cold Iron Sword and smiled, “Li Mu, Matcha, let’s take them on. No matter how many phantom tier monsters there are or how good their equipment is, there is nothing to worry about!”

“Yup!”

.....

The three main tanks stood in the front and slowly pushed forward. It was just as I had said, these phantom tier monsters weren't anything to be afraid of. The only problem was that the winds were too strong, and the map was an extremely barren area making it somewhat uncomfortable.

On the battlefield there weren't only the corpses of Qi Kingdom soldiers, there were also Wei Kingdom and Qin Kingdom soldiers. It looks like the three kingdoms had a huge battle here. This also lets me guess that this level's Grave owner was probably Meng Chang Jun, Tan Wen. Meng Chang Jun once was the prime minister of the Qi, Qin and Wei Kingdoms. Only he could have such a large map. That's good too. The more phantom tier monsters, the more experience and equipment.

Chapter 432: Meng Chang Jun, Surrounded!

For four hours, our group of people wandered in the midst of the sandstorm, and cut down all the remaining soldiers. My experience bar increased a lot, and I picked up more and more gold tier and purple tier equipments. I only took these two tiers as the spaces in my bag were precious, and that would be inadequate for me to place any lower tier equipment.

After searching for almost half an hour, I finally found an entrance in the desert. As the sands got pushed aside, we followed one another into a copper casted beast head. As expected, another deep staircase appeared right in front of us. If nothing unexpected happens, this will lead us to the third level's BOSS location. On the map, it also indicated that a great hall was below us.

“ShaSha.....”

With sand beneath my battle boots, I walked at the forefront. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword, and patted the Flaming Tiger God's head. The tiger cub purred softly, and followed closely beside me, also being part of the advance guard. My sword was enshrouded by light as I entered a dark but spacious hall. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword, and speedily lit a torch along the stone wall with the flames of my glowing sword. Next, the torch spread the fire, and soon all the torches were lit up one by one; the great hall then became very bright. Yet, more than a hundred stone coffins were laid out in the great hall. In the center of these coffins was an ancient general on a horse with a long spear in his hand and he had a blood red cloak fluttering behind him. He looked healthy with a ruddy complexion. Dressed in a majestic armor covered with stars, he stared at us with a faint smile at the corner of his mouth. He bellowed, “I felt it. Chun Shen Jun, Ping Yun Jun's strength disappeared. They have already been killed, right? Visitors from far away, do you know how long I have been waiting for you guys?”

I raised my brow and looked towards the sound, that was definitely the one. Meng Chang Jun, a character with many colorful legends. Unfortunately, he had been set as the BOSS in this quest. Therefore, no matter how much respect this gentleman of the warring states deserved, he would only be my enemy here. Just a string of data that should be killed for the equipment and exp. It's just to complete the quest, so there's no need to bother too much.

In the party channel, Wan Er had already shared Meng Chang Jun's stats . Level 92, a Saint Tier BOSS! This time, it would really take lot of time for us to kill him, and someone might die in this fight against the BOSS—

[Meng Chang Jun•Tian Wen] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 92

Attack Strength: 4450-5200

Defense: 4200

Health: 103000000

Skills: [Horse Rush] [Flame Sickle] [Vanishing Spell] [Servants of the World]

Introduction: Meng Chang Jun a handsome noble in the ancient warring states period that was warm, sincere and hospitable. With courtesy to the wise and a being a good scholar, he gathered people with exceptional abilities from the all around the world. This became an anecdote that was passed on with approbation. He also became the most trustworthy minister of the three empires. He was a gracious and frank person. However, because he had more achievements than his lord, he was doubted by the emperor in the end. In a rage, Meng Chang Jun led his subordinates away, and worked with the other two empires to destroy his previous lord's empire. It may be called seeking revenge for the smallest grievance. He then rested underground for ten thousand years. As his ambitions and rage continue to increase, he finally decided to lead the ghosts that had been trained in hell for years back to earth.

.....

“This.....I am afraid won’t be that easy to kill.....” Dong Cheng Yue stuck out her tongue and smiled, “Saint Tier BOSS. To be honest, this is the first time I met one with a basic attack of 5200. His actual attack should be around 20,000? I don’t know if our brother Xiao Yao is able to withstand that or not. This time, we must fight cautiously.....”

I nodded, “Yes. Absolutely cautious! Li Mu, don’t fight. Let me fight alone. Wan Er and Wolf, find a chance to interrupt the BOSS’s skills. You two must retreat after one strike. Don’t dream of landing more attacks. Matcha, your main task is to use [Justice Provocation] to take the aggro away forcefully when my health is depleted to 15%. Help me buy some time to recover. Also, when the BOSS uses big skills, Matcha, you can also use [Fierce Ram] to interrupt.”

Wan Er spoke, “Be careful of those stone coffins. Maybe there is ‘something’ inside.. Also,the stone coffins are two meters high, so it might become an obstacle. Li Xiao Yao should try to avoid it when he moves.”

“I got it. I am going to make an attempt!”

“Okay!”

I held the Emperor Qin’s Sword, and leapt forward with the Flaming Tiger God. While I was still afar, I opened my hand and locked onto Meng Chang Jun with [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Hong!”

“2918 ! ”

F*ck this. Such a high defense! My [Great Realm of Desolation] actually couldn’t break his defense!

After being struck by [Great Realm of Desolation] the aggro system was activated. Meng Chang Jun came riding as he guffawed, “Kid, you will be the first sacrifice under my Dragon Spear in ten thousand years. Are you prepared to accept your fate?”

That long spear is called Dragon Spear?

A grin was formed at the corner of my mouth. Hehe, the name was not bad. Let me steal it when I get the chance!

Meng Chang Jun's mount was a black and strong battle horse that was fully dressed in iron battle armor. When he was about ten yards away from me, he started accelerating. As expected, he used the skill [Horse Rush] His charge was as fast as lightning and the Dragon Spear was thrust directly at my armor. My whole body immediately shuddered, and I fell down with my back smashing into the ground while the durability of my [Wall of Dou Qi] dropped by 17%!

“5421 ! ”

With a “Peng” sound, I crashed into a coffin. I sprinted up, and drew my Cold Iron Sword without uttering any words. I activated [Blade Spin], and my sword darted out as a “Shua” sound as it thrust through Meng Chang Jun's body. My Emperor Qin's Sword danced and I let loose [Wind Blade]+ [Strength of a Thousand Men]. “PiPiPaPa” My strikes took away around ten thousand of Meng Chang Jun's HP. Simultaneously, the healing skills of Darling Duckling and Thousand League Spring, the two beauties, arrived, and most of my health was speedily recovered.

Meng Chang Jun guffawed and appeared before me. With a thrust of his long spear, he dealt another attack that took away 4000 of my health points. He then lifted his long spear, and the Dragon Spear which became enshrouded by flames which started to rapidly spin around the spearhead. With a “Peng” sound, it went through my body!

“6128 ! ”

My health instantly hit rock bottom and I was frightened to the point that no colors could be seen on my face. I hastily attacked, rebounded and recovered by using healing skills + level 10 health potion. Darling Duckling raised her hand, and used [Grip of Compassion], and I recovered 8000+ of my health. Thus, I was saved from the dangerous situation.

Sister Thousand League Spring yelled loudly, “Boss! Be careful of the skill, [Flame Sickle]! If you keep taking damage, you will be instantly

killed if the BOSS sends out an explosive strike!

“Yes, I know.....”

I moved backward while sending out [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. I opened one of my hands and [Binding Chains] burst out of the rock!

“MISS ! ”

As I had expected, binding chains was easily dodged. Meng Chang Jun chased after me, and attacked once every 1.5 second with his Dragon Spear with every strike causing me 4000+ damage. This was a true challenge for our healers' ability!

It couldn't continue like this, otherwise I would be killed in an instant once my [Wall of Dou Qi] broke.

Burning with anxiety, I looked at the topography around me, and noticed one huge coffin behind me. I immediately backed away with my sword in hand, and led Meng Cheng Jun as I ran around the coffin.

[Black Tortoise Realm], and [Soul Army] fell down together, immediately Meng Chang Jun's movement speed decreased speed!

“Keng!”

The Dragon Spear crushed a corner of the coffin. Meng Chang Jun's attacks were truly too powerful. At the same time, I noticed that whenever I went past the corners of the coffins, Meng Chang Jun's [Flame Sickle] would be canceled immediately. The artificial intelligent of this BOSS was extremely high. He understood how to save the cooldown time of the skill in order to to kill me with one strike.

.....

“[Great Realm of Desolation]!”

I sent out another fierce attack,yet Meng Chang Jun stood there firmly with barely any loss of health!

“Watch out!” Wan Er hastily yelled.

The next second, Meng Chang Jun's body suddenly vanished into thin

air and another shadow appeared behind me while the skill, [Flame Sickle], had been used immediately. As the flames spiraled and the light of the spear shuddered, the strike flew for almost 40 yards. It not only struck me, but also hit Dong Cheng Yue.

“Ah.....”

Dong Cheng Yue flew several steps back. Her Mana Shield was crushed, and she had lost 3000+ of her health. Fortunately, her total health was rather high for a mage, otherwise she would have been killed in an instant!

“Be careful!” Wan Er exclaimed, “That’s the skill, [Vanishing Spell], and also the attack range of [Flame Sickle] is getting greater and greater. It looks like the lower the health of this BOSS is, the higher his stats are. It must be like this!”

I cast a glance and noticed that Meng Chang Jun still had 24% health. If this continued, I was afraid we wouldn’t be able to withstand.

“Peng!”

A coffin was directly smashed into pieces while the Dragon Spear in Meng Chang Jun cascaded a glowing aura of around 2 meters big. F*ck. Unknowingly, this BOSS had already changed into AOE attack. Even his normal attacks had the AOE effect.

.....

“Hong!”

A sense of coldness was felt on my shoulder and I lost 7000+ health points while my whole body almost flew away due to the strike of the Dragon Spear!

“Peng!”

I smashed into the stone wall heavily, and I had only 3000 HP left. I couldn’t withstand the BOSS’s strike, and a status effect instantly caused my brain to pause when I struck the stone wall, thus I was unable to react quick enough. When I looked up, Meng Chang Jun had raised his Dragon

Spear and charged forward at super-high speed. It was the skill, [Horse Rush]! I am screwed !

“I will face him!”

Sister Matcha drew her sword, and came towards me. The movement speed was increased tremendously and a blood-red glow surrounded her as she darted. It’s her fourth advancement skill—[Fierce Ram] !

With a “Peng” sound, she knocked away the skill, [Horse Rush]. With her enormous shield before her chest, she used [Phantom Holy Shield]+[Heavenly Shield Wall]+[Justice Provocation], and forced the BOSS to attack her for 7 seconds!

“Die!”

Meng Chang Jun roared in anger, and struck Matcha’s huge shield multiple times with his Dragon Spear. Damage numbers began flying up one by one—

“2172 ! ”

“3102 ! ”

“1947 ! ”

“2114 ! ”

.....

Matcha gritted her teeth, and endured the pain. By using [Cleansing Wind] to recover her health, drinking potions, and casting defensive skills she was using almost every possible way to survive this onslaught. Matcha forcefully blocked the BOSS’s seven seconds of fierce attacks. This also pleased me. After Matcha had gone through all her training, she basically had no relationship with the word, noob anymore, [Holy Shield] +[Heavenly Wall]+[Justice Provocation], She was very adept at using these three skills in succession. This was also the most scientific way of defending . A beautiful knight like this was the member that [Zhan Long] needed the most.

After seven seconds, my health was almost full and I charged forward

once again with my Emperor Qin's Sword in hand!

“HuaCha!”

I used [Blade Rush] and I thrust through Meng Chang Jun's body forcefully. I unsheathed and lifted the Cold Iron Sword and turned around, giving him 7 successive thunderous attacks. In addition to the use of [Wind Blade], [Fierce Ice Blade], I attracted the the aggro very quickly.

Meng Chang Jun felt some pain and backed away. He lifted up his Dragon Spear and glared at me with a horrifying face as he guffawed, “Kid, you do possess some ability, but you must die today. Come! Accept the judgement of the final days. I will let you taste desperation until you are full—Servants of the World, all you lazy worms that have been asleep for ten thousand years, awaken from hell for me”

.....

“Pa.....”

The cover of a coffin was suddenly blasted away, and a green arm rested on the edge of the coffin.

“Waow.....”

Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue glanced at each other as their faces turned pale, “Why is there an ominous feeling in the air. This.....”

Chapter 433: Robe of the Talented

On the map, over a hundred red dots suddenly appeared. At that moment, my heart nearly stopped. This was the beginning of an unbelievably unfair situation. There was no doubt about it, this was unfair!

“Look, check what level those monsters are....” I asked while I fought the BOSS, “Meng Chang Jun only has 20% health left. Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, Tang Xue, make sure your firepower doesn’t run out. Li Mu, Little Wolf, and Wan Er, you guys need to think of a way to hold off those monsters. We have to slow them down. We’ll finish the BOSS in 10 minutes!”

.....

Li Mu raised his sword with both hands, his face green, “Guildmaster.... they’re all level 91 Valkyrie Tier BOSS-es. How are we supposed to block them?!”

“What?!”

I quickly turned around, and my eyes were about to roll out of my head. It was just as Li Mu had said. All of the monsters that crawled out of the graves were all level 91 BOSS-es. Motherf*cker, these were all Meng Chang Jun’s mercenaries, strategists, and intellectuals. Right now, they’ve all crawled out, and every single one was worth a thousand normal soldiers. Was our little [Zhan Long] team going to die like this!?

One after another, familiar names seemed to pop up. The few that stood at the very front had arms covered with blight and their names listed above their heads —

[Feng Xuan] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS): Meng Chang Jun’s Mercenary

[Su Dai] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS): Meng Chang Jun’s Mercenary

[Wei Bao] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS): Meng Chan Jun’s Mercenary

.....

“F*ck, why are these names so familiar?!” I gaped.

Li Mu was also gaping, “This.... Feng Xuan, Su Dai. Aren’t those famous ancient people? Isn’t this bullsh*t?”

I was suddenly slammed into the wall by Meng Chang Jun’s Dragon Spear and nodded, “It’s extreme bullsh*t!”

Dong Cheng Yue yelled as she cast a spell, “Saying this stuff now isn’t gonna help us. Hurry up and think of something! Otherwise once these zombies attack, we’ll definitely be annihilated!”

Li Mu shouted, “Then what do we do?”

Little Wolf didn’t have a plan either, “Boss, think of a plan already!”

I gritted my teeth, “I’m already in this state. How am I supposed to think of a plan!”

Wan Er gripped her Dragon’s Kiss, her eyes extremely cold, “For the sake of the team, we’ll just have to make sacrifices. Little Wolf and Li Mu, you guys charge with me. We’ll lure the BOSS-es away, and lead them to one of the corners of the palace. Let’s let Li Xiao Yao, Matcha, and Dong Cheng safely kill the BOSS. Even if we were to die, then it’ll be worth it!”

Li Mu nodded, “Alright!”

The three people rushed to the other three corners of the palace. Just as expected, they separated the 100+ BOSS-es to three different corners while I continued to circle Meng Chang Jun. My Flaming Tiger God had already died four times. The losses this time were just too great. On top of that, Matcha had been using [Fierce Ram] and [Justice Provocation] in order to help me survive!

.....

“F*ck, I’m done....”

From a distance, Li Mu’s voice travelled over. He had been surrounded by the zombie mercenaries and fell to his knees. In the distance, Little Wolf and Wan Er’s luck was much better. They were assassins, and so once they lured the BOSS-es away, they would suddenly disappear,

completing their task without taking any damage.

Dancing Forest wasn't too far away from me. She set up a [Beast Trap] and in the next moment, Meng Chang Jun's War Horse neighed as it stepped into the trap. It was stunned for 3 seconds. Wan Er and Little Wolf charged forward, then used [Absolute Step] to run away. I, on the other hand, let my two swords dance, dealing out as much damage possible. Once all of my skill cooldowns finished, the BOSS's health kept on dropping lower and lower. It was almost completely killed. Otherwise, Li Mu's ghost will have to wait a long time before it can be revived.

I carefully watched Meng Chag Jun's health. I even had to use [Seven Star Teleportation], or else my healing would never be able to catch up with the damage I was receiving!

“Shua!”

Once I stepped into one of the spots, Meng Chang Jun's Dragon Spear stabbed through thin air. He roared in anger, “Dammit. You wily little scoundrel, I will cut you into a thousand pieces!”

Unfortunately, I had to activate my [Seven Star Teleportation] every time to dodge [Horse Rush]. At worst, I could also use [Blade Rush] to dodge the attacks. In the distance, Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng Yue used ice type skills to slow down the BOSS, making it easier to kill him.

To be honest, Meng Chang Jun had summoned 100 mercenaries. But, now that they were all lured away, these mercenaries weren't a big problem. These mercenaries didn't have as high an AI as Meng Chang Jun, and can't automatically run over to attack. Otherwise, it wouldn't be a 10 man SSS Tier Quest, but a 100 man God level quest. These 100+ Valkyrie Tier BOSSes weren't something that normal parties of ten could deal with.

I stared at Meng Chang Jun's health. My heart beat faster and I smiled, “This Saint Tier BOSS won't drop a Saint Tier equipment for me, will it?”

Wan Er bit her lip, “Is it that easy to drop a Saint Tier Equipment? The reward for being MVP of the City War was a Saint Tier equipment. I feel like the drop rate should be extremely low....”

“Yea, let’s just pray to Lady Luck then! Little Wolf, go lure those BOSSes away from Li Mu. Let him revive so he can get some experience!”

“Alright!”

The BOSS’s health felt lower and lower. We all basically stared at it as it dwindled—

7% !

6% !

5% !

.....

All the way until there was only 1% left. There was only 10,000 health left, and the ten of us had completely recovered our firepower. Finally, with one of my attacks, Meng Chang Jun’s horse cried out and fell to its knees, throwing its owner to the ground. Meng Chang Jun yelled out, “My fate is set, I’m afraid I cannot continue my cause!”

“Shua!”

A ray of light fell on me. Because I was the one that killed the BOSS, I was able to rise all the way to level 83. At the same time, Meng Chang Jun’s dead corpse dropped several equipments, all of which were dazzling!

Li Mu picked up his sword and walked over, while he grinned, “Sacrificing myself for the sake of the team....”

I nodded, “Ok, once we get a sword, we’ll give it to you first!”

“Then I’d feel a bit rude!”

“Then give it to me first....”

“Wow....”

“It’s so hard to please you...”

.....

I walked up front and moved Meng Chang Jun’s battle cloak out of the way. There were three pieces of equipment piled underneath. There was a

red and green colored wrist guard, an unusual mage cloak, and a pair of leather leg guards. I first picked up the wristguards. There was a bizarre energy that emanated from it. I waved my hand over the wrist guards, and the stats appeared. Heh, it was a Valkyrie Tier equipment, good stuff—

[Grip of the Fierce Tiger] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 570

Strength: +73

Endurance: +71

Agility: +70

Additional: Increases the user's critical hits by 29%

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 35%

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 400

Special: [Eye of the Tiger] once activated, it will make sure that every attack for 12 seconds cannot be dodged

Level: 82

.....

I raised the Valkyrie Tier wristguards and smiled, "Then I'll follow up with my promise.... Li Mu, this wristguard is yours! I follow through with what I say, or else that level that you lost will be for naught....."

Li Mu rubbed his nose, "Never mind. I was just saying. A level 82 Valkyrie Tier equipment, it isn't any old cheap equipment. Why don't we roll for this, whoever wins, gets it. That way I won't feel bad!"

I patted my own wrist guards and smiled, "Why would you feel bad? Right now, I have the Divine Dragon Slaying Arms equipped. They're also Valkyrie Tier. Even though the defense is a little worse, the [Defeat the Dragon] special skill outweighs the cost. I'll be using these wrist guards until level 100."

Li Mu nodded, "Well alright then, I might as well!"

I continued to look through the equipment. That unusual mage robe was as white as snow and sparkled. It was as soft as a girl's skin..... eh, that was a bit exaggerated. To be honest, it just felt very nice in my hand. On top of that, you could tell that it had a lot of magic power imbued in it. When we shared the the stats, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands and Dong Cheng both took a deep breath—

[Robe of the Talented] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Cloth Armor

Defense: 420

Magic: +75

Endurance: +72

Agility: +70

Additional: Increases the user's magic attack by 24%

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 500

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 1000

Special Effect: [Magic Amplifier] Increases magic attack by 10%

Required: 82

.....

Raising the Robe of the Talented, I smiled, "You two, why don't you ROLL again. Now that we've entered the Grave of the Warring States, the people who want it the most are probably you guys. All equipments are dependent on the ROLL!"

Dong Cheng Yue carefully began the ROLL, and it stopped on 71!

Tang Xue was a little nervous. As soon as she let go, it landed on 49. At that moment, she cried, "Such a good robe.... well a loss is a loss. Looks like my luck today really isn't that good. Before, I never really ROLled below a 50...."

I threw the Robe of the Talented to Dong Cheng Yue and smiled. "Keep it up! There's still a last BOSS. It will be at least a Saint Tier. On top of

that, its drop rate will be pretty high, it'll definitely drop something that is at least as good as this BOSS's!"

Wan Er blinked a few times, "The last BOSS should be the legendary Xin Ling Jun that saved Zhao?"

I looked at the Tiger Talisman and said, "Yup, or else they wouldn't use this Tiger Talisman as the introduction. The last BOSS is undoubtedly Xin Lin Jun."

Continuing on, I looked at the last piece of equipment. It was a pair of leather leg guards. Our luck was pretty great, it was another Valkyrie Tier equipment. As long as it wasn't gold or silver equipment, then it is all good!

[Pursue and Kill] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 490

Agility: +74

Endurance: +72

Strength: +69

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 14%

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 100 and attack speed by 10%

Required: 82

.....

They were a pair of extremely good leather leg guards. I looked at Little Wolf and Wan Er, "Little Wolf, why don't you ROLL with Wan Er?"

"No need!"

Wan Er stood up and smiled, "I'm wearing level 77 Valkyrie Tier leg guards right now. Why don't you give it to Little Wolf!"

Little Wolf was unable to contain his joy, "Then I'll just thank the little miss!"

“No need to thank me, you’re Li Xiao Yao’s brother, so you’re one of us.”

“Yup yup!”

Little Wolf took the leg guards. Since his level was a little low, he could only wait to put them on.

.....

After splitting up the soul gems and cards, we got another Guild Creation Tablet as well. Our luck wasn’t bad this time. I pondered for a second, we could use the tablets to create [Zhan Long]’s third and fourth divisions. This was a necessary item!

We discovered an entrance under the throne behind Meng Chang Jun. Let’s head to the fourth floor, Xin Lin Jun is waiting for us!

I looked at the pitch dark hole and took a deep breath, “Keep it up! We’ll get through this night and finish this quest! If you can’t take it anymore then say something.....”

Chapter 434: Desolate Sky Armor

“ShaSha.....”

My battle boots slid down the slope covered with sand and stones while my Emperor Qin’s Sword dragged across the ground to keep my balance. I was the first to drop onto the fourth level of the Grave of the Warring States. After falling for almost hundred meters, my view suddenly brightened. The fourth level was also another world. In the distance, the sun was bending in the west while the boundless wilderness had no beasts or any other small animals, and there were only decayed and rotten battlefield relics.

“Shua!”

Behind me, Wan Er also slid down and bumped into my back softly. She then held my arm and flashed a smile, “Quick move forward, otherwise we’ll be knocked down by General Li Mu!”

I pulled her up and hurriedly walked several steps away. As I looked back, the Grave of the Warring States entrance from the third level to the fourth level was embedded within a small pathway through the mountains. It looked like a small hole that was dug out by a pangolin.

Li Mu, Matcha, Wolf and Dong Cheng Yue entered the fourth level’s world one by one. As they stared at the magnificent scenery blossoming with lights in the distance, every one of them was slightly amazed. The landscape of this level was a lot nicer than the third level.

“Why can’t I see any monsters?” Wolf asked in surprise.

I held up my sword, and walked forward with my Flaming Tiger God and grinned, “We’ll know when we advance forward. There are definitely monsters here though. It’s.....Err..it’s 3 a.m. now. Everyone, do your best. Let’s try and finish this level within four hours and complete this SSS rank quest. Actually, the difficulty level of this Grave of the Warring States isn’t that high. We completed it within such a short amount of time. Usually, it would take at least 48 hours to complete a SSS rank main storyline quest, but I estimate that this one will be completed within 24

hours.

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled, “That’s because our equipment, skills and levels have all elevated. If it was our previous standard, then Meng Chang Jun would have been able to destroy our team more than ten times just now.

Wan Er gave a soft smile and agreed,”Dong Cheng is right this time. Even I didn’t notice the growth of our strength.”

I lifted my sword as I stepped up a dirt slope. The moment I looked forward, the scenery in the midst of the wilderness shocked me.

A small cavalry slowly got closer to us. When they were around 40 yards away, I was able to read their stats. They were truly quite a bit stronger than normal Phantom Tier monsters—

[Warring States Armored Horsemen] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 93

Attack: 3200-4050

Defense: 3500

Health: 150000

Skills: [Halberd Throw] [Charge Break] [Iron Heel]

Introduction: Ancient Warring States Armored Horsemen, elite armored horses pick out their own riders who then undergo extremely harsh training and have the strongest killing skills. They are under the command of Xin Lin Jun. These Warring States Armored Horsemen attacked the Qin Army south of the Yellow River, and broke through the defense of the Qin General Meng Ao’s army. They pursued them all the way to Han Gu Pass, and the story of their might shook the world Now, these elite Warring States Armored Horsemen have slept under the dirt for thousands of years always dreaming of vengeance. Any living thing that trespasses upon their territory will be cut into a thousand pieces.

.....

Li Mu mumbled, “So cruel! These monsters aren’t even BOSSes, and yet

they have 4000 attack. I don't know what effect they'll have on my 3000+ defense....”

I grinned, “Of course they'll break through your defense. What else is there left to say? They'll probably even break through my 4200 defense. Li Mu, how much is your MaxHP?”

“8500+....”

“That's pretty good, you can take them on with that amount. In a second I will lure a team of Armored Horsemen over. Let's have a taste and see if we can really kill them efficiently. There're just too many though. I'll use [Binding Chains] to grab one, Wan Er and Little Wolf can stun another, while Little Dance can use [Beast Trap] to trap another. After that, I'll signal to one of them, Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns and Little Dance will all attack that one. Let's try and kill one within 10 seconds. That way, there won't be too much danger. Darling Duck and Springs, just make sure you keep on healing us. Li Mu, Matcha and I will block their attacks!”

“Alright!” Everyone was excited. This was the first time we'd ever seen a Thunder Tier monster, so it was impossible to not be so.

.....

Pulling out the Emperor Qin Sword and Cold Iron Sword from the sheaths on my back, and stepped forward. From a distance, I raised my Emperor Qin Sword and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. Three blades appeared and pierced one of the Armored Horsemen!

“4473 ! ”

There wasn't too much pressure when it comes to breaking their defense, that was good. The Armored Horseman gave out an angry cry, and rushed over with his halberd. The 14 other horsemen followed behind, shouting, “We will defend the dignity of our country!”

I quickly retreated. At the same time, I turned around and swung my sword down, activating [Binding Chains]. Like that, the very first horseman was bound to his original place while the rest rushed past him.

The movement speed of these armored horsemen was just too fast, it was almost practically twice my own. I couldn't even run away from them. Li Mu and Matcha caught up with me to help. I turned around and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] to get some of the aggro. After that, my Cold Iron Sword flew out, as I threw [Blade Spin] into the crowd of horsemen.

Matcha softly called out, using [Justice Provocation] to lure another one. Li Mu on the other hand used [Covering Sword Slash]. Wan Er and Little Wolf stood beside the road and trapped another one of them. With the attacks of Dong Cheng Yue, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, and Dancing Forest, the first Armored Horseman fell with a cry within 7 seconds!

“Use your AOE Skills!”

I commanded the Cold Iron Sword to fly out once more, and added onto the aggro that was already on myself.

“Hummmm....”

One after another, the Armored Horsemen raised their halberds and activated [Halberd Throw]. At that moment, I felt a chain of sharp pains in my chest and multiple damage numbers flew up!

“1128 ! ”

“1094 ! ”

“1273 ! ”

.....

Within seconds, my health was cut in half. Behind me, Darling Duck immediately yelled out, “[Grip of Compassion]!”

“+8754 ! ”

My health jumped back up to full. Hehe, fourth advancement healers are so helpful!

The attack power of an Armored Horseman is just too strong. They rushed our team and used [Iron Heel], a skill that had a splash damage effect. The people in the first row lost a lot of health, increasing the

pressure on the two healers a lot. I was continuously signaling which Horseman to attack. Everyone's pets also joined in on the attack, as we brought down the armored horsemen, one by one. This was the moment the benefits of great teamwork really stood out. In reality, our healers needed to consider every healing spell's cooldown and the amount of damage that we were suffering. Darling Duck was extremely smart, and always chose me as the first healing target. Even if I had full health, her heals were always locked onto me, because she knew that I had the most aggro. Over 50% of the attacks from the next wave of monsters was focused on me. Just one attack from them made me lose over 1000 HP. It was just too painful. The heals must be locked onto me or else I would lose my life.

"Ding!" a "Level +1" popped up in front of me. My [Blade Spin] rose to level 7. After 30 seconds, there was another pop up, [Wall of Dou Qi] also rose to level 7. Like this, my defense rose by quite a bit. With a level 7 [Wall of Dou Qi] I would have 140% defense, and my parrying ability would increase as well. Now, it won't be that easy for enemies to break through!

As expected, once [Wall of Dou Qi] rose to level 7, the damage that the Armored Horsemen dealt to me dropped to 900+ and didn't break a thousand. Looking at these damage numbers was much more pleasing. The only problem was that the two skills used up mana way too quickly. A level 7 skill used up 490 mana, and the two together would use around a thousand. I only had around 3700 MaxMP. Like this, I could only use Level 1 [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade] to attack. Reserving mana was also an art.

.....

After cleaning up these 15 Armored Horsemen, we gained a lot of experience from these Thunder Tier monsters. It was practically 2-3 times that of a Phantom Tier, and their drop rates were also pretty high, as 15 of them dropped 3 equipments. I picked them up, and there was a silver tier, a gold tier, and there was even a chest plate that had a slight purple tinge to it. Looking at the stats, I was stunned, "This..... handsome men and

beautiful wome, this time we seemed to have gotten lucky. This map can actually drop an equipment like this.....”

I waved my hand over it and the battle plate’s stats appeared. Little Wolf and Li Mu all jolted when they saw them—

[Desolate Sky Armor] (Purple Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 590

Strength: +51

Endurance: +44

Agility: +40

Additional: Increases the user’s defense by 11%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack by 9%

Outfit part: Desolate Sky Armor Set – Chest Plate

Introduction: Desolate Sky Armor, legend has it that during the Warring States period, in order to get more territory, each of the kingdoms would invite hermit smiths to create elite armor. One of those smiths used Cold Iron to create an insanely durable armor, which would then come to be known as the Desolate Sky Armor. Afterwards, it was scattered all over China, no one knows where it ended up.

Level: 80

.....

“F*ck...” Li Mu took a deep breath, “A purple tier chest plate with stats like this? That’s really rare.... who knows what stats bonuses the entire outfit would have. How many pieces are there?”

I looked through the stats for the Desolate Sky. At that moment, the entire outfit’s effect appeared—

[Desolate Sky Outfit]

2 pieces: Attack +15%

3 pieces: Defense +30%

4 pieces: Attack speed +20%, Natural HP Recovery Speed +50%

5 Pieces: MaxHP +3000, attack +40%

.....

F*ck.....” Little Wolf made a fist, “Aren’t these stats too op?”

I nodded with a smile, “Yea. If there were all five pieces, I feel like the stats would practically be equivalent to a set of Emperor Tier equipments, maybe even stronger!”

Wan Er smiled, “Honestly, you would need all five pieces for it to be worth it to equip. Otherwise, it’d be pointless. The entire set’s stats are just too strong, with 3000 health, and 40% increase in attack power, that’s practically a god tier equipment’s stats.”

I looked up at the other Warring States Armored Horsemen, and smiled, “Alright then, let’s keep this up. Maybe if we keep fighting, we’ll get some more. This time we have a goal. Get more pieces of this Desolate Sky outfit, so that we can help get more top tier close combat players in [Zhan Long]!”

“Ok!”

.....

And thus, our ten man team continued through the plains, killing armored horsemen under the mutual agreement that we could take out around 20 horsemen at once without dying. Darling Duck and Thousand League Springs’ control over our health was starting to get more and more flawless, and there weren’t any more dangerous situations.

Chapter 435: Dong Cheng battles Ru Ji

The time it took us to clear the monsters was far longer than I imagined. It took us almost 5 hours to get through the fourth floor, but we finally cleaned up all of the Armored Horsemen. We gained quite a bit of experience and drops, and I rose all the way up to level 83 with 57% experience and got over 59 pieces of Desolate Sky Amor, completing 10 outfits. [Zhan Long] was fated to have at least 10 top tier close combat players, or well at least they would have top tier equipment to match others.

.....

“Sha sha....”

My battle boots stepped across the desert sand. I walked up to an enormous grave, and on it was carved the words, “The Grave of the Unrivaled Xin Lin Jun”. It was clear that this was the resting place of Xin Lin Jun’s corpse. Below it was an entrance. The smell of rotten meat wafted up from the passageway. This was the most important part of this SSS tier quest. The difficulty would be much higher than that of Meng Chang Jun’s!

I gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword and said, “Let’s go. This is the last obstacle. After we finish killing this boss, we can probably eat lunch.....”

Dong Cheng Yue sneezed, “It smells terrible, we should finish up quickly.....”

“Yup, let’s go!”

I held up my swords, and jumped into the hole. After 20 meters, there was a large stone wall in front of us, and on it was carved ancient letters and a map. Once I walked up close, the stone wall started to rumble and open up, shaking the earth. Once the entrance had completely opened up, rays of sunlight fell into the passage. It was a 10 meter wide stone tunnel that traveled off into the distance. On the two sides of the tunnel were Armored Horsemen all lined up holding their halberds. Their halberds reflected a cold light that gave people the shivers.

I walked into the stone passageway with Wan Er right next to me. Her beautiful eyes glanced at the Armored Horsemen and she whispered, “Wah..... these level 93 Thunder Tier monsters, there’s.... almost 10,000 of them. If they all came at us, they would be able to kill us in seconds.....”

Li Mu whispered, “There’s some even stronger. If you look closely, there’s archers behind those horsemen. They’re also level 93 Thunder Tier, and there’s a lot of them....”

Matcha patted her shoulders and descended from the sky. She stuck out her tongue, “Behind those archers, there’s also a bunch holding fans in one hand and sickles in the other strategists. They’re all magic type mobs, they’re ones we should be careful of.....”

Dong Cheng gripped her staff, “Eh, sister, why do I feel like we aren’t here for a quest, but rather a suicide mission.... What are we supposed to do now....”

I lowered my voice, “Let’s not panic yet. Afterall, it’s just a 10 man SSS tier main quest. They probably wouldn’t all just come at us and kill us off. Let’s all just cool down really quickly....”

At that moment, a ray of light fell from the sky onto a hall at the end of the path. A total of six people who wore the same outfit stood there. One of them was wearing a purple gold helmet and a gold colored armor. He held a longsword in his hand and had a handsome face. Behind him, he wore a black cloak. He gave us a cruel smile and roared out, “Who dares trespass in my mansion?!”

“Hua la la....”

On the two sides, the thousands of soldiers knelt on the ground and shouted, “Long Live the King! Long live the King!”

I looked over at the man. Indeed, it was Xin Lin Jun, a level 93 Saint Tier BOSS. We finally made it!

Beside Xin Lin Jun, there were 5 other generals, Hou Yin, Zhu Hai, Ru Ji, Xue Yin, and Pu Bi. All of them were 93 Saint Tier BOSSes and their stats were pretty strong.

Wan Er tugged my chest plate, “This many BOSSes, how are we supposed to fight them all? Besides.... they’re all Saint Tier level BOSSes. I don’t think this game is designed in a way to let us survive this quest....”

Dong Cheng squinted, “Saint Tier level 93 BOSS, with 4000 attack and 700,000 – 900,000 health. His strongest point is his attack. We can’t block that.... especially if all 5 of them came at us at once.....”

.....

Everyone was feeling a little terrified. After all, there were so many Saint Tier BOSSes. If they all attacked at once, nobody would be able to withstand it. On top of that, this enormous tomb had several thousand people, making it even harder to block.

Xin Lin Jun raised his long sword and walked up, as he pointed the blade at me and shouted, “Listen to my command, I will now tell you how you will die — under the pain of a thousand arrows buried in your heart!”

In the distance, a group of archers all pulled back their bows. At least a hundred arrowheads were pointed at us. If we took this attack, we would definitely become porcupines!

Dong Cheng quickly raised her mana shield, her face ashen, “Wu.... I don’t want to die. I haven’t even had my first time... These NPCs are just too mean....”

Little Wolf glanced at her, “Really?”

“Of course....” Dong Cheng said bashfully.

Wan Er gave a sigh, “You’re about to die, don’t try to act cute...”

My blade jolted as I activated [Wall of Dou Qi]. i pointed my blade at Xin Lin Jun, and shouted, What kind of skill do you have to bully the weak with numbers? If you have real skill then you should duel with me! Wei Wu Ji*, over the course of history, you’re still considered a rather famous person. To think you actually had such little courage. Do you not even have the guts to fight a duel?”

TL Note: The real name of Xin Lin Jun is Wei Wu Ji, Xin Lin Jun is just a

title, as go for the other four noblemen (Chun Shen Jun, Pin Yuan Jun, and Meng Chang Jun)

Xin Lin Jun's eyes turned cold, "Bastard, what'd you say? Are you saying that I don't have the courage to battle you? I just don't want to dirty my hands with trash like you! If it's like this, then I want to see what skills you guys have. If you can overcome the first obstacle, then I will personally use my Green Copper Sword and send you to hell!

"Di!"

System Notification, Your quest entered a special situation [Duel]!

Quest introduction; You have accepted a one on one duel. You must win all five duels in order to have the chance to duel Xin Lin Jun Wei Wu Ji, otherwise the quest will automatically fail!

.....

Wei Wu Ji pointed his sword at us and shouted, "I will command five different generals to accept your challenge. You must defeat them all before I cross swords with you! Come, Hou Yin, Zhu Hai, Ru Ji, Xue Yin and Jin Bi, I will trouble you to help me teach these little bastards a lesson on what it means to be ignorant of how high the sky really is*!"

TL Note: Means to not know that there are stronger people i guess?

At that moment, a general carrying a long sword walked up front and roared, "Which little bastard wants to accept my challenge!?"

Hou Yin, one of Xin Lin Jun's visitor's. He is an extremely clever and courageous man. Looks like he's become a general. Whatever, the details don't matter..."

I looked at everyone behind me and said, "We have to solo Saint Tier BOSSes. Even though this is a lot easier than going against the whole force, it's still a solo duel. This Hou Yin has 700,000 health, and 4500 attack. Who wants to go? If no one else is, then I will!

"Wait!"

Wan Er grabbed me and whispered, "Look over there. Of the five people,

there's someone called Jin Bi. The introduction says that he's Wei Kingdom's top general. He has over 1,000,000 health and an attack that's even higher than Hou Yin's. You should stay here and prepare for your fight with him. This Hou Yin will just go to someone else.... Wu, who has the courage to try it out? Best not lose, or else all the work we did for the past three floors will go to waste....”

Little Wolf and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands both looked at each other. To be honest, nobody really had the confidence to win, after all it was a Saint Tier BOSS. If it were Emperor Tier or even Valkyrie Tier, then they wouldn't hesitate like this.

After a few seconds, Matcha brought her longsword and walked over. She held her shield over her 34Cs, covering the two snowy peaks and smiled, “Boss, why don't you let me try?”

“Ok!”

I agreed that Matcha should go out and fight. In the next moment, Matcha was automatically sent to the great hall. It has begun! On top of that, the area seemed to be in a different dimension, so we had no way of supporting her. Even a heal wouldn't pass through.

Hou Yin angrily roared and threw a cut right onto Matcha's shield!

“Keng!”

“1428 ! ”

This will be interesting. Matcha's defense was not low. To top it off, she has [Holy Shield] and [Heavenly Shield Wall] to support her. She might actually win this!

Hou Yin continued to hack away at her. With her defense, Matcha lost 4000+ health, and she immediately began her counterattack, activating [Phantom Ray Slash]+[Skyshaker Stab]. As expected, [Zhan Long]'s number one beauty knight's stats were truly terrifying. Just that one attack cut off 4000 of the enemy's health. Behind him, the Illusionary Butterfly Queen danced in the air, activating [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]. Luckily, it trapped her opponent.

Matcha immediately retreated, then raised her sword and sent out an attack!

By the time Hou Yin got out of his trap, blood began to appear on his blade. Before he could activate the skill however, Matcha used a [Fierce Ram], and interrupted him while giving him another attack. Matcha retreated. It wasn't until her 10,000+ health dropped to 3000 did she use [Cleansing Wind] to recover some health. Once Hou Yin's skill was in cool down, Matcha immediately used [Holy Shield]+[Heavenly Shield Wall] again and basically whittled away the health of her opponent.

.....

"Hu hu...." Li Mu watched the duel in the arena and sincerely said, "The Matcha right now, and the one from half a month ago, are practically like two different people. The rhythm of these maneuvers are top tier....."

Little Wolf smiled, "Matcha's execution of her tactics were never the best, but her ability to grasp the battle rhythm, and create battle plans were always top notch!"

After battling for a whole 10 minutes, a scream of pain travelled out of the arena and Hou Yin fell to his knees, dead. The equipment that he dropped was then picked up by Matcha.

Stepping onto the stone steps, Matcha's pretty face was filled with a smile, "Boss, I didn't disappoint everyone, right?"

"Nope, you definitely did not!" I laughed, "You fought beautifully....let's continue!"

.....

Not far in the distance, Xin Lin Jun's face was the color of white ash. He softly said, "Zhu Hai, it's your turn to battle for me!"

At that moment, a man wearing armor and holding a butcher's knife jumped out. His face bright red, he yelled out, "I am the King's underling, Zhu Hai! I was originally a butcher. Who dares to fight me?"

Li Mu coughed and brought out his pet. He then picked up his blade and

walked forward, “Even a butcher dares to be cocky? Let’s see how I teach him a lesson!”

As expected, Zhu Hai’s attack was pretty high, but his critical chance was very low. Li Mu was an expert that could use his attacks to his advantage, and dodged 40% of the enemy’s attacks. Add on to that he had [Combo], pets, and [Covering Sword Slash], he was able to cut down Zhu Hai’s 800,000 health.

By the third round, Xin Lin Jun’s face was completely green. He looked at a beauty dressed in ancient gear and said, “Ru Ji, how about you go forth and battle for me? How does that sound?”

Ru Ji, the concubine of the king of Wei, had an unclear relationship with Xin Lin Jun because he once saved this woman from the king’s side when he was stealing the Tiger Talisman. She was as beautiful as a flower and was wearing a red muslin*. Her clothing was very revealing, especially around her twin peaks. There was basically no way of covering it up. Her two long legs were also covered in silk. Barefoot, she held a jade flute and walked into the arena. She smiled, “If my king says that, then I will battle for you!”

TL Note: Looks like this I imagine, Ru Ji

.....

This woman was a level 93 mage. Warrior types would have no way of fighting them. That meant that it had to be either Wan Er or Dong Cheng Yue. However, Wan Er needed to stay and fight the fourth one. That meant that Dong Cheng Yue would have to fight. However, Dong Cheng that wench stared at me with a mischievous smile, “Don’t let me go brother Xiao Yao, I mean, I love you.....”

I looked at Ru Ji and said, “At least she has 36E’s, much better than our Dong Cheng....”

Dong Cheng Yue waved her staff and suddenly jumped out, “Hmph, I can’t stand that!”

PS: This is when Zhan Long’s manga came out!

Chapter 436: Battling Xin Lin

A battle between mages was a battle of wits, especially when it came to the [Mana Shield]s of the respective opponents and each person's control over their three [Dimensional Leaps]. However, since Ru Ji was a quasi-BOSS, she didn't have [Mana Shield] and can only defend with her own skin, which was going to make it easier for Dong Cheng Yue.

.....

“Hong hong hong.....”

Balls of flames and blades of wind flew out. As Dong Cheng cast her spells, she made sure to watch over the durability of her Mana Shield and her health. For the 3-5 seconds after it breaks, [Mana Shield] would be on cooldown and therefore unable to reform. On top of that, if the shield was broken too quickly, then the cooldown would last longer. However, Dong Cheng was ranked 18th on CBN Battlenet, and was one of the top tier mages on Destiny, so, naturally, she had the skill to control the cooldown time.

Once her Mana Shield broke, Dong Cheng used a [Dimensional Leap] to retreat 20 yards. She waved her mage staff and activated [Magma Abyss] to support her as she continued to attack Ru Ji. Her feet never stopped moving as she retreated. When Ru Ji tried to pursue her a second time, she used her third [Dimensional Leap] and appeared in another position, beautifully dodging all the attacks during the 7 seconds cooldown after her Mana Shield was broken.

Afterwards it was much easier. Within the next seven minutes, she was able to kill Ru Ji with a barrage of attacks!

“Ah...” Ru Ji fainted on the ground, the jade flute dropped out of her hands. She resentfully looked at Xin Lin Jun and said, “My lord, I will no longer be able to serve at your side....”

Xin Lin Jun glanced at her and let out a cold laugh, “You’ve already turned to ash and bone, how would you serve me? I’ve long brushed away the small affections I’ve had for women, rest in peace Ru Ji. You were the

last woman I had in my life....”

.....

Once Ru Ji died, it was finally Xue Yin's turn. He was the Duke of the Xue Kingdom and a good friend of Xin Lin Jun. He was probably just the Duke of some border territory. Too bad he was just a quasi-BOSS, as his fate was sealed today.

Wan Er took it upon herself to battle Xue Yin. Using stuns and advanced skills, she basically completely dominated this quasi-BOSS. In a short 5 minutes, she successfully decimated him!

The last one was the general of the Wei Kingdom Jin Bi, who was also a famous general of that time. Or rather, he's pretty much a fake famous general. It says in the history books that when Xin Lin Jun stole the Tiger Talisman to save the kingdom from the Zhao Kingdom, Jin Bi didn't agree with the plan and ended up getting killed by Zhu Hai from a mace to his head. The only thing was that his position as a commander is pretty dazzling, so his stats are somewhat stronger!

Carrying his long halberd, Jin Bi disdainfully looked at me, “Little wench, I'll give you a quick death, are you ready?”

I didn't say anything, just pulled out my Emperor Qin's Sword with my right hand, and waved my left hand as I let my Cold Iron Sword leap out of its sheath. I used [Blade Spin], and the sword cut through Jin Bi's body. I quickly advanced forward and used [Wall of Dou Qi] to protect myself. My Emperor Qin's Sword let loose a level 9 [Combo] onto Jin Bi's shoulder, which created 5 damage numbers. I quickly cut at him with both swords once again, and then opened up my palm and activated [Binding Chains]. The bind was a success and trapped Jin Bi for 7.2 seconds. The Level 9 [Binding Chains] success rate was pretty high, even against a BOSS level target. The success rate was 72% normally and against Jin Bi, it was probably around 50%, which wasn't a pretty good number.

My Flaming Tiger God roared as it leapt out of the pet dimension. He used [Flame Claw] and [Burstfire Raid] as he slashed his claws through

Jin Bi. From a distance, I commanded my [Blade Spin] to attack while I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with my other sword. The battle rhythm was completely in my grasp, so this fight wasn't too hard. In a short 4 minutes, Jin Bi's health hit the bottom and this time the Emperor Qin Sword connected a superior attack, killing Jin Bi!

“Shua!”

I received an ample amount of experience as well as three pieces of equipment. I picked them up to look at them. The highest as was before, was a purple tier equipment. I threw them into my bag and looked forward. This quest was entering its next stage!

Xin Lin Jun gripped his long sword, his eyes unyielding, “Seeing as you were able to pass my first test, then I'll let you have a taste of my skills. I have not dueled with anyone for tens of thousands of years. I will show you all of the skills I have, and if I accidentally kill you all, then you can't blame me. Hahaha.....”

.....

The dueling ring at the center disappeared and all of the Warring States soldiers assumed a resting stance as they waited for Xin Lin Jun to “teach us a lesson.” In reality, Xin Lin Jun truly is a formidable opponent. As the last BOSS in this SSS Tier quest, he was realistically not going to be as easy to deal with as the other three. I slowly got near Xin Lin Jun and read out his stats—

[Xin Lin Jun – Wei Wu Ji] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 93

Attack: 4700-5500

Defense: 4500

Health: 12,000,000

Skills: [Summon the Blood Kirin] [Skysaker Slash] [Slash through Mountain Rivers] [Almighty Lord]

Introduction: Xin Lin Jun, an outstanding king during the Warring States

period. He has many devoted and talented followers under his command. His character is very outspoken and he has made friends with countless heroes. Afterwards, he became known as the Almighty Lord, arousing the suspicions of the Emperor. Xin Lin Jun was a superior commander in chief, and led his armies time and time again to defeat invading enemies. When he was suspected by his emperor, he became depressed and died amidst wine and women.

.....

“Eh...” Wan Er bit her lip. The night breeze brought a chill throughout the hall, fluttering her cloak and revealing the beautiful snowy legs that were wrapped in leather. It was truly hypnotizing. This was the acclaimed Fan Shu City’s number one beauty. In reality, she was probably also the most beautiful woman on the China Server. Standing there, it was almost as though all of the elegant spirits of Heaven and Earth were in that body, there was even the glow that she had from being one of the top tier experts on CBN Battlenet. This was what a goddess looked like. However, this goddess was looking a little sullen as she read through Xin Lin Jun’s stats. Her beautiful face was wrinkled with worry, “This... this is going to be a bit hard. These stats are a lot higher than Meng Chang Jun’s. Those skills alone look pretty strong....”

Dong Cheng made a fist, “Wu, the first skill is [Summon the Blood Kirin], it isn’t summoning some ancient beast to help him fight is it? If it’s like that then we don’t have any chance....”

I gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword, “No matter what, we can only fight him head on. Everyone prepare to start the battle. I’ll start off the attack, healers, make sure to set your spam on me..... get ready!”

I opened up a palm and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the BOSS. I took a deep breath and said, “The tactics will be the same as before. Everyone be careful of the BOSS’s skills. We all know what [Skysaker Slash] is, but [Slash through Mountain Rivers] and [Almighty Lord], I have no idea about. All in all, we have to be careful!”

Matcha blinked a few times, “[Slash through Mountain Rivers] is a skill

that condenses the energy of mountain rivers into one slash. Against a target with low strength parameters, it'll deal even higher damage, and so, Mages, Healers, Archers and Assassins all have to be careful that they don't get hit by [Slash through Mountain Rivers], or else it's entirely possible that you'll get killed in one hit."

I nodded and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

"2219 ! "

Not good, Xin Lin Jun's 4500 defense was too great. I couldn't break through it. On the bright side, Dancing Forest had her [Shield Breaker Shot] and it has a cumulative stacking effect, decreasing his defense by 22.5% in total. The effect was pretty good.

"You brazen little whelp, die!"

Xin Lin Jun roared out, and jumped up. He swept out his Green Copper Sword, and used a [Skyslayer Slash]. I didn't have time to dodge, but used my Cold Iron Sword to parry the attack. I did not expect my blade to be completely knocked away though. My strength seemed to be a little lower than Xin Lin Jun's. In the next moment, the [Skyslayer Slash] fell onto my Magic Spite Armor!

"Peng!"

"7128 ! "

My body felt as though it had been ripped apart and I was forced back from the impact of the explosive hit. "Peng!" I smacked onto the stone floor and slid backwards all the way to the opposing wall, creating a dent in the wall. Just from this, you could tell just how great Xin Lin Jun's attack power was!

"I'll go!"

Darling Duck used [Grip of Compassion] first to bring my health back to full. I dragged myself up with my Emperor Qin's Sword and let my Cold Iron Sword fly with the power of [Blade Spin]. The attack cut through Xin Lin Jun 6 times. From there, I found the BOSS's weakness and yelled out, "Target the BOSS's neck and armpit! Those are all weak points, it creates

at least 25% more damage than normal!”

Once my words fell, Xin Lin Jun jolted and swept out his blade, as he laughed, “Die!”

“Peng!”

It was another attack, and I slid along the ring shaped border. My Flaming Tiger God supported itself with [Flame Armor] and it roared out as it protected its master. With a “Pa!”, it slammed its sharp claws down, which was followed by a [Fierce Roar]. But it still couldn’t attract the BOSS’s aggro. It was as if Xin Lin Jun paid special attention to me, feeling as though he had to kill me no matter what.

I opened my palm and used [Reflect], I had no other choice!”

“Dang!”

“12,292 ! ”

I had reflected back 12,000 damage, f*ck, I’ve really overlooked the advantages of using [Reflect]. This was the amount of damage the BOSS would’ve dealt to me if I had no defense. Now, I reflected that amount back at him. This was the best part of the skill. In the middle of battling, countless close combat players that have unique skills have died under their own skills being reflected back at themselves. However, this meant nothing to long range players, since the skill only reflects close combat attacks. Long range arrow clusters and surrounding compounding spells can all break through the skill.

Xin Lin Jun was astonished by the fact that his attack was reflected back. I immediately retreated and raised my Emperor Qin’s Sword and cast [Black Tortoise Realm] throughout the hall. At the same time, I changed my point of view and started moving towards the north side of the great hall. As for Dong Cheng Yue, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, and Dancing Forest, the three girls used all their skills to attack. The BOSS was chasing after the main tank, the best situation for the girls.

“Careful!” Wan Er was moving beside me as she said, “The BOSS’s cooldown is over. He’ll probably use a combo of [Skyslayer Slash]+[Slash

through Mountain Rivers]!”

I nodded and flashed my blade, throwing a [Wind Blade] behind me!

“Peng!”

“3487 ! ”

I parried with my Cold Iron Sword. “Peng!” It rammed against the BOSS’s Green Copper Sword. Unfortunately, I couldn’t interrupt his skill, and the [Skyslaker Slash] took off 5000 HP. I could see that the [Slash through Mountain Rivers] skill was coming!

Wan Er was anxious and activated [Absolute Step] and raised her Dragon’s Kiss, [Gouge] failed!

“MISS ! ”

“Oh no....”

At that moment, another beautiful shadow appeared at the BOSS’s flank. Matcha used a heavy [Fierce Ram] and knocked away the BOSS’s [Slash through Mountain Rivers]. This made Xin Lin Jun even more furious. He turned around and threw three cuts right into Matcha, forcing her to retreat—

“5281 ! ”

“6272 ! ”

“7127 ! ”

Matcha activated [Cleansing Wind] and gulped down a 3000 health potion while Thousand League Springs also gave her a heal. Her little face was ashen, “This BOSS’s attack is too savage.....”

.....

Thousand League Spring’s [Grip of Compassion] fell and I recovered most of my health. I crossed my Emperor Qin’s Sword and Cold Iron Sword, and activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]! After that, I used a [Combo] and several other slashes, all landed on the BOSS’s back for a total of 10 slashes. The speed of the attacks dragged the BOSS’s aggro

back on me!

“Go die!”

Xin Lin Jun spun around and threw a cut at me. The blade emanated a green mountain shaped glow, it was [Slash Through Mountain Rivers]!

“Peng!”

“4172 ! ”

Thankfully I was the one who took the hit, so it wasn't as terrifying. But, the strength of the attack forced me to slide back at the opposing wall. I raised my arm, letting 50 God Army Cards fly up. My Mohist Five Scrolls top tier skills must be used, or else this BOSS would be impossible to kill.

“Shua....”

On the wall, an enormous green crossbow appeared, it was none other than the Mohist Five Scrolls skill — [Azure Dragon Crossbow]

Chapter 437: [Almighty Lord]

[Azure Dragon Crossbow], the fourth skill of the Mohist Five Scrolls, and a large scale city war machine, used up 50 God Army Cards to use it. These were definitely bank breaking skills. Every God Army Card needed at least a silver tier equipment or higher as sacrifice, and right now I only have 7 stacks, in other words I only have 700 God Army Cards left since I don't normally use them.

There was an enormous crossbow hung on the wall behind the Azure Dragon. A red glow began to congeal and form the shape of a giant god. That god gave a low growl, as if it were trying to ask me something. I immediately locked the target onto Xin Lin Jun. In the next second, the giant god roared and drew the Azure Dragon Bow, and placed five arrows on the string. "Shua Shua Shua" they all flew out!

.....

"Peng peng peng....."

I could hear the arrows puncturing the armor. Xin Lin Jun retreated several steps. He had been forced backwards a dozen meters by the Azure Dragon Crossbow. The five arrows all dealt astonishing damage—

"3716 ! "

"3621 ! "

"3529 ! "

"3417 ! "

"3317 ! "

.....

Matcha's jaw dropped, "What is this? There's.... there's actually something this strong?"

Dong Cheng Yue said, "The Azure Dragon Crossbow has 80% of Xiao Yao's attack. It's damage definitely wouldn't be that low."

"He, damn!"

After Xin Lin Jun suffered that chain of attacks, he became enraged. He raised his Green Copper Sword, he charged right at the Azure Dragon Crossbow. Suddenly, he jumped up and dropped his blade right on the giant god's shoulder!

“7187 ! ”

.....

“F*ck!” Dong Cheng Yue took a deep breath, “That Azure Dragon Crossbow can even be attacked?!”

“Hurry up and save the Azure Dragon Crossbow....” I yelled as I dashed over, “ The Azure Dragon Crossbow only has 100,000 health. In other words, after that 100,000 HP is gone, it'll disappear. The cool down is 3 minutes. We can't afford that!”

“Peng!”

[Binding Chains] broke through the rocks. This time my luck wasn't bad, it actually managed to bind Xin Lin Jun. The giant god roared in the sky and raised his palm to the sky, making another 5 arrows appear on his crossbow string. He drew his Crossbow and attacked Xin Lin Jun again.

“Keng!”

Xin Lin Jun's aggro was completely locked onto the Azure Dragon Crossbow. Using his sword, he rammed away Matcha's shield. I used all my power to stop him, I stabbed both my Cold Iron Sword and Emperor Qin's Sword onto the BOSS's shoulder!

“4129 ! ”

“3718 ! ”

My luck held up, I was able to push Xin Lin Jun back a few steps. Dancing Forest then set a [Beast Trap] next to the wall. Once Xin Lin Jun suffered a third attack, he fell into the trap. This strong Warring States Noblemen fell into a trap just so that he could knock away the Azure Dragon Crossbow.

.....

As we slowly whittled down Xin Lin Jun's health, he finally hit 80%. With a loud roar, he raised his blade and shouted at us, "The Silent King will give you a taste of desperation. Listen to my call and rise from Hell, Snakes of the past let blood rain, Wake up – Blood Kirin!"

"Grr....."

Suddenly, something began to growl from the center of the Palace. A summoner's magic circle started to glow, and a bloody beast began to rise. Right afterwards, it slowly began to take the form of a unicorn with four powerful limbs and the head of a beast. It really was a blood red Kirin. It didn't look like a godly creature, but rather a deadly beast. Its two eyes were filled with ferocity and hunger. It knelt before Xin Lin Jun.

"Shua!"

Xin Lin Jun leapt onto the Kirin's back and shouted, "My old friend, come with me and drench the earth with blood! We will start our bloodbath here, and kill these damned little scoundrels. He he, once we charge out of this place, that old bastard Yin Zheng's seal will disappear and my strength will come back to me. Once I have recovered my strength, then this earth will be dominated by me!"

"Peng!"

I suddenly rammed into the Blood Kirin's side. It only slightly trembled while I was dizzy from the impact. Right now the difference in our strength was too much, but I didn't retreat, instead I swung my two swords and "Ka Ka Ka" hacked at the BOSS seven times. One after another, damage numbers flew up. With the attacks from the Azure Dragon Crossbow also, Xin Lin Jun's health decreased quite a bit.

"F*ck off!"

Xin Lin Jun raised his long sword, and cut right at me before going off to attack the Azure Dragon Crossbow.

Li Mu abruptly stood right in front of Xin Lin Jun and waved his hand. He activated [Flying Sword], and his sword flew right at the BOSS!

“2781 ! ”

“2217 ! ”

He gripped his sword, right as he stood next to Xin Lin Jun. Li Mu waited for the right time and activated his combo [Absolute Authority]. Everyone knew that the second his combo activated, it would create a rushing motion. Just as expected, this ram pushed Xin Lin Jun away. Li Mu then immediately dashed forward and threw five cuts into the BOSS's chest.

This quick as lightning attack made Xin Lin Jun retreat several steps. Li Mu then pulled himself away and retreated. He was a smart person, and knew that his attack's effect would disappear in seconds.

However, he did not expect that Xin Lin Jun would react so quickly. The BOSS pulled the Kirin's reigns and charged right at Li Mu. Before he could fully retreat, Xin Lin Jun already raised his sword above his head as strands of light began to weave around the sword, [Slash Through Mountain Rivers]!

“Peng!”

“6298 ! ”

Li Mu took the hit. Before he could gulp down a potion, the attack's effect paralyzed him for 0.5 seconds and like quick thunder, the second attack came, [Sky Shaker Slash]!

“8921 ! ”

Just like that, he was killed!

.....

Li Mu collapsed to his knees on the ground, and dropped his battle boots.

“Shua!”

Once again I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and stood before the BOSS. I raised my Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword in front of me to block. “Keng!” Using the angle of the attack, I immediately turned around

such that I was at the same height as the BOSS's head. I crossed my blades, and shot out 5 attacks and a [Wind Blade]+[Fierce Ice Blade] right onto the BOSS's head!

“Peng!”

Xin Lin Jun landed a punch on my chest and I flew right into the opposite wall. Matcha immediately used [Justice Provocation] to help me block for the moment. In the distance, Darling Duck raised both of her hands and was reviving Li Mu...

“Keng Keng Keng...”

Sparks flew and Matcha retreated with critical health.

With her critical health, she dragged her shield in front of her and ran. As she retreated, another beautiful shadow appeared behind her. Wan Er raised her Dragon's Kiss dagger and leapt forward. With a raise of her dagger, her [Gouge] landed upon thin air. Once she saw that [Gouge] failed, she threw a chain of attacks right into Xin Lin Jun's chest, dealing enormous damage.

Xin Lin Jun roared in anger and swept out with his sword. Was this the end of our little miss?

Wan Er had raised her iron umbrella in front of her chest and blocked!

“Peng!”

After a few flashes, Wan Er flew backwards. Assassin's really weren't suitable for head on attacks. 5000 points of Wan Er's health had been cut away. She wouldn't be able to battle for a while after that.

Just as everyone thought that we had no hope, “Pa!” the BOSS had been stunned. Little Wolf's dagger appeared behind the BOSS. His [Gouge] had succeeded, since he had around a 10% chance. Our luck was really good!

We did our best to recover from the damages and attack, everyone was worn out and a little frenzied, but even so, it was clear that the teamwork between our 10 man team was flawless. The only problem was that Xin Lin Jun was just too strong. Just one attack from him would beat down any

one of our attacks. Even I could barely take on his [Skyshaker Slash]+ [Slash Through Mountain Rivers] combo. Needless to say, it was the same for everyone else.

.....

Staring at the time, 3 minute cooldown was almost up. I immediately said, "Give up on protecting the Azure Dragon Crossbow and shift the formation towards the South end!

Everyone retreated and Xin Lin Jun charged right at the Azure Dragon Crossbow. He immediately killed it and like that, 50 God Army Cards were gone.

I raised my hand and summoned another 50 God Army Cards. On the south wall of the palace, another enormous 4 meter god appeared in the air. He pulled open his bow and placed several arrows on the string. "Shua shua shua" He let them all loose and they hit Xin Lin Jun.

Xin Lin Jun raged and charged over while we continued to defend....

Thus, the rhythm of battle continued like this while the main attacker was the Azure Dragon Crossbow.

This was what it meant to be truly killing a BOSS. Whittling away was the true method. There was no way a player existed who could one shot a BOSS. If it was like that, this game would be over. The path of a king was to rely on teamwork to kill a BOSS.

.....

After 40 minutes, at the price of Li Mu dying twice, Little Wolf once, and Matcha once, the BOSS's health was finally down to 10%. Right at that moment that bastard's fourth skill activated!

Raising his long sword, Xin Lin Jun looked up at the sky and a red glow began to emanate from his body. His eyes were filled with arrogance as he shouted, "My entire life, I've been fierce. All of the talented warriors that are buried under the earth, I ask to receive a thousand troops to defeat enemy countries, and that I accomplish my goals to make my people happy, I'd rather be a tyrant and walk a lonely path. I have my

territory, so what if I own the world, listen to my plea and battle with me – [Almighty Lord]!

“Grumble.....”

Countless corpses started crawling out of the depths of hell and surrounded the hall!

“Ding!”

Battle Notification: Xin Lin Jun activated [Almighty Lord], increases attack by 15% and increases critical chance by 20%

.....

The critical attack chance increased.....

My heart stopped. Now this was going to be hard. Normal BOSSes in didn't really have high critical chance. That was the only way main tanks could take them on. But, now that it increased by 20%, there was probably around a 21-25% chance of critical attacks. We were not gonna have it easy on us. On the bright side, the BOSS's health was only around 1,200,000. If we all used our strength, then we still have a chance.

“Keep it up!”

I rushed forward with my sword raised. I let out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and a [Blade Spin], and attacked the BOSS with long range skills. This time, we can't get too close to him, or else his [Skyshaker Slash] would definitely kill us.

Dong Cheng Yue and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands continuously cast spells. Our main offense was now all dependent on them. Li Mu didn't dare get too close any more. All he could do was watch. Smart people don't make stupid moves.

“Sha Sha....”

The Blood Kirin's four hooves suddenly spun around. Xin Lin Jun gave up on the Azure Dragon Crossbow and began charging at Dong Cheng Yue. He raised his sword and activated [Slash Through Mountain Rivers].

Dong Cheng reacted quickly and immediately used a [Dimension Leap].

The Kirin continued to chase after her. Xin Lin Jun then used a [Skyshaker Slash] and Dong Cheng used another [Dimensional Leap]!

Xin Lin Jun reacted so fast and continued to chase after her!

I glanced backwards, “Matcha!”

Matcha raised her sword and charged forward, [Fierce Ram]

“Peng!”

The interruption was a success, but now Xin Lin Jun’s sword was aimed right at her shield!

“10354 ! ”

“4177 ! ”

.....

To think that he would actually be able to one shot Matcha.....

Chapter 438: The Goddess of Luck Sends You All the Way

Once Matcha died, I desperately fought. However, Xin Lin Jun's attack was just too strong. With only a few cuts, I was forced backwards. With another [Slash Through Mountain Rivers], my shoulder felt as though it was hit with a mountain and I was blown away!

“7818 ! ”

Dong Cheng Yue's expression was terrified, “We're done for. Now that the BOSS has used [Almighty Lord] and his attack increased, Xiao Yao's strength will be completely dominated...”

Wan Er gripped her umbrella, “Keep on using crowd control attacks. 10% attack, even if we all die, we have to kill him. Darling Duck, revive Matcha and continue!”

Darling Duck gave up on healing me and began to activate [Revive]. The cast time was 5 seconds, it's extremely long.

I raised my hand, and the sound of a dragon's roar pierced the air. I activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. I needed it to get through, or else, without any heals from the healers, I would probably die within seconds. On top of that, I also activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and reactivated [Dragon's Whistle of Lightning and Thunder]. I'm fighting him head on this round!

“Keng keng!”

My Magic Spite Armor was slashed twice. Both of Xin Lin Jun's attacks cut right to the meat —

“4922 ! ”

“5017 ! ”

Thankfully, I had my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and was able to hang on. I immediately gulped down a 3000 HP potion. Thousand League Springs did all she could to milk me health. Behind me, a ray of light

appeared and Matcha was revived. I raised my sword and retreated. I couldn't keep this up with 50% health.

“Matcha, Li Mu, Wan Er, all of you, retreat!”

After I yelled that out, I activated [Seven Star Teleportation] and stepped into the light. From a distance, I activated [Blade Spin] right at Xin Lin Jun. Once his Blood Kirin turned around to charge, I immediately teleported again. This time, I stepped into the Tian Quan position. I kept going back and forth like this, with around 25 yards between each teleportation. No matter how fast the Blood Kirin was, it couldn't catch up with my instant teleportation. Xin Lin Jun growled in anger, but couldn't do anything about it.

“That.... that's one of the secret skills of the Mohist Family!”

Xin Lin Jun's eyes widened. He looked at the light from the [Seven Star Teleportation], and roared, “You are the Mohist heir, if you won't bow down to me, then I can only destroy you!”

I raised my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. Xin Lin Jun only had 4% health left. My Flaming Tiger God leapt out with a roar and I yelled out, “Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns be careful and control the rhythm of your attacks!”

“Alright....”

The closer we were to the end, the stronger Xin Lin Jun became. Finally, when he was at 2%, he angrily threw a cut that took nearly 10,000 HP. The attack scared me into shock. I noticed that my rage was almost full again!

With a wave, I activated my special skill – [Dragon Transformation]

“Hua!”

A holy light began to glow from my entire body. My bones and skin all began to change. The light around my body began to take the shape of dragon scales. My Emperor Qin's Sword and Cold Iron Sword also changed a little. I raised my sword and spat out dragon breath while hacking at Xin Lin Jun.

“Peng Peng Peng.....”

“5728 ! ”

“6102 ! ”

“18728 ! ”

The last attack was a superior+critical attack. Xin Lin Jun's health continuously dropped. But, against the Dragon Transformed Me, he was helpless. He could only just bear with the damage. With a sweep of his Green Copper Sword, he activated another [Slash Through Mountain Rivers]!

“3183 ! ”

This time, the damage was a lot less than before. After my Dragon Transformation, my strength increased a lot. I swung my two swords and continued to hack away. On top of that, I relied on my bonus 10% life steal. At the same time, I noticed that every second, my health would recover 1127, it was exactly 10% of my MaxHP. This meant that after I use Dragon Transformation, my auto recovery would also increase to 10%. Damn, this skill really could rebel against the heavens. For 60 seconds, I was basically invincible. No wonder people said that a dragon's life force was practically equivalent to that of a god. Especially a god dragon, it was probably even stronger than a normal god!

Dong Cheng gaped, “Wow, such a handsome skill.... Dragon Transformation, Xiao Yao's just too handsome....”

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands grinned, “Hurry up and attack, don't just be checking people out Dong Cheng....”

Wan Er, Little Wolf and Matcha watched from a distance. 60 seconds was definitely enough for me to kill this BOSS. On top of that, the two healers were healing only me, so I shouldn't die in this time.

“Saint Tier BOSS Xin Lin Jun, i wonder what you will drop for us?” Wan Er excitedly said.

I growled, “Armor....”

“Enough with you, at least drop a leather one....”

“A heavy armor, All five equipments from this Saint Tier are mine... “ I said with an evil grin.

Wan Er pursed her lips, “Keep dreaming....”

.....

Not a minute later, the last 4% of his health was gone. Xin Lin Jun was covered in his own blood and the Blood Kirin was torn up from our attacks. This Warring States nobleman was getting used to dying.

“Pu!”

My Emperor Qin’s Sword suddenly cut into Xin Lin Jun’s chest plate and fresh blood flowed out. Xin Lin Jun and the Blood Kirin fell to the ground. When the Blood Kirin knew that it’s owner was about to die, so it careened and then disappeared into a flash of light. Xin Lin Jun on the other hand angrily looked at me and suddenly gripped the handle of his sword and threw a punch at my chest!

“Peng!”

My chest felt as though it had been punched through while I smashed into the opposite wall. Miserably, I slumped to the ground. At the same time, a light appeared above my head and I rose to level 84!

.....

“Dang, finally finished off that Xin Lin Jun!” Thousand Suns clapped and smiled, “Good job boss!”

I crawled up from the pile of rubble and patted the dust off my legs with a smile, “But of course. Matcha, let’s look at what Xin Lin Jun dropped for us. I killed him myself, there should be a Saint Tier Equipment....”

“Maybe....” Matcha wryly smiled, “Meng Chang Jun was also a Saint Tier BOSS, and he didn’t drop any Saint Tier equipment....”

Matcha knelt beside the BOSS and took out three pieces of equipment. There was a leather armor with a blue glow, a purple-red mace with iron pikes, and a dazzling necklace with blade designs on it.

We looked at the leather armor first. Matcha waved her hand in the air and the stats appeared –

[Breezy Armor?] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense:440

Agility: +77

Endurance: +72

Stamina: +70

Additional: Increases the user's close combat attack power by 17%

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 27%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 1200

Additional: [Gale Shield] decreases 20% of the damage the user receives

Required: 84

Gender: Female

.....

Holding the Piercing Wind Armor, Matcha was a little speechless. She said, "Leather armor, and it's only for females. Little Wolf.... This leather armor is not fated to be yours. Wan Er and Dancing Forest, why don't you guys ROLL for this... or?"

Dancing Forest held her bow, "Nevermind. It increases close combat attacks. If I take it then I'll just be rude. Why don't you just give it to Cang Tong? She's going to be our vice guild master anyway! She must be strong!"

I nodded, "Based on the rules of the team, then we should give it to Wan Er...."

Thus, the Piercing Wind Armor was immediately equipped by Wan Er. The armor was initially very pretty, but on Wan Er it looked basically heavenly. Little Wolf and Li Mu couldn't take their eyes off.

I continued on to the second piece of equipment, it was a very ferocious looking mace –

[God Destroyer Mace) (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1890-2270

Strength: +77

Endurance: +76

Agility: +72

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 26%

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 400

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 1600

Special: [God Destroyer] Increases damage to heavenly type targets by 50%

Required: 84

.....

The mace had a long handle and was best for Berserkers and Knights. Matcha held the God Destroyer Mace for a bit, then threw it to me and said, "Boss, this attack is a little higher than the Flames of War Magic Blade. Why don't you take it and sell it. We can just split up the money later."

I nodded, "Ok!"

Afterwards, it was on to the last piece of equipment. It was a necklace that had a hexagram charm. Sharp blades glowed all around it. Matcha waved her hand over it, and revealed the stats. Everyone took a deep breath. It was a Saint Tier equipment. It finally f*cking appeared. Our trip to the Grave of the Warring States was well worth it.

[Necklace of Night Fury Asura] (Saint Tier)

Endurance: +99

Strength: +97

Magic: +100

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 21%

Additional: Increases the user's [Dou Qi Armor] [Wall of Dou Qi] [Dou Qi Thunder] by 25%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 2000

Special: [Curse of The Night Fury] Creates a seal on the target, making it such that the target can't use skills for 2 seconds and is half as effective against BOSSes. Uses 20 points of Rage

Level: 84

Class: Swordsman, Knight, Berserker

.....

I stared at the necklace and said, "This is probably the best spoil of war from this Grave of the Warring States... it's perfect for heavy armor types. Come, Li Mu, Matcha, we're the only ones. Why don't we ROLL for this. Whoever wins it, gets it. The time has come to see who has the most luck!"

Li Mu trembled, "This Saint Tier equipment, are we really ROLLing for it? F*ck, in the real world, this necklace is probably worth over a million RMB, are we really gonna ROLL?"

I nodded, "ROLL, we have no other choice...."

"Alright!"

Li Mu raised his hand and threw out the dice, without any hesitation. Those white die spun on the ground and numbers spun around, finally stopping on—

91!

Li Mu was stunned. He laughed, "Is this my fate? Is this what it feels like to be kissed by lady luck...."

Matcha giggled and threw out the dice—

97!

At the point, Li Mu sat onto the ground, his face ashen, “This must be a death god’s curse....”

I gripped the dice and threw mine out as well. It continuously spun and finally came to a stop. When the dice seemed to slow down on one, my heart stopped and I prayed, “Just one more turn, just one more....”

“Sha sha...”

The wind blew and the sands moved and the dice slowly turned one more time, stopping on another number—

99!

.....

Unable to contain my excitement, I raised a fist, “This is Lady Luck taking me all the way...”

Wan Er smirked, “Say that again?”

I took the [Necklace of Night Fury Asura] and smiled, “Little Miss, how about we eat something to celebrate?”

“Let’s turn in the quest first... the people that didn’t get any equipment are still waiting for the equipment reward from this SSS tier quest....”

“Ok!”

Chapter 439: Hyper-Evolution

I took off my old Desolate Divine Bone Chain, a level 57 Emperor Tier equipment. It really was about time that I changed it. I put on the new Necklace of Night Fury Asura. At that moment, I felt a warm breeze blow past my neck. All of my stats rose by quite a bit—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 84

Attack: 3841-4966

Defense: 4072

Health: 13685

Mana: 4134

Charm: 157

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 15

.....

My base attack was almost up to 5000 points, but my defense had decreased by 150. That was because the Desolate Divine Bone Chain added 150 points to my defense. However, the Necklace of Night Fury Asura substituted for that by increasing my health by 2000 points. This made my MaxHP 13,000, which was about the same as a top tier knight's health. Monks probably didn't even have that much health. This was going to be the path of most main stream close combat players – increasing their MaxHP. In all honesty, it was the most important attribute in team battles. In order for a team to reach their full potential, they must be able to have players who can tank; nothing can be accomplished once one is dead anyway.

I happily organized the rest of the stuff and looked through the ten sets of Desolate Sky Armor. Mm, I can raise 10 top tier warriors in [Zhan Long] later on, that's good.....”

I reached into the bag, and took out the Tiger Talisman, the one that

brought us to this quest. Upon raising it, a strong force pulled the Talisman out of my hand and onto Xin Lin Jun's body!

“Shua!”

The soul was summoned back to its rightful owner. The ghost of Xin Lin Jun left his body and stood in midair. He stared at me with crimson eyes, and shouted, “I was a hero for my entire life, whether it was stealing the Talisman to save the Zhao Kingdom, or when I saved my old kingdom while it was in danger, I have no regret concerning my actions. Today, you guys may have killed me, but my spirit will not admit defeat. With this Talisman, I have already used what is left of my energy to open the gates of hell, allowing the generals of the Warring States to rise. The ten saint generals who carry pieces of my soul will break this Talisman and lead the armies of hell to sweep across the great earth. Make sure your neck is nice and clean for me to cut off, you ants!

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Strawberry Matcha, General Li Mu, Wolf Totem, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, Dancing Forest, Darling Duck and Thousand League Springs have successfully completed the SSS Tier Main Quest [Warring States Period]. The Guild Base system has been activated. The first player capturable city – City of the Four Noblemen – has spawned in the Grave of the Warring States map. The City of the Four Noblemen was originally a city for the ghosts of the Four Noblemen. Now, the Four Noblemen's ghosts have been destroyed, but their 10 generals will use their Army Talismans and lead the armies of Hell to the City of the Four Noblemen. When the time comes, there will be a player event where players will enter the city to kill the ten Saint Generals and obtain the Army Talismans they have in their hands. Once they have all ten army talismans, they will be able to get an approval from Duke Luo Lei of Ba Huang City and obtain control over the City of the Four Noblemen. At that point, it will become the base of the player's guild!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the SSS Tier Main Story Quest [Warring States Period] and have obtained 240 million experience, and +10 points of charm. Your reputation in Ba Huang City has also increased, and you have earned 50,000G plus the reward [God Evolution Gem]

.....

“God Evolution Gem!?”

My heart started to thud. Motherf*cker, is this the thing that I’ve been looking for? My Emperor Qin’s Sword was currently a level 65 Valkyrie tier equipment, and has long fallen behind that of everyone else’s, but I’ve never found the method to make it evolve any further. Maybe the heavens have gifted me this God Evolution Gem?

I opened my bag and saw a red rock. I looked to see its effect and it was just as I expected —

[God Evolution Gem] : It can evolve an item one tier. Once it has been used, it will disappear. It is a holy relic.

.....

I took out the God Evolution Gem, and I didn’t say anything else just used it. I gripped my Emperor Qin’s Sword as the God Evolution Gem melted into it and suddenly, the blade began to glow. I felt the Emperor Qin’s Sword tremor a little, and it was as though it was absorbing a godlike energy. A flame suddenly rushed down onto it from the sky, penetrating the clouds above. On top of that, slivers of energy began to enter my body. A whole 10 seconds passed before finally quieted down.

I looked at my Emperor Qin’s sword again, the exterior of it had changed a little; the outline of the blade became even more tyrannical. I turned the blade around, and saw a beautiful red groove running along through the middle of the blade. On it, there was even some hard to make out golden Jia Gu* inscriptions. The hand that was gripping the sword felt extremely warm, and multiple imperial dragon symbols circled the

sword's blade. Even the name of my sword had changed—

TL Note*: inscriptions that are normally used by Chinese Fortune tellers
—

[Dragon Reservoir Sword +7] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2400-2950 (+800-1032)

Strength: +104

Endurance: +102

Magic: +100

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 27%

Additional: Ignores 40% of the target's defense

Special: [Eternal Condition] Durability will not decrease

Special: Has a 5% chance of using a dragon's power infused attack which deals 3 times more damage

Special: Has a 15% chance of dealing superior damage strike

Special: Can only be used by Xiao Yao Zi Zai, cannot be dropped, can evolve

Special Effect: [Kill for Blood] Every time this sword kills a player, the weapon's attack increases by +1%, with a max cap of 100%. The accumulated effect will disappear upon logging off.

Introduction: In the pre-ancient times, there was a Dragon Reservoir in the South Sea. Legend has it that every hundred years, a godly dragon will appear and swim in this reservoir. The Dragon Reservoir's water is limbid and sweet, and once consumed, will strengthen the body. One godly craftsman, known as "Qin Fang" built a small grass hut next to Dragon Reservoir and used a meteor and a godly jade from Qin Yun Mountain as materials for his next creation. After seven whole years, he finally created a godly equipment, named Dragon Reservoir Sword. It has been said that using this Dragon Reservoir Sword will summon the dragon energy, causing the opponent to go crazy.

Level: 85

.....

Looking at this new Dragon Reservoir Sword, I was in ecstasy. Damn, this sword's attack was second only to Wan Er's Dragon's Kiss. Though, there was no helping that, since her dagger was a level 100 equipment, while my Dragon Reservoir was only a level 85 equipment. The levels weren't too far apart though. But, an attack like this was pretty good. On top of that, the Dragon Reservoir Sword's Special Effects actually overpowered the Dragon's Kiss. Especially the [Kill For Blood] effect, since it now had a 100% max stack. The Dragon's Kiss couldn't rival that!

After equipping the Dragon Reservoir Sword, I looked at the stats. My attack had risen quite a bit—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 85

Attack: 5232-6494

Defense: 4072

HP: 13992

MP: 4414

Charm: 167

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 15

.....

With one hand gripping the Dragon Reservoir Sword and the other holding the Cold Iron Sword, my main hand's attack had already increased to the point where it was brutal. 6595 base attack with 100 stacks of [Kill For Blood] meant that I could increase the attack by 100%. On top of that, with the additional 150% attack from my other equipment and skills, that would mean that my full attack would be $6494 \times 250\% + 3983 \times 100\%$, which is around 20217 attack. That was pretty much a broken attack at this stage. Holding the Dragon Reservoir Sword gave me a feeling that I was unrivaled in this world!

On top of that, the additional stats of this Dragon Reservoir Sword were just too strong. It ignores 40% of the target's defense, meaning that even if I was against Fushen Thousand Blade or Don't Be Foolish, those iron boards, I could probably still cut through them like tofu. On top of that, there's the 5% chance of drawing upon the Dragon power, meaning that I would deal 3 times the damage. It was clear that once I deal that much damage, even a God wouldn't be able to block it!

I stood there, unable to contain myself.....

TL Note: MWAHAHAHAHAHAHA

Allenwa note: Truly -.-;

"Hello?"

Wan Er raised a fist to my chest and lightly tapped it with a smile, "Pig, did your Emperor Qin's Sword evolve? Quick, how about you show us your stats?"

I waved my hand over the sword and showed everyone the stats. At that moment, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Li Mu's faces all turned pale—

Li Mu made a fist, "This is illogical, how can there be such a high motherf*cking attack...."

Dong Cheng Yue giggled, "Is this what comes of Ou Yang Nuo Yan's promise? Not bad, does this mean our Brother Xiao Yao can turn into Ba Huang City's number one close combat killing machine?"

Matcha smiled, "Boss, keep it up! This attack really does give us hope. Just in time actually, now that there's going to be a Warring States contest, our [Zhan Long] has to be the first to get this piece of territory. Let's just see if our boss can take us there!"

I nodded and solemnly said, "That... how about everyone log off to get some rest. Our next goal is to make sure that [Zhan Long] can use its full force to fight for that city. I just don't know.... whether or not those super guilds from Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City will try and cut into this event. If they don't, then [Zhan Long] has a 30% chance of getting all 10 of those Army Talismen. If they were to join, then that would be hard to say...."

Little Wolf took a deep breath, “The City of the Four Noblemen is spawning in the Ba Huang City map Grave of the Warring States, logically speaking.... Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City’s super guilds shouldn’t be trying to steal a player base from our territory, right? Afterall, [Legend], [Hero’s Mound], [Judgement], and [Emerald Porcelain] all have deep foundations in their own main cities, what’s the point of attempting to start off anew in another city with no foundations.”

“That, is hard to say too....”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes had a clever expression, “This is, after all, the very first player base. Maybe those guild’s won’t be able to resist that kind of temptation?”

I waved my hand, “Never mind, everyone go get some rest and prepare for a long battle! Matcha, when will the event for the City of the Four Noblemen begin?”

“Wu, tomorrow at noon...” Matcha blinked a few times, “On top of that, once it begins, there’s no ending period. It will be a free for all, at least all the way until there’s a player that can get all 10 of the Army Talismans. Only then will it be over....”

“That’s interesting....”

I looked at the time and smiled, “We still have 24 hours. Just in time for us to squeeze in some rest. Li Mu, go let everyone know that at 12 o’clock noon, all [Zhan Long] members are to log on and prepare to battle for the City of the Four Noblemen!”

Li Mu nodded, “Understood, I will do it without fail!”

I smiled, “Oh, right. What did you guys get from this SSS Tier Main Quest?”

Matcha smiled, “A Valkyrie Tier armor...”

Little Wolf, “A Valkyrie Tier dagger, now I have something for my other hand...”

Li Mu, “A Valkyrie Tier necklace!”

Darling Duck, “A Valkyrie Tier ring that increases heals...”

Wan Er, “A Saint Tier necklace that adds agility....”

Li Mu widened his eyes, “Damn, is this discrimination?”

I laughed, “Alright already, let’s all log off and rest. The battle starts at noon tomorrow!”

“Alright!”

.....

Everyone logged off. I then met up with Wan Er and Dong Cheng to discuss what to do for lunch. After battling for 24 hours in this Grave of the Warring States, the thing we needed most was food and sleep.

Chapter 440: Licked all over

After returning to Ba Huang City, I went straight to National Beauty to put the Flames of War Magic Blade and God Destroyer Mace on display. Once I handed it off, the system immediately sent out two free ads. This was because the ranking of the two weapons were so high that the system automatically gave free ads—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Attention players, Player xxxx is selling “Flames of War Magic Blade” (Level 82 Superior Valkyrie Tier Equipment) in Ba Huang City’s National Beauty. This blade is currently ranked third amongst all sabres in China. The starting price is 400,000 RMB and will be auctioned for 12 hours. If you are interested, please come by!

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Attention players, Player xxxx is selling “God Destroyer Mace” (Level 84 Superior Valkyrie Tier) in Ba Huang City’s National Beauty. This weapon is currently ranked first amongst all maces in China. The starting price is 500,000RMB and will be auctioned for 12 hours. If you are interested, please come by!

.....

At that moment, all of the players in Ba Huang City erupted into discussion. The two equipments were both the cream of the crop, and on top of that, all level 80+ equipments were in high demand since they were currently the highest level equipment. We couldn’t even get them until we were in a high level map like Grave of Warring States. Other people probably wouldn’t even had the opportunity to enter a map like that. And thus, for a short period of time, these equipments would burn in your hand.

Done! Log off!

I took off the helmet, and took a deep breath as I regulated the qi running through my body. Even though I had been online for 24 hours, I

was still feeling pretty great. It might be because I was a Royal Air expert, so even if I were to pull an all nighter, my body would be in a much better state than that of a normal player. For a lot of people, after staying in game for too long their bodies would start to deteriorate, and their reactions would slow down. I, however, did not suffer any of that deterioration.

I put on a jacket and walked out with my clothes in disarray. I dashed over to the girl's dorm and saw that in the distance, Wan Er and Dong Cheng both had woolen jackets on; Wan Er's was coffee colored and Dong Cheng's was a light green. They looked like a pair of pretty twins. You had to look carefully in order to tell them apart. Of course, I could tell with one glance, since their cup sizes were different....

"Let's go....." I said with a smile, "Good work everyone in the Grave of the Warring States!"

Wan Er giggled, "Congratulations Brother Xiao Yao, now that your Emperor Qin's Sword has evolved to the Dragon Reservoir Sword, the attack has increased a ton..... On top of that, you have the Saint tier equipment Necklace of Night Fury Asura, two fortunes have come to your house...."

I laughed, "Thank you, thank you, Wan Er, didn't you also get a saint tier necklace? Besides, the stuff you got isn't much worse than mine...."

Dong Cheng pouted, "Wu, then I was the only one who didn't get much, I only got two Valkyrie Tier Equipments...."

"Oh be quiet, let's go and eat. I'll treat you all."

"Alright, that means you're going to treat us every day."

"Ok."

The three of us walked over to the cafeteria and ordered a few stir fry dishes and ate a delicious meal. The two girls however kept squinting their beautiful eyes, they were probably too tired from playing so long.

After we finished eating, everyone had a cup of milk tea in one hand as we walked down a small path in the university.

“After 24 hours, the City of the Four Noblemen will spawn and there’ll be another great war. Our luck isn’t bad, for the first Player City to appear in Ba Huang City...” I said cheerfully.

Wan Er pursed her lips, “Yup, you’ll definitely be able to fight at your fullest strength. Try and steal those 10 Army Talismans. Once you have a Guild Base, [Zhan Long] would pretty much become the number one guild in Ba Huang City. Even [Vanguard] and [Prague] will have to restrain themselves in fear of the consequences. By then, the guild rankings will probably have refresh. He he, [Zhan Long] will probably be at least in the top five guilds!

I gave a wide grin, “Yup yup, but we have to first be able to obtain victory in this battle. I’m just worried that some super guild from the other cities will try to cut into this pie as well. By then, we would have some problems. Afterall, [Zhan Long] only has 20,000 players, with 15,000 players online at any time. Compared to guilds like [Legend], [Hero’s Mound], and [Judgment] who have over several tens of thousands of players, we have no way of competing.”

Dong Cheng smiled, “Fang Ge Que must be an extremely precise person. The second [Legend] laid its foundations in Jiu Li City, Fang Ge Que was destined to dominate that city. It is because of that, that [Legend] will definitely not participate in this battle for the player camp because that would be a meaningless battle. Also [Judgement]’s guildmaster Ye Lai is your friend, so he probably won’t be trying to oppose [Zhan Long]. As for Jiu Li City’s other guilds, they most likely wouldn’t do anything reckless. Unless someone goes and asks for reinforcements, they will probably quietly watch on the side.”

“What about Fan Shu City?” I furrowed my brows and said, “The variability of Fan Shu City is too great. [Hero’s Mound] is the biggest guild there, and only Emerald Porcelain even comes close to their numbers. Except they can hardly rival them. Besides, [Hero’s Mound: First Division] laid its foundation in Ba Huang City. Wang Ze Cheng has always hated [Zhan Long] to the bone, and I’m afraid that he’ll ask Q-Sword for reinforcements. If it’s like that, then our enemies will be much

too strong. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, how many people does [Hero's Mound] have in Fan Shu City registered? How many can be online?"

Wan Er blinked a few times and wryly smiled, "We have 80,000 registered, and around 60,000 online. We basically rival [Legend]."

I couldn't help but shiver, "That's 4 times the number of [Zhan Long]'s players...."

Wan Er grinned, then lightly bumped her head against my shoulder and smiled, "Don't worry. Dong Cheng and I will convince Q-Sword to not send troops to Ba Huang City. Besides, the City of the Four Noblemen is something for the Ba Huang City guilds to fight over, [Hero's Mound] wasn't supposed to try and join in on it anyway."

"Ok...."

I looked towards the girl's dorm and smiled, "Wan Er, you and Dong Cheng should go and get some sleep...."

Wan Er squinted her beautiful eyes and shook her head, "Don't wanna!"

"Then what do you want to do...."

"I just don't want to go back. Anything else is good...."

I was speechless. Finally I gave up with a sigh, "At least get some sleep...."

"Sleeping doesn't mean you have to do it on the bed...." Wan Er pointed towards the east and smiled, "There's some benches in the Couple's Retreat Garden. Why don't we head over for a bit. The afternoon sun is so warm, and I'll start growing mold from staying in the dorms for too long. I want to get some sun...."

"Alright... what about Dong Cheng?"

"Well, I have to come with...."

"Ok...."

The three of us walked over to the Couple's Retreat. There were quite a few students flirting in the garden. It was basically a park for lovers. I

chose to sit on a stone bench that was facing the Library. Wan Er sat beside me and took out her phone to read the forums. She read some game data while I closed my eyes for a second to rest and slowly urged the qi in my body to begin circulating.

I don't know how much time passed, but when I looked around, Wan Er had already fallen asleep. Her pretty face leaned against my shoulder while Dong Cheng slept against Wan Er's shoulder.

Looking at her peaceful face, I couldn't help but smile wryly. After spending 24 hours online, she was probably exhausted, but sleeping like this probably wasn't very comfortable.

And so, I softly lowered my shoulder, and Wan Er naturally fell into my lap. After that, she continued peacefully to sleep on my lap. After that, I took off my jacket and laid it over her chest. As I was doing this, I accidentally glanced down her neckline and saw the deep curves of her snowy peaks. At that moment, my heart beat quickened, but I dared not look further. I softly put my arm around her, then looked at Dong Cheng. That girl was hugging Wan Er's hips and even started drooling.

I slowly stretched out my Yi Hai. Once I made sure that this place was safe, I closed my eyes as well. As I hugged Wan Er in my lap, I reached my right hand out and gripped Dong Cheng's hand. Protecting Wan Er was one of my duties. As for Dong Cheng, I might as well protect as well. Otherwise if I open my eyes, the little miss will still be in my lap, but little miss Dong Cheng may have been taken by some daring boy back to his dorm and started "pa pa pa"ing. If that happened, then I would feel so terrible that even if I died I would never forgive myself....

"Wu...." Wan Er squirmed a little. She was probably feeling pretty comfortable, and arched a little in my lap. She had a sweet smile on her lips as she continued to sleep.

Dong Cheng slept for a long time, and suddenly woke up. When she felt her hand being held, she jumped and looked to see that it was me. She blinked a few times, then smiled and fell asleep on Wan Er again.

.....

I'm not sure how much longer it was, but it started to get cold. I opened my eyes, and saw that Wan Er was rubbing her eyes as well. She looked up and stuck her tongue out with a smile, "How long did I sleep for?"

"4 hours, it's almost been 5 already...."

"Oh...."

Beside her, Dong Cheng also woke up and quickly checked for her bag.

I grinned, "Dong Cheng, don't check anymore, your phone and virginity are still here...."

Dong Cheng reddened. It's rare that she could get teased like this by me. Finally, she smiled, "With Brother Xiao Yao, hehe, I can't lose my phone, but I can lose my virginity...."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Alright already, wu..... why's my dress so wet on the front...."

I said, "Dong Cheng's drool...."

Dong Cheng blushed, "Pei! It definitely wasn't me. It has to be you Xiao Yao. You must've been drooling over Wan Er.... Wan Er's 34Ds. You must've seen her sleeping....and licked her all over...."

Wan Er jumped and stared at me.

I panicked, "Dong Cheng, that's enough already. Why would I be so pathetic?"

Wan Er grinned, "Ok Ok. Let's go eat dinner.... after that we can go back and rest..."

"Ok."

.....

After we ate dinner, we returned to our dorms, and I logged on!

There wasn't much I needed to do. I went to check up on the players in the main guild to make sure that there would be enough people logging on tomorrow. Over 30% of [Zhan Long]'s main players were basically professional players who relied on the game to earn money. The other

30% were students and the rest were pretty scattered. However, Li Mu already approved of them. There were 10,000 people in the main guild, and we have to make sure that at least 9500 people can stay online for a long time tomorrow. The students would have to skip school and the workers will have to ask for a break. For the sake of the guild's encampment, we must accept certain sacrifices.

Afterwards, I went to Firestone Canyon on my own and brought a few mana pills with me. It was time to grind my skills. Tonight, I will bring all of my skills up to level 9!

I needed to exponentially raise the effects of [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Blade Spin] in order to have a greater advantage in this upcoming battle for the city.

.....

When it was around 11 at night, I returned to the main city and looked at the items I put up for auction. Someone already put up a bid!

[Flames of War Magic Blade]: Highest bidder "Player Ye Lai", bidding at 1,210,000 RMB

[God Destroyer Mace]: Highest Bidder "Player Quick Thunder Swift Wind", bidding at 1,170,000 RMB

Chapter 441: Low Key A4

To think that the highest bidders would be two people from out of the town. Looks like the players of Ba Huang City aren't too well off. I glanced at the list of bids. For the Flames of War, Fallen Wolf first offered 970,000, and then Not Ordinary offered 1,100,000. That was the price an hour ago. Then nothing happened for an hour. The God Destroyer Mace had an initial offering of 1,000,000 before Quick Thunder Swift Wind overturned it with his offer.

And thus, I stayed on and waited to see who the final owner of these equipments would be, At the same time, I began to filter through [Zhan Long]'s top ten close combat players. Only those players were fit to get an armor as top tier as these Desolate Sky Armor Sets. Besides, we were also getting ready for tomorrow's City War Battle, so we needed to give out these sets as soon as possible.

In the guild chat, I announced the rankings that I calculated myself —

1. General Li Mu 84 Swordsman
2. General Wang Jian 83 Swordsman
3. Hero Ran Min 82 Berserker
4. Strawberry Matcha 82 Phantom Knight
5. General Bai Qi 82 Berserker
6. Cang Lei 82 Berserker
7. One Second Hero 81 Knight
8. Calm 81 Swordsman
9. Wang Jiang 81 Berserker
10. Moon Feather 81 Swordsman
11. Winter Snow 81 Swordsman
12. Tearless 81 Knight
13. Star Blade 81 Swordsman

14. Tang Xing 80 Knight

15. Little Demon 81 Knight

.....

These are all the top ranked close combat players in [Zhan Long]'s main guild, excluding myself. After all, no matter how strong the Desolate Sky Armor set was, it wasn't as strong as my Saint Tier + Valkyrie Tier + Emperor Tier set. After I sent out the rankings, I smiled and said into the guild chat, "Li Mu, Dancing Forest and I, some of the core players of [Zhan Long], have gotten 10 sets of Desolate Sky armor in the Grave of the Warring States. The stats are extremely strong, and right now I want to choose 10 people from [Zhan Long] to receive these 10 sets. The players that have been chosen can choose either to take the armor or not. If you choose to take it, 50% of your guild points will be taken in return. Come join me...."

Soon after, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Matcha, and Bai Qi all chose to forfeit. Clearly, these strong players didn't need armor like this. Cang Lei on the other hand smiled, "I'm already level 81 and Yue Er* didn't give me any other good equipment. Brother Xiao Yao, I'll take one set...."

TL Note: Referring to Dong Cheng Yue

I nodded with a smile, "Ok!"

One Second Hero also grinned, "It gives so much health and attack. How about I take one too. It's just 50% of my guild points. I didn't have that many in the first place...."

I laughed, "Yong Jie, tomorrow in the struggle for the talismans, you need to put in more effort. A fourth advancement knight is pretty strong. Nobody can stop you from crashing around the place...."

One Second Hero confidently said, "Don't worry. Rushing around on the front lines was my original plan!"

Moon Feather shyly said, "I... I didn't think that I would be among the top 15 heavy armor types.... Guildmaster, can I celebrate for a second? I'm in [Zhan Long]'s top fifteen...."

I couldn't help but laugh, "Yep. Don't be too happy though, once you get that armor, everyone can help develop [Zhan Long] even further. Besides Li Mu, Matcha, and the other 5, there aren't any issues concerning the other 10 right? If there aren't, then these last 8 sets of Desolate Sky Armor will go to you guys."

Star Blade, Tang Xing, and the others all didn't have any arguments. Thus, Li Mu took the sets and gave them to the others. This time I was also able to rank the top 15 heavy armor players in [Zhan Long]. Without a second thought, I knew that as long as they stay loyal to [Zhan Long], they will definitely become the core of [Zhan Long]'s strength in guild battles. Future battlefields will change because of these people!

.....

Once all of the Desolate Sky Armor sets were give out, I continued to wait. When the clock strikes 12, the Flames of War Magic Blade and the God Destroyer Mace prices would set. After the last bid, Cang Cheng made an offer of 1,400,000, becoming the highest bidder. Ye Lai stood beside National Beauty, and immediately made another bid for 1,500,000. But he didn't expect Wang Ze Cheng to raise the price again, all the way to 1,700,000!

"Ding!" The time was up. The Flames of War Magic Blade was taken by Cang Cheng for 1,700,000. It was a long handle type equipment, which isn't good for movement. This kind of equipment was best for classes like knights. Besides, I could tell as well, that Wang Ze Cheng really isn't lacking in money. 1,700,000 to him was like loose change, he didn't even hesitate when he dropped that much money for the blade. As for the God Destroyer Mace, it went through two more increases in price, finally ending up back with Quick Thunder Swift Wind for 1,600,000!

I picked up my sword and walked over to National Beauty. Ye Lai also had his battle axe in hand. He slapped his thigh and looked over at me, and ranted, "F*ck, I never thought that there would be someone with so much money in Ba Huang City. Whenever he raised the bid, he would raise it 100,000 a time. I give up. This Flames of War Magic Blade really isn't fated to be with me. Nevermind... my battle axe only has 20% less

attack than that.....”

I was speechless. Finally I said, “If you came to Ba Huang City and wanted the Flames of War Blade, you should’ve told me. Then, I could’ve cut down the time and let you take it earlier....”

“Aye....” Ye Lai gave a long sigh, “Who would I have thought that Cang Cheng that little bastard had so much money? I miscalculated, miscalculated....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “You’re wrong. Cang Cheng isn’t just any kid. Nevermind, talking about this is meaningless to you. Oh, that’s right. Ye Lai, tomorrow the City of the Four Noblemen in Ba Huang City will spawn. This is the Chinese Server’s first guild base. Being in Jiu Li City, you really don’t have any interest in this city, right?”

Ye Lai gave another sigh and said, “[Judgement] has already set its foundations in Jiu Li City. Besides, I talked about this with Fang Ge Que before and agreed that [Judgement] would not send its armies to the city. If I don’t, then [Legend] won’t either. I heard that Mu Xuan and Gong Zi Ying, those pretty little girls, aren’t going to make any moves on it either. So, brother, don’t worry too much. Your strongest enemy is probably going to be Ba Huang City’s [Vanguard] and [Prague]. After all, there’s an entire main city between Fan Shu City and City of the Four Noblemen, so guilds like [Hero’s Mound], [House of Prestige], and [Emerald Porcelain] probably won’t participate either.”

I cheerfully nodded, “If there was only [Vanguard] and [Prague] to deal with, then everything would be much easier....”

Ye Lie wryly smiled, “Yup. I hope that [Zhan Long] gets all 10 of those Army Talismans. Oh no... I hope that you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai gets those 10 Talismans. This City War is actually focused on each of the powerful individuals. If you obtain all ten of the Talismans, you get all the power in that city. Players will probably be trying to kill each other to get the Talismans. [Zhan Long] better work hard!”

Ye Lai took out a City Return Scroll. Before he crushed it, he looked up at me and said, “[Judgement] and [Legend] have already made an alliance,

so even if [Zhan Long] has any troubles during the City struggle, I can't go and help you guys. On top of that, men must follow through with their promises. I, Ye Lai, will definitely stand by my word. Therefore, you've got to rely on yourself during this battle."

I smiled and nodded, "Gosh, you need to put more trust in me. I will come out victorious!"

"Alright!"

Ye Lai crushed his City Return Scroll and smiled as he teleported, "The alliance between you and I will exist forever!"

I nodded, "Yup, we shall always treat each other with sincerity, forever and always!"

.....

I watched as Ye Lai left. I took out the money we earned from selling the two weapons and split it 10 ways. I then sent the other 9 parts out. Everyone got 300,000. This was definitely a good amount of money.

"Di!"

Wan Er sent a message, "Hey, there's 335,000RMB. With that much money, what do you plan on doing with it?"

I smiled, "I wasn't planning on anything. I'm thinking.... I'm going to buy a car of some sort. Otherwise, I'll have to take a taxi whenever I want to go somewhere, it's too annoying....."

"Oh?" Wan Er opened up her messenger and giggled, "What car is our Brother Xiao Yao looking at? I have a lot of friends in Hang Zhou's car sellers. Tell me, what kind do you want?"

I thought about it for a second, "The Audi A4, 2017 version....what do you think Wan Er?"

Wan Er pouted her lower lip, "That.... is a pretty good choice. Even though the engine might not be that excellent, but as your car you won't have a problem driving it around normal roads. Also, it's pretty cheap, around 400,000RMB. I can find a person who'll give you a discount,

around 350,000. Are you going to use all the money from the Flames of War Magic Blade and the God Destroyer Mace to buy the A4?"

"Yup!" I nodded, "I absolutely need something to drive. Otherwise, it wouldn't make sense. Ay.... it's much easier getting money in game. I don't even have to wait for your dad to give me my salary, whenever that will be....."

"Is that so..." Wan Er gave me a dimpled smile, "Honestly, I was planning on waiting until after your birthday to send you a quality sports car, in the end.... you bought one yourself....."

I waved my hand, "Nah, it's fine. If you sent me that it wouldn't be that proper. Besides, I'm a man, I can't just eat food off your hand all the time."

"That's true....." Wan Er smiled, "Our Brother Xiao Yao is [Zhan Long]'s guildmaster and a famous person in Ba Huang City. If you're gonna buy a car, then you should rely only on yourself. As for what color you want, I'll help you connect with a seller to buy it!"

"Let's get a white one then, make it low key."

"That....that really is low key....."

"Must be so....."

.....

After I talked it over with Wan Er, I transferred 350,000 RMB to Wan Er's account. After that, I just have to wait for the car. On top of that, Wan Er's basically just waiting for a single word before she can get the car. After all, she is the little miss of the Tian Jin Group. Tian Jin Group manufactures everything from weapons to heavy industrial products. I don't know how many firms all favor this little princess from the Tian Jin Group!

After that, I needed to deal with some other guild business. There were some newbies I needed to introduce to the guild, and then I had to talk with Moon Feather, Star Blade, Tearless, and Thousand League Springs, and make sure I break them into the guild as well. As a guildmaster, I

needed to build relations with my guild members, otherwise if I spent all day with the little miss, I would actually distance myself from everyone else.

I worked all the way until 3 a.m. After that, I logged off and rested.

.....

After a night of silence, I woke up to find that it was 10 in the morning. After washing up, I talked with Tang Gu about some stuff regarding the battle for the city. Afterwards, I put on a clean set of clothes and walked towards the girl's dorm. After eating a large lunch with Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Tang Qi, I returned to my dorm and prepared for a great battle. All of the guilds in Ba Huang City were going to be going after these 10 Talismans. Besides, there might even be a few other outsider guilds who wanted to join in. This competition for the city will definitely let us battle to our heart's content.

Chapter 442: Peace as Priority

“Shua!”

It was 11 o'clock in the afternoon when I appeared in Ba Huang City.

After repairing all my equipments, I replenished a huge amount of level 10 red and blue potions from National Beauty and took quite a lot of cards too. I stuffed my bag until it was almost full before I set off.

“Di!”

Yue Qing Qian sent a message, “Brother Xiao Yao, All members of Zhan Long are gathered at the Li Hua Forest outside the north gate. Come here quickly, right now we are a group of people with no leader!”

“ I couldn't help but smile, and replied, “ On my way now. Will be there within minutes!”

.....

With two long swords on my back, I dashed out of Ba Huang City and headed towards the Li Hua Forest. I reached it within a short time of four minutes. As I had expected, a sea of people was already here. Just the main guild alone had 9800+ people online. The first division had 2700+ members online, and the second division had 2500+ members online while the third and fourth divisions had slightly less, with only a total of 1500 people online. It couldn't be helped as the third and fourth divisions are both level 3 guilds. There is no way to level up to 4 within two days.

“Brother Xiao Yao is here!” The two beauties, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, had already come forward to welcome me.

Striding forward, I nodded and smiled towards the two beauties, “Have you eaten enough at lunch?”

Qing Qian touched her flat stomach and pondered; She then smiled and answered, “Yes, but I didn't dare to drink too much water.....”

I grinned involuntarily, “Okay!”

Wei Liang exclaimed, “ Guildmaster, Almost all of our men have

arrived!”

“Okay.....”

I turned and looked towards the exceedingly great Zhan Long Army in the Li Hua Forest. Numerous [Zhan Long]’s badges connected with one another and stretched farther away. It was a magnificent scene. I actually have a maximum of 16500 [Zhan Long] brothers. If this huge army is employed properly, it would definitely become a huge success in Ba Huang City. Plus, I have confidence that I can direct every military operations well. I am good at this!

.....

Dressed in an efficient-looking armor, Li Mu held his longsword and walked upfront with a smile, “Guildmaster, everyone is here, What should we do now? I just received news: the guilds, [Vanguard], [Prague], [Flying Dragon] and [Enemies At The Gate] have all departed!”

I nodded and said, “Let’s set off too. Our target is the Grave of the Warring States. Li Mu, you lead the way since you are familiar!”

“Alright!”

When Li Mu turned, he drew his longsword and roared. The ten thousand Zhan Long members departed, and advanced forward directly from the Ba Huang forest. The moment we set off, [Vanguard] and [Prague] would definitely know. It can’t be helped since we have too many people. Keeping this group a secret would be impossible. Not to mention whether there are spies or not, there are many scouts around us. Every move we make couldn’t be concealed from the eyes of the other large-sized guilds.

Therefore, when it’s a major decision, only the administration can know. As for the ordinary players, they just have to obey the orders. In a game with well-developed communication systems, the ways of duplicity, double-dealing, betrayal and deception is definitely an art form. The future virtual battles are destined to be a trial of strength and wit!

As we advanced, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian, Matcha, and Wolf

all came close to me.

Li Mu whispered, "What's our battle strategy?"

I flashed a smile involuntarily, " This Slaughter for the City also has a point value ranking system, therefore MVP players will still obtain very abundant rewards. Killing people for the points should be the first choice. However, the one that holds the Talismans will be everyone's target. Thus, the wise ones definitely won't take the Talismen during the first twelve hours. During these twelve hours, we shall only kill and defend. Obtaining points will be our first priority. We shall fight for the Talismans when the players of Ba Huang City are exhausted.

General Wang Jian narrowed his eyes and smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, only one thing rendered me perplexed.

'Oh. What is it?"

"[Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], [Blood Contract] and [Prague] are all considered to be allied guilds. If the Talismans are in their hands, should we take it by force or not? This is the problem regarding an interest dispute and must be considered prudently.

I pondered for a few moments and grinned, " Yes. Indeed, there is only one garrison. We need to fight for it even if they are our allies. However, Misty Cloud and Han Bei Song are not people that would use unscrupulous acts. They would fight honestly with Zhan Long.

Therefore.....until the final few hours, we will not act against our allies. Unless [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon], these two competitors, are obliterated no one is allowed to harm even a hair of our allies.

Wang Jian smiled and nodded, "Understood. This way, there will be no problem. Should I tell Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song?"

"No need. They should be able to understand."

'Okay! Alright!"

.....

The huge [Zhan Long] Army continued advancing as they went through

the Green Qilin Valley and reached the northern Grave of the Warring States region. We had been here before but the map had refreshed and looked entirely different now. The originally desolate Grave region was now covered by dense forest. The southern part of the Grave of the Warring States had a vast fertile forest, while the glacial river basin and Forest of the Sword Saints were located westward. All these regions had an abundance of monsters with different levels, this player camp's location is like the Garden of Eden, making it even more valuable.

In the distance, a blood-red city appeared on the plains and a big line of words were above the South Gate—[Slaughter for the City]!

We had reached our target. This was our campaign this time. I just don't know what the BOSSes that were carrying the 10 Talismans would be like.

I was around 2000 yards away from the City of the Four Noblemen. I stood by, watching as all these players from Ba Huang City waited beside the city. There were even some small guilds from Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City. There was basically no sign of any of the big guilds from the other two main cities. Maybe it was just like Ye Lai had said, all of the big guilds had made agreements and nobody wanted to break them.

After all, [Legend], [Judgement], and [Hero's Mound] had all laid their foundations long ago. All of the quest systems, the reputation, the relationships with the NPCs, these were all hard to build up. Changing home cities meant starting from 0 and it was unrewarding work. Even though they would get some strength in this new city, it'll be awkward and the work would be useless. On top of that, this battle was destined to be dangerous. Nobody wants to put in so much work for something not worth it.

.....

After a few minutes, the sound of a system bell rang throughout the sky of the Grave of the Warring States—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: The time for the Battle over the City of the Four

Noblemen will now begin. After this, the pieces of Xin Lin Jun's soul will continuously summon monsters from hell to battle against the players. At the same time, 10 generals will appear at certain times in different locations to attack. Players, please make use this rare opportunity. During this event, killing players and monsters will result in an accumulation of points. Once the event is over, these points can be used in exchange for rewards and experience. Good luck, adventurers!

.....

Within the City of the Four Noblemen, rays of light began rising from the ground into the sky and screams of agony rose from the ground. The next second, the four great gates all opened up and crowds of monsters rushed out. It was a group of spear wielding soldiers. Those long spears were actually not that different from lances, just that the blade of the spear was slightly askew, giving it a angle when striking. Standing on war carts from the Warring States increased the deadliness of their attacks.

I looked from a distance and smiled, "Lvl 85 Phantom Tier monsters, Long Spear Soldiers. We're good. Everyone crept forward. All of [Zhan Long]'s divisions surrounded the main guild. We need to make sure we don't fall into disarray. Our goal was to head towards the Western side of the City of the Four Noblemen and build our formation. Let's first kill the monsters to raise our levels and points!"

Li Mu nodded and pulled out his sword, "Brothers, march!"

In five minutes we arrived 100 yards away from the Western gate. this way, we wouldn't get killed by the archers on the wall. Li Mu, One Second Hero, and Wolf all stood at the front. They made amends with all of the guilds and players originally planning on staying at the western gate, "Aha, [Zhan Long] wants to make their formation here. Why don't you give us some respect, haha we have quite a few people so we don't want to split up. Can you make some room for us? Later on, we'll invite you to dinner! You're just too great, old friend?...."

Even though [Zhan Long] is a pretty hot guild in Ba Huang City that can probably shake a few of Ba Huang City's teeth off of it if it stomped

its foot, we still wanted to keep our relations with everyone else friendly. As long as we don't act arrogant or impatient, we wouldn't offend normal players. That was our style. Honestly, in this world, whether you are strong or weak, it's not hard to maintain respect in all of your relations with one another. On top of that, doing this simple thing also determines the realm of person you are*.

TL Note: This refers to the buddhist ideal that people are split into different realms, dependent on their level of enlightenment. The more enlightened you are in life, the higher realm of person you are

.....

Very soon, our "clearing out" succeeded and [Zhan Long] took up around 300 yards of area. Our knights, monks, and swordsmen and other heavy armor classes all stood at the front of the formation. We greeted the monsters that came rushing at us. the Long Spear Soldiers were all level 85 phantom tier monsters, and at the front we had nearly 200 fourth advancement heavy armor players, blocking them all was not a very hard task.

I stood at the heart of the front line. I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and laughed, "[Zhan Long], prepare for battle! Do not advance, just defend in your positions. Whatever monsters come out of those gates, we kill! Also, everyone please remember, without my command, do not kill any players or players from guilds, unless they initiated the attack. This time, [Zhan Long]'s battle plan is 'Peace as a Priority, and Killing Monsters Above All!'"

Qing Qian giggled beside me, "Then what happens 12 hours later? When the 10 Talismans have all appear? Does that mean we are still using 'Peace as a priority, and killing monsters above all'?"

I wryly smiled, then cut down a few Long Spear Soldiers, "Well, battle plans can change..."

Qing Qian covered her smile, "Brother Xiao Yao, why are you so cute?"

Dancing Forest facepalmed, "Oh no, Melon* is beyond saving...."

TL Note: Melon refers to Qing Qian

.....

Li Mu laughed and didn't say anything else about this. He was a smart man. If he said anything, he would get called too ugly by Dancing Forest and the others. And so, he swung his left arm and "Shua!" his blade flew out. With [Flying Blade] he cut down another wave of Long Spear Soldiers that were around 15 yards ahead. At the same time, Wang Jian, Calm, Moon Feather, and Star Blade all activated their [Flying Swords]. Countless blades suddenly flew out in a straight line from the frontlines. Just watching the scene gave a sense of excitement!

"Hum!"

My Cold Iron Sword buzzed in the air beside my shoulder and suddenly flew out, cutting through a group of monsters. [Blade Spin] spun through the air, creating 9 incredible revolutions. During this process of killing monsters, I slowly understood the purpose of [Blade Spin]'s automatic attack pattern. Otherwise, it would be much too tiring. Might as well save that thinking for killing while the skill is activated. If it didn't have the auto attack, I would have to personally create 9 different attack patterns, I would die from all that work!

Chapter 443: Hot Pot

I raised my left leg slightly and stepped on the grassland with my Divine Battle Boots, as a “Peng” sound rang out. As lava spewed, streaks of Dou Qi condensed and encircled my body. The form of the condensed [Wall of Dou Qi] was extremely dazzling. Beauty Tang Xin, being the nearest to me, scrutinized for a while and became shocked, “Guildmaster, why is your [Dou Qi Armor] different from ours?”

I grinned, “ That is because mine’s [Wall of Dou Qi], not [Dou Qi Armor].....”

Hearing my answer, Li Mu felt speechless and said, “Guildmaster’s job is the Guardian of Dragon City, which is different from the ordinary jobs that we have. His skills are also especially different.

Tang Xin winked and commented, “The outward appearance of this skill is so cool. I am so envious.....”

I responded, “[Dou Qi Armor] is just cutting down 50% of the damage, as long as the attack isn’t too high, it’s durability is pretty strong. At some points it would even surpass my [Wall of Dou Qi].....”

As I talked, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Wind Blade] into one of the Long Spear Soldiers, cutting it in half. An enormous large number popped up. The damage was a superior strike + Dragon Power which gave 3 times the damage. It was extremely shocking—

“23682 ! ”

Tang Xin stuck her tongue out, “Oh my, that attack.... nevermind, I’m not going to dream for an attack like that. That’s just too op. Guildmaster is a special person on CBN Battlenet, I’ll probably never be able to match that....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Keep killing monsters. Nobody’s a special person. This is all because of hard work. If you just work hard to kill monsters and accumulate more points, and our luck is good enough, you can get a few good equipments. After that, just keep on making yourself

stronger. After a while, the snowball will roll down and accumulate even more power and you can become a top rated expert.”

“Yup!”

.....

Tang Xin, Dancing Forest, and Moon Feather were all female players that Qing Qian brought over. Dancing Forest, like General Lian Po, became one of [Zhan Long]’s top archers, while Moon Feather became a beautiful knight. As for Tang Xing, she was still pretty young and was naturally very pure. She also became the focus of adoration of Li Mu and Old K, those two ugly uncles. All day she would tease them, but everyone liked her a lot. If there was ever any good equipment, or skill books, they would all think of her first. She managed to quickly rise to the top ten close combat players. Plus with her natural cleverness and her good instinct in game, it was clear that her future was going to be very good....”

As I killed monsters, my experience flew up. I also summoned my Flaming Tiger God to support me. I turned around to look at the bottom of the city wall, we had herded the monsters into a small group. Most of the players at the western side were players from Ba Huang City. Everyone was friends and peacefully collected experience. Basically nobody was PK-ed, since there was no reason to steal from other people at this time.

In the distance, around 700 yards away from [Zhan Long], [Hero’s Mound: First Division] had appeared and already began to battle the NPC monsters.

Wang Ze Cheng was dressed in a full suite of shining armor, the Flames of War Magic Blade in his hand. He looked at the city and yelled out, “All players of [Hero’s Mound: First Division], immediately create a formation. Our target is the Warring States Talismans. Later, once a BOSS appears, everyone follow my command and attack. The rest of the time, we’ll kill monsters without any rest!”

Behind Wang Ze Cheng, Ageless Beauty was dressed in a tight leather armor, her hand resting on the two daggers at her hip and her beautiful

eyes stared into the crowd of NPC Archers on top of the wall, “Ah Cheng, we’re so close to [Zhan Long]. We need to be careful. Li Xiao Yao might turn around and ambush us. We won’t be able to bear that kind of pressure.....”

Wind Walker bore the symbol of vice guildmaster on his left shoulder and stepped forward, “Sister Ageless Beauty, don’t worry about stuff like that. Right now we have 4 divisions, and over ten thousand people in our forces. Even if [Zhan Long] were to ambush us, we won’t necessarily lose to them. Besides, Cang Tong is still in [Hero’s Mound] and Li Xiao Yao is buddies with her. He needs to be considerate of her relationship with the guild....”

At that moment, one of the team leaders smiled, “I heard that Cang Tong is in the same school as guildmaster. For a beauty like that..... and the fact that guildmaster is so handsome, did you not consider taking Lin Wan Er yourself?”

Another team leader laughed, “I heard that guildmaster has always been chasing after Cang Tong. After all, Cang Tong is his goddess...”

Wind Walker coughed, “Shut up you too!”

Wang Ze Cheng revealed a cold smile, then wrapped his arm around Ageless Beauty’s waist and said, “I am not some half-hearted person. The only woman I love right now is Ah Yue*. As for Cang Tong, women that miss out, miss out. If we do not share the same fate, then there is no use in forcing it. Otherwise, she would just look down on me...”

Ageless Beauty revealed a smile, “Ah Cheng, smooches....”

Wang Ze Cheng lowered his head and made out with his girlfriend. After that, he reached down and slapped Ageless Beauty’s butt, “Hurry up and kill monsters. [Hero’s Mound] has to enter the top five in number of monsters killed in Ba Huang City, or else we would just be too humiliated. If we don’t make any progress or significant achievements soon, Q-Sword will start to doubt us.”

The players of [Hero’s Mound: First Division] all nodded, “Yes, we will all work hard!”

.....

“[Hero’s Mound: First Division] looks like they’re all united....” Wang Jian commented.

I smiled, “The appearance of unity, but divided at heart. What’s the thing keeping them together?”

Dancing Forest smiled along, “Well, for us, it’s Brother Xiao Yao. He’s our [Zhan Long]’s godly leader. As for [Hero’s Mound: First Division], do they gather around Cang Cheng? I think.... that Cang Cheng that kind of person, besides having a little money to spend and a more wily heart, there’s nothing else. As for his personal combat power, it’s almost as different as heaven and earth compared to Brother Xiao Yao’s....”

“Don’t say that....” I secretly laughed, “Wang Ze Cheng still has that Flames of War Magic Blade. His attack power is probably number one or number two amongst knights!”

Li Mu added, “Wang Ze Cheng’s defense is also 4400. We really do have to be careful with him, he’s a true iron board. His defense is even higher than our guildmaster’s by a lot.”

Matcha raised her long sword, “Boss, look to the left!”

I turned around to look, and saw that a group of people were coming over. It was players from [Thousand Burial]. There were around 4000 of them. There was the main guild and the two divisions on both sides. Not Ordinary was clothed in a full suit of quality armor. He had his battle axe in hand as he shouted, “Kill kill kill! Get those points!”

Shen Bing was clothed in a suit of leather armor. She lifted her long bow and shot an arrow. The beauty swept onto the battlefield and flashed a smile at me. That big sister is just too seductive, a glance like that made it hard for anyone to resist.

Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, “[Thousand Burial] and [Hero’s Mound: First Division] are surrounding us? F*Ck, what exactly are they thinking, getting so close to us?”

I lowered my voice, “That’s no problem, we’ll just continue to kill

monsters. Let them surround us. as long as [Zhan Long] doesn't lose any players we're fine. Once they start attacking us, we'll just kill them all!"

"Kill them all....." Wang Jian cracked a smile, "Brother Xiao Yao, I like the sound of that!"

.....

Time passed by second by second. After two hours, the bottom of the wall was littered with corpses of the Long Spear Soldiers. Everyone was exhausted from all the killing. On the bright side, the monsters dropped a lot of experience and drops, making this event very worth it.

At that moment, a bell suddenly sounded around the map

"Ding!"

System Announcement: Players please be aware. The first general from Hell, [Official Li Ke] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS), carries one of the Warring States Talismans and has appeared at the coordinates (11272, 9983). Kill Official Li Ke and there is a 100% drop rate of [Warring States Talisman – One]. Collect all 10 of these talismans and turn them in to the Duke to gain control over the City of the Four Noblemen!

.....

"Brother, the first BOSS has appeared!" Qing Qian began waving her dagger excitedly as she slashed through a monster. She smiled, "It's just east of us, shall we go and kill it?"

I thought about it for a second, then shook my head, "Nevermind, let's not!"

"Oh, why's that?"

"Let them fight over it. We just need to maintain our strength. Either way, it'd pointless unless we have all 10 talismans. This event can't be accomplished in one step."

Li Mu, wang Jian, and Song Han all nodded, "Yea, I agree. Let's use the first talisman as a lure. Let the small guilds all kill themselves first!"

"That's right. Just like that. What we want is the end result!"

.....

And so, [Zhan Long]'s 16.5 thousand players continued to collect points and experience from the monsters, while the sounds of battle bashed out 2000 yards behind them. For the sake of the one talisman from the Valkyrie Tier BOSS, [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of Heroes], and [Hero's Mound: First Division] killed each other. In the end, after 20 minutes—"Ding!"

System Notification: Players please take note, the [Warring States Talisman – One] has already been dropped and was picked up by the player Mu Tian. Right now, his position is (11301, 10001). Killing this player will give a 100% chance of dropping the Talisman!

.....

In the end, within 10 seconds, there was another bell sound. Mu Tian had been killed and the Talisman was taken by another player from Flying Dragon called Fierce Tiger. After another 30 seconds, Fierce Tiger was killed, and was taken by [Valley of Gods] player Jiang Zi Ya. Just another 100 seconds later, Jiang Zi Ya was killed, and the Talisman was taken by Flying Dragon.

For a short moment, the Talisman did not exchange owners, and stayed in Soaring Dragon. But, for the sake of protecting the Talisman, few players from [Flying Dragon] were able to raise levels. It was really not worth.

Sitting on top of the mountain to watch the tigers fight at a distance, we watched as [Thousand Burial] and [Hero's Mound First Division] ambushed [Flying Dragon] together while [Wrath of the Hero's]'s Liu Ying lead his army to battle against [Hero's Mound: First Division]. Looks like Liu Ying has not forgotten the pain of losing his girlfriend. Even though Ageless Beauty was now with Wang Ze Cheng all the time, Liu Ying still had a desire for revenge.

As for the large-sized guilds, [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies At The Gate], they were a lot more calm. Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior and Misty Clouds are all wise men; they knew that the Talisman is totally a

burning hot potato in the beginning. It would be better to not take the Talisman if you don't tower above everyone else in your ability. Otherwise, that guild would be everyone's target like [Flying Dragon].

.....

“Aiya.....”

The metal gate of the City of the Four Noblemen opened slowly and the second wave of monsters came. It was a type of warring state chariots pulled by two horses, and carried four soldiers with a long dagger-axe and long lance held in their hands. There was also a type of weapon called, “Sarrissa” Actually, it is the prototype of long lances. Supposedly, Zhang Fei and Zhao Yun's weapon should be Sarrissa in the ancient times.

And so, the swarm of fully armed Warring States soldiers waved their long lance and roared furiously as they charged towards Zhan Long's field. They came in a compact mass with countless of soldiers.

Chapter 444: The Extinguisher

“Defense! We must hold our formation!”

Li Mu raised his sword and welcomed the war chariot that was charging over. With a slash of his blade, he activated [Flying Sword] and [Absolute Authority] when his sword returned. The strength of the two skills were frightening. At the same time, the two soldiers on the chariot attacked with their spears as well. “Pa Pa Pa” Three attacks landed on Li Mu. With the [Dou Qi Armor]’s 50% damage reduction, he was able to take the hits.

“527 ! ”

“612 ! ”

“598 ! ”

.....

Old K stared in amazement, “Fuck..... Brother Li Mu, what’s your defense and health? A level 86 monster could barely damage you at all. You are too strong!”

Li Mu hacked the mobs with his sword and smiled, “9000 HP and 3700 Defense. How is it? Pretty strong eh?”

Tang Xin was speechless, “Damn. I only have 3900 defense as a knight. You’re a swordsman who added all his stats into strength. How are you so strong.....”

Li Mu laughed, “Go ask the guildmaster. He’s a swordsman who added all his stats into strength and he has over 4000 defense and 14,000 HP. If you’re gonna ask somebody, ask him....”

Tang Xin turned and looked at me, “Guildmaster.... How are we low-end players going to do anything against people like you? Tell me..... Why are your defense and HP so high....”

I looked at my equipments and expounded, “4 Saint-Tier equipments, 4 Valkyrie-Tier equipments and 4 Emperor-Tier equipments. If you add up all the stats on these..... then you’ll probably get these kind of stats.

Tang Xin's eyes widened, "This.... This. You have a weapon, helmet, necklace, armor, leg guard, wrist guard, shoes, capes and two rings. That's a total of 10 equipments. We knights have a shield so we get to equip 11 items. How do you have 12 equipped items? This.... This doesn't make sense!"

Li Mu laughed and explained, "That's easy, guildmaster's [Dou Qi Arms] allows him to use two weapons. His main weapon is the Saint Tier Dragon Reservoir Sword, while his secondary weapon is the Valkyrie Tier Cold Iron Sword. He also has a Saint Tier City War Bell on his shoulder. This is how he can use 12 items. Look at your buffs. You have the City War Bell's buff which gives you 10% attack and defense and 100 magic attack. This is the buff that the guild leader gives to all of our allies..."

Tang Xin was excited, "Wow, really? This City War Bell is really strong. No wonder why I felt that my attacks were a bit stronger than usual...."

Matcha was smiling on the side, "Continue to kill. These phantom tier monsters give a lot of experience. I've already surveyed the situation. Once we kill around 80% of the mobs, the BOSS will spawn with a new wave of monsters. Then we'll have to wait. We don't know where the BOSS will spawn. Boss, when should we start killing the BOSSes?"

I thought about it and said, "After the fourth BOSS. If they spawn on the west side, then we'll start. I need to get my hands on at least one talisman. This will show that we [Zhan Long] are in this fight too!"

"Mhm. Mhm. Boss is sure formidable!"

.....

Time slowly passed and the experience continued to pile up. Of course, since I'm level 85 there wasn't much movement on my experience bar. The monsters are only 1 level higher than me, so there wasn't much of an experience bonus at all. However, this was better. These weren't as hard to kill as the monsters in the Grave of the Warring states maps. All the [Zhan Long] members are very organized as well. Our casualties didn't even amount to that much.

Before I even noticed, two hours had passed already. "Ding!" a system

notice appeared. The second BOSS was about to appear. It was towards the eastern side of the city. The east side was the base of [Vanguard] and a few other guilds. We could only give up.

Not even ten minutes later, a system notice appeared, [System Notice]: Player Jian Feng Han has obtained [Warring State Talisman – Two]!

.....

“Fuck.....” Li Mu clenched his fist, “Jian Feng Han actually got the second talisman. I’m worried. There aren’t any big guilds around [Vanguard]. No one would be willing to challenge them for a mere talisman.”

I looked at the map and said, “Mhm. The only ones who can fight them are [Prague], and they’re located pretty far away. [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] are both on the northern side. Knowing Han Bei Song and Misty Clouds, they wouldn’t go over to fight for a talisman. Jian Feng Han has the Saint Tier cape Freedom Wings, so he can fly. Leaving with the talisman is very easy for him. No one is dumb enough to fight him for it.

The third wave of mobs spawned very quickly. It was basically like a festival of experience. Until the level 90 monsters appear, [Zhan Long] won’t have a hard time fighting.

After the sixth hour, another system notice appeared. The third BOSS had spawned.

“Ding!”

[System Notice]: Will all the players please be careful. The third general from hell [Extinguisher Ke Long], carrier of a warring states talisman has spawned in the coordinates (11549, 10203). If you kill Ke Long, there is an hundred percent that the [Warring States Talisman – Three] will drop. Gather all ten talismans to become to the master of the territory!

.....

“Howlllllllll.....”

Behind us, a ray of light flashed and it was as though the sky had been punctured. An enormous black hole appeared and a roar came from it. A knight carrying a halberd and sitting on a blood red horse descended from the sky. Behind him, followed countless level 87 Phantom Tier Monsters. This Extinguisher Ke Long was a level 87 Tier Valkyrie BOSS. He had been sent right into [Zhan Long]'s formation!

“Ha ha...”

I couldn't help but grin. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and yelled out, “Main force, follow me to kill the BOSS. The rest, make sure you hold the formation. This BOSS actually appeared right in the middle of our formation. This BOSS didn't go to Heaven even when he had that path, and went straight to Hell even though there was no gate....”

Matcha, Li Mu and Qing Qian all followed me as I rushed at the BOSS. Fox lead a group of Division Two players to help deal long range attacks. We focused on killing the BOSS, while they dealt with the monsters that the Extinguisher lead with him. This way, we wouldn't interfere with each other's operations.

“Shua!”

Before I even arrived at the BOSS, my Cold Iron Sword already flew out from [Blade Spin]. “Pu pu pu” it cut through the Extinguisher's chest nine times. The level 87 Valkyrie Tier BOSS was just so so. Within moments, I managed to attract 90% of his aggro. With a roar, the Extinguisher lead his horse to charge at me. With a raise of his halberd, he immediately threw a chain of three stabs at me!

I lunged forward with my battle boots, and “Peng!” lava like energy burst forth, as snakes of Dou Qi started to wrap in front of my body, creating the [Wall of Dou Qi]. Like this, I took the BOSS's three attacks head on. “Keng Keng Keng” the attacks fell upon my Magic Spite Armor, creating sparks, and three damage numbers—

“1447 ! ”

“1528 ! ”

“1637 ! ”

In total, the attacks amounted to a little more than 4000 damage, which was around a third of my total health. This Valkyrie Tier's BOSS's kills shots did not pose any threat of an instant death for me. It was so low that Darling Duck gasped, “Guildmaster's defense is just too crazy....”

Li Mu raised his sword and charged at the BOSS as he hacked at him and smiled, “Hurry up and kill him!”

Dancing Forest, General Lian Po, and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands all began to attack with their long range skills. I let my swords dance as I barraged the BOSS with attacks, and locked the aggro right on me. My Flaming Tiger God also helped deal damage. The core of [Zhan Long]'s formation had turned completely into the Extinguisher's grave. In a short 4 minutes, the Extinguisher's health had dropped below 1% and died under the slashes of a million blades. Nobody knew who had dealt the finishing blow. After a cry of agony, the Extinguisher fell to the ground and dropped several equipments and items.

Li Mu waved his hand and yelled out, “I'll split up the items amongst everyone, and the Talisman will go to the guildmaster!”

I didn't try to act polite. After all, it would be most suitable if I were to keep the Talisman. The other players didn't try to take it either. On top of that, I had the greatest explosive power at the moment, and when it came to critical moments, I could kill my way out of a trap. The most important factor was that I was the guildmaster of [Zhan Long], so it would be most suitable that I keep it.

The system bell rang throughout the sky as the third Army Talisman fell to the hands of [Zhan Long]—

“Ding!”

[System Notice]: The [Warring States Talisman – Three] has dropped. It was picked up by player Xiao Yao Zi Zai. If the player is killed, there is a hundred percent chance that the talisman will drop.

.....

I cautiously put the talisman in my bag as I smiled, and looked forward to when this bag would be filled with all ten talismans. If I could get all ten, then [Zhan Long] would be the true ruling guild of Ba Huang City. Right now, [Prague] and [Vanguard] are actually stronger than us. Even if [Zhan Long] has a lot of experts, our numbers can't compare to theirs. If we can take the Warring States City, then it won't be the same anymore. This was the first guild city in the china server!

After I got the Talisman, a golden Talisman insignia immediately appeared above my head. On top of that, every 5 minutes, the system would automatically report my current position. Motherf*cker, this meant that everyone would be competing for my life. On top of that, the person carrying the Talisman cannot fly, or use [Camouflage]. Looks like all the potential ways to cheat the system had been broken. It was best if an assassin didn't carry the Talisman, as it was basically a sure death for them.

I returned to my original position at [Zhan Long]'s frontlines. As I killed monsters, I stared into the distance and saw that a few of Ba Huang City's small guilds were watching me.

"Ahem...." I coughed and said, "Why do I feel like those guys are looking at me differently....."

Wang Jian smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao. It's because you have the Warring State Talisman. They all want to take you down."

Qing Qian smiled, "Don't worry brother Xiao Yao. No one will harm you with us here. If they want to come, we'll fight them to death."

I nodded, "Good. Then I'll leave it to you guys to protect me. Don't let anyone stab me from behind.

Everyone laughed. Actually I wasn't scared of anyone at all. Instead, I've been waiting for people to come. The points from killing the monsters are becoming insufficient. Killing players will net me an extra 10% of their points.

.....

Time passed very slowly. The fourth and fifth waves appeared. They were killed by [Enemies at the Gate] and [Vanguard]. Misty Clouds got the fourth talisman and Vanguard for the 5th.

Holding two talismans by himself, Jian Feng Han became the target of many people.

Chapter 445: Hot Potato

A little after 2 a.m., the sixth wave's BOSS came along with the sound of the system bell—

“Ding!”

System notification: All players, please pay attention! The sixth general from Hell [The Devourer Maru] (Saint Tier BOSS), holds a Warring States Talisman and has appeared at map coordinates (12482, 9023). Kill the Devourer Maru and he will drop the [Warring States Talisman▪ Six] with a 100% drop certainty. Gather the ten Talismans and you can claim the ownership of the garrison at the main city!

.....

Li Mu's eyes turned cold as he said, “The sixth one is already at saint tier, and appeared on the northern side. The fact that it's a saint tier boss is already enough to lure people over. There's a chance that a saint tier item might drop. Guildmaster, are we gonna sit here and do nothing?”

I looked towards the north and said, “That's where [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] are. Misty Clouds should be able to handle it.”

“That's hard to say!”

Matcha looked at me and said, “Boss, over there is the City of the Four Noblemen's northern gate. Quite a few guilds and players from Jiu Li City are all gathered around that gate. However, [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] are the only two guilds from Ba Huang City that are there. They only have 30,000 players in total. If any situations arises I'm afraid they will be in danger.”

Qing Qian pondered for a bit, then nodded, “Brother Xiao Yao, I just received some news. [House of Prestige]..... with around 20,000+ players, are currently heading towards the Northern gate under the command of Bai Li Ruo Feng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind. They will probably lock onto the Saint tier BOSS as their target. A level 90 Saint Tier BOSS has around 100,000,000 health and will probably take a while to kill. We still

have a chance there....”

Right at that moment, “Ding!”, a message came from Misty Clouds, “Xiao Yao, this Saint Tier BOSS spawned right at [Enemies At the Gate]’s right flank, but the pressure is very heavy. [Flying Dragon] has brought people to come and steal it, and [House of Prestige] and [Emperor’s Blood] have also come. If it’s possible, can [Zhan Long] send a ten thousand man team to help relieve some of the pressure. How does that sound?”

I took a deep breath. The sixth wave. It truly has become a watershed. The fight between players will soon begin.

Li Mu looked at me, “What should we do? Should we reinforce them or not?”

I nodded, “Misty Clouds sent a message to me as a request from an ally. No matter what, we have to go! The 10,000 players from the main guild will follow me to go support [Enemies at the Gate]. At the same time, we’ll go and see if we can get that Talisman. Also, [House of Prestige]’s friends have come. Everyone needs to be careful. Wang Jian, Wang Jiang, and Breaking Dawn, lead all of the divisions to continue killing monsters here. Make sure you hold our position!”

Wang Jian nodded, “Brother Xiao Yao, leave it to us!”

“Head out!”

.....

I picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and turned around, and lead the 10,000 elites from [Zhan Long]’s main guild to rush towards the north. My Fierce Tiger God roared and ran beside me while Li Mu, Old K, Dong Cheng Lei, and One Second Hero all opened up the path. These bastards were all famous people in Ba Huang City, basically anyone would give them at least some respect. And so, 10,000 of [Zhan Long]’s players split through all the players on the western front and rushed towards the North.

“Sha sha....”

My Divine Battle Boots slid across the soft grass. The golden insignia of

a Talisman flashed above my head. It was so bright that it even covered up my Second Rank in Ba Huang City. This caught the attention of quite a few people, and some even began gathering into groups of a hundred people to rush at us. One baldy roared, “F*ck, there’s a person with a Talisman. Charge, and steal that Talisman!”

At that moment someone shouted, “You blind? That’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai, he’s the guildmaster of [Zhan Long], and ranked third in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament. Behind him are several thousand players from [Zhan Long]. Are you trying to die?”

The baldy’s eyes were clouded, “Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. We’ll leave once we take the Talisman. At least we’ll be famous for a few seconds. You cowards, who has the guts to charge with me!”

A couple hundred people shouted and began charging.

“Hua....”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword threw a slice of wind as I charged forward. I let my Cold Iron Sword fly out of its sheath. “Shua shua shua”, it carved 9 paths through the enemies ahead and spun around right back to me. While the skill was activated, I cut up the players in front of me like vegetables with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I then threw out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and several dozen people fell to their knees. F*ck, they’re basically sending points my way!

Li Mu, Bai Qi, and Old K all charged with me. [Zhan Long] was basically a flood that swallowed up several hundred people. Not only were we getting a lot of points, we might even be able to pick up some equipments to sell.

In a short five minutes, the ten thousand member [Zhan Long] team charged all the way to the Northern gate of the city. On the plains, we saw [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] mixed in with players from [Flying Dragon] and [House of Prestige] battling it out. The 18,000 players from [Enemies At the Gate] formed an enormous formation, and were battling the BOSS and [House of Prestige] head on. On the side, they faced pressure from [Flying Dragon] and [Emperor’s Blood]. It was

basically the equivalent of being bitten on the sides by 4000 players. Their situation was extremely bad.

I waved my Dragon Reservoir Sword and pointed at [Emperor's Blood] and commanded, "Everyone follow me and attack [Emperor's Blood]! Let's go and send these Jiu Li City players on their way!"

Li Mu, Old K, and Dong Cheng Lei all laughed and rushed forward with me. Behind me, my white cape fluttered in the wind and my armor gave off an indigo glow. My main hand gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my other hand held my Cold Iron Sword. There wasn't a single bit of hesitation as I cut through [Emperor's Blood]'s formation. My [Blade Spin] randomly hacked through the enemy lines. I activated [Soul Army] and [Black Tortoise Realm] to support the attack. In seconds, their defense was crushed to pieces.

"Kill! Archers, kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!" [Emperor's Blood]'s vice guildmaster Blue Dragon Emperor roared out.

I lunged forward and growled, as I activated [Wall of Dou Qi]. Arrowheads thudded against the wall and bounced off, dealing less than 100 damage to me. My level 9 [Wall of Dou Qi] raised my physical and magical defense by 180%. Even if Dancing Forest, a top tier archer, was to shoot at me, she might not necessarily be able to break through my defense, much less those second rate archers from [Emperor's Blood]! With no way to break through my defense, all of those [Scattered Shot]'s stuns were also much weaker, and gave absolutely no pressure.

Behind me, a beautiful figure holding two daggers dashed towards me with a smile, "Brother Xiao Yao, let's kill that Vice-Guildmaster first! I will do it!"

I hastily opened my hand and yelled "No, I will. You assist me!"

I moved my five fingers forcefully and the effect of the Divine Dragon Slaying Wristguard on my wrist was activated. With a "Shua" sound, a dragon-shaped chain latched onto the vice-guildmaster of [Emperor's Blood]. I bellowed deeply, and grabbed this vice-guildmaster and sliced his neck with my Dragon Reservoir Sword!

“Kacha!”

“5921!”

Attacking the weak points would result in extra damage. Blue Dragon Emperor's face became pale as he bent down hastily and used a [Blade Rush] to retreat five yards away. Unexpectedly, Qing Qian swept past Blue Dragon Emperor's landing point and cut twice with both of her daggers. Blue Dragon Emperor, who had only 8000 HP, howled in pain as he collapsed and died.

.....

“F*ck!”

The face of an [Emperor's Blood]'s team leader turned green as the battle axe in his hand trembled, “They.....they killed Vice-Guildmaster that easily? F*ck! How could it be as easy as killing a dog?!”

As expected, the battle tactic “To catch the bandits, first catch the leader,” will never be out-of-date. The moment Blue Dragon Emperor died, the four thousand men of [Emperor's Blood] descended into chaos. As Matcha was a smart team leader, she was responsible for [Zhan Long]'s battle formation. The guild's premier swordsmen, berserkers, knights, and monks are on the frontline. Though there aren't many of these people, they can't be killed easily. The archers, mages, and gunmen used bombarding tactics at the rear. This way, the enemy suffered greatly under our fierce attacks, while our losses were trifling. Especially Li Mu, Old K and I, the ones with more than 7000 health points. The enemies wouldn't be able to kill us even if they wanted to, but if they don't kill us they would feel bitter.

The guildmaster of [Emperor's Blood], Dragon Emperor, held his long lance as he hovered among the crowds, and didn't have the audacity to approach me. He was probably afraid of my [Great Realm Of Desolation], [Blade Spin], [Defeat the Dragon] and other special skills. However, some things absolutely cannot be avoided. [Zhan Long] charged forward with blinding speed, and crushed [Emperor's Blood]'s frontline within less than ten minutes, and caused numerous deaths and injuries.

The long lance in Dragon Emperor's hand even trembled slightly as he gritted his teeth and yelled, "A powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts. [Zhan Long]'s morale is high now, and there is no need for us to fight forcefully. Brothers, move back towards the north. We will avoid [Zhan Long] for now, and seek the best chance next time!"

In the end, Dragon Emperor led about 2000 people and retreated. The remaining 2000+ people all became ice cold corpses lying at the northern side of the City of the Four Noblemen while [Zhan Long] speedily met up with [Enemies At The Gate]. A little distance away, Sword Reborn carried his sword and laughed, "It's great that [Zhan Long] is able to come. F*ck it. We have fought very hard for this BOSS!"

I held my sword and went in front, "Sword Reborn, how's the slaying of the BOSS?"

"There's still 15% health left!"

"Alright. Do you guys need our help?"

"Err....."

Sword Reborn laughed, "No need. Although [Enemies At The Gate] isn't as elite as [Zhan Long], we have no problem killing a Saint Tier BOSS. However, Guildmaster had asked me to tell you to lead Li Mu and a few other people to the location of the BOSS. He is afraid that he won't be able to obtain the Talisman".

"How would that be possible? There are so many [Enemies At The Gate] members here!"

"No....." Sword Reborn was slightly awkward. He touched his nose and smiled, "What Guildmaster Misty meant was.....he is giving this Talisman to Guildmaster Zi Zai as a small present..."

I couldn't help but laugh, "What the hell. Everyone is so smart. There's no need to talk indirectly. This Talisman is a hot potato, and Misty is afraid that it will burn him if he takes two at a time. Therefore, he is giving it to me, Li Xiao Yao, and making me everyone's target right?"

Sword Reborn nodded his head tacitly and laughed, "You f*cker...are

you feeling impolite? Guildmaster said that although [Enemies At the Gate] has 18000 members, which is more than [Zhan Long], we definitely won't be able to withstand the attacks of [Prague], [House of Prestige], and [Vanguard]. Although Zhan Long has only 16000 members, they are all extremely elite. If the Talisman is in guildmaster Zi Zai's hands, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior and Baili Ruofeng will definitely be slightly afraid. However, Guildmaster Zi Zai, please don't worry. If [Zhan Long] was besieged, [Enemies At The Gate] will definitely protect you all."

I nodded, "Sure, I will take this Talisman!"

"Okay! Cool!"

Holding my sword, I led Li Mu and Old K into the crowd of [Enemies At The Gate]'s members. Within a few minutes, The Devourer Maru howled in pain, and collapsed under Misty Cloud's sword. He dropped many equipments, and Misty Cloud picked up a blood-red long sword as he burst out in laughter, "Oh yeah! Blood Cutter.....level 80 Saint Tier Sword. Awesome! Haha! This is great....."

I walked in front and smiled, "Congratulations to the guildmaster of [Enemies At The Gate] for obtaining a new weapon!"

Misty Cloud grinned and picked up the Talisman from under the BOSS's corpse, and threw it to me while saying, "Ay! This hot potato is for you. I your little brother know my own ability. I don't dare hold two Talismans....."

"Pa!"

I caught the Talisman and threw it into my bag. Two Talisman insignias appeared above my head and I smiled, "Then I shall return to [Zhan Long]'s field, otherwise I will get robbed by bandits....."

Misty Cloud held his Blood Cutter and said, "[Enemies At The Gate] will defend against [Flying Dragon] and [House of Prestige], you lead the others and leave quickly. If they make a detour around the city and attack the west side of [Zhan Long]'s field, I will immediately lead people there and kick their ass. I definitely won't let them have a good time!"

“Okay!”

Chapter 446: A Woman's Soft-Heart

“Shua Shua.....”

Above my head, the insignia of the two golden talismans glowed and was extremely noticeable. I stood at the frontlines, and swung my Dragon Reservoir sword. One after another, I killed monsters that were attacking [Zhan Long]'s frontline. Even though killing players gave more points, [Zhan Long] was still one of the biggest guilds in Ba Huang City. Therefore, we couldn't go around like a rabid dog and attack everyone. That was something guilds like [Flying Dragon] or [Wrath of Heroes] would do.

.....

“Boss....”

Matcha gripped her long sword as she looked at me from a distance. She pouted her lower lip, “You could at least be a little less noticeable. You're carrying two of the Talismans, and yet you're still on the frontline. What'll happen if you get ambushed? Look at Soaring Dragon, he's always been at the center of [Flying Dragon], and he doesn't even try to go to the border of the formation....”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] as I smiled, “It doesn't matter. If someone thinks that they can kill me in front of ten thousand [Zhan Long] players, then they can come and try. Besides I'm not like Soaring Dragon, that squishy mage. If they want to kill me.... then they first gotta go through my [Wall of Dou Qi].....”

Li Mu facepalmed, “Motherf*cker, you're just too crazy....”

Wolf raised his dagger and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, I have something to say, but I don't know if I should or shouldn't...”

“What?” I asked.

Wolf said with a serious tone, “Based on what I know, [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of Heroes], [Prague], and [Vanguard], have already started to clear

out the smaller guilds. Especially [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of Heroes], they've practically killed all of the small guilds and random players around them. So, the amount of points that they've collected are not that much fewer than ours, even though [Zhan Long]'s strength is much greater than theirs. How can we fall behind them? Don't you think it's time that we start clearing out the battlefields too?"

I slightly jolted, then shook my head, "No..."

General Lian Po gave me a puzzled smile, "Guildmaster, why's that? Like this, we'll be thought of as soft-hearted women by the other guilds...."

I jumped up and swung both of my swords to cut down a monster. I lightly landed on my feet and softly said, "At the time of [Zhan Long]'s founding, I made a promise, "To fight for the weak". No matter what the situation is, I'll never go against that promise. What kind of strength is it, to be able to kill and steal stuff from people who are weaker than you? If we truly have strength, then we should think about the top three guilds...."

Lian Po smiled and asked, "Think about doing what?"

I took a deep breath, "For one thing, right now is the information age. Nobody is that much of an idiot. By killing small guilds and solo people, our guild's reputation would be broken. [Zhan Long] doesn't do things in which the gains don't make up for the losses. [Flying Dragon] can go and kill the small guilds, but [Zhan Long] will not join along with them. If [Zhan Long] can rise up in Tian Ling City, it wouldn't just be due to our strength and military tactics, but because the hearts of our brothers are all united without a single doubt!"

Wang Jian smiled, "Hear hear, that's our Brother Xiao Yao!"

Li Mu nodded, "Yup, I think so too. After years of playing so many games, I've always thought of how to make myself stronger. Sometimes, I would even use whatever means necessary, and distort the facts. But now that I think about it retrospectively, all those people that I've bullied before, or the people that I've made cry because I PKed them, I've really

done them wrong. When people do too many bad things, it really is hard to sleep at night....”

I turned around and looked at him, “Pei, so you were actually that kind of person before....”

Li Mu slapped his forehead, “Ha ha, I accidentally let that slip. Guildmaster, you better not try and investigate.... Let’s just not bring up things from the past....”

I nodded and said, “Qing Qian and Matcha, make sure to watch what’s happening around [Zhan Long]’s formation. Once enemy guilds like [Flying Dragon], [Hero’s Mound: Division One] or [Thousand Burial] get within 500 yards of us, immediately send out a team of elites to kill them. Even though [Zhan Long] won’t initiate any PKs, that doesn’t mean we’ll just let them take our points. We absolutely cannot accept that!”

Qing Qian and Matcha smiled as they nodded, “Understood. We will be carefully watching!”

.....

“Ji Ya.....”

The western gate of the City of the Four Noblemen began to open up. At that moment, we saw masses of soldiers dressed in fire red armor carrying long hammers stand in formation. It was the 7th wave of monsters, Iron Hammer Carriers. The next moment, Li Mu shared the stats of the Iron Hammer Carrier’s stats in the guild chat—

[Iron Hammer Carriers] (Thunder Tier Monsters)

Level: 91

Attack: 2900-3950

Defense: 3100

Health: 150000

Skills: [Invigoration] [Inflamed Fighting Spirit] [Hammer Break]

Introduction: Warriors from the Warring States Period, these Iron

Hammer Carriers were all young men from the Qin Kingdom's icy peaks. They were born with incredible strength, and could fight the beasts since childhood. Duke Xiao of Qin managed to win against so many empires because of all of the heroes he had in his army. Using Shang Yang's scheme, he destroyed the well field system* and opened up roads into the mountains. From there, he found warriors with extraordinary strength, and created a ten thousand man army, each and every one of them was fearless and fitted with an iron hammer. They laid siege to cities and dominated the world. Thousands of years later, these hammers were covered with the dust from many many years, and have finally awoken from hell. Now that they have revived on this earth, they only have one desire, to slaughter.

*TL Note: The system where chinese cut into mountains to create rice paddies

.....

Bai Qi shivered and gripped his battle axe, "Damn, they're Thunder Tier monsters? That attack is really high, it's almost 4000. Add on the Thunder Tier buffs, their actual attack is probably over ten thousand!"

I couldn't help but smile and said, "It's probably not that much?"

Bai Qi was puzzled, "Why's that boss?"

I patted my chest and explained, "My defense right now is 4000, and with the 46% addition from equipment, and the 40% from [Dragon's Whistle of Lightning and Thunder], plus the [Wall of Dou Qi]'s 180%, and the 10% additional during battle, that makes it around 15,000. But, based on 's rules, if attack is under defense, the damage dealt will be only around 500. Let me try, and let you guys see how much damage these Iron Hammer Carriers will deal so we know...."

"Ok...."

I straightened up and walked forward. The whole team of Iron Hammer Carriers rushed at me. The one standing in the very front raised his iron hammer, and landed an attack on me. It was the skill [Hammer Break]! "Peng!", my shoulder dropped from the weight, and 897 damage popped

up. As expected, Thunder Tier increases the base stats by at least 3 times!

Bai Qi also took a hit from one of the Iron Hammer Carriers, and it knocked off 1900 of his health. Slightly shocked, he swung his battle axe at the monster. Using his 15% HP drain, he immediately replenished quite a bit of his health. Wolf, Li Mu, Matcha, and Qing Qian quickly followed behind. These Iron Hammer Carrier's stats were pretty strong, if our main force didn't stand up and fight, then our weaker players would suffer heavy damages.

In the distance, the small guilds that fought beside [Zhan Long] had already begun to suffer intense damage. For people who have a base defense of less than 2500, they basically suffer 3000 damage with each attack, and if there was a critical attack, they would die in an instant. Cries of agony rose from around our formation, and in the blink of an eye, several hundred people died under the crushing blows of the Iron Hammer Carriers.

"Archers, use [Scattered Shot] to stun the monsters, and help cover for the frontline!" Dancing Forest commanded from behind us.

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands waved her staff, and became the strongest killing force in wiping out the Iron Hammer Carriers. The light of [Heal]s fell upon the frontlines like rain. But, even with all of this, [Zhan Long] still suffered some losses, and within 3 minutes we lost several dozen players under the blows of the Iron Hammer Carriers. There was no helping it. Once the monsters happen to land an explosive attack onto you, even Li Mu or Old K would suffer from damage like that. That held true even more so for the damages that the second line and third line suffered.

As though the number of players that had been killed was not enough, another crowd of monsters appeared on the city towers. Every 20 meters, there was a tower on the wall, and on it, stood green robed scholars. In their hands, they held bamboo scrolls and started chanting aloud. Rays of golden light began to rise from the scrolls, and fell upon the Iron Hammer Carriers at the bottom of the walls. The light would then surround the monsters, BUFFing them.

“Ding!”

Battle Notification: Please Note, the strategists have used [War Inspiration], and have increased the attack power of all allies within a 100 yard range by 20%. The Iron Hammer Carriers now have their morale lifted!

.....

“F*ck....”

I rested my Dragon Reservoir Sword on my shoulder and smiled, “Things are going to shit now. Everyone, hold your positions, do not advance anymore. Let’s first block the attack of these Iron Hammer Carriers first! Little Dance, use [Meteor Shot] to deal with the strategists on the wall. Don’t let them add anymore BUFFs!”

Dancing Forest shook her head, “I can’t reach. The angle is too high!”

“Nevermind then. Hold your positions!”

“Ok!”

The battle turned chaotic at the bottom of the wall. All of the Iron Hammer Carriers that were BUFFed by [War Inspiration] had become even more fierce, so much that even [Zhan Long]’s formation was in danger of being shaken. We had retreated a whole 50 yards. We decided to pull apart the distance, and made it so that the Iron Hammer Carriers on the frontline were outside the range of the strategists. That way we could hold our frontline and continue to kill Iron Hammer Carriers while hoarding the experience.

.....

“The seventh wave BOSS, who knows where it will spawn.....” Qing Qian said with hope in her eyes, “If Brother Xiao Yao can obtain 3 Talismans at once, how great would that be.....”

I stumbled backwards,” Oof, I don’t want anything to happen to me now. Two Talismans are enough, all of the main forces of the big guilds are still here. If I were to get 3 Talismans, at this point I’ll definitely

become someone's target. If [Zhan Long] had over 100,000 troops, then I wouldn't have any worries, but right now we only have 10,000 men, not enough to fight off that many enemies.....”

Qing Qian grinned, “Nope, our Brother Xiao Yao is a man that could rival ten thousand men. Even if you were to have 10 Talismans on you, you could still fight your way out of [Legend]’s 50,000 man formation. At least, that’s what I think....”

My face turned green, “That bluff is just a bit too much isn’t it? Just fighting Fang Ge Que on my own is hard, much less the 50,000 man [Legend] formation....”

.....

At that moment, Matcha fluttered her wings and descended to the ground and stared at me, “Boss, wait for a second. Don’t tease sister now, there’s some movement to the South of [Zhan Long]’s formation!”

“What movement?”

“It’s players from [Valley of the Gods]. Lu Dong Bing lead 7000 people and are attacking a group of small guilds and solo players to our south. Your old friends, the godly weaponsmiths— Palace Spirit and Palace Decree, their guild, ‘Epic’ is one of the guilds being attacked. They’re around 200 yards away from us and have fulfilled your conditions. What should we do, do we attack?”

I swept my Dragon Reservoir out and smiled, “Fox, lead Division Two to hold our formation. 5000 players from the main guild, follow me to attack [Valley of the Gods] from the North. Li Mu will take 5000 people from the Valiant Bravery Group and circle around to the forest in the west. Wang Jian will command first division, third division, and fourth division, to cut off their right flank 100 yards to the west. This time when we attack, we will massacre [Valley of the Gods]!”

Chapter 447: The Defeat of [Epic]

Old K, Matcha, One Second Hero, and Tang Xin were four heavy armor players that lead [Zhan Long]'s elite army of nearly 14,000 people to charge at the backside of the formation. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked along the border of the army as the insignia of the golden talismans floated above my head. I had Qing Qian and Wolf at my side, so I had no worries, since there was no one here who could kill me.

Night fell, and the sky was dotted with stars. It was almost as though it was signal for the big battle that was about to come.

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands commanded, "Mages, use [Revealing Light] to illuminate the battlefield. We cannot give the assassins any chance to ambush us. Immediately!"

"Woosh woosh woosh....."

Flashes of light flew into the air. It was the fourth advancement mage skill. At that moment, the entire battlefield was lit up, and over 40+ of [Valley of the Gods] assassins appeared out of the shadows. Thank god for Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands' cautious nature, or else these people would have managed to sneak upon us.

"Kill them all!"

Once my command fell, Old K immediately brought a group of berserkers forward. Each and everyone of them growled, and activated [Dou Qi Armor] which allowed them to cancel 50% of the damage was inflicted upon them. This was a fourth tier Heavy Armor class' survival skill. The durability was basically the same as that of a [Mana Shield].

"Hong!"

A squall erupted, and Old K's [Whirlwind Blade] rushed through the crowd. A dozen assassins were swallowed up by the skill and thrown into the air. Before they even fell back onto the ground, they were cut into a million pieces. A small ambush team like that clearly couldn't defend against [Zhan Long]'s main force.

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword with my right hand, and ran straight towards the Southern Battlefield. I let my Cold Iron Sword fly out of its sheath and float next to my shoulder. With a burst, it whistled through the air and cut right through the chest of a [Valley of the Gods] archer, as the [Scattered Shot] on his bowstring disappeared into thin air. He was killed on the spot. He took nearly 6000 damage, and since he at most had 2000 defense, he would've never been able to defend against an attack like that.

On the lush plains, a team of over 1000 people were being chased by players from [Valley of the Gods]. Everyone had an "Epic" insignia floating over their shoulder. To think that 3000 man 4th level guild team was actually being pushed to such a degree, this situation was truly puzzling.

One of the players was a level 80 berserker who had a battle axe in his hand and the insignia of "Guildmaster" on his shoulder. It was [Epic]'s guildmaster—Thousand Mile Ambition. He was a 40 year-old uncle. Seeing his army on the verge of total destruction, Thousand Mile Ambition's eyes were blood red. He roared at the distant [Valley of the Gods], "[Valley of the Gods], what exactly do you guys want from us? [Epic] has never bothered you before, so why are you pursuing us to the death!?"

[Valley of the Gods]'s guildmaster, Lu Dong Bing, held his staff up, his face revealed an arrogant smile, "This is a world where the strong eat the weak, did you not know? In this battle of the City of the Four Noblemen, killing players give you points. So for the sake of giving my brothers more rewards, I can only wrong you guys a little. You can't blame me that. You guys chose to be so close to us!"

"You f*cker...."

Thousand Mile Ambition tightened his grip on his battle axe, "You're too cruel. Isn't it enough, killing 1000 of my brothers?"

Lu Dong Bin's eyes turned cold, "Not enough! Hei hei, unless you want to give me another 500 people for [Valley of the Gods] to eat. Otherwise,

I will chase after you until I completely annihilate all of you!"

Thousand Mile Ambition gritted his teeth, "You bastard!"

In the group of people, Palace Decree raised a longsword and shouted, "Guildmaster, take a team of our brothers and escape first! I'll take a second group to block the players from [Valley of the Gods]. Even if we are all massacred, at least we'll be able to protect half of our people!"

Thousand Mile Ambition gritted his teeth, "Palace Decree, then I will thank you for your sacrifice. First Team, follow me!"

As he finished talking, Thousand Mile Ambition led away 700 people. Only 500 people were left to help support Palace Decree. The 700 people quickly retreated towards the western plains.

"Hua...."

Palace Decree swung his longsword and yelled, "Prepare to attack!"

Palace Spirit stared at Thousand League Ambition's retreating shadow and said, "Brother.... Is guildmaster just going to leave us? I see, so it's like that...are you just going to treat us as the "food" for the people of [Valley of the Gods] to get more points? This.... is this really something a guildmaster that we have followed for so long would do? I.... I'm a little doubtful...."

Palace Decree raised his longsword, "Ling Er don't say anymore. Get ready for battle. [Valley of the Gods] has already killed so many of [Epic]'s people. We have to settle this debt with them. No matter if guildmaster stays, or leaves, it's just a matter of whether or not he will go to his death with us! F*ck, kill as many as you can. Now I understand, [Valley of the Gods] is just a group of wild beasts, feeding on the weak!"

The halberd in Palace Spirit's hand trembled, as her beautiful eyes swept over the 7000 enemies from [Valley of the Gods]. Her eyes were red with tears, "Hmph, then I'll just battle to the death by my brother's side.... This City of the Four Noblemen event, to think it was this un-fun. To think that we would say goodbye so quickly...."

The 500 players of [Epic] all trembled as they waited for the great

armies of [Valley of the Gods] to charge. Palace Spirit and Palace Decree stood at the very front of the team. Everyone was filled with terror. In Ba Huang City, [Epic] was probably considered a third tier guild, while [Valley of the Gods] was at least a second tier. The difference in strength between the two sides was extremely clear, as well as the conclusion of this battle.

Right as Palace Spirit and Palace Decree were filled with the terror of waiting for their death, suddenly the trees and bushes on the border of the Northern Forest shook. The sounds of battle rang out from the thrush, and a group of people suddenly burst out.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, with Old K, Qing Qian, Matcha and other [Zhan Long] players following behind me. I pointed my sword at [Valley of the Gods] and shouted, “Any person with a [Valley of the Gods] insignia, kill! Let’s wipe these little shits out of this City!”

The sounds of cheering were unending, as [Zhan Long]’s great army flooded out. Old K, Qing Qian and other top tier players didn’t care who the opponent was, and just charged out. They basically demolished [Valley of the Gods] encirclement. Our [Zhan Long] players basically charged right into [Valley of the Gods] formation, and forced them to turn around and defend themselves.

“Ah.....”

Palace Spirit stood in her spot, stunned. The halberd in her hand trembled with excitement as she exclaimed, “That.... that’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai... Gods, [Zhan Long] is here to help us, [Zhan Long] is here to help us.... Brother, we don’t have to battle to the death. We don’t have to battle to the death!”

Palace Decree was elated, as he pumped his fist, “F*ck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai came just in the nick of time. Great! Brothers, attack alongside [Zhan Long], and annihilate [Valley of the Gods]. That group of assholes!”

“Hong!”

My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] tore through the crowds. I rushed headfirst into the crowd. With my left hand, I grabbed the returning Cold

Iron Sword and crossed my two swords. Like a whirlwind, I cut through their army. At the same time, I looked into the distance, and saw that Li Mu was leading the [Valiant Bravery] camp, while Wang Jiang commanded the three other divisions, and had arrived at the battle field. I immediately sent them a message, and told them to completely surround the enemy. Our numbers were double that of our opponents. Definitely enough to trap them!

[Valley of the Gods] was [Vanguard]'s ally, and so, every time [Vanguard] had any activities, [Valley of the Gods] would always be near them. On top of that, [Vanguard] was also [Zhan Long]'s biggest rival. Killing [Valley of the Gods] was an act of war against [Vanguard], which was something I was very happy to do.

“Peng Peng Peng....”

I could hear the earth shaking from my left side, as I saw a chain of explosive attacks suddenly erupt. It was one of [Valley of the Gods] battle tactics, Mass Bombardment. At least, several hundred musketeers would activate [Bombardment] and other heavy artillery long range attacks. [Bombardment] was a third tier advancement skill, and could deal 150% of normal damage to a target that was 5 yards away. These musketeers had all activated their third advancement skill, [Violent Fire], increasing their attack speed by 100% for 7 seconds. The frequency of their attacks was insane!

The screams of agony rang out, as 20 players from [Zhan Long] all fell to the ground. They were completely defenseless against such a brutal attack!

I bit down and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword as I rushed forward and cried, “Fourth Advancement Knights, prepare your skill, [Flying Sword], and kill those fourth advancement musketeers. Slaughter all of them! Let’s see what [Valley of the Gods] will do after that!”

I lept up and activated [Haste] to buff myself. I quickly killed my way into [Valley of the Gods] formation. With a wave of my arm, I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] that covered the entire group of musketeers.

Behind me, Winter Snow, Moon Feather, Star Blade, and a group of other fourth advancement knights all raised their long swords, letting their [Flying Sword]s fly out with a “Shua Shua Shua”, right into the middle of [Valley of the Gods] formation.

Everyone in that crowd screamed before they died. Add on to that the attack of Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox], and in moments, our opponents hundred man top tier musketeer team was basically demolished.

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands took a group of mages and started advancing. They began waving their staffs, and the earth seemed to burn scorching red. Nearly a hundred [Magma Abyss]es were activated, and the skill swallowed groups of people in. The killing power of this attack would make the hair on anyone stand up. In the blink of an eye, it laid waste to 30 yards of the enemy’s formation. There was no one left standing.

“F*ck!”

Lu Dong Bing made a fist. Never would he have thought that his [Valley of the Gods] would lose so badly to [Zhan Long]’s attack. The worst part was that his way out was blocked by the players lead by Wang Jian and Li Mu. Even if he were to send an urgent message out to [Vanguard], it was all too late. None of the guilds close to them were [Vanguard]’s allies. This was truly a “pray to God for help, but none will come” situation.

I opened up my palm, and activated [Defeat the Dragon]!

“Shua!”

Lu Dong Bing was dragged all the way to my side, and the I activated [Curse of the Night Fury]!

For 2 seconds, Lu Dong Bing was cursed so that none of his skills would activate. Even his [Dimension Leap] was useless now!

Both my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Cold Iron Sword fell upon Lu Dong Bing, and broke his [Mana Shield]. With a single sweep of my Dragon Reservoir Sword, Lu Dong Bing fell to his knees. The guildmaster

of [Valley of the Gods] was killed in 2 seconds!

“Pa!”

I quickly grabbed onto the staff that Lu Dong Bing dropped, and raised it as I yelled out, “I have already killed the boss of [Valley of the Gods]. Does anyone dare oppose me?”

With that shout, all of the players from [Valley of the Gods] were shocked into a stunned silence.

Li Mu raised his sword and began to charge from behind, “Kill them all! Kill even those who admit defeat....”

At that moment, all of the hearts of [Valley of the Gods] froze.

Without hesitation, I waved my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Cold Iron Sword and let it cut into the crowds. Points needed to be earned, or else there was no point in me coming to fight [Valley of the Gods].

Right at that moment, a system bell rang out. The seventh BOSS had finally appeared. It had spawned on the eastern side of the City. Huh, that was where [Prague]’s formation was. [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] would probably not let Yan Zhao Warrior kill that BOSS, so there was no need for [Zhan Long] to interfere. Might as well just continue killing [Valley of the Gods]!

Chapter 448: Allies for Now

In a short moment, all 7000 players from [Valley of the Gods] had been completely erased from the map by [Zhan Long]. We had encircled their entire formation, and didn't let a single person escape. On top of that, this Grave of the Warring States map was currently under a system prohibition due to the City of the Four Noblemen event which prevented people from using City Return Scrolls. Even the time that it took to log off had been doubled. Add on to that, the fact that [Zhan Long] had attacked from all sides, the players from [Valley of the Gods] had no choice but to die. And they were by no means difficult to kill!

.....

“Sha sha....”

My battle boots slid across the grass, and I picked up a long spear from the ground. I glanced at it, and saw that it was a Purple Tier equipment. By now, that tier was no longer anything that was very rare or uncommon. In the earlier stages, it would've sold for around 100,000RMB, but now it was probably worth only around 500RMB. It was only good enough for middle tier players. But, no matter how worthless it was, it was still worth some money. And so, I threw it into my bag.

“Brother Xiao Yao!” Qing Qian walked over with her dagger in hand. She smiled, “[Valley of the Gods]’ army has been wiped out. Nobody actually came to help them. From beginning to end, [Vanguard] didn't even say a word.”

I nodded, “Yup, have you counted our losses?”

Matcha walked over, and stood beside Qing Qian, “We lost 700 players, while our enemy lost 7000. Most of the players we lost were from the divisions, while the main guild only lost around 200 members.”

I nodded, “That's good. Let's return to our original spot! Also, there should be news about the seventh wave's BOSS by now....”

Qing Qian blinked a few times and smiled, “I’ve been constantly watching for any news. Close to 20 minutes ago, that Saint Tier BOSS’ health was less than 10%. It has been whittled away by the three big guilds. Jian Feng Han, Misty Clouds and Yan Zhao have been fighting this whole time. However, it looks like Uncle Yan Zhao has the upper hand, because it spawned in [Prague]’s formation, and has already come to blows with [Prague]. Both sides have suffered losses.”

Li Mu had a bloody cloak draped across his shoulders as he walked over and commented, “[Vanguard] actually dares to fight a battle to the death this early on. Even if that opponent is [Prague], they don’t show a shred of mercy. One can imagine, that if [Vanguard] were to be near our formation, Jian Feng Han might even personally lead a team to kill Guild Master.”

I squinted my eyes and said, “Did you think that Jian Feng Han doesn’t want to? Ever since [Zhan Long], [Enemies At the Gate], and [Blood Contract] rose up in Ba Huang City, Jian Feng Han probably hasn’t gotten a good night’s rest. [Vanguard]’s position as tyrant has been challenged, time and time again. This battle is just too important for him. Once he gets the City of the Four Noblemen, he would be able to consolidate [Vanguard]’s position. Otherwise, stories of [Vanguard]’s success in Ba Huang City will be doubted.”

Dong Cheng Lei carried his battle axe over his shoulder as he smiled, “I know. Whoever has the hardest fist gets this city! My smart eyes see the same thing as Qing Qian. Brother Xiao Yao can defeat ten thousand enemies alone. This piece of land, is destined to be [Zhan Long]’s!”

I looked at the two talismans in my bag and said, “It’s too early to say that. Everybody work hard. We still have a long ways to go. It is definitely not as easy as we think it is to get all 10 talismans. Even one of Jiu Li City’s main guilds, [House of Prestige] has decided to join. Who knows if Fan Shu City’s [Hero’s Mound] will also join. If Fan Shu City decides to join in, then it’ll be really hard to say what the outcome of this battle will be.”

Li Mu grinned, his face filled with mischief, “From what I know, after

[House of Prestige] lost to us in the last City Battle, Bai Li Ruo Feng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind have harbored a hatred for us. Especially Quick Thunder Swift Wind. He thinks that you killing him in Ba Huang City was the greatest humiliation he has received. Especially as you did it in front of so many players of [House of Prestige], and in front of all those pretty players. He was originally like a war god to them....”

I swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and turned around towards the city walls. I said softly with a smile, “ If [House of Prestige] intentionally provokes [Zhan Long], then we’ll let Quick Thunder Swift Lightning suffer a little more humiliation!”

Behind me, Palace Decree raised his long sword and said, “Guild Master Xiao Yao!”

“Yes?” I turned around. I had almost forgotten about him, and I couldn’t help but smile, “Palace, how have you been these days? I never thought that we would meet under such circumstances. To think that [Epic] would suffer such terrible losses....”

Li Mu asked, “That’s right. Where’s your Guild Master?”

Palace Spirit resentfully said, “Guild Master took people and ran away. Brother and I stayed here to bring up the rear....”

“That....” I was speechless. Finally I said, “Alright, so you guys were the team to bring up the rear. No wonder you guys took so much damage.... Well there’s still time now. Straightforward people don’t keep secrets. Even though [Zhan Long] can’t guarantee that after you guys join you won’t have any enemies, but at least we will never accept such a humiliation. There is no guild out there that is willing to offend our honor like that. Palace Decree, Palace Spirit, do you still want to join [Zhan Long]? Our doors, will always be open to you siblings!”

Palace Decree furrowed his brow. He clearly still had some hesitations. He looked down for a few seconds, then looked up, “It is an honor that Guild Master Xiao Yao sees us so highly, but.... even though I, Palace Decree, am not a hero. I still don’t want to be a person who moves with the tides. From the day that I joined [Epic], I decided that when I die, it

will be on the battlefields of [Epic]. That is what it means to persevere....”

I couldn't help but smile, and patted his shoulder, “Good brother. I understand. Then, work hard! I will definitely not force you. But, if you ever decide to change your mind, you can come look for me at any time. There's nothing [Zhan Long] doesn't have, except for a top tier weapon smith like you and Ling Er. If you guys join us, you will become our chief weapon smiths. That is what I have always been waiting for.”

Palace Decree was a little embarrassed, “I'm afraid I didn't live up to [Zhan Long]'s expectations. I'm sorry, but I really can't leave....”

I nodded, “Whether it is your actions, or your life decisions as long as you can ask your heart and have no regrets, then all is well. Continue to work hard!”

Palace Spirit looked at the Dragon Reservoir Sword in my hand, her eyes filled with puzzlement. She exclaimed, “Brother Xiao Yao, that long sword in your hand... Is that the Emperor Qin's Sword?”

“Eh....” I tilted my head and looked down. I then smiled, “You could say it is. This is the second evolution of the Emperor Qin's Sword, Dragon Reservoir Sword. It's a Saint Tier Equipment, and its stats are much higher than the Emperor Qin's Sword.... That's right, this sword was originally made by you. Ling Er, I must thank you. You have helped me quite a bit. Without this Dragon Reservoir Sword, I probably wouldn't have been able to get third place in the Rise of the Heroes Tournament or the City Battle MVP....”

Palace Spirit gave me a sweet smile, “As my brother had said, it was my honor! Actually.... I do want to go to [Zhan Long], but Brother is always defending his “Path of a Loyal Servant”. You understand right? Brother is just a big idiot....”

Palace Decree rubbed his forehead, “Cough cough, don't say anymore....”

I smiled, but I didn't have anymore time to talk. I needed to take the 10,000 players of [Zhan Long] back to our formation.

.....

Once I reconstructed our formation at the bottom of the city walls, a bell rang through the sky. The seventh Talisman had fallen, and the owner's name appeared—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players, please take note, [Warring States Talisman – Seven] has already been dropped, and has been obtained by player Leafy Gentlemen. He is currently in the position (13331, 8921). When the player is killed, there is a 100% chance he will drop the Talisman!

After that, there was another system bell. The seventh Talisman already switched owners, to the player Luo Mu. Within the next minute, [Prague]'s team leader Luo Mu also died, and the Talisman was dropped. It was picked up by [Vanguard]'s Fallen Wolf. Right after that, Fallen Wolf also died, dropping the Talisman. [Prague]'s Guild Master Yan Zhao Warrior had picked it up!

After a few minutes, there didn't seem to be any movement regarding the 7th Talisman. Looks like Uncle Yan Zhao had it in his bag. It was the Guild Master of [Prague]'s talisman. The Talisman had finally found a somewhat less temporary place to stay.

.....

The eighth wave of monsters will soon come out....” Matcha said as she gripped the sword. Her beautiful eyes glanced towards the city walls, “Boss, the last 6 hours will definitely be the worst. We've already played for 14 hours straight. Are you tired? Do you need to rest?”

I shook my head, “After playing for 20 hours straight, peeing is an ok reason to go offline, but we should give up on sleep. Let's continue to battle. Those last 6 hours are just too important for [Zhan Long]. Matcha, you saw it too. In the last City Battle, [Zhan Long] got the most credit. We first annihilated [House of Prestige], [Emperor's Blood], [Moonlit Lake] and [Legend], those main guilds, but in the end, what did we get? A false rumor that [Zhan Long] achieved what they did due to luck, and that [Vanguard] was Ba Huang City's true victor. I have no way of controlling

what people say, so by taking this City of the Four Noblemen, the very first guild base, I can prove that [Zhan Long] has true strength. Let those liars shut up. That is what I really want to do.”

Matcha’s eyes lit up and she smiled, “Ok! I will do my best to support boss!”

.....

Not long after, the city gates opened up, and the eighth wave of monsters finally appeared!

As I killed the monsters, I looked at the rankings for the points that people had. Just as I expected, I wasn’t in first place. I didn’t kill enough people. Compared to Jian Feng Han, that psychopathic killer, there was probably a big difference in our points—

Jian Feng Han [1740020] Xiao Yao Zi Zai [1631290] Simple [1428230] Misty Clouds [1372870] Yue Qing Qian [1312830] Yan Zhao Warrior [1293870] Hero Ran Min [1237280] Drunken Spear [1212710] Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands [1191230] Bai Li Ruo Feng [1172900]

.....

It was clear, all of [Zhan Long]’s top tier players had been working pretty hard. In the top ten, there were four of [Zhan Long]’s members. Our only shortcoming was that we didn’t have enough players. If this battle of attrition was to a greater degree, our weakness from our numbers would truly show.

As time passed slowly, we finally killed 50% of the eighth wave of monsters, and more news came—

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Qing Qian carried her daggers, and bounded over, “A new battle has begun. Someone is attacking [Flying Dragon]’s formation, and they want to take Soaring Dragon’s number one Talisman!”

“Who?”

“[House of Prestige], they’re on the Western side of the city. By the looks

of it, Flying Dragon is about to lose. The entire frontline is relying on Drunken Spear to make up for them. Otherwise, they would've easily lost a long time ago....”

I squinted my eyes, “Is there any other movement?”

“Yep, Jian Feng Han has taken around 10,000 people, and left [Vanguard]’s formation. They’re heading northeast, as though they have something planned....”

Li Mu was puzzled, “What does Jian Feng Han want to do?”

I gripped my word and said, “Li Mu, take 9000 people from the main guild. We’ll head out too, and go towards the northeast!”

“Why?” Li Mu didn’t understand.

I grunted, then looked at the sky and said, “Bai Li Ruo Feng led people all the way to Ba Huang City to battle. To this day, they haven’t made any contribution to this. So, they obviously want to take the Talisman from the weakest guild, which is [Flying Dragon]. Think about it, Jian Feng Han has been named Ba Haung City’s strongest player, and he’s the Guild Master of the number one guild. Why would he watch and do nothing? [Vanguard]’s target is definitely [House of Prestige]. [Zhan Long] is so close to the Northwest Front. There’s no reason to go, we’ll just ally with [Vanguard] for now, and kill [House of Prestige] first!”

“Ok, I understand...”

Chapter 449: The Defense and Attack Gamble

Li Mu and Qing Qian led the players from [Zhan Long]'s main guild down a small valley on the western side. I was further ahead, and arrived at the northwestern side of the city. Shocked, I saw that [Flying Dragon] was being massacred by [House of Prestige]. [Flying Dragon] was left with only critically injured players and could only make a miserable retreat. Drunken Spear swept out his spear, bringing up the rear.

“Retreat!”

Soaring Dragon was enraged, “[House of Prestige] is too strong. We can’t take them head on. We’ll spread out in the forest towards the back of the Grave of the Warring States, and battle there. Little Flower*, hold our position!”

TL Note: Drunken Spear

Drunken Spear raised his shield as countless [Magma Abyss]es exploded under his feet. His health was constantly falling. All he could do was miserably retreat. Pursing his lips, he pouted, “I’m just a small team leader, why are you giving me such an important task....”

“Peng!”

His shield shook again as a plume struck the back. It was Bai Li Ruofeng’s arrow. Drunken Spear’s health dropped 2000 points from that one attack. He was at the point where he could barely keep his life. With a swing of his spear, his [Scorching Spring] exploded before him, forcing Bai Li Ruofeng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind to retreat. In a flash, he took the rest of the critically injured [Flying Dragon] players to retreat.

.....

Bai Li Ruofeng was speechless. He raised his longbow and chased after them with Quick Thunder Swift Wind and a group of elite [House of Prestige] players. He had no other target but to take that Talisman that was in Soaring Dragon’s hands!

As I ran, I carefully watched the situation on the map. [Soaring Dragon] had retreated into a forest. Behind that forest was an icy forest named “Ice Abyss”. Right in the middle of that forest was a chasm that was similar to Green Qilin Abyss. It was around a hundred meters wide. Once you fell in, coming back up was probably not that easy. This Forest Abyss was a newly spawned map, and so many players from Ba Huang City aren’t very familiar with the area. That was probably even more true for the players from Jiu Li City’s [House of Prestige]. Soaring Dragon wasn’t an idiot, it looks like he wants to use the abyss to drop [House of Prestige] into the pit.

I looked at the map a little more carefully again. Yup, west of the Forest Abyss was the extremely dense forest, “Red Cloud Forest”. Everywhere, there were fire like red maple trees and was named “Red Cloud Forest”. There wasn’t even 100 meters of distance between the two forests. Once [Flying Dragon] passes through the Forest Abyss while being pursued by [House of Prestige], Red Cloud Forest was the best place to launch their counterattack. It was a well hidden map, with open spaces that made it easy to move.

I made my decision, to go to Red Cloud Forest. [Zhan Long] will counterattack [House of Prestige] here! I sent the coordinates to Qing Qian and Li Mu, and began preparing for battle! [House of Prestige] had around 20,000 people. Even though there were quite a few enemies, with a surprise attack they would still be at a disadvantage. Add onto that, [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], and [Zhan Long] will combine into a three way attack. Even if [House of Prestige] was the second strongest guild of Jiu Li City, they would still lose to us!

.....

At that moment, a small guild and some solo players appeared right in front of us. One of them was carrying a battle mace, and his greedy eyes looked straight at me. He shouted out, “Look, there’s a person with two Talismans. Brothers, let’s go and kill him. We’ll kill him in one attack, and those Talismans will become ours!”

“Pei, that’s [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Not getting

killed by him would be pretty good already, and you want to try and kill him....”

“Damn, Old Four*, why don’t you have more guts? You don’t want to fight with Old Two, and Old Three? You’re as cowardly as a rat. I was really wrong about you. It’s not worth becoming friends with a scoundrel....”

TL Note: “Bros” would commonly refer to them by numbers, lined up from oldest to youngest.

That Lv 77 Berserker raised his mace, and took several dozen people to ambush us. He gave a whoop. His voice carried, and I knew that carrying two Talismans would definitely put a target on my head. I was probably going to get attacked everywhere. On the bright side, I had people with me.

Behind me, Matcha waved her sword and shouted, “Everyone, attack! Protect the Guild Master!”

A bunch of beautiful heavy armor players suddenly rushed forward. Tang Xin, Moon Feather, and Winter Snow all had weapons in their hands and followed Matcha. [Skyshaker Slash], [Flying Sword], and [Blade Rush] all joined together and in a flash, the explosion wiped out all of the people who were trying to kill me. This was very relieving. Matcha was well-raised into becoming an amazing Team Military Advisor and Close Combat Team Leader. Even her own strength was increasing exponentially, and her reputation amongst [Zhan Long] members was constantly rising.

.....

We didn’t have to walk far to get to our target. A ten man squad went to scout out the forest ahead.

“Hu hu....”

Tang Xin was gasping for air. The two peaks on her chest were constantly rising up and down. She smiled, “Guild Master, are we scouting ahead? I’ve never heard of a Guild Master personally going to scout out

an area. Aren't you afraid that we'll be killed on the way by [House of Prestige]?"

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled, "I actually want some [House of Prestige] members to try and kill me. The more people the better, it's basically sending points our way."

Matcha fluttered her eyes, and smiled, "Boss, are you that sure that [Vanguard] will join us, and launch an ambush against [House of Prestige] from the North and South?"

"Yup, I'm sure!"

I followed up with an explanation, "In the battle between Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City, Jian Feng Han was bullied a lot by [House of Prestige]. Right now is the best time for vengeance. Besides, Jian Feng Han is an extremely prideful person. He's always thought of Ba Huang City as his own backyard. How can he possibly allow [House of Prestige] to come into Ba Huang City's borders and do whatever they want?"

"Yup, if [Vanguard] were to attack with us, then we'll definitely win. Otherwise, it'd be hard to say, since [House of Prestige]'s 20,000 man force isn't there just for looks!"

"Don't worry, we will win!"

.....

Not long after, [Zhan Long]'s 10,000 man army quietly walked into Red Cloud Forest through a small path. There wasn't much movement in the forest. Just a few birds that were flying around. Li Mu and Qing Qian walked close by. Li Mu wiped away some sweat from his forehead and smiled, "It's early morning right now. By the time [House of Prestige] gets here, the sun will have risen. Let's make sure to give them a good beating!"

Qing Qian fiddled with a leaf in her hair and smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, should we start setting up the formation?"

"Yup."

I nodded once and added, “We’ll set up on the border of Red Cloud Forest, and be ready to attack and defend at any time. [House of Prestige] isn’t the type of enemy you’d want to conserve your energy against. We have to make sure we prepare for everything. Everyone has to make sure that they don’t accidentally appear in the clearings. We have to do our best to keep our location hidden. Melon, can you delete everyone that’s not an officer from the guild chat? Only allow the guild commanders and team leaders to talk on there!”

“Alright!”

Qing Qian smiled, “Actually, I’ve been thinking of doing it for a while. Otherwise, our secrets will always get out sooner or later. But, if we were to do that, a lot of people would probably complain, so I didn’t mention it. Now that Brother Xiao Yao, the Guild Master, said to do so, they have nothing else to say!”

“Yup. Besides, we might be able to take out the spies that other guilds have placed in our ranks!”

“Alright!”

.....

The 10,000 member [Zhan Long] army all entered the Red Cloud Forest. We stepped onto a ground covered with leaves, and laid in waiting in a dense area on the border. The entire border of the forest was covered with heavy armor players, making it easy for us to both defend and attack. I walked out of the forest with my Dragon Reservoir Sword in hand, as my battle boots stepped on the snow of Forest Abyss. Step by step, I walked forward. My location was public, and every few minutes the system would publicly announce it, which made it unsuitable for me to stay with everyone else. I could only walk around on the outside by myself.

“Sha sha....”

From a distance, I could hear the sound of a large group of people running through the snow. The next moment, Soaring Dragon and a group of [Flying Dragon] players were crowding around a place in the Forest Abyss. Black Tortoise, Drunken Spear, and others also came out. I

glanced at the group and saw that there were around 5000 players left in their group. Looks like [House of Prestige] dealt quite a bit of damage to them.

“Go around the abyss and reform alongside the abyss!”

Soaring Dragon had the insignia of a Talisman floating above his head. He raised his staff and shouted, “Do not get too close to the abyss. If you fall in, you won’t be able to get back up. We’re going to set up on both sides of it. Once the players from [House of Prestige] get close, we’ll immediately make our counterattack and push them all into the abyss!”

Just as expected, Soaring Dragon was planning on using the Abyss as a pitfall. However, it was definitely not going to be that easy. For one, [House of Prestige] had the advantage in numbers. For another, Bai Li Ruofeng wasn’t an idiot. He wasn’t going to stand near the abyss. That was basically tantamount to suicide. If he was like that, Bai Li Ruofeng would never make it as a top tier player. At the least, he wouldn’t make a stupid mistake like that.

.....

“Hua la....”

A group of birds suddenly flew out of the trees. Finally, the 20,000 players from [House of Prestige] all appeared out of the snow. Bai Li Ruofeng raised his longbow, his eyes filled with pride as he looked at Soaring Dragon. He couldn’t help but grin, “So, when they’re cornered, even rabbits will try and bite people. We need to be careful, looks like [Flying Dragon] is going to fight for their lives here!”

“Boss!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind was carrying the God Destroyer Mace. He reached out and pointed in my direction, “Look over there. Isn’t that our old rival Xiao Yao Zi Zai? He has two Talismans right now and actually dared to appear in this Forest Abyss all by himself. Is he looking to die?”

Bai Li Ruofeng’s eyes turned cold, “No, Xiao Yao Zi Zai isn’t an idiot. He wouldn’t do something that would bring him to his death. Be careful,

even Fang Ge Que has lost to that bastard. He's extremely complicated. The birds behind Xiao Yao Zi Zai have been constantly flying away. I don't even have to think and I know that there's an ambush there. From the looks of it, there are probably at least 10,000 of them!"

Quick Thunder Swift Wind smiled, "Actually, [Zhan Long] only has around 17,000 players total. Based on my information, [Zhan Long]'s big divisions are all on the western front. The ambush here is probably just the main guild, which is less than 10,000. This time, we brought a 27,000 man army. Killing [Zhan Long] will be a piece of cake!"

Bai Li Ruofeng smiled, "So it was like that. Then let's just change our route a little. Let's make our target [Zhan Long], and lock onto the Red Cloud Forest. Assemble 200 yards ahead. Begin to advance. Also, tell [Emperor's Blood]. Have them attack from the back of the Red Cloud Forest. We'll have a front and back pincer attack. Let's make [Zhan Long] suffer!"

"Alright!"

.....

I couldn't resist anymore and sent a message to Jian Feng Han, "[House of Prestige] is going to attack [Zhan Long]. If [Vanguard] doesn't start moving now, then when will they ever move? Exactly how many people did you bring?"

Jian Feng Han immediately responded, "We brought all of our troops, 40,000 people. Is that enough?"

I was slightly shocked, "Enough. We'll attack together with a North and South pincer!"

"Exactly what I was thinking of. I'll give out the command now!"

"Alright!"

.....

The sound of an explosion suddenly burst out from the distance. I don't know which Musketeer shot, but smoke started to waft up from the trees.

Right after that, an enormous group of [Vanguard] players suddenly burst out of the forest. The countless players covered the entire map!

I was right that Jian Feng Han would attack [House of Prestige] but I didn't think that they would be this brutal, and stake it all in one throw!*

Chapter 450: Dragon's Power

In Zhan Long's guild channel, I bellowed, "It's time! Attack! Target [House of Prestige]!"

As the sounds of clashes thundered in the forest, Li Mu, Bai Qi, Old K and the others dashed out of the forest. The [Zhan Long] main guild players surged onto the snowy land like tidewater. The usually tranquil Ice Abyss was filled with killing and tension at this moment.

.....

"Hua....."

My purely white War Swept Cloak fluttered in the wind. I turned around and looked towards Baili Ruofeng, Quick Thunder Swift Winds, and their crowd of people. The corners of my mouth curled into a smile as I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword high up and yelled, "Bai Li Ruo Feng, this is Ba Huang City! Do you still think this is the Jiu Li City that you have control of? Come on! [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard] will let you know the taste of desperation and weakness!"

Bai Li Ruo Feng trembled, but clung to his past delusions and said, "Brothers, they only have around 10,000 men, not enough to be afraid of. We, [House of Prestige] have over 30,000 great troops, why should we be scared of them? Division One, Division Two, go and block [Vanguard]. Main Guild and remaining Divisions, charge with me and annihilate [Zhan Long]!"

The sound of snow crunching under boots rang out from all directions. I charged at the front, and with a wave of my left arm, my Cold Iron Sword flew out of its sheath and floated above my shoulder. I targeted 9 people from [House of Prestige], and in seconds, my sword flew out and spun 9 times with a "Shua!" The sword was encased in a fierce Dou Qi layer, and was constantly spinning. "Hua Cha," it passed through one player's armor and chest, then jumped past and continued to pierce through its targets while I calmly swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and cut down several other players. My [Kill for Blood] had stacked up to 100 by now,

increasing my weapon's damage by 100%. I dashed over, and slashed apart one Knight's armor, as I cut his shoulder in two. A geyser of fresh blood spilled out onto the fresh snow.

I spun around, as I had killed my way into the enemy's formation. With the support of my [Wall of Dou Qi], even though I was surrounded by a team of Berserkers and Knights, I only received around 50-400 damage, and each of my attacks dealt more than 5000 damage and frequently hit their targets. My [Life Drain] was also continuously activated, which allowed me to survive without relying on Healers.

“Hua Cha...”

My blade cut through the parry of one Knight. The moment his blade broke apart, my attack left a deep cut in his chest, and I instantly killed him. Any instant kills meant that the killing power of the attack was superhuman. My current attack was terrifying, as I could not only cut apart a blade, but also kill the player in one attack. The surrounding players from [House of Prestige] were all stunned.

“Roar....”

My Flaming Tiger God roared as it darted out, and started to slaughter in the midst of the crowds with its sharp claws. [Burstfire Raid] swept past, and left burn marks on the snowfield. Simultaneously, it activated [Flame Armor] which had a defense boost that wasn't much weaker than my [Wall of Dou Qi] . At least, to kill the Flaming Tiger God while [Flame Armor] was active would be almost impossible.

With a “Pa,” I grabbed the Cold Iron Sword which had revolved back to me. I criss-crossed my arms and swung down, both of my swords slashed bloody paths through the crowds. Like an autumn wind sweeping the fallen leaves, I swept past the leading team of [House of Prestige]. The hundred person team actually couldn't defend against me and was immediately annihilated. The moment I saw Baili Ruofeng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind charge forward with the elite members, I immediately held my sword tighter, and hacked away as I retreated. I cannot fight recklessly.

The so-called elite is a position in the guild. According to Destiny's guild rules, every guild can only have 1 Guild Master, 2 Vice Guild Masters, 4 Elders, 10 team leaders and 27 flagbearers. At the same time, the guild can have a certain number of elite players. The number of the elite members is the total number of guild members divided by 10. For example, there is a total of 900+ elites in [Zhan Long]'s main guild now. Each elite member is the cream of the crop. The elites are professionals, major players that are responsible for leading the attack or defense. Therefore, if Bai Li Ruofeng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind led at least 500+ elite players to kill me, I absolutely cannot defend against them by myself. Otherwise, I would be committing suicide.

Seeing that I was backing away, Quick Thunder Swift Wind immediately roared, "Look! That son of a bitch, even Xiao Yao Zi Zai has moments of cowardice. Charge forward and kill him! Annihilate [Zhan Long]!"

I waved my sword and slashed two [House of Prestige] Knights down. I changed course as I retreated, and killed another three. I retreated while I gazed at the huge mass of [House of Prestige] members and guffawed, "Annihilate [Zhan Long]. How many times have you guys said this sentence? And the final result was still the same, which was getting annihilated by us, [Zhan Long]! Quick Thunder Swift Wind you better keep the God Destroyer Mace in your hands safe. I will let you hold it for a while. Don't worry. I will definitely kill you, and take the God Destroyer Mace within one hour. You just wait and see!"

Quick Thunder Swift Wind gritted his teeth and exclaimed, "Arrogant bastard! Wind Elves, fly over there! Stop him and kill him!"

The [House of Prestige] Wind Elves among the crowds sprung up. There were at least one thousand people flying forward with explosive speed. They were Wind Elves with many different kinds of jobs. It looks like they really want to kill me!

As I saw a scene like this, I couldn't help but laugh. I immediately used [Haste] and accelerated to escape with my life. I lowered my body slightly and used [Blade Rush], and moved 5 yards away in an instant. I used [Seven Stars Teleportation], and instantly moved another 75 yards away.

The Wind Elves flying behind me lost ground and they pursued me for almost another 20 seconds. Just when they drew close to me, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands and the others had also arrived behind me. Dancing Forest shouted, “Use AOE skills and force them to descend to the ground!”

At that instant, Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot], Yue Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] and other skills flew towards the sky. Many heavy arrows from the Archers also joined in to wreak havoc. The 1000 Wind Elf players of [House of Prestige] immediately lost their wings and fell to the ground. A 10% health loss was still rather easy to accomplish. Once they were hit, they immediately dropped to the ground.

“Go!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Moon Feather, Star Blade, and the other high level Swordsmen charged forward. They wielded their swords, and carved beautiful paths on the snowfields as “Shua Shua Shua” sounds resounded. Old K roared deeply, and swept past as he used [Whirlwind Slash] while Dong Cheng Lei swept past with his battle axe. Numerous [House of Prestige] Wind Elves were blown away. Almost within seconds, the [Zhan Long] members inundated the 1000+ Wind Elves of [House of Prestige]. Under the furious trampling of the ten thousand Zhan Long players, the movement speed of the 1000+ broken-winged Wind Elves was restrained, and there were no more team formations and teamwork. They were devoured in an instant.

.....

.....

“F*ck!”

Bai Li Ruo Feng felt heartbroken as he saw the scene. He positioned the longbow in his hand and commanded, “Make the formation here and attack!”

Zhan Long’s beautiful Elder, Sister Matcha, raised her long sword and yelled, “Halt! Prepare our defenses!”

“Peng Peng Peng.....”

The shields, swords, and armor of the heavy armor types from both sides had already clashed together. The battle between absolute strength and absolute defense had begun. The Archers’ arrows flew past while the Mages’ magic skills encountered one another. On the snowfield, rows of [Magma Abyss]s activated. Hot lava splashed out from volcanic vents, and burned the frontline heavy armor players while they howled in pain incessantly. No matter how high your defense was, it wouldn’t be possible to defend against magic attacks.

Baili Ruofeng was only 30 yards away from the frontline as he raised his longbow and shot a [Big Dipper Meteor]. With a “Shua” sound, the storm of arrows swept past the crowd. Immediately, dozens of half-health heavy armor players of Zhan Long grunted painfully and collapsed. Simultaneously, Baili Ruofeng bellowed, “Align the [Magma Abyss]es according to the scope I have marked, and kill them instantly!”

The next second, 7 [Magma Abyss]es appeared beneath Li Mu’s feet. He was shocked and hastily activated [Dou Qi Armor] to protect his body. At the same time, he activated [Blade Rush] to dodge. His health immediately plummeted, while the seven heavy armor players of [Zhan Long] who fought by his side collapsed and died. These seven players couldn’t withstand such high power magic attacks!”

.....

I couldn’t tolerate it as I watched and looked towards Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands and yelled, “Tang Xue*!”

*TL Note: Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands waved her staff and responded, “I understand. Fourth advancement Mages! Look for my marks!”

The next moment, with Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands in the lead, the [Zhan Long] Mage team paid back an eye for an eye. They also grouped attacks in the marked areas, and instantly killed a huge mass of people without giving the Healers a chance to heal.

The frontlines of both sides attacked each other for almost 5 minutes. [Zhan Long] lost more than 1000 players. Absolutely no benefits were gained. This is the true strength of the [House of Prestige]. Even as they faced the strongest team of [Zhan Long], they did not end up in an inferior position.

.....

Seeing that more and more people were dying, I gritted my teeth and glanced at the rage bar. It was full with 100 points. I immediately activated the special skill—[Dragon Transformation] !

“Hong!”

The howls of the dragon thundered throughout heaven and earth. A beam of sacred light shone on my whole body as my bones and skin experienced slight changes. Glowing dragon scales formed around my body while horrifying armor condensed around my Magic Spite Armor. The outer appearance of the Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword also transformed at the same time. I wouldn't feel good if I don't vent this strength hidden within my body. My sword swept past as I went out and it actually slashed out a streak of fiery sword aura!

“Hong!”

A group of [House of Prestige] players on the frontline howled in pain and retreated . I reused [Wall of Dou Qi], and brandished my sword as I slashed through the crowd. I kept waving both of my swords. With [Dragon Transformation], all of my normal attacks' had dragon power infused within them giving it sword aura. “Shua Shua Shua,” streaks of sword aura flashed out, and instantly destroyed the enemy's field to pieces!

Targeting Bai Li Ruo Feng, I abruptly used two long-range sword aura attacks!

“ShuaShua.....”

Bai Li Ruo Feng was shocked and with a “Xia” sound, he hastily activated the [Crystallize] skill, which made him invincible for one

second. However, the first strike still hit him, and he was almost killed in an instant—

“6216!”

“MISS!”

.....

From afar, I opened my arms and my Cold Iron Sword flew out. Simultaneously, I opened my hand and [Great Realm of Desolation] and [Blade Spin] converged just to kill Baili Ruofeng!

The instant the Crystallize disappeared, Baili Ruofeng remained quiet and immediately activated combo—Lightning Tempest. He then darted towards the back for some distance to dodge my multiple attacks.

“F*ck! Why is this son of a bitch so powerful?!” Quick Thunder Swift Wind killed a Swordsman of [Zhan Long] with just one slash of his war hammer as his face was filled with anger.

I flashed a faint smile and activated [Seven Star Teleportation]. I instantly leaped to a distance of only 25 yards away from Quick Thunder Swift Wind and activated a rage point skill that used up the last 20 points I had—[Defeat the Dragon] !

“Shua!”

Quick Thunder Swift Wind was abruptly yanked to my side and my Dragon Reservoir Sword landed forcefully on his neck!

“5136!”

Feeling shocked, he could only retreat with the use of [Blade Rush] while I stepped fiercely on the snowfield with my battle boots. Through the effect of the [Dragon Transformation], I was able to fly. I darted towards this old opponent and criss-crossed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword, and immediately slashed this [House of Prestige] Vice Guild Master in half as “Kaka” sounds rang!

“4721!”

“7162!”

.....

“Pada.....”

A war hammer fell on the ground. Just as I predicted, the God Destroyer Mace was dropped!

I picked up the God Destroyer Mace and threw it into my bag. I raised my hands and forced away the group of [House of Prestige] players who were trying to take the God Destroyer Mace. I smiled, “Didn’t you guys wanted to annihilate [Zhan Long]? Come!”

Chapter 451: Leave Behind Your Head!

Rage points were a type of energy that all jobs had. While someone was attacking a target and was damaged by that target, the points would rise up. After the equivalent of 100% of their health had been dealt, the bar would rise up 30 points. Under the conditions of fierce team battles such as this one, and with the support of a Healer, raising rage points was definitely not a problem.

Bai Li Ruo Feng seemed to be completely awed by my [Defeat the Dragon]+[Dragon Transformation] special skills. All he could do was hide at a distance from the players of [Zhan Long]. The first time I used [Dragon Transformation], I was able to completely break the courage of several hundred [House of Prestige] elites. Li Mu, Wolf, Qing Qian, and Wang Jian took the chance annihilate them. Within 10 minutes, [Zhan Long] solidified its advantage in the battle. Even if we had a disadvantage in numbers, in a map like this that only had so much space, [House of Prestige]'s 30,000 members had no way of battling with us. Having a lot of people could also be a big disadvantage, and the entire frontline was controlled by [Zhan Long].

.....

In the distance, Drunken Spear raised his sword and suddenly rushed towards the [House of Prestige] formation. [Flying Dragon]'s number one fiercest general had finally begun his counterattack. His attack basically announced the beginning of [Flying Dragon]'s counterattack. 5000 of [Flying Dragon]'s players had been humiliated, and now Drunken Spear was leading the stab of revenge!

With a flash of the blade, "Ka Ka" I cut down two Swordsman who were chasing after me. I began to retreat and entered the core of [Zhan Long]'s formation. One Second Warrior and Tearless stared at me, "Guild Master, why'd you come back here?"

I smiled, then raised my hand and summoned my God Army Cards. Moments later, they appeared in the air above my hand and began to

spin. In the next moment, they soared into the air and an enormous azure dragon crossbow formed in the sky with a god positioned behind it. The blood red god roared as it pulled the string of the crossbow. Five arrows filled with energy were notched onto the Azure Dragon Crossbow and flew out. Their targets were set to all [House of Prestige] players in the area!

“Shua shua shua.....”

Once the skill shot the first five another five more arrows flew out, and killed everyone in sight. The attack power of each shot was basically equivalent to Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot] or Bai Li Ruo Feng’s [Big Dipper Meteor]. To any enemy within 100 yards, it would deal enormous damage. These arrows traveled on rays of light into the crowds of people, and brought out screams of agony. My war points increased exponentially. Hehe, this [Azure Dragon Crossbow] really was a godly weapon in team battles. Thank you Mohist Five Scrolls!

One Second Hero was dumbstruck, “F*ck, isn’t this [Azure Dragon Crossbow] skill a little too shameless?”

I smiled, “It’s an SS tier secret skill, what do you think? If it didn’t have this much killing power, then why would it be worth taking 50 of my God Army Cards. That’s basically 500RMB....

Currently, even though White Tier equipments were pretty cheap, it still cost around 10RMB, and that was an underestimate. Otherwise, those workshop players would have no way of earning money.

Tang Xin’s eyes widened, “Isn’t this too tyrannical..... Guild Master, you have these Mohist Five Scrolls, which should be considered a war machine. But, raising a war machine like you, costs way too much money.....”

Cheng Yong Jie laughed, “That money spent on the God Army Cards is nothing compared to what National Beauty is making. If we do end up taking control over the City of the Four Noblemen, the guild base would also make a ton of money. Guild Master is not lacking in money at all!”

I turned around and began to charge into the distance, as I yelled, “The

[Azure Dragon Crossbow] can last for 15 minutes. The cooldown is around 3 minutes long. Tang Xin, help me guard it for these 15 minutes, we cannot let the players of [House of Prestige] break it!”

“Alright, I got it!”

Tang Xin had a determined look on her face as she carried her halberd, and stood beside the Azure Dragon Crossbow. She even brought 7-8 Knights from [Zhan Long]. She held a position as a team leader, and so she had people under her command. With these people protecting the Crossbow, I was much more at ease.

.....

Maybe the attack range of the Azure Dragon Crossbow was too large, or the attack power was too strong, either way it immediately attracted the attention of some core members from [House of Prestige]. Bai Li Ruo Feng raised his longbow, his eyes cold, “What the f*ck is that crossbow. It has such a strong attack power. Is it Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s skill?”

Beside him, Bai Li Ruo Hai said, “Yup. Big brother.... that’s from Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s Mohist Five Scrolls. I’ve told you about it before. This is the fourth skill of the five. It has a range of 100 yards, around 2.5 times that of normal Archers, Musketeers, and Mages. On top of that, it’s attack power is 90% of Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s attack power. It’s basically OP. This [Azure Dragon Crossbow] skill can last 15 minutes, and has around 100,000 health, while it’s defense is pretty average. Do you want to head over?”

Bai Li Ruo Feng nodded, “Take a group of Swordsmen, Knights, and Berserkers and charge over. The Knights will open up the road while the Swordsmen will dash through along with the Berserkers. Have them cut down that Azure Dragon Crossbow, or else we’ll be suffering too many losses too quickly. We haven’t even killed half of [Zhan Long] and Xiao Yao Zi Zai has basically killed most of us. That Mohist Five Scrolls skill is pretty shameless.....”

Bai Li Ruo Hai, “Understood. I’ll prepare the team immediately!”

Not long after, 500 of [House of Prestige]’s heavy armor players formed

a team and split off from the formation. One of the team leaders suddenly charged forward, and broke through the defense line that Li Mu and Wang Jian had made. The Swordsmen then charged through the break in the formation, and led the Berserkers who were swinging their axes through the air.

“F*ck.....”

Li Mu’s shoulder had taken 7-8 hits and he immediately retreated as he exclaimed, “Did the [House of Prestige] players take Viagra or something? Why’d they suddenly get so fierce? What’s with that?”

Qing Qian smiled, “That’s because Brother Xiao Yao’s Azure Dragon Crossbow has completely overpowered them, so they’re going after it..... Don’t think too much about it. Go and gather some of the core players together. We’ll launch a surprise attack on their flank and kill them. These are all [House of Prestige]’s elite heavy armor players. Once we kill them, we’ll see what Bai Li Ruo Feng plans on relying on to deal with our frontline!”

I laughed and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword as I leapt forward, “Kill! Right now! Cut them all down!”

Old K was the first to rush forward as he met several of the elite Swordsmen with his [Whirlwind Slash]. His battle axe was covered with fierce winds as it danced forward. They really lived up to their name as elites of [House of Prestige]. Two of the Knights parried the hidden blades from the skill and managed to retreat with a [Blade Rush]. With a raise of their arms, two [Flying Sword]s flew right at Old K!

“3718 ! ”

“3312 ! ”

Old K retreated, as cold sweat gleamed on his forehead. After that, Dong Cheng Lei rushed over too and leapt up, “Hong!” he knocked away one of the Swordsman, while Dancing Forest killed the other half dead Swordsman. Li Mu rammed into another Swordsman and used his [Absolute Authority] combo, as he killed him instantly!

I tightened my grip on my Dragon Reservoir Sword, then charged into the crowd. Behind me, my Cold Iron Sword continuously cut through its targets with [Blade Spin] while I hacked with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. It was as though a death god was walking amongst the players of [House of Prestige]. They began to dread walking into this trap, as they couldn't guess where the [Blade Spin] was coming from, nor could they tell if they had been locked on to by the Azure Dragon Crossbow. There was no safe place around them.

Many of [Zhan Long]'s core players rammed into the enemy's front lines, and a few minutes later 500 bodies lay on the cold snow, dying the pure white snow with red blood. Bai Lai Ruo Feng had miscalculated. [Zhan Long]'s formation wasn't that easy to fight your way into, and was basically impossible to leave from, alive. Li Mu, Qing Qian, Wang Jian and Dancing Forest, and these other top tier players were waiting for them. If they came into the formation, they wouldn't be able to leave.

.....

“Damn it....”

Bai Li Ruo Feng gripped his longbow, as his eyes grew cold, “I had 100 of the creme of the crop in that team of 500, and they were all killed? Are there monsters in the [Zhan Long] formation?”

Bai Li Ruo Hai said, “Brother, we can't take this anymore. The two divisions behind us have already lost. There were much more people from [Vanguard] than we originally thought. There are at least 20,000 of them. [Zhan Long] probably still has around 10,000 players left. They're probably all here. If we try and fight them with a 1:1 ratio, we'll be completely wiped out. Besides that, there's also [Flying Dragon]. Drunken Spear has already completely destroyed our right flank. What should we do?”

Bai Li Ruo Feng looked to the west and said, “I'll regret it so much if we don't kill Soaring Dragon and Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

“Brother!”

Bai Li Ruo Hai's voice trembled, “Give up on killing Xiao Yao Zi Zai...

[Zhan Long] is a piece of hard bone. Just Xiao Yao Zi Zai alone is pretty hard to deal with. He has over 4000 defense, 14,000 health, and is completely covered with equipment that raise magic defense. On top of that, he has that OP [Wall of Dou Qi] skill. All of the firepower of our Archers and Mages added together wouldn't be enough to kill him. For the sake of killing Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we have lost too much! On top of that, the [Azure Dragon Crossbow] looks like it's some kind of war machine. It has killed so much of our main force from so far away.... Brother, let's not even talk about whether or not we can even swallow [Zhan Long], that hard ass bone. Even if we do swallow them, I'm afraid that we'll have lost all of our teeth by the end of it..... Give up!"

"Sigh....."

Bai Li Ruo Feng gave a long sigh and said, "The fact that we, [House of Prestige] made it this far, really was based on very little power. Nevermind, there's no other way. Let's retreat to the east, into the Ice Abyss, and wait to find other chances to kill them!"

"Ok!"

Bai Li Ruo Feng raised his arm and shouted, "Everyone, retreat to the East. Fight as you retreat. We have to maintain the organization of the formation, and not fall into chaos!"

A large part of [House of Prestige]'s players were all wearing helmets, and we wouldn't even know if their hair got messed up. But, their formation was definitely ruined. Old K, Li Mu, and Wolf had lead their teams, and made all of the players lose their helmets and armor. The second the command to retreat fell, all of the troops scattered and it was a complete defeat.

.....

Around 20,000 of [House of Prestige]'s members retreated towards the east. Before they could even leave the frozen lands, the sounds of battle suddenly rose from the forests. In the next second, a Guild Master ranked general suddenly burst out from the forest, a large group of officers followed after him. It was none other than Misty Clouds and [Enemies At

the Gate]. His arm had the aura of [Arm of the Azure Dragon] shimmering in the air. Misty Clouds looked at [House of Prestige]'s formation and shouted, "Did you really think you could come onto Ba Huang City's lands as you like and kill whoever you want and leave whenever you want? What do you take Ba Huang City as? You can leave today if you want, you just have to leave your head behind!"

Chapter 452: Return 100 Fold

“Sh*t...”

Bai Li Ruo Feng’s face turned even uglier. The appearance of [Enemies at the Gate] was undoubtedly sentenced [House of Prestige] to be destroyed. Although [House of Prestige]’s influence in Jiu Li City is amongst the top, their opponents in Ba Huang City are unpredictable, and were too used to playing such games. [Zhan Long], [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] , none of which could be pushed around easily, especially when the 3 guilds have aligned their objective. which is to obliterate [House of Prestige] from Ba Huang City.

“Guild Master, what should we do now?” A leader of [House of Prestige] asked in a trembling voice

Bai Li Ruo Hai said, “Brother, the only option left is to chose the weakest opponent and kill our way out from there. We might still stand a chance to leave this formation, as for the direction, it is obvious. [Flying Dragon].

Bai Li Ruo Feng picked up his bow, and looked towards the west and said, “Ok everyone, let’s kill our way towards the west into [Flying Dragon]’s formation!”

.....

[House of Prestige]’s 20,000 players counter attacked, and aggressively attacked towards the west. In the blink of an eye, Drunken Spear’s men were not able to withstand the counter attack, and most of them had already been killed. The players from [House of Prestige] went berserk, and just like a wild coyote they latched onto [Flying Dragon] without letting go. With the weak display of [Flying Dragon]’s power, it wasn’t surprising that they couldn’t defend against the attack.

A spear head penetrated the shield of a Knight. Drunken Spear used the momentum to retreat backwards, his face pale. As he looked around, he saw that a number of [Flying Dragon] players that had fallen, and realized he could no longer ensure their safety and said, “Boss, we cannot

carry on anymore.. If this carries on, all our brothers will be slaughtered, lets retreat, bypass the abyss into Sword Saint Forest.

Soaring Dragon waved his staff, and cast a Magma Abyss onto a group of [House of Prestige] players. He was furious as he said: “We only have about 2000 men left, so what can we do even if we retreat to Sword Saint Forest? I... I Soaring Dragon do not want to suffer anymore of these humiliations. Since Bai Li Ruo Feng’s objective is this Talisman, I will fulfill his wish, but can he last long enough to be killed by me? F*ck, just wait and see, Bai Li Ruo Feng will die within the hour!”

As he finished speaking, Soaring Dragon waved his staff and shouted, “Everyone in [Flying Dragon], shift towards the abyss of the snowy forest.

Black Tortoise exclaimed, “Guild Master! Are we seeking death by going into the abyss? Once Bai Li Ruo Feng gives his order to enter behind us, we will fall into the abyss to our certain death...”

The veins on Soaring Dragon twitched as he let out a grin, “ [Flying Dragon] is left with very few members, and there is no hope of ever gathering the 10 Talisman for ourselves. Since the situation is as such, we should give a gift to Ba Huang City. At the very least we should give the rights of the Talisman to the players of Ba Huang City, I have already PMed [Vanguard]’s leader Jian Feng Han...

Black Tortoise gave a cold look, as he held onto his spear, and nodded, “Guild Master, I understand your plan!”

“Good that you understand, let us execute the plan!”

“OK!”

Drunken Spear held onto his spear as he faced [House of Prestige]’s army. With a charismatic smile, he killed all players that he passed, and waved in and out from the front to the back. Following behind him were the low health players from [Flying Dragon], and they were headed towards the abyss. For [House of Prestige] their objective was simple, to capture the Talisman. Without hesitating, they followed behind. In actual fact, even if Bai Li Ruo Feng saw any traces of an ambush, he had no other choice. [Vanguard], [Zhan Long] and [Enemies at the gates] were at

their tail, so [House of Prestige] can only continue to pursue [Flying Dragon]

.....

“Gosh...”

Li Mu held onto his sword and stood up suddenly, “[Flying Dragon] is crazy! If they head any further into the abyss, won’t they be pushed off the cliff sooner or later?”

“No, this looks more like a decoy...”, Matcha explained as she looked further, “[Vanguard] have a stronger attack formation. Judging from [Flying Dragon]’s current situation, Soaring Dragon must have made an agreement with Jian Feng Han, to lure [House to Prestige] toward certain death. This way, Ba Huang City will suffer less losses.

Yue Qing Qian blinked, “But Bai Li Ruo Feng is also a smart player, will he fall into the trap?”

With the Dragon Reservoir Sword in my hands, I laughed, “It doesn’t matter if he falls into the trap. When Bai Li Ruo Feng ordered [House of Prestige] to step into the Ice Abyss, it had already been decided that this will be their burial ground in this warring state!”

I waved my Dragon Reservoir sword, and said “[Zhan Long], follow me, let us take a detour towards the south, between Red Cloud Forest and Ice Abyss. We will push [House of Prestige] deeper into the abyss!”

“OK”

A group of players followed me as I prepared to flank them. In 2 minutes, 4000+ players were hitting [House of Prestige] from the side. After that moment of surprise attacks, we managed to push back the opponents. Players from [House of Prestige] dropped like flies and were terrified. They were surrounded, and knew that death was near. Their morale plunged and no longer dared to challenge [Zhan Long] any further. As the situation played out in front of Bai Li Ruo Feng, he could not see any hope. [Emperor’s Blood] was going to be ambushed at the other end of Red Cloud Forest by [Blood Contract] and [Prague], and most

likely won't be able to reinforce them.

.....

The entire land of the Ice Abyss was covered in fresh blood mixed with mud and snow. Messy footprints in the blood coated snow were scattered everywhere. The area behind me was painted crimson from my rampage. Who knows how many people my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword had killed. Only thing I knew was that I was ranking at first place right now.

In the distance Drunken Spear had only 21% of his health left and was non-stop yelling. At the same time he stabbed and killed 4 [House of Prestige] elites. He was then hit with a [Shot of the Archery God]+[Big Dipper Meteor] from Bai Li Ruo Feng. "Puchink!" As his chest was pierced with arrow, fresh blood flowed out as Drunken Spear knelt on the ground with his spear in hand. He stared at the landscape of the Ice Abyss, and yelled, "The damage you've dealt today to [Flying Dragon], I, Drunken Spear, will pay you back a hundred times!"

"Pa ta..."

With Drunken Spear fallen, [Flying Dragon] lost their ace player; therefore, their overall defense will collapse.

Soaring Dragon's face turned cold, "MotherFu*ker, charge them!"

Bai Li Ruofeng however laughed, "Give me some blood!" as he cast [Magma Abyss] all over the forest!"

"Klang klang klang..."

As smoke covered the forest, the ground below Soaring Dragon erupted with fire, and broke his [Mana Shield]. In addition, the 3 uses of his [Dimensional Leap] were on cooldown. As Soaring Dragon lifted his head, all he saw was Bai Li Ruo Feng's handsome face turn around, and an arrowhead thudded directly into his neck!

"Huff huff huff..."

He shot three arrows at once, and immediately killed Soaring Dragon.

The dazzling Talisman burst out of his body, and landed right into Bai Li Ruo Feng's hand.

.....

As he looked at the 1100 [Flying Dragon] players, Bai Li Ruo Feng gave a cruel smile, and yelled out, "Push forward and push the players of [Flying Dragon] into the abyss. Once they've fallen, we'll turn around and charge at the [Zhan Long] formation. Even if we die, at least we'll drag [Zhan Long] down too. You want to push us [House of Prestige] into the abyss? Dream on! Who do you think you are!"

A group of [House of Prestige] Knights leapt forward. "Peng peng peng" Their shields rammed against the [Flying Dragon] players. At that moment, one after another, [Flying Dragon] players fell into the abyss. The sound of screams rang through the sky. It was the desperate screams of the players. There was no way of seeing how deep the abyss was, and no matter what, falling in meant death.

In moments, all 1000 players from [Flying Dragon] had fallen in. Rays of white light flew up from the abyss as their souls were released from their bodies.

Bai Li Ruo Feng turned around and raised his longbow. The [House of Prestige] players were now rushing at [Zhan Long]'s frontline.

I immediately raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, "You want to kill us? Then come at us! Everyone, charge forward. Let them see just how strong [Zhan Long] is!"

Li Mu laughed as he raised his sword and charged forward. In a fray of swords, he forced the crowd to retreat.

I also raised my swords. With a dip of my shoulder, I stabbed a Knight, and forced him backwards several meters. The sound of arriving troops beat the ground like war drums. I crossed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Cold Iron Sword, and hacked at the shields of a group of Knights.

Behind me, Wolf, Qing Qian, and Matcha all charged forward. Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] sliced through the group of people. The battle rhythm

was completely in [Zhan Long]'s hands.

“Get away!”

Dong Cheng Lei roared, and used his superhuman strength to swing his battle axe. That one attack blew away a whole group of Knights and Monks. That little bastard was just too savage. Tang Xin, Winter Snow and other girls all rushed forward, completely unopposed by [House of Prestige]'s counterattack. Matcha waved her hand in the air, “Darling Duck, bring all of the Healers forward. Don't Let Cang Lei, Tang Xin, and the others leave your range of heals!”

Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring all followed behind, and maintained their constant support. This way we'll lessen the damage.

All of the skills began to interweave, and thread through the crowd. The entire frontline was completely dominated by [Zhan Long]. [House of Prestige] completely couldn't defend against us. On top of that, [Enemies at the Gate]'s elite players had met up with us. I could even see Misty Clouds raise his sword and cut through the people. Like this, I was much more relieved. This battle against [House of Prestige] has been determined, and there won't be any changes.

.....

Directly in front of us, the sound of Jian Feng Han's roar rang out. [Vanguard]'s advance was extremely fierce, and forced [House of Prestige] even further back. [House of Prestige]'s formation became more and more congested and crowded. There were even a few players that had fallen into the abyss. It wasn't until then that Bai Li Ruo Feng began to lose his confidence. With an ashen face, “Why would it become this way.....”

Bai Li Ruo Hai was about to say something, but was hit by [Grip of the Firefox]. Afterwards, another [Meteor Shot] hit his chest. Like that, he was killed by Qing Qian and Dancing Forest!

Chapter 453: Bed Technique

“It’s over, are we really finished?”

Bai Li Ruo Feng pulled back his longbow, and the arrow on the string trembled. He shot from a distance, and this was what despair looked like. He could already tell that this time, [House of Prestige]’s expedition to Grave of the Warring States was a mistake. Afterall, the City of the Four Noblemen spawned within Ba Huang City’s territory, and so all of the guilds of Ba Huang City joined together against a common enemy. This kind of cohesion was outside of Bai Li Ruo Feng’s calculations, and made [House of Prestige] suffer enormous losses.

“Ahhh.....”

Screams of agony rang out. A large number of [House of Prestige]’s players fell into the abyss. Even though nobody got any points from their deaths, the sight of it still made the Ba Huang City players happy.

.....

“Pu pu pu.....”

Three blades blossomed from the chest of three different Swordsmen. I killed three people in seconds. I swiftly turned around, as my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Ice Cold Sword pierced the bodies of 4 Knights and Archers. This was the strength of Dual Wielding in real life. I’ve practiced dual wielding more than once and so, in terms of agility, accuracy and precision they all have been honed to a great level. You could say that even though I might not be the only dual wielder in this game, but I am certainly the only one who can bring out its max potential and damage.

As I followed the old man around the world, I’ve met many practitioners who are more skilled than me, however I’ve never seen any who has better swordsmanship than me.

My blade was dripping with fresh blood, and I was cutting in and out of the crowd unhindered. With the [House of Prestige]’s players around me all killed the others were were terrified. They no longer dared to engage

me, and their faces were all pale as they looked at me, “F**, is this Xiao Yao Zi Zai a God of death? We can’t even get near him. His attacks and speed are too fast...”

The sight of my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword were a deterrence to the group of [House of Prestige] players who started to retreat however their path was blocked by Li Mu, Ran Min, Wang Jian, Bai Qi as well as the rest of the others who had launched a surprise attack. The collapse of the front was more apparent and led the players nearby to fall into the abyss, Wind Elves were also not able to fly higher due to gravity. Once they were above the abyss, the distance below is at least 100 metres, and these Elves will immediately start to descend as the cap of 30 metres above the ground was a condition that does not change even under these circumstances.

.....

Within half an hour, 20,000 [House of Prestige] players were reduced to the mere hundreds, and the further [Zhan Long] players advanced, the more players were killed. Our battle points increased even more!

As Bai Li Ruo Feng resisted the attacks amongst the crowd, the insignia of the Talisman shined brilliantly, and made him very obvious. In Ba Huang City’s formation, Jian Feng Han, Misty Clouds and I were all holders of a Talisman. Therefore this No.1 Talisman was something that all 3 of us really wanted, and we all are just waiting for the right time to strike.

As she held onto her dagger, Qing Qian slowly came closer to me. Beneath her leather armor, her yet to fully developed bosoms softly touched my shoulders, ” Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll initiate the attack later with [Absolute Step], and then I’ll control Bai Li Ruo Feng with [Flying Dagger] and lastly my [Grip of the Firefox] will force him to a distance from Jian Feng Han. Make use of your Defeat the Dragon skill to bring him to [Zhan Long]’s formation before killing him. This way, the No.1 Talisman will be ours!”

I nodded, “Ok, I’m ready, be careful!”

“I know....”

With a graceful spin, Qing Qian dashed out as her cloak fluttered in the wind. Her dagger grazed along the tall grasses around her, and upon activation of [Absolute Step], her speed increased exponentially. It brought her into the confused formation of [House of Prestige], and she was one step closer to the enemy in one jump!

“Pa!”

“2718 ! ”

Bai Li Ruo Feng wasn't able to avoid that hit. He hastily tried to avoid the 2nd hit, but Bai Li Ruo Feng at this point was already very tired, as he had to defend from 3 directions. His recently defeated formation had also added to the exhaustion as his personal fighting spirit had dropped by at least half. Even going 1 on 1 against Qing Qian would be a problem for him at this point.

On the other side, Jian Feng Han had already started to charge onwards with his sword ready, and with a shout he activated [Corrupt Wolf Edge], which made the sword glow.

Qing Qian glanced around and without hesitation, she opened up her tiny hands and cast [Grip of the Firefox] towards Jian Feng Han. This girl was so persistent for this Talisman that she did not even show the slightest hint of hesitation, just what I liked about her character!

Just as Jian Feng Han was forced to take a step back, I rushed over, and put out my hand. I activated [Defeat the Dragon] and locked onto Bai Li Ruo Feng.

“Sha!”

In an instance, Bai Li Ruo Feng was beside me, but before I could attack him, he had already locked a custom combo onto me —[Lighting Tempest]. Storm clouds began to gather, as he let out an arrow, followed by a jump backwards which caused my attacks to MISS him. As he flew back, he fired a [Penetration Shot] which landed on my chest plate. The level of his attacks were indeed worthy of being the God of Archers.

“3172 ! ”

“2718 ! ”

I immediately increased my speed and rushed over, at the same time I threw out a [Blade Spin]!

“Huh?”

Bai L Ruo Feng was up in the air, and he curled his body up as he downed a health potion. He held out his long bow to block the killing blow of my Cold Iron sword!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew and with it 5400 damage was dealt, however that did not kill him. Bai Li Ruo Feng was covered in blood, and was pushed into the air. As he flew over the abyss and started to drop into the abyss, he had a weak smile, “I’ll bring this talisman with me. If cannot achieve it, Ba Huang City can also forget about achieving it. This Talisman will belong to nobody!”

.....

“You think so?”

A chilling voice came from behind Bai Li Ruo Feng. It was Jian Feng Han. He raised his sword, and a pair of large white wings opened up behind his back. One of the effects from the wings was that there wasn’t a 30 yard limit. It could even let the user float in the air with the Talismans. This was a true manipulating factor!

“Pu Chi!”

Jian Feng Han raised the sword with both of his hands, and suddenly sent the sword right into Bai Li Ruo Feng’s body, and pierced through his chest. The cut brought out 4318 damage. At the same time, he reached out and grabbed the Talisman marked with a number one. In the next moment, Jian Feng Han held three Talismans.

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Qing Qian turned around to look at me, “Hurry up. Use [Dragon

Transformation] to get it!”

I stood in my original place, and didn’t make a single move, “No, let him have it!”

“Why’s that?”

“That....” I smiled, “I currently have 2 Talismans on me. In order to get all 10 Talismans, someone has to kill me. Only then, is it the best moment to kill the person, and get all Talismans. If I try and get 3 Talismans right now, then I’ll just become the target of many people. To be honest, holding one Talisman is the safest. As long as I’m strong enough, I might even become the final victor!”

Qing Qian nodded with a smile, “Alright, I understand. Brother Xiao Yao is too smart....”

“Yup. Once we finish killing all of the players of [House of Prestige], we’ll head back towards the city!”

“Ok....”

.....

Right at that moment, a system bell rang out. The 8th Talisman appeared. On top of that, Yan Zhao Warrior had already put it into his bag. Like this, Uncle Yan Zhao now has 2 Talismans in his possession, just like me. Looks like now that [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate] have all surrounded [House of Prestige], there was nobody to fight with him over the Talisman, and so [Prague] easily obtained the 8th one.

“Hei hei, they’re fighting....” Li Mu raised his bloody sword and walked over as he laughed.

I was astonished, “Why would they start fighting?”

Li Mu said, “I just received the information, that the 8th BOSS was killed by both [Hero’s Mound: Division One] and [Prague], but in the end the Talisman was taken by Yan Zhao Warrior. Wang Ze Cheng couldn’t take it anymore, and used his Flames of War Magic Blade to cut down

[Prague]’s Vice Guild Master. Obviously, Yan Zhao Warrior suddenly got angry, and has commanded [Prague] to massacre [Hero’s Mound: Division One].”

“F*ck....” I started laughing so hard I was crying, “Uncle really is energetic. To think that he’d start a fight over that....”

.....

After we returned to the city, I made sure to count the number of people that we had. This time, [Zhan Long] had lost a whole 2000 people. Our main guild only had 7500 people left, while the divisions had all lost quite a bit of people from the 8th wave of monsters. This time, this battle was destined to not end well. This was something we all subconsciously knew.

Even though we had suffered great losses, we also received quite a bit. In the battle of the Ice Abyss, we had lost over 2000 people, but [Zhan Long] had killed over 7000 players from [House of Prestige]. It could even be said that [Zhan Long] killed the most people. [Enemies at the Gate] and [Flying Dragon] all killed around 8000 people altogether. The other 15,000 players from [House of Prestige] had been pushed into the abyss. Of course, Ba Huang City’s [Flying Dragon] had left the stage after this battle, and just like [House of Prestige] their entire army had been annihilated.

“Ji ya.....”

The great gates of the City of Four Noblemen began to open. It was time for the 9th wave!

Southern Barbarian Tacticians, Level 93 Thunder Tier monsters. This was a tribe of barbarians that only wore a thin robe. There were both men and women amongst the army. On their hip was a hemp skirt, and nothing on top. All of the men were built extremely muscular, while the women had enormous twin peaks and abs. Each of them had a fierce tiger under leash.

“Gu dong.....”

Li Mu took a big gulp, his eyes staring forward, “These female barbarians are just too scary. That chest and ab muscles, it’s just too much....”

One Second Hero smiled” Eh..... for a woman that strong, if they just were to just sit on you, you’d die in three seconds....”

Li Mu glared at him, “F*ck off, a three second death is still better than a one second one...”

One Second Hero’s face turned pale, “F*ck, I can’t say anything more with you, you’re the boss....”

.....

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and laughed, “Let’s start killing monsters. Be careful of the fierce tiger’s attacks. They’re really strong!”

[Zhan Long]’s front line players all pulled out their weapons and held their formation. In the distance, groups of men and women barbarians began to charge over. One of the females raised a whip to flog a tiger. Her eyes flashed across the [Zhan Long] front lines’ male players and began to drool, “Ah..... so many strong young men, I heard that they have over 72 different bed techniques. I must capture one for myself, and try it out!”

Li Mu, Old K, Bai Qi and Song Han all shuddered. They were almost about to admit defeat.

Qing Qian’s face was completely red as she looked on, “This game is not for innocent players.....”

Chapter 454: Two-Faced

“Roarr Roarr.....”

The fierce tiger pounced and bit into the shield formation, and caused numerous damage numbers of more than 2000 points to fly up. The stats of a Thunder Tier monster is seriously not weak at all. Even when I had 4000+ basic defense, I lost 600+ health from them. The players with weaker defense lost 2000 health points. In Zhan Long, the defense of normal heavy armored Swordsmen was around 2900 points while Berserkers had a slightly lower defense. Monks and Knights had around 3200 points. This was our general defense during this phase which was not even enough to defend against the 4000+ basic attack.

.....

One by one, the barbarian girls waved their whips. Yet, they did not lash the tamed animals, but the shoulders of Li Mu, Old K, Wolf, and others, made “PaPaPa” sounds. It would have been perfect if they sang loudly “My horseman, you are mighty all full of power and grandeur.” It would have been fine if the barbarian girls just lashed out and attacked, but their snowy white breasts were bouncing up and down as they spoke with an alluring tone, “Brother, return to the wilderness with me~ There are many benefits.....”

Li Mu almost couldn’t restrain himself to go with them. The old men that need girlfriends are too delicate to bear a blow. After getting despised by Wang Jian, Old K and the others, Li Mu’s face reddened and killed those barbarian girls with a single strike. A leather gaiter and red napkin were dropped.

I bent down and picked up the red napkin. I glanced at it and found that it was actually something good——

[Southern Barbarian Handkerchief]: This is a token of love from Southern Barbarian maidens. Even though these war-crazy maidens had died long ago, they have still maintained their pure love. They’ve always believed that only the love of their life can receive their Southern

Barbarian Handkerchief. For everyone 100 handkerchiefs you collect, you can exchange them at your main city's NPC for experience. Each player can exchange this up to a maximum of 10 times!

.....

I tossed the handkerchief up and down, and laughed, "Using this, we can gain tons of experience. Gather some more. One stack is 100, and everyone should get 10 stacks. At the moment, it should be enough to level you up. Good luck!"

From the drop rate, every time a Barbarian Maiden dies she would drop a handkerchief. This clued us in on a principle. Only the people who persevered until the end would get the best benefits. The players who died in the first 8 waves were the worst off, and they missed the best chances for experience and drops!

I glanced at the status of my equipments. My armor was still doing pretty good, especially since I didn't take any fierce attacks. My chest plate, cloak, and leg guards were all around 40% durability, which was enough to finish this battle. However, I used the Cold Iron Sword so much, it's been

worn down to 25%. I might as well save it up, and just use my main sword, Dragon Reservoir Sword, to PK other people. Either way, my Dragon Reservoir Sword still has the Emperor Qin's Sword's [Eternal Condition]. It's the ultimate weapon for large scale events!

Endless crowds of Southern Barbarian Maidens rushed out from the City of the Four Noblemen, and everyone killed them in droves. [Zhan Long]'s teamwork was basically flawless, and we didn't lose many players during the waves of monsters which allowed everyone to gain tons of experience. One after another, their faces turned into happiness as we obtained more and more handkerchiefs and equipment.

On the other hand, the small guilds that fought beside us were not as strong. Several guilds had even been completely massacred by the Southern Barbarian maidens. Everywhere, there were players being chased after and slaughtered. Both the piles of monster corpses and

player corpses built on top of each other. By the time we made it to the 9th wave, Ba Huang City only had around 10% of the players they had in the beginning. There were only around 240,000 people left. The number of players that were killed by monsters was just too much. Of course, there was also quite a few people that felt like they weren't strong enough, and so they returned to Ba Huang City on their own to avoid the losses they'd suffer. That was also a certain type of smartness.....

.....

Li Mu, Wolf, and Qing Qian all went back to fix up their equipment and were coming back soon. They didn't take too long, while I held [Zhan Long]'s position. I waited all the way until everyone came back, before relaxing a little. I began to feel a little tired after playing for 20 hours straight. Even my body was starting to feel a little tired, and that was probably even more true for other normal players. Quite a few of the female [Zhan Long] players were even starting to yawn. If the monsters weren't so fierce and brutal, a lot of the people would've fallen asleep already.

I don't know how much later, but Matcha suddenly walked over and said, "Boss, the BOSS has spawned again!"

"Where?" I asked.

Matcha pointed towards the east, "Over there. The summoning circle has already appeared, just the system hasn't made an announcement yet. Most of the people there are from [Thousand Burial] and [Wrath of the Heroes]. They aren't very strong at all, and aren't too far from us. Should we go for a little hunt?"

I thought about it for a second, and said, "Let's go. We won't try and take the 9th Talisman, but at least we'll try and get some of the Saint Tier BOSS's experience and drops!"

"Ok, how many people will we take?"

"1000 people are enough to make a simple formation. Follow me!"

"Alright!"

.....

Very soon, I picked out 1000 elites from the main guild. Under the command of Li Mu and I, the army quickly went towards the southern direction. Just as we anticipated, a bell sounded in the sky and announced the appearance of the BOSS—

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Please take note, the 9th general from hell [The Executioner Suo Luo] (Saint Tier BOSS) has a Talisman on him and has appeared at (11949,9203). Killing the Executioner Suo Luo will result in a 100% drop rate of [Warring States Talisman – Nine]. Gathering all ten of these talismans can go to the Duke of the City and gain control over the City!

.....

In the distance, a general clothed in dark armor with two blades in his hands appeared along with a countless number of small soldiers. This was the Executioner Suo Luo. He held a broadsword in one hand and a battle axe in the other. He was just like me, a dual weapons user. Unfortunately, he was even more OP, with a blade in one hand and a battle axe in the other. The attack power that would result when he swings both blades would be terrifying.

“GRRR, you ants! Die!”

Once Suo Luo touched the ground, he immediately began to swing his weapons into the crowd of [Wrath of the Heroes] players. “Ka Cha” the war blade hacked apart one player, while the battle axe swept out and cut through the shields of several Knights. The attack power of this BOSS was definitely above average, but his battle technique was mediocre. Looks like this Saint Tier Dual Wielding BOSS wasn’t designed by some expert. The angle of attack, speed and frequency all seemed unnatural. There was nothing else to say, but Kill!

I raised my arm behind my back and unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword. My sword flashed and I took Qing Qian, Wolf, Li Mu and the rest to charge forward. I rushed at the very front row. With a wave of my left

hand, my Cold Iron Sword flew out. With my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I let out a [Great Realm of Desolation] from a distance, and immediately pulled Suo Luo's aggro towards myself!

"Die you bastard!"

Suo Luo roared in anger and threw a slash with his battle axe. I raised my Cold Iron Sword to parry, and thus only took 1700 damage. My Dragon Reservoir Sword began to gather frost on the blade and with a swing, I threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] right into the BOSS's chest, and broke his chest plate. My attack dealt 4000 damage, and it was just as I predicted. This BOSS's difficulty was far lower than those that we met in the Grave of the Warring States main quest. Compared to Xin Lin Jun, this Suo Luo's defense and attack were much lower. I, on the other hand, had around 50 Healers maintaining my health. Killing him would be no problem.

.....

Li Mu and Qing Qian all immediately pushed into the crowd of small monsters, so that I would receive less attacks. Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands and Dancing Forest focused on killing the BOSS. On top of that, Matcha lead the rest of the army to form an encirclement around the BOSS. [Zhan Long] now dominated the BOSS, and took all of its aggro.

As I withstood the attacks from the small monsters, I carefully watched our surroundings. [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Thousand Burial]'s players were all getting closer to our players. Looks like they weren't about to just give up on this BOSS.

Tyrant of Western Chu gripped his long sword as he faced the BOSS and said, "Li Xiao Yao's Dou Qi skill and his own attack power is extremely strong. Killing this BOSS would be no problem for him. What should we do? After all, this BOSS did spawn on our battlefield. If it wasn't for those Southern Barbarian Maidens dragging us down, we would've come here much earlier. Are we just going to give up on this BOSS so easily?"

Little Piggy softly said, "Let's wait for our opportunity, there should be one appearing soon...."

Liu Ying turned around and looked at Little Piggy. He couldn't help but

smile, “Brother, you wouldn’t happen to be feeling grateful towards Li Xiao Yao and [Zhan Long], and so you don’t want to kill him?”

Little Piggy shook his head, “No! Last time’s City Battle has no meaning anymore, so once I get the chance, I will definitely kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. That way, we can even get the two Talismans in his bag!”

“Ok!”

Liu Ying looked into the distance, “Be careful, [Thousand Burial] has also come. Not Ordinary isn’t someone you want to mess with. He has Bai Mo Yan and You Yi, both very strong players. Looks like.... [Thousand Burial] is also waiting for their opportunity to take part in this fray...”

“Yup, the more chaotic the better. This way, [Zhan Long] would have no way of focusing on killing the BOSS, and our opportunities increase!”

“Ok, that’s good....”

.....

In a fit of anger, The Executioner Suo Luo threw a fearsome attack, but the Healers behind me were even more fierce. This clearly demonstrated the strength of having big coordinated armies. If this BOSS was left to just Qing Qian, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, I and the rest of the 10 man team that went to Grave of the Warring States to kill, even though we wouldn’t be completely annihilated, but we would definitely suffer losses. However, under [Zhan Long]’s barricade, in a short 7 minutes, the BOSS’s health dropped to the bottom.

“Control your attacks!”

I yelled out in the party chat, “Let me kill the BOSS, I have the highest charm, and so we’ll get even better drops!”

Dancing Forest said, “Guildmaster, I saw Assassins from [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Thousand Burial] trying to sneak over. They probably want to steal the BOSS’s experience. What should we do, should we have the mages use [Revealing Light] to force them out of the shadows?”

“No need!”

I continued, then smiled, “Let them try and steal it. I wasn’t planning on taking this 9th Talisman anyway!”

“Haha, so two-faced!”

“You’re no better....”

.....

Right as the BOSS’s health dropped to 1%, a few attacks suddenly came out from the shadows. My level was high, and so I could see the Assassins that were camouflaged. With a swing of my blade, I threw a combo onto the BOSS with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. My Cold Iron Sword, on the other hand, flew threw the grass and drew out a bloody arc in the air. Two of the Assassins were instantly killed!

At the same time, I killed the BOSS with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. In a ray of light, I leveled up to 86. With a stamp of my battle boot, “Shua!” the BOSS’s corpses exploded out the rewards of the battle. I pocketed the three equipments into my bag. With a “Pa!” the golden talisman fell to the ground, and was immediately picked up by an invisible person. The person immediately appeared, it was [Wrath of the Heroes] number one Assassin—Wind Chaser!

Chapter 455: Folk Tale

“Hua....”

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and created a layer of dense smoke in the air. I raised my arm and shouted in the party chat, “Don’t chase them. Even though Wind Chaser took the Talisman, I took all of the equipment that the BOSS dropped. There’s no need to chase after that one Talisman. Let [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Thousand Burial] fight each other for it!”

Li Mu smiled, “Yup, have everyone retreat. There’s no more point in fighting here anymore. Retreat to the [Zhan Long] formation, before we receive any more losses!”

Everyone followed behind me and began to retreat. This time, our mission was a success. We went and killed the BOSS on our own. Even though [Wrath of the Heroes] took the Talisman, it was all in my plan. We’ll use that Talisman as a catalyst, and have the big guilds of Ba Huang City all start fighting for it. Otherwise, [Zhan Long] wouldn’t have the chance to get the other 8 Talismans. The best case scenario would be for [Vanguard] to suffer the most damage. Too bad Jian Feng Han is a smart person, and unless he had a distinct advantage, or a sure chance of victory, he would never make a move.

As I ran, I glanced at the three equipments that the BOSS dropped. Drops from a Lv 93 Saint Tier BOSS were definitely good. On top of that, I killed the BOSS myself, and with my 167 points of charm, a Valkyrie Tier equipment was definitely going to drop. Maybe even a Saint Tier.

“Boss, looking at equipments?” Matcha asked with a smile.

I nodded and immediately took out the three equipments from my bag. I hadn’t seen the stats yet, but there was a crimson battle axe, a flaming shield, and a pair of magma battle boots. I waved my hand over the battle axe first. The stats appeared in the party chat, and they were very above average —

[Flaming Sun Battle Axe] (Valkyrie Tier – Superior)

Attack: 1900-2370

Strength: +80

Endurance: +80

Agility: +75

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 25%

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 500

Additional: Increases the MaxHP by 1900

Special: [Flaming Sun], summons a flaming shock wave, dealing damage to all players within a 1000 yard radius of the target. Consumes 100 points of rage.

Required: 82

.....

"Damn....." I looked at the battle axe's stats and couldn't help but smile, "So OP.... a skill that consumes 100 points of rage, and deals damage to all players in a 1000 yard radius. Hehe, this is practically a god's weapon. Come, all of [Zhan Long]'s strongest Berserkers, come over here. Whoever has the highest number of guild points, gets it!"

Li Mu waved his hand, revealing a list of the top ten Berserkers with the highest points. Damn, Old K was number one! Bai Qi lost to him by 17%, while the rest of the players had quite a bit less than both of them. In third place was Wang Jian, who had 67% less points than Old K. There was no other way. Old K's [Whirlwind Slash], [Savage Jump Slash], and [Oppose the Heavens] were all godly monster killing and PK-ing skills. The fact that his guild points were so high was also predictable.

I glanced around and said, "That.... Let's do this based on the normal rules. Old K, Bai Qi, this is basically between the two of you. Old K, are you willing to give up on this Flaming Sun Battle Axe?"

Old K patted his chest, "Not really. I don't want any more people saying that I'm some noob. Just take 40% of my guild points, as I'm taking that battle axe! Besides, I've already talked it over with Bai Qi. My attack

power is higher than his by 11.4%, so it makes more sense that I'd take the Flaming Sun Battle Axe. That [Flaming Sun] skill's killing power will make me even stronger!"

I nodded, "Bai Qi, he isn't duping me is he?"

Bai Qi laughed, "Not at all. Even though I really want that battle axe, I'm not that crazy over it. It's better if we give it to Old K. After he activates [Oppose the Heavens], he can greatly increase his attack power. Then, if he were to activate [Flaming Sun] on top of that, think of the kind of damage he would deal to all targets within the 1000 yard radius. Can you even imagine how many Archers, Mages, and Healers he could kill?"

With a flick of my wrist, I tossed the battle axe to Old K. He grabbed it in one hand as I took off the correct amount of guild points. After that, I said, "Now that the Flaming Sun Battle Axe went to Old K, everyone should work hard again and kill more BOSSes so that we can get more equipments!"

As I finished talking, I looked at the second piece of equipment that the BOSS dropped. It was a fiery shield. The shield appeared to have glowing characters that formed phrases and floated around it. With a slight wave of my hand, the shield's stats appeared in the chat. At that moment, all of the Knights and Monks jolted. It was another Valkyrie Tier equipment—

[Flaming Sun Shield] (Valkyrie Tier)

Defense : 1350

Strength: +78

Endurance: +75

Agility: +71

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 25%

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 40%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 2000

Special: [Flaming Sun Wall], summons the power of the sun to create a shield. It shields all friends with the wall and increase their defense and

magic defense by 50%. The skill lasts 30 seconds and consumes 100 points of rage.

Required: 82

.....

As I looked at the stats of the Flaming Sun Shield, my heart started beating harder. It was another 1000 yard radius skill that uses up a lot of rage. Are the heavens trying to help [Zhan Long]?

I raised the Flaming Sun Shield and slowly said, “A Lv 82 Valkyrie Tier shield, the stats are very impressive. However, whoever gets this shield must make themselves responsible for the guild and reserve 100 points of stats for whenever the team needs that [Flaming Sun Wall] skill. Alright, Knights and Monks, we’ll use guild points to decide who gets it!”

Qing Qian immediately arranged the names based on the number of points. Matcha was ranked number one, after that was One Second Hero, then Tang Xin, Tearless and the others. [Zhan Long] had quite a few high ranked Knights, but we didn’t have quite as many Monks. It was probably because everyone liked to keep up appearances and felt that having a bald head was too ugly. Of course, for people like Goodbye Tears who think that a bald head with dots on them was particularly handsome, it was just perfect.

I raised the Flaming Sun Shield and asked, “Matcha, do you want the Flaming Sun shield?”

Matcha raised her own shield and hesitated for a moment, and finally said, “No need. I already have a Valkyrie Tier shield. Give it to the next person!”

“Ok.”

I nodded at her and Matcha gave me a sweet smile. She then puckered her lips. Damn, is she giving me kisses?

I slightly shivered, then raised the shield and looked at One Second Hero, “Yong Jie, do you want this Flaming Sun Shield? If you do, you just have to always maintain 100 points of rage so that you can use the

[Flaming Sun Wall] at any time!

One Second Hero nodded, “I got it Guild Master. Give it to me and take my guild points!”

“Ok!”

I threw the shield at Yong Jie. Shua, I took all of his guild points. After that, I picked up the third equipment. It was a pair of glowing hot magma boots. At that moment, I felt a godly energy start to seep into my hand. When I revealed the stats into the air, everyone gasped, it really was a supernatural item—

[Ancient Cloud Stepping Boots] (Saint Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1090

Strength: +105

Endurance: +103

Magic: +100

Additional: Increases the user’s defense and magic defense by 22%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 17%

Additional: Increases the user’s movement speed by 25%

Special: [Cloud Walker], Increases the user’s attack speed and movement speed by 20%

Required: 82

.....

This was a pair of true god tier battle boots!

I was so excited I started to tremble. I almost couldn’t even hold onto the boots. Beside me, Li Mu started drooling and said, “Damn, these stats are too strong. Just way too strong!”

Qing Qian raised a dagger, as her long white legs shifted from side to side. She smiled, “Looks like heavy armor equipments really are

admirable. Those defense stats and additional defense stats are amazing. Wu wu, us Assassins will never get equipment like that....”

I laughed and said, “These boots, we’ll use the original point system to decide who get its. All heavy armor players have the right to compete for this....”

Li Mu was speechless. “Your points are a whole 74% more than mine, and I have the second highest amount of points in the guild. I think there’s no suspense in this anymore, the most important question now is.... Guild Master, would you like to be like Kong Rong and let the weaker players get stronger and give those boots to your poor old brother?”

I immediately hugged the boots to my chest and glared, “Never! My boots are just Emperor Tier. It was so hard to get this Saint Tier equipment, how would I give them up so easily..... besides, Kong Rong* isn’t exactly the right example for this is it? When Kong Rong grew into adulthood and was invading the Northern Sea, he had godly generals like Wu An Guo but in the end, had to compromise and listen to Cao Cao’s command that resulted in his own death.... If, during the time he was invading the Northern Sea, he could’ve killed Gong Sun Zan and Gong Sun Yue, while winning over Zhao Yun. After that, in the South, he could wait for his opportunity and bribe over Sun Jian’s Godly Archer Ma Zhong. After that, he could’ve sent Zhao Yun to battle Lu Bu, and after 50 or so attacks, Ma Zhong could kill Wen Hou with one arrow, leading to a battle that would’ve went down in history. After that, he could kill Emperor Dong Zhuo and take Diao Chan for his own. He could then give Diao Chan to Ma Zhong, thus winning over the Xi Liang Army. Once he gets Ma Zhao, Ma Dai, Pang De, Zhao Yun and Wu An Guo together, they could be made into Kong Rong’s Five Generals. With them, he would be able to pass through Jiang Dong, and kill Sun Ce, Lie Biao with Wu An Guo in one battle. Like that, he would get Tai Shi Hui, Gan Ning, Zhou Tai, Huang Ge, and Xu Tai, the 12 strongest generals of Jiang Dong. From Xi Liang, he could dominate Jiang Dong, and take over Great Qiao, and traverse the continent without any barriers, in the end, dominating the world.....”

*TL Note: XYZZ is explaining an intricate alternate plan Kong Rong could've used to dominate the world, rather than, as Li Mu said, give power to the weaker in order to make them stronger (allowing Cao Cao to command), and thus dying because of that choice.

.....

Qing Qian quietly stood in the soft breeze, her mouth twitching, "Brother, are you here to lecture us on folk tales?"

"Hahaha...." Li Mu made a fist, veins popping out of his forehead as he looked at me.

"Haha, why don't you all just loosen up a bit...."

I quickly took off the appropriate amount of points from myself, and then put on the Ancient Cloud Stepping Boots. My stats suddenly increased by a lot. A Saint Tier equipment really had an impressive impact—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 86

Attack: 5272-6544

Defense: 4762

Health: 14392

Magic: 5214

Charm: 167

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 15

.....

There were even some hidden stats that didn't appear, but one could just imagine how high those were. Once someone has a full set of Saint Tier equipments, then they would definitely become a moveable fortress. Nobody would be able to deal significant damage. On top of that, just one attack from them would make people cry.

I threw my Divine Battle Boots to Fox and stepped into my new shoes.

Afterwards, I walked in a circle. The movement speed really had increased by quite a bit. Also, the 20% increase in attack speed would be very advantageous, since all weapons limited players so that they couldn't deal too many attacks in a short time period. This 20% increase in attack speed would increase my combo speed and improve my strategies involving the future Flying Sword Skills. This was a stat that all players who are vying to become an attacking king absolutely must have.

Chapter 456: Dragon Horseman Outfit

With my defense increased, this time I won't have to be afraid at all of the attacks from the Barbarian Maidens. "Pa Pa Pa" their whips smacked against my chest plate, but I didn't feel a sliver of pain, and they only dealt around 400 damage.

The [Zhan Long] players continued to kill monsters. The only corpses left on the frontlines were those of monsters. I was already done collecting the 10 stacks of handkerchiefs, so that when I go back to the city, I can exchange them for experience.

Not long after, we killed all of the Southern Barbarians. The gates of the City of the Four Noblemen began to open up again. The tenth wave of monsters have finally come!

.....

Hooves beat the ground as a group of black battle horses mounted by ace horsemen rushed out like a flood!

"That...."

Qing Qian's jaw dropped, "Are those normal horsemen?"

Li Mu shook his head, "Nope, every battle horse has a curved horn atop its head. On top of that, the battle horses are covered in flaming scales, those are definitely not normal battle horses...."

I stood towards the front and smiled, "Of course they aren't, those are the legendary Dragon Horses....."

Soon, in the midst of the thunderous hooves, these elite horsemen came within 50 yards of us. Their stats were naturally listed out for us, right in our battle logs—

[Dragon Horsemen] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 94

Attack: 3200-4150

Defense: 3700

Health: 170000

Skills: [Dragon Spear Throw] [Dragon's Roar] [Iron Heel]

Introduction: These are horsemen from ancient times. In the ancient Eastern Sea Mountains, there appeared godly dragons. All of these dragons had had a vision of their deaths and decided to look for a place for their eternal rest. They looked for the valley that had the most spiritual power and waited for their deaths to come. After thousands of years, countless godly dragons died within that valley, their bones buried into the ground. Dragon power began to seep into the earth, making it so that even the plants of the valley were filled with dragon power. The wild horses of the mountains would eat those plants, and obtain dragon power, leading to their eventual transformation into the legendary Dragon Horses. Qin Mu Gong sent troops over a 100 miles to capture these Dragon Horses and obtained countless dragon horsemen. They trained a whole troop of the world's strongest cavalry. These Dragon Horsemen have hidden under the ground for tens of thousands of years. Now that they have been summoned above ground, they have become lethal weapons of war.

(Author Note: After writing this paragraph, I slapped my thigh and thought Damn, my BSing skills are getting even better!!)

.....

“Be careful!”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Be careful of the long ranged skill [Dragon Spear Throw], those will definitely hurt! Also, all close combat players be careful of [Dragon Roar]. My Flaming Tiger God's [Fierce Roar] is probably really similar to [Dragon Roar] and is an AOE attack that will probably deal enormous damage. Archers, make sure to lock your [Scatter Shots] to interrupt the effect of [Dragon Roar]. Healers, all use group heals. The real fight starts now!”

“Keng Keng Keng...”

On the front line, one after another, [Zhan Long] players all pulled out their blades in preparation for battle!

“Rumbling....”

They’re here!

Before they even got close to us, one after another, the Dragon Horsemen all raised their arms. “Shua Shua Shua”, countless spears were thrown at us. I felt a sharp pain in my shoulder as I took 3 attacks all at once and lost 3000 health. Not too bad for me. However, the same can’t be said for other players. Cries of agony shattered the air as [Zhan Long] lost dozens of players.

“Be careful! Use [Heavenly Shield Wall]!” Matcha’s body slightly dipped as she gave out the command.

In the next moment, the Dragon Horsemen all charged right into the shield formation. Afterwards, they pulled out their swords and began swinging them at us. One of them raised their sword extremely high, giving a command out. All of the battle horses around him raised their heads as their eyes turned red and gave a roar. The skill lasted for a whole two seconds, creating an attack that came from all sides. They then charged forward, resulting in enormous damage!

Quite a few of the Dragon Horsemen all around began to roar. Within the blink of an eye, several of the players in the shield formation fell to their knees. The group heals couldn’t catch up with the damage they were suffering.

“Charge!”

Once I sent out the command, I swung my two swords and killed my way into the monsters. I activated my [Wall of Dou Qi] and like a whirlwind, I cut through the crowd, creating a path of bodies. I used my 10% [Drain] to keep my health up, and fought my way into the crowd, with absolutely no fear.

Dancing Forest raised her bow and said, “All Archers, lock onto the Dragon Horsemen. Once they use [Dragon Roar], immediately start spamming [Scatter Shot]. The [Dragon Roar] lasts for 2 seconds. It’ll take you guys at most 1 second to react. Don’t tell me that [Zhan Long]’s players need more than 1 second!”

General Lian Po immediately sent the same command to another team chat. Everyone held a tight grip over their own section of formation.

.....

Gradually, we finally managed to stabilize our formation, even though the monsters killed quite a few players.

As I sliced my way through the monsters, I made sure to watch over the situation in the distance. Qing Qian, Li Mu, Matcha and all the others were also watching carefully. Everyone started talking in the main guild group chat —

Qing Qian said, “Liu Yin has gotten the 9th Talisman now, and it seems that he’s being pursued by [Thousand Burial].....”

Li Mu smiled, “We just received information about it. It really is interesting, how Liu Yin took the Talisman and [Wrath of the Heroes] and retreated to the North. However, he was ambushed by [Thousand Burial] and the two guilds began to fight. Looks like Cang Cheng plans on getting lots of points, as he led [Hero’s Mound: First Division] to join in. In a short time period, they killed over 2000 [Wrath of the Heroes] players. Liu Yin was humiliated and already contacted two other guilds to help him in his counterattack. Right now, the Eastern front of the City of the Four Noblemen is getting really intense....”

“What about the monsters?” I asked with a smile.

Li Mu was a little annoyed, “To be honest, it’s just [Thousand Burial] and [Hero’s Mound: Division One] that are fighting [Wrath of the Heroes]. As [Wrath of the Heroes] began their counterattack, the Dragon Horsemen began to attack the five guilds....”

“That group of trash.....” Wolf smiled, “They really aren’t capable of getting strong.”

.....

We continued to kill monsters. Several Dragon Horsemen were all killed by my Dragon Reservoir Sword. “Pa Ta”, the horseman dropped a card and a pair of wrist guards. I picked them up to look, the card was a [Dragon

Horseman card], and increased attack power by 15% and increased attack speed by 10%. The equipment was a Lv 80 Purple Tier armor. This Dragon Horseman Wristguard was part of the Dragon Horseman Outfit!

I gripped the Dragon Horsemen Wristguards and took a deep breath. Excitedly, I said, “Another Lv 80 outfit has appeared. Everyone do your best to kill monsters. Stop PKing and work hard on killing the Dragon Horsemen. These Dragon Horsemen Outfits’ stats are just 14% lower than the Desolate Sky Armors’. [Zhan Long], for the moment, our goal is these outfits. The more Dragon Horsemen we kill, the more outfits we can gather!”

Once I revealed the outfit stats, Li Mu, Matcha and the rest were filled with excitement. On top of that, I made a new rule, whoever gets a Dragon Horseman Outfit, [Zhan Long] will pay them 5000RMB for each outfit. Afterwards, we would put all of the Dragon Horseman Outfits into the storage and wait until the battle is over to figure out who gets them. All in all, the more Dragon Horseman Outfits we get, the stronger our heavy armor team will become.

After experiencing such fierce battles, [Zhan Long]’s potential was starting to show. That is, the strength of the heavy armor team that Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and I trained. It was probably Ba Huang City’s number one heavy armor team. No matter if it was the team’s endurance or their explosive power, they were all the top. This invincible heavy armor team had given [Zhan Long] glory in every battle. This time, they promoted [Zhan Long]’s name even more as they worked towards making themselves the top heavy armor team in the entire Chinese server!

Time went by slowly, and one after another, pieces of the Dragon Horseman Outfit appeared. Li Mu, Matcha, Old K, Wolf, and Qing Qian all had pretty high charm, and they also killed a lot of monsters on the frontlines, making it easy for them to get more equipment. Within the next 2 hours, the guild storage had 150+ full Dragon Horseman outfits. The guild used 750,000 RMB to buy them all. This time, National Beauty took losses. But that was no problem, because they were well worth the cost. I wasn’t originally planning on relying on National Beauty to make

money anyway, it was purely a fictional booth either way.

.....

“Pu!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword cut through a Dragon Horseman’s head. I turned around to look, but all I saw was dust rolling in the wind. I couldn’t help but exclaim, “What’s the situation over there?”

Qing Qian said, “[Wrath of the Heroes] is basically destroyed. Liu Yin’s Talisman was taken by [Thousand Burial]’s Ba Mo Yan, while Liu Yin was killed by You Yi. Once [Thousand Burial] got the Talisman, they were immediately surrounded by Uncle Yan Zhao’s [Prague]. Looks like the 9th Talisman will have a new owner soon.”

I squinted and said, “Oh, looks like Bai Mo Yan will have a hard time escaping Uncle Yan Zhao’s scheme....”

“Probably.....”

After she finished talking, a system bell rang out. The player Bai Mo Yan died, dropping the Talisman. It was picked up by Cang Cheng....

.....

“F*ck, Wang Ze Cheng stole the Talisman?” Wolf gritted his teeth.

Matcha’s beautiful eyes looked into the distance, “Yup. Now that Cang Cheng has the Talisman, he lead the elites of [Heroes Mound: First Division] to kill their way out of the encirclement. [Prague: Second Division] wasn’t able to block their charge, and so the encirclement was broken.....”

I asked, “Where do they plan on going?”

“From the direction..... they probably want to go through the Glacial River Valley, and get to Fort Zi Feng?”

“This....” I gave a grunt, “What is Wang Ze Cheng planning? With that Talisman, he won’t be able to leave the area, much less get to Fort Zi Feng.....”

Matcha said, “Maybe he wasn’t even planning on going to Fort Zi Feng?”

I suddenly realized something, and gave a slight jolt, “Look. How many people are Uncle Yan Zhao taking to pursue [Hero’s Mound: First Division]?”

Qing Qian glanced at the map, “I know. Around 24,000 people. It’s all of [Prague]’s forces. Since [Hero’s Mound: First Division] only has 10,000, and so Uncle plans on massacring them all.....”

I gritted my teeth, “Qing Qian, send a message to the uncle. Tell him to not pursue the guild too far. Wang Ze Cheng is a smart person. He definitely won’t choose a retreat path for no reason. Make sure Uncle watches out for any tricks or schemes...”

“Ok, understood....”

.....

I stood still and looked into the distance. the 30,000 players from [Prague] and [Hero’s Mound: First Division] had all disappeared into the horizon. Under the sunset, even though I couldn’t quite understand fully, I still had a premonition that this battle was coming to an end. Maybe [Zhan Long] or maybe [Prague] will be the final victors. But we’ll all end up in a fierce and bloody battle.

Chapter 457: [Prague]’s Crushing Defeat

In the blink of an eye, it was the 24th hour of the event. Even though everyone was extremely tired, we still needed to continue battling. The 10th Talisman hadn’t appeared yet, and nobody knew what the end result will be. No matter if it’s [Zhan Long] or [Vanguard], [Prague], [Enemies at the Gate], or anyone else, everyone wanted to gather all ten of the Talismans. Doing so was an honor, and it was also proof of strength. If any of the guilds wanted to rise to the top of Ba Huang City, they must first take this first guild base!

.....

“Watch for any movements suggesting the tenth wave’s BOSS. We have to fight for that BOSS...”

I held my Dragon Reservoir Sword in my hand as I walked to the foot of the wall. [Zhan Long] had already split up to kill the Dragon Horsemen all over the map, and was doing all that they could to get the Dragon Horseman Outfits.

Qing Qian’s [Twin Blade Harmony] slashed through the chest of one Dragon Horseman, and her light body spun around, as the Horseman fell to the ground. She pointed out, “Outside of the city, to the southeast, around 1200 yards away, a summoning circle has secretly appeared. If nothing out of the ordinary happens, the BOSS should spawn over there. However, that’s pretty close to [Vanguard], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract]’s formations. I’m afraid that there’s no way to avoid an ugly battle when we fight for this BOSS. Brother Xiao Yao, are we going to go after it?”

“Fight!”

I gripped my long sword, “From the beginning, we wouldn’t be able to avoid a battle with [Vanguard]. Charge! All of [Zhan Long]’s armies, charge. Don’t worry about anything else!”

“Alright!”

.....

I did a headcount of our numbers. After all of those bitter fights, [Zhan Long] went from 16,500 players to 11,000 players, but that was still pretty good. Right now, there were only around 170,000 Ba Huang City players in total that were still in the event. [Zhan Long] took up around 1/17 of that number. This time, we aren't totally at a disadvantage in terms of numbers. The other guilds like [Vanguard], [Prague] and other guilds have quite a few people left, while the small and medium guilds have basically been annihilated by those Thunder Tier Dragon Horsemen.

With my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I stood at the very front of the army. [Zhan Long]'s ten thousand troops charged towards the Southeast. From the distance, we could see fiery pillars of light flying up into the sky from the summoning circle. Right afterwards, the clouds separated, and a general from hell rode on a Fire Kirin as he appeared in the air. He had a pair of maces in his hands, and a fiery red armor hung from his shoulders. He shouted, "I'll have the world serve me!"

"Ding!"

System Announcement: The tenth general from Hell [The Slaughter Mu Lin] (Saint Tier BOSS) has brought a Talisman and has appeared at (12254, 9701). Killing the Slaughterer Mu Lin, there will be a 100% drop rate of [Warring States Talisman - Ten]. When all ten of these Talismans is gathered together, the owner may turn them into the Duke of Ba Huang City to gain control over the City of the Four Noblemen!

.....

It really was a slaughterer. The second Mu Lin touched the ground, he smacked his two maces together and "Keng!" created an enormous shockwave. All of the surrounding players suffered damage, and one after another, damage numbers as high as 4000 flew up. The attack had a 400 yard effect range. Within a blink of an eye, several hundred people died. This one attack forced all of the surrounding Ba Huang City players to retreat. Who would want to fight such a brutal BOSS?

"Charge!"

I swung my long sword and ran forward by myself. Not far behind me, Li Mu, Old K and the others also charged forward. Almost everyone's health was over 5000, or else they would never dare to come near. I was at the front, and so when I got close to the BOSS, I read out the stats—

[The Slaughterer Mu Lin] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 95

Attack: 5050-5700

Defense: 4700

Health: 13,000,000

Skills: [Kirin Slash] [Twin Mace Annihilation] [Fierce Whirlwind Slash]
[God Killing Dou Qi]

Introduction: Mu Lin is an extremely strong person from the ancient times. Ever since he was young, he was naturally blessed with superhuman strength. On top of that, he could easily use Dou Qi. By the time he was 14 years old, he managed to train his strength to the same level as that of a Sword Saint. He won many victories for his country, and finally in The War of Gods and Demons, he lead his country's troops to battle, but was killed by the gods. His spirit didn't disappear, but instead fell into Hell, which preserved the godly strength that he had when he was alive. With his two maces, he was completely unrivaled in Hell. When he is summoned back into the human world from the Talisman's strength, he will be determined to bring about a reign of terror.

.....

From a distance, I raised my palm and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]! My Dragon Reservoir Sword split into three blades of light and pierced through Mu Lin's body. However, right as I activated my attack, a man flew over at the boss. It was Jian Feng Han, and he threw a [Corrupt Wolf's Edge] right into the BOSS. However, my attack was still stronger than his, and so Mu Lin immediately charged towards [Zhan Long]'s formation!

“Hong!”

An [Indigo Sea Arrow] cut through the BOSS's body. It was Simple's attack. Within seconds, the BOSS roared and started running in a different direction. Jian Feng Han had already commanded his several tens of thousands of [Vanguard] players to hold their formation. In a loud voice, he commanded, "Hold the shield formation and prepare to aggro the BOSS!"

I gritted my teeth and swept out my arm, as I commanded my Cold Iron Sword to fly out from behind me and float beside my shoulder. I immediately gave the targets, and let the [Blade Spin] fly. However, behind me Qing Qian rushed over and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, don't rush. Wait until everyone has caught up!"

I nodded and waited for the rest of [Zhan Long]'s army while I commanded my [Blade Spin] to attack Mu Lin's back, but I was never able to surpass the damage of all of [Vanguard]'s core players. Behind me, Li Mu and Old K all made their way to me. Matcha, One Second Hero, Tang Xin and the other's also began to create [Zhan Long]'s formation, right across from [Vanguard]'s own formation!

"Shua!"

Dancing Forest's [Meteor Shot] hit against the BOSS' back. This time, we finally managed to move the BOSS's aggro onto [Zhan Long].

I raised my sword as I stood on the front line. At once, I threw a [Combo]+[Windblade] onto Mu Lin. He was immediately enraged and raised his battle mace to turn the Fire Kirin around as he charged over. He stopped right before me and struck my shoulder with a heavy hit. It was the first skill—[Kirin Slash]!

"Peng!"

"5217 ! "

So painful! Thankfully it wasn't a fatal injury. However, after that one attack from the BOSS, [Magma Abyss]es began to appear under my feet. It was an attack from [Vanguard]'s Mage team!

"Sha sha sha...."

The BOSS retreated several steps to dodge the damage from the multiple [Magma Abyss]es, but unfortunately his aggro was pulled back to [Vanguard].

“F*ck!”

Wang Jian raised his sword in anger, “They’re actively attacking Brother Xiao Yao. Let’s fight [Vanguard] to the death! We’re slashing them to pieces!”

Li Mu quickly rushed forward and with a sweep of his blade, killed two of [Vanguard]’s Swordsmen. However, right as he made that attack, he was forced to retreat from the barrage of attacks from [Vanguard]’s Mage team. He gasped for air as he said, “Kill and don’t retreat! Be careful of your health!”

Old K howled, and raised his Flaming Sun Battle Axe, and threw a [Whirlwind Slash] into the crowds. Right after that, he used a [Savage Jump Slash]. Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands activated a [Magma Abyss], and made several of [Vanguard]’s player fall to their knees.

Li Mu shouted, “Flying Sword, cut them up!”

In the [Zhan Long] camp, a group of Fourth Advancement Swordsman raised their hands. In the next second, one after another, swords flew out and cut through [Vanguard]’s formation. My own [Blade Spin] activated as well, and flew out with theirs. [Vanguard] suffered heavy damages. Compared to the number of Fourth Advancement Swordsmen that we have, they have much less.

However, [Vanguard]’s strength is the Mage team that Simple leads. [Zhan Long] suffered astonishing damage from the AOE spells that they cast!

.....

“Hong!”

Goodbye Tears also rushed into battle. His long blade carried the might of [Mountain Strike], as he forced two of [Zhan Long]’s Swordsmen to retreat. He swung his shield to block the countless arrows that were shot

at him. Afterwards, he used a [Jialan's Mantra] and another slash, before killing one of [Zhan Long]'s Berserkers. The user's strength after activating [Jialan's Mantra] was terrifying. On top of that, the buff gives an enormous boost to defense. High level Monks have reason to be feared.

"So cool!" Don't Be Foolish raised his long spear and laughed, "Go Monk go! Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai! We'll cheer you on!"

Goodbye Tears turned around, only to see a beautiful Assassin come right at him. Qing Qian's blade moved so quickly that it was shocking. "Pa!" Goodbye Tears' shoulder began to bleed. With another spin, she sent another 7 slashes right into his body, and cut Goodbye Tears' health in half. Afterwards, Dancing Forest shot a [Triple Arrow]. "Pa pa pa" they all went right into his face. Goodbye Tears could only use [Holy Light] to recover 70% of his health. At the same time, he carried his shield and began to retreat. As he retreated, he pulled the arrows out of his face. Tears rolled down his cheek, "F*ck, it hurts...."

I caught up and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] right at Goodbye Tears, and forced him to roll into the grass. I then opened my palm and targeted the Mage North Pole!

North Pole shuddered, "[Defeat the Dragon]!?"

"Shua shua shua" three flashes of light exploded. North Pole had already retreated 75 yards away and gasped, "Motherf*cker, thank god I'm so smart, otherwise I would've been instantly killed!"

I closed my hand, and killed three Archers with [Great Realm of Desolation]. At that moment, North Pole made a fist, "F*ck you trickster!"

I turned around and charged as my Flaming Tiger God opened up a path. I let my Dragon Reservoir Sword dance while my Cold Iron Sword followed close behind me and dealt critical damage to the players around me like a killing machine. Jian Feng Han, on the other hand, was stuck fighting Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Bai Qi, and couldn't pull himself away. However, it didn't look as though he was losing either. Rather, it was almost as though he was Lu Bu in the story of Lu Bu against the Three Heroes.

.....

Our two guilds were caught in the fierce battle, and our numbers quickly dwindled, while the BOSS's health was also being cut down by the two of us. After 10 minutes, the BOSS's health was only around 40%, and [Vanguard]'s frontline began get restless.

“What’s wrong?” Jian Feng Han audibly asked.

Don’t Be Foolish raised his long spear, “Guild Master, Misty Clouds has lead 10,000 troops to attack our rear. They say they’re helping [Zhan Long] get the 10th Talisman....”

Jian Feng Han’s face turned cold, “I gave him mercy and he decided to turn it down! Split up the troops and attack! When the BOSS dies, we’ll immediately kill Misty Clouds. I wasn’t looking to kill him, but he decided to come and find his doom!”

“Yes, Guild Master!”

.....

Right at that moment, I suddenly heard a “Di”. I got a message from the beauty Cang Tong, “Li Xiao Yao, did Yan Zhao Warrior bring some people from [Prague] to go after Wang Ze Cheng’s division?”

“Yes, what’s wrong Wan Er?”

“Crap. Just half an hour ago, Q-Sword took [Hero’s Mound] main guild, and division 2-17, around 50,000 troops, towards Ba Huang City. He said he was going to attack some NPC rebellion, but it seems..... it seems that he tricked me. In reality, he was taking that 50,000 core member team to Ba Huang City. Quickly tell Yan Zhao Warrior, [Prague] is going to be ambushed!

“Ok!”

.....

Right as I was about to dial Yan Zhao Warrior’s chat, Qing Qian jolted beside me. She was looking towards the Southwest, as she said, “Oh no.... Oh no.....”

My heart froze, “Is it.... [Hero’s Mound].....”

“Yea.....” Qing Qian’s face was ashen, “Uncle Yan Zhao just sent a message to me. [Prague]s’ 20,000 elites ran all the way into an ambush. The ambush was right in— Bowl Valley! It seems that Bowl Valley was completely surrounded by [Hero’s Mound]. Q-Sword, The Seventh Tang, Jian Tan, and Sword Tears, all personally went to fight. [Prague] is finished....”

Chapter 458: Chi You's Body

A slight breeze blew up my War Swept Cloak as I trembled, "No matter how hard we try to avoid it, what will come will come in the end. Li Mu, Qing Qian...."

"Here." General Li Mu and Qing Qian both looked up at me.

I gritted my teeth and said, "Qing Qian, stay here and help kill the BOSS. Li Mu, take all of the [Zhan Long] teams that aren't killing the BOSS and head straight towards Bowl Valley. Be careful as you're heading over and constantly send Wind Elves ahead to scout out the area so that you don't get ambushed by [Hero's Mound]. I will do my best to kill the BOSS as soon as possible, get the Talisman, and head over to meet up with you guys!"

General Li Mu seemed a little doubtful, "Are we really going to head over and help [Prague]?"

I gave a serious nod, "Q-Sword brought his troops all the way to Ba Huang City, and his purpose is very clear. [Hero's Mound] wants to participate in Ba Huang City's conflicts. This was a decision he made in all seriousness.... Seeing as Q-Sword has made his move, [Zhan Long] can't just sit around and watch. If even [Prague] is destroyed, then what other Ba Huang City guilds can truly rival [Hero's Mound]?"

"Understood. I'll head over right now!"

Li Mu turned around and headed straight over without looking back. With a single command, he left several hundred players with me, and took the other ten thousand players with him. Very quickly, they disappeared into the horizon. Once they left, I increased the speed of my attacks. Qing Qian, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, Old K, Wang Jian and the others all gave support. Old K and Wang Jian blocked [Vanguard]'s advance, while the other team leaders focused on dealing damage to the BOSS.

.....

In the distance, all of the players from [Enemies at the Gate] had melded into a group with [Vanguard] as they fought. The battle was extremely fierce, and there didn't seem to be a losing party.

“Hong!”

My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] cut through the crowds. I raised my head and looked at Jian Feng Han who hung in the sky and shouted, “Q-Sword has already sent his troops all the way to the gates of Ba Huang City. [Prague] is currently being killed. Jian Feng Han, do we still need to fight over this BOSS?”

Jian Feng Han glanced at the BOSS's health and said, “At least we'll kill the BOSS before we deal with [Hero's Mound]. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you not want to gather all 10 Talismans?”

“I understand....”

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated [Dragon Transformation]. My body grew, and energy began to course through my veins. My War Swept Cloak flew up behind me as I charged forward 20 yards alongside my Flaming Tiger God. Both of my blades glowed with Dou Qi, and I slashed [Vanguard]'s frontline into pieces. Goodbye Tears, Don't Be Foolish and North Pole all retreated backwards. Jian Feng Han didn't dare come close to me for a full 60 seconds while Qing Qian, Wolf and Fox all did their best to deal damage. The BOSS let out a dying scream, as it's health was falling lower and lower!

After another 3 minutes, I turned around and threw a [Combo]+[Fierce Ice Blade] at the BOSS. The Dou Qi that surrounded the arms of the Slaughterer Mu Lin slowly faded away. He had killed enough Ba Huang City players, and with another cry, he fell to his knees and died. My experience bar flew up and behind me, Wolf and Qing Qian both leveled up!

“Hua!”

The second the BOSS died, he dropped a ton of equipment. Jian Feng Han rushed over. On the ground, Simple gripped her staff and was activating [Ancient Demon Blade] and [Magma Abyss].

I saw everything clearly and cast a glance at Qing Qian. She immediately nodded!

“Shua!”

I opened up my hand and locked onto Simple. Using [Defeat the Dragon], I dragged her to my side. After the fight with the BOSS, my rage went up 57 points and so I activated another skill, [Curse of Night Fury Asura]. “Pa!” I threw a punch right into Simple’s shoulder. The curse succeeded! She couldn’t use [Dimensional Leap]!

Qing Qian’s body flew over. Her two daggers swung at Simple. Simple raised her staff to block, and sparks flew when the two weapons met. But, just as before, she couldn’t withstand Qing Qian’s attack and her [Mana Shield] shattered in seconds.

I looked up and glared at Jian Feng Han. He was already grabbing for his sword.

“Hua!”

My War Swept Cloak fluttered in the wind and I leaped over. My Cloud Stepping Boots landed right on Jian Feng Han’s arm, and blocked him from grabbing his weapon. At the same time, my Cold Iron Sword pierced right into my stepping stone and spun back towards me. Now, I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword with both hands. With a strong swing, I cut through the air with a [Wind Blade], and creating a beautiful glowing arc in the sky!

“Peng!”

“4481 ! ”

Jian Feng Han was thrown back into the sky. Behind him, his wings opened up. He gritted his teeth as he glared at me, but he had no way of defending himself, and he was too far away to strike me.

I turned around and threw the tenth Talisman into my bag along with three other equipments. I turned around to look and saw that Qing Qian’s dagger was buried into Simple’s chest. It was [Twin Blade Harmony], and was a mortal wound. She looked into Qing Qian’s face with a shocked

expression, as though she could tell that she was about to die.

In a matter of life and death, I immediately yelled out, “Melon, don’t! Don’t kill her!”

“Huh?”

Qing Qian quickly stopped her attack. At that moment, Simple recovered her ability to cast spells and with a raise of her hand, she used [Dimensional Leap] and threw an [Indigo Sea Arrow]. However, she didn’t see the beautiful shadow that was behind her. “Peng!” the skill was interrupted. Matcha swung out her sword, blocking Simple’s retreat. Her beautiful face was filled with rage, “Melon didn’t kill you, and now you want to kill her!?”

Simple guiltily looked down and raised her staff as she quickly retreated.

I also quickly retreated and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, “Everyone, head to Bowl Valley. Follow me!”

Qing Qian caught up to me and blinked in confusion, “Brother Xiao Yao, why not kill Simple?”

I gritted my teeth, “[Hero’s Mound] is here. If we keep Simple, we can kill some more of [Hero’s Mound] players. Otherwise, how else are we supposed to block [Hero’s Mound]’s advance?!”

Qing Qian wryly smiled, “So it was like that. And here I thought it was because brother had a crush on Simple and so he wouldn’t let me kill her...”

My lips twitched, “You’re joking, am I really that kind of a person?”

“Wu..... pretty much!”

“Am not.....”

Matcha raised her sword and ran to our side with a smile, “Let’s look at what the BOSS dropped, shall we? This was a Lv 95 Saint Tier BOSS! The strongest BOSS in this battle. There must be some good stuff...”

As I ran, I took out the three weapons that I put into my bag. One was

an exquisite golden chest plate that looked extremely graceful. It didn't look like it was a male player's equipment. Then there was a ring that had a black glow surrounding it. Finally, there was a red flag, though I'm not sure what it was meant for. I looked at the chest plate first. With a wave of my hand, the stats appeared before everyone—

[Dark Fairy Armor] (Saint Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1400

Strength: +101

Endurance: +100

Agility: +97

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 20%

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 44%

Additional: Increases the user's health by 2500

Special: [Kiss of the Dark Fairy] when under attack, there's a 50% chance that this skill will turn 50% of the damage into the player's own health

Required Level: 84

Required Gender: Female

.....

I was speechless when I saw the stats. "It's just for women? That's so unfair. Alright then, all the heavy armor female players, line up...."

Matcha pouted and said, "No need to line up, my points are the highest. Give it to me. However many points you need, just take it. Boss, you decide...."

"Ok!"

I tossed the armor to Matcha. Her level wasn't high enough now, but she will be able to put it on soon.

I continued onto the next equipment. It was the ring that had a black-red glow to it. I held it in my palm and then waved my hand over it, and displayed the ring's stats in front of us Hehe, it's really good—

[Unrivaled Ring] (Saint Tier)

Strength: +105

Endurance: +102

Agility: +100

Additional: Increases the user's attack by 400

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 2500

Special: [Unrivaled], this ring contains an ancient, godly power. For 7 seconds, the user's attacks will disregard any attempts from its targets to block or parry, at the same time, the user's attacks will also create a magic attack that is of the same level as the physical attack. Consumes 40 points of Rage

Special: [Chi You's Body], Gives the user Chi You's superhuman strength and increases natural recover by 200%

Required: 85

Charm Requirement: 150

.....

As they looked at the ring, Matcha, Qing Qian, Old K and Wolf were all speechless.

"F*ck....." Old K made a fist, "This ring was practically made for Li Bastard. It requires 150 charm, and level 85. I don't think there's anyone else that meets that requirement?"

Qing Qian smiled, "If Cang Tong had joined [Zhan Long] already, then she'd be able to fulfill it...."

"Her? Nah, I don't even know when she will come over...." Wolf seemed to be a little resentful.

Matcha's head bumped Wolf's shoulder and glared at him, " Wan Er

has her own reasons for not joining [Zhan Long] yet, Little Wolf, seeing as you're boss's brother, you should understand."

Wolf rubbed his nose, "I understand... Nevermind, pretend I didn't say anything...."

I held onto the Unrivaled Ring and said, "How's this, I'll take the ring and take off 500,000 guild points from myself."

"Ok!"

I looked at the equipment that I had. I currently had two rings, one was the ring that had the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] skill, while the other had a 10% Drain ability. I was stuck between three options. I had no other choice but to take off the Crimson Dragon Ring. The 10% Drain was much more important. I'll just have to give up on the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] skill. I threw the ring to Wang Jian. He was one of the strongest fighters on the frontline, and needed a skill like this.

After I put on the Unrivaled Ring, my stats immediately grew a ton—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 86

Attack: 5512-6794

Defense: 4762

Health: 17292

Mana: 5214

Charm: 167

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 15

.....

I have such a crazy Max HP now, but that was to be expected since that was the future of mainstream frontline battles. Maybe, even within a month, everyone in will be saying: How can you claim to be a main tank if you don't have at least 20,000 health?

I continued onto the last piece of equipment. Maybe it wasn't even an

equipment, but rather an item. It was a crimson flag that had a murderous feeling to it. I waved my hand over it, and the stats appeared in the sky. It really wasn't a simple item—

[Blood Flag] (Saint Tier)

Type: Shoulder Emblem Support Item

Strength: +105

Endurance: +105

Agility: +105

Effect: Once this item is equipped it will increase the attack power of all players within the main guild and guild divisions that are within 1000 yards of the user by 20%. The user who wears this must be either a Guild Master, a Vice Guild Master, or an Elder. On top of that, if this player were to die then the effect would disappear.

Required: 84

.....

Gripping the Blood Flag, I couldn't help but smile, "This is a good item, who wants it?"

Qing Qian gripped her dagger and said, "Originally I would've really wanted it.... but I'm an Assassin, and it's really easy killing me. The person who equips it needs to be someone who can survive until the end. Of all players who are Guild Master or Elder level players, I think that Matcha is the most suitable..."

Matcha jolted, "Me? I..... Would I be able to fulfill such a heavy responsibility?"

Chapter 459: Q-Sword's Battle Style

Why not? It has to be you....” I took the Blood Flag and handed it over to Matcha and smiled, “Now in the future, Matcha will have to be in all the big battles. Good Luck. Once you get to Lv 84, you’ll be one of our [Zhan Long]’s Elders. You’re going to be responsible for the commands in the guild then.....”

Matcha looked at me with tears in her eyes, “Okay.... Don’t worry boss. I won’t disappoint you!”

On the side, Song Han laughed, “Good. Now sister Matcha will truly be our godly strategist. Everyone already knows how good Matcha’s tactics are and now she has this AOE BUFF shoulder item. She can now finally be considered a top rank commander.”

Matcha pouted and smiled, “Hehe. During the City War, [Zhan Long]’s real commander is the boss.....”

I looked back at her, “I can’t be leading every single battle. When I’m not here, Matcha will be the commander in chief. Her position will be higher than Li Mu and the others.....”

“Okay.....” Matcha smiled. “Thanks for the promotion boss. I’ll do my best!”

“Right!”

.....

Everyone started running into the distance, and not long after, we caught up to the team that General Li Mu had led ahead. [Zhang Long]’s ten thousand troops passed through forests and mountains, all the way to the border of Glacial River Valley. Our last map before heading towards Bowl Valley, which was now only 1000 yards away from us.

“Sha Sha.....”

With the effects of my Cloud Stepping Boots and War Swept Cloak, my speed had greatly surpassed that of a normal player’s. I looked around and surveyed the area. In the sky a group of [Zhan Long] Wind Elves were

flying about. From their reports, the area around the ravine was very safe.

“Brother Xiao Yao, slow down a bit. Wait for us....” Qing Qian desperately chased me from afar. “I feel that something bad is about to happen. Uncle Yan Zhao had already gone offline. It seems like he’s been done in.”

I furrowed my brows. I had already smelled the bloody being carried by the wind.

“Shua!”

I charged over a hill and rushed into the forest. Once my boots stepped onto Bowl Valley, I witnessed a scene of human desperation. I stood there, stupefied. Behind me, Qing Qian, Wolf, Matcha, Li Mu all were speechless

Blood had seeped into every inch of dirt and the ground was littered with the corpses of players. Broken swords and halberds hung from the bushes and trees. Most of the bodies were from [Prague]’s players. Crows spiraled above the valley in the air, and waited for the chance to feast. A few wild coyotes hid in the bushes, as their noses filled with the scent of blood. [Prague]’s flag lay in a pool of blood, torn.

I slowly walked forward, my hand trembled with rage as I tightly gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I had predicted that [Prague] would lose, but I never would’ve imagined that they would be completely annihilated. This battle... It looks as though nobody escaped with their life!

I looked up and saw the Vice Guild Master, Epic Hero’s, body pierced by a halberd and pinned to a boulder. No matter how hard he tried to push away from the bolder, he just hung from there. His face and chest had been scorched black from magic fire. You could tell that before he had died, quite a few people had tried healing him. Sadly, he was still killed in an explosion of spells.

I couldn’t bear to watch anymore. I looked down and took Qing Qian, Wolf and the others forward.

I walked further ahead, towards the center of the valley. This place was originally a small hill in the mountains, but now corpses covered the entire place like mountains. Blood flowed freely like rivers, and the originally green ground was now a black red color.

“Yan Zhao Warrior? Was he killed?” I made a fist.

Qing Qian bit her lip, “I... I don’t know...”

Li My raised his long sword and gritted his teeth “Aren’t they just a little too savage? To think that they’d completely annihilate [Prague]. And it looks like, [Hero’s Mound] only lost around 5000 players. Just how strong are they? They managed to kill all 20,000 of [Prague]’s players with a 1:4 ratio!”

Wang Jian coldly said, “Q-Sword is known as the second strongest player in the Chinese Servers. He used to be known as the Death God. On top of that, [Hero’s Mound] is a super guild on par with [Legend], and without some cheap tricks and courage, they would’ve never been able to sit on the throne of second best. Now that I see this, they really do have some strength. They were actually.... they were actually able to completely destroy [Prague] within an hour. No matter what, [Prague] is one of the top ten guilds in the server....”

One Second Hero gripped his halberd, his brows were furrowed, “Such a cruel battle....”

.....

I looked up and suddenly flew forward several steps and rushed up to a pile of bodies. I dragged away a few [Hero’s Mound] corpses, only to see the body of [Prague]’s Guild Master, Yan Zhao Warrior. He was at the very bottom of the mountain. Yan Zhao Warrior was basically buried to death by all of the [Hero’s Mound] players. The sword in his hand was covered with nicks, the remnants of blood still on the blade. On his body, I could see marks left from several axes and swords. The most tragic part was the fact that there was basically not a single inch of his skin that wasn’t covered with wounds. His chest plate, neck, two legs and arms all had arrows sticking out. One arrow had been buried right into Yan Zhao’s

left eye, the blood still seeped out from the wound.

I couldn't bear to watch anymore. I swept out my blade, and energy burst out of my body. A pile of [Hero's Mound] bodies flew up. I dragged Yan Zhao's body out, and softly laid him on the ground. My chest heaved as I took in some heavy breaths. I looked up at everyone. All of the players from [Zhan Long] gritted their teeth as they looked at me.

"Guild Master!"

Li Mu pierced his longsword into the earth and raged, "[Hero's Mound] has gone to the extreme. This is just a territorial battle, there's no need to kill everyone, is there? Without a single hesitation, they threw a sneak attack on Ba Huang City, and killed everyone in [Prague], without a single survivor. What exactly are they planning? Q-Sword, the most perfect man on the Chinese Servers... he really is perfect with his methods!!"

Old K looked at Yan Zhao's body on the ground and gritted his teeth, "Even though I didn't exactly like [Prague] or Yan Zhao Warrior, but.... But this really is just a small internal City battle. They didn't even declare war, and decided to slaughter all 20,000 players from [Prague]...."

Qing Qian walked up and knelt beside Yan Zhao Warrior. As she saw his body, she began to tear up, "Wu.... Uncle died such a cruel death. He was probably the last person to die. He looks so hopeless.... So unjust. He.... he didn't even have time to send me a message, and he was just massacred like that...."

Dancing Forest raised her long bow and said, "Guildmaster, why don't you say something. What exactly should we do?"

I took a deep breath and looked at everyone. Then in an emotionless voice, I said, "Q-Sword has brought his troops to our gates, and has declared that he is going to participate in this Ba Huang City battle... We have no other choice but to fight. All of Ba Huang City's guilds have been fighting hard for 24 hours, and there aren't many left. [Zhan Long] managed to preserve most of our 10,000 man force. But, Q-Sword brought with him 50,000 of [Hero's Mound] players. He had calculated well, and it seems, he is determined to get the 10 Talismans. It'll be hard for [Zhan

Long] to avoid a battle with [Hero's Mound]. I have nothing more to say. The bravest side when rivals have to meet in battle will win. [Hero's Mound] is just a stumbling block. Today, [Zhan Long] will crush [Hero's Mound]'s undefeated legend!"

Matcha slowly walked over and whispered in my ear, "Boss, I just got some intel. [Hero's Mound]'s 50,000 main force has split into two. One of them is heading towards the City of the Four Noblemen, while the other is going towards the Eastern side of the Grave of the Warring States towards The Desolate Cloud Swamp. What..... what should we do?"

"Desolate Cloud Swamp?"

I suddenly jolted, "Go look it up, what Ba Huang City force is in Desolate Cloud Swamp?"

"[Vanguard]!"

Matcha widened her eyes at me, "Jian Feng Han and Misty Clouds have completely broken ties. He's decided to kill Misty Clouds and so he brought 20,000 of [Vanguard]'s main force to go after [Enemies at the Gate]'s 8000. Those two have decided to have a face off at Desolate Cloud Swamp. If nothing out of the ordinary happens, they will fight in 10 minutes!"

"Have they all gone crazy?" I punched a pine and ruefully said, "[Hero's Mound] is closing in on them. Clearly, they want to crush all of Ba Huang City's main forces first. Jian Feng Han is also going after [Enemies At the Gate]. Is he going to wrap his head as a present and send it to them?"

Li Mu said in serious tone, "The current situation of the 10 Talisman is that there are three on you, three on Jian Feng Han, One on Misty Clouds, and the three that were on Yan Zhao Warrior, but are now on Q-Sword. Therefore, Jian Feng Han probably really wants the one on Misty Cloud."

Qing Qian's beautiful eyes were filled with perplexion, "Brother Xiao Yao, we...what should we do?"

I looked into the distant East and said, "Qing Qian, send two Wind Elf Archers and Assassins to fly over and scout out the area 1000 yards ahead

of us. Everyone, follow me and head towards Desolate Cloud Swamp. There is no avoiding our battle with [Hero's Mound], and I don't want to try and evade the issue either. Right now, what I want to do, is find Q-Sword and [Hero's Mound] and fight to the death!"

Li Mu nodded, "Yup, we'll head out immediately. Time is of the essence!"

.....

Sprinting over, [Zhan Long]'s 10,000 troops ran along the border of the City of the Four Noblemen, straight towards Desolate Cloud Swamp. Everyone's face was filled with worry. There were only around 140,000 Ba Huang City players remaining within the event. On top of that, there was a mix of good and bad players. How were we supposed to defend against [Hero's Mound] 50,000 elite? Besides, [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate], some of the last remaining forces of Ba Huang City, were now duking it out over a talisman. This meant that the battle would be even harder to fight.

"Pu pu...."

My Cloud Stepping Boots stepped into shallow water. There was a small stream and grasslands all around us. We were only around 2000 yards away from Desolate Cloud Swamp. As we walked further forward, there was a dense forest. Desolate Cloud Swamp was guarded by a high level forest. My level was really low when I came here to train my levels. Now that I was coming back, it was for the sake of a bitter battle!

.....

"Carefully scout out the area ahead! Make sure you camouflage yourself well!" Li Mu shouted out.

"Hua la la...."

A group of birds suddenly flew up from the forest. I immediately raised my sword and shouted, "Stop the advance! There's an ambush ahead!"

Chapter 460: Q-Sword's Empty City Plan

On the map, all I saw were rows and rows of red dots in front of us. I had already listed [Hero's Mound] as an enemy guild, and all of their dots on the map would become a stronger red. It was clear, Q-Sword was planning on ambushing us here. Unfortunately, there were too many players, and some of them weren't even completely covered.

"What should we do?"

Li Mu gripped his longsword and said, "There are definitely people in those forests ahead. However, we have to go through that area to get to Desolate Cloud Swamp. Should we really go though.... if we don't, I'm afraid that [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] are going to lose though!"

Qing Qian's beautiful eyes turned to me as she said, "After some discussion, Jian Feng Han and Misty Clouds have stopped fighting. However, they are going to keep up the appearance that they are still fighting. The two want to utilize that trick to lure [Hero's Mound] to attack. Afterwards, they'll join us, [Zhan Long], and ambush them from three sides. Hopefully we can crush [Hero's Mound]'s strength."

Wolf raised a fist, "But there's an ambush in front of us. If we were to enter it, then we'll take substantial losses. That's [Hero's Mound] out there, they aren't trash like [Flying Dragon]..."

I took a deep breath and nodded, "Yup. But everyone, don't get too excited. Send out a team of Wind Elves to scout out ahead!"

"Yup!"

.....

The sound of wings flapped as a dozen of [Zhan Long]'s Wind Elves raised their bows and flew away as they split up and entered into the forest.

"Huh?"

One of the Wind Elves suddenly stopped flying and opened up her long

bow. She then shot an arrow into the forest. “Sou!”, there was no movement after the arrow flew in. However, after a few seconds, an angry bellow sounded out. A brawny man carrying a battle axe charged out from the trees. He raised his battle axe and unleashed a [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Pa.....”

Our Wind Elf fell with a soft grunt. The Berserker leapt up and threw another [Skyshaker Slash], and turned the Wind Elf into a corpse.

In the other direction, the sounds of agonized screams rose up. A few of our Wind Elf Knights had been made into porcupines from a barrage of arrows, and their blood rained onto the ground. In a blink of an eye, all of the people that [Zhan Long] sent out were dead on the ground. They didn’t even see the enemy, much less get intel on where the enemy was lying in ambush.

.....

“F*ck....” Li Mu’s face was ashen. He swung his blade out and said, “They’re just too savage. The ambush lying in wait in the forest must be [Hero’s Mound]’s main force. Guild Master, I’ll take a 500 man team to check them out. If it really is their main force, then we’ll retreat and you guys follow up from behind!”

I raised my hand to stop him, “No, I’ll take people! You hold our formation here. That way, I can at least ensure that I’ll be able to fully retreat. Li Mu, you’re the linchpin of the Valiant Bravery Camp. I can’t just watch you die in some no name forest.”

After I finished, I looked towards One Second Hero, “Cheng Yong Jie, take your 500 man team and follow me!”

One Second Hero raised his halberd and nodded, “Understood!”

Very soon, 500 people appeared. Under my command, they all charged forward. I relied on my advantage in movement speed to run at the very front the team. In reality, this was also to concentrate all of the firepower on myself, that way, we could take less losses. With a roar, my Flaming

Tiger God was summoned from the pet dimension. It waved its claws as it reared up and pounced out.

“Sha sha....”

Right in front of us, the bushes began to rustle. Without skipping a heartbeat, I opened my palm and sent a [Great Realm of Desolation!]

“Peng!”

“5423 ! ”

One of the Swordsmen cried out in pain and fell into a pile of bodies. At the same time, “Shua Shua Shua”, seven to eight arrows shot out from a pile of leaves. I quickly slid to the side to dodge as my War Swept Cloak fluttered behind me. One after another, they all missed their target. I came to a halt with my Cloud Stepping Boots. My Dragon Reservoir Sword slightly jolted as seven stars began to move. My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] smashed through the forest, and a chain of damage numbers flew up.

“6012 ! ”

“5983 ! ”

“6237 ! ”

.....

My attack power was just too high. Almost everyone that had gotten hit was killed. I used [Haste], and lunged forward. Unexpectedly, a “Pa Ta” sounded out as I passed through the grass. A [Beast Trap] locked onto my feet. It was a fourth advancement Archer skill. The effect lasts for 3 seconds.

The bushes in front of me rustled and the smell of gunpowder filled my nose. “Peng Peng Peng!”, a fiery bullet smacked against my Wall of Dou Qi. It was the Musketeer’s fourth advancement skill—[Magma Bullet]. It increases attack power by 150%, and has the effect of breaking through original defense. As expected, my 5000 base defense was broken from this skill—

“1092 ! ”

“978 ! ”

“1127 ! ”

.....

After three seconds, I used [Haste] and turned around. I opened up my palm, and commanded [Soul Army] to descend upon the forest. One after another, the skill crushed the crowd of Musketeers, and screams of fear rang out. I retreated several steps before another “Ka Cha!” sound rang out. I was trapped by another Archer’s [Beast Trap].

“Guild Master, be careful!” Behind me, one of the Mages raised her staff and let out a [Revealing Light]. In a loud voice, she said, “There are definitely quite a few [Beast Traps] laid out here!”

Just as expected, under the light of the spell, countless [Beast Trap]’s appeared in the bushes. Motherf*cker, it was terrifying. There were at least a thousand in that forest. This meant that there were over a thousand Archers there to set up that ambush.

I lunged forward and cut down a [Beast Trap]. I then shouted, “Continue casting [Revealing Light], we’ll clear out all of the [Beast Traps] in the area!”

“Ok!”

Everywhere, we cut apart the [Beast Traps] that the [Revealing Light] illuminated, but there wasn’t any movement from the bushes, which made me suspicious. What exactly was Q-Sword planning, and why wasn’t he stopping us? Maybe..... Maybe these were just some fake soldiers, and they’re purposely luring us into a trap?

Behind me, Qing Qian’s voice rang, “Brother Xiao Yao, new intel. There are at least 20,000 [Hero’s Mound] players that have appeared in Desolate Cloud Swamp. They’re attacking [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] right now! They’re around 1300 yards ahead of us!”

“F*ck!”

I gritted my teeth and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, “All of [Zhan Long]’s players listen to me. No matter if there is or isn’t an ambush in those bushes, we’re going to charge right through! Kill!”

Li Mu questioned, “Eh? Aren’t you afraid of an ambush?”

“There’s won’t be, there isn’t even a heavy army ambush here!” I gritted my teeth and said, “At most, there isn’t more than 1000 people here. They’re just here to delay us for a whole 20 minutes. Q-Sword has already reached his target. All members, advance! Enter the Desolate Cloud Swamp, the battle is right ahead of us!”

“Yes sir!”

[Zhan Long]’s main guild and divisions all advanced. Just as expected, there were only several hundred people lying in wait in the bushes. They were all killed by us as we advanced forward. Within 10 minutes, we passed through the forest!

“Hua....”

When I hacked my way through the bramble, a flash of light suddenly passed by my eyes. Just ahead of me, there was a moist swamp. At that moment, the swamp was filled with players. [Enemies at the Gate] and [Vanguard] were both attacking on the northern side of the swamp, while [Hero’s Mound]’s countless players were currently fiercely charging forward. In the distance, I could see Q-Sword’s silhouette. He was swinging his blade and slaughtering Ba Huang City players. He was practically a killing machine!

.....

I pointed my Dragon Reservoir Sword right at [Hero’s Mound]’s rear and bellowed, “Advance!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all rushed forward. Matcha stayed by my side to shield me and raised her sword, and blinked a few times, “Boss, [Hero’s Mound] has sent people to block our troops..... Wu, it’s Cang Cheng’s First Division, and Divisions 11, 13, 17, and 18. There’s around 5000 players....”

I pointed forward and shouted, “Brothers of [Zhan Long], cut them down!”

Wang Ze Cheng raised his Flames of War Magic Blade and stood at the frontlines. He suddenly retreated a step, and an enormous shield blocked our first Swordsman on the frontlines. He then sent his Flames of War blade out, and “Ka Cha!” dealt 4100 damage. He actually managed to instantly kill a Lv 80 Fourth Advancement Swordsman. That bastard’s attack power is terrifying.

Dong Cheng Lei roared and suddenly charged forward. He raised his battle axe, and “Peng!” he smashed into Wang Ze Cheng’s shield. The force of the attack forced Wang Ze Cheng to retreat several steps. His face turned ugly, “Cang Lei, you!”

“F*ck off! You aren’t fit to have “Cang” in your name!”

Dong Cheng Lei snarled and swept out his battle axe, and forced Wang Ze Cheng back even further. However, Wang Ze Cheng was an extremely smart person and let his feet slide backwards and he made a quick retreat, as he dodged Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] and Li Mu’s [Covering Sword Slash]. Afterwards, he hid behind the first row and stopped attracting all of the firepower. It was as if he realized that there was quite a number of people that wanted to kill him in [Zhan Long].

My two swords terrorized the frontlines. My Cold Iron Sword and Dragon Reservoir Sword were covered in blood, while my Flaming Tiger God lunged forward and its body was covered with [Flame Armor] and activated [Burstfire Raid] in the middle of the crowd. The sight of him roaring was an iconic scene on [Zhan Long]’s battlefields. A gale swept through the crowds as Old K’s [Whirlwind Blade] cut through the crowd. Li Mu and Wang Jian both activated [Flying Sword] and their blades cut into the crowds, while blood sprayed everywhere. The entire battlefield was dyed red.

“Hong hong hong....”

Suddenly, small volcanoes began to pop up throughout the marsh. Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands lead a group of [Zhan Long]’s Mages

and continuously cast [Magma Abyss]. The players of [Hero's Mound] still recklessly countered our attacks. Wang Ze Cheng lead the attack, and all of the players did their best to throw themselves at [Zhan Long]'s frontline. It was very clear, Q-Sword gave them a kamikaze command. It was probably something along the lines of, no matter what you do, you have to delay [Zhan Long] for an hour, or half an hour.

.....

In the distance, there was suddenly the sound of a charge rang out throughout the swamp, and resonated in my heart!

“Matcha!”

I looked at my beautiful Elder and said, “Quick, fly up and tell me the situation!”

“Yes sir!”

Matcha's small boots stomped against the ground, and she flew up. Her two snow white legs appeared in front of everyone's eyes. I also saw what she saw, and noticed a group of countless players charging through the northern forest. They were all [Hero's Mound]'s players. Q-Sword's sister Sword Tears, a top tier fourth advancement Swordsman, lead the troops.

Qing Qian's voice trembled, “Oh no.... there's another 30,000 of [Hero's Mound]'s troops that are returning here. They weren't headed towards the City of the Four Noblemen, they were going to surround [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate]...”

I tightened my grip on my two swords and suddenly hacked my way through the crowd as I shouted, “Believe in our allies to hold off the enemy. [Enemies at the Gate] and [Vanguard] aren't made of soft meat, they'll rip out some of [Hero's Mound]'s teeth. Within 20 minutes, we must annihilate [Hero's mound: Division One] and charge all the way to the rear of their main force! Let them have a taste of defeat before they leave!”

Chapter 461: Showing off [Flaming Sun]

I charged assiduously into the midst of the crowds while sending a message to Misty Clouds which briefly said, “Misty Clouds, [Hero’s Mound]’s motive is already very obvious. They want to annihilate you guys and [Vanguard] at the Desolate Cloud Swamp. Now, [Vanguard] and [Enemies At The Gate] together have approximately how many people?”

Misty Cloud replied, “Around 25,000 people. We are definitely at a disadvantage and we are now being surrounded.....”

I nodded, “Yeah, then employ the defense formation strategy and contact [Blood Contract] and the other allies in Ba Huang City. Ask them to help break through by attacking from the sides. [Zhan Long] will use our full power to attack [Hero’s Mound]’s main force from the south. We absolutely won’t let you guys fight alone.”

Misty Cloud turned on the communicator and spoke with a tired but slightly grateful tone, “Yes. I got it. Thank you.....you are still willing to offend [Hero’s Mound] and help [Enemies At The Gate] at such a time.

I couldn’t help but smile, “What are you saying? We are allies. Under any circumstances, [Zhan Long] will never give up on allies. Plus..... [Hero’s Mound]’s motive is too obvious. After you guys are annihilated, it would be [Zhan Long]’s turn. I don’t want to drag out an ignoble existence!”

“Okay! Let’s fight an impassioned and satisfying battle!”

“Yes!”

.....

As the sounds of the clashes thundered, [Zhan Long] fought forcefully against the team of [Hero’s Mound]’s division. Within a short time of ten minutes, they fought from a tie during the beginning to [Zhan Long] starting to gain the upper hand. Immediately after that, Zhan Long started to crush [Hero’s Mound]’s divisions. Since it was just a division of [Hero’s Mound], it would be impossible for the division to compete

against the elites of [Zhan Long]!

In the end, [Hero's Mound]'s divisions were annihilated easily like breaking dry branches within less than twenty minutes. Wang Ze Cheng could only escape disconcertedly with the few hundred people who survived. The ground was covered with equipments and corpses and grass, leaves, and corpses floated on the surface of the marsh. The smell of the pool of blood pervaded the air. I grabbed a staff from the marsh and threw it into my bag and bellowed, "Clean the battlefield for 1 minute. Take whatever you want and continue the attack!"

The [Zhan Long] crowd all picked up the spoils of war and all the equipments were gone in an instant. Old K carried a battle axe and continued charging forward with bloodshot eyes. I was afraid that he might get killed and immediately chased after him with my Dragon Reservoir Sword in hand.

About 100 yards right ahead of us was a group of [Hero's Mound]'s main guild elite players, which was around 7000 people. Q-Sword was personally commanding this group of people. The depth of the formation was around 200 meters so there should be no problem in obliterating this group of [Hero's Mound] elite players. Plus, with [Enemies At The Gate] and [Vanguard] attacking together from the front and rear, Q-Sword would definitely suffer this time!

Q-Sword averted abruptly and was already looking towards us. He positioned the tip of his sword and smiled, "Yo, [Zhan Long]'s lethality is not bad. The Seventh Tang, Cang Cheng, you two lead the main guild, the second division and a few other divisions to strike and defend against [Zhan Long]'s attack. Of course, if you guys can annihilate [Zhan Long], then that would be even better....."

The Tang Seventh grasped his fan and nodded with a smile as he answered, "Understood, Guild Master!"

With this, The Tang Seventh waved his fan and bellowed, "Second Division, turn around, get into your formation and prepare for [Zhan Long]'s attack! Listen to my orders and prepare to counter the attack at

any time!”

As he was saying this, The Seventh Tang cast a smile at me from afar, “Li Xiao Yao, we haven’t met for a few days. I didn’t expect that we would fight just when we see each other again. Please don’t blame me, your brother, for being ruthless. It’s just fighting for different masters.....”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword slightly jolted and I smiled, “No matter, let’s go. I want to try out the Seventh Tang’s legendary sword Sacrificial Blood Sword....”

“Pei.... fight me!”

.....

We didn’t use any tricks, this was completely a head on battle. [Zhan Long] must kill their way into the encirclement to help the surrounded [Enemies at the Gate] and [Vanguard]. Therefore, we must break through [Vanguard]’s defense.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and shouted, “Advance!”

I switched my perspective to the overhead view of the entire battlefield and saw that everyone was wearing torn up armor. The worn down [Zhan Long] players didn’t show a sliver of cowardice though. They all raised their weapons and followed me into [Hero’s Mound]’s formation!

The Seventh Tang stood out among the crowd. He raised his palm and the copper coins began to dance and began to quickly pick one out. The coin sent a [Hexagram] flying right at us!

“Keng!”

The coin made sparks against Bai Qi’s armor. In the next moment, lines of [Magma Abyss]es appeared under Bai Qi’s feet. Right when he was stunned, he was immediately killed in one big explosive attack!

“Bai Qi....” Li Mu gritted his teeth, “F*ck.... The Seventh Tang!”

My right arm jolted and I knocked away a few shields with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I then waved my left arm and sent my Cold Iron Sword into the crowd. With a turn, I cut through the crowd as I passed through.

Using [Haste], I dashed forward 10 yards and locked onto the Seventh Tang!

“F*ck!”

The Seventh Tang reacted quickly and used a [Perspective] to retreat 10 yards. He dodged the [Defeat the Dragon], an attack that I needed to hit. Instead, I grabbed a Lv 82 high tier Mage to my side. I used [Curse of the Night Fury] and made two slices with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I broke the shield, then let my Cold Iron Sword pierce through his chest, and instantly killed him.

“Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Wang Ze Cheng angrily shouted. It was clear that compared to his hate of [Zhan Long], he hated me much more.

My [Wall of Dou Qi] continuously revolved around me. It was clear that my attack power and the durability of the Wall were both extremely high. Even though it sustained a lot of attacks, it could still hold up. Besides, I had Darling Duck and a group of Healers focusing their [Heal]s on me, which made it even harder to kill me.

.....

“Not good!” Wang Jian furrowed his eyebrows, “If this battle drags out, we’ll lose too many players....”

I nodded and said into the guild chat, “All long distance players, focus your firepower to immediately kill all of the warriors through AOE attacks. Old K, prepare to cast any special skills at any moment!”

Old K shivered, “Understood!”

During the next 30 seconds, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands and Dancing Forest all sent out all of their AOE skills. At that moment, [Hero’s Mound]’s frontline close range players all had their health cut in half.

I looked towards Old K, then gave a [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] BUFF to everyone within 10 meters of me, and shouted, “Alright Old K, use [Flaming Sun]!”

“Alright!”

Old K immediately cast the skill that used up all of his rage — [Flaming Sun]. Suddenly, the Flaming Sun Battle Axe flew into the sky. Even I looked up to see what it was doing. The Flaming Sun Battle Axe turned into a red star and in the next moment, it flew straight back towards the ground!

“Peng!”

It was like a meteorite and when it struck the ground, it scattered fire all around. The damage was equivalent to that of Old K’s attack damage at that moment. Nearly 1000 yards of [Hero’s Mound] took the hit. All the heavy armor type players who had less than 4000 health died, while the Mages who didn’t open up their [Mana Shield] and the Healers had all been massacred. Even worse were the Archer types. They had no shields, and so a few extremely quick Archers reacted quickly and moved out of the range. However, there were definitely not a lot that escaped.

“Hong....”

The flames swept through the crowd and was like a calamity. At least 200 people had been instantly killed. Especially those extremely talented [Hero’s Mound] heavy armor type players who stood on the front lines. This unexpected attack dropped the morale way too much!

.....

“What...what is that?” The Seventh Tang only had critical health left. He was stupefied by the attack as he stared at the scorched ground. There, the Flaming Sun Battle Axe had formed a deep indentation into the ground. Old K knelt in front of the battle axe, gripped the handle and lifted it over his shoulder before looking over at the [Hero’s Mound] players with a smile.

Wang Ze Cheng trembled, “That.... that terrifying Hero Ran Min. That bastard, how did he get so strong? What exactly was that attack?”

On the side, the Second Division Vice Guild Master raised his dagger and wiped some sweat off, “Motherf*cker, its a 1000 yard AOE killing

skill. Luckily I used [Stealth] earlier, or else I definitely would've been killed.... This skill doesn't have an effect on anybody using [Stealth] or any fake death type skills."

Ai Ye said, "Healers, focus on bringing up frontline health. Mages, and Healers, listen up. you must maintain all shield type skills. Archers, if you have the chance, kill Old K. We cannot let him continue to live...."

"Yes sir!"

Wang Ze Cheng raised his long blade and said, "If you get the chance, I will charge at Old K to cut him off, while all the rest of you focus your fire on him and try to kill him!"

"Yes sir!"

.....

"They want to try and kill Old K...." Li Mu smiled.

Wang Jian said, "Then let's let Old K retreat for a bit. We can't leave him on the frontline the entire time...."

I shook my head, "No, I have a plan. Maybe letting him stay on the frontline will actually give us an advantage.... We're going to form a conical shaped Thorn Formation with our members and let Old K take all of the firepower. Afterwards, we'll lure all of the top players of [Hero's Mound] to chase after him. Old K will then use [Savage Jump] to escape. By then, they would've already entered our formation, and we can surround them and kill them. How does that sound?"

"What's a Thorn Formation?" Tang Xin asked.

Dancing Forest lightly smiled, "It's one of the different types of long-range or melee battles formation. We will rebuild a formation within a formation in our field. The heavy armored players are positioned in the front, the Assassins, Archers and Mages will be at the rear. We will target one enemy with a large amount of people. This must be what Guild Master meant.

I nodded, "That's it! Let's begin!"

“Alright!”

Soon, the deeper areas at the field of [Zhan Long] experienced a subtle change. Now, they just needed to wait for the enemies to take the bait. Old K held his battle axe as he dashed forward and with the use of [Whirlwind Slash] blew dozens of people away. He immediately backed away and as expected, almost a hundred heavy armor type players, Mages and Archers chased after him, desperately trying to stun Old K. Unfortunately for them, Old K activated the fourth advancement skill— [Berserker God], which ignored any kinds of magic, stun, and status effect and led the group of [Hero’s Mound] elites into the field of [Zhan Long]!

“Close the door!”

Wang Jian bellowed and Li Mu, Matcha and the rest all filled up the vacant space. The 100 men at the other side immediately left their field . We absolutely succeeded in beating up the enemies after blocked their retreat. The group of Lv 80+ fourth advancement elite players all collapsed and died. They were struck terribly by our attacks and all of them died within less than half a minute.

As I stared at the corpses that covered the ground, I couldn’t help but laughed. The special skill, [Flaming Sun], has a sixty minute cooldown time, which was something [Hero’s Mound] had no knowledge of. Actually, within the next sixty minutes, Old K would not possessed such horrifying power again. What a pity..... The members of [Hero’s Mound] didn’t understand that.....

.....

As time went past slowly, the terrifying consumption of the battlefield was increasingly hard for people to look at. [Zhan Long], [Enemies At The Gate], [Vanguard], [Hero’s Mound], and [Blood Contract], the five forces of power clashed and killed each other. The entire Desolate Cloud Swamp had lost it’s usual peacefulness.

Chapter 462: The Final Showdown

The fierce battle continued for over three hours and the number of people on both sides decreased as we fought. The total number of people in the Desolate Cloud Swamp had already shrunk to less than 20,000 people. It is conceivable that not many of the [Zhan Long] players are left, [Hero's Mound] suffered even more losses. A total of 50000+ [Hero's Mound] members were slaughtered until about 10000+ people were left. The tides of war had gradually turned and broken away from Q-Sword's control. The tired armies of Ba Huang City fought back desperately and finally saw the dawn of victory.

.....

"Gather some intel. How many [Hero's Mound] members are still standing in the field?"

Qing Qian stood in the midst of the corpses, the daggers in her hands were covered with blood, as she smiled and said, "[Hero's Mound] still has a total of 8100+ people in Ba Huang City while 7000 people in Desolate Cloud Swamp. [Zhan Long] still has 4000 people now. Haha. Brother Xiao Yao, it seems like we are winning....."

From afar, I stared at the Talisman badge on top Q-Sword's head and said, "If Q-Sword isn't killed then it doesn't count as winning."

As my Dragon Reservoir Sword trembled slightly, my eyes were locked on a person not far away. He was waving his sword and slaying the [Zhan Long] players. That person was no ordinary soldier, but Jian Tan, the elder of [Hero's Mound] and the right hand of Q-Sword!

"Dancing Forest!"

I bellowed, "Don't let Jian Tan leave!"

"Alright!" Dancing Forest raised her hand and shot a [Scattered Shot] while I also had the Azure Dragon Crossbow behind me to lock on Jian Tan as the target. Immediately, five sharp arrows darted towards Jian Tan!

“Eh?”

Feeling the descending danger, Jian Tan lifted his head abruptly and his sword immediately swept past Matcha's shield as he flipped and tumbled onto the grassland. Behind him were “PaPaPa” sounds of arrows dropping on the ground. The Azure Dragon Crossbow's targeting time is rather long and actually did not manage to attack him. However, when Jian Tan stood up, a “Pa” sound was heard as he was hit on the chest and he entered a temporary stunned state. He could dodge the Azure Dragon Crossbow but he could not dodge Dancing Forest's precise [Scattered Shot]

“ShaSha.....”

My Cloud Stepping Boots swept past the grassland, I activated [Haste] and dashed away. I opened my arms the instant the [Scattered Shot]'s stun effect wore off. The distance had shrunk enough and with a “Shua” sound, a dragon-shaped chain bound Jian Tan. As I exerted strength, this elder of [Hero's Mound] was immediately pulled in front of me. With a shocked expression, he retreated, and moved 5 yards backwards through the use of [Blade Rush]!

“Hua!”

As the sound of wind swept past, I had already expected this and followed as I dashed 5 yards forward. With a wave of my Dragon Reservoir Sword, [Wind Blade] fell directly on Jian Tan's shoulder!

“4718 ! ”

Jian Tan was surprised and hastily wielded his sword. He slashed from the side towards my waist.

“Heh.....”

I smiled and my Cold Iron Sword arrived as it broke through the wind. With a “Keng” sound, I blocked his attack accurately. When my Dragon Reservoir Sword rose up again, Jian Tan slid a step backwards and gulped down a health potion as he simultaneously began fighting. He sent forth his sword diagonally and knocked away the attack of my Dragon

Reservoir Sword, while the Cold Iron Sword in my left hand was forcefully sent towards his shoulder. As A “Keng” sound rang again, sparks of fire leapt forth. As expected, Jian Tan is indeed someone adept in the sword technique of the Northern Chen Family, his ability in continually defending is extremely high.

Without wasting much time, I crossed both of my swords and slashed. It made “Keng, Keng” sounds as my swords knocked Jian Tan’s sword away. Advancing forward, I kicked Jian Tan’s wrist with my battle boots and took the chance to land a slash on his arm. The sensation of pain caused Jian Tan to be unable to use his sword temporarily while I lowered my body and raised my swords together and revolved them rapidly, as I cut open Jian Tan’s armor abruptly with a “PaCha” soun. Blood splattered and an enormous damage number leapt up. It was an instant kill this time—

“3918 ! ”

“4737 ! ”

.....

When Jian Tan died, the surrounding [Hero’s Mound] players finally lost their will to fight. They were unable to continue fighting anymore. It was also at this moment, the sounds of bells suddenly rang in the air—

“Ding!”

System Notification : Player [Q-Sword] successfully killed [Misty Clouds], the player in possession of a Talisman, and succeeded in taking the [Warring States Talisman – Four]. Gather ten Talismans and you can claim the ownership of the garrison at the City Lord’s office!

.....

“F*ck.....”

Li Mu slashed the throat of a [Hero’s Mound] Archer while gazing at the distance, “ Misty was actually killed by Q-Sword and now Q-Sword has a total of 4 Warring States Talismans.”

“Does that mean.....Q-Sword will be the final winner?” Wang Jian

gritted his teeth as he spoke these words.

I held the long sword covered with blood and said, “Don’t worry about that. Everyone, follow me and target Q-Sword. Kill him and all the problems can be solved!”

“Okay!”

I led the remaining 4000 elites of [Zhan Long] and slaughtered the surrounding [Hero’s Mound] players. We immediately pounced on the distant army led by Q-Sword. They were now fighting a fierce battle with [Vanguard] and [Enemies At The Gate], which had already continued for four hours!

A little distance away, in the small Rock River Valley at Desolate Cloud Swamp, a group of players covered in blood and mud were engaging in a fierce battle. Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han were among these players. Simple had already been attacked until only a few bits of her health were left and had less than 10% of her health as she retreated. [Vanguard]’s players were miserably suppressed while the players of [Enemies At The Gate] had almost been all but scattered because of the attacks. [Zhan Long] prevailed on the battlefield to the south, but [Hero’s Mound] prevailed on the battlefield here. It couldn’t be helped. There were too many [Hero’s Mound] players assembled here, so that Jian Feng Han and Misty Clouds were powerless even if they had a strong will to overcome.

“Shua!”

Jian Feng Han suddenly spread his wings with his sword held high and struck with [Through the Clouds Slash]+[Skysaker Slash] together as he bellowed loudly, “Die!”

“Keng Keng Keng…….”

After three strikes, the glow from the [Wings of Freedom] were extremely radiant. Jian Feng Han exerted all his strength and Q-Sword was forced several steps backwards and hit a huge rock, making a “Crash” sound. With a “Shua” sound, the long sword in his hand revolved in the air. His weapon was actually knocked away by Jian Feng Han’s three successive strikes!

Seeing this, Jian Feng Han's will to kill grew even stronger. He held his sword and struck with a [Blade Rush]. As ripples under his feet surged, he activated his combo—[Exposed Point] !

Unfortunately, Q-Sword was a Grand Master, and not some noob that can be simply slayed by anyone. He tread on the mud with his battle boots and exerted his strength abruptly. In an instant, his body leapt up almost two meters, flipped in the air, and landed on top of the huge rock. Just when Jian Feng Han flew up with his sword in hand, Q-Sword gripped the handle of his own long sword as the corner of his mouth curved into a smile and yelled, "[Destruction Wolf Formation]!"

"Roarrrrrrr....."

Huge wolves were summoned and dashed towards Jian Feng Han's body. Simultaneously, the row of [Hero's Mound] Archers behind Q-Sword drew their bows and aimed at Jian Feng Han. It was obvious that this was a trap, but Jian Feng Han was blinded by his desire to win and so he was tricked!

"Oh no....."

Jian Feng Han's reaction was incredibly quick. The [Wings of Freedom] behind his back were retracted abruptly while his long sword blocked the front of his chest against the attacks of the [Destruction Wolf Formation]. He flipped and rapidly dove into the muddy water below. Although it was embarrassing, he dodged the numerous [Scattered Shots], and successfully escaped from death!

.....

"GaGaGa....."

Breathing heavily, Q-Sword's eyes were blood-red like Jian Feng Han. He had also killed until his eyes turned red. However, a team leader behind him said in a deep voice, "Boss, [Zhan Long]'s men are here! They are 200 yards away from us! Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu, these people are all still alive!

Q-Sword gritted his teeth and yelled, "Everyone, retreat with me!"

Abandoning the corpses of his guild members that covered the ground, Q-Sword held his sword and dashed towards the northern areas of the map. Four Talismans floated above his head. It looks like he had realized that this place is unfavorable to stay in. Once [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], [Enemies At The Gate] stuck on, his army with less than 7000 people would be slaughtered!

.....

Seeing Q-Sword flee with his 7000 men, Li Mu gnashed his teeth and shouted, "F*ck this. After killing so many of our men, he actually wants to run away? Brothers! Pursue and kill them!"

Qing Qian stared at me with eyes as clear as water and asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, should we pursue?"

I nodded, "Go! Kill them all!"

"Yes!"

.....

And so, a shocking scene happened. The 7000 [Hero's Mound] players were running desperately in the front while over ten thousand Ba Huang City players were pursuing from the rear. The players of [Enemies At The Gate] and [Vanguard] also pursued together. All the old and recent grudges would be settled at this moment!

"Kacha!"

I slashed a [Hero's Mound] Swordsman dead with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and continued pursuing with all my effort. This is the greatest chance for [Zhan Long] to obtain points as the escaping [Hero's Mound] players had almost no power to defend. We chased after them all the way to the northern areas, yet they did not even possess the will to fight. Within the short time of twenty minutes, the 7000 players were killed until only 2000 were left.

"ShaSha....."

As I stepped on the grassland, a forest was ahead of us. It seemed like it

was a new map that had appeared along with the City of the Four Noblemen as we had never seen such map on the world map in the past. Purple trees were in the forest and tasty-looking fruits grew on top of the huge purple trees. Of course, this place could not be as good as we had imagined, especially the instant I stepped into the forest. The sounds of bells resounded in my ear—

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have entered the sinful region—Purple Demon Forest!

Map Introduction: An ancient evil demon was buried beneath the soil of this forest. His strength is abnormally powerful. He was sealed by the gods and sleeps here. Legend had said that all the fruit trees in the Purple Demonic Forest were produced by the wrath of this evil demon. An extremely abnormal power dwells in this forest. If any player is killed here, their level will decrease by 10 levels and the percentage of these players dropping their weapons will increase by 50%!

.....

“I.....I think I have a bad feeling.....” Qing Qian stared at me who was right ahead and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, we.....we can’t pursue anymore, right? I have...I have a really bad feeling.....”

Li Mu bellowed, “What is there to be afraid of! If we drop ten levels lower, [Hero’s Mound] players will also drop ten levels lower. Let’s fight!”

Wolf also had a murderous look as he exclaimed, “ Yes, annihilate them! Otherwise, the many deaths of the people of Ba Huang City would be wasted!”

In the distance, Jian Feng Han, Sword Reborn and the others also lead their own guild members into the Purple Demonic Forest. As expected, no one was afraid. This was not for other causes, but to kill Q-Sword and the last strength of [Hero’s Mound] and never let the dignity of Ba Huang City be trampled on by them!

.....

The 4000+ men of [Zhan Long] headed into the forest rapidly, and raised their swords while killing the [Hero's Mound] players ahead. I walked at the front most point and already saw Q-Sword as his four streaks from the golden badges were very conspicuous.

However, at this moment, a weird noise of a mechanical spring resounded—

“GaDa.....GaDa.....”

The sound continued non-stop and soon the sound resounded throughout the whole forest. The next moment, within the grass, shrubberies, and dense forest and everywhere else, blood-red mechanical crossbow boxes emerged, and aimed at us with beams of bloody cold light. There were countless numbers of the mechanical crossbow boxes.

“Watch out!”

I could only shout out loud as the crossbows all moved and numerous arrows shot out. The arrows that were shot were not ordinary arrows but a type of cold iron arrow. The length of the arrow was around 50 centimeters and a blood-red vine dragged behind the feathers of the arrow. Such vines are poisonous and once a person comes into contact with such vines, the person's health would decrease continually. The speed of the decreasing health was even faster than the healing speed of the Healers!

“Oh no!”

Li Mu's face instantly turned pale, “Death God Arrow, this is the famous Death God Arrow..... So many.....”

.....

“PuPuPu.....”

Fresh blood splattered and Death God Arrows penetrated the bodies of the [Zhan Long] players one by one. The Death God Arrows appeared in every hidden corner of the dense forest while three Death God Arrows penetrated my chest. The heads of the arrows were nailed onto trees far behind which connected the poisonous vines to us. The vines were

covered with my blood and the blood of the [Zhan Long] players. Everyone was instantly poisoned and their health dropped rapidly.

The beams of white radiance scattered and almost in an instant, half of our people were killed. The crossbow boxes that shot the Death God Arrows still continued to shudder as Li Mu, Wolf, Qing Qian and the others collapsed on the ground. Their bodies were still linked up in the air by the Death God Arrows when they died.

“Brother Xiao Yao.....” Qing Qian helplessly cast a glance at me as blood flowed down from her chest, and dripped onto the grass.

.....

“Ah.....”

I was suddenly disillusioned as tears welled in my eyes. Yes, I have underestimated my enemy. Otherwise I would have never let everyone experience such humiliation. It was me who had no knowledge that [Hero's Mound] developed Death God Arrows, this kind of deadly weapon, within such a short time. Nor did I know that they had been ambushing people here.....”

All of [Zhan Long] began dying.

Farther away, Q-Sword held his long sword and waved it gently. Jian Feng Han collapsed on the ground as three of his Talismans were all taken by Q-Sword.

We were like lambs waiting to be slaughtered, waiting for the sentence of death. [Zhan Long] had increasingly less people. Including me, there were not even a few people left.

I glared at Q-Sword with bloodshot eyes and bellowed, “Q-Sword!”

Q-Sword stared at me indifferently, “Li Xiao Yao, this is the ending you want.....right?”

As I stared at the bodies of Qing Qian, Li Mu, Wolf, Matcha and the others, anger and regret filled my heart. I glared at Q-Sword and spoke distinctly, “This debt.. I will definitely settle this score with you and get

my revenge!”

Q-Sword drew his longsword slowly as the muscles on his face twitched. He seemed to be staring at me with a murderous expression as he spoke, “You settle this score with me? Then to whom shall I settle the score with? Do you know? I, Bei Cheng Feng, have never liked any girl in my life, but her.....Cang Tong. I was infatuated with Lin Wan Er, but what did I receive in the end? I receive the appearance of her back determined to leave. No matter how hard I try, no matter how I beg, she will eventually leave me. Li Xiao Yao, can you tell what is fair? Can you understand the pain of still loving her bitterly even when you know you will lose her? Therefore, I don’t want to be weak. I want to prove my worth and value. Annihilate [Zhan Long]! Even if I lose her, I must retain my dignity!”

“Kill all of [Zhan Long]!”

Q-Sword bellowed and the group of [Hero’s Mound] players drew their swords and killed the remaining defenseless [Zhan Long] players linked together on the poisonous vines. Blood spattered while my heart felt immense pain, as if I was being pierced by numerous trenchant knives!

“Now, it’s your turn.....”

After killing all players of [Zhan Long], Q-Sword looked at me apathetically with his long sword in hand as he stepped towards me.

.....

I struggled with all my effort, and hacked the poisonous vines that pierced through my body with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, yet there were no signs of the vines breaking.

“Stop struggling. Li Xiao Yao, this is the end of your [Zhan Long]... Hehe.....” Q-sword’s sneer became more and more scornful.

At this moment, one yard ahead of me, the air suddenly revolved, and swirled the fallen leaves on the ground!

“ShuaShua!”

A light suddenly glowed as data fluttered and danced, which condensed

into an attractive body with snowy white cloak fluttering behind her. A moonlight girl was instantly transported in front of me. The ring in between her fingers was enshrouded by the radiance of energy!

“Roar!”

Along with a furious roar, a huge dragon glided past forcefully in the air and smashed into the forest. The dragon’s breath was spat on the group of people behind Q-Sword and a fierce gush of wind swept past. The battle cloak of the girl fluttered along with the wind as she opened her eyes slowly and waved her left hand abruptly, with a “Ping” sound as she knocked away Q-Sword’s sword. She then spoke calmly, “Do you know? I have never wanted to protect someone this much.”

Q-Sword responded with a shocked expression, “Wan Er.....”

.....

On the west of the forest, a group of people suddenly emerged. Everyone of them had a dragon shaped badge that had the same appearance as [Zhan Long]’s badge materialized on their shoulder. These people belonged to the same guild—[Zhan Long: Defense Army]!

The guild badge materialized on Wan Er’s arm. The position—Guild Master!

Chapter 463: First Time Battling Together

Wan Er gripped her Dragon's Kiss dagger. With one hand, she raised her Saint Tier umbrella, and calmly looked at Q-Sword. She quietly said, "You secretly created all of these Death God Arrows behind my and Dong Cheng's back. Without a single word, you took the entire main guild to Ba Huang City. From the start, you calculated everything and bought intel from everywhere, and found out that there was a map like Purple Demon Forest. Q-Sword, I never realized that you had such a calculating heart. [Zhan Long]'s elites have all lost 10 levels. What is your goal?"

Q-Sword gripped his blade and responded quietly, "This is exactly what I wanted to achieve. There's no other explanation. Wan Er, if you want to kill me, then come at me! Today, between Xiao Yao and I, only one can survive!"

Wan Er raised her right arm, as light reflected off of the blade of Dragon's Kiss onto her pretty face. Her clear eyes were filled with killing intent as she smiled, "If it's like this, then I will declare war on [Hero's Mound] for the sake of [Zhan Long]! Dong Cheng, go save Li Xiao Yao, activate all of your spells!"

In the midst of the crowd, Dong Cheng dashed over and raised her staff. [Magma Abyss] exploded under my feet, and "Pi Pi Pa Pa", it burned away all of the Death God Arrows. These nearly hundred meter long poisonous vines had pierced and wrapped around my body. Even after that, I was continuously losing health. If I didn't have healing spells and lots of health, I probably would've died a long time ago.

.....

"Shua shua shua...."

Rays of healing light fell upon me. [Zhan Long: Defense Army]'s group of Healers all gave me heals, and my health jumped to full in seconds. Wan Er glanced back at me with a smile, "You good?"

I looked at all of the [Zhan Long] corpses on the ground. Li Mu, Matcha, and Qing Qian and everyone else all died. Our entire elite tier had

basically all died. These Death God Arrows had activated too suddenly, and had completely exceeded all of our expectations. Bitterness filled my heart. I softly muttered, "I'm not good at all. It's all my fault. I had completely missed the fact that there were only 7000 [Hero's Mound] players on the battlefield instead of the 8000 that he came with. I had missed 1000 whole people. I had missed why Sword Tears would suddenly disappear in the middle of such a huge battle. It was my carelessness, that.... that made [Zhan Long] suffer such a big humiliation and loss..."

Wan Er lightly punched my shoulder and said, "Idiot, don't blame yourself too much. This isn't your fault. Any other person would've fallen for the trap too...."

"Ok."

I turned around and swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Dou Qi began to gather the winds around me. Behind me, my War Swept Cloak was drenched in blood as it fluttered in the winds. There were even several holes made by the Death God Arrows in the cloth. Despite its tattered appearance, it seemed even more ferocious looking than before. I looked up at Q-Sword and gripped the handle of my sword even tighter. I yelled, "Q-Sword, you must die today!"

"Do you even have the skill to kill me?" Q-Sword smiled, and suddenly a large amount of [Hero's Mound] players appeared from the forest. Among them, Sword Tears walked up and stood beside Q-Sword with her long sword and smiled, "Brother, the plan succeeded. I just didn't think that Fan Shu City would have a guild like [Zhan Long: Defense Army]. We didn't know at all...."

Q-Sword glared at me and softly said, "For the sake of Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong secretly bought troops from Fan Shu City. To be honest, I should've known. This branch of [Zhan Long: Defense Army] never revealed their insignia to the outside world. They just secretly grinded their levels and did quests. Hmph, they're a level four guild, and they managed to hide from everyone so perfectly!"

Wan Er tilted her head and looked at Q-Sword and smiled back. "Aren't

you just as amazing? Before, when I joined [Hero's Mound] what was the promise you made to me? You promised that you would never lead your armies against [Zhan Long]. Now look at where we are. Nevermind about leading armies against them, now you're even secretly making Death God Arrows behind your two Vice Guild Masters back? I'm not a stingy person, but Q-Sword, the recipe for creating Death God Arrows was something that Dong Cheng and I invented. It really is karma. The first battle these Death God Arrows were used on was on [Zhan Long]. I really reap what I sow...."

Behind Wan Er, a female Knight walked over to her. The symbol of Vice Guild Master floated above her head. Yue Yao Yan, one of Fan Shu City's ranked Knights. She murmured, "Sister Can Tong, don't make yourself responsible. Get ready for battle, Q-Sword still has quite a few people. What should we do? Don't forget, anyone who dies here loses 10 levels...."

"Ok!"

Wan Er looked up at Q-Sword and smiled, "Little Purple will help me kill him...."

"Little Purple?" I turned around and looked at her.

Wan Er glanced at a pile of bones. A purple dragon was flapping its wings, and looked at me with human like eyes. It was a— Purple Dragon?

"Don't think too much about it...." Wan Er grinned, "Purple Kirin Dragon, it's a type of enormous dragon and is a Divine Tier BOSS pet. I found this treasure in Fan Shu City's Immortal Mountain Range. I've already secretly grinded it to Lv 79, and its stats are astonishing...."

I nodded and tightened my grip on my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, "Wan Er, we have to kill Q-Sword, or else I have no way of explaining myself to the dead brothers of [Zhan Long]. We must kill him!"

"Ok."

Both sides drew their swords. Q-Sword stood facing Wan Er and I, and he didn't seem to even have a sliver of intent of retreating.

"Keng!"

I reached behind my back and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. Without a sound, Wan Er dragged me into the middle of the crowd and quietly said, “Q-Sword’s Spark Armor increases his defense by 120% and lasts for 7 seconds. During this 7 seconds, it isn’t that easy to kill him, but I can have my archer’s use [Shield Breaker Shot] to decrease his defense. After that, I’ll command Little Purple to cut off Q-Sword and the rest of his army. When that happens, we’ll take the chance to kill him off. However, we have to be careful of Q-Sword’s counterattack. There’s also that Sword Tears. Her maneuvers are extremely strong. She can activate explosive attacks in seconds!”

“Got it! I’ll go first....”

“Alright....”

.....

The second Wan Er nodded, I already took my Flaming Tiger God and rushed out. I activated my [Wall of Dou Qi] and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] right at Q-Sword!

“Hong!”

“MISS ! ”

Expectedly, Q-Sword easily dodged the [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. After that, I commanded my Cold Iron Sword to fly out. I had already calculated the [Blade Spin]s path of attack, and “Shua!”, the blade spun at a 30 degree angle while I lunged at the right flank with my Dragon Reservoir Sword!

“That’s right, come at me!”

Q-Sword used one hand to raise his sword as he laughed and rushed forward. “Keng!” his blade rammed right into my Dragon Reservoir Blade. The two of us trembled from the force of the impact. Suddenly, my Cold Iron Sword pierced right through Q-Sword’s chest, bringing out 3678 damage. Such a high defense!

I didn’t show the slightest bit of hesitation. In a flash, my Dragon Reservoir swept towards my enemy’s lower half. Q-Sword’s maneuvers

and reaction time were all extremely high level, and he kicked at my wrist. At that moment, my entire arm went numb, and I nearly lost my grip on my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

I activated [Cloud Walker] and suddenly leapt up. With precise calculations, I grabbed the returning Cold Iron Sword. I then threw out 5 heavy slices with both swords!

“Keng keng keng....”

Sparks flew as Q-Sword succeeded in parrying three of the slices. The other two attacks cut down 7000 of his health.

“Sha sha....”

Miserably, Q-Sword retreated several steps. Bloody wings suddenly opened up behind Q-Sword, it was [Hawk Slash]!

“Ji ji”

In the midst of the sound of a bird’s cry, he basically landed a slice right onto my chest plate at the speed of light. Q-Sword’s handsome face was filled with rage. He threw an [Afterglow Slash], and stunned me for 1.5 seconds. On top of that, it dealt quite a bit of damage —

“3418 ! ”

“3531 ! ”

Such a terrifying bastard! His attack doesn’t seem to be even the slightest bit lower than mine!

1.5 seconds was enough. Q-Sword smiled at me and activated the combo —[Six Directional Thunder]!

“Roar!”

My Flaming Tiger God raised its claws as it pounced forward. “Peng!” it landed an attack right on Q-Sword’s blade. At that moment, the skill actually disappeared. This was my one-time two front attack, and it actually succeeded!

Surprise flashed across Q-Sword’s face. He turned around and pushed

back the Flaming Tiger God. With a roar, he stabbed his long sword into the crowd, and activated [Destruction Wolf Formation]. Within 10 yards of him, rabid wolves suddenly ran out. Wan Er was originally planning on reinforcing me, but ended up opening up her iron umbrella to block the attack. In the end, she was only an Assassin, how could she take on Q-Sword's attack!

At the same time, countless Archers and Mages behind Q-Sword began to open fire right at me!

Right as the stun vanished, I suddenly growled and activated my special skill—[Dragon Transformation]! Dragon power began to emanate from my skin, and my armor began to shift and writhe into Dragon Armor. The roars of a dragon emerged from my throat as my battle robes all fluttered. After I received a [Grip of Compassion] from the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] Healers, I charged right at Q-Sword.

My body spun in the air and I suddenly swung out my swords, releasing 7 slices!

The first attack smacked right into Q-Sword's blade, and forced him to retreat. My strength had increased exponentially. Following that first slice, the 6 other attacks landed right on his shoulder. However, there were too many people healing him, and in that moment, I couldn't kill him.

"Be careful! Sword Tears has locked onto you!" Wan Er said.

I gritted my teeth, "I'm risking it all. Now that Sword Tears is trying to kill me, that means that Q-Sword is also going to attack as well. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, support me. I'll take Sword Tears attacks, you guys help me kill Q-Sword!"

"Alright!"

.....

"Grr....."

In the midst of my dragon roars, the Purple Kirin Dragon suddenly descended from the sky. "Peng!" it landed right in the forest. It threw a

Dragon's breath and its sharp claws right onto the crowd behind Q-Sword. I silently cheered it on. The timing of the attack was just too great. The Purple Dragon's attack had diminished at least half of Q-Sword's supporting heals and attacks. Our chance has come!

On the flank, Sword Tears face froze, and she charged right at me with her blade raised. Suddenly, her blade turned into flower and frost began to crawl up the blade. It was an ice type attack. Within seconds, 6 cuts appeared on my armor. It really was a high level explosive attack from a top tier swordsman!

“2711 ! ”

“3102 ! ”

“2528 ! ”

“2718 ! ”

“2577 ! ”

“3019 ! ”

Within seconds, my health dropped to the bottom. A smile appeared on Q-Sword's face. He suddenly passed by me and punched my shoulder. At the same time, his blade brushed against my neck. Motherf*cker, you want to kill me like this?!

I gulped down a health potion and activated [Dragon Knight's Recovery] and took the pain. I then swept out my Cold Iron Sword with my left hand. Sword Tears practically rammed into me, and her blade pierced through my Magic Spite armor. I on the other hand, struck the Cold Iron Sword's hilt right into her back. “Peng!” her armor split, and blood began to spill out, staining her cloak.

“Wu...” Sword Tears cried out.

I spun around and landed a kick onto the sword, and made a retreat. I then threw a cut with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Q-Sword had no way of dodging. I sliced right into his shoulder. He was also risking it all. With a jolt, he activated [Fierce Tiger Burst] and suddenly, a tiger

appeared on his blade!

.....

“Oh no....” my health was far too low to take a hit like that.

Right at that moment, a red glow flashed across the Dragon's Kiss blade. “Keng!” it knocked away Q-Sword's blade. Wan Er's [Gouge] succeeded! In the next moment, the little miss Cang Tong's most terrifying and explosive attack appeared. It was [Chain Attack] + [Twin Blade Harmony]+[Flying Dagger]+[Ice Pick Whirlpool].

“Pig!” She glanced at me, “Hurry up, [Great Realm of Desolation]!”

I understood, [Great Realm of Desolation] could decrease the target's healability!

I suddenly opened my palm and threw a [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

Right after the attack landed, Dong Cheng opened her snowy palm, and lightning began to accumulate on her finger tips. It was [Lightning Finger] + [Magma Lance] + [Magma Abyss]. At that moment, Q-Sword's body was crushed by Dong Cheng's chain of spells. Seven dazzling Warring States Talisman's dropped. On top of that, a Saint Tier bracelet and a pile of 7 – 8 other equipments also dropped. One of them was a superior Emperor Tier equipment.

*Allenwa note:HAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!!!!

Yup, Q-Sword's drops really are great!!

Chapter 464: Hermit God Certificate

Wan Er picked up the seven Talismans with one hand and placed them all in her bag. Dong Cheng Yue attacked with the support of Yue Yao Yan, and cast several [Magma Abyss]-es. Sword Tears howled in pain and collapsed while the purple dragon wrecked havoc in the forest. [Hero's Mound] has already used up all their Death God Arrows and have lost the power to fight against [Zhan Long: Defense Army].

“Retreat!”

The Guild Master of the second division [Hero's Mound], Ai Ye, held his sword up and let out a furious roar, “I received a message from Guild Master, and he commanded us to retreat. This battle has no meaning anymore. Retreat out of Purple Demon Forest and search for the chance to return to the city!”

Yue Yao Yan looked towards me and asked, “Main Guild Master.....what should we do? Pursue?!”

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword tightly and said deeply, “Kill! Confirm that their Death God Arrows are depleted. If they really are used up, then pursue!”

Yue Yao Yan nodded and answered, “Yes, confirmation completed. A total of 11478 were set up here. Only 47 have not activated, the rest have depleted their arrows and poisonous vines!”

“Alright! Pursue!”

“嗯！”

“Yes!”

.....

At the side, Wan Er carried the seven Talismans and handed them to me with a smile, “There you go! All 10 Talismans had been gathered..... We can now summon the Shen Ron and make a wish.....”

I looked at her speechlessly, “You still are in the mood to joke.....”

“Sniff, sniff.....”

Wan Er looked at me with a hurt expression as she pouted and said, “I know you must be blaming me for not leading the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] here earlier to help you. However, you have also seen the result now. I can’t appear too early, otherwise my 3000 men would disappear like a cow statue made of mud into the sea and the whole situation would still remain the same. I must let Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City fight until the every effort is exerted, then I can rely on my 3000 people to save you in the critical situation. Actually, I had planned for the worst.....”

“What plan?” I looked at her with a smile. At this moment, Wan Er was like a little girl that had done something wrong. She is an explosion of cuteness.

Wan Er looked up at me with beautiful eyes filled with determination as she spoke, “The worst scenario I had in mind was you get killed by Q-Sword while I lead the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] and kill Q-Sword. In the end, I would have to take the City of the Four Noblemen and offer it to [Zhan Long].....”

I did not speak but outstretched my arms and held the beautiful Missy in my arms, and hugged her very tightly.

Wan Er also hugged me tightly and rubbed her pretty face against my neck as she spoke with a chuckle, “Alright already, people are watching.....”

At the side, Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head and laughed, “Yo. It’s alright. You guys continue. We are just the passerbys in you two’s lives. Since you two are in love, why care about the eyes of a passerby.....”

I released Wan Er and accepted the seven Talismans from her hands. The instant I took them, the sounds of bells resounded in the air—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations to player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai” for gathering all ten of the Warring States Talismans. Through these Talismans, you can receive the ownership of the garrison at the office of

the owner of the main city!

.....

I loaded all the Talismans into my bag and glanced back at the [Hero's Mound] players that were scattered and fleeing in the forest. I gnashed my teeth and said, "We are not in a hurry to return to the city. Everyone, attack with me. We must take revenge on [Hero's Mound], otherwise the 4000 brothers of [Zhan Long] cannot lose their levels in peace. Er.... please don't tell me you guys.....you guys can't harm [Hero's Mound]?"

Yue Yao Yan burst out in laughter and spoke as she trembled with laughter, "Guild Master, what a joke! I originally had no relationship with [Hero's Mound]. I just got to know Beauty Cang Tong in a quest, where I was pulled in to be the Vice Guild Master of the Defense Army. All the people of the Defense Army have no relationship with [Hero's Mound]. Don't worry. We are all true [Zhan Long] players!"

"Great. Pursue and kill with me!"

"Alrighty!"

I held my Dragon Reservoir Sword and through the advantage of my speed, I charged forward with Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, Yue Yao Yan and the others. It was confirmed that all the Death God Arrows had all been depleted. Q-Sword, Sword Tears, Jian Feng Han, Simple, Yan Zhao Warrior, Misty Clouds, all these people had died in the battle. No one in this territory of Ba Huang City could threaten my life therefore pursuing and slaughtering [Hero's Mound] in the Purple Demon Forest and letting them die, so they dropped ten levels lower would be the best compensation for Qing Qian, Li Mu, Wolf, Matcha, and the others.

Shooting stars materialized on my sword and I forcefully threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. The 5% Dragon Power effect of my Dragon Reservoir Sword splattered out and a chain of triple damage numbers dazzled the eyes that were looking. There was even a critical attack that was added into some strikes, leading to some damage numbers of nearly 35,000 which was very pleasing. Seeing such a damage number, the terror stricken [Hero's Mound] players were defeated in a landslide.

“PuChi!”

My Cold Iron Sword pierced through many people’s chests and continued attacking by revolving in the air under my control. My sword became like a flying Body-Crusher that even made Wan Er purse her red lips as she watched and remarked, “This [Blade Spin] is really a BUG like skill

I grinned, “It can’t be helped. Frost personally taught me Dragon City’s ancient godly skill.....”

“I despise you.....” Wan Er said jokingly.

“Muah, muah!”

Wan Er was speechless.

.....

We pursued them all the way until we left the Purple Demon Forest. Q-Sword’s 7000+ men that had ambushed us here were decimated by the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] until only 3000+ were left. There is only one reason for this result. Actually, many of these people knew Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. All [Hero’s Mound] players knew Cang Tong and Cang Yue, the two beautiful Vice Guild Masters. And now, these two banner like famous beauties are pursuing them with an army and also including me. The result was obvious. The leaderless [Hero’s Mound] absolutely had no power to defend. Even Wang Ze Cheng was killed by Dong Cheng’s [Thunderbolt Finger]. Ai Ye and Ji Yuan, those lackeys, were crushed by Yue Yao Yan and her men with entirely no strength to fight back.

“ShaSha.....”

Standing outside the Purple Demon Forest, I took a deep breath and confirmed with the system that [Zhan Long: Defense Army] was a division of [Zhan Long], thus building an official connection between our guilds. Afterwards, “Finally there’s an end to this.... I never thought that this Battle for the City would end up like this. This was completely out of my expectations....”

Wan Er's long hair flew in the wind, and she gave me a sweet smile, "Either way, the final result was pretty good. After all, [Zhan Long] gathered all ten Talismans. You haven't disappointed the hopes of Melon, Li Mu, and Wolf. Everyone just lost 10 levels. Most of their equipment is still there. They don't even have to take their equipment off and they can use their Lv 80+ stats to grind their levels. It shouldn't be a problem for them."

I quietly said, "That's true. I was just worried that a big half of [Zhan Long]'s main guild lost 10 levels. It's basically decreased most of our strength. Even if we did get the player camp, I'm afraid that it'll be coveted by guilds like [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon]. At that point, what army are we supposed to use to defend against them? We're lower than everyone else by 10 levels, we took way too much damage this time..."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile. She crossed her arms, and propped up her two peaks. In a very mature tone, she said, "With Dong Cheng and I here, and the existence of [Zhan Long: Defense Army], what are you worried about? Besides, you're a Guild Master and you're ranked number one in Ba Huang City. You still have your level and equipment. With such a renowned person here, who would dare to touch [Zhan Long]'s guild base?"

My heart softened and I turned around, "Having you and Dong Cheng here really makes me relieved. Come, hand over [Zhan Long: Defense Army] to Yue Yan Yao, and I'll add you and Dong Cheng into [Zhan Long]'s main guild. I've left the Vice Guild Master position for you.... Li Mu's been shamelessly asking to be Vice Guild Master from me and I've always denied him. Look...."

"But, I heard a different version of this story. Clearly, it was because Li Mu didn't want to be Vice Guild Master? Even if you were the one shamelessly begging them, they wouldn't want to be the Vice Guild Master either way...."

"I can't love anymore...."

“.....”

Dong Cheng giggled beside us, “Alright, Wan Er and I will join the main guild. After that, we’ll head out soon. The [Defense Army] will protect you on your return to Ba Huang City and as you complete the quest. You have been online for too long!”

“Yup!”

Everyone turned around, and we walked around the Purple Demon Forest and ran straight towards Ba Huang City. Because I had all 10 Talismans, I could leave the Grave of the Warring States map. On the way there, we saw quite a few Ba Huang City players killing monsters. Once they saw how I had collected 10 Talismans above my head, almost nobody dared to come near.

The sun began rising in the east, and the first rays of sunlight fell upon me. Wan Er opened up her iron umbrella, and gracefully stepped across the grass. She walked right next to me. She raised her hand and yelled out, “Yue Yao Yan, can you clear out any obstacles we have in the road ahead of us? If there is any person who seems to have an interest in the Talismans, kill them immediately!”

Yue Yao Yan nodded with a smile, “Alright, understood!”

Just like that, we passed through Ba Huang City Forest. Within 40 minutes, we reached Ba Huang City and I had reached the safe area. I took Wan Er, Dong Cheng and the rest of the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] into the Duke’s palace. I had to carry the Talismans while they destroyed their Fan Shu City records and switched their home bases to Ba Huang City. That way, they could reside in Ba Huang City, and use Return City Scrolls to bring them back to here, rather than Fan Shu City.

When I arrived before the Duke, he immediately recognized me, “Oh, brave young man, what kind of good news do you bring to me this time?”

I took out the ten Talisman and said, “My Lord, I request to receive a garrison!”

“Okay!”

Coldness flashed in Duke Luo Lei's eyes as he said, "Are you sure garrison 0001 will be your guild [Zhan Long]'s garrison?"

"Yes!"

With a "Ding" sound, the confirmation was completed and an input system appeared on the interface. Duke Luo Lei spoke, "Young man, you must rename the City of the Warring States, otherwise your request cannot be accepted!"

I pondered and typed the two words, "Dragon's Den" and the sounds of bells instantly resounded in the sky above the main city—

"Ding!"

System Notification : Congratulations to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai's guild [Zhan Long] for receiving the first player garrison. The city is named [Zhan Long (LV-0)]. As player Xiao Yao Zi Zai is also the MVP player of this Battle for the City, therefore he shall receive double rewards, level +2, Charm+30, CBN battlenet points+ 20000 point. Due to the guild damage caused during the fierce battles, all players of [Zhan Long] shall receive an additional reward : level+1. Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai receives the final reward : [Hermit God Certificate]!

The holders of the Talisman—

Number 1 Talisman : Soaring Dragon→Baili Ruofeng→Jian Feng Han→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 2 Talisman : Jian Feng Han→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 3 Talisman : Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 4 Talisman : Misty Cloud→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 5 Talisman : Jian Feng Han→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 6 Talisman : Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 7 Talisman : Yan Zhao Warrior→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 8 Talisman : Yan Zhao Warrior→Q-Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 9 Talisman : Liu Yin→Bai Mo Yan→Wang Ze Cheng→Q-

Sword→Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Number 10 Talisman : Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Chapter 465: Electric Arc Sword

‘Hermit God’s Certificate?’

I was shocked. It was a white scroll. After opening it up and looking at the contents, I was surprised. A Job-Change certificate!

[Hermit God’s Certificate] The Hermit God. Legend has it that the Hermit God was one of the protectors of the world. The Hermit God is omnipotent; equipped with the power of concealment and the ability to call forth the wind and rain. It is said that every empire sought after his genius. However, the Hermit God disappeared from the mundane world and hid himself in a place that no one could find. Using this scroll, will show you the way and grant you the right to seek the legendary Hermit God. The user would receive his legacy and become the Descendant of the Hermit God. Job Requirement: Assassin. Level Requirement: Level 80.

.....

Without even thinking, I handed the certificate to Wan Er and said, “A hidden job advancement for Assassins. Go change jobs. Maybe you’ll get some OP skills or something.”

Wan Er widened her eyes, “Eh, I just joined the guild so I shouldn’t be taking this for myself. This won’t be fair to Qing Qian and Song Han.”

I hushed her, “Qing Qian and Little Wolf both have a lot of merit but it doesn’t amount to what you’ve done for Zhan Long. Who else could give Zhan Long a whole city? Don’t forget, it was you who single-handedly got me the city. A contribution like this far surpasses anyone else’s contribution by a few fold already. You also got the guild to Lv 4. Ah! I’ll let you join the Zhan Long Hall? Immediately as well; you’ve earned it!

“Then.... Fine.....”

Wan Er held the Job Change Certificate and gazed at me, obviously pleased. It was easy to see that she’s been wanting to change to a hidden class for a long time. Everyone covets hidden classes for their OP skills. For example, my [Blade Spin] and [Dou Qi Wall] are basically stronger

versions of [Flying Sword] and [Dou Qi Armor] respectively. Even a blind person can see the difference between them.

A system notice popped up: 'The game will be going through a 10 hour maintenance in 30 minutes.' This was just what we needed – a chance to rest after the battle.

.....

Seeing that the guild was lifeless, I left a message for everyone: "Thank you everyone for your contributions in this fight. The battle in the Purple Demon Forest was under my command and, due to my carelessness, we suffered heavy losses. I will take responsibility for everything so I hope everyone can forgive me. However, we have successfully captured the city so that's a big blessing in disguise. It's all thanks to everyone's efforts that we were able to achieve this. Also, the two beauties, Cang Tong and Cang Yue, have since joined our guild and brought over the brother guild – the [Zhan Long Guards]. Everyone.... I'll see you guys in ten hours. All of the spoils in the battle were put into the guild storage. We'll let the players who lost the most levels have a priority during the item distribution. In the spoils there's 1 Saint Tier item, 15 Valkyrie Tier items, 147 Emperor Tier items, and 1024 Purple Tier items. I don't think that anyone will be disappointed. Okay. I'm tired, so I'll be off first."

After that, Wan Er and Dong Cheng both greeted the guild members. After turning in all of the Barbarian Maiden Handkerchiefs for experience, they were both mentally and physically exhausted. Right now, I'm Lv 88 so I should be the highest leveled in Ba Huang City....

.....

I got offline and took my cellphone out, giving Li Mu, Qing Qian, Matcha, Song Han and the others a call. It's a good thing that they were used to losing levels already. Although, It's easy grinding those lost ten levels back, I know that inside, they're a bit depressed about it. The least I could do was to compensate them.

In the evening, I accompanied Wan Er and Dong Cheng to the cafeteria for a meal. Tang Qi was there too.

“Pa.....”

Tang Qi placed his rice bowl next to Dong Cheng. Immediately, Dong Cheng shot him a glare, stood up with her tray and came to my side, urging, “Move over a bit....”

I moved over a bit towards Wan Er, allowing Dong Cheng to sit down next to me. No matter what, she wouldn't sit with Tang Qi.

Tang Qi felt embarrassed and rubbed his nose, “Did I.... Did I do something wrong again?”

“What do you think?” Wan Er glared at him. “All 4000+ members of [Zhan Long]'s main force lost at least 10 levels, do you have anything to say about this”

Tang Qi embarrassingly nodded, “Fine. I admit that I'm at fault here. However, I was just doing my job as one of [Hero Mound]'s Elders. I can't just go and leak a highly classified secret to someone else. Although I feel sorry about what happened to [Zhan Long], I can't just sell Q-Sword out for Xiao Yao.

Wan Er was quiet, “Yeah I know... We're not blaming you for that. However, we now walk different roads. Dong Cheng and I are part of [Zhan Long] now while you're part of [Hero Mound]. After the battle in the Purple Magic Forest, [Zhan Long] and [Hero Mound] will not be able to get along.”

Tang Qi looked towards me, “Li Xiao Yao. You're a man right? Don't tell me you're this petty?”

I put my chopsticks down, looked at Tang Qi and smiled, “Right I'm a man. Even if Q-Sword killed me and made me lose 10 levels, I wouldn't complain at all; it would only mean that I was inferior to him. However..... Q-Sword chose to fight in the Purple Magic Forest and attacked all 4000 of my guildmates, causing them all to lose ten levels each. I will never forgive him for that. He can obviously choose to fight elsewhere but he chose to fight in the Purple Magic Forest. He must've had some sort of plan in mind. In short, [Zhan Long] will never be friends with [Hero's Mound]. This is the promise that I made to my 4000 guildmates, and my

responsibility as their Guild Master!”

Dong Cheng raised her brows and said, “Right. You’re a member of [Hero Mound]. But don’t forget, we’re your friends too. You can follow Q-Sword’s orders, but don’t neglect your friend’s safety. In this Territory battle, [Hero Mound] completely disregarded everything and destroyed [Zhan Long]. This was only a territory war, it was too much.

Tang Qi became silent. He stirred the food in his bowl and sighed, “Sorry. That’s all I can say. I can’t betray Q-Sword. I’m basically someone who lives in a well. Li Xiao Yao, you and I are friends. Q-Sword and I are friends as well. I can’t just choose one and betray the other. At the same time, I’m a part of [Hero Mound].....”

“So you’ve decided....” I smiled.

Wan Er also pursed her lips and said, “From what I know, a real friend will use everything they have to protect you, no matter if you’re right or wrong. They won’t put on a fake face and distance themselves from you even knowing you did something wrong. The meaning of the word “friends” is very simple – someone worth protecting. So Tang Qi, don’t you dare insult the honor of friendship. Li Xiao Yao is not your friend. Dong Cheng and I both left the guild and brought backup to rescue [Zhan Long]. This is something that you couldn’t do because you don’t understand the true meaning behind the word ‘friends’.”

Tang Qi was at a loss for words.

I lightly bumped Wan Er’s shoulder and smiled, “Okay Okay. That’s enough. We shouldn’t press Tang Qi. I mean, the results weren’t that disastrous. At least we have the city and most of the [Hero Mound] members lost ten levels as well. [Zhan Long] took a big hit, but [Hero Mound] was not that well off either.”

Wan Er smiled and softly said, “Okay. Got it. Eat quickly and then get a good night’s sleep. There is a maintenance right now so don’t go online. I’ll see you tomorrow!”

“Okay. Dragon City is only level 1 right now. We need to develop it.....”

“Okay. I’ll see you tomorrow then!”

“Okay!”

.....

Returning to the dorms, I slept to my heart’s content until noon the next day. I woke up when Wan Er called me to tell me that we were eating out for lunch.

After changing into a fresh set of clothing, I went downstairs to the girl’s dorms, before noticing that there was a brand new white A4 sports car parked there. Wan Er stood next to the car in a elegant dress looking like a car show girl

I immediately walked towards them and couldn’t help but smile, “This....”

Wan Er nodded and twirled the car keys around her finger, “That’s right. This is your car....”

Dong Cheng ran over with a small bag, “Let’s go! Brother Xiao Yao will take us out for a spin!”

I caught the keys that Wan Er threw to me and sat in the driver’s seat. My own car. It already feels different. I looked back and asked, “Where are we eating in the afternoon?”

“Hui Huang Restaurant”

“Okay!”

As expected, when we arrived at the restaurant, Lin Tian Nan was waiting for us with a feast prepared. After the meal, I stood up and was preparing to leave when Lin Tian Nan called out, “ Li Xiao Yao, don’t be so hasty. Come to my room for a bit; I have something to give you.”

“Huh?” Surprised, I lead the two girls, following after Lin Tian Nan.

We entered hotel room 705 and the guards immediately closed the door. Lin Tian Nan proceeded to retrieve a silver box from under the bed, entered the passcode and opened up the case. Inside, there was a black lump that looked like a sword’s hilt.

“This is?” I was startled.

Lin Tian Nan muttered and said, “This is a weapon that the Tian Xin group started making three years ago. A high quality sharp blade for close combat.....”

“High quality sharp blade?” I laughed, “Don’t joke around. I don’t see any sharp blade.”

Lin Tian Nan showed a rare smile, “This was created using a new type of technology. Only upon using it will you feel its strength. Li Xiao Yao, how about you give it a try?”

“Huh?”

I held the hilt and sent some of my energy into it. I felt my hands shake. The energy within the hilt was quickly spinning as well and a blue colored light appeared. “Shua.” A dark blue blade appeared from the hilt. It shot out like a bullet! What technology!”

(TLN: Is this a lightsaber? o-o)

“This.....” Wan Er was shocked.

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “This was created by utilizing lasers in order to excite the activities of the ions within the metal blade. This creates a pseudo hollow cathode effect that discharges the polarizing electromagnetic energy waves within the ions and shoot them out to surround the blade. The theory is similar to how the nerves in our bodies create a reflex that moves our body parts when it senses something. The sword was named the Electric Arc Sword due to the theory. The sword was created such that it takes in the account of the reflex of the user. It is most likely that only practitioners are able to use this. This was basically made just for you.”

I nodded, “Uhhh. Okay....”

Lin Tian Nan gave Wan Er a pampering look and then gazed back at me, “Ouyang Chuan is a Yangyan level expert. You need to train harder. This Electric Arc Sword will only increase your chances of winning by a bit. Maybe it’ll be able to cut through his Yangyan armor, maybe not. I don’t

know. There wasn't a single Yangyan expert that would let me try.....”

I was speechless.

I took the Electric Arc Sword and put it around my waist so it could be easily drawn out. Now I have three different types of weapon – an M9 handgun, two army knives and the electric arc sword. They're all hidden from public view to prevent any misunderstandings.

.....

After bidding farewell to Lin Tian Nan, I returned to Liu Hua University and logged on. It's time to check out our base!

Dragon's Den , here I come!

Chapter 466: SubZero City

“Shua!”

I appeared in Ba Huang City after getting online, and repaired my equipments. After I went straight to the guild warehouse and stored all the equipments that we got from the Warring States battle. This was the least I can do as the Guild Master.

“Ding.....”

Wan Er sent a message, “Dong Cheng and I will be waiting in the northern plaza. Let’s go to the new [Zhan Long] territory together. Since it is only a Lv 1 territory right now, we can’t teleport there. We can only walk over.....”

“Ugh”

After inviting the miss and Dong Cheng to my party, I walked over to the northern plaza. Wan Er was already standing there in her refined armor. Her cape fluttered as she revealed her long white legs that could cause any men to suffocate. Dong Cheng beside her was wearing a low-cut Mage robe that revealed her chest. Damn. This is too much for me. Especially when two top class beauties like Wan Er and Dong Cheng are wearing these equipments. They were bewitching to the point where countries would go to war just for them.

“Let’s go?” I smiled.

Wan Er nodded. “Ah. Ba Huang City’s rankings were refreshed. Let’s see....”

“Okay....”

I opened up the ranking list and as expected, the rankings in Ba Huang City changed dramatically.

1. Xiao Yao Zi Zai [Level 88] Dragon City Guardian
2. Cang Tong [Level 87] Assassin
3. Yan Zhao Warrior [Level 86] Swordsman

4. Cang Yue [Level 86] Mage
5. Misty Clouds [Level 86] [Four Symbol Guardian]
6. Han Bei Song [Level 85] Swordsman
7. Soaring Dragon [Level 85] Mage
8. Drunken Spear [Level 85] Nature's Knight
9. Matchless Hero [Level 84] Swordsman
10. Heart of Fire [Level 84] Mage

.....

After that chaotic battle in the Purple Demon Forest, the level rankings in Ba Huang City drastically changed. Top level players like Jian Feng Han, Simple, General Li Mu, Qing Qian, General Wang Jian, and Hero Ran Min all lost 10 levels, and thus left the rankings, while players like Wan Er and Dong Cheng joined. Ba Huang City all entered the top ten rankings. There's was no other way, after all, those two are so strong. It was because of this that I was anticipating their addition to [Zhan Long] so much, since they would increase our reputation even more. Cang Tong and Cang Yue were the two most popular players in Fan Shu City. Like this, they'll probably become symbols of [Xhan Long] and will be extremely helpful for us when we recruit new talents.

I looked at the rankings and silently said, "Even players like Heaven's Hero, Heart of Fire made it into the top ten. It's completely unfair.... If Melon, Wang Jian and the others didn't lose 10 levels, how else would Heaven's Hero, that trash get in...."

Wan Er gripped her little umbrella and walked beside me. She smiled to me, "It's no matter. Melon and the others can raise their levels up really quickly. Oh, that's right, the Hermit God Job Change Certificate Quest is S-Tier. Do you want to come?"

"S-Tier?"

I thought about it for a second, then shook my head, "Nah, I'm good. An S-Tier quest difficulty is too low. You and Dong Cheng can finish it. Why

don't you take Melon, Li Mu, Old K Wang Jian, Tang Xue, and Dancing Forest, let them grind a level....”

“Yup yup, I understand....”

I nodded, afterwards I opened up the officers screen, and with my Guild Master status, I opened up the forum and [Zhan Long Hall]. Very soon, [Zhan Long Hall] had 3 names listed

Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Reason for Entry: Founder of [Zhan Long], Current Guild Master

2. Yue Qing Qian, Reason for Entry: Ranked Third in the Battle of Jiu Li City and Ba Huang City, Current Vice Guild Master

3. Cang Tong, Reason for Entry: Ranked Second in Heroes Rising Tournament, Ranked Among the Top Ten in CBN Battlenet, and lead [Zhan Long: Defense Army] to win the Dragon's Den

.....

“Ding!”

Guild Chat Announcement: Congratulations Player [Cang Tong] for becoming the third person to enter [Zhan Long Hall], Reason for Entry: Ranked Second in Heroes Rising Tournament, Ranked Among the Top Ten in CBN Battlenet, and led [Zhan Long: Defense Army] to win over Dragon's Den! Authorized: Xiao Yao Zi Zai (Guild Master).

At that moment, the guild chat suddenly got lively—

General Li Mu said, “Ha ha, the beauty Cang Tong has entered [Zhan Long Hall]! I'm so jealous! Exactly when can I enter [Zhan Long Hall]. I can't wait....”

Qing Qian said, “He he, Sister Cang Tong has finally joined [Zhan Long]! I'm so happy, wu, you're even Vice Guild Master too....”

Dancing Forest said, “Fan Shu City's two most beautiful girls are joining [Zhan Long]. This really is a great leap for us! Guild Master is amazing, he actually managed to seduce two beauties ...”

Wan Er's face turned bright pink as she said in the guild chat, “That's

not it. It's just that Li Xiao Yao and I had an agreement a while ago. All I did was dig out some high level players in Fan Shu City to join [Zhan Long: Defense Army], so Dong Cheng and I ended up coming late. I hope that everyone won't blame us for the tardiness...."

Wolf smiled, "No matter what you say, didn't the little miss join [Zhan Long] because of Brother Xiao Yao?"

Wan Er's face became even redder, "I, I..."

Dong Cheng giggled, "Hehe, are you guys just gonna tease our Vice Guild Master like this? Alright already, I admit, I joined [Zhan Long] because of Brother Xiao Yao too. I think of him day and night. I'm just waiting for the day that his mood is right and he becomes friends with me...."

General Bai Qi smiled, "No matter, I can be your friend too! Your male friend!"

Dong Cheng gave a crooked smile, "First of all, Bai Qi, you bastard, I'm not interested in your looks. Next, your personality is far worse than Brother Xiao Yao's. And for another, you can't even beat me in games. How are you supposed to be my boyfriend? F minus, get lost!"

General Bai Qi resentfully muttered, "Motherf*cker, that was too terrible. I'm going to go to a bar to drink my sorrows away and I'm not leaving until I'm drunk...."

Annoyed, General Wang Jian said, "Isn't this the prelude to four men getting drunk before they stumble home?"

I couldn't help but smile, "To be honest, with Wang Jian and Li Mu's looks, it shouldn't be hard for you guys to find girlfriend's right? You definitely can't get serious with a girl you met from the bar, or else you'll lose in the end.... Right now, [Zhan Long] has around 20,000 players. Girls from all over the country are here, and there are quite a few beauties from Yang Zhou. Do you guys want me to play matchmaker for you all?"

General Li Mu laughed, "Wang Jian that old bastard doesn't have to

worry. He's the idol of a lot of pretty girls in the first division. He can pick and choose whoever he wants to and have a little "pa pa pa" fun. However, Bai Qi and I, sigh. We're in the main guild. You must understand that 97% of the [Valiant Bravery] camp is male, and we have extremely few female players. However, the [Zhan Long] camp is 44% female. Too bad, we can't go across boundaries and flirt with them. Melon would kill us...."

I smirked, "Haha, then be more honest. This kind of thing needs to be mutually agreed upon. As an officer level player, you can't use your power to try and get things you want. Eh... at least do your best not to use your power in the guild to pick up girls, or else...."

"Understood...." Wolf chuckled, "Brother Xiao Yao, you must hate the complicated relations we have in the guild...."

I nodded, "Our society has started to speed up. There are some girls who change boyfriends faster than they change clothes. Even today, they're calling everyone husband this, husband that. Because of women, our guild has quite a few incidents of internal strife, something I don't like to see. If there really are female players that don't hold themselves highly, I will personally kick them out.

Dancing Forest smiled, "We normally do hold ourselves highly. I normally don't even glance at most guys...."

I said, "That's good...."

Dancing Forest grinned, "I will only like a man like Guild Master. That is... if I ever go to Hang Zhou, you must remember to take me out to dinner... "

Wan Er pouted her lip, her face filled with rivalry, "Little Dance, that..... That's just a dinner right?"

Dancing Forest laughed, "Cang Tong is jealous!"

"I.....I'm not!!" Wan Er's face turned red.

Everyone started laughing.

.....

Not long after, I entered the Grave of the Warring States map. All around me, monsters began to spawn around me. They were all Warring States Spearmen. The Warring States Pudao Soldiers were Lv 80+ high tier monsters. There were several stronger Thunder Tier monsters even further in the distance. It was clear that the environment was great for grinding and extremely fortuitous. Right at the center of the grave, there was an open area surrounded by a thick forest. However, I didn't see my Dragon's Den city. There was just Li Mu, Old K, Qing Qian and around 1000 [Zhan Long] players standing there.

I quickly walked over and exclaimed, "F*ck, our Dragon's Den, was it eaten up by the game?"

"Nope!"

Wolf reached out and pointed with a laugh, "Brother Xiao Yao, look. This is our Dragon's Den!"

I glanced over, and jumped. In the middle of the wilderness, there was a trampled fence. Inside there were a few radishes growing in the ground and a few white bunnies hopping around. It looked like it was only around 100 square meters. The wall looked as though it could be kicked over. This base..... it clearly was a rip off right?"

I was so shocked that my jaw almost hit the floor. Qing Qian couldn't help but smile, "Brother Xiao Yao.... it took you so long to get back online. Don't be so depressed.... Look, that's the NPC that guards the city. Only the Guild Master can talk with him about how to plan the city.... Go, we'll wait for you here..."

"Oh?"

In the wilderness, there really was an armored NPC general standing there. He was a Lv 88 Thunder Tier NPC. Based on my level, this type of NPC was very common. I walked over and greeted him, "City Master, how am I supposed to open up the city?"

With a "Shua", a map screen suddenly popped in front of me. On it were

detailed options—

Plan A: Small City, 100×100 meter scope, increasing the level of the city requires Wood x 1000, Labor Cost: 1000G

Plan B: Medium City, 500×500 meter scope, increasing the level of the city requires Wood x 5000, Stones x 5000, Labor Cost 5000G

Plan C: Large City, 2000×2000 meters, increasing the level of the city requires Wood x 50000, Stones x 50000, Iron Ore x 50000, Labor Cost 50000G

.....

I took a deep breath, and gave a silent sigh. So all that mud and dirt under my feet, this ass sized plot of land, was Dragon's Den. It was just a Lv 0 city!

Chapter 467: Building the City

“Which one should I choose?” I listed out the three plans to everyone.

Li Mu raised a fist, “We must choose the third plan. If the city isn’t big enough, then there might be complications in the future. I don’t even know if we have the option of expanding the city size. At most, we just have to spend a little more money at the start.....”

I checked out the money in National Beauty. We already had accumulated over 50,000,000 G. I nodded and said, “Ok, then we’ll choose the third one!”

I confirmed our choice, and 50,000G left the guild’s wallet!

The Guardian of the City suddenly pulled out his sword and shouted. He then threw a slice at the ground, and “Peng!” the shockwave cleared out the area. The old fence was broken to pieces and 2000 meters away, a deep ditch surrounded a square area. This was the prototype of our base. Currently, it was just the foundations. We didn’t even have the materials yet.

“Master of the City!”

The Guardian of the City looked at me, and growled, “You must create a sturdy wall around the city. Only then, can we block out the bandits, poisonous snakes, and beasts!”

The first step to building Dragon’s Den was already completed. I looked at the guild’s quest screen and smiled, “Alright brothers. Since that’s been finished, the next quest is to gather materials and create a wall around the city. All heavy armor players, spread out. Find some sturdy stones in the area. Afterwards, send them back to the city. I’ll be in charge of the gathering. Li Mu.....yeah Li Mu, how about you supervise the construction process?”

Li Mu patted his chest and said, “Yup, let me do it. I’ve been head of construction for over a year!”

I grinned, “I’ve done it before too, four projects in Tong Zhou...”

“F*ck....”

.....

We headed out, and Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I were a team. We headed straight for the border of Grave of the Warring States and the Purple Demon Forest to search for materials. There were several black colored stones in the grass over there. They seemed to be enormous black meteors. Using these stones to build the wall would be best.

After entering the Purple Demon Forest, I carefully looked around and didn't see any players. There were just some noises from monsters roaming around the place. I let the pets take care of them. My Flaming Tiger God tyrannized the monsters, while Wan Er's Purple Kirin Dragon flew around and dominated the skies. With each pet attacking, there were no monsters that could hold us back.

“Each person's bag can only hold one rock, and so, the bigger the better...” Dong Cheng giggled.

I looked towards the side, and saw a boulder that was around the size of a table. And so, I patted the rock and smiled, “Dong Cheng, here try this out. Let's see if you can put it into your bag?”

Based on the rules of the game, all items that go into a player's bag is dependent on what the player can pick up. Dong Cheng Yue is a Mage, and so she had basically no strength points. In the end, that little brat wrapped her arms around the boulder and for a while, she wailed as she tried to pick it up. The scene was so cute that I was mesmerized.

However, no matter how much she tried, she couldn't pick it up. In the end, she clapped her hands and said, “I can't move it, how about you.....”

“How about Wan Er?” I looked at the little miss beside me.

Wan Er wryly smiled, “What's the use? How about you cut the boulder in three? That way, we might be able to try it out. Otherwise, we definitely won't be able to pick it up.”

I nodded, and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword, and made a slice!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew, I only cut 5 meters into the stone! I switched hands, and used the Dragon Reservoir Sword. I threw a simple fast cut, and then quickly hacked at the boulder. “Ka” the enormous boulder broke into two pieces. A Saint Tier equipment’s sharpness really was much sharper than a Valkyrie Tier. I threw another cut and cut one of the halves into two. Afterwards, I smiled, “Here, can you guys pick these up?”

Wan Er reached out to pick up one of the pieces of boulder. “Wu wu”, she cried out. She really couldn’t pick it up. Even though her equipment added quite a bit of strength, it wasn’t enough. Dong Cheng Yue tried extremely hard to try and pick it up., but in the end, I had to help them cut it in half again. It wasn’t until I cut it into 16 pieces were they able to carry a piece. Afterwards, the two girls stared at me with their beautiful eyes, as though they were waiting for me to make a faux pas.

I smiled to myself and reached towards one corner of the big stone. With a shout, I lifted the thousand jin* boulder. It was really heavy, and I put it onto my shoulders. I shakily stood there, and shifted a few times before I was able to hold my balance. I then smiled at the two girls and said, “How’s that?”

Wan Er pouted her lips and said, “Herculean!”

Dong Cheng Yue softly smiled, “The grown but simple Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Let’s go back.... weak little miss Dong Cheng.... “ I ridiculed back.

Dong Cheng Yue cried out. Afterwards, she followed behind Wan Er and I as we walked over. At that moment in time, the Dragon’s Den grounds were filled with people. One after another, they lined up pieces of stone on the side. However, we couldn’t use them immediately. We needed some kind of sharp weapon to cut apart these stones before we could do that.

“Peng!”

The boulder on my shoulder fell to the ground, and raised up a bunch of dust and dirt. Li Mu’s eyes widened, “F*ck, Guild Master really can lift cauldrons*..... If we don’t use this strength to lift bricks, then it’ll really be a waste...”

I smiled, "You speak too highly of me!"

Beside us, Wang Jian led a group of people to raise a bonfire. The flames licked the clay, lime, and sand. This was the game's way of substituting the materials that are used in cement. He he, Li Mu really is someone who has worked on a construction site. In these terms, he was much stronger than all of us.

After measuring out the width of the ditch, we found it was 1 meter. So, I raised my Saint Tier Dragon Reservoir Sword and used it as a cutting instrument. I quickly hacked at the stones and made each the same size. The other [Zhan Long] players began to build the wall. In the distance, a group of heavy armor players were roaming around the borders. It was [Zhan Long: Defense Army]'s miss Yue Yao Yan, and she led a thousand people to patrol the borders of the area. To be honest, more than 5000 players from the main guild were currently grinding levels in the Grave of the Warring States. This was now our territory, and we had to guard it well, in case any people who had evil intentions came and wanted to halt our progress in constructing the city.

Not even three hours later, around 3 meters of wall had already been built. The entire Dragon's Den had four main gates. Once we finished constructing the surrounding foundation, the gates were automatically added to the wall by the system. However, they were bronze gates that were covered in green copper. Looks like they weren't very sturdy, and probably could only defend against beasts and mountain bandits. If it were against an actual army, it would fall with just one charge at it.

"Peng!"

A 5 meter tall cliff stood before the main gate. Li Mu and Wang Jian were gasping for air. Old K raised his battle axe and said, "For the sake of this sturdy rock, it took a dozen of us to carry it all the way over. It really is heavy. If we use this to construct our wall it'd be pretty good right? Little Li, you're the Guild Master, why don't you write a character on it?"

I nodded. As an upright young man, I also learned a bit of calligraphy. I walked over and took some mud. Then, with a grand flourish, I wrote out

“Dragon’s Den”. Afterwards, I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and “keng keng” sliced across the surface of the boulder. Sparks flew, and rock fragments dropped. Within a few minutes, I carved the two words into the rock.

“We should fill it in with some color.....” Li Mu smiled.

“What should we use as the color?” Dong Cheng Yue questioned.

I smiled, “That’s easy!”

Wan Er glanced at me, “What do you want to do?”

I raised my left arm, and let my Dragon Reservoir Sword slice across it. “Pu Chi”, fresh blood splattered onto the “Dragon’s Den” characters. It was extremely red. Everyone was stunned. I smiled, “This Dragon’s Den was obtained with my own blood. This stone is a symbol of [Zhan Long], and it’s also proof of our strength. From now on, we’ll also use our blood to guard this city. Therefore, there’s no better color than the color of blood!”

“You pig.... does it hurt?” Wan Er sympathetically looked at me.

I quickly gulped down a health potion, and my injury completely recovered. This game was really great, the potion’s ability to take away scars really was top rate.

Matcha then wet her sleeve with water and wiped away any blood that was outside the characters. At that moment, the system seemed to have recognized the fact that the rock was a part of the city. The color of blood had completely seeped into the boulder and couldn’t be wiped away. Water couldn’t even wash it away. Li Mu looked at the boulder and took a deep breath, and smiled, “This will be the beginning of a legend....”

Wang Jian smiled, “Actually, based on milestone monument, we’re already a legend....”

.....

I decided to ignore the musings of those people. I walked over into the city and continued to talk to the City’s Guardian NPC. I then listed out

the plans for the city. There were going to be a total of 20 neighborhoods, medicine shops, iron smiths, teleportation circles, stores and other necessary buildings. On top of that, I planned out an enormous central plaza, where we would allow players set up stalls, create teams, and talk.

Sitting on the cornerstone of the palace of the main city, actually it's just a few pieces of blue stones.

General Li Mu Level 80

Yue Qing Qian Level 80

Hero Old K Level 79

Wolf Level 79

General Wang Jian Level 80

Dancing Forest Level 78

Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands Level 78

One Second Hero Level 78

Tang Xin Level 77

.....

Although the system automatically gave a lot of experience after the end of the Warring states Battle, which did compensate many players. However, the loss was still apparent. Fortunately, the points of Li Mu, Yue Qing Qian and the others were extremely high. Through those points, they exchanged many experience points, and still remained above level 80. The 4-7 levels difference can be overcome through some extra effort.

In the distance, Wan Er had already begun forming a ten people team to do Hermit God's Certificate quest. I continued to stay here and build my territory. When the night arrived, a shabby building finally rose in the city. It was a total of 11 buildings, while the rest were still desolate fields. It was at this moment, the request was finally fulfilled and the sound of bells rang beside my ear—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations! Your territory [Dragon's Den] successfully leveled up to Lv 1 City. As the first city to upgrade to Lv 1, all members of the [Zhan Long] guild shall receive rewards : Charm+1!

.....

Looking at such rewards, I couldn't help but smile. This is great. All members of the entire guild added together would mean a reward of around 10000 charm! This is an improvement of our overall power!

At this moment, a sudden "Di" sound rang out. It was a message from Yue Qing Qian: "Brother Xiao Yao, At 1500 yards south of Dragon City, there are around 2000 people of [Thousand Burial] moving! Be careful!"

Chapter 468: Sword Saint Forest

I turned around to look. There weren't that many [Zhan Long] players currently in the Dragon's Den. Moon Feather and Star Blade were both here though. I shouted out, "A two thousand player team from [Thousand Burial] has appeared in the Southern Forests. Go take a few people and check out the situation for me. [Thousand Burial] has already declared war on us, so there's no reason we should let them get close to Dragon's Den."

Moon Feather nodded, "Ok. How many people should we bring? Should I contact Yue Yao Yan?"

"Just bring a hundred man team..." I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and gave a confident smile, "[Thousand Burial] probably doesn't have the courage to fight us head on. It won't do them any good. If our hundred man team can't defeat them, then contact Yue Yao Yan. There are quite a few [Zhan Long] teams that are training in the area, and we'll just crush them with sheer numbers."

"Alright!"

.....

A few minutes later, I lead a hundred man team out of the city and ran straight towards the Southern Forest. Once we reached the forest, I noticed that [Thousand Burial] had already spread out to grind levels. In the distance, Shen Bing raised her long bow. Shua Shua Shua, she killed some boars that were roaming the forest as she excitedly said, "I heard that these boars will drop mount eggs. Work hard..."

You Yi's long sword pierced the boar and smiled, "Sister Mo, are you sure these boars will drop eggs?"

Shen Bing mumbled, "Doesn't matter, why don't we kill them first.... besides, why are we grinding levels here? We're so close to [Zhan Long]'s territory. They can ambush us at any time. We're practically provoking them!"

Not Ordinary smiled, “Exactly! I want to test out Li Xiao Yao’s patience!”

“What does that mean?” Shen Bing asked.

Not Ordinary raised his battle axe, as his lips curved into a smile, “For me, Li Xiao Yao is a big person in the game, but is just a small ant in real life. Killing him in real life is as easy as stepping on him. But, I don’t want to do that as that wouldn’t be fun at all. Therefore, I want to test him in game, and see whether or not Li Xiao Yao dares to challenge us [Thousand Burial]....”

Shen Bing smiled, “I don’t think so....”

You Yi quickly exclaimed, “Careful! [Zhan Long]’s people have come and Xiao Yao Zi Zai is personally leading them. Moon Feather, Star Blade, and a few others are among the hundred man team!”

“A hundred man team?”

Not Ordinary quietly said, “Isn’t that too crazy? Do they really think that a hundred man team will actually destroy us?”

“I don’t understand either....”

.....

“Shua shua shua....:

One after another, the sounds of arrows whooshed through the forest, and broke through the dense leaves. I brought along Moon Feather, Star Blade and others to rush into the middle of the forest. Directly in front of us was [Thousand Burial]’s players, and their names were all red because they had attacked us first.

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” You Yi angrily looked at me and shouted, “This is where [Thousand Burial] will be grinding levels today. Why are you guys here? Are you trying to pick a fight?”

I smiled, “However, directly North of this place is [Zhan Long]’s city—Dragon’s Den. This is clearly our territory, unless, you guys have territory here too? If you don’t, then why are you grinding levels so close to our map? Have you not heard of respecting other people’s space? Since

[Thousand Burial] has appeared here, aren't you looking for a fight?"

As I said that, I pulled out the Dragon Reservoir Sword with a "Keng!" and pointed the blade forward. I shouted, "If you are trying to pick a fight with [Zhan Long], then just come right at us. After all, there are over 8000 of [Zhan Long]'s players currently grinding levels in these surrounding forests. At any given moment, I can dispatch 5000 [Zhan Long] players to this exact spot and fight a basic forest battle right here, right now. Would you like that?"

Not Ordinary grinned, "Li Xiao Yao, aren't you just a little too crazy? Did you forget what happened to you at Fortune Mountain Valley? If you really have, then do you want to experience that feeling of desperation again?"

I couldn't help but smile, "Wei Fan, you should go and ask Ou Yang Chuan how long it took for him to recover from his wounds after he went back? Besides, Ou Yang Chuan can kill me at any time, but if I wanted to, I can also kill you at any time. Are you sure that you can keep Ou Yang Chuan at your side 24/7?"

Wei Fan hesitated for a second, then gave a groan and didn't say anything. It was clear that he knew. Based on my current strength, I can't kill Ou Yang Chuan. However, against a normal person, then it will be as easy as cake.

On the side, Sheng Bing raised her long bow, and sweetly said, "Ai. Why is it that whatever comes out your mouths, is a stab? Guild Master Xiao Yao, to be honest, [Thousand Burial] is passing through this area. Don't be too nervous, we don't have any intention of coveting [Zhan Long]'s territory, isn't that right Guild Master?"

Wei Fan had reached the point of no return. The most important reason was that he was scared was by the "8000 [Zhan Long] players". If we were to actually start fighting, these [Thousand Burial] players were pretty much giving us equipment. And so, he furrowed his brow and nodded, "Yup, the beauty Bai Mo Yan was right. We were just passing through this area. Li Xiao Yao, aren't your nerves too BS?"

Just I was thinking about destroying them, “Di!” I got a message from Bai Mo Yan, in other words Shen Bing, “You bastard, if you keep pushing them into a corner, next time I go back to HQ, I’m telling Lin Tian Nan that you had “pa pa pa” with his daughter, and you used all 72 styles.

My face turned green and I responded, “Shen Bing, don’t joke around. I’ll just give up....”

Right afterwards, I spread out my hands and smiled, “Then I guess it was all a misunderstanding. You friends from [Thousand Burial]. I’m very sorry, why don’t you guys leave, or else you’ll be too close to [Zhan Long]’s territory. Even if they didn’t have my command, all of [Zhan Long]’s team leader ranked players will automatically attack you guys. At that point, it’ll be difficult for me. Why don’t you think of it as a favor for me!’

You Yi laughed, “Seeing as Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai said that, then why don’t we give him this favor!”

Wei Fan nodded, “Let’s go, we’ll head over to Firestone Canyon!”

You Yi said, “Hei hei, isn’t that [Vanguard]’s territory? Jian Feng Han will definitely beat us up!”

Wei Fan said, “Why don’t we go to Nightmare Plains!”

You Yi, “Isn’t that [Prague]’s territory? Yan Zhao Warrior will beat us up!”

Wei Fan, “Then let’s go to Poacher Camp!”

You Yi said, “That place is filled with monsters higher than Lv 120, are you trying to kill us!”

Wei Fan exclaimed, “Let’s go to the Moon Shadow Forest!”

You Yi, “The monsters there are only Lv 50+!”

Wei Fan responded, “F*ck! Then where can we go!”

You Yi: “How about we return to the city first and depart after we have given it enough thought!”

Wei Fan answered, "Okay!"

Everyone of us was speechless.

.....

Seeing that the group of [Thousand Burial] players was leaving, everyone was shocked. Sister Moon Feather held her long sword and asked, "Why do I feel that I don't understand what I am seeing. What is [Thousand Burial] doing?"

"No Idea." I smiled.

Star Blade spoke, "I feel that they are very afraid...."

"What do you mean?" Moon Feather asked .

Star Blade opened his hand and said. "Ba Huang City's power struggle is far too complicated. The top-rank guilds are [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies At The Gate]. Second-rank guilds are [Flying Dragons], [Wrath of the Heroes], [Valley of Gods], [Blood Contract], etc. [Thousand Burial] could only be considered as a third-rank guild. However, Not Ordinary fancied himself. He couldn't win against the top-rank and second-rank guilds, yet he still wanted to provoke us [Zhan Long]. As a result, he got scared back by just one sentence spoken by our Guild Master as he knew that Guild Master is a person that dares to speak and dares to act. A person that doesn't threaten but just attacks immediately....."

Moon Feather chuckled, "This should be the feeling of being in a dilemma. It is really difficult for Wei Fan to find any sense of existence."

I was secretly speechless. Fortunately, Wei Fan wanted to find a sense of existence in this game. Otherwise, if he did make a move towards me in the real life, I am afraid I might really be in danger. That was also the reason why I did not start the battle immediately. It would be better to not enrage Wei Fan and Ou Yang Chuan before I break through and stepped into the Yang Yan Level as it wouldn't be good if they went berserk.

After arranging Moon Feather and Star Blade to continued leading

people to grind levels, I held my long sword and wandered in the forest. Unknowingly, I had walked into the heart of the forest and had reached the border of the Sword Saint Forest. Sword Saint Forest had just been refreshed for a while. For now, no one was willing to enter because the lowest level monsters are Lv 90. It is impossible for ordinary players to approach while powerful players are not willing to come since this forest was too close to [Zhan Long]'s territory, and going to this forest would raise the suspicion of provoking [Zhan Long].

.....

“ShaSha.....”

As my Cloud Stepping Boosts stepped on the grassland in the forest, the Cold Iron Sword held by my left hand and the Dragon Reservoir Sword held by my right hand crossed and sliced forcefully. It caused streaks of airflow to surge towards the surroundings. It blew the grassland apart and formed shockwave-like air billows. I stood there with my eyes closed, and entered into a state of meditation. After reaching the peak of the Royal Air level, there was no need for me to train my body or practice with my aura. Now, I am trying to train a free and leisure mental state, with no confusion, doubt, and anxiousness. A state of mind that remains immovable. A mental state that remains immovable when facing the warning of the whole world and feels no discouragement when facing the criticism of the whole world. This is being truly free.

Of course, I am still a long way from that. When so many of my people were killed by the ambush set by Q-Sword, I would feel rage. When Jian Feng Han took away the Citadel Defending Decree, I felt unjust. When Lin Tian Nan doubted my position beside Wan Er, I felt bitter. It was because this was the real me. Otherwise I am afraid I would have long reached the Yang Yan level.

.....

I have no idea how long had passed when a sudden sounds of hooves thundered and were coming increasingly closer. According to my understanding, there were no players that possessed the power of riding

on mounts, so it must be NPCs!”

As expected, a group of NPC cavalry rushed out of the forest, and held the royal flag high up. It was the NPCs of Ba Huang City. The one at the front was a beautiful knight who grabbed a sword with her left hand and held a royal flag with her right hand. She has a fair face with rosy cheeks and a body like a beautiful jade. It was the princess of Ba Huang City—Angela, the legendary moon elf princess.

Seeing a group of cavalry dashing forward, I stopped training, walked forward with my Dragon Reservoir Sword in hand and yelled loudly, “Your highness!”

Angela knew me. I once lent her a cloak to cover her naked body and it was also because of her, that I said Frost is narrow-minded. Angela definitely remembers this kindness.

“Oh, it’s you.....”

The corner of Angela’s mouth curved up and she leaped down the horse. She placed her hand on the handle of the sword and smiled, “Why are you here?”

I answered, “I am training here. Your highness, why would you lead.....this large army to this wasteland?”

Angela pursed her red lips and replied, “Because there will be an upheaval in this Sword Saint Forest, thus, I had to come personally to do some surveying.”

“Oh? What upheaval?”

“The royal Arch Mage Freyr was interrupted during his meditation on the prophetic tower. He prophesied that a powerful one buried within this Sword Saint Forest is arousing slowly. Therefore, Father ordered me to lead thirty thousand elites here and kill this powerful being before his awakening, otherwise the whole Ba Huang City will be trampled.”

I was shocked and asked, “What kind of powerful being can make Ba Huang City tremble like this?”

Angela took a deep breath and exclaimed, “The Sword Saint Chi Yu Han, the most astounding Sword Saint Master in the world of Destiny for over a hundred years!”

Chapter 469: Shield of the Mundane World

“Chi Yu Han?”

I slightly jolted, then raised my sword and said, “That name really does seem fantastical.... Is he really strong?”

Angela nodded, and softly said, “Before I was born, Chi Yu Han had already become the strongest warrior in the land. At a young age, he managed to break through into the Sky Knight Level, a level only a handful of Sword Saints could even reach. When he was 20 years old, he traveled the seven kingdoms, and looked to duel with all of the Sword Saint Level experts. He had dueled 14 people, and became renowned as the strongest person of the land. Afterwards, Chi Yu Han broke through the Sword Saint level and made it into the Holy level. Thirty years later, my father lead 10 Arch Mages to create a magic circle that would seal him in this forest, thus giving this forest the name, Sword Saint Forest....”

I furrowed my eyebrows, “Chi Yu Han didn’t do much, why did Duke Luo Lei lead a team of Arch Mages to seal his power?”

Angela shook her head and frustratedly said, “I don’t know. The imperial historical texts that talk about Chi Yu Han have all been erased. I managed to hear some information from the Arch Mage Master though. Chi Yu Han had trained among the Chi You Tribe Abyss. Afterwards, he was invited to meet with the royal family, where he was appointed to become Chi You City’s Major General, and he fought for Chi You in the north. On the way there, he laid waste on the lands that he passed through, destroyed Fire Cloud City, and Sea City, and finally led his troops all the way to Ba Huang City. When he reached the city, he found out that one of the generals there, named, Chi Yang, was his father. However, he heard rumors that Chi Yang had died in battle, thus agitating his rage. He commanded a hundred troops to bathe Ba Huang City in blood. It was probably because of that event, that my royal father sealed him in the Sword Saint Forest...”

As I listened, I almost fell into a trance, and couldn't help but sigh, "If it were like that, this Chi Yu Han was pretty much godly. Too bad he had been sealed when he reached the Holy level, that's just too bad..."

"Oh?" Angela glanced at me and couldn't help but smile, "You know what the Holy Level is? Holy Level is a tier above Sword Saint. Holy Level is the closest level to gods that humans can attain. Throughout history, there's only a handful of people that have reached Holy level. Even my brother Luo Lin isn't on that level. Just from that you can tell how difficult it is...."

"Alright!"

I looked at the thousands of troops behind Angela and said, "Your royal highness, are you leading these troops to Sword Saint Forest then?"

"Yes!" Angela affirmed with a nod.

I smiled and said, "Well, I think, if Chi Yu Han really did reach Holy Level, then you are basically sending the people you've brought with you to their deaths. They won't be of any use...."

Angela smiled, "You don't have to worry about that. Chi Yu Han is just a ghost that has awakened. Most of the Arch Mages who made the seal are still alive. Even if Chi Yu Han were to awaken, at most, he can only use around 30% of his strength. So, there's no need to be too worried about him. What I want to do, is enter the Sword Saint Forest, find Chi Yu Han's grave and kill him!"

My heart started to beat and I smiled, "Princess Angela, why must you personally lead the attack? How about you let me do it? Whatever you need me to do, I'll finish it perfectly for you!"

"Really?" Angela smiled at me, "You aren't tricking me, are you?"

"Of course not!"

"But...." Angela revealed a worried expression and said, "However, Chi Yu Han still has a lot of strength. I'm afraid that if you were to go, you would also be heading straight to your death...."

I patted my chest, and said, “Don’t worry. I’ll find some extremely strong partners. This way, I won’t be completely defenseless before Chi Yu Han. I’ve got it handled.”

“Then... alright....”

Angela reached into the bag behind her and fished out a golden scroll and said, “This is the imperial command. Take it, then head towards the deepest part of the Sword Saint Forest and kill.... Oh wait no, if you just imprison him, that will be enough. Afterwards, take him back to Ba Huang City. There you will receive ample rewards!”

I thought about it for a second and said, “You want me to capture him alive and bring him back to Ba Huang City? Is a Holy Level tier person going to obediently follow me back?”

“You don’t have to worry about that....”

Angela pulled out a red chain and smiled, “This is a magic chain that the Arch Mage Master made. He used a piece of the center of an ancient glacier to create it. This iron can greatly increase the power of the seal. Even if the target was a Holy Tier Chi Yu Han, once he’s locked up by this chain, he’ll be weakened. This way you can safely bring him back to Back Huang City!”

I raised the command scroll and the magic sealing chain and happily smiled to myself. Angela looked at me and asked, “Young warrior, are you sure you want to take on such a heavy task?”

“Yes!”

“Ok!”

In the next moment, a system bell rang through the sky—

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have received the SSS Tier Quest [Sword Saint Chi Yu Han]!

Quest Details: After obtaining Angela’s task, take the command scroll and the chains into Sword Saint Forest and look for the deepest part of the

forest. On the seventh floor, you will have to defeat Chi Yu Han and use the power of the magic sealing chains to seal his strength and bring him back to Back Huang City. You will receive an ample reward from Duke Luo Lei. However you must be careful, Chi Yu Han's power is far beyond what you can possibly imagine and you must bring some people to completely finish the quest. The maximum number of people that can complete the quest: 10

.....

I was so excited. Now that I got the quest, next was the happy journey to collecting an ample reward and experience. It just so happened that Li Mu, Qing Qian and the others had all lost 10 levels. I'll just bring them all so that the quest could make up for the levels they lost and quickly bring up the levels of all the core members. This way, when the guild battled with the other guilds, we wouldn't be at a disadvantage!

I put away the Dragon's Reservoir Sword and I walked towards Dragon's Den. Afterwards, I sent a message to the little miss, "Wan Er, have you finished the class change quest yet?"

"Yup, I'm finished. What's wrong?"

"Come to Dragon's Den! I just took on a SSS Tier main quest!"

"Wah, you really do have good luck!"

"Hei hei, don't say any more. Let me see just what the Hermit God is like!"

"Alright, I'm coming!"

"Ok!"

When I reached the gate of Dragon's Den, I stood outside the simple wall. Not long after, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Li Mu all arrived. These people were all going to help with the quest. Wan Er stood at the very front, a line of words floating above her head and extremely clear—

Cang Tong Lv 87 Hermit God

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: [Zhan Long]

Job: Vice Guild Master

Ranking: Ba Huang City's Second

.....

I looked at the little miss's spirited look, I couldn't help but smile, "How is it, what kind of skills does the Hermit God have? Let me see some of them!"

Wan Er stuck her chest out and gave a hypnotizing smile, "Do you really want to see?"

"Yup!"

"Alright!"

Wan Er pointed to me and smiled, "Then how about you be my sandbag...."

"Pa!" a blood red flag fell. This was the system's way of showing that a duel started. I immediately lunged forward and yelled out. I used [Wall of Dou Qi] as well as the [Dragon's Whistle of Lightning and Thunder]. Wan Er's attack was just too high. If i didn't have a high enough defense and resistance, I wouldn't be able to take her attacks.

"Are you ready?" Wan Er smiled.

I nodded, "Yup, come at me!"

Wan Er didn't say anything. Her beautiful face had a bewitching smile. She opened up her hand. She suddenly gave a delicate shout. "Hum!" the environment around us seemed to twist and warp. My body seemed to be pushed by an invisible force for around 3 yards. I quickly reached out to stop my body from being controlled. This was Wan Er's new skill—[Domain Control], and she now has a degree of control over the area!"

In the next moment, Wan Er dashed over, her face carried a sweet smile. The Dragon's Kiss dagger suddenly glowed red. I then raised my Dragon's

Reservoir Sword and my Cold Iron Sword to defend myself. The more attack I can decrease, the better. My chest suddenly felt a sharp pain. Wan Er threw three slices, each slice stronger than the last!

“3172 ! ”

“3718 ! ”

“4019 ! ”

The dagger started to glow. What a strong attack! This was the Hermit God's special skill— [Blade of the Death God]. The skill threw three attacks, and the attack didn't decrease and was a specialized instant kill skill.

Wan Er's lips curved up and she smiled, “I'm coming at you again... regain some health....”

I quickly used my [Dragon Knight's Recovery] and nodded, “Come at me!”

“Shua!”

The Dragon's Kiss dagger quickly began to get covered by frost. One after another, beautiful flakes of snow began to whirl around the little miss's beautiful figure and she activated her next skill—[Frost Revolution]. Within 10 seconds, any attack that Wan Er dealt had a 30% chance of freezing the opponent, which would last 2 seconds. The cooldown was 60 seconds, and was another astonishing solo skill!

“Ka ka ka....”

After a chain of three attacks, I was frozen and layers of ice began to form around me. I was sealed in ice!

Wan Er stopped her attacks. If she continued, I would've been beaten to death. She smiled as she looked at me and said, “Alright already. I can't just not let you make a counter attack. Come at me, try and attack me and use your strongest skill!”

“Oh, are you sure?” I smiled, “If it hurts, you better not cry...”

“Wu, come at me!”

My hand shook, and my Cold Iron Sword flew out of its sheath and shot right at her with a [Blade Spin], going straight at the little miss. Right as I was about to checkmate her, Wan Er's body gave a slight tremble and a shield skill suddenly flared out— [Shield of the Mundane World]. Dou Qi energy suddenly began to envelop her, and greatly increased her defense and resistance. The cooldown was 60 seconds!

A chain of damage numbers flew up. The [Blade Spin] and the [Combo] all fell upon her. Wan Er's defense was so high that it managed to defend against it. With a cry, she activated her 5th Class Advancement skill— [Hermit God's Arrival]! For 7 seconds, while she's in flight, all of her stats increase by 20%!

“Hua!”

Suddenly flying up, the beautiful little miss stopped 10 meters above me. Just like a goddess, she smiled at me, “Now you can't hit me....”

I opened up my hand and smiled, “[Defeat the Dragon]!”

Wan Er quickly pursed her lips, “Hmph, if you dare grab me, I'll cry in front of you!”

I quickly took my hand back and smiled, “Come down here, I understand the Hermit God skills. It really is strong. It's a class that is king of the solo battles. On top of that, the ability to control the domain is amazing. Yup, in the future, when there are large scale team battles, Wan Er, you can open up the [Shield of the Mundane World] and you can charge into battle with me....”

Wan Er softly smiled to me and cancelled the duel, “Yup yup, I was thinking of that. That's right, have you gotten the SSS Tier Quest? Hurry up and let me see. Afterwards, let's choose who to bring. It just happened that this group of rats are all crying about how they don't have a high tier map to grind on....”

“Yup!”

Chapter 470: Sword Saint Abyss

After I shared the details of the Sword Saint quest with everyone. Dong Cheng Yue suddenly grinned, “Chi Yu Han, such awesome sounding name. This BOSS must be a heavy armor type. If we are supposed to kill him, then I’m only going to say four words — Please Bring Me Along...”

I was speechless, “Yup, if this was a killing quest, I would definitely bring you along. There isn’t anyone in [Zhan Long] that has more DPS than you. Even if you didn’t want to go, you would still have to. The team members for this quest must be carefully picked, or else we would never finish this SSS Tier main quest!”

As I finished talking about it, I hesitated for a second and said, “The team needs 10 people. I was thinking, for the highest chance of success, we have to bring Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Darling Duck, and Thousand League Spring for sure. Afterwards, there are still 5 other spots. We’ll give priority to those who lost levels in the Purple Demon Forest and are strong.”

Qing Qian gave me a pouty face and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, there has to be someone to interrupt the BOSS’s skill.... Sister Cang Tong by herself isn’t enough...”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Yea, let’s also bring Qing Qian. How about another Assassin, Wolf, you come along too.”

General Li Mu added, “What about main tank and damager? How do Wang Jian and I sound?”

I nodded, “Sure. We’ll take you and Wang Jian. Now we just need to bring one last person. Yup.... how about a long range damager. Let’s bring Dancing Forest, Ok?”

Dancing Forest smiled at me, “I’m included? That’s great! Hei hei!”

I walked over and patted Old K and Bai Qi’s shoulder and said, “You two, why don’t you take Matcha, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, One Second Hero, Cang Lei, Moon Feather and Star Blade to a large scale map

and make a hundred man team. I assure you, that if you were to all deal damage, you will definitely grind a lot of levels really quickly. On top of that, you'll earn quite a bit of guild points. Don't relax too much though, this quest can only take 10 people so I can't take all of you."

Bai Qi smiled, "Don't worry Guild Master. We don't feel snubbed. The brilliance of games goes far beyond just SSS Tier quests. Old K and I will take the young ones to grind levels!"

"Yup, alright!"

I looked at the simple foundations of the Dragon's Den and said, "Dragon's Den is just a Lv 1 city. We don't even have teleportation circles. Everyone has to work hard. When guild members get together to grind levels, 0.1% of the experience gained goes towards the City's experience. Once Dragon's Den gets enough experience, it will level up. And so, everybody has to work hard to level up the Dragon's Den as fast as possible!"

"So it's like that. Then that will be easy!" Li Mu clapped his hand and said, "We have to raise the Dragon's Den to Lv 10 as soon as possible!"

"Yup! Let's prepare to head out!"

I turned around and looked at everyone. I needed to invite all 9 people into the team. Afterwards, I shared the quest with them and asked how long it would take everyone to prepare their equipment, potions, and cards. We were definitely going to have to return to the city at least once or more during this quest to repair our equipment. At least this way we wouldn't have to go back to the city too soon and can head straight to the Sword Saint Forest!

.....

I held my Dragon' Reservoir Sword and walked ahead of everyone. Wan Er walked beside me, with the moonlight shining on her long snowy legs. The night breeze blew the little miss's hair and her light purple eyes seemed to be smiling. I quietly relished in this beautiful scene. She turned around and looked at me, "Once this quest is finished, and we don't lose too many levels, everyone should be able to level up quite a few times.

Especially you, you might even reach Lv 90. I heard, that when you're Lv 100, the 5th job advancement is a watershed. Especially for the heavy armor players. That means that you'll get the ability to ride a mount and obtain one..."

Satisfactorily, I continued walking and said, "Yup. Oh mounts. That will definitely lead to a main war. The age of mounts will definitely arrive within a month!"

"Yup." Wan Er smiled and nodded, "At that point, a small Assassin like me probably won't have a place where I can fit in under the trappings of a stampede. No matter what kind of maneuvers I make, I probably won't be able to do anything....."

I glanced at her and smiled, "Can you not try and act pitiful? You're a Hermit God. You aren't just an Assassin. You have a godly armor that doubles your defense. It's practically on par with heavy armor types. On top of that, you have [Domain Control], [Blade of the Death God], [Hermit God's Arrival], [Frost Revolution], and [Shield of the Mundane World] those virile skills. You are almost on the same level as a top tier heavy armor player. If you wanted to ambush someone, a heavy armor type player would never be able to defend against you..."

Wan Er's face went completely red, what do you mean by virile? You're just saying dirty words!"

I trembled, "What did I just say? Let's get back to the main point, Wan Er, do you think that we [Zan Long] should plan ahead and make preparations for mounts?"

"Huh? What kind of preparation..."

I thought about it for a second and said, "Mount battles. In terms of charging and defense breaking ability, Swordsmen and Berserkers will be the strongest. As for formation based defenses, Knights and Monks will be the strongest. However, for those who have both high attack and defense, I feel like the strongest players will be the Moon Elf type Knights and Swordsmen! Think about it, when you're rushing at the enemy's formation, the front row Knights will definitely suffer a lot from the

enemy's magic attacks. However, all Moon Elf tribesmen carry an iron umbrella with them that decreases the damage from spells. Therefore, Moon Elf soldiers are the most suitable to decrease magic damage, which means they're the best choice for riding on the front lines. [Zhan Long] should start preparing and form a Moon Elf heavy armor player group, a team that is ours."

"Wu....." Wan Er pursed her lips and said, "Moon Elves, that type of tribe is mostly filled with female players. On top of that, the female players that choose to become a Moon Elf must be between 160-175 cm tall, and around 40KG – 55 KG and they must be female. On top of that, they have to have a really good figure to become a Moon Elf. The requirements are extremely high. Ba Huang City doesn't even have many Moon Elf players...."

I smiled, "Exactly, so, I'll be leaving this to you. If I were to do it, it probably wouldn't be all that suitable..."

"Is that so?"

Wan Er looked at me with a smile, "Are you sure that this Moon Elf team that you're creating is for the sole purpose of fighting battles, and not to satisfy your secret desire to pick up girls?"

I stuck my chest out and said, "What kind of a person do you think I am? Besides... after being with you all day, I get to see a beauty like you all the time which makes other girls seem like nothing."

Wan Er's face went red but she couldn't hide her smile, "Alright, you pass. I'll get Dong Cheng and we can plan out this Moon Elf team. We definitely won't disappoint you. Ba Huang City doesn't have enough beautiful players, so we'll just go to Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City to dig them up. I don't think that we won't be able to create a full team of Moon Elves....."

"Yup, good luck!"

.....

At that moment, our 10 man team had already reached the border of the

Sword Saint Forest. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked in the front and said, “When we enter Sword Saint Forest, we’ll have crossed into dangerous territory. Everyone must be careful. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Little Wolf, you guys protect the Healers. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I will scout out ahead.”

“Ok!”

I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and cautiously entered the forest. At night, the Sword Saint Forest seemed a little strange. In the distance, a Shadow Wolf appeared from the bushes, it was a Lv 90 Phantom Tier monster. My Cold Iron Sword flew out of its sheath and pierced the wolf’s body, which lured it over. I then swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and threw a [Wind Blade] + [Fierce Ice Blade] into its enormous body—

“5728 ! ”

“6316 ! ”

Beside me, Wan Er’s Dragon’s Kiss began to glow red, and the three strikes from the [Blade of the Death God] flew right at the wolf, and created 3 extremely large damage numbers. Two of the hits that popped up were criticals—

“5529 ! ”

“12474 ! ”

“14266 ! ”

.....

In the end, the Shadow Wolf gave a dying scream and died. Dong Cheng’s finger had a light on the point, and she hadn’t even had a chance to cast the spell. Speechless she said, “F*ck, you guys are savage. Can’t you guys give me a chance to show off a little....”

Li Mu laughed, “This team, really is inspiring!”

We continued to push into the forest. Very soon, Lv 91 and Lv 92 monsters began to appear. They were called “Bai Meng Deserters” and were human type monsters. The introduction said that they were Chi Yu

Han's Chi Yuan Army. When Chi Yu Han was sealed, some of the soldiers deserted and began roaming around Ba Huang City's outskirts.

After 2 hours, we finally killed our way through the forest and reached the deepest part. There, we found the entrance for the quest!

In the distance, a fiery light rushed into the sky. There was just a piece of forest between us and the light!

Excitedly, I raised my sword and took everyone as we charged through the forest. Once I rushed out of the trees, I was stunned. Before me wasn't a forest or a valley, but an enormous deep abyss. The pillar of light rushed out from within the abyss, and it looked like it was covered with magma. This was the Sword Saint Abyss, the place we were headed towards. Looking at it, however, made my legs a little soft.

Standing at the border of the Sword Saint Abyss, a fiery light reflected off of our faces. Waves of heat began to spread towards us. Wolf gripped his dagger and exclaimed, "F*ck, this.... how are we supposed to get into this map? If we jump in, we'll be completely cooked into grilled chicken...."

Li Mu couldn't help but smile, "If we all had the same IQ as Old K, we might just all jump in. However, we have Guild Master Xiao Yao here, and that makes it a whole new matter...."

Beside me, Wan Er's purple eyes darted around as she looked into the abyss, as though she had discovered something. She reached out and pointed, "Li Xiao Yao, look, around 50 meters down into the abyss over there, there seems to be a narrow broken path. There are a few monsters on it, but it seems that the 7 floors of the Sword Saint Abyss should be accessible through that!"

"Yea!"

I gave a firm nod and said, "Let's think of a way to get to the first floor of the Sword Saint Abyss. Afterwards, we'll just kill our way on down!"

"Alright!"

Wang Jian said, "How do we get down there?"

I looked at the scenery in the distance and said, “Just now, when we were passing through Sword Saint Forest, I saw a lot of strong vines. We should use those and tie it to something. Afterwards, we’ll swing our way down. That seems a bit safer, otherwise, I’m afraid that the geysers of steam will blow us somewhere else and we’ll land in some magma to be cooked into turkey.”

Wang Jian’s lips twitched, “But Brother Xiao Yao, those are cantaloupe vines. I even tried one, and it’s sweet....”

I said, “Those are Numb Melons, isn’t your tongue feeling a little numb?”

“I...I” Wang Jian couldn’t say anymore and just sat onto the ground.

“Just give me ten minutes and I’ll be fine....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Li Mu, you stay here and watch over Wang Jian. The rest of you, cut some of those vines down and help make some ropes!”

Chapter 471: Even in the Next Life, It'll Still be You

Not long after, we created 100 meters of rope out of a vine. After I repeatedly tested its strength, I tied one end to a nearby tree and tossed the other end into the abyss. Once we prepared everything, Wang Jian slowly stood up from the ground with a sour face.

“Are you going to eat anymore cantaloupes now?”

Wang Jian's face went red and he shook his head, “Never again, f*ck my life...”

I laughed and grabbed the vine as I said, “You guys just wait here, I'll go down and check it out. Afterwards, I'll come back and take you guys down one by one. This vine might not be that strong, so we need to do this one at a time. Li Mu, you'll be last.”

“Understood. Don't worry, this Sword Saint Forest is only 15 minutes away from Dragon's Den. This is all considered [Zhan Long]'s territory. Other guilds won't rashly try and charge over here. At least they'd let us know first.”

“Ok!”

I stepped into the abyss and started to slide along the rope. Wind rushed past my ear and heat waves kept coming at my body. Damn even though, my War Swept Cloak was made of thin cloth, and the cold autumn air surrounded the area, I could still feel my body temperature rising. All because of this whole suit of heavy armor I was wearing.

After sliding about 50 meters, I finally made it onto the first ring of steps. This ring was about 5 meters wide and scorching hot from the magma. Slivers of smoke rose from the ground. The closest monsters to me were around 3 meters away, and it was 5 Lv 91 Thunder Tier Blaze Scorpions. Clearly, they aggro'd me as they began to get close to the border and start screeching. They meant to have a long battle with me! Thank goodness I was the first to come down, otherwise, anyone else

might not have won against these 5 Thunder Tier Monsters!

“What’s the situation like down there, Li Xiao Yao?” Wan Er asked in the team chat.

I grunted and said, “Wan Er, come down first. There’s a few monsters here. I’ll clean them up first. Otherwise, it’s pretty safe.”

“OK ! ”

.....

The vine started to rustle. In the distance, I saw the beautiful little miss and her snow white cape fluttering behind her, as she revealed her two mesmerizing legs. However, her leg guards hid the most tempting area. Hei hei, the person who designed this equipment really is a beast.

Grabbing onto the vine, I swung my weight towards the other side, and my entire body flung over. In the air I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and a [Blade Spin] with my Cold Iron Sword. “Hong!” the two skills exploded on the other side. Sparks flew and the group of Blaze Scorpions screeched in pain. “PA!”, my Cloud Stepping Boots smacked against the ground, and I turned around and summoned my Flaming Tiger God. After locking onto one of the Blaze Scorpions, I swung my sword and threw a [Wind Blade] + [Combo]!

“5271 ! ”

“2738 ! ”

“2619 ! ”

“2871 ! ”

“2677 ! ”

“2709 ! ”

.....

A chain of damage numbers flew up. On top of that, my Flaming Tiger God let out a [Flame Roar]. My Cold Iron Sword followed in suite and slashed forward. The first Blaze Scorpion immediately cried out and fell

to the ground and died. When I began to attack the second Blaze Scorpion, Wan Er's beautiful figure already flew over, and her Dragon's Kiss dagger was glowing red. Before she even reached me, her [Blade of the Death God] flew over, and cut the Blaze Scorpion's health in half. The three slices and a [Twin Blade Harmony] killed the Scorpion in a flash.

“Roar!”

Purple smoke began to rise around Wan Er as she summoned her pet Purple Kirin Dragon and it let out a ringing roar. It really lives up to its name as a Divine Tier BOSS pet. With a single dragon's breath, it dealt practically 6000+ damage. On top of that, it was an area attack. It dealt a whole lot more than my Flaming Tiger God. There was no other way, after all it was a Divine Tier boss. The good part was the fact that Wan Er was one of [Zhan Long]'s people. The stronger the Purple Kirin Dragon was, the more our enemies would tremble.

One after another, people fell from the sky. Qing Qian, Dong Cheng Yue, Dancing Forest, and Wolf all came down. Finally, Li Mu grunted as he carried his sword and descended to the ground.

“Wa, so hot!”

Dong Cheng raised her staff and hopped around. The place I was standing on was actually a piece of magma rock and she was almost burned. Thankfully, we were in game. If this was in real life, everyone probably would've suffered 5th degree burns.

I patted Dong Cheng's shoulder and said, “Stop whining. At least you have cloth shoes. It's fire resistance is higher. Look at the rest of us, all of our armor boots are made of iron. It's actually pretty good at transferring heat....”

As I said that, I wiped away some sweat from my face. Wang Jian laughed, “That's right. I'm practically standing on a hot pot. Why don't we hurry up and kill monsters. It's way too hot here. I'm afraid that by the time we kill our way to the 7th level, we'll die of heat stroke. This map really makes people go crazy.”

“Yup, let's head out and push forward. I don't even know if the BOSS is

here. I can't even see the second level's entry point" I said as I looked into the distance.

Qing Qian fluttered her eyes at me, "Brother Xiao Yao, can't we just swing our way down to the next level the same way we got here? You don't even have to worry that much, jeez...."

Dancing Forest looked beside me and said, "Melon, I think you said that a little too soon. Why don't you look at the state of our vine rope..."

Qing Qian turned around to look, and jumped, "Wu, why's it like this?"

I don't know when, but all of the water in the vine had evaporated. On top of that, the sparks from the magma began to fly and it started to burn the vine. Hua La La, it began to burn. No matter how I looked at it, it didn't look like it was very stable.

"Then how are we supposed to go back?" Qing Qian asked in astonishment.

I smiled, "You don't have to think about how we get back. We'll just kill our way to the 7th floor. When our equipment all falls to 10% durability, we'll just go back to the city to repair everything. At that point, we'll just create another vine rope. It won't affect the progress of the quest."

"Ok, that sounds good. Let's stop talking and kill monsters!"

"Alright!"

.....

Everyone turned around. On the circular path, a couple of Blaze Scorpions were screeching. They swung their pincers, as though they were protesting our invasion of their territory. Too bad we were above average people. These Lv 91 Thunder Tier monsters were just ants. I was already Lv 88. I was just three levels under them. With my equipment, stats, and skills, these Blaze Scorpions were extremely weak!

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and ran forward. I smiled and said, "Li Mu, Wang Jian, us three will pull the aggro towards us. Dong Cheng, Wan Er, Little Dance, and Qing Qian will all deal damage. Darling Duck

and Thousand Spring, you two just need to focus on healing Li Mu and Wang Jian. While we're killing these small monsters, you don't need to heal me. My 10% drain is enough."

"Yes sir!"

I rushed forward and swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and let a whole field of damage numbers pop up. The Blaze Scorpions swung their pincers in respond, and started to deal attacks to me. They crossed their pincers and threw a [Blaze Slash]. One of their poisonous fiery tails flew right at me, and pierced my shoulder. Unfortunately for them, my defense was too high and I had a Lv 9 [Wall of Dou Qi]. It didn't hurt at all!

"782 ! "

"819 ! "

I crossed my two swords, and "ka ka", dealt over 10,000 damage. On top of that, my 10% drain brought my health up again. My Flaming Tiger God roared and began its attack. In the distance, scorpions heard our attacks and rushed over. Very soon, they melded into a crowd and stood right in front of the three of us. Wan Er quickly activated her [Wall of the Mundane World] and began killing monsters on the front line. The [Shield of the Mundane World] was a SS tier skill, and wasn't that much weaker than my [Wall of Dou Qi]. Like this, Wan Er's survivability was even a little higher than Li Mu and Wang Jian. It was because of Wan Er, that I dared bring a group of [Zhan Long] experts under Lv 80 to do this SSS Tier Quest.

The earth began to tremble as miniature volcanoes began to open up on the ground. Magma began to spurt from those volcanoes and dealt 5000 damage to all of the scorpions. Dong Cheng's spells were just too terrifying. She opened up her palm and lightning began to flash in her palm and traveled up to her finger. "Pa Ts" all of the Blaze Scorpions knelt before the Queen.

The attack power of [Thunderbolt Finger] was incredibly high. On top of that, Dong Cheng had a pretty high spell burst. One after another, damage numbers higher than ten thousand popped up. Even Li Mu

couldn't help but shudder, "Goddamn, so this is Cang Yue's magic power, isn't that,... too brutal!?"

Wang Jian then said, "Too bad that Cang Tong and Cang Yue didn't join us during the City Battle. Otherwise, magic power like this will definitely be enough to change fate, or at least be enough to herd a flood!"

Dong Cheng giggled, "Oh? Am I that important? To be honest, I wanted to bring the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] to Ba Huang City from the start. However, Wan Er didn't want to, so we dragged it on til the end...."

Wan Er gave a wry smile and calmly explained, "Without complete confidence that I would win, I would definitely not rashly make any decisions. [Zhan Long]'s goal was all 10 Talismans. If we go too soon, we'll end up sparking [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Hero's Mound]'s attention. At that point, [Zhan Long] would become the target of everyone. Thus, I took the 3000 people to hide in the mountains and waited until the very end to head over. I just didn't think that [Hero's Mound] would use Death God Arrows, leading to so many losses in the main guild. That indeed was my fault, and I won't push the responsibility."

I cut two scorpions in half with a slice and smiled, "Wan Er, you don't have to worry about that. I actually think that you did extremely well. In a situation like that, we must remain rational and know how to make sacrifices. If you were as rash as Dong Cheng that little brat, we might not actually have Dragon's Den."

Dong Cheng stuck out her tongue, "I'm just expressing my care for you, isn't it just because I love you...."

As she finished saying that, Dong Cheng's face turned red and couldn't say anymore. It was as though this was her first time saying that.

Qing Qian gave a wry smile, "Oh, did I just hear something interesting?"

Wan Er said, "Eh...."

I remained calm and said, "Kill monsters. What are you guys thinking about at such a serious time.... too bad, Dong Cheng isn't my type. Why

don't you try again in the next life..."

Dong Cheng waved her staff, casting another [Magma Abyss] among the monsters and smiled, "The next life? In the next life I might even know Wang Li Hong*. Let me ask you Brother Xiao Yao, how can you compare?"

TL Note: A famous pop singer in China/Taiwan

I waved my hand, and small currents of wind began to spin around my hand as I said, "At least I'm stronger than him...."

"Alright, I'm still yours, still yours...."

Wan Er said, "Enough you two..."

.....

The Lv 91 Thunder Tier monsters gave quite a bit of experience, especially for Wang Jian, Wolf and the other Lv 80 players. Their experience just constantly rose. After 3 hours, we cleaned out the entire path and all of them leveled up.

"Sha sha..."

My Cloud Stepping Boots stepped across the magma rock and I exclaimed, "Where's the BOSS? There can't be none right...."

"Nope, there's one!"

Wan Er pointed at the ground and said, "Over there. There seems to be a big red dot that's moving towards us!"

My eyes froze and I shouted, "Careful, everyone back up!"

Chapter 472: Blaze Demoness

“Peng!”

Under my feet, magma suddenly burst out and sparks began to scatter all over as smoke began to rise. When the floor had completely split open, a beast roared. It was an enormous scorpion that broke through the ground. It was just like a c*ckroach that grew gigantic. Layers of hard shell covered its body. It had two pincers, eight legs, and feelers reaching out into the air. Just looking at it made goosebumps raise on my skin.

“Ah....”

Qing Qian’s shout traveled to my ears. She hadn’t dodged in time and ended up getting caught in the monster’s pinchers. Her health quickly dropped.

“Hurry up and interrupt it!” I yelled.

Wan Er stepped off the ground and activated [Blade of the Death God]. She dashed forward, her Dragon’s Kiss dagger glowed red. She suddenly pierced forward and dealt a [Gouge] at the BOSS!

“Pa!”

Success! The BOSS was stunned. Qing Qian fell from 4 meters up. But that f*cking scorpion opened up its mouth, and waited for our little beauty to fall into its mouth!

“Hua....”

I swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated [Haste] to rush forward. I stepped off of one of the scorpion’s legs and leapt up, and caught Qing Qian’s hip. Afterwards, the two of us crashed into the wall with a “Peng!” and fell to ground painfully. “Wu wu” Qing Qian clutched her swollen arm and looked at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you ok?”

I slowly crawled up and swung my arm around, “No problem. My skin’s pretty thick. Let’s go kill the BOSS!”

“Ok!”

At that moment, Wan Er and Wang Jian had already begun attacking the BOSS. It was a Lv 91 Valkyrie Tier BOSS. Wan Er and Wang Jian were more than enough to deal with this. After all, it was a tier lower than them, so it couldn't be that strong. However, I quickly read the BOSS's stats and listed them out on the group chat just to be sure. As expected, monsters from a SSS Tier Main Quest are quite a bit stronger than monsters from normal maps—

[Scorpion King] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS)

Level: 91

攻击: 3150-4250

Attack: 3150-4250

防御: 3400

Defense: 3400

气血: 5500000

Health: 5500000

Skills: [Blaze Slash] [Steel Shell] [Poison Field]

Introduction: Scorpion King, originally, it was a poisonous scorpion that was in a deep sleep in the earth. As it was cooked in the flames of the Earth's core, its body began to transform, and it became bigger and stronger. On top of that, it also gave birth to a group of small Blaze Scorpions. The Scorpion King took control of the territory. Unfortunately, a stronger rival appeared. Chi Yu Han, that incredible man that entered the Holy Level appeared in the abyss. Just by using [Domain Control], he was able to defeat the Scorpion King. In the end, he commanded the Scorpion King and its scions to become the first line of defense for the Sword Saint Abyss. You must kill the Scorpion King in order to obtain permission to enter the second floor.

.....

“The stats are pretty much just like Ping Yuan Jun....” I smiled, “Just kill it without a worry. There won't be too much pressure from this one Wang

Jian and Li Mu, control your aggro a little and don't get too into the battle. With your levels, it'll be very easy to be instantly killed."

Li Mu said, "Not necessarily. When I died in the Purple Demon Forest, I lost a pair of boots; except that the main equipment that add defense, health and attack are still on me. I have 3 Lv 83 Valkyrie Tier equipments and my MaxHP is over 8000. This BOSS won't be able to kill me."

Wang Jian smiled as well, "I'm pretty much the same. Brother Xiao Yao, you don't have to worry too much!"

"That's good then, continue to attack!"

As I finished talking, I rushed forward. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Cold Iron Sword crossed each other and I let out two combos. The chain of attacks dragged the BOSS's aggro firmly towards me. The Scorpion King screeched and its pincers began to burn ferociously, It was [Blaze Slash]!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew off of my Magic Spite Armor, and a damage number flew up. It wasn't too bad—

"1928 ! "

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and used a [Blade Rush] to flank the BOSS. I then threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] + [Blade Spin] right into its side. Attacking in front of the BOSS were Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest's long range attacks. Wolf and Qing Qian roamed the sidelines, waiting for their opportunity. One after another, they dealt [Flying Dagger]s and [Twin Blade Harmony]. Killing this BOSS was going very smoothly. The two Healers only needed to cast a few healing spells before the BOSS was almost dead.

In the end, not even 10 minutes later, the Scorpion King guardian died with a screech. Even though it had been cooking in the flames of magma for over ten thousand years, in the end it was just a piece of steak. How could it possibly take a barrage of attacks from experienced and strong killers like us? Getting defeated was it's fate. The only thing was that

after meeting us, it suffered an even more cruel defeat.

“Hua la la....”

A pile of equipments dropped. I walked forward and raised them all up. There was a grand total of 3 equipments. Afterwards, I listed out the stats in the team chat. Either way, I wasn't planning on taking any of these—

[Scorpion King Wristguards] (Valkyrie Tier): Heavy Armor Type, Strength +77, Endurance +75, Agility +70, Increases attack by 11%, Increases MaxHP by 1100, Required: Level 85

[Scorpion King Boots] (Valkyrie Tier): Heavy Armor Type, Strength +74, Endurance+72, Agility+71, Increases attack by 12%, Increases Max HP by 1200, Required: Level 85

[King's Ring] (Valkyrie Tier): Strength +75, Endurance +75, Magic+75, Increases Magic Attack by 15%, Decreases Cast Time by 10%, Required: Level 85

.....

After a ROLL, the [Scorpion King Wristguards] were taken by Wang Jian and the [Scorpion King Boots] went to Li Mu. It was perfect since his last ones were dropped in the Purple Demon Forest. Giving him a Valkyrie Tier pair of boots was a good way to compensate for that. As for the King's Ring, it was a pretty OP magic equipment. Dong Cheng was interested in the 10% decrease in cast time and so she took it. For a Mage, this ring was pretty good, as it decreased the time it took for a spell to activate, and increased the user's ability to defeat their opponent.

Afterwards, I split up a few stones. The last one was a red crystal. I held it in my palm. He he, it was a transportation crystal, and would take us straight to the second floor!

“Shua!”

After I used the crystal, a small teleportation circle suddenly appeared before us and it was going to last for 1 minute. I quickly said, “I'll head over first. you guys come right after. Don't drag your feet, or else this teleportation circle will disappear!”

“Yup, ok!” Wan Er and Dong Cheng both nodded.

I gave a shout and used a [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]. I then raised both swords and stepped into the teleportation circle. I felt my body get pulled by a force and I quickly appeared in the second floor of the abyss. The entire area was pitch black and I couldn’t see a single thing. In the distance, I heard the mournful cries of a woman. It was a few Lv 92 Thunder Tier monsters — [Evil Witch Spirits]!

There was a woman dressed completely in black. She had clearly long gone to the dark side. Once they saw me appear, these Evil Witches immediately raised their arms and fire blazed in their palms. In the next second, a chain of flames washed over me. My War Swept Cloak began crazily blowing up behind me. F*ck, I was a heavy armor type, so these magic spells really hurt—

“1572 ! ”

“1727 ! ”

“1828 ! ”

.....

I raised my sword and rushed over. I summoned out my Flaming Tiger God and with wave of my hand, I used [Binding Chains] on one of them. Then, with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I threw a [Wind Blade] and cut at another one. My Flaming tiger God pounced on the third one and activated [Fierce Roar]!

These were all cloth type monsters, and so they had really low health. With only a few slashes, I cut down one of them. I also drained a lot of health, so I had no problems surviving. Right as I cut down the third Evil Witch Spirit, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Wang Jian and Li Mu all appeared on the second level. Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Wolf all looked at the Evil Witch Spirits and got all depressed, “They have such nice figures... too bad they have such ugly faces....”

I glanced over. Just as they had said, these Evil Witch Figures had 34D’s and curvy bodies. On top of that, they were only wearing a single layer of

light muslin, so you could see little mounds sticking out. As the moonlight shone over their figures, it was truly an enchanting sight. Too bad their faces were just not pretty at all. They had deep set eyes and black ink that formed circles around their eyes. On top of that, their mouths were wide open and their 20 centimeter long tongues drooped out of the corner.

I looked into the distance and saw that the abyss was filled with those Evil Witch Spirits. Looks like it'll take us a while to kill them all. However, that was a good thing for us, since everyone here needed the experience and equipment. These witches were probably going to give us a lot of experience and equipment. At least we can earn money off of the equipment if we don't end up using them.

Wan Er started discussing the battle plan, "Start off by using long range attacks to lure the monsters over. The close combat members will cut them off halfway and start the attack. This way we'll be able to quickly kill the monsters while minimizing our losses."

Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest nodded. They immediately began casting their skills and lured witches over one by one. The rest of us rushed forward and began our attack, slaughtering them all. While we were battling, I could see the Dragon's Den experience bar slowly rising up. Looks like it'll take us at most 2 days to grind it up to a Lv 2 city. Especially since we were grinding levels down here in the Sword Saint Abyss, we were gaining a ton of experience, and pushing the experience bar up even faster.

.....

There seemed to be no end to the number of monsters that appeared on the map. Finally, after a whole 3 hours, almost all of the witches on this floor were killed by us. My bag was full of Lv 80-85 Gold Tier and Purple Tier equipments. As we walked even further forward, we finally arrived at the BOSS area. In the distance, an enormous fiery pillar rushed into the sky. It was a Demoness that was completely clothed within fire.

"Careful, it's a magic type BOSS..." Wan Er smiled and patted my

shoulder, “Your [Wall of Dou Qi] will be greatly cut down....”

“Yea.”

I slowly walked forward and saw that the BOSS was actually a beauty. A line of silvery words floated above her head and she had a mage staff in her hand. She was clothed in human type armor. When she saw me walk over, her expression slowly began to twist into a sinister smile, “Rash adventurer, do you know where this is? You dare trespass upon my territory? I will personally cut short your life!”

I didn’t say anything in response, and just quietly shared the BOSS’s stats in the team chat—

[Blaze Demoness] (Valkyrie Tier BOSS)

Level: 92

Magic Attack: 2850-3950

Defense: 2400

Health: 4,500,000

Skills: [Blaze Rush] [Magma Abyss] [Volcanic Field]

Introduction: Blaze Demoness, this pitiful human woman was originally Jiu You Empire’s princess. Afterwards, her city was invaded by the undead and the King was killed. The Undead Commander took interest in the princess’ beauty, and imprisoned her in his palace for obscene acts. Finally in the end, he killed her and stripped her of her soul, turning her into a true demoness. This Blaze Demoness has been sleeping in the ground for tens of thousands of years and was saved by the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han. To show her appreciation, she became the guardian of the second floor.

Chapter 473: Guild Rankings

“What a sin....”

I shook my head, “We have to save another princess’ spirit....If we kill her, then it would be considered a release. But, killing a magic type BOSS will be hard....”

“Hard?” Dong Cheng stuck her full 34Cs out and rebelliously said, “My basic magic attack is around 5000. Why don’t you praise me?”

Stunned I said, “That’s a Valkyrie Tier BOSS and has hidden stat boosts. Are you a Valkyrie Tier player?”

“Hmph!”

.....

Wan Er asked with a smile, “Alright alright, stop stop. Why don’t we talk about how to kill it? Li Xiao Yao, how about you hold off the BOSS and I’ll kill it?”

I thought about it for a second, “Wan Er, how about you do that? I’ll just deal damage. You’re a Moon Elf, and so you have better defense against magic BOSSes. On top of that, your damage would deal enough damage to attract aggro.”

“Alright~” Wan Er cheerfully agreed.

Li Mu’s eyes widened, “F*ck, this is the first time I’ve seen an Assassin be the tank. Alright then, why don’t I keep my eyes open and watch carefully....”

“Hua!”

Wan Er put away her dagger and pulled out the iron umbrella on her back. She activated [Absolute Step] and rushed straight at the Blaze Demoness. Before she even reached the boss, her dagger glowed [Flying Dagger]. “Pa!” it pierced right into the Blaze Demoness’ chest. Right afterwards, she lunged forward and grabbed the returning dagger. She then threw a [Blade of the Death God], and landed three cuts!

“6122 ! ”

“6721 ! ”

“7012 ! ”

It had to be said, Assassin cloth types are just too strong. Especially Wan Er, who had a special class like Hermit God. Just with one attack, she could completely lock the BOSS's aggro completely on herself. The Blaze Demoness screamed and began to wave her mage staff. Angrily, she activated [Blaze Rush]!

Wan Er moved sideways and threw the dagger behind her. She spun around and gathered momentum. “Peng!” her iron umbrella rammed into the BOSS's shoulder, but still couldn't interrupt the skill. Thus, the beautiful little miss jerked her shoulder, and opened up her iron umbrella with a “Pa!”, which covered up her beautiful figure. The Demoness screeched, and threw a ball of fire right onto the iron umbrella, and dealt 2700 damage. She could still withstand the attack, as Wan Er had 8000 total health. It wasn't going to be that easy to instant kill her.

She raised her right arm, and forced her dagger into the BOSS. When the Demoness raised her staff to cast a fire spell, Wan Er immediately used her umbrella to parry the attack. The rhythm of her defense and attack moves was practically perfect. The battlefield was practically a one man show by Wan Er. If I were to look at the whole population, there weren't that few Moon Elves, however Wan Er is probably the only one that can fight at this level.

“What are you waiting for? Attack...” I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled, “Did you guys want to just happily wait for experience and items to just fall into your laps? Hurry up and deal some damage. Let's finish this BOSS in ten minutes!”

“Ok!”

The whole team ran forward to attack. There wasn't going to be too much danger anyways. Darling Duck basically used AOE heals for everyone. The Blaze Demoness was surrounded by a fiery shell, and could deal a lot of burn damage to all of us. Using AOE heals was the best.

I crossed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword, and made the Blaze Demoness cry out. How could a Valkyrie Tier BOSS handle that kind of damage? It didn't even take 5 minutes for her health to fall to the bottom. The BOSS's [Magma Abyss] was enormous though. The attack had a 20 x 20 yard range. On the bright side, all of us close range players could take the damage. Instantly killing us isn't that easy.

"Li Xiao Yao, deal the last attack!" Wan Er raised her umbrella and started to retreat. Her cloak revealed her hypnotizing figure.

I nodded and swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I threw a [Combo] and normal attack. With one set, I threw 10 slices. On top of that, I dealt 4 normal attacks. These 14 attacks cut the Demoness into pieces. "Hua la la" she dropped quite a bit of equipment. This time, it was mainly magic type equipment. I picked them up one by one and revealed the stats to everyone—

[Grip of the Undead Princess] (Valkyrie Tier) : Cloth Type, Magic Power: +72, Endurance: +72, Strength: +70, Increases magic attack by 12%

[Leg guards of the Undead Princess] (Valkyrie Tier): Cloth Type, Magic Power: +74, Endurance: +71, Agility: +68, Increases heal by 27%

[Princess' Hairpin] (Valkyrie Tier): Cloth Type, Magic Power: +72, Endurance: +71, Strength: +69, Increases magic attack by 11%

[Blazing Guards] (Valkyrie Tier): Strength +75, Endurance +72, Agility +70, Increases attack by 14%, Increases attack speed by 7%

.....

"Woah...." Dong Cheng couldn't close her mouth, "Just in one go, we got 4 Valkyrie Tier equipments! Brother Xiao Yao's charm and drop rate is really amazing!"

I nodded with a smile, "It really is a good thing. After going through this Sword Saint Abyss quest, we should aim to switch at least 1-3 equipments per person. This way, [Zhan Long]'s officials will have all the top equipments in Ba Huang City. This way, our top tier strength will show itself, and it encourages the rest of the guild to become stronger as well!"

“Sure!”

We began splitting up all the things. The Grip of the Undead Princess went to Dong Cheng, since she was the only one that really needed more magic attack. The leg guards were rolled away to miss Thousand League, since it gave a 27% increase in heal. This was a top tier Healer equipment. The Princess' Hairpin was also given to Dong Cheng, and made her equipment look even stronger. I decided to not bother her. As for the [Blazing Guard], it was rolled away by Qing Qian. That was good, she also needs to raise her equipment. If the difference between her and Wan Er's strength was too great, that wouldn't be good either.

Actually, after I thought about it for a while, Wan Er, Qing Qian are both the guild's top tier Assassins, but they didn't seem to have any conflicts at all. Wan Er's class was extremely special too. She could practically be used as a heavy armor type. On top of that, Wan Er's maneuvers and strategy were better than Qing Qian's. We'll just let this killing goddess go onto the frontlines to battle. Qing Qian can continue being the number one ambusher.

.....

I picked up the red crystal that the Blaze Demoness dropped and crushed it. A teleportation circle appeared in front of us. I activated the [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Wind] BUFF again. I raised my sword and took my Flaming Tiger God to rush in. It took us very little time to sweep the map. Of course, it had to be fast, otherwise this entire quest would take 3 – 4 days to finish.

“Shua!”

When I entered the third floor of Sword Saint Abyss, I started hearing a “Jie Jie” sound beside me. I looked into the distance, and saw a few scorpions crawling around. They were only a few meters away from me. These scorpions were covered in a black shell and had two horns growing on its head. They looked like big c*ckroaches.

“Wu....”

Wan Er followed behind me. She immediately furrowed her eyebrows

and hugged my arm, “Wu, this monster is really gross. Can I not kill it?”

“You’ll get used to it...” I patted her soft arm, then raised my sword and rushed forward. I laughed and said, “Everyone prepare your area skills. I’ll lure the monsters over. Let’s get some experience!”

Once a group of Lv 93 Thunder Tier Steel Scorpions saw us coming, they began rushing at us. They used their sharp claws to attack, but only dealt around 500 damage. Compared to my 17312 health, it was like a little scratch. I threw a few cuts, and lured nearly 10 of those steel scorpions over. Dong Cheng immediately used her [Magma Abyss] and [Magma Lance] AOE skills. Li Mu released his [Covering Sword Slash], while Qing Qian used her [Grip of the Firefox]. Wolf used his [Ten Way Sword] and Wan Er unleashed [Ice Pick Whirlpool].

Within moments, the brilliant light from the skills all melded together. The scorpions all screeched, while our experience bars rushed up. After clearing out all of those steel scorpions, I glanced at my experience bar and saw that I was already 92% to Lv 88. Looks like I’ll level up to 89 on this floor. The speed at which I’m leveling up is faster than I thought. After we sweep out the entire floor, and if I don’t die leveling up to 92 shouldn’t be a problem. If I’m lucky, I might even reach Lv 94.

Without us noticing, two hours passed by. “Shua!” a ray of golden light fell, and I was already Lv 89. I looked at all of the team player levels, and it looked as though they had made up quite a bit of their levels—

General Li Mu Level 83

Yue Qing Qian Level 83

Song Han Level 82

Dancing Forest Level 82

General Wang Jian Level 82

.....

Yup, after sweeping out this new level, Qing Qian and Li Mu will probably get into the top ten in Ba Huang City. However, I couldn’t be too

optimistic. This was only the third level. I can't even tell how hard the sixth and seventh levels are going to be.

"Brother Xiao Yao...." Qing Qian yelled out.

"Yes? What's wrong Qing Qian?"

She giggled, "I got some really good news. In 20 minutes, the Chinese Server Guild Rankings will refresh. This is the first time it has refreshed in half a month. All of the calculations are happening right after we captured Dragon's Den, and so, just you wait. [Zhan Long] will probably make it into the top ten guilds. This ranking is really important for us!"

"Yup, we'll find out very soon...."

As I killed monsters, I waited for the rankings to refresh. Close to 25 minutes later, I refreshed my page once again. Just what I was waiting for, the new guild rankings!

Chinese Server Guild Rankings--

[Legend] Guild Master: Fang Ge Que

[Hero's Mound] Guild Master: Q-Sword

[Vanguard] Guild Master: Jian Feng Han

[Judgement] Guild Master: Ye Lai

[Zhan Long] Guild Master: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

[House of Prestige] Guild Master: Bai Li Ruo Feng

[Appearance Alliance] Guild Master: Mu Xuan

[Prague] Guild Master: Yan Zhao Warrior

[Emerald Porcelain] Guild Master: Death's Contract

[Enemies at the Gate] Guild Master: Misty Cloud

[Moonlit Lake] Guild Master: Gong Zi Ying

[Flying Dragon] Guild Master: Soaring Dragon

[Blood Contract] Guild Master: Han Bei Song

[Dao Jian Xuan] Guild Master: Blade Hero

[Valley of the Gods] Guild Master: Lu Dong Bing

.....

Just as we thought, [Zhan Long] made it into the top ten. On top of that, we rose all the way to the top 5. We were actually ranked higher than [House of Prestige], [Appearance Alliance], and [Prague] those established guilds. This ranking was truly astonishing!

Li Mu smiled and made a fist, “F*ck, ranked number fifth! We’re too amazing!”

Wan Er gave a big grin and said, “Yup, this ranking really is high. Is it possible that the system administrators are also fans of [Zhan Long]?”

“Who knows....”

I happily swung my sword and continued killing monsters and said, “Let’s keep up the work. We got this ranking mainly because of the two city battles. [Zhan Long]’s ranking was the result of blood and sweat, and that is something we should be proud of. Afterwards, our main goal will be to recruit more members. As long as we have around the same number of members as [Legend] or [Hero’s Mound], then we’ll be able to compete with them!”

“Yes!”

Chapter 474: Garrison Soldier Helmet

As we got close to the end of the third level, it was already around 5 o'clock and everyone was getting weary. However, we couldn't go offline right now. There were a total of 7 maps, and at the very least, we couldn't rest until after the fourth floor. This map wasn't restricted to just our team. If anyone found out what we were doing, based on [Zhan Long]'s ability to attract hostility, we would definitely draw in trouble.

“Sha sha....”

My Cloud Stepping Boots slid across the sand. Finally, I had dealt with all of the Steel Scorpions. As we moved forward, we walked into an ashen area. The map clearly had an enormous red dot. A hot smokey fog began to seep in from the distance and filled the area in front of us, as if creating a new dimension.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and quietly said, “Everyone stay here, I'll lure the BOSS out!”

“Ok!”

.....

I stepped into the smoke and squinted. I swept out my sword, and created a gust to clear out the smoke. Suddenly, I saw an enormous monster that was coiled around itself and sleeping there. It was a 20 meter long, giant centipede! A fiery hot shell covered its entire body and it had countless claws that were each as sharp as knives. On its head, grew two beady red eyes. On top of that, there were two, two meter long arms with a blade in each hand and hard shells covered every inch. This was probably some kind of two bladed centipede weapon!

“Ji Ji....”

That was the signal that started the hunt. The BOSS had noticed us. It immediately waved its swords and rushed at us. It was crawling along the ground at a shocking speed. Just watching the scene made our hearts tremble a little. F*ck, the closer this game gets to the end, the scarier the

BOSS' designs become! Female players probably don't have the courage to battle in close combat with a BOSS like this!

I opened my hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] on the BOSS. Afterwards, I used my Cold Iron Sword with a [Blade Spin] and let it spiral right towards the boss. It pierced the BOSS' body numerous times, and dragged the aggro to myself. At the same time, I quickly scanned the BOSS' stats. It was Lv 93, which was 4 levels higher than myself. On top of that, it was only a Valkyrie Tier BOSS. It shouldn't be a problem to deal with.

“Shua....”

My Cloud Stepping Boots slid a few steps forward. I arrived before Wan Er and Dong Cheng and said, “This BOSS is a bit ugly, so I'll solo tank it. Wan Er, Qing Qian, you guys just take the experience. Healers, lock your heals onto me. Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest will deal damage. Just make sure you don't take away the aggro from me...”

“How's that possible? You have such high damage. Even if I wanted to steal aggro from you, it wouldn't be easy....” Dong Cheng giggled. But, once she saw the Lava Centipede appear from out of the fog, her pretty little face turned ashen, “Wu, this BOSS really is ugly. Thank god I'm a long distance type....”

Wan Er's expression was also a little disgusted and she cried, “Nevermind, I'll just watch you kill this BOSS. Good luck pig....”

I didn't say anything. The Lava Centipede crossed it's swords and “Ka Ka” aimed right at my chest, leaving two deep cuts. Each attack dealt 2700 damage. This BOSS had already broken through quite a bit of my defense. After all, it wore down quite a bit of my [Wall of Dou Qi]. It'll probably break in 60 seconds.

I summoned my Flaming Tiger God out to help and damage. Behind me, Dancing Forest used her [Shield Breaker Shot] three times, and decreased the BOSS' defense by over 20%. Killing it like this would be much easier.

The Lava Centipede's attack pattern was very simple. He just used his two swords to hack at me, and when he started to turn around, he was

going to use his tail to sting me!

“Ji Ji....”

With a screech, the BOSS suddenly twitched and spun around. “Shua!” it wrapped its body around me, and cut me at the same time. My health suddenly dropped and Wan Er immediately shouted, “You can’t let it wrap around you! Otherwise, the heals won’t be able to catch up. This is the BOSS’ killing skill! Interrupt it!”

I quickly nodded in understanding. With a shot, I activated a [Combo] and slashed at the Centipede to get out of its grip. With a slide, I got a good 5 meters away from the BOSS. I spun my swords, and aimed each cut right at the Centipede’s joints. These were all weak points. After that round of attacks, the centipede screeched in pain and its health decreased by a lot, making it a much faster kill.

After a short 7 minutes, the BOSS’ health dropped to the bottom. I glanced around and said, “Qing Qian, come over and get some experience. Use [Twin Blade Harmony]+ [Combo] and then deal a [Grip of the Firefox]. It should be close enough to dying!”

“Alright!” Qing Qian lept up.

I raised my two swords in front of my chest in a defensive position. “Keng keng keng” I blocked the BOSS’ dying blows. Qing Qian dashed out and flashed her daggers. The Centipede screeched and fell to its death. Qing Qian successfully leveled up, and a pile of equipments fell to the ground.

I walked forward and picked up the three equipments that the Lava Centipede dropped. This time, we weren’t as lucky. There was only one Valkyrie Tier equipment. The rest were all Emperor Tier. I decided to not mention the Emperor Tiers to everyone, and gave one to Darling Duck and one to Dancing Forest. The Valkyrie Tier armor plate had pretty good defense, so I gave it to Wang Jian.

I picked up the teleportation crystal from the Lava Centipede’s body. I gripped it in my hand and crushed it. Once it broke, a magic circle appeared. Fourth Floor of Sword Saint Abyss, I’m coming!

I gripped the Dragon Reservoir Sword and turned around to look at everyone. “The fourth floor can be considered a harder floor. From here on out, everyone must be more careful!”

“Yeah, you be careful too!”

I leapt into the teleportation circle and heard the sounds of battle all around me. Hot winds began to blow into my face. The closer we were to the seventh floor, the hotter the environment around us became. Sweat started to seep through my battle robes. It was a good thing that the game didn’t have something like dehydration, or else the only way I could battle is if I had a gallon of water in one hand and a sword in the other.

Not far into the distance, there were a few soldiers dressed in armor who carried swords, battle axes, and maces and were roaming around the perimeter. When they saw me coming, they immediately started waving their weapons and shouted, “For the honor of the Commander, for the honor of Zh Yuan City’s Bai Meng Army!”

I raised my long sword and rushed over. I commanded my Flaming Tiger God to help me destroy them. In the end, one of them cut into my shoulder with a battle axe, dealing 1000 damage. These fourth floor Thunder Tier monsters were really strong. Their stats weren’t as simple as just having one more level!

Wan Er, Li Mu and Wolf all teleported to the new map. The beautiful little miss was extremely clever and saw the meaning of this, “These fourth floor monsters, their stats are completely different!”

I quickly listed out the new stats in the team chat. They really were very different from the previous Thunder Tier monsters that we had fought before—

[Garrison Soldiers] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 94

Attack: 3700-4550

Defense: 4000

Health: 200,000

Skills: [Charge] [Rage Cut] [Impact Roar]

Introduction: Garrison Soldier, these elite warriors used to all be soldiers of Ze Yuan City and were members of the Bai Meng Army. They followed the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han to attack Ba Huang City. However, due to past events, they were willing to fight for Ba Huang City instead. However, due to the suspicious nature of Luo Lei, he didn't trust these soldiers to hold the fort for Ba Huang City. In one night, Ba Huang City's Army, and the Bai Meng Army were completely massacred, and the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han was sealed. Today, these Garrison Soldiers have awoken from their sleep in Hell, and have been summoned here by Chi Yu Han. Their only goal is to bathe Ba Huang City in blood.

.....

"It's Ba Huang City's ants!" One of the Garrison Soldiers swung his halberd and shouted, "Trample them! Let Ba Huang City's hypocrites know the wrath of our Bai Meng Army. Let them know our pain!"

There were a total of 11 Garrison Soldiers that charged at us. Their attack was pretty good. I immediately shouted, "I'll block them by myself. Li Mu and Wang Jian, you both drag two of them away. Wan Er drag another two away. The 5 others, I'll take!"

I swept out my blade and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. My Flaming Tiger God also let out a [Flame Roar]. However, when the group of Garrison Soldiers charged into me, their third skill was truly terrifying. The five Garrison Soldiers all raised their heads and shouted, "Battle, is our final fate!"

This roar turned into a small scale shock wave. Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian and I were all in the attack range. Wan Er raised her iron umbrella to minimize the damage. My magic defense was really high, so every shockwave dealt only 1500 damage to myself. However, Li Mu and Wang Jian each suffered at least 2500 damage. In seconds, their health dropped to the bottom. Luckily, the two bastards gulped down a health potion. If they hadn't done that, they would've been instantly killed!

Darling Duck quickly used an area heal, her face was ashen, “Eh, such a strong skill. Be careful!”

Dong Cheng quickly used a [Thunderbolt Finger] and a [Magma Lance] and stuck her tongue out, “Woah, you guys were almost killed by these monsters. If this gets out, won’t you be humiliated to death....”

Li Mu’s face was pale, “Beautiful Dong Cheng, please don’t joke around. Wang Jian, let’s retreat, let Guild Master go against them....”

“Brother Xiao Yao, good luck!” Wang Jian pulled out his sword and retreated.

I nodded. My health was too high, at around 17,000, so I can definitely block it. These two bastards’ equipment are far weaker than my own. If they had less than 10,000 health, they definitely can’t block it.

.....

After a flurry of attacks, we finally killed all 11 Garrison Soldiers. I began to sweep the battlefield for drops, and noticed a red helmet. I held it in my hand, and felt heat radiating from the equipment. I suddenly got excited. He he, it’s another high tier equipment!

[Garrison Soldier Helmet] (Emperor Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 610

Strength: +65

Endurance: +62

Agility: +59

Additional: Increases the user’s defense by 12%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack by 10%

Outfit: Garrison Soldier Outfit – Helmet

Introduction: Garrison Soldier Outfit, many years ago, Chi Yuan City’s King was extremely aggressive. In order to dominate the world, he went looking for an iron smith from the Chi You Tribe. There, he captured a

dozen Chi You tribesmen and forced them to create armor for Chi Yuan City. In the end, he obtained several hundred elite armor outfits. These outfits were from then on, known as the Garrison Soldier Outfits. All of the warriors that had worn these outfits before were well renowned heroes and the outfits became a legend.

Required: 84

.....

Chapter 475: The Halberd Wielder Tian Chen

As I held onto the Garrison Soldier Helmet, I couldn't help but laugh, "Our luck has come! A Lv 84 Emperor Tier Set. It seems like we can get some more armor for [Zhan Long] in this Sword Saint Abyss.

Wan Er laughed lightly, "Hehe. That's great. Yue Yao Yan and the others came to Ba Huang City to help us fight before and we should reward them. We don't want to make them feel like they don't belong in the guild."

I nodded, "Yeah. If we can get some more Garrison armor sets, we'll definitely give it to Yue Yao Yan and their guild first. As the Guild Master, I need to work harder to make our core players stronger!"

Wan Er laughed sweetly and said, "Unn. Then I'll thank you in her place."

Looking at the cute miss, I couldn't help but smile. "Are you trying to take my Guild Master position...."

"Don't. I'm only kidding...."

Qing Qian laughed on the side, "Brother Xiao Yao, let me see the stats for the garrison soldier armor set. I want to see how strong it is. How much better is it compared to the desolate heaven set? Well, the garrison soldier set is probably stronger since it's a Emperor Tier set.

I waved my hands and the stats popped up—

[Garrison Soldier Set]

2 Piece: Attack + 25%

3 Piece: Defense +40%

4 Piece: Attack Speed + 40%, Magic Resistance + 150%

5 Piece: Garrison! Health + 5000, Attack + 60%. After dying in battle, there is a 5% chance to revive at the place of death. The higher the

player's charm, the higher the revival rate will become. Skill Available:
[Impact Roar]

.....

"Damn....." I clenched my fist and said, "Now even I want to change my equipments to this set.

Wang Jian eyes widened, "That last effect Garrison is too OP! This set basically beats a bunch of Valkyrie tier items together. A total of 5000 health, 85% attack, and 40% Defense and Attack speed and 150% Magic Resist. AND that's only the set effect! Combined with each armor's original stats, that's basically like cheating!!'

Li Mu nodded, "Mhm. This Emperor Tier armor set basically beats out the Desolate Heaven set that we had before in every way possible. Especially with the [Impact Roar] skill that it comes with. If someone wearing this set charged into the enemy frontlines with this skill, it would be more destructive than Old K's [Flaming Sun]. Damn. I don't even want to think about it.

I looked at the Garrison Soldiers and laughed, "Let's work hard and kill them then. We all want these Garrison Soldier sets but... these Garrison Soldiers are pretty hard to deal with. Two of you guys almost got insta-killed by them.... I don't even know what to say to that....."

Li Mu replied, "Well it seems like before Lv 90, having 9000 health just isn't enough for warriors anymore.

Wang Jian laughed, "9000 Health? Did you not notice that brother Xiao Yao has 17000+ health? I feel like at Lv 100, Knights will be the focal point in battles. However, if we want our Knights to be able to take on the opponent's front lines, they need at least 15000 health. That is the minimum requirement. If not, then Mages and Archers will bombard them with their skills and slaughter them easily. Look at Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng Yue's attacks. They are far too strong for front liners with lower health. One of them alone can damage a whole group of people. An ordinary group won't have the health to withstand their attack.

Li Mu face-palmed and laughed, “15000 health. How much +health equipments do we need for that?”

“We’ll take it slow!”

I raised my sword and grinned. I began to lock [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the distant Garrison Soldiers. At the same time, I was thinking of how [Zhan Long] should develop in the future. It was just as Li Mu and Wang Jian had said, most guilds are prioritizing their over ten thousand health heavy armor teams. Now that [Zhan Long] was among the top 5 ranked guilds on the Chinese Server, we have to create our own heavy armor army, or else we’ll never be able to make a name for ourselves in future battles. Just having ten thousand + health wasn’t enough though. They must have equipment that adds health while increasing attack power, or else they’d just have health and no attack power, and they’ll never be able to touch other people. No matter how hard they try like that, it’ll be of no use.

However, these Garrison Soldier Sets present a great opportunity for us. Not only do these Garrison Soldier Sets increase health by 5000, it also increases attack power by 80%. It suits [Zhan Long] perfectly. On top of that, these were Lv 84 Emperor Tier equipments. Using them all the way to Lv 120 wasn’t too big of a problem. We should get more of these outfits, and help [Zhan Long] create a heavy armor team. For that was the true way of a king!

We slowly advanced forward. After that earlier lesson, we decided to lure less monsters over at a time. Instead, Dong Cheng used her [Magma Abyss] to lure the monsters, bringing 5-7 over in one attack. This way, there wasn’t that much risk for everyone, and we weren’t that slow in killing them.

“That....” Dong Cheng raised her staff and suggested, “I feel like we shouldn’t just recklessly kill these. Everyone here can tell that these Garrison Soldier sets are really important, so I think that we should have the people with the highest charm be the ones who deal the last attack on these Garrison Soldiers. That way, there would be a higher drop rate, isn’t that right?”

Qing Qian nodded, "Un. Then let's say how many charm we each have!"

Li Mu, "71"

Wang Jian smiled, "67."

Dancing Forest, "Damn. I'm embarrassed....I only have 40"

Fox, "44....."

Qing Qian, "I'm a bit on the high end, 91!"

Dong Cheng, "I have 144"

Wan Er, "142....."

Then everyone looked at me. I looked at them and said, "198....."

"Tyrant!" everyone stared.

I rubbed my nose and laughed, "Don't be like this guys...."

Qing Qian laughed, "Okay then. When the mobs reach below 10% HP, stop attacking. Let brother Xiao Yao, Sister Cang Tong and Sister Dong Cheng get the last hit. Their charm is high so the chances of an item dropping is higher for them. Especially Brother Xiao Yao. You need to get the most last hits. I don't think anyone's going to be mad if you got a bit more EXP.

I nodded, "Okay! Got it."

Very quickly, I let everyone see the power of my superior ability to steal monsters. I cast [Great Realm of Desolation] from a distance to instant kill them, [Blade Spin] to cut off their heads, and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] for area kills, and [Combo]+[Wind Blade] for one on one kills. Over half of the Garrison Soldiers had fallen under my two blades. This way, the drop rate was extremely high. Within 30 minutes, 11 of the Garrison Soldier Outfit pieces had dropped and we successfully made another Outfit. I gave it to Wang Jian to temporarily use, since the stats were better than his current equipment.

The more careful we were in killing, the slower we were advancing. It took us a whole five hours to kill all of these fourth floor monsters. It

wasn't until the second day at 11 o'clock, that we finally managed to kill the last crowd!

I stood beside the bodies of the last Garrison Soldiers and looked into the distance. On the other side, there stood a general that was completely clothed in armor and equipped with a long halberd. His bloody cloak fluttered in the wind as he loftily glanced at us. We were too far away, and so we weren't going to attract any aggro at the moment. However, he was clearly the BOSS of the fourth floor!

I looked at my bag, and saw that I had a grand total of 119 Garrison Soldier set pieces. I think that was around enough to form 21 outfits, which was quite a bit. I looked in front of us and excitedly said, "The BOSS is here. Prepare for battle. When we finish killing him, we'll log off and take a break. Are you guys all looking forward to that?"

Dong Cheng looked at me with her red eyes, "Brother Xiao Yao, I'm so exhausted...."

Wan Er lovably sneezed a few times and smiled, "Good luck on the last battle! Wu, this BOSS seems to be on a different level also, its.... its a Saint Tier BOSS. We're really in for it...."

Very soon, the little miss listed out the BOSS' stats in the team chat. This Sword Saint Abyss BOSS' stats were really savage—

[Halberd Wielder Tian Chen] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 94

Attack: 5000-5600

Defense: 4800

Health 14000000

Skills: [Blaze Rush] [Halberd Exorcism] [Halberd Whirlwind] [Purgatory Demon]

Introduction: Tian Chen, Chi Yuan City's number one War God. He was known as a once in a hundred years rare general. His one halberd sweep was unrivaled throughout the entire country. Afterwards, he was defeated

by Sword Saint Chi Yu Han, and became great friends with him. He followed Chi Yu Han to the Eastern War Front. There, he made many great achievements. Finally, Tian Chen followed Chi Yu Han to Ba Huang City, and was finally defeated by Bai Meng Army's soldiers. On top of that, Tian Chen was shot through the heart by Purple Star, and he fell to Hell. After spending several years in Purgatory, he finally awoke from his slumber in Sword Saint Abyss, his heart filled with vengeance

.....

He looked at me from a distance and waved his halberd as he roared, "I recognize that symbol on your shoulder. You're one of Ba Huang City's bastards. Come at me! Let me send you to the depths of hell where you will never reincarnate again. I'll let you have a taste of what true desperation is!"

I acted quickly and whispered in the team chat, "This is a Lv 94 Saint Tier Tian Chen. His stats are just a little lower than Mu Lin's stats. He's really strong. Later, I'll advance first, so that I can tank him. Li Mu and Wang Jian can only take one attack from Tian Chen. There's no way they can take another attack. Therefore, you guys, make sure you guys stay alive. Wan Er, make sure you watch the durability of my [Wall of Dou Qi]. Once it's getting close to finishing, I'll hand the BOSS over to you so that I have time to take a breath. Little Wolf and Qing Qian must stun the BOSS when my [Wall of Dou Qi] is in cool down and do their best to drag down Tian Chen. We need to slowly whittle away his health. I'll start off attacking the BOSS. You guys wait a little before starting. Don't start until you understand the different skills he has!"

"Mhm!" Wan Er nodded and looked at me, "You be careful too!"

"Got it!"

I sighed and activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and my other BUFFs. I brought my Flaming Tiger God with me, and walked towards the BOSS. "Shua." My Cold Iron Sword flew out. At the same time, I opened my hand, and three Dragon Reservoir Sword images appeared in the air. In seconds, they pierced through Tian Chen's body, while my Cold Iron Sword completed

the first attack from [Blade Spin]—

“3717 ! ”

“3211 ! ”

I was astonished. I completely couldn't budge this BOSS, his defense was way too high!

Tian Chen held his halberd and rose from the ground. He charged at me, his body completely robed in flames. He accelerated towards me. This was the effect from [Blaze Rush]. He raised his halberd, and threw a fiery slice at me. This was an area attack! Even though I managed to parry it, he raised his halberd again and spun, and continued a barrage of attacks that lasted for a second. It was just like [Whirlwind Slash], and it was actually his skill [Halberd Whirlwind]. I felt searing pain rush through my chest. Two damage numbers flew up—

“4818 ! ”

“5122 ! ”

Good thing I had the effect of [Wall of Dou Qi]. I don't even want to think about what would happen if it was not activated....

Chapter 476: Halberd Flame

Getting hit by [Halberd Exorcism] and [Halberd Whirlwind], those two large scale skills, was extremely cruel. Even with my defense, I lost half of my health in a flash. Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring turned purple and they immediately gave me heals. Nobody here thought that a Saint Tier BOSS would be this strong. On top of that, the Halberd Wielder Tian Chen's movement speed was extremely fast, which made it harder for me to control his aggro.

"Be careful, make sure you slowly increase the damage that you deal." Wan Er said as she cautiously walked forward. Suddenly, she dealt a [Gouge] to Tian Chen's back, successfully stunning him. After all, Wan Er's level was very high.

"Pa pa pa", Dancing Forests' [Shield Breaker Shot] activated, decreasing the BOSS' defense by 20%. Dong Cheng also threw her ice magic into the mix.

"Hum!"

The halberd began to glow and Wan Er quickly looked at me, "Pig, hurry up...."

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and ran forward till I was behind the BOSS. In the end, he roared and threw a [Halberd Exorcism] right into my shoulder. The skill sliced right through me and dealt a deep gash into the wall that was a dozen meters away. I had most of the aggro on myself, and so, only by using my position on the battlefield, could I decrease the damage dealt to the rest of the team.

"Watch out for any signs of [Halberd Whirlwind]...." I cautioned.

"Oh, like what?" Wan Er asked.

I replied, "Around 0.5 seconds before the skill activates, a gust of fiery wind will start to encircle Tian Chen. The skill activates within seconds, and lasts for a whole second. So, Wan Er, you have to be careful!"

"Got it!"

Wan Er activated her [Blade of the Death God] and cut into the BOSS, causing him a lot of pain. However, with my two blades, I was able to deal enough damage to lock the BOSS' aggro solely on myself. A few seconds later, Tian Chen screeched, and flames began to wrap around his body. [Halberd Whirlwind] was coming!

“Shua!”

In one swift motion, Wan Er pulled out her Iron Umbrella, and held it right in front of her two snowy mounds. She assumed a defensive position that would decrease the damage dealt by 50%. I on the other hand, used my Dragon Reservoir Sword to parry the attack. “Keng Keng” the [Halberd Whirlwind] hit both Wan Er and I, and two damage numbers flew up—

“3217 ! ”

“3398 ! ”

Looks like our defense is about the same. Wan Er's combination of Heavenly Armor+[Shield of the Mundane World]+Moon Elf defense stats truly is incredibly strong!

.....

“Next time, we need to think of a way to interrupt the [Halberd Whirlwind]. The cooldown is only 17 seconds!” I said as I attacked.

Wan Er nodded, “Ok, I'll do my best!”

17 seconds later, Tian Chen raised his Halberd once again and shouted, “I swear to god that I will bring this blade to your necks and cut off your heads!”

This time Wan Er was much faster. With a single [Gouge] she successfully stunned him!

Once the [Halberd Whirlwind] was interrupted, Tian Chen stabbed forward three times, and brought the little miss' health all the way to critical. The speed of his attacks was astonishing!

I immediately ran forward and opened my hand, [Binding Chains]!

“Peng!”

Iron chains broke through the ground and shot forward, and wrapped themselves around the BOSS. Motherf*cker, it really does feel good to be fighting against a BOSS that is around my level!

.....

We continuously whittled away the BOSS' health. This Lv 94 Saint Tier BOSS took us a whole 20 minutes to fight. Finally, it reached 10% health. Right as I could feel the BOSS beginning to release his power, his entire body was enveloped by a layer of deep red lights. His last skill activated, [Purgatory Demon]. It decreased any damage dealt to him by 70% and lasted 180 seconds!

Looking at the skills stats, Wan Er and I smiled. We were extremely happy, because it meant that the Halberd Wielder Tian Chen didn't pose any threat to the survival of our team any longer.

After fighting for another 5 minutes, my Magic Spite Armor had gotten torn up by [Halberd Whirlwind] and [Blaze Rush], and only had around 10% durability left. As I dealt one last [Combo] + [Strength of a Thousand Men], the Halberd Wielder Tian Chen finally took his last breath and fell to the ground!

“Shua!”

A ray of light fell upon me and I leveled up to 90. It was a never before seen high level!

“Hua la.....”

Tian Chen's body began to glow and evaporate, leaving behind 4 pieces of equipment. The faint emerald glow made me extremely excited. Yup, that was the glow of a Saint Tier equipment. Looks like this Halberd Wielder really is generous. Within these 4 equipments, there must be one Saint Tier equipment. On top of that, there was a green skill book. It's probably pretty good.

I walked forward and listed out the trophies we got from Tian Chen. One of them was an Indigo colored sword. There was also a pair of lava leg guards, a red cloak, and a pair of leather boots. First off, I picked up

the indigo long sword. I could feel power emanating from the blade. It definitely wasn't an average equipment—

[Tian Chen Sword] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2400-2850

Strength: +102

Endurance: +100

Agility: +99

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 26%

Additional: Ignores 37% of the target's defense

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 3000

Special: [Tian Chen] When attacking a target, there's a 10% chance that a curse will activate, making it so that they cannot activate any skill for 3 seconds.

Special: [Chen Seal], Freezes oneself, so that for 7 seconds, the user will not receive any damage. At the same time, they cannot activate any attacks.

Required: 85

.....

"F*ck, Tian Chen Sword..." Li Mu's jaw dropped, "It's a Saint Tier equipment. Damn, we're gonna be rich. We got a Saint Tier equipment on the 4th floor!"

I nodded and glanced at the equipment rankings and said, "In the Chinese sever equipment rankings for swords, this Tian Chen sword is ranked 5th. In second place is Q-Sword's, third is Jian Feng Han, and fourth is Yan Zhao's sword. Hei hei, all in all, this Tian Chen sword really is a godly equipment!"

Wang Jian made a fist, "Basically, whoever gets this sword, can immediately become a top tier expert..."

Wan Er smiled, "How about you guys ROLL for it?"

I nodded, “Ok. Wang Jian Li Mu, why don’t you guys ROLL for it. My Dragon Reservoir Sword is already listed as the top sword on the server equipment rankings. There’s no need for me to fight with you guys over this Tian Chen Sword....”

Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao, you still have to get a supporting sword. This Tian Chen Sword’ stats are much stronger than your Cold Iron Sword. It even gives you 3000 to your MaxHP....”

I face-palmed, “That.... Melon, don’t mention my supporting weapon now. As a person, I can’t be too greedy. I’m forfeiting this ROLL....”

Thus, I set up the ROLL settings. It was just between Wang Jian and Li Mu. As the team leader, I had already forfeited this ROLL.

Li Mu and Wang Jian had no other choice but to continue on. 77 and 92. Li Mu got the Tian Chen Sword. Wang Jian had a little less luck. But that was fine too. We were all brothers. As long as this sword was in our hands, and was used to kill our enemies, then it was all the same. Wang Jian didn’t argue much about anyways. He just said that Li Mu had to treat him to a meal in the future.

I continued through the equipment, and took out the imposing leg guards. They were a deep red lava like color. There was even a soft fiery glow emanating from the leg guards. On the outside, it seemed to also glow a green-ish color. The second the equipment’s stats appeared in the air, Li Mu, Wang Jian and I practically started drooling. This really was a good piece of equipment—

[The Halberd Wielder’s Leg Guards] (Saint Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1120

Strength: +105

Endurance: +102

Magic Power: +100

Additional: Increases the user’s Magic Defense by 37%

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 24%

Additional: Increases rage, the user's Max Rage increases by 50 points

Special: [Halberd Flame] activates a flame that'll deal burn damage to all targets within a 10 yard radius. Lasts for 25 seconds and uses 60 points of Rage.

Required: 85

.....

"This...." Li Mu's jaw was almost touching the floor. Looking at those leg guards, his drool was already coming out, "Aren't these leg guards too shameless? It increases the Max Rage by 50 points. On top of that, the [Halberd Flame] is just too OP. If a high level warrior were to rush into combat with that on, who would dare try and get close to him?"

Beside me, Wan Er grinned, "Even worse, this person can activate [Dragon Transformation], so he can fly at an extremely high speed. There's no way to avoid him..."

Wang Jian smiled, "F*ck, little miss, are you saying that these Halberd Wielder Leg Guards are destined to go to your Brother Xiao Yao? I.... that's just too unfair, is it not...."

Dong Cheng glanced at him and smiled, "Hmph, for someone who stood there the entire time watching, and didn't even dare touch the BOSS' hide, I don't think you have a right to say what's fair and what's not...."

Wang Jian lost his smile, "Wah, I can't live any longer. Little Miss and Dong Cheng are all so biased towards Brother Xiao Yao..."

I laughed, "Alright already, stop acting so pitiful. Let us three heavy armor types ROLL for it, that way it'll be fair!"

Li Mu raised his sword and said, "Nah, I'm good. I'm a modest person, so this Tian Chen sword is already more than enough. I'm not quite so shameless as to ROLL for this Halberd Wielder Leg Guards too. I'm out!"

"Di" Li Mu forfeited the ROLL, leaving it to just Wang Jian and I!

"Shua!" my dice flew out and spun a few times before stopping. An

incredible number appeared—

100 points!

Wang Jian's eyes nearly rolled out of his head. He can only compete with me if he were to roll 100 too. However, when he threw out his die, his heart was crushed. It was an impressive 7 points. There was no way he could even fight for it!

.....

“Pa da....”

The Halberd Wielder Leg Guards fell into my bag. I happily equipped them immediately, increasing my stats drastically. The Saint Tier equipments really are strong! It's on a whole other level from Valkyrie Tier equipments—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 90

Attack: 5596-6884

Defense: 5497

Health: 17732

Magic: 5958

Charm: 198

CBN Ranking: 15

.....

My defense finally hit 5500. Without a defense like that, the next 3 BOSSes would've been extremely hard to tank!

Qing Qian raised her dagger and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao is now a true Drunken Sword Style, user right? You have so many special skills on you, and your max Rage is 150 points. If you were too look at the entire China Server, there's no one who could rival you....”

I looked at my equipments, “Yea, [Dragon Transformation] requires 60

points of rage, while [Halberd Flame] uses 60 points. [Defeat the Dragon] uses up around 20 points, while [Curse of the Night Fury Asura] also uses 20 points. In total, they require 160 points of rage, so what I have, isn't exactly enough. However, I'm still considered a Drunken Sword Style player. Rumors have it that a normal Drunken Sword Style user has 7-9 special skills. On top of that, drinking wine increases the rage effect, and so some users can even use two skills at a time. Even if the opponent was a top tier expert, they could still be killed in one explosive hit....."

Wan Er's pretty little face turned pale, "Eh.... When this game reaches its final stages, are all jobs that aren't heavy armor just going to lose like this? That Drunken Sword Style, truly is too OP...."

Chapter 477: Halberd Whirlwind

“Not necessarily....”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Based on what I know, all of the jobs have their own way of using the Drunken Sword Style. It all depends on if you’re willing to sacrifice some of the really good stats for special equipment. In addition, at the current stage, there aren’t that many special equipments out there. Even equipments that increase rage haven’t appeared until now. Who knows if there really will be a true Drunken Sword Style?”

Wang Jian walked over and patted my shoulder, “Brother Xiao Yao....”

I glared at him, “F*ck, what what do you want?!”

Wang Jian blushed, “Now that you have the Halberd Wielder’s leg guards, then why don’t you give me the Dragon Knight’s Leg Guards? You can think of it as a consolation prize. I’ve been thinking about that [Recovery of the Dragon Knight] special skill for a while now, I just didn’t want to say anything....”

“Greedy....”

Unhappily, I took the Dragon Knight Leg Guards from my bag and handed them to him.

Dancing Forest Raised her long bow, “ Thinking about it, there’s two other equipments that we haven’t looked at the stats for. Hurry up! I’m so tired and hungry!”

“Ok!”

Continuing on, the third piece of equipment was a fiery cloak. I raised it up and gave it a light shake. The stats appeared as waves of heat radiated from the cloak. One after another, the dazzling numbers appeared—

[Halberd Wielder Cloak] (Saint Tier)

Defense: 970

Strength: +102

Endurance: +100

Agility: +99

Additional: Increases the user's agility by 15%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP to 2200

Special: [Wind Rider], Increases the user's movement speed by 17%

Special: [Swift Victory], Increases the user's attack power by 15%

Required: 85

.....

“Fck, it's another Saint Tier equipment. What kind of luck is this?!” Li Mu's jaw fell to the ground.

I raised the Halberd Wielder's Cloak and said, “It's a cloak type equipment, so any class can wear it. However, that 15% increase in agility is clearly targeted towards Archers, Musketeers, and Assassins. Come, how about our leather type players all ROLL for it....”

From that speech, everyone knew that this cloak was destined to end up with either Qing Qian, Wolf, Wan Er, or Dancing Forest. Very soon, the four began to ROLL. In the end, Qing Qian had the best luck, and won the cloak with 87 points!

The last equipment was a pair of leather shoes that was Emperor Tier. Even though it wasn't exactly trash, it was worth getting excited for. It ended up getting ROLLED to Thousand League Spring.

The last item was a green skill book. I waved my hand over the book, and the stats appeared in the air

[Halberd Whirlwind] (SS Tier) : Summons the strength of a halberd and deals a fiery whirlwind of attacks to all targets within a 20 yard radius. All damage dealt by the skill is 140% of the normal damage. Requires a halberd, a lance, a long sword, or a long blade. Class: All warrior types
Level: 84 Charm: 4 Points

.....

My hand shook a little and I smiled, “Damn, it’s a close combat area attack skill!! Motherf*cker, this, this is a priceless treasure. Even Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword haven’t collected many area attack skills. This [Halberd Whirlwind] is a SS tier skill, a top tier area skill. My luck really is good, its OP!”

Li Mu excitedly smiled, “Here, there are only three heavy armor types here. This [Halberd Whirlwind] is definitely going to become one of us. Let’s ROLL it, the time for the most suspenseful moment!”

I nodded, and accepted the three people into the ROLL. My roll appeared in the sky: 71 points. Not bad, it wasn’t too terrible, and it wasn’t too good.

Wang Jian also threw out his die and got 83 points, defeating me in one blow!

Li Mu didn’t get that many points, 11. Way too low!

Wang Jian ended up getting the [Halberd Whirlwind]. He was so happy that he could’ve jumped off a cliff from the excitement. He held the skill book in the palm of his hand. “Shua!” it disappeared. Afterwards, everyone stared at him, waiting to see the effect of the [Halberd Whirlwind]!

“GRR!”

Wang Jian lowered his body slightly, and roared. At that moment, flames began to flare up around him. Right afterwards, an energy began to gather in his body, and start to whirl around, creating a 20 yard radius. “Hong!” it disappeared in a second! Even though it didn’t last very long, I could still feel the strength of the [Halberd Whirlwind]!

Very good, I was extremely excited. Now that he got the [Halberd Whirlwind], Wang Jian’s strength on the frontlines would greatly increase. This meant that [Zhan Long]’s heavy armor team’s strength would greatly increase! Wang Jian originally had extremely good maneuvers, and top tier equipments. On top of that, the SS tier skill [Halberd Whirlwind], is made just for top tier warriors. If only [Zhan Long] had 10 Wang Jian’s on the battlefield, wouldn’t we pretty much rule

the world?

.....

“Alright already, I’m so tired....” Wan Er leaned against my shoulder and sneezed, “Let’s rest back in the city. We can just keep the teleportation crystal with us, and come back later. How does that sound?”

“Alright!”

I looked around at everyone and said, “Right now it’s 12:40. Eating and sleeping will take 11 hours and 20 minutes. Everyone, let’s meet up together against at 12:00 tomorrow night. We’ll try and finish the quest completely right after that!”

Everyone nodded, “Alright, back to the city!”

I put away the teleportation crystal into my bag and crushed a City Return Scroll. The entire group appeared in Ba Huang City one by one. Nobody wanted to fix up their equipments at the moment. Instead, they all just logged off, first thing. We were all tired and hungry, and needed to get some food.

.....

I waited at the bottom of the girls dorm. Wan Er and Dong Cheng both came down the stairs. The two spirited girls seemed extremely tired, and rubbed their eyes as they watched. Wan Er said, “So hungry, so tired. Let’s go eat some...”

I nodded, “Yup, how about we go to the buffet?”

“Alright, we’ll wait for you here. You drive!”

“Yup.”

I headed to the parking lot, and drove the white A4 over. Afterwards, the two girls got into the car. We passed through the urban district and arrived at a buffet. I parked the car at the side of the road. I looked back and smiled, Wan Er and Dong Cheng had both fallen asleep in the back.

After I got out of the car, I woke up the two girls. The second we entered the buffet, a wave of scents overcame our noses. At that moment, the two

girls seemed to fully wake up. It was as though they were little white rabbits that had smelled the scent of fresh grass. We paid money to the waitress, and we went in to get all the food we could see. After an hour, I had eaten my fill and drank three bowls of soup and started a conversation with the two girls—

I said, “This quest in the Sword Saint Forest, probably will give us another 2-5 Saint Tier equipments. This SSS tier quest’s drop rate really is too great. After this quest, our core players’ strength should go up quite a bit.”

Wan Er nodded, “Yup yup. Li Mu got the Tian Chen Sword and Wang Jian got [Halberd Whirlwind]. The General Family’s two generals have already gotten much stronger by the fourth floor....”

Dong Cheng smiled and asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, why’d you forfeit the fight over the Tian Chen Sword? Based on your OP luck, you had a high chance of getting the sword. That Tian Chen Sword’s attack is much higher than the Cold Iron Sword’s. This way, when you use your [Blade Spin], the damage dealt will be much greater.”

I pursed my lips and said, “Nevermind. They’re all my brothers. Besides, Li Mu and Wang Jian’s equipment really isn’t that good. Raising their strength means raising my own strength. I don’t care if I don’t have the Tian Chen Sword. After all, my main damage comes from my Dragon Reservoir Sword.”

“Ok....”

“Let’s go back and sleep. Afterwards, we’ll wake up a little earlier, and eat a good meal when we wake up.”

“Ok!”

.....

We left the restaurant and got onto the A4, and by the time I stopped before the girls dorm, the two girls had already fallen asleep again. After all, they didn’t have the same stamina as me, who has reached the level of Royal Air top tier, so it wasn’t surprising that they didn’t have as much

energy or stamina.

I opened up the car door and shook Wan Er's shoulder, "Wan Er, it's time to wake up..."

Wan Er slowly squinted her eyes, and then fell back asleep, "Let me sleep now...."

"F*ck!"

I was speechless. I reached out and wrapped my arm around her slim waist. I then put my other arm under her legs, and lifted her out of the car. I smiled and quietly whispered in her ear, "Wan Er, hurry up and wake up. Someone's kidnapping Dong Cheng. If you don't hurry up and wake up, she'll end up being pa pa pa...."

"Eh...."

Wan Er opened up her beautiful eyes and said, "Where?"

She turned around and saw that Dong Cheng was lazily laying on the car seat. She then immediately looked back at me said, "You bastard, aren't you tricking me? Besides.... why are you holding me...."

I immediately put her down and said, "Hurry up and take Dong Cheng back to sleep. It isn't comfortable in the car."

"Ok."

Wan Er slowly woke up completely and supported Dong Cheng and walked over to the door. Afterwards, she waved at me without turning around and smiled, "Hurry up and sleep. Don't tire yourself out!"

I was speechless.

I watched as they both went upstairs. Afterwards, I glanced around at the hidden guards, before I went to park the car. I quickly rushed back upstairs to my door and covered my head with my blanket and fell to sleep.

.....

When I woke up, it was already 10 at night. I got up from my bed. I then

went downstairs to go pick up Wan Er and Dong Cheng to eat a midnight snack. When I returned to the dorm and got online. It was time to continue the Sword Saint Abyss quest. I couldn't drag this quest for too long. I couldn't just leave Matcha, Old K and Fox and the others to manage the guild. After all, the only person who's actually managing the guild is probably Matcha. Old K was a crude person, there was no way he knew how to manage a guild. Fox was only good at logistics. The only person that was good at managing, was the clever Matcha.

“Shua!”

When I appeared in Ba Huang City, it was already 11:40. Looking at all of the structures around me, I felt much more refreshed. After I fixed up my equipment, I replenished my potions. Afterwards, I took out the 119 pieces of Garrison Armor pieces and put them into our guild storage. Very soon, all nine members of the team logged on and met up in the city.

.....

I took out the red crystal and said, “Is everyone ready?”

Everyone nodded and said, “Ok, let's go!”

“Shua!”

The crystal summoned a teleportation circle that lasted for 50 seconds. Within the blink of an eye, we arrived on the fifth floor of the Sword Saint Abyss. I raised my sword and walked forward, with Wan Er close behind me. All around us were waves of heat, and the monsters from the fourth floor had yet to spawn again. Clearly, nobody had gone in yet. The fifth floor monsters screeched. It wasn't until the teleportation circle behind us disappeared, did I feel relieved. Doing this was necessary. I didn't want someone to suddenly appear at a critical moment while we were fighting the BOSS.

Chapter 478: The Visit of an Old Friend

On the fifth floor of the Sword Saint Abyss, the magma rocks were even hotter. Waves of heat rushed at my face, and I felt like I was cooking in a pot. On top of that, smoke filled the air, and made it hard to breathe.

“Cough cough...” Wan Er even began choking a little from the smoke. The two mounds under her leather armor shook a few times, making Li Mu and Wang Jian blush.

I grunted and walked forward. Around 30 yards away from me, were two Cavalrymen who were clothed in armor and sat upon black war horses. This was the fifth floors monsters. On top of that, I looked further away, and saw that the map was covered with them. I cautiously walked a few meters closer to look at their stats, and shared it in the team chat —

[Garrison Cavalry] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 95

Attack: 3800-4550

Defense: 4200

Health: 2300000

Skills: [Halberd Pierce] [Rage Cut] [Impact Roar]

Introduction: Garrison Cavalry, these elite warriors used to be Cho Yuan City's most honorable knights. As a member of Bai Meng Army, they followed the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han all the way to Ba Huang City. However, because of past events, they were willing to fight for Ba Huang City instead. Afterwards, the suspicious Luo Lei didn't trust these soldiers from the outside, and so in the night, the Ba Huang Army army ambushed the Bai Meng Army and killed them all, and sealed the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han. These Garrison Cavalry have been deep asleep in Hell, and were summoned to the Abyss by the Chi Yu Han. Their sole goal is to massacre Ba Huang City.

.....

“Huh?” It’s another Garrison type monster?” Li Mu smiled and said, “No.... it can’t be, is this another monster that drops outfits? Then we’ll be earning big time.... I think we got around 21 outfits last time right?”

I nodded, “Yup, let’s start. It’d be best if these Garrison Cavalry drop Garrison Armor Sets. If it was like that, then we really do have hope for a hundred man Garrison Set Team. At this stage in the game, that team will be undefeatable!”

Wang Jian Excitedly said, “Alright! Just thinking about it is impressive. A team of Garrison Set ten thousand + health warriors.... If they were to all activate [Impact Roar], that scene would just be too amazing!”

“Ha ha, slaughter them all!”

I waved my left arm and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out, and it pierced right through the chest of a Garrison Cavalryman, dealing out 4127 damage. At that moment, I attracted two Cavalrymen over. They were extremely quick, as if they were charging. Before they even got close, they raised their halberds. The blades radiated energy as they sliced down right towards my Magic Spite Armor. F*ck, these bastards have really high attack. Even my [Wall of Dou Qi] couldn’t completely block it all!”

“1727 ! ”

“1871 ! ”

I retreated several steps, and gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I then let out a [Combo] + [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Once my Cold Iron Sword completed all 9 of its attacks, I grabbed the handle, and spun around. I swept past the two Garrison Cavalrymen like a whirlwind. One after another, the attacks sliced through their armor plates, quickly decreasing the 23,000 health that they had down to 15,000. Behind me, Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest had already begun their attack. Wang Jian roared and threw a slice. The attack carried the light of [Halberd Whirlwind]. At that moment, the two Cavalrymen both trembled, and began losing health. Soon, they activated [Impact Roar], and a red shockwave passed through our team. Wang Jian lost 7000 health in that one attack. Li Mu was no better, as he had lost around the same amount.

After all, they were 10 levels below the monster's level. On top of that, a Thunder Tier monster's skills were pretty terrifying, so the two couldn't exactly handle it.

"You guys, be careful of when the [Impact Roar] comes. Make sure you guys don't receive a critical attack, or else it'll be even more painful." I smiled.

"Ok, understood...." Li Mu waved his Tian Chen Sword and charged right at the monster.

Wang Jian followed his [Halberd Whirlwind] with an [Impact Roar], dealing enormous damage to the two Cavalrymen.

"3516 ! "

"3711 ! "

Not bad, Wang Jian and Li Mu's attack are now top tier. They were just a little weaker than Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Ye Lai, or my attack.

.....

Very soon, the two Cavalrymen all fell to the ground. When the second Cavalryman fell to his knees, a fiery armor plate dropped. I wasn't disappointed. It really was the Garrison Set. The monsters of the fifth floor dropped the Garrison Set too!

I slapped my thigh and put the Garrison Chest plate into my bag. Excited, I said "Brothers, you guys have to work hard! Looks like within these two days, we're destined to achieve some greatness!"

Wang Jian grinned, "This Garrison Outfit really is great, it's OP! Brother Xiao Yao, later when we go back to the guild, we'll list out all of the heavy armor players in the guild. We'll rank them by the time they've been in the guild, the number of guild points that they have, their level, and the strength of their skills. We can't just give these outfits to just anyone. Otherwise, if everyone who gets an outfit suddenly leaves the guild, then we'll be losing too much!"

I nodded, “Ok. Let’s give 10 of them to Wan Er’s [Zhan Long: Defense Army], and prioritize the rest for players in the main guild. This seems to be the most reasonable. All of the players in the main guild have been with us for at least a month, and they have enough strength as a team.”

“Ok!”

.....

I continued walking forward. It was the middle of the night, and our team was excitedly killing all Garrison Cavalrymen in sight. I dealt the last attack on most of them, making the most out of my high drop rate. On top of that, the amount of experience we got was shocking. After two hours, my experience bar was already 87% filled to Lv 91. After this floor, I should be able to level up!

Time slowly ticked away. Finally, when we had killed around 75% of the monsters on the fifth floor, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Wolf and I had 31 Garrison Outfits in total. Every time a Garrison Set piece dropped, everyone would cheer. Even though the Cavalrymen’s attack was terrifying, and a few times Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf and Qing Qian were almost instantly killed, this kind of excitement never faded.

“Sha sha...”

My Cloud Stepping boots stepped onto a magma rock as I walked forward. Behind me, Qing Qian looked up at the top of the abyss. “Pa Ta”, a small pebble fell onto her nose. Qing Qian blinked a few times, but she didn’t see anything. However, she kept staring and mumbled, “Brother Xiao Yao, come over here....”

“Eh, Qing Qian?”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked over. Qing Qian made a fist and continued walking forward. She then lengthened her neck and straightened her back, sticking out her C cup mounds. After a few seconds, she softly said, “I feel like someone has discovered our whereabouts. There must be someone trying to come down here....”

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and said, “It can’t be... This Sword

Saint Abyss isn't something normal people can get into. You saw it too, the vine rope that we used to get down here burned away in minutes. Besides that, Wind Elf players can't fly in this map. Is it possible that its Jian Feng Han using pads*?"

TL Note: Chinese pun

Dancing Forest grimaced, "It's [Wings of Freedom], not pads!"

Li Mu laughed, "Don't nitpick, gosh...."

Wan Er's elegant eyebrows knit together. She suddenly raised her iron umbrella with her left hand and softly whispered, "I feel it. Someone really did come down. They're right above me!"

"What do we do?" Wolf asked.

Wang Jina made a fist and said, "Hmph, what else can we do? Kill whoever came down here! This Sword Saint Abyss is our SSS Tier Main Quest. How can we let someone else get a share of the action?!"

Li Mu gripped his Tian Chen Sword with both hands and summoned his pet. He was already making preparations for battle.

I raised my hand and said, "Don't get too excited right now. We don't know who's come down right now yet. How can we attack before deciding if they're friend or foe? Besides, [Zhan Long] is at least one of the top ten guilds, we must uphold the guild image. Diplomacy before violence.

If we've done everything we can, and the opponent still doesn't retreat, then fighting them afterwards wouldn't be in the wrong!"

As I said that, I looked towards everyone else and said, "Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Wolf, use [Stealth] and stay on guard here. The rest of you, retreat with me. We'll hide in the smoke and watch. We'll decide on what to do after that. Wan Er, I'll leave everything here to you!"

Wan Er smiled, "Ok, don't worry!"

.....

I immediately brought Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Dong Cheng to retreat and entered into the smoke. Wan Er, Wolf and Qing Qian all went into

stealth mode, and stood in a triangle.

I suddenly heard a “hua la” sound in the air. It was the sound of steel hitting against steel. A heavy mace fell from the fourth floor. Right afterwards, a man carrying a battle mace descended. On his shoulder was a symbol, he was one of [Flying Dragon]’s players!

Slowly, I began to see the other side. It was none other than [Flying Dragon]’s Elder— Mu Tian. I think that the Guild Creation Tablet that we used to create [Zhan Long] came from him too!

“Si si....”

The iron chain in his hand began to smoke. Mu Tian withstood the pain and gritted his teeth, “F*ck, it really hurts. Boss, why is it that the first person to come down is always me? There isn’t a single monster here! What are we even here for? I can’t see the bottom from here. What if I get instantly killed by a monster? Don’t forget my compensation!”

Above, I could hear Soaring Dragon’s laughter, “Ha ha, if you die, then I’ll take care of your wife, don’t worry about that!”

Mu Tian’s face turned green, “My girlfriend is only 19 years old, don’t be like that boss...”

And so, I watched Mu Tian shimmy down the iron chain. He shook his butt and slowly came down.

.....

In the team chat, Wan Er softly asked, “Pig, it’s [Flying Dragon]. Should I kill him?”

I thought about it for a second and said, “Why don’t we talk to Mu Tian first. Flying Dragon doesn’t pose too much of a threat to us. Ambushing them doesn’t seem to be very just either. Why don’t we just talk to them. If they are determined to battle, then we’ll kill them all!”

“Alright!”

Wan Er raised her Dragon’s Kiss dagger and walked forward. With her left hand, she rammed her iron umbrella into the iron chain!

“Peng!”

The iron chain swung a bit, and Mu Tian couldn't hold on. He ended up falling to the ground. Wan Er squinted her beautiful eyes and elegantly bent over. She then raised a long leg and “Pa!” kicked Mu Tian's stomach. Mu Tian yelled out as he tumbled along the magma rock. He immediately jumped up and pulled out his battle axe. Astonished, he stared through the smoke at Wan Er and said, “Who's there? Who dares to ambush me? Eh.... so beautiful... you're.... F*ck, [Zhan Long]'s Vice Guild Master—Cang Tong!?”

Chapter 479: A chance to drink soup

Wan Er gave off a light smile. Standing in the fierce wind, her snowy cloak fluttered behind her. Her two mounds stuck out from her chest and her beautiful long snow white legs swayed in the flickering fire light. Her right foot stepped forward onto the rubble and she quietly stood there. It was as though a goddess had descended onto the earth. It really was the most beautiful scene. Mu Tian was stupefied.

“Cang Tong, you.... what are you doing?”

Mu Tian’s battle axe trembled when he saw Qing Qian and Wolf, [Zhan Long]’s top Assassins walk out of the shadows from behind Wan Er. If Mu Tian even had a 10% chance of surviving Wan Er’s attack, that would have been all for naught with the addition of these two people. Mu Tian’s chance for survival was practically 0%!”

Wan Er looked at Mu Tian and smiled, “Our Guild Master said, that we’ll treat you with respect and give a warning for you to retreat first. Seeing as [Flying Dragon] has made it here, that means that you guys have the skill. However, for the next 48 hours, this Sword Saint Abyss is [Zhan Long]’s, because we’re currently on an SSS tier main quest. No matter how important your stuff is, it can’t be as important as a main quest. You understand the rules of the game. Therefore, I politely ask that our friends from [Flying Dragon] leave, otherwise....”

“Otherwise what?”

From the sky, another person descended down the chain. It was Fierce Tiger, [Flying Dragon]’s number one Berserker, and also their Vice Guild Master. He was currently Lv 85, and he did have the ability to challenge Wan Er.

“Pa...”

Fierce Tiger landed on the ground, and loftily looked at Wan Er and said, “Beauty Cang Tong, we do understand the rules of this game. But, if I’m not mistaken, your quest is just killing BOSSes. Isn’t [Zhan Long]’s mission to “fight for the weak”? [Flying Dragon] isn’t here to fight over

the BOSS with you guys, so you should at least give us the chance to drink some soup, right? We just want to kill the monsters, how does that sound?”

As he finished talking, the chain behind Fierce Tiger began to tremble, and another dozen heavy armor players landed. They were all players that were Lv 82 and above. Looks like [Flying Dragon]’s core team all came along.

Looking at the formation they made, Wan Er couldn’t help but smile, “The chance to drink soup? [Flying Dragon], you are an official enemy of [Zhan Long]. The fact that we didn’t go straight to slaughtering you is already giving you more respect than you deserve. Do you really think that I would care about those noobs you brought with you?”

Fierce Tiger gritted his teeth, “Cang Tong, I gave you my respect because you are Fan Shu City’s Number One Beauty, and [Hero’s Mound]’s former Vice Guild Master. Don’t push your limits. Today, this Sword Saint Forest is [Flying Dragon]’s, even if we must occupy it forcefully. What are you guys going to do about that?!”

Wan Er pursed her lips, now that he was threatening her. But she kept up her sweet smile, and gave a small wave behind her, “Then there’s no other way. I suppose I’ll just invite my Guild Master over here to make the final decision. Pig, get your butt over here. Someone’s bullying me....”

As she talked, Wan Er’s elegant eyebrows knitted together, and she made a fist as she stood there alone. She bent her head down, and gave a very unjust look. At that moment, Fierce Tiger, Mu Tian and the others were stupefied. Who knew that Fan Shu City’s Number one beauty, or in other words the number one beauty in the entire Chinese Server, would be acting cute and childish. Fierce Tiger and Mu Tian, those old lechers, kept staring at this beauty, and they were almost willing to sell their bodies to make her happy....

The flat side of Li Mu’s Tian Chen Sword rammed against my back as he joked, “Hey hey, what are you waiting for? Your Cang Tong is summoning you....”

My cheeks burned, but my heart was warm. I picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked out of the smoke. I quickly walked over in front of Cang Tong, with my Flaming Tiger God right beside me. I suddenly raised my hand behind me and pulled my Cold Iron Sword out of its sheath. I glanced over at Fierce Tiger and Mu Tian, and smiled, "What Cang Tong wants, is what I want. If [Flying Dragon] wants to be stubborn and continue to do what they want, and try to cause problems with [Zhan Long]'s main quest, then we won't hold back. Just now, I have recorded everything that happened, and so you can't try and trash us on the forums as if [Zhan Long] was being a bully. [Zhan Long] has already been extremely generous. Anything after this, is [Flying Dragon] looking for its own doom!"

As I finished talking, Li Mu and Wang Jian already charged out from behind me. They began laughing, "Then what more are we talking about? Kill!"

"F*ck!"

Those two bastards are so crude!

.....

Fierce Tiger's eyes turned cold, as he realized that this situation wasn't going to end peacefully. He raised his battle axe and shouted, "Everyone, get down here quick! [Zhan Long] has made their move. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Qing Qian are all here. Guild Master, Little Flower*, get down here!!"

*TL Note: Referring to Drunken Spear

"Drunken Spear?" My eyes turned cold. That was the one player from [Flying Dragon] that posed a threat. We couldn't let him come down!

I raised my hand and used a [Blade Spin], locking it right onto the chain. Once I finished determining the path of the attack, I let the blade fly. "Keng keng keng!" It sliced through the chain 9 times. In the end, the chain had been cut apart right before Drunken Spear or Soaring Dragon could even come down!

On the border of the floor, all that was left was Mu Tian, Fierce Tiger and 17 other players. They all stood stock still. All that was left for them was to fight for their lives!

“First kill General Li Mu!”

Fierce Tiger raised his battle axe and held in the pain from Li Mu’s sweeping blade. He threw [Skyslayer Slash], [Flame Axe], and [Battle Axe Throw] all at Li Mu. Behind me, a group of Swordsman all began their attack as well. They all locked their skills onto Li Mu. Right afterwards, five lines of [Flying Sword] paths darted right at Li Mu’s chest. “Keng Keng Keng”, one after another, damage numbers flew up—

“826 ! ”

“923 ! ”

“729 ! ”

“502 ! ”

.....

On after another, the damage numbers flew up, but no matter how many appeared, they still couldn’t kill Li Mu. He now had 12,000+ health. After all, the stats on that Tian Chen sword weren’t fake. Once the [Flying Dragon] people were all done with their barrage of attacks, Li Mu still had more than 3000 health. The second the [Dou Qi Armor] disappeared from his body, Darling Duck used a [Grip of Compassion] and filled up all of his health.

“Bullshit!”

Fierce Tiger’s eyes nearly fell out of their sockets, “Why’s he so tough. Just how much f*cking health does he have? If we have to keep this up, how many times do we have to kill him? Are all of [Zhan Long]’s people monsters?”

Li Mu let out a hearty laugh. The advantages of a ten thousand + health warrior had finally appeared. After activating [Dou Qi Armor] he decreased all damage dealt to him by 50%. Even though he was against a

ten man team, he still wouldn't die. That ten thousand health wasn't for nothing!

He swept out his Tian Chen Sword, and cleaved apart two people. Li Mu was like a Death God, and used his own imposing aura to pressure his enemies.

Wang Jian picked up his blade and cut into Fierce Tiger. Suddenly, he used a [Halberd Whirlwind]. "Hong!" a wind picked up, and Fierce Tiger flew into the air. Once his body left the ground, he fell straight into the abyss!

"Damn, he fell off the side..." Wang Jian lamented, "Where's my head!"

I shook my hand in the air and smiled, "That head is mine!"

"Hong!"

I activated [Great Realm of Desolation] and targeted the falling Fierce Tiger. Even though I couldn't get his equipment, the +1 for [Kill for Blood] was enough.

On the other side, Mu Tian began his attack, and they were all targeting Wan Er. It was as though they thought that killing Cang Tong would deal some kind of great loss to our team. I didn't even need to go and help her deal with them. For the beautiful little miss and her battle power, I wasn't worried about her at all!

With one hand holding her Dragon's Kiss Dagger and the other holding her Iron Umbrella, Wan Er charged right at the team of Berserkers and Swordsmen without any fear. "Keng Keng Keng", she parried all of the attacks thrown at her. With a slide, she spun around and dodged another few [Blade Rush]es. With a sweep of her dagger, "ka ka" she let out three stabs. Then, with a dip of her iron umbrella, she rammed a Swordsman right into the ground.

Mu Tian threw out 7 attacks at once, but never managed to deal an effective attack on Wan Er. Either the Dragon's Kiss dagger parried it, or she used her Iron Umbrella to block the attack. Either way, the damage dealt to her never surpassed 1000. No matter what angle of attack that he

tried, the little miss could read it, and parry. She then used a [Ice Pick Whirlpool], and all of the heavy armor players of [Flying Dragon] with less than half their health left fell to the ground, and died!

.....

Seeing this scene, Wolf was stunned. His jaw dropped and exclaimed, "I.... this is the first time I've seen an Assassin kill heavy armor players like that. The little miss.... really is stronger than Qing Qian and I by a lot...."

Dancing Forest smiled, "Nope, she's stronger than you by a lot, and she's stronger than melon by a little..."

"Are you going to die if you don't tease me!"

"Kisses..."

"....."

In the blink of an eye, we killed all of the [Flying Dragon] players that were there. Without the chain from before, they had no way of coming down. If they were to try and jump down, then they would definitely fall into the abyss and be burned to death.

We needed to hurry up, it was getting close to another hour and we needed to kill all of the monsters on the fifth floor. Soon, another 11 outfits were going to appear in everyone's bag. If we were going to continue like this, we would have 63 outfits in total. This was already an extremely terrifying number. If.... if the remaining two floors had this kind of equipment, then [Zhan Long]'s battle power on the front lines will dominate the Chinese Server!

Stepping onto the burning hot magma rock, I walked at the head of the team. With every step, we were getting close to the end of the floor. The BOSS should appear soon. At that moment, I glanced around the floor, and found the secret. In reality, the position that the teleportation crystals took us to, were the same for the past two floors. On top of that the following positions were all shorter than the floor above it. We couldn't force our way through to the next floor; this also meant that the

players from [Flying Dragon] had only one way of getting to the next floor and that was through the teleportation circle. Yep this way we could safely kill the boss and not worry about getting ambushed.

Intense heat and smoke covered the sky, and I couldn't see much because my view was greatly blocked by the smoke. I glanced around and saw that at the end of the floor there was a man in crimson armor and in his hand was a longsword as he rode on top of a magma battle horse waiting for us.

“Gu dong...”

Li Mu gulped down a large ball of spit and said, “The BOSS has appeared!”

Chapter 480: Hell's Meteor Shower

I was close to the boss and carefully walked over. I quickly read through the bosses stats and shared it with the team in the team chat. At that moment everyone was a bit speechless. All of the bosses in this Sword Saint Abyss were getting more and more difficult.

[Guardian Tian Jing] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 95

Attack: 5200-5750

Defense: 4900

Health: 15,000,000

Skills: [Guardian Blade] [Crystal Massacre] [Heaven's Storm] [Hell's Meteor Shower]

Introduction: Tian Jing, legend has it that there was an ancient demon who was born in the midst of a battle. Once this battle demon died his spirit was crushed into little tiny bits and fell into the world of humans. In the end the pieces all reincarnated within a young infant. As this infant grow older and greater he clearly showed a God given talent. In the end he managed to gain a name for himself in Chi Yuan City, and he became an important general in the Empire. He then followed the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han into the south for battle and became one of the number one general in his army. In the end he was killed by Ba Huang City's Imperial Guard and was then in the end sealed within the Sword Saint Abyss.

.....

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and looked behind us, "[Flying Dragon] definitely won't give up easily. We need to kill this BOSS as quickly as possible. If they come at us while we're fighting the BOSS, then it'll be difficult. Just now, Drunken Spear, and Soaring Dragon didn't have the chance to attack, that doesn't mean that this time they won't do the same...."

Wan Er's beautiful eyes looked over the BOSS, and she softly said, "The attack power is quite a bit higher than the Halberd Wielder Tian Chen. This Guardian Tian Jing's skills don't seem quite the same either, so we need to be careful."

"Got it! Healers, make sure you keep our health up. Other than Wan Er and I, the rest of you don't attack. Don't attack until the BOSS uses at least two rounds of his skills, and we understand what they do."

"Yes sir!"

Taking my Flaming Tiger God, I charged right ahead. I waved my hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] right onto the BOSS. "Keng!" my blade cut right into his body, dealing 3000 damage. The defense really is tough. Right after taking my hit, Tian Jing immediately started roaring in anger, and he commanded his horse to charge right over. With a flash of his blade, he threw a cut right into my shoulder!

"5718 ! "

I retreated several steps. Before I could even recover my senses, the BOSS had already turned around. Crystal light began to reflect off of his blade and three crystallized slashes flew straight at me! This was a magic and physical attack!

"4218 ! "

"4427 ! "

"4191 ! "

.....

I didn't immediately die because I had received a [Heal] from Darling Duck. My [Wall of Dou Qi] fell all the way to 30% durability from that one attack. This Guardian Tian Jing waved his arm and smiled, "Devastate, come, [Heaven's Storm]!"

The third skill came, it must be an AOE skill!

I quickly rushed forward, "Peng!" I threw a combo right into the BOSS's chest. Unfortunately, [Strength of a Thousand Men] couldn't interrupt

[Heaven's Storm]. Without another word, I immediately activated [Curse of the Night Fury]!

“Shua!”

A red chain of spells wrapped around his neck, and the curse succeeded! For 2 seconds, the BOSS couldn't activate any skills! Of course, that also meant that [Curse of the Night Fury]'s cooldown was wasted this time. I grabbed my returning Cold Iron Sword and started slashing at the BOSS. “Keng keng keng” seven or eight arrows also thudded into the BOSS. Each of Dancing Forest's [Shield Breaker Shots] dealt critical damage. Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring both gave me a [Grip of Compassion], bringing my health up to around 75% of my MaxHP.

“Peng!”

Dipping forward, I felt a cut appeared on my shoulder. Tian Jing had activated [Guardian Blade]!

“11374 ! ”

I retreated several steps and Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword to cover for me. With a sweep of his sword, he activated [Absolute Authority]. Even though he didn't manage to drag the aggro towards himself, he still blocked the BOSS for the moment, and gave me some time to recover. Tian Jing let out a maniacal laugh, and raised his sword. He threw a slice right from his battle horse, and with a “Keng!” he practically cleaved Li Mu's armor. An enormous damage number popped up—

“7781 ! ”

[Dou Qi Armor] would lose so much durability from that one attack. Guild Master managed to take on all of those attacks....”

Wan Er looked extremely focused as she said, “Li Xiao Yao manages because he has [Wall of Dou Qi], otherwise he would've never been able to take it. Li Mu, Wang Jian, both of you stay away. I'll take the aggro! Dong Cheng, Little Dance, you guys make sure you pull further away, and prepare to kite. This BOSS isn't something that Li Xiao Yao can tank.”

“Alright!”

Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng split apart and went towards the East and West side of the map, respectively. They didn't stop until they were around 40 yards away. Wan Er and I stood between the BOSS and them to drag the aggro towards ourselves.

“Damn it...I'm going to rip you apart!” Tian Jing suddenly raised his long sword. Thirty seconds later, he shouted, “Devastate them, [Heaven's Storm]!”

Wan Er quickly dashed over and activated her [Shield of the Mundane World]. She then threw a [Gouge] right at the BOSS' chest. “Pa Cha!” it failed! Once the skill missed, she quickly retreated and opened her iron umbrella with a “Pa!” I then sliced at the BOSS with both of my swords several times. My [Curse of the Night Fury Asura] was still in cooldown, so I couldn't activate it again. All I could do was raise my Dragon Reservoir Sword and brace myself!

[Heaven's Storm]!

“Hong!”

A biting gale suddenly swept through an enormous area. It felt like blades were constantly cutting at Wan Er and I. After three attacks, Wan Er retreated with critical health, while I was down to around 4000 health. What was even worse, was the fact that my [Wall of Dou Qi] disappeared with a, “Shua!” God damn it, I needed 60 seconds for the skill to finish its cooldown. That meant that there was still 30 seconds where I was defenseless!

Darling Duck quickly used a [Grip of Compassion] to give me health!

“+11845 ! ”

After the heal descended on me, Tian Jing's longsword came at me. It was another [Guardian Blade]!

“8136 ! ”

I'm done for!

My heart sunk. Without my [Wall of Dou Qi], my defense wasn't much

higher than Li Mu's. I couldn't defend against that kind of attack.

"Grr...."

My Flaming Tiger God was wrapped up completely by [Flame Armor]. He swung his sharp claws and dealt [Flame Claw] + [Fierce Roar] onto the BOSS. However, the poor tiger was too close to the BOSS. With two swings, Tian Jing cut down my Flaming Tiger God, and with a small cry, the little tiger died.

"7127 ! "

"6923 ! "

.....

"Quick, use the Purple Kirin Dragon's [Dragon's Might]!" I urgently said.

Wan Er nodded, and commanded the Purple Kirin Dragon to activate its fifth skill, [Dragon Prestige], forcing the target to switch the aggro onto itself. The Purple Kirin Dragon immediately flew straight for the border of the map, causing the BOSS to follow after it. The Purple Kirin Dragon then antagonized the BOSS and hissed at it, summoning a mountain like symbol onto the BOSS' forehead, except the BOSS's strength was far beyond what we could imagine. He lead his horse straight towards the border. The horse then reared up and kicked the Purple Kirin Dragon's wings. At the same time, [Crystal Massacre] also activated, and three crystals all flew right at the Purple Kirin Dragon from different directions, piercing the little dragon!

"6918 ! "

"7322 ! "

"7447 ! "

After those three attacks, the Purple Kirin Dragon only had a sliver of health left. After all, it was only a player's pet, it couldn't possibly have more than a thousand of ten thousand health. Tian Jing threw another slash, and the Purple Kirin Dragon fell into the abyss.

I raised my sword and dashed forward. I didn't even wait until my health was full. I opened my hand and locked onto the BOSS's position. [Binding Chains] burst from the ground!

"Peng!", it successfully trapped the target. This was a Lv 8 [Binding Chains] and would stun the BOSS for 7.2 seconds. I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and then pulled out my other sword and threw two slashes. That bastard then raised his sword to counterattack. However, I slid to his flank and immediately used [Binding Chains] again, and started attacking. My health slowly filled up again, and those precious 7.2 seconds allowed my [Wall of Dou Qi] to complete its cooldown!

"AH!"

I lunged forward and Dou Qi began to congeal into a magma like wall in front of me. My [Wall of Dou Qi] successfully activated. Now I could attack without too many worries!

This time I was smarter, and used Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng's ice type skills, along with my [Haste] to increase my speed and decrease the BOSS's speed. That way I could at least avoid some of his attacks, and so my [Wall of Dou Qi] wouldn't only last for 30 seconds. In the end, this battle plan worked out quite well and my [Wall of Dou Qi] didn't break until 55 seconds later. There was only a 5 second wait time until I could summon the wall again, and it wasn't as dangerous as before.

Thousand League Spring gave me heals from a distance and smiled, "Guild Master.... you're actually a pretty smart guy...."

Qing Qian smiled, "But of course, Brother Xiao Yao's the strongest..."

I gave a shudder, and was almost cut through my face by the BOSS. I retreated and started to circle the map, bringing the BOSS with me. Wan Er activated [Absolute Step] and followed me. At the same time, frost and ice began to appear on the blade of her daggers, as she activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. "Ka ka ka" she cut right at Tian Jing. On top of that, the Ice Seal effect appeared as well! This way, we wouldn't have to worry about anything as we attacked. Tian Jing's health quickly disappeared, and

finally there was only 12% health left.

.....

“Grrr!”

With an angry roar, Tian Jing stood there with his sword in hand. Light began to rise from the ground around him, and created half of a path to the sky. His body began to shake, and roaring lightning came down from the sky. He shouted, “I am a god that was born in heaven, please gift me the power of fire and allow the strength that is given to all gods to descend upon me. Let me annihilate the people that are before me— [Hell’s Meteor Shower]!”

Within seconds, a blood red light covered a 1000 yard range. This was an enormous AOE skill. We had to interrupt it, or else our entire team would be killed!

I raised my sword and used a [Blade Rush]. Then I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Binding Chains]. They all missed, there was no way to interrupt the BOSS’s activation sequence. Wan Er, Qing Qian and Wolf all activated their interruption skills, but, one after another, MISS-es popped up. All of our faces turned green.

“Oh no!”

Wan Er’s face was ashen, “This BOSS’s skill level is far above our [Gouge]es! There’s no way we can interrupt it!”

I raised my hand and activated once again, [Curse of the Nightfury]!

“Shua!”

A blood red spell dashed out, but Tian Jing resumed his summoning. Meteors already began to appear in the sky. God knows how long this summoning would take, but if it were to complete, then we would definitely all die!

Wan Er gritted her teeth and used a [Ice Pick Whirlpool] and we kept attacking!

“Pa Cha!”

The Dragon's Kiss dagger pierced right into the BOSS' forehead, adding an Ice Seal effect!

“Sha sha....”

Layers of ice began to form around the BOSS's body. The Guardian Tian Jing was actually sealed in ice, interrupting his skill!

Relief and excitement washed over me, “Beautiful! That's the way!”

.....

After missing that skill, Tian Jing had no way of activating the skill again with such a long cooldown. We then proceeded to cut down his health. After 37 minutes, the BOSS screeched and fell at our feet!

“Shua!”

A golden light fell and I was Lv 91. Li Mu, Qing Qian, Wolf, and Wan Er all leveled up. At the same time, a pile of equipment burst from Tian Jing's body!

Chapter 481: Guardian Boots

There was a total of three equipments that emitted a faint green glow around them. My heart started to beat faster. Yup, another Saint Tier equipment has probably dropped. This wasn't simply miraculous luck, this meant that the drop rate on this map was intrinsically extremely high. On top of that, we were on a SSS Tier Main Quest.

A pair of heavy armour black boots dropped and were made from an unknown material. There was another sparkling necklace lined with jewels too. Lastly there was also a crimson colored long bow. The edges of the bow were lined with shining lines as it emitted a very divine feeling. With one hand I picked up the pair of black boots and shared the stats with the party.

[Guardian Boots] (Valkyrie Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 711

Strength: +77

Endurance: +71

Magic: +68

Effect: Improves user's defense by 9%

Effect: Improves magic resistance by 9%

Effect: 1500+ health

Effect: Movement Speed is increased by 18%

Special Effect: [Perserverance] When health is below 50%, received damage is reduced by 25%

Level Requirement: 86

.....

Holding the pair of Guardian Boots, I laughed, “ The effects of these Valkyrie Tier boots are pretty good. The reduction of 25% of received

damage when health is lower than 50% is pretty handy. My boots... are already Saint Tier, so I don't need it. Li Mu, Wang Jian, how about you two roll for it?"

Li Mu shook his head, "It's fine, we are all brothers! I'll let Wang Jian take this, he needs more health anyways. I already have more than 10,000 health so I can't be too greedy."

"Alright!"

I handed the pair of Guardian Boots to Wang Jian as he instantly equipped the pair, however the shiny, heart-shaped, necklace with angel like designs was what really made my heart leap. The item really was amazingly beautiful. However as I began to pick it up, Wan Er, Cang Yue, and Qing Qian's eyes instantly began to shine. Most likely such a beautiful item would be more suitable for a female player. I put the stats of the item into the team chat.

[Fire Kirin Guard] (Saint Tier)

Magic: +105

Endurance: +102

Agility: +100

Additional: 27% increase in magic attack

Additional: Increase the power of [Magma Abyss], [Magma Lance], [Pillar of Fire & Ice] by 75%

Additional: Increases the endurance of [Mana Shield] by 50%

Special Effect: [Shield of the Fire Kirin], Summons the power of a Kirin to create a shield. Gives the user a state of impenetrability. Lasts for 7 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 87

Class Requirement: Mage/Healer/Musketeer

.....

I stared blankly at the item's stats. I then raised the Fire Kirin bracelet

and smiled, “This...even though this necklace stats are crazy strong, it can only be used by Healers, Mages, and Musketeers. We don’t have any musketeers here, and if a Healer were to take it, then it would be a waste of that 27% increase in Magic Attack, 75% increase in Fire Element attacks, and 50% increase in [Mana Shield] durability. So, this will just go to Dong Cheng...”

The two Healers found my reasoning to be fair. Darling Duck smiled, “Boss, don’t worry. Thousand League and I aren’t little girls who are unreasonable. We understand the arrangement. Fire Kirin Guard should go to Cang Yue. We get it. After all, Cang Yue is an Elder. Sigh.... Thousand League and I still need to be on her good side...”

Dong Cheng helplessly lamented, “Oh gosh, don’t mock me you two. I just took this position, so you guys need to help me out. Don’t let those old asses from [Valiant Bravery] bully me.....”

Darling Duck grinned, “Don’t worry. Basically all of [Zhan Long]’s female players are in the [Zhan Long] camp. The [Zhan Long] camp is boss’s. Who would dare touch Li Xiao Yao’s people?”

Dong Cheng couldn’t help but smile, “Oh, then does that mean I’m Li Xiao Yao’s?”

“Yup!” Thousand League Spring nodded.

Dong Cheng immediately walked over to me and took the Fire Kirin Guard necklace from me and gave me a flirty smile, “Brother Xiao Yao, from now on, I’m yours. You better care for me more in the future... no letting me be hurt or anything... Otherwise, I’ll tell on you to Wan Er!”

I shivered, “What did you say? Why can’t I understand you ever....”

Li Mu and Wang Jian laughed, “Damn, the [Zhan Long] camp really is filled with beauties. I’m going to apply for a transfer into the [Zhan Long] camp. [Valiant Bravery] is filled with a bunch of men, it really is too cruel!”

I glared at them, “Oh shut it. Wang Jian is the First Division’s Guild Master. There are quite a few cuties there!”

“Oh, is that right? Do you want to head over to the first division then?”
Wan Er teased me with a devilish smile.

Feeling the killing intent behind the little miss’s smile, I quickly grabbed her hand, “Wan Er, the moon tonight really is full. Later, when we finish this quest, how about we go to the Moonlight Forest for a walk?”

Wan Er broke into a full grin, “Idiot.... it has been raining in the Moonlight Forest for over a week....”

Beside us, Dancing Forest was looking at the long bow in my hand. Cautiously, she asked, “That.... hey Mr.Hero, while you guys are standing over there flirting, can you share the stats for the bow first? I’m still using an Emperor Tier weapon, how can you be so heartless....”

“Poor Little Dance....” Li Mu gave her a look full of sympathy.

I nodded with a smile and raised the long bow. I then waved my other hand over the weapon, and a dazzling line of words suddenly rose from the bow and flew into the sky to line themselves up. The stats made everyone a little jealous—

[Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2250-2800

Agility: +107

Endurance: +105

Strength: +100

Additional: Increases the user’s long range attack power by 35%

Additional: Increases the user’s bow type skill effects’ duration by 50%

Additional: Increases the user’s Max HP by 2000

Special: [Roar of the Dragon Jin Sou] ignores 1000 of the target’s defense

Special: [Breath of the Dragon], takes 5% of the damage dealt to a ranged target and adds it to the user’s health

Required: 86

.....

“F*ck....” I held the Bow of the Dragon Jin Sou and took a deep breath, “This bow can make any Archer into a top tiered one, not to mention that you’re [Zhan Long]’s number one Archer already. Little Dance, take it away...”

“Pa!” Dancing Forest grabbed the long bow. She fondly caressed the bowstring and smiled, “What an elegant feeling. My attack power finally broke through 6000....”

I glanced at her level, “You’re only Lv 85, you still need another level to equip it.”

“Yup, I’m already 71% through Lv 85 though....”

“That’s good...”

I continued looking through the items, and split the evolution stones through ROLLS. From the pile, I also discovered a crimson skill book. Everyone looked at me, waiting for me to share the stats. Once I put it up in the chat, Dancing Forest started tearing up as she stuck out her 36Ds —

[Hell’s Meteor Shower Lv-1] (SSS Tier): Summons meteor showers from Hell and lays damage to all targets within a 40×40 range of the target. The damage that it deals is 110% of the the user’s attack power, and lasts for 12 seconds. A meteor will fall from the sky into the range every 2 seconds during the duration. Uses 100 MP. Required: Lv 85 Archer, Consumes 7 points of Rage

.....

I raised the Hell’s Meteor Shower skill book and handed it to Dancing Forest with a smile, “I’m sorry, I misspoke earlier, you aren’t [Zhan Long]’s number one Archer, you’re Ba Huang City’s number one Archer!”

Dancing Forest was so excited, she almost started crying. The [Hell’s Meteor Shower] skill book evaporated in her palm with a “Shua!”

Afterwards, she tried out the skill, and raised her long bow. One after another, meteors from hell fell from the sky around us. Since we were all in the same team, we didn't receive damage, but we could feel the strength of the skill.

Qing Qian blinked a few times and smiled, "Once Little Dance learns how to use Hell's Meteor Shower, then [Zhan Long]'s teamwork will become even more perfect. Later, I'll discuss with One Second Hero about it, and create a 10 man team that is just for Dancing Forest. Little Dance's [Hell's Meteor Shower] is too powerful, it'll definitely instant kill the enemy."

I nodded and smiled, "Yup, I'll just leave this to you, the Vice Guild Master, to get it set up! Let's continue and head on to the sixth floor. We're two away from the end!"

"Shua!"

A crimson teleportation crystal shattered in my hand, and a magic circle appeared in front of us. I used a BUFF, and stepped right in. At that moment, I heard a beast's roar beside my ear. Before I even regained my balance, "Pa!" I felt a burning pain on my cheek, but all I was two shadows in front of me. It looked as though there were two giant figures in front of me. They had rough skin and crawled around on the ground. They had 6 feet on the ground, each curved like a sickle. Just now, the thing that hit me on the face was that leg!

I activated a [Haste] and started to swing my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I drained a lot health from the beasts so I was fine . At the same time, I listed out the giant beast's stats in the team chat—

[Garrison Beast] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 96

Attack: 3850-4600

Defense: 4250

Health: 250,000

Skills: [Charge] [Terrifying Roar] [Flame Claw]

Introduction: Garrison Beasts, these violent beasts were originally a type of feline. However, a thousand years ago, an alchemist created a medicine that transformed them into monsters. What came out was an extremely brutal beast with sharp claws. On top of that, the nature of these beasts also turned more blood thirsty. Chi Yuan Empire tamed these beasts and used them for their own army, turning them into the Garrison Beasts.

.....

Wan Er, Li Mu and Wang Jian all traveled to the new floor. Without another word, the whole team went straight to fighting. Within minutes, we dealt with the two Garrison Beasts very quickly. We had pretty good luck, and got two Garrison Leg Guards. Damn, even the sixth floor has these Garrison Outfits. Furthermore, for the sake of getting Dancing Forest to Lv 86, everyone charged forward like crazy. I lured 6-9 Garrison Beasts over and kept my [Wall of Dou Qi] up as I blocked the monsters. Dancing Forest then used [Hell's Meteor Shower] to deal damage, while Qing Qian, Wan Er and Dong Cheng all used area attacks.

Our team was just way too strong. The heavy armor types alone, Wang Jian used [Halberd Whirlwind], Li Mu used [Covering Sword Slash], while I used [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Blade Spin]. We were so strong that we could rebel against the heavens themselves.

Less than an hour later, "Shua!" a ray of light fell from the sky and Dancing Forest leveled up to 86. She quickly equipped the Bow of the Dragon Jin Sou, increasing her attack power by a lot.

Right at that moment, a strange rustling sound came from the distance. It came from the spot where we had teleported to to get here. In the distance, I saw a chain shoot out and I heard the sounds of "Pa Pa Pa" hitting the ground. Dammit, more people came!

Chapter 482: Thousand Layer Wave

“Stop killing!”

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I walked from the front of the team to the back, and stood in a defensive position in front of Thousand League Spring, Dong Cheng Yue, and Darling Duck. My Flaming Tiger God growled, and paced by my side. All of the fur on the little tiger stood up, and it entered into an attack position.

“Hu hu...”

With three soft sounds, Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Wolf all entered into [Stealth]. This time, there were quite a few enemies that came forward. Furthermore, they came ready. We couldn't underestimate them whatsoever.

.....

Within the heavy smoke, a group of people slowly emerged. Not only were there [Flying Dragon]'s players, there were also [Hero's Mound] players. The armored Wang Ze Cheng and the staff wielding Soaring Dragon were among them. Furthermore, Drunken Spear had come as well. He held his long spear as he stood in the back. Without another word, he stepped into the crowd. I glanced around and saw that quite a few people came. There were at least 200 players. This was going to be a big challenge for our 10 man team.

“Hua hua...”

A harsh wind blew past. Behind me, my War Swept Cloak fluttered and I put one hand on my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and my Cold Iron Sword floated above my shoulder. I quickly stepped forward and smiled. Loudly, I said, “Huh, [Hero's Mound: Division One] and [Flying Dragon] have allied together? What's with this? Have the villains finally decided to collude together?”

Soaring Dragon gave a cold laugh, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just how great are your guts. You have 10 people, did you really think you could hold this

entire Sword Saint Abyss for yourself? Just a few hours ago, you were happily killing my people, isn't that right?"

I spread out my hands, "Not really, Fierce Tiger and Mu Tian were asking for it. I just happened to fulfill their wishes."

"What a great 'fulfill their wishes'!" Wang Ze Cheng jaunted. He swung his Flames of War magic blade and said, "Li Xiao Yao, let's not talk in circles, shall we? After the [Warring States Battle], [Hero's Mound] has already decided that [Zhan Long] is an enemy. Guild Master Q-Sword respects you as a rival, and even though we haven't officially declared war, this world is too small for the both of us. I, Cang Cheng, have already listed [Zhan Long] as [Hero's Mound: Division One]'s enemy. I heard that you were taking [Zhan Long]'s core players here to finish a SSS level Main Quest. If it's like that, then there's no reason an official enemy should sit back and just watch. And so, I've brought 2000 people to this abyss to prepare for battle. Today, no matter what, you guys will die here!"

"2000?"

I couldn't help but smile, "Doesn't look like you have enough, right? Wang Ze Cheng, did you not know that [Zhan Long] has 10,000 players camped nearby? With a single command, your 2000 people won't even be enough to pick our teeth!"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled back, "Then what if we add on [Flying Dragon]'s 20,000 main players?"

I chuckled, then swung my sword. "Keng!" My Dragon Reservoir Sword pierced right into the ground. A fiery light spurt up from the slice. I looked at Wang Ze Cheng, Soaring Dragon and the others, and I slowly said, "Did you think that a mere 20,000 players is enough for you to run amok? Let me tell you right now, [Zhan Long] currently has 20,000 players online right now. Even if you brought 100,000 players, I will annihilate you all!"

Soaring Dragon's eyes turned cold, "Looks like Guild Master Xiao Yao doesn't plan on giving us an explanation. [Zhan Long] really is arrogant,

trying to hoard this grinding area. You won't even let others try and get in on the action. Hmph, does the fifth ranked guild in the Chinese Server have so little generosity?"

Behind me, Li Mu couldn't help but smile, "Soaring Dragon, you've brought more than ten thousand soldiers to this small Sword Saint Abyss, just to kill the ten of us? To think that you'd have the shame to say that we're weak. If I were to post this conversation onto the forums, how are you ever going to get respect again?"

"F*ck!"

Fierce Tiger pulled out the battle axe from behind his back and roared, "Li Mu, don't be too arrogant. You're just an Elder, just what right do you have to talk to our Guild Master like that? Don't forget, [Valiant Bravery] was defeated by us!"

Li Mu turned furious.

I placed a hand in front of him and softly said, "Is [Flying Dragon] really that strong? After fighting with [Zhan Long] so many times, which time were you not completely annihilated? Which time were you actually able to kill more than 10% of [Zhan Long]'s players? You actually have the shame to try and brag about a battle record like that here? Let's not waste our breath. Soaring Dragon, if you think that the people here actually can kill us, then why don't you try it out!"

Soaring Dragon gritted his teeth, but he didn't immediately try to attack. He was waiting, waiting for more of his players to come down.

In reality, this floor was really only 10 meters wide. Li Mu, Wang Jian and I could pretty much lock down frontlines that are that thin. On top of that, Dong Cheng Yue and Dancing Forest were all strong long range killers. The side of the cliff was guarded by the Purple Kirin Dragon. Fighting here, they had absolutely no advantage, so Soaring Dragon wasn't going to act rashly.

.....

In the team chat, Wan Er softly said, "Li Xiao Yao, don't fall for their

stalling. Why don't we just attack them now? Otherwise, the more people that come down, the harder it will be."

I nodded and said, "Ok!"

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and said, "Guild Master, why don't you tell Old K, Bai Qi and the others to come? Tell them to bring 10,000 of [Zhan Long]'s elite into the Sword Saint Forest and sweep out [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound]?"

"No need." I shook my head, "Just let them grind levels without a worry. We suffered too many losses at the Purple Demon Forest. Anyways, it's not as though everyone has the opportunity to level up with this SSS Tier main quest. [Zhan Long]'s core strength needs to continue to grind levels. Our ten man team is enough to deal with their twenty thousand players. Either way, it's not like all of them can attack us at once, what should we be afraid of?"

Wang Jian chuckled, "I agree with Brother Xiao Yao. [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound: Division One] are all thorns in our side. If we can hold them down here for a day, then that will be advantageous to us. If we can tip the scales, then the next battle, [Zhan Long] will be able to more thoroughly defeat them!"

Li Mu nodded and said, "Ok, we'll just do it that way. Then should we just attack?"

I shook my head, "No, wait for a bit. I'll make Soaring Dragon become less cautious and drop his guard. Afterwards, I'll drag him over with a [Defeat the Dragon]. Let's kill this [Flying Dragon] Guild Master first. Li Mu, Wang Jian, you guys help me break through their formation. Be careful of Wang Ze Cheng and Drunken Spear. Especially Drunken Spear, that little bastard is really strong!"

"Alright!"

.....

Carrying my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I stepped forward. Leaving only 25 meters between Soaring Dragon and myself, I was already only 5

meters short of my secret skill [Defeat the Dragon]. I began to chuckle, “Soaring Dragon, I hear [Flying Dragon] is still in rehabilitation. You guys haven’t even done any large scale events. You guys haven’t even done any big grinding activities either. At first I thought that [Flying Dragon] had truly straightened up. Never would I have thought that you’re just like before, still so narrow-minded. Why must you always work against [Zhan Long]?”

Soaring Dragon coldly laughed, “Stop joking around. Do you not understand the concept of the Guild Wars? Besides, Mu Tian and Fierce Tiger didn’t discover Sword Saint Forest much after you guys did. Where is it written that [Zhan Long] must be the first ones to complete the map? Sure you’re some big shot who’s ranked among the top 20 in the CBN Battlenet, but I’m telling you right right now, I, Soaring Dragon, am not afraid of you!”

“ Wow, spoken with true courage...”

I grinned and quietly continued taking a few steps forward as I replied, “But from what I have heard, [Flying Dragon]’s third division used to have a beauty called ‘Lotus Treasure’ with a really hot body. I heard you promoted her straight to the main division as a flag bearer. I also heard that she met you in real life. Her boyfriend apparently carried a kitchen knife around for 7 days and chased you along Bin Jiang Road. It was on the headlines of the Hangzhou News am I wrong?”

TL Note: Bin Jiang Lu is a road that is in the Eastern province of Hangzhou in China.

Soaring Dragon’s whole body shook with fury, his face crimson red he was so furious, “You...don’t spread false rumors!”

Wang Ze Cheng smiled, “Huh, so the [Flying Dragon] Guild Master had such a humiliating story....”

Li Mu glared at me, “Guild Master, how do you know about stuff like this?”

I grinned, “Actually, I’m always checking the info and flaming pages posted on the forum. I’m even one of the forum moderators....”

“Pig....” Wan Er gritted her teeth.

.....

All of Soaring Dragon’s people tensed up. Who would’ve thought that the usually earnest Soaring Dragon would do something like that. Even the people from [Hero’s Mound] were getting a piece of the action. Nobody was paying attention to the fact that I was already so close to them.

“Be careful Guild Master!” Drunken Spear shouted, his eyes went cold.

But it was too late as I stretched out my hand and activated [Defeat the Dragon] pinning it on Soaring Dragon. It was at this moment that he was already doomed to die. “Woosh”, as Soaring dragon was pulled forward by my[Defeat the Dragon], I sealed his skills with my [Curse of Night Fury] for 2 seconds. My Dragon Reservoir Sword sent out a [Combo]+ [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Soaring Dragon looked on in horror as he was pierced in the chest by my sword.

“5122 ! ”

Dancing Forest followed up with a [Meteor Shot] and finished him off. We didn’t even give him the chance to use [Dimension Leap].

.....

“Argghh!”

Drunken Spear roared as he took his spear and dashed towards us like a mountain. Suddenly he sent out a new skill– [Hundred Peak Jump Slash]. His skill was somewhat similar to Old K’s [Savage Jump Slash] as his skill locked onto me.

With not enough time to react, I could only use my [Wall of Dou Qi] to minimize some of the damage. “Bang!”, I was stunned for 3 seconds. I took 3781 damage. Drunken Spear’s new skill wasn’t any ordinary one!

Li Mu and both charged with Wang Jian casting a [Halberd Whirlwind] . “Bang!” As a sound resided from the impact. The skill landing directly amongst a group of [Flying Dragon] members. However, Drunken Spear

saw this coming, and activated [Rock Shield]. He then stabbed forward with his long spear and knocked away Li Mu's sword. He then roared and began channeling a skill, that bastard was gathering energy!

"Careful!" I hurriedly yelled.

Wan Er swiftly put up her steel umbrella in front of Dong Cheng and Qing Qian, giving them a bit of defense.

.....

For 1 second Drunken Spear began to gather more and more power. In the next moment, his spear swept out, creating a shockwave of energy that charged right us. He then shouted, "[Thousand Layer Wave]!"

[Thousand Layer Wave]'s range was extremely large, there was no way for us to dodge the skill. All I could only grit my teeth and take the full brunt of the damage.

"2771 ! "

"4228 ! "

"4119 ! "

.....

A row of terrifying damage numbers popped up. The two Healers were almost killed too.

After recovering I released a sharp stab with my sword!

"Klang!"

That slash forced Drunken Spear backwards a few steps. However, at the place where he had first activated [Thousand Layer Wave], another indigo wave formed and surged out. It was another shock wave!

Darling Duck cast a quick [Heal] and saved us from the second wave. However, even worse was that in the third second, another wave came at us!

"Fu*k..."

Li Mu's face turned white, " Please tell me he isn't casting another one?

What the f*ck are we supposed to do!”

Chapter 483: Chi Yu Qing

[Thousand Layer Waves], an SSS tier AOE skill. You can even think of it as his sure kill skill. Besides, after we killed Soaring Dragon, Drunken Spear was mad seeing as we killed the Guild Master of [Flying Dragon] right in front of him. For an expert, this was the biggest humiliation. No matter how good-natured Drunken Spear was, at this moment, he was definitely going to fight with all he had.

.....

“Pig, why don’t you block Drunken Spear for a bit, don’t let him near us!” Wan Er opened up her iron umbrella and blocked another wave from the Thousand Layer Waves.

I nodded. With a flash, I activated [Blade Rush] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged forward 5 yards. Then, with another sweep of my my blade, I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. My [Wind Blade]+ [Fierce Ice Blade] pierced right through a berserker’s chest. I had instantly killed him as easily as cutting a melon. Furthermore, I managed to drain a lot of health back—

“6174 ! ”

“+617 ! ”

“14279 ! ”

“+1427 ! ”

With another swing of my Cold Iron Sword, I then lunged forward, and spun around. My two swords danced through the crowd and “Ka ka ka” sliced my way through. I was like a whirlwind. On top of that, I opened up my palm at Drunken Sword, and activated [Defeat the Dragon].

“Huh?”

Drunken Spear jumped in surprise and immediately raised his spear as he tried to jump out of my range.

“Kill, quick, kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Wang Ze Cheng shouted as he raised

his Flames of War Magic Blade.

A group of [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound] players all focused their firepower on me. Immediately, Qing Qian shouted, "Brother Xiao Yao, you can't retreat. Just defend right there!"

I nodded. With a growl, I summoned [Wall of Dou Qi] again. In addition, I activated another special skill— [Chi You Body] . At that point, a ray of crimson light fell upon me, and an image of Chi You appeared behind me. I seemed to awaken a new power, as my MaxHP increased. Even my body showed visible changes. My Magic Spite armor grew, and I continuously dodged all of the enemy's magic attacks.

"Shua shua shua...."

Finally, I had waited out the effect of the Thousand Layer Wave. This skill had a total of 7 shockwaves. Once Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring recovered, they brought up my health with a "Shua!". Dong Cheng Yue also threw a [Magma Lance]+[Thunderbolt Finger].

Wan Er raised her Dragon's Kiss dagger and charged forward as she said, "Little Dance, why don't you show off your new skill!"

Dancing Forest stuck her chest out and gave a confident smile. She grasped her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou. Flames started to raise around her. In the next moment, flaming meteors started to dive down into the area around me. One after another, crimson meteors that were wrapped in flames drove into the crowd and dealt tons of injury and death.

Once we got Dancing Forest' support, and I had enough health, I swung my two swords freely and charged right into the enemy lines. Wang Ze Cheng could only stay on the defense. Li Mu and Wang Jian each roared and ran into the crowd. The light of [Halberd Whirlwind] and [Covering Sword Slash] all flashed. With just 3 people, we had forced [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound] to all retreat. They didn't even have the chance to launch a counterattack.

Wan Er raised her Dragon's Kiss dagger and dashed forward. Her [Shield of the Mundane World] seemed to sparkle. Archers had basically

no way of getting past it. The beautiful little miss raised her two daggers, and continuously pushed players off the edge. At the same time, she said in the team chat, “Li Xiao Yao, look. Wang Ze Cheng seems to somehow be barely making it while staying on the frontlines against us. It’s probably because he has more than ten thousand health!”

I nodded, “Get closer to me, I’ll use [Defeat the Dragon] to drag him over here and you’ll deal damage!”

Wan Er smiled, “I was thinking the same. Once you drag him over, you only need to use two skills. One [Great Realm of Desolation] to decrease his heal recovery by 50%, and another [Fierce Ice Blade] to decrease his movement speed. You can leave the rest to me!”

“OK ! ”

I walked sideways, and slashed at my enemies. The entire time, I kept my eye on Wang Ze Cheng. When the distance was right, I opened my hand and shouted. A dragon shaped chain flew out and wrapped around [Hero’s Mound: Division One]’s Guild Master. “Shua!” I dragged him over to my side. Then with a swing, My Dragon Reservoir Blade pierced into his chest with a [Fierce Ice Blade] and I opened my hand, casting a [Great Realm of Desolation]—

“4422 ! ”

“4717 ! ”

Within moments, all of the [Hero’s Mound] players behind Wang Ze Cheng were scared shitless. Windy Walker raised his battle axe and yelled, “Oh no, they want to kill the Guild Master! Healers lock your [Heal]s onto the Guild Master!”

Rays of healing spells fell upon Wang Ze Chang. However, the little miss Cang Tong got close to him, and frost appeared on the blade of her dagger. It was the effect from [Ice Pick Whirlpool]! Suddenly, two skills erupted and [Blade of the Death God] and [Twin Blade Harmony] all pierced into Wang Ze Cheng’s armor plate. The dagger let out a 1 meter long ray, killing and injuring at least a dozen other players—

“3718 ! ”

“4671 ! ”

“5122 ! ”

“5539 ! ”

Even though 10 Healers were sustaining Cang Cheng, his health still quickly dropped. Qing Qian swiftly stretched out her small hands and sent out a [Grip of the Firefox]. At the same time I took my two swords and threw out 5 consecutive hits. “Pa, Pa, Pa, Cang Cheng’s shield was split into two. His chest plate was full of cracks and blood. He weakly knelt to the ground and stared with his two eyes at me, choking, “[Hero’s Mound] will never give up, just... just you wait...”

Wan Er carried her dagger and placed a foot on Cang Cheng’s chest, chuckling, “ [Hero’s Mound] once had the name of “invincible”, and yet you, the Guild Master of the first division have managed to make a name of “always losing”. Haha, Q-Sword really should thank you...”

Never in his life would wang Ze Cheng have thought that Wan Er would be so heartless to him. Filled with regret, he died and evaporated into a flash of light that flew out of the Sword Saint Abyss. This was also a disadvantage for them. As members of an SSS Tier main quest, our corpses would be preserved in this map, and so we had the advantage. As long as the two Healers weren’t killed, then we would be able to repeatedly revive ourselves.

.....

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and shouted, “Kill! Let’s clean out this map!”

I glanced at my sword’s stats and saw that my Dragon Reservoir Sword’s [Kill For Blood] had already hit 50 stacks. Hehe, no wonder I felt as though my attack power had greatly increased. My blade sliced one after another into the players of [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound].

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Wan Er were also slowly advancing forward on the frontlines. Wolf and Qing Qian went into [Stealth] mode and

ambushed the Healers and Mages in the back. Within a few minutes, the enemy couldn't keep their defenses up anymore. To be honest, the most terrifying people here were Dong Cheng Yue and Dancing Forest, those two long range specialist. [Magma Lance], [Thunderbolt Finger], and [Hell's Meteor Shower] were basically all skills from Hell and all of them dragged [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound] players, one by one into the abyss.

.....

"We can't...."

Drunken Spear threw another [Thousand Layer Wave] and then shouted, "Our formation has been broken. Without the extra firepower, my Thousand Layer Wave cannot kill anyone. Retreat, otherwise this will become our grave!"

Windy Walker ruefully said, "F*ck, both of our Guild Masters were killed by them. Are we just going to let them off of that?"

Drunken Spear' face was void of emotion, "Who said that we're gonna let them off? We'll battle them again when we have our entire army. Besides, this time we were too careless when we started fighting. You guys underestimate the power of Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and Dancing Forest too much. If we can't deal with those members, then what we get in return is just more losses and defeat!"

"Ok!"

Drunken Spear retreated and stepped out the exit. He then jumped up and grabbed the chain. With another few seconds of climbing, he made it back to the fifth floor.

I chased after them, and let my Cold Iron Sword fly over with a [Blade Spin]. I then cut up the chain with a "Ka Cha". The 30+ people that were left behind were just going to die under our blades.

.....

Within a few minutes of a quick battle, the ground was covered in potions and equipments. We took the chance to fix up our own stuff, and

took all of the pretty good equipments. Afterwards, we continued to press on through the sixth floor and killed countless Garrison Beats. You can just imagine, that the chains that [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound: Division One] were using took a long time to tie up. They must have to go back to Ba Huang City to create more chains, giving us time.

Close to four hours later, we cleaned out the floor and made our way into the deeper areas. Once the last Garrison Beasts were killed, I alone had collected 42 Garrison Outfits. This meant that, from the Sword Saint Abyss, we created 120 pairs of outfits for our fourth advancement heavy armor players. The entire [Zhan Long] frontlines would have a broken defense and attack increase! That should be enough to scare [Vanguard] and [Prague]!

"Careful, the BOSS is about to appear..." Qing Qian pointed at the fog in front of us and said, "Be careful...:

I slowly walked forward. All I heard was a "Pa!" and a seductive figure walked out from the fog. It was a beautiful woman. Looking her over, I could see that her long snowy legs were wrapped in leather shoes, and a leather dress wrapped around her thighs and round butt. Right above her flat stomach was a crop top that had a very low neckline. Her pale neck lead to a seductive face and a head full of fire red long hair. She cracked her whip and smiled as she looked at us, "Remote strangers, you guys have come here from a far away place to this Sword Saint Abyss. Are you thirsty for a taste of defeat?"

I shuddered and read out this maiden's stats and put them right into the team chat—

[Beast Tamer Chi Yu Qing] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 96

Attack: 5400-5850

Defense: 4700

Health: 160000000

Skills: [Spirit Snake Stab] [Greedy Wolf Destruction] [Fierce Tiger

Ambush] [Summons of the Blood Demon God]

Introduction: Chi Yu Qing, the Sword Saint Chi Yu Qing's sister. She was an extremely talented young woman and could run with the beasts. She could even summon the monsters and beasts of hell. She trained for many years in the Chi You Tribe, and has always wanted to follow after her brother Chi Yu Han. Afterwards, Chi Yu Qing followed her brother Chi Yu Han to Ba Huang City, and was ambushed. She died when a thousand arrows pierced her heart. After she fell to hell, her heart was filled with hatred. All she wanted to do was get justice for her brother Chi Yu Han and bathe Ba Huang City in blood.

.....

"Hey hey, that little girl's figure, it really is hot..." Li Mu said as he looked at Chi Yu Qing. He then glanced at Wan Er.

Wan Er's beautiful eyes squinted and said, "Li Mu, you want to die?"

Li Mu shuddered and smile, "If I were to compare, Cang Tong Beauty's equipment really covers it up well..."

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, "Don't waste time and get ready to kill the BOSS. These stats are much stronger than the past BOSS. In addition, it looks like the skills are really strong..."

Chapter 484: The Terrifying [Death God Arrows]

Once I finished adding all of my BUFFs, I raised my sword and charged, just like before. In a situation where we didn't know what the BOSS' skills were like, we needed to scout it out. I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword, and then opened my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation] to support the attack!

“Peng!”

“3781 ! ”

“4311 ! ”

That's ok, this Chi Yu Qing's defense wasn't that high, so I could break through it.

However, the second that I activated the skills, Chi Yu Qing's beautiful face contorted from fierce emotion. She raised her thorny whip and charged over as she shouted, “Damned adventurer, even though you look a little cute, you still must die here!”

“Pu chi....” Dancing Forest couldn't help but laugh.

Wan Er raised her dagger and squinted, “Hey, you got to be more serious when killing the BOSS...”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged at Chi Yu Qing. However, when I arrived before her, Chi Yu Qing suddenly smiled, and her hand started shaking. “Shua!” a poisonous snake leapt out of her bag and flew around 10 meters. “Pu Chi!” it went right through my Magic Spite Armor. At the same time, I entered a stunned state—

“Ding!”

Battle Notification: The Beast Tamer Chi Yu Qing has used the skill [Spirit Snake Pierce] that has dealt 5271 damage. In addition, you've entered into a stunned state, Duration: 5 seconds!

.....

“Hurry up, heal Li Xiao Yao!” Wan Er was starting to get anxious.

Thousand League Spring and Darling Duck quickly cast heals on me at the same time. Chi Yu Qing’s skill came again. The thorny whip shuddered and suddenly came straight at me. A wolf’s head appeared on the whip, and a wolf’s roar sounded out. It felt as though a large chunk of my shoulder had been bitten off—

“6712 ! ”

It was the skill [Greedy Wolf’s Destruction]. This Chi Yu Qing really is fierce!

Dong Cheng Yue raised her palm, and lightning sparked around her fingers as she smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, your servant is here to save you...”

Wan Er suddenly reached out and grabbed Dong Cheng’s wrist, “Dong Cheng, don’t. You’re going to steal the aggro. Once the BOSS gives up on Li Xiao Yao and comes at you, how are we supposed to block the poison of her whip? Just let him take it for 5 seconds....”

“Ok!”

The problem was that the heals from the two girls also attracted aggro. There was no other way. All I could do was direct the Flaming Tiger God to attack, attracting the aggro back to me. The tiger activated [Flame Claw]+[Burstfire Raid]+[Fierce Roar]. Chi Yu Qing’s furious face turned towards the little tiger as she shouted, “You beast, I’m going to cut you up into pieces!”

She threw her whip, “Pia pia pia” the whip cracked and the little tiger roared in pain. Its health dropped to the bottom. The little tiger’s front paws fell to the ground and it knelt before the goddess. This BOSS really is extremely terrifying.

At that moment, the stun from the [Spirit Snake Pierce] finally lost its effect. My Dragon Reservoir Sword shuddered and I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. A chain of 5 attacks struck the BOSS and I gave myself a Heal. I opened one of my hands, and activated [Soul Army] and [Black

Tortoise Realm] also appeared in the map, greatly decreasing the BOSS' movement speed. Even so, that woman still moved incredibly fast....

Not even two minutes later, Chi Yu Qing shouted again, "Damn it, you have really angered me. Come, beast from hell, swallow up everything that is before you— [Fierce Tiger Ambush]!"

"Grr...."

Roars rang out throughout the map and Chi Yu Qing began swinging her thorny whip as she stood in the middle of the magic circle. A black hole appeared behind her. Right afterwards, a light in the shape of a Fierce Tiger pounced right over, and charged right at our frontlines. The attack range was around 20 yards. I waved my swords and continued forward while receiving uninterrupted heals. Wan Er raised her iron umbrella to withstand the damage. Li Mu and Wang Jian both used [Blade Rush] to escape the range of the attack. In a situation like this, without the proper amount of magic defense, even if you were to have more than ten thousand health you would be immediately killed.

.....

[Fierce Tiger Ambush] lasted for 7 seconds before disappearing. Chi Yu Qing swung her whip and hit my chest plate. At the same time, she waved her hand and activated [Spirit Snake Pierce]. After taking the hit before, I was starting to learn. This time, I was ready. Right before [Spirit Snake Pierce] activated, I dipped my body and activated [Blade Rush]!

"Hua Cha!"

"4417 ! "

"MISS ! "

Not only did I deal a cut onto the BOSS, I also successfully dodged the [Spirit Snake Pierce]. Yup, as long as I don't get stunned, then I can mostly take all of the BOSS's big hits.

Afterwards, right as I was really getting into it, I suddenly heard lots of shouting. Within the thick smoke, countless players were charging over. It had been four hours already, and it really was [Flying Dragon] and

[Hero's Mound]. This time, Soaring Dragon stood at the back of the team. Wang Ze Cheng was charging at the front, his face filled with anger, "Hurry, they've already begun fighting the BOSS. Kill them all and steal this BOSS, make them fail this quest!"

Li Mu cursed "F*ck, they came right now? So on time!"

Wan Er raised her dagger and said, "Li Mu, Wang Jian, we'll head over to kill them. Pig, you can't finish killing the BOSS like this. When you find the chance, use a [Binding Chains]. Afterwards, we'll sweep out [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound] and then kill the BOSS!"

"Alright!"

I opened my hand and used a [Binding Chains]. "Peng!" The skill appeared under the BOSS's feet. Chi Yu Qing was actually trapped by it! That would last for 7.2 seconds. I turned around to look and saw that Li Mu and Wang Jian had already rushed over.

"Use [Hell's Meteor Shower] to clean up the trash!"

Right after my shout, meteors started to fall from above my head. I let my Cold Iron Sword fly out while I cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword to help Li Mu and Wang Jian. The little miss activated [Blade of the Death God] and cut down a few Knights who had opened up [Heavenly Shield Wall]. She then activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool] and continuously shattered their walls.

Wang Ze Cheng saw that his soldiers were all being killed, but still didn't have any reaction. I started to get suspicious. As I fought, I said in the team chat, "Are they waiting for something?"

Li Mu shook his head, "This... I really don't know...."

Dong Cheng Yue waved her staff, and [Magma Lance] exploded under Wang Ze Cheng. At the same time, she leapt up and shouted, "Not good, they brought... they brought Death God Arrows!"

"F*ck!"

[Hero's Mound] and [Flying Dragon] began to separate and suddenly a

dozen Death God Arrows were sent over. This heavy weapon machinery was actually brought all the way over here. No wonder it took then 4 hours to get there. God damn it, we miscalculated!

“Use the effect from Fire Kirin Guard!”

Dong Cheng opened up her [Shield of the Fire Kirin], and had 7 seconds of invincibility!

“Peng peng peng....”

The earth seemed to rumble, and [Death God Arrows] were set off, bringing along their poisonous vines. “Pu pu pu” they pierced right into Wang Jian, Li Mu and Wolf’s bodies.

I reacted a little faster and activated my special skill— [Dragon Transformation]. Once I got the ability to fly, I turned around and hugged Darling Duck and Dancing Forest. “Peng!” I felt an arrow strike right into my armor. However, the attack didn’t pierce through and I tumbled off the edge of the cliff along with Dancing Forest and Darling Duck.

“Hua!”

My dragon wings slowly opened up, and after we dived off the edge, I flew back up. We had fallen around 10 meters, and so I stuck to the cliff side and flew up. That way, the [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound] players wouldn’t be able to see us.

I looked up and saw that Wan Er was flying around in the air like a goddess, her snow white cloak fluttered in the wind. With one hand, she held onto Dong Cheng Yue and she squinted due to the heavy fog and cried out, “Pig....”

I quickly whispered, “Wan Er, I’m right here, quick, come over....”

“Wu....”

Wan Er quickly flew over. Her [Hermit God’s Arrival] only lasted around 7 seconds, and it was getting really close to the end of that. Without another thought, I stabbed my Dragon Reservoir into the side of the cliff, and then pulled out an Emperor Tier Bow and put it on top to lock the

sword in place. I then swept out my Cold Iron Sword and “Keng!” cut it into the cliff right under my foot to create a foothold.

Wan Er was very clever and understood what I was doing. She immediately dragged Dong Cheng Yue and Qing Qian over, and landed atop the sword. I then took my Cold Iron Sword and stabbed it into the cliff side to let Darling Duck and Dancing Forest have a place to stand.

.....

“Huff huff....”

Breathing heavily, I looked upwards, but couldn’t make out any shapes. Frustrated, I said, “Looks like.... Wang Ze Cheng has already obtained Q-Sword’s full support, or else he would’ve never been able to get a killing machine like [Death God Arrows]. Unfortunately, everything happened too quickly, or else I could have used my [Azure Dragon Crossbow] to fend off the [Death God Arrows]....”

Wan Er bit her lip, “Too bad, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf, and Thousand League Spring all died.”

I nodded and said in the team chat, “Little Wolf, Li Mu, you guys first run back to your bodies. When you guys get to the sixth floor to revive, look around first to see if there’s going to be any counterattack. If nothing out of the ordinary happens, they’ll be fighting the BOSS. Based on the attack power of Wang Ze Cheng and those others, it’ll take them at least 20 minutes to kill the BOSS, even if they were to all go on together. You all are clear on Chi Yu Qing’s strength. We’ll wait until after she’s done using her big skills before heading over. With that, we’ll launch a counterattack of [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound] along with the BOSS!”

Li Mu smiled, “Ok, I was thinking of doing the same!”

.....

Under the cover of the thick smoke, the six of us hid underneath Wang Ze Cheng and Soaring Dragon’s noses. They couldn’t have noticed us, because each floor was around 5 meters thick, more than sufficient

enough to hide us. Even though we couldn't see them either, but from the screams of pain and the sound of Chi Yu Qing's anger, [Fierce Tiger Ambush] and [Greedy Wolf Destruction] had all been activated. I imagine that quite a few people had died. This was a Lv 95 Saint Tier BOSS, it was already on a much higher level than them, which meant that killing it was even more difficult for them. Even if Wang Ze Cheng's defense would allow him to become the tank, all they can do is rely on their strength in numbers, or else they'll definitely die.

Around 20 minutes later, Li Mu said in the team chat, "Our spirits have already arrived. They are right here, but they didn't keep any of the bodies, so nobody can tell that we're here. The BOSS still has 11% health left, so it'll probably activate its biggest skill soon. Guild Master, Wang Ze Cheng still has around 120 people left. A lot of their people have died. We also received some news from our Assassin brothers at the top of the abyss. Within 20 minutes, at least a thousand of their people have been killed by Chi Yu Qing.

I couldn't help but smile, "That really is good news! Wait, once the BOSS uses its last skill, we'll all head up. Li Mu, you guys get ready to revive. Don't kill the BOSS, focus on the people first. Kill them until they won't attack any longer. There's no rush to kill the BOSS. I'll use [Dragon Transformation] to bring Darling Duck and Little Dance back up to the entrance of the sixth floor. We'll destroy the chain first Afterwards, we can kill our way back and meet up with you guys. Then we'll kill the BOSS together!"

"Understood! Guild Master is shamelessly wise!"

"....."

Chapter 485: Reversing the Board

Not even 3 minutes later, we heard the sound of a ghoulish crying and waves of flames rushed throughout the sixth floor of the abyss. Chi Yu Qing had summoned the blood demon. That demon's roars filled the sixth floor. Afterwards, it quickly charged right into the crowd of people and started fighting with the people from [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound].

I reached out and said, "Darling Duck and Dancing Forest, hold onto me. I'm going to fly you guys out of here. There's around 200 meters of distance, and my [Dragon Transformation] lasts for 60 seconds, enough to fly over."

Dancing Forest raised her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou and nodded, "Ok. Later, when you charge in to kill, I'll use my firepower to help assist you. There's around 100+ [Hero's Mound] and [Flying Dragon] players left, and they're currently being killed by the BOSS. If we charge over, then there shouldn't be a problem."

"Ok, get ready to head out!"

Wan Er nodded and stabbed her Dragon's Kiss into the cliff, helping to stabilize herself, Qing Qian, and Dong Cheng Yue. Qing Qian looked at me, and very seriously said, "Brother Xiao Yao, good luck. You have to be careful...."

"Yup, Melon, don't worry!"

I reached out, and hugged onto Dancing Forest and Darling Duck. I put both swords into their sheaths behind my cloak. Suddenly, I activated [Dragon Transformation], and roars sounded throughout the abyss. My Magic Spite Armor began to change and I obtained the ability to fly. I kicked off the side of the cliff and began to fly into the distance. Within 10 seconds, I would be able to fly to the entrance. There really were quite a few [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound] people that were trying to climb down that thick chain.

"Hurry up, Guild Master and the others won't be able to hold the BOSS

off for much longer. The BOSS only has 8% health left. Hurry up and head over and revive!”

“How’s that possible!? Didn’t you just say Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong and the others thrown off the side of the cliff by the Death God Arrows and burned to dust? Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Wolf’s bodies are even there. Those three little fish have no way of flipping over our large boat!”

“That’s hard to say, just hurry up already!”

.....

“Shua!”

I suddenly flew over and rose above the ground and appeared above the border of the abyss. I made a command, and my Dragon Reservoir Sword flew out of its sheath with a “Shua!” and rode the force of a [Blade Spin] and flew straight at the chains. “Ka Ka Ka” the sword sliced through the chains. That chain cut apart like tofu. It broke with a “Ka Cha!” and a dozen or so players that were on the chain fell into the fiery abyss. As they were falling, they began to smoke and actually started burning on the way down.

“Oh No!”

One of the Archers from the crowd shouted, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai didn’t actually die. He crawled up alongside the cliff. F*ck, he’s rising from the ashes!”

I laughed and commanded my sword to change its path. The [Blade Spin] cut right into the Archer’s throat with a “Shua!” At the same time, I held Dancing Forest and Darling Duck and set them down. Afterwards, I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and had it rush forward. I raised my hand to grab my bloody Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a cut right into the crowd. Behind me, Dancing Forest’ used [Meteor Shot] right into the enemy, along with a [Hell’s Meteor Shower].

“F*ck....”

Wang Ze Cheng looked towards me and yelled, “Li Xiao Yao and Dancing Forest didn’t actually die, how is that possible? Just now, the

map clearly didn't show any signs of them living!? What are the people at the entrance doing? Why didn't they kill them?"

Drunken Spear raised his long sword and said, "What's the use of ranting about it now? Cang Cheng, take [Hero's Mound] people over to block Xiao Yao Zi Zai. [Flying Dragon] will finish off the BOSS!"

Wang Ze Cheng' eyebrows rose, "On what grounds?"

Soaring Dragon waved his staff and smiled, "On the grounds that I still have 80+ people on this sixth floor, while you guys only have 40 people."

Wang Ze Cheng raged and raised his Flames of War Blade. "Ka Cha!" two [Flying Dragon] Archers knelt to the ground, and were basically instantly killed them. Wang Ze Cheng smiled, 'How about now? Do you really think that your [Flying Dragon] people are much better than mine?"

Soaring Dragon shouted, "You want to turn on us at a time like this? Cang Cheng, should I call you wise, or a dumbass?"

Wang Ze Cheng gave a cold smile, "Wise or dumbass, the thing I hate the most my entire life is people who betray me. If you don't believe me, why don't you try it out!"

[Flying Dragon]'s Vice Guild Master, Fierce Tiger raised his battle axe, "How about this. I'll bring 20 people from [Flying Dragon] and Wang Ze Cheng, you also take 20 people to go with me. This way, we'll block Xiao Yao Zi Zai for 3 minutes. The BOSS is just about to get killed by us. Now that we've broken through the big skill, Chi Yu Qing won't have any more to throw at us!"

Wang Ze Cheng nodded, "That sounds better. Windy Walker, you go with Fierce Tiger to cut off Li Xiao Yao. Either you kill him, or do whatever you can and kill Darling Duck and Dancing Forest!"

"Yes Guild Master!"

.....

Very soon, a 40+ team of people charged right at us. I glanced at the

BOSS' health and saw that Chi Yu Qing still had 5% health. Yup, there's still enough time!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword swung out and I stepped out with my Cloud Stepping Boots and I slid, dodging two [Blade Rush]es from two Swordsmen. I came to an abrupt stop and I tilted my head. Two battle axe blades passed right before my face. Damn, that [Battle Axe Throw] really is a shameless skill! Power began to surge through my arm and [Combo]+[Strength of a Thousand Men] flew out, killing the two people. I then activated [Soul Army] and [Black Tortoise Realm]. Furthermore, I even activated an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me, giving a sufficient boost to my firepower.

My Flaming Tiger God was wrapped up with [Flame Armor] and roared as it pounced into the crowd. He had reached a state of practical invincibility. Windy Walker raised his battle axe and threw a [Battle Axe Throw], which I dodged. He then roared, "F*ck, how's that bastard's maneuvering so good? Brothers, charge with me!"

Three Knights, two Berserkers, and one Swordsman came at me all at once, but I didn't show any sign of hesitation or fear. I threw a [Blade Spin] with my Cold Iron Sword, "Pu pu pu" the sword pierced right into the bodies of all of the heavy armor players. The sword then spun back into my hand, covered in blood. The whole team of people knelt to the ground. Even Windy Walker was killed by [Blade Spin].

Dancing Forest smiled and raised her long bow to shoot [Hell's Meteor Shower]. Once she finished casting the skill she immediately pulled her bow taut. "Sou sou sou" one after another, incredibly sharp arrows dove from the sky. Darling Duck followed close behind me, making sure that my health was constantly up.

Fierce Tiger basically watched as everything was about to fall apart, and immediately retreated, "F*ck, we can't hold them off any longer, has the BOSS been killed yet!?"

Wang Ze Cheng raised his blade as he attacked Chi Yu Qing as he shouted through gritted teeth, "F*ck, you can't block him with just that?"

The BOSS still has 3% health. Hold him off. Even if you have to die in the process, you hold him off!”

“How?!” Fierce Tiger shouted back.

.....

Right at that moment, a dragon’s screech sounded through the abyss. The Purple Kirin Dragon was summoned and it flapped its wings from within the abyss. It spat out its dragon’s breath into the crowd. Soaring Dragon’ [Mana Shield] was immediately shattered. Chi yu Qing was very smart and cracked her whip, driving the tip right into Soaring Dragon and activated [Spirit Snake Pierce]!

“9921 ! ”

The poor [Flying Dragon] Guild Master didn’t die under my hand, but rather under the hand of the BOSS.

Wang Ze Cheng couldn’t hold off the BOSS either. Under the cliff, Wan Er activated [Hermit God’s Arrival]. The scene of Wan Er’s cloak fluttering in the wind as she flew was the image of a goddess. With a twist of her wrist, she dropped Dong Cheng and Qing Qian onto the floor. She then activated another attack. At the same time, four rays of revival lights appeared and Li Mu, Wang Jian and Wolf’s bodies all revived. They gulped down a health potion and charged right towards [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound], crippling their army.

At this moment, I charged my way out of the encirclement and smiled, “Don’t kill the BOSS yet. First kill Drunken Spear and Wang Ze Cheng.

Wang Ze Cheng quickly retreated. Pale, faced Drunken Spear raised his halberd and jumped up. With a thrust, he sent a [Halberd Throw] and “Keng!” cut right into the cliff of the fifth floor. Afterwards, a strange light brought him all the way up towards the 5th floor.

“Should we kill Drunken Spear?!” Wan Er asked.

Li Mu gritted his teeth, “Just now, I was killed under his spear. Vice Guild Master, do you have an idea as to how to kill him!”

Wan Er lunged forward. While she was in the air, she opened her hands towards Drunken Spear. In the next moment, the dimension seemed to twist and raging winds surrounded the beautiful little miss. She was using [Domain Control]!

“Pa cha....”

Drunken Spear’s movement was cut off by Wan Er’s [Domain Control], and he fell down. With his spear in hand, he spun around and stabbed right at Li Mu and shouted, “Don’t you dare think about killing me!”

Li Mu shouted and threw a [Covering Sword Slash], but only ended up hitting Drunken Spear’s shield. Wang Jian quickly threw a slice with a “Peng!” at Drunken Spear, and activated [Halberd Whirlwind]. Drunken Spear’s health fell 30%. He did not stand a chance against the combination of Wang Jian, Li Mu and Wan Er’s attack!

Afterwards, Drunken Spear threw a [Skyshaker Slash] and a [Flying Sword]. Drunken Spear smiled, and put his halberd in front of his chest. “Keng!” he parried the attack but flew backwards and smiled, “I’d rather be burned to death than die in your hands....”

“Pa chi....”

Drunken Spear fell into the burning lava and evaporated into smoke.

.....

Wang Ze Cheng brought around a dozen people over. However, Dancing Forest cut off his retreat with [Hell’s Meteor Shower]. Qing Qian’s figure suddenly appeared and she stunned Wang Ze Cheng. She then raised her arm and activated [Grip of the Firefox]. I also provided my support by casting a [Great Realm of Desolation] from a distance. Wolf also cast his [Ten Way Blade] and everyone dealt long range attacks, killing the guildmaster of [Hero’s Mound: First Division].

“Pa Ta...”

Finally, with a soft thud, Wang Ze Cheng’s helmet and Flames of War all dropped!

.....

“Shuang!”

Li Mu raised the Flames of War Magic Blade and smiled, “Finally made him drop this!”

I smiled, “Right now, there are quite a few Saint Tier equipments out there, they aren’t even worth 1M now. But, its hard to say, we should keep them for now. Later, we’ll put them into the storage, and see how much we can sell them for!”

“Alright!”

Kill the BOSS, it’s time for the last hit!”

“Alright!”

Chapter 486: Dragon's Hook

With both hands on my sword, I charged right towards Chi Yu Qing. I glanced at the status of my [Wall of Dou Qi] and saw that there was only 7% durability left. I immediately reactivated the skill, and stabbed the Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword into Chi Yu Qing's abdomen, leaving behind a bloody gash. At the same time, the Flaming Tiger God and the Purple Kirin Dragon encircled the BOSS and used all of their power against the BOSS.

“Peng!”

Dancing Forest' [Scatter Shot] successfully stunned Chi Yu Qing. I then set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] to deal long range damage. Not half a minute later, Chi Yu Qing weakly fell to her knees. “Hua la la” she dropped a pile of equipments.

“Shua shua....”

Qing Qian and Li Mu all leveled up, even though I dealt the last attack on the BOSS.

Slowly walking over, I flipped through the equipments that dropped, and they were mostly leather type. Of them, there was a light purple leather armor with very intricate stitchings, a pair of wrist guards, and a very unique weapon, with a golden ball at the end around the size of a fist, along with long strands of golden strings attached. I wasn't sure what it was.

I started off with the purple colored leather armor. I felt power seeping into my palm as I held it. I waved my hand over the armor and the stats appeared in the air. At that moment, all of the Assassin type players widened their eyes—

[Immortal's Chest Plate] (Saint Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 820

Agility: +108

Endurance: +105

Strength: +102

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 17%

Additional: Increases the user's attack speed and attack power by 24%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 2000

Special: Increases Assassin attack by 25%

Special: [Immortal's Arrival] Summons an immortal shield, and gives the user 12 seconds of invincibility

Required: 88

.....

I raised the Immortals Chest Plate and couldn't help but smile, "Hehe, this is an Assassin's dream armor plate. Here, Melon, Wan Er and Wolf, why don't you guys ROLL. Let's see who's luck is better!"

With such an amazing armor plate in front of them, the three didn't even try to be polite. They each entered the ROLL, and in the next second the three numbers appeared in front of everyone—

77 !

84 !

91 !

.....

There wasn't a single number that was low. However, in the end, it was Wan Er's number that was the highest. Furthermore, Wan Er's level was high enough to meet the requirements. Wolf was still a few levels behind, while Qing Qian's luck wasn't as good.

"Yes..."

I tossed the chest plate to Wan Er and smiled, "Put it on, you can increase your defense even more...."

Wan Er smiled as she raised the chest plate. Her snow white cloak

fluttered and “Hua!” she switched out the equipments. At that moment, everyone’s eyes widened. Just looking at the Immortal’s Chest Plate was really good equipment. The chest plate gave off the air of a goddess, and an extremely intricate embroidery was stitched on the leather above the little miss’ abdomen. The armor made her look both stern and beautiful. Furthermore, two leaf like plates wrapped around the beautiful little miss’ 34D’s, making them even more charming. The sight made everyone stupefied. Not only were Li Mu and Wang Jian about to drool, even Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest seemed speechless before this beauty.

“There’s so much pressure with everyone here....”

Dong Cheng looked down at her own mounds and bit her lip. She couldn’t help but pitifully say, “Why wasn’t I made out of the same stuff as her? I keep thinking.... Brother Xiao Yao fell for Wan Er and not me, it must have to do with the inches. Wu wu. Brother Xiao Yao, how about I go to Korea and get some 36Es. Will you truly love me then?”

I pursed my lips and unconsciously looked towards Wan Er’s 34Ds before saying, “Don’t be like that Dong Cheng, you know, I’m not such a shallow person....”

“Where are you looking! Do you dare say that you don’t have any drool in your mouth right now!?” Dong Cheng indignantly said.

I reached out and wiped the corner of my mouth before calmly saying, “Don’t nitpick. Right now, what we need to focus on is that the BOSS has already been killed. This was a victory for us, so we should celebrate....”

Wan Er looked frustrated, “That... should we continue on to the next equipment?”

I held out the wrist guard and waved my hand over it. It felt exceptionally soft, even more so than the Dragon Knight ones that I had on. The stats started appearing in the air in bright dazzling numbers. Just as expected, the last two floors of BOSSes were not disappointing to us—

[Destruction God Wrist Guards] (Saint Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 750

Agility: +105

Endurance: +102

Strength: +100

Additional: Increases the user's close combat attack power by 17%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 1500

Additional: Increases the movement speed when the user's in Stealth mode by 40%

Special: [Wind Stepper], Increases the user's movement speed by 20%

Level: 88

.....

"Woah...." Dancing Forest' mouth widened, "Son of a... it's another Assassin type equipment..."

I nodded and said, "Here, why not the same three people ROLL again?"

Wan Er passed on the roll and said, "I already got the [Immortal's Chest Plate], if I were to get this too, then I'd be too greedy. How about you guys ROLL for it? Melon's already Lv 87, very soon you'll level up to 88...."

And so, Wolf and Qing Qian ROLL-ed for it. In the end, due to luck Qing Qian took the Destruction God's Wrist Guards for 100 points.

I patted my hands and said, "If you equip this wrist guard, how much health do you have Qing Qian?"

Qing Qian blinked a few times and smiled, "Based on the stats, I should have around 7000 health? Sister, after you put on the Immortal's Chest Plate, your health should've risen quite a bit too right?"

Wan Er grinned, "Yup, I originally only had 7000 health. The Immortal's Chest Plate added a bunch, and so now I have around 9700+, very soon I'll become a ten thousand health Assassin...."

Wolf was stunned, "Just where does that put a 5700 health Assassin like

me?”

Dancing Forest said, “If I’m not wrong, the beauty Cang Tong has 5 Saint Tier equipments on herself. Her health being above ten thousand health is very normal. Wolf, you have at most one Saint Tier equipment, how can you compare....”

“Yes...” Wolf made a fist and said, “I’ll continue to do my best, and enter [Zhan Long]’s top 5 Assassins!”

Qing Qian giggled, “I heard that the top Assassins of Jiu Li City are looking for a new guild right now, maybe they’ll come to us. They all have at least 6000 health and full agility...”

Wolf said, “I feel like there’s no way for me to love Melon....”

Wan Er looked at the last piece of equipment and said, “Pig, look at what the last thing is. It’s really weird, I don’t even know what it’s for...”

“Ok....”

I picked up the last piece of equipment. It was a golden hammer. I raised it in my hand and lightly brushed my hand over it. “Ka Cha!” spikes suddenly sprout from the hammer portion of the weapon. I waved my hand over it and the stats appeared in the air. Everybody in the team was shocked—

[Dragon’s Hook] (Saint Tier)

Type: Supporting Concealed Weapon

Strength: +108

Endurance: +105

Magic: +102

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 20%

Special: [Dimension Ripple] Fixes the dimension but allows the user to move around and lock onto a target. The weapon wraps around the user’s hand and allows the user to use a supporting weapon, however the two cannot be used at the same time

Level: 90

Required: Heavy Armor

.....

“Concealed...concealed weapon?” Li Mu exclaimed, “What kind of thing is that....”

Wan Er smiled and said, “I get it. It’s a type of support weapon. For example, if Li Xiao Yao were to equip it, then he could equip it alongside the Cold Iron Sword, but he can’t use them at the same time.”

Wolf spread out his hands, and laughed, “There’s nothing more to say. This equipment requires a Lv 90 player to use it. Right now, I think Brother Xiao Yao is the only heavy armor type that fits that requirement. Li Mu and Wang Jian are still far from Lv 90. Brother Xiao Yao, why don’t you just take it. Otherwise a Saint Tier equipment like this would just go to waste.”

I nodded, and didn’t argue. I raised the Dragon’s Hook and said, “Then, brothers, I’ll take the Dragon’s Hook. I just happen to not have a piece of equipment that could allow me to move long distances.”

Li Mu nodded and said, “Yup, there’s no problem!”

And so, I equipped the Dragon’s Hook. At that moment the golden strings wrapped around my arm and melded in with my armor, allowing me to equip the Cold Iron Sword as well. All three of the weapons were equipped. Later, I’ll test out how strong this Dragon’s Hook really is. I looked around, but there didn’t seem to be any targets.

Wan Er looked up at me. Seeing her stretch out her long neck was extremely charming. Right afterwards, she looked down and smiled at the ground. Seeing her do this, I had an illusion, that my little miss wasn’t an angel, but a beautiful little demoness. Now that she was so familiar with me, she was starting to reveal her wolf’s teeth.

I quietly agreed with Wan Er’s suggestion. I raised my left hand and targeted at the fifth floor above my head. I then made a command and locked the Dragon’s Hook!

“Sou!”

The hammer like ball, along with a golden string charged right towards the sky and went 100 meters. “Keng!” it buried right into the fifth floor. Furthermore, it locked on, and in the next moment, a few commands appeared in my consciousness. Yup, [Charge]!

“Shua!”

The Dragon strings quickly shortened, bringing me to charge right over. In the blink of a second, I suddenly pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword with my right hand. I took a deep breath. Wan Er and all of the others looked like they were becoming ants.

From the distance, Wan Er spread out her two hands and smiled as she shouted, “Pig, hurry up and come down. We’re heading to the 7th floor....”

My face turned green, how was I supposed to go down?

I looked at the commands for the Dragon’s Hook, oh? Release?

“Pa!”

The Dragon Hook immediately released and I fell from a hundred meters above the ground. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others all freaked out and said, “F*ck, the Guild Master’s falling down. Everyone, get out of the way, don’t get hit!”

“Peng!”

I suddenly slammed right into the sixth floor, and I slid out a couple dozen meters while losing ten thousand health. Ash and dust covered my face when I tried to get back up. Calmly, I said, “Don’t ask me, I’m fine....”

Wan Er flew over and face-palmed, “But Pig, you fell so hard your face is flat....”

I was speechless.

Chapter 487: Just Too Unfair

“You guys... did you guys notice an extremely big problem?” Li Mu asked as he raised his Tian Chen Sword.

“What problem?” I exclaimed.

Li Mu made a fist, “I searched through all the grass; this floor’s BOSS didn’t drop any teleportation crystal. How are we supposed to get to the next floor?!”

“That might really be true....” Wang Jian said.

I looked to the side and said, “The main problem is.... Chi Yu Han’s sister, that Beast Tamer Chi Yu Qing, hasn’t died yet....”

Wang Jian raised his hand and pulled out his sword, “Brother Xiao Yao, move away. I’ll poke a few holes in her....”

I felt like ramming my head against the wall, “Wang Jian, you dumbass.... There will probably be some kind of a cutscene. Why else would the BOSS still be alive?”

Wang Jian rubbed his head and said, “Ha, it really seems to be that way....”

I walked forward and knelt beside Chi Yu Qing. I then grabbed her hand and said, “Right now, we need you to tell us, how are we supposed to go to the deepest level of the abyss to find the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han?”

Chi Yu Qing looked up at me, and her beautiful pupils were filled with ice, “Ah ah....”

I got angry, “You... ah ah, what does that mean?”

Li Mu patted my shoulder and said, “It means to go and f*ck yourself...”

My face went dark and I said, “You’re the only one who would say that....”

Chi Yu Qing looked at me and gritted her teeth, “You hypocritical Ba Huang City warriors. I can see through to your souls! Don’t even think about getting any information from me. And don’t even think about going

to the seventh floor to find Brother. You're fated to die. Brother will turn you all into dust!"

I smiled and touched her cheek, before gazing into her eyes, "Chi Yu Han has been sealed for many years. He probably doesn't even realize that the current Ba Huang City isn't the same as in the past. Right now, all we want is for justice to be served. Don't worry, we won't kill him; we just want to bring him out of this abyss. Unless, you want your beloved brother to be imprisoned in here for life?"

"I, I...."

Chi Yu Qing looked up at me, her beautiful eyes filled with tears as she murmured, "Brother has always been buried in suffering and never ending torment. Even with all the strength in the world, it still wouldn't be able to make up for all the remorse and anguish he had to bear. I... I really don't know any other way to make brother even a little happier. Even if I had to give up my natural instincts, I would stay by his side and help him kill the innocent..."

I nodded, "And so, you should take us to the seventh floor. Let us find Chi Yu Han. We'll naturally free him from his troubles. Please, believe in us!"

Chi Yu Qing weakly stood up and raised her whip. She then lightly leaned against my chest plate and softly said, "I want to listen to your heartbeat; I want to know.... do you really deserve the trust of my brother and I?"

I made a fist, "Don't worry, I'll do it."

"Alright!"

Chi Yu Qing looked up and said, "I will help you guys enter the seventh floor and find my brother. However, you must promise me, that you won't kill my brother. Otherwise, I'll smash you into pieces; even if my body were torn and bones crushed, never forgive you!"

Wan Er and Dong Cheng all nodded, "We won't kill him!"

"Ok...."

Chi Yu Qing nodded and raised her left hand. She then waved her hand in the air, summoning a magic talisman. In the next moment, the Talisman opened up a door to another dimension. A hundred meters away. I was able to see that the deepest floor of the Sword Saint Abyss appeared at the other end of the dimensional gateway. Just as I thought, the only way to get to the next floor was through Chi Yu Qing!

Looking at the bright gate, Wan Er's beautiful eyes shone with a mystified light. She gripped her Dragon's Kiss dagger and voiced her suspicion in the team chat, "Pig, do you think that we should really trust that Chi Yu Qing? I feel like... her personality changed too drastically. She can't possibly expose her brother with just a small promise from us."

I nodded, "I understand. However, other than the Chi Yu Qing, there's no other way for us to get to the seventh floor. Therefore, we have to go. Even if it's a trap, we have to face it. I'll walk in the front, and when I'm sure that there's no danger, I'll let you guys know. It looks like this teleportation gate will last for a long time."

"Ok, you be careful!"

I then buffed myself with a [Wall of Dou Qi] and also activated [Dragon's Whistle of Lightning and Thunder] with a shout. Afterwards, I pulled out both my swords and stepped into the teleportation circle. I felt an invisible force suddenly pull my body forward, before reappearing at the entrance of the seventh floor. Suddenly, a pure white figure appeared right before me. It was a beautiful young woman grasping a long sword. A pair of pure white wings opened up on her back, and she glowed with a dazzling light. As she flew forward a meter, I saw that she was dressed in a traditional Chinese dress.

Originally, everything was going very well. The little angel walked up to me and said, "Traveler from a distant land, I was originally an angel from Heaven, but I was trapped here for ten thousand years by evil demons. I've missed the gardens of my home and want you to bring me back. If you do, I will make you my master." After saying that, she blushed and clasped her hands in front of her, making the two mounds on her chest even bigger. She then said, "As long as you are my master, you can do

whatever you want....”

.... Unfortunately, she didn't actually do any of that, and instead waved her longsword while opening up her wings, her face turning fierce as she bellowed, “F*cking bastard, you dare charge into Chi Yu Han's territory. Looks like you're tired of living. I will cut you into a million pieces and throw you into the fires of hell, before having the little demons feast upon your flesh!”

“F*ck, this really wasn't as good as I had hoped!

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged forward. Before I even got close, the angel's sword started glowing. With that, she threw a [Justice Trial] right onto my shoulder!

“2217 ! ”

Tsk, what strong attacking power!

I retaliated with 5 slashes of my sword. I should cut off twenty thousand health first and at the same time, drain back some health from the damage. My Dragon Reservoir Sword shuddered and activated a [Combo]. I then supported the attack with my Cold Iron Sword; three attacks from my Dragon Reservoir Sword and two from my Cold Iron Sword, slicing the Angel's chest into a bloody mess. I couldn't even bear to look at the scene in front of me. That bastard struck at me so violently! She opened her hand, and a fiery red ball of light shot right into my chest— [Grip of the Angel]!

“3118 ! ”

Terrifying! I retreated several steps, and used a Lv 9 Heal on myself. Afterwards, I commanded my Flaming Tiger God, and continued to attack the angel. It took me a whole half a minute to kill her. It wasn't until then that I said in the team chat, “Come in!”

“Shua shua....”

Wan Er and Qing Qian all stepped into the gate, staring worriedly at me and didn't let out a sigh of relief until they were sure that I was fine. Li Mu looked at the Angel's body and said, “F*ck, what a beautiful and kind

looking girl. She even has a such fine chest and legs. Guild Master, how did you have the heart to cut her up like this?”

I raised my eyebrows, “Oh f*ck off, how can you say that she’s kind when she nearly killed me?”

Qing Qian giggled, “Wuu, this monster is called Garrison Angel. Maybe she’ll even drop a Garrison Outfit?”

“Either way, the first one didn’t drop any. Shall we continue to press forward?”

“Ok.”

I let Darling Duck cast a heal on me as well as a buff before raising my sword and continuing forward. We hadn’t walk very far before another angel appeared. This time we were able to see the stats before we started the attack—

[Garrison Angel] (Thunder Tier)

Level: 100

Attack: 4050-4800

Defense: 4450

Health: 300000

Skills: [Justice Trial] [Brave Ram] [Grip of the Angel]

Introduction: Garrison Angel, these angels were originally spirits that had fallen from heaven during the War of Gods and Demons. They suffered through all the pains of hell for thousands of years, but were never able to free themselves. Due to their angelic spirit, they have lost the ability to reincarnate. Later on, when Chi Yu Han was sealed, the spirits left their bodies and entered into Hell. There, they killed the first demon guardians and brought the angels all back to the human world. These Garrison Angels will, in the future, become Chi Yu Han’s strongest trump card for defeating Ba Huang City when he returns to the human world

“Looks like Chi Yu Han really is plotting....” I smiled and looked at the

Chi Yu Qing behind me and said, “Do you still think that your brother is in the right?”

Chi Yu Qing fell into deep thought, and didn’t say anything for a few minutes. Finally, she said, “Brother’s vengeance and pain, I’ll never be able to understand.”

“Hatred and vengeance, he just wants to take it out on the innocent people of Ba Huang City, and induce a massacre, isn’t that right?” I countered.

Chi Yu Qing fell back into silence.

I began killing monsters. Wang Jian and Li Mu both took on one of the Garrison Angels, and ended up in a tie. The Garrison Angel used a [Justice Trial] to deal 5000 damage to Li Mu. A [Grip of the Angel] dealt another 7000 damage to him as well. With a single critical attack, Li Mu would lose his life.

“Hey.....”

Wan Er raised her dagger and walked forward before saying, “Li Mu, Wang Jian, your magic defense is too low. Why don’t you just provide support. Don’t take away any aggro. Just let Li Xiao Yao be the main damager. That way, these Garrison Angels will have no way of killing us.”

Wang Jian nodded, “Ok.”

And so, Wan Er became one of the main attackers, while I attracted another Garrison Angel over. Our whole team very carefully advanced forward. Due to the relationship between these Lv 100 Thunder Tier monsters and the SSS Tier map, their stats were pretty much as high as a BOSS.

After killing monsters for a whole hour, we ended up getting disappointed. The most these Garrison Angels dropped were Purple Tier and Emperor Tier equipments. But there wasn’t a single Garrison Outfit. Looks like the most we can get is around 120 sets. However, that was enough. We couldn’t be too ungrateful.

As we continued killing, a conversation erupted in the guild chat—

Old K: Hey hey, Li bastard, how's your progress? [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound: First Division] seem to have dragged along [Wrath of the Heroes] over too. They brought a total of 50,000 people into the Sword Saint Forest. It seems as though they won't give up unless they completely annihilate us. This time, they have enough people. What should we do?"

One Second Hero: From what I see, why don't we invite [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] to help us? We have 20,000 players online right now. Just go at them directly, we can completely destroy all 50,000 of them!"

Tang Xing: That's right, that's right. Annihilate them! Let them have second thoughts about bullying Brother Xiao Yao and the beauty Cang Tong!"

I coughed and said, "Everyone, just focus on grinding levels. It's no problem. Seeing as Soaring Dragon, Cang Cheng, and Liu Ying are trying so hard to make our lives miserable, then us 10 will just drag those 50,000 people into the depths of Sword Saint Abyss. Don't worry, from the way the Sword Saint Abyss is laid out, they won't be able to deal with us no matter how many people they bring!"

Fox: "Then what if they use their Death God Arrows?"

I fell silent for a few second before saying, "That's no problem either.... I can deal with those!"

Fox: "Alright then, good luck!"

Chapter 488: Chi Yu Han Awakens

After fighting for a whole 3 hours, there was still around 10% of the Garrison Angels left. This proved to us that all of the Thunder Tier monsters on the last floor were all stingy. The Garrison Angels didn't drop any outfits. Even their Gold Tier and Purple Tier drop rates weren't that high. The only problem was that their attack power and health was terrifyingly strong. Their drop rate and strength really aren't proportional.

.....

“Hu hu...”

Raging winds blew towards us. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked over. My War Swept Cloak fluttered in the wind behind me. I turned around to look to my left, and saw that a few holes appeared in the walls beside us, creating a volcano almost. Inside it was filled with Garrison Angels, there were at least a hundred, each of them staring at me.

“F*ck....” I reached out and pointed, “There’s a whole nest of Garrison Angels, should we kill them?”

Wan Er smiled, “Let’s not, why don’t we go and find Chi Yu Han? It was really difficult for us to reach this point, so let’s not waste time on these Garrison Angels!”

“Yup, let’s go!”

.....

We continued forward and cleared out the Garrison Angels on the path. Without noticing, a few hours already passed by in the game. This Sword Saint Abyss took us a whole two days to finish. It really is a drawn out struggle.

“Why.... why haven’t [Flying Dragon], [Hero’s Mound] and [Wrath of the Heroes] come yet?” Thousand League Spring looked behind us and said, “I keep feeling like they should’ve come here a long time ago, but I don’t see a single person.”

Dong Cheng raised her staff, and bright meteors lit up the sky, but not a single Assassin seemed to appear.

While I cut down the last few Garrison Angels, I said, “They must’ve sent some Assassin type players to use [Stealth] and watch us from afar. Once we start killing the BOSS, they’ll probably try and pressure us with their army.”

Dancing Forest raised her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou and blinked a few times, “Should we attack or not? This really is a problem. Once we start fighting them, then it’ll be hard for us to stop halfway through. But if we don’t start fighting, then we’ll just end up in stalemate...”

“Let’s just find Chi Yu Han first!”

“Ok!”

.....

Everyone threw out their attacks to kill off the last few Garrison Angels. We continued forward, but the path ended. There was just a black wall right in front of us.

“Eh.... where’s Chi Yu Han?” Wan Er furrowed her brow as she asked.

Qing Qian reached out and pointed to the right, “Sister Cang Tong, look over there!”

Everyone looked over there, but all they saw were the magma rocks under our feet floating on the lava. The flaming hot lava boiled with a “Gu du gu du”. Furthermore, in the lava, there appeared to be magma spikes that were shaped like footholds. They lead to the center of the abyss, where there was an island like great hall. The heat made it extremely hard to see, but we could faintly make out a great hall that was filled with Talismans and Magic Crystals. There were nine totem poles at the center of the great hall, with a crimson chain that connected each one. A man knelt at the center, holding a sword that pierced into the ground. His snow white cloak fluttered in the wind, and his head was lowered. He looked extremely stern, but couldn’t move a single finger.

“Ah....”

Behind me, Chi Yu Qing's body slightly trembled as she looked towards the great hall. Tears rolled down her face and she said, "Brother.... brother, isn't that the Nine Dragon Seal? Damn it, Ba Huang City's trash, to think that you would use the Nine Dragon Seal to trap my brother's body here. I.... Brother...."

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and looked at everyone before saying, "You guys all have a pretty good sense of balance, right? You guys have the confidence to try out those rocks?"

Wan Er stuck her chest out and confidently smiled, "Of course!"

Qing Qian and Dancing Forest both nodded.

"Then come with me!"

I pulled out my sword and leapt up. After jumping around 2 meters, my shoes touched a rock. Afterwards, I leapt up again onto the next rock. I jumped like that a dozen more times, before stepping onto the great hall. Sunlight illuminated the entire area, I could even see the veins on Chi Yu Han's sword arm.

"Sha sha...."

Behind me, Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Qing Qian all arrived. [Zhan Long]'s core players' strength really is above average, and nothing out of the ordinary happened. Even if something did happen, and the enemy brought their troops over, then they'd just end up falling into the burning lava. Even Drunken Spear, that ten thousand health Knight would be killed in seconds. They definitely won't be in a much better position than ourselves.

Chi Yu Qing lightly descended. The whip in her hand began to tremble when she saw Chi Yu Han's appearance. She slowly walked over, and knelt to the ground beside him as she softly whispered, "Brother, brother...."

Chi Yu Han slowly looked up, his loose hair fluttering in the wind. He revealed a very handsome face, but his eyes were extremely bloodshot. He looked at Chi Yu Qing and smiled, "Yu Qing, you came?"

“Brother, how are you?” Chi Yu Qing tearfully asked.

Chi Yu Han’s eyes were filled with affection, and he opened his mouth a few times before softly saying, “Dumb girl, why are you crying? Aren’t I doing well? Didn’t I say? Before I avenge father, I will never die. All of the demons of Hell and the gods of Heaven couldn’t kill me. I, Chi Yu Han, will never die!”

Chi Yu Qing cried out, “Brother, it pains me to see you like this....”

Chi Yu Han gave a warm smile, “Yu Qing, don’t cry anymore. From what I remember, the wild girl I knew would never cry. You’re Chi Yu Han’s sister, you need to be stronger!”

As he finished talking, Chi Yu Han looked up to see Wan Er, I and the rest. His voice turned cold, “These people... they carry the insignia of Ba Huang City. Hmph, are they Ba Huang City’s people? Yu Qing, why haven’t you killed them? Why!? Did you forget what you promised me? That we would definitely get justice for father!!”

Chi Yu Qing bit her lip, “Brother, these people are really strong. I’m not their match...”

“What?!”

Chi Yu Han abruptly stood up, his hand wielded the longsword and he shouted, “You guys... you guys dare harm my, Chi Yu Han’s, sister? Do you guys even know what you’re doing?”

Chi Yu Qing quickly grabbed onto Chi Yu Han’s body and said, “Brother, brother....”

As she finished talking, Chi Yu Qing turned around to look at us, “You guys... just what do you guys want to do with brother?”

I took out the King’s Command Scroll and said, “Under the command of the Ba Huang City Princess Angela, I’m here to take Chi Yu Han back to Ba Huang City. We are just here under orders!”

Chi Yu Qing immediately spread out her arms, “No, the people of Ba Huang City will definitely kill Brother. They hate brother to the bones!”

Chi Yu Han gripped his longsword, his entire body shook but he couldn't exert a single drop of energy. It was clear, his energy had been sealed by the Nine Dragon Seal, and so he had no way of doing anything to us.

I slowly pulled out the seal chain that Angela gave to me and smiled, "No matter, I have this. With it, I can bring him back to Ba Huang City!"

Chi Yu Qing started to panic, "No, Brother's body has already been pierced by the Nine Dragon Seal. If you guys use that evil chain to seal him again, then his soul will shatter!"

"Is that so?"

"Really!" Chi Yu Qing bit her lip so hard, that she broke skin and she said, "First of all, you guys have to cut apart the Nine Dragon Seal's dragon chains. That's the only way to release brother's seal. Otherwise, you'll never be able to bring him out!"

Li Mu laughed, "You're trying to trick us. Once we break the seal, wouldn't Chi Yu Han just kill us all?!"

Chi Yu Qing smiled, "Did you think that he wouldn't do so if you did this?!"

"Sh*t!"

I suddenly shouted, "Chi Yu Qing is unsealing Chi Yu Han right now!"

Right as my words fell, Chi Yu Qing's thorny whip had already passed through Chi Yu Han's back. At that moment, "keng keng keng" one after another, the golden sealing needles fell to the ground. Then, the nine sealing chains started glowing, and they all began to shake!

"Yu Qing, back up!"

Chi Yu Han suddenly stood up and roared. Raging winds began to dance around his body, and streams of red energy began to rush into his body. All of those dragon sealing chains exploded with a "Peng peng peng". F*ck, Chi Yu Han has already broken through his seal. He's already recovered around 30% of his strength. He raised his long sword, and smiled,

“Heaven’s Spite Sword, I can finally give you a taste of blood again. Come, fight with me and avenge the souls of my father and the millions of soldiers who died!”

Chi Yu Qing quickly retreated. Clearly, she completely trusted the strength of Chi Yu Han, and had no intention of helping him.

.....

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and gritted my teeth as I stood in front of Wan Er and Qing Qian. At the same time, I read out Chi Yu Han’s stats to everyone in the team chat. He really was immensely strong. Just how were we supposed to kill a BOSS like this—

[Sword Saing Chi Yu Han] (Saint Tier)

Level: 100

Attack: 5900-7000

Defense: 5500

Health: 40000000

Skills: [Flame Slash] [Glacial Armor] [Mountains of Soul Soldiers]
[Stepping into Saint Level]

Introduction: Chi Yu Han, Ba Huang City’s number one general Chi Yang’s son. Rumor has it that when he was very young he disappeared from Ba Huang City. Later, he reappeared in the Chi You Tribe, where he trained his body. When he was young, Chi Yu Han entered the Chi Yuan Empire to become a commander. He lead troops to invade the land, and became the empire’s strongest general. Afterwards, he took his troops to the East, and charged all the way to Ba Huang City. At that point, he had conquered over half of ’s land. Afterwards, at Ba Huang City, Chi Yu Han fell for Luo Lei’s trap, and was imprisoned by the Nine Dragon Seal. Now that this herculean man who has stepped into the Saint Realm has reawakened, catastrophe will definitely fall upon this land

.....

“F*ck.... 7000 attack is this right!?” Li Mu’s sword began to tremble and

he pursed his lips, “I can’t even imagine how painful it would be to get hit by a 7000 attack...”

I calmly said, “Most importantly, you’re a dozen levels lower than Chi Yu Han. If you guys really tried to fight, you’ll probably end up getting even your soul shattered...”

Li Mu stepped backwards several steps, “Guild Master, you hold him off. Wang Jian and I’ll just act as support!”

I frowned, “This really is unfair....”

Chapter 489: Another Provocation

After using all of the BUFFs, and my [Wall of Dou Qi]'s lava like energy condensed around my body. I lightly swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and charged right at Chi Yu Han. Either way, I was going to fight, so might as well initiate the attack!

“Shua!”

My Cold Iron Sword suddenly flew up and followed the path that I had set beforehand, right at Chi Yu Han. It had cut into him 3 times. This was the most I could do in a split second. Afterwards, I locked on the remaining 6 attack paths. Either way, the BOSS won't try and dodge it. At the same time, three damage numbers popped up from above Chi Yu Han's head, proving once again that his defense wasn't fake—

“2718 ! ”

“2893 ! ”

“3011 ! ”

.....

“F*ck, Guild Master only has so little attack power!?” Thousand League Spring said with her eyebrows raised.

Dancing Forest raised her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou and activated her [Shield Breaker Shot] as she said, “It's not that Guild Master's attack power is low, it's just that this BOSS' defense is too high. Look, he's even using [Glacial Armor]. The fact that Guild Master could break through so much of his defense means that his attack power really is above average....”

In the end, she shot three [Shield Breaker Shot]'s decreasing the BOSS' defense by 20%. I successfully activated a [Wind Slash] right in front of Chi Yu Han's chest!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew and a large damage number flew up—

“3987 ! ”

Good, this time, I managed to break through even more of his defense! Then, Chi Yu Han smiled, and when my sword fell, the Heaven’s Spite Sword in his and suddenly flashed. [Flame Slash] fell right into my chest and pain spread throughout my entire upper body. An enormous damage number flew up. What terrifying damage—

“8097 ! ”

This was even under the situation where I had the [Wall of Dou Qi] to protect myself. Otherwise, I would’ve taken 10,000 damage. If he were to deal a critical attack, I would’ve instantly died!

Most importantly was that Chi Yu Han’s attack speed was extremely high. He immediately closed the distance between us and drove a punch right into my abdomen. Then, with a sweep of his sword, he cut into my chest, bringing out another two damage numbers—

“4982 ! ”

“7263 ! ”

Thankfully, Darling Duck used a [Grip of Compassion] in time, or else I would’ve been history.

“Not good, we have to control the situation some more, or else there’s no way to fight!”

Wan Er raised her Dragon’s Kiss dagger and passed right by me. Suddenly she appeared right between the BOSS and I. She waved her dagger. Unfortunately, her [Gouge] was dodged. Without any other choice, she raised both of her daggers and activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool], then followed it with a [Blade of the Death God] + [Twin Blade Harmony]. Her Dragon’s Kiss dagger passed right through Chi Yu Han’s armor, creating sparks and a river of blood—

“4527 ! ”

“4918 ! ”

“5423 ! ”

“4892 ! ”

.....

Chi Yu Han roared in anger and pain. He then waved his fist and punched right onto Wan Er's dagger. The force of the attack made the beautiful little miss retreat several steps. That wasn't even enough, Chi Yu Han then spun around and hacked right at Wan Er's shoulder! As one of the strongest Assassins on the China Server, Wan Er had an unnaturally high reaction speed. The dagger in her left hand suddenly disappeared, and she pulled out the iron umbrella behind her back to defend!

“Peng!”

“5717 ! ”

Even though she couldn't take the force of the attack, Wan Er retreated several steps and commanded her Purple Kirin Dragon to spit out Dragon's Breath. At the same time, she waved her Dragon's Kiss dagger and activated a [Flying Dagger] from a distance.

I quickly filled up my health again and reached out to grab Wan Er's arm, pushing her behind me. I used a [Blade Rush] and the blade sunk right into the BOSS body. Frost began to climb up my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and I threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] into Chi Yu Han. Streams of frost energy began to wrap around the BOSS, decreasing his movement speed. At the same time, I used a [Great Tortoise Realm] to add on. White energy spread out under my feet, and I used a [Strength of a Thousand Men] on the BOSS' back.

“F*ck you!”

Chi Yu Han spun around and used a [Flame Slash] and three normal attacks. Within moments, my health got cut down to critical. This attack power is just crazy!

“Pa!”

At the most critical moment, Dancing Forest' [Scatter Shot] succeeded, stunning the BOSS for two seconds. I took the opportunity to recover my

health and activate a special skill—[Halberd Flame]. Flames began to rise around me, continuously burning at Chi Yu Han's body. Either way, I was being hit really hard. My rage basically refilled itself every 10 seconds. I might as well use special skills whenever I can. However, [Dragon Transformation] that kind of a special skill, couldn't be used as carelessly. The cooldown was just too long. It must only be used as a last resort.

Once my health rose all the way to ten thousand, Chi Yu Han roared and he swung his longsword.

I opened my hand, [Binding Chains]!

“MISS ! ”

I didn't succeed! My heart sunk. The two Healer girls would never be able to catch up with the damage I was taking. The reality was, that the ten of us fighting this Lv 100 Saint Tier BOSS on our own was too much!

“Shua!”

Wan Er passed by me again, her dagger encased in a layer of ice. Time to risk it all. One after another, attacks sliced into Chi Yu Han's body. Furthermore, her normal attacks were extremely quick. Within seconds, she managed to deal twelve attacks.

Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring quickly gave me heals, it was an all or nothing!

“F*ck, you ignorant bastards, I will cut you all down!” Chi Yu Han broke through the ice and angrily shouted. He swept out his sword and pushed Wan Er back. I retreated a few steps back as well. Chi Yu Han then raised his hand and storm clouds covered the sky, “Soul Soldiers from the horizon, cut down all of the evil that is before you!”

Soul soldiers covered horizon before us!

“Shua shua shua....”

Countless weapons fell from the sky, dropping into the hands of the soldiers. With the swords and halberds in hand, they charged at us with

flames wrapped around themselves. “Peng peng peng!” They threw an attack with a 40 yard radius. Even the two Healers were affected. Dong Cheng Yue anxiously used a [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Lance]+[Magma Abyss], but still couldn’t control the flow of the battle. She shouted, “This.... This is too hard.... Brother Xiao Yao will never be able to withstand this attack!”

Before she even finished talking, I took two attacks from the Soul Soldiers. Right afterwards, Chi Yu Han then threw a [Flame Cut]+ normal attack onto my shoulder. Pain shot threw my arm, and my health dropped twice——

“17846 ! ”

“6421 ! ”

Everything went dark and I fell to the ground. I even dropped my Cold Iron Sword, as well as a Garrison Outfit. With that I was killed!

“Damn, I really hate this feeling.....”

Wan Er furrowed her elegant brows and raised her Dragon’s Kiss dagger. She then threw an [Ice Pick Whirlpool] right at the BOSS and shouted, “Li Mu and Wang Jian, hurry up and help me! Darling Duck needs to revive the pig. If he falls, then we’re all screwed!”

It was as though the Goddess of Luck took pity on our ten man team. All three hits of Wan Er’ s [Ice Pick Whirlpool] had an Ice Seal effect. Chi Yu Han took all of those hits. Wang Jian and Li Mu raised their swords to help support Wan Er, who was already in critical health.

The seconds it took for me to revive were extremely long and slow. By the time I stood up again, Li Mu grunted and fell to his knees under the BOSS’ sword. Even Wang Jian retreated with critical health.

Without another word, I picked up the Cold Iron Sword and re-equipped it. I then added a [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] buff and charged at the BOSS again. Wan Er then took the time to heal herself.

I then opened my hand again, [Binding Chains]!

“Shua!”

Iron chains broke through the earth and wrapped around Chi Yu Han’s two legs. This time our luck was pretty good, and I managed to bind him, 7.2 seconds of stun!

Thousand League Spring then revived Li Mu. Li Mu then picked up the Garrison Outfit and retreated. Wolf and Qing Qian could only activate an [Absolute Step] to try and stun the BOSS. Before they could even determine if the stun had succeeded or not, they immediately retreated. Their defense and health was too weak. They wouldn’t even be able to take a normal attack. This situation highlighted the advantages of Wan Er’s Hermit God’s skills. In the entire team, only she and I could fight with the BOSS. Nobody else could take the hits.

The situation was slowly returning to our grasp. The second time Chi Yu Han tried to use [Mountains of Soul Soldiers], I interrupted him with a [Curse of the Night God Asura]. My Cold Iron Sword flew out and spun around piercing right through Chi Yu Han’s body. Blood blossomed from Chi Yu Han’s chest. He then angrily shouted, “I recognize this attack. It’s a unique skill from Dragon City. Young fellow, what’s your relationship with Frost!?”

I calmly said, “Frost is my teacher....”

“So your Frost’s student!” Chi Yu Han gave a cruel smile and threw an even faster attack, “Frost that bitch once stepped into this Abyss before, and I had dueled with her for a bit. She really is a strong one. However, I don’t have any sympathies for her. I have no interest in a fake city like Dragon City, and so today I will kill off all of Frost’s students. That shouldn’t be too big of a problem.”

A [Great Realm of Desolation] burst from my Dragon Reservoir Sword. My Dragon power activated, dealing three times that of a superior damage—

“22236 ! ”

“Really? Can you kill me?” I laughed. I’m a player, you’re an NPC. You can only be pushed by fate, while I.... I have unlimited revives!

.....

Right as I was falling into the rhythm of battle, I suddenly heard a whole crowd of people coming at us. Thousand League Spring shouted, “Oh no, people are coming, so many people!”

“Sou!”

A cold arrow broke through the air, and Thousand League Spring suddenly couldn’t move. She was stunned by a [Scatter Shot]. All of sudden, four [Magma Abyss]es activated right under her feet, instantly killing our second Healer!

The shot came from [Wrath of the Heroes] number one Archer Sonata. Together, along with Heart of Fire’s [Magma Abyss], they took our Healer.

“What an annoying feeling....”

Dong Cheng raised her staff and flew up, saying, “We can’t keep on killing the BOSS, or else our entire team will die. At least a thousand enemies have come down. Li Xiao Yao, why don’t you lure the BOSS away?”

I nodded and activated [Haste]. I then retreated, bringing Chi Yu Han with me. After running around 40 yards, I activated [Binding Chains]!

God, please, let this succeed!

7.2 seconds! I immediately began to run, and took all of the [Zhan Long] players to the top pf the floor. There was around 120 yards between us and the BOSS. When Chi Yu Han was released from the Binding Chains, he took a deep breath and looked around, saying, “It suddenly went dark. Where did those bastards go!?”

I gave a sigh of relief. The BOSS didn’t come over. It was time to deal with the players!

Chapter 490: The Endless Chase

“Careful! They have Death God Arrows!” Dong Cheng said as she flew into the air.

Wan Er’s intelligent eyes stared right into the crowd as she said, “A few hour ago, I was studying the Death God Arrows. This weapon is extremely strong, and can penetrate anything. However, when it activates, it lets out a very loud sound. It’s only suitable for surprise ambushes. In a situation where you can see the Death God Arrows, you have at least one second to react to it. In that time, you could easily dodge the attack.”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged forward. I dashed forward, and stepped onto the magma rocks. The lava reflected my figure, and waves of heat emanated from it. It was hot enough to melt a person.

“Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

The Vice Guild Master of [Wrath of the Heroes], Wind Chaser, shouted. I recognized him. It was Li Feng Lin, one of the students from Li Hua University. Actually, you couldn’t even say that we knew each other. However, now, we were in the game. Now, it was all or nothing!

“Zhi zhi....”

I heard the sound of a bow being drawn. It was Sonata again! I heard him pull back the bow as he aimed a [Scatter Shot] right at me. Right beside him, [Wrath of the Heroes] number one Mage Heart of Fire then waved her staff, activating [Magma Abyss].

“Sha.....”

I accelerated forward, and my Cloud Stepping Boots crossed the magma. I leapt forward right onto a another rock. Sonata naturally changed his angle of attack, and predicted where I would land. “Shua!” The [Scatter Shot] flew straight at me. At the same time, the flames at the bottom suddenly rose and Heart of Fire’s [Magma Abyss] activated. Looks like these people are planning on trapping us on this island.

However, everything was within my calculations!

“Peng!”

Once I stepped onto the magma, I kicked off of it and landed on another piece of rock. At the same time, I opened my hand and locked [Defeat the Dragon] right onto Sonata!

“Shua!”

With the blink of an eye, Sonata appeared before me. He raised his bow, but my Dragon Reservoir Sword was even faster, and I pierced right through his chest!

“Pu Chi....”

I wasn't able to immediately kill him, and Sonata activated [Crystallize]. I waved my left hand and pushed him straight into the pool of lava right beside me. “Pa tss”, the Crystallized Sonata immediately burnt to crisp and turned into a flash of light. There was no way he could defend against the lava.

Once my battle boots stepped a different rock, I activated a [Blade Rush] and rushed forward before finally reaching a place to regain my balance. I then spun my two blades. “Hua La” blood spurted from my enemies as I cleaved five people in half. I summoned my Flaming Tiger God. Behind me, Wan Er, Li Mu and Wang Jian all charged over and Thousand League Spring had been revived by Darling Duck. Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing all remained on the island to recover their health.

“Charge!”

Wang Jian used a [Blade Rush] and cut right into the crowd of people. He had [Dou Qi Armor] to protect himself. He suddenly roared and activated [Halberd Whirlwind]. Flames burst from the blade of his halberd as he swept through the enemy lines. Li Mu followed his attack with a [Covering Sword Slash] and cleaned out a whole group of people. Right afterwards, Qing Qian used a [Grip of the Fire Fox] and ran straight at Wang Ze Cheng. Li Mu and Wang Jian took the chance to activate [Flying Sword].

“Block them!”

Wang Ze Cheng shouted and raised his shield. “Keng Keng” he parried the two [Flying Sword]s’ attacks. Before he could react, Wan Er, Qing Qian and Wolf all activated [Flying Dagger], cutting through all of the players in [Hero’s Mound: First Division]!

I then set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow], and activated a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], slaughtering a dozen people. I then used a [Blade Spin], forcing Wang Ze Cheng to retreat with critical health. This proved that [Hero’s Mound: First Division]’s elite force had no way of defending against us, not even for a minute!

However, the enemy had too many people. Right as I took everyone to advance forward, Soaring Dragon had already brought [Flying Dragon]’s people charging towards the island. Everyone jumped across the lava. Their plans were clear, they wanted to steal our BOSS. Everything else was a lie, what was most important was the equipment that the BOSS dropped.

.....

“Damn it, the [Flying Dragon] people are stealing our BOSS. What should we do!?” Wang Jian shouted as he charged forward.

My Dragon Reservoir cut down two shields, and I rammed into two Knights. The combo of my two swords hacked them down and I said, “Don’t worry about them. Chi Yu Han still has more than 70% health left. That’s more than enough for them to kill. We’ll clear out all of the people on the seventh floor first, then go after Chi Yu Han!”

“Alright!”

“Be careful of the Death God Arrows!” Wan Er cautioned.

I nodded, “Ok, be careful! Also, I don’t see Drunken Spear. What’s up with that?”

Li Mu sternly said, “Based on some questionable information, it sounds like when Drunken Spear had killed himself in the lava, he dropped his weapon and so he started throwing a tantrum. No matter what, he wouldn’t come for a third time. Soaring Dragon couldn’t convince him

otherwise...”

I was speechless.

Right at that moment, the people behind Wang Ze Cheng split up and ten Death God Arrow machines were pushed out. “Pu pu pu” I could hear the arrows being released, they were coming!

I saw through everything that was happening. Two of the Death God Arrows were aimed at me. With a shift of my feet, I kicked off and moved to the side 2 yards. All I heard was the two Death God Arrows missing me by a hair’s breadth. The poisonous vines even scratched my face. “Da da” blood dripped onto the floor.

Wan Er, Qing Qian and Wolf all dodged the arrows. Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng, those two Wind Elves flew out. This time, only Darling Duck was hit by the arrows, but she still didn’t die. Dong Cheng immediately used a [Magma Abyss] to burn away the poisonous vines. However, the Death God Arrows came in waves. “Shua Shua Shua”, one after another, the arrows activated. It became harder and harder for us to dodge them!

“Brother Xiao Yao, we can’t keep on doing this!” Qing Qian shouted

I nodded and raised my sword to charge over. However, [Magma Abyss]es burst under my feet. This feeling really was terrible.

“Pig!”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced into the distance, “Do you still remember that cave? There’s at least 200+ Garrison Angels that we didn’t kill. You should understand the use of those Garrison Angels!”

Allenwa note: ok who didn’t see this one coming

My heart leapt up, and I didn’t hesitate for a second. I gripped my sword and activated [Blade Rush]. I suddenly turned around and entered into the cave. I then charged right towards the Garrison Angels, and they chased right after me. “Ka ka ka” the attacks smacked against my [Wall of Dou Qi]. As I gulped down a potion, I lured the 200 Garrison Angels and immediately retreated. I did my best to dodge the attacks, and activated [Haste]. “Shua!” I charged forward and my health had dropped to rock

bottom. So dangerous!

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai came out! Kill him!” Yan Suo shouted. This Li Hua University beauty treated me pretty well in the first place, but after experiencing everything that happened between us, she hated me to the bone. Especially after that day in the forest, when I saw her and Wang Ze Cheng in that embarrassing situation. Without a doubt, Yan Suo wants me to die.

As I faced all of the players from [Hero's Mound: First Division] and [Wrath of the Heroes] players, I smiled and immediately dashed to retreat. Behind me, the Garrison Angel's all charged forward. At that moment, Heart of Fire shouted, “Not good!”

Liu Ying raised his long sword and shouted, “Ignore the monsters! Do all you can to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Once he dies, this Sword Saint Abyss will come under the command of our three guilds!”

Heart of Fire raised her staff and activated [Indigo Sea Arrow]+[Icicle Spell]. F*ck, this bitch really was strong!

Everything was within my calculations. Right as the [Indigo Sea Arrow] flew at me, I raised my hand. I aimed the Dragon's Hook at a rock on the seventh floor and let it fly. “Shua!” The Dragon's Hook flew out and “Keng!” It buried itself right into the cliff. The Dragon's Hook then shrunk, bringing me along with it!

I charged forward around a hundred meters, and left the range of the long distance players. I gripped the Dragon's Hook and looked back at the ground. All I noticed was that everyone had been thrown into chaos. The aggro of nearly 200 Garrison Angels had been lost in the crowd, and since the nearest targets were [Hero's Mound] and [Wrath of the Heroes]'s players, naturally the Garrison Angels' switched targets to them.

“Oh no....”

Little Piggy put away his musket, and turned around to leave. He shouted, “Leave, [Wrath of the Heroes] retreat! I knew we shouldn't have stepped into this mud!”

Liu Ying raised his long sword and said, "Wait, victory and defeat hasn't been set in stone!"

Little Piggy's face twisted with rage, "I told you before that we couldn't ally ourselves with [Hero's Mound]. Boss, did you forget what you said earlier? Don't forget, Yan Suo used to be yours. She cheated on you with Wang Ze Cheng right in front of you. Are you going to just forget about that? Is it all just because you have a few beauties in your arms right now?"

Liu Ying grunted, "I got over it. One woman cannot become the stumbling stone of my career....:

.....

While I hung in the air, I couldn't help but smile when I heard that. "If you don't leave now, then we won't ever get the chance again. Little Piggy, I suggest you go back the city now. These Garrison Angels are probably more terrifying than we can ever imagine!"

Little Piggy didn't make another sound and crushed a City Return Scroll. He could already see that these Garrison Angels' attack was extremely high. They had practically killed all of [Hero's Mound: Division One] and [Wrath of the Heroes] heavy armor players. One can imagine just from the fact that Li Mu and Wang Jian's 4000 defense wasn't enough to defend against them, that an average heavy armor's defense would never be able stand against a single [Grip of the Angel].

On the ground, Wang Jian, Li Mu, Dancing Forest, Wolf, and Thousand League Spring all lay in a pool of blood. The Death God Arrows and all of the players had killed them all. Wan Er, on the other hand, flew up and took Darling Duck and Qing Qian with her to escape. Dong Cheng waved her staff and stood on one of the rocks with an annoyed look on her face. No one dared to get close. Her magic could kill enormous amounts of people easily, and so normal people wouldn't even dare to get close.

It was almost time....

I activated— [Dragon Transformation]!

I had temporarily received the ability to fly. I immediately left my hiding place, and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out. I cut apart the iron chain, and then flew over the lava, killing all of the people who were chasing after Dong Cheng Yue. I reached out and hugged onto Dong Cheng Yue and flew towards Wan Er.

On the island in the center of the abyss, Soaring Dragon's screams of pain rang out. He had died under Chi Yu Han's sword. Of the hundreds of [Flying Dragon] players that he had brought with him, only a few were left. Chi Yu Han only had 12% health left. Too bad for them, [Flying Dragon]'s players weren't going to live to see the day this BOSS died.

Chapter 491: The Deadly Holy Realm

Translator Note: I am changing one of Chi Yu Han's skills, [Stepping into Saint Level] to [Stepping into the Holy Realm]. Holy Realm is a state of strength that is mentioned at the beginning of the quest that Chi Yu Han momentarily steps into, because he has achieved such a high level of training. Sorry for the confusion everyone! I'll be sure to change the previous chapters.

"Should we fight him now?" Wan Er said as she descended to the ground.

I shook my head, "Darling Duck, hurry up and revive Thousand Spring, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Little Wolf. As fast as you can, BUFF yourselves. Let's let those [Flying Dragon] people fight a little longer. Chi Yu Han's last skill hasn't activated!"

"Ok!"

One after another, rays of light fell down. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others all stood up on the battlefield. After they received heals, I then activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Dragon's Whistle of Lightning and Thunder]. Everyone on the team stood up and watched all of [Flying Dragon]'s performance. In reality, all that was left was Drunken Spear's brother Black Tortoise and his 50 people to fight the BOSS to the death.

Chi Yu Han's health fell to 10%, his big skill was coming!

"Hong!"

One after another, flames began to surround his body. Right after that, Chi Yu Han was surrounded by raging winds, and holy fire began to burn around him. It was as though a god had descended to the earth. The Heaven's Spite Sword began to glow and Chi Yu Han smiled, "Why don't you have a taste of what the Holy Realm's strength is like?"

The Heaven's Spite Sword sliced forward, throwing a light out. "Keng!" It cut through the shields and chest plates of two Knights and crushed them. That wasn't even the half of it. The sword energy cut into the cliff

that wasn't far from us, splitting it right through.

All of us were stupefied. This broken attack power, really is terrifying!

“Gu dong!”

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and said, “We.... can we not fight this BOSS anymore...”

“Nope....” I gave a determined smile, then said, “However, we can wait a while before fighting. Now that Chi Yu Han has stepped into this transformation, it'll last at least 10 minutes. We'll just wait until most of [Flying Dragon]'s people have died before we charge. This Holy Realm transformation is just too strong. There's only one result that can come from going over there, death. I checked the database of skills and saw that this Holy Realm cool down was 30 minutes. We just have to kill Chi Yu Han within 30 minutes and we'll be fine!”

Wan Er nodded at me with a smile, “Yup, that's the smartest decision.”

.....

I looked behind me and saw that the [Hero's Mound: First Division] and the [Wrath of the Heroes] members had all been killed by the Garrison Angels. Thus, I looked over at Li Mu and Wang Jian and said, “You guys didn't lose too many Garrison Outfits when you died, did you?”

Wang Jian responded, “When we died, we lost quite a few. However, their people are almost all dead. Any new equipment has almost a 100% drop rate, and so they dropped all of the Garrison Outfits. There won't be any change in the 120 Garrison Outfits that we have. Furthermore [Hero's Mound] and [Wrath of the Heroes] sent quite a few good equipments to us. This was a pretty good trade off!”

I laughed, “That's good. Though, it unfortunate that you guys lost a few levels. Just now, when we killed the BOSS, even I also lost a level.”

Wan Er gave a soft smile, “No matter. Once we kill Chi Yu Han and turn in the quest, whatever losses we took would all be made up. This SSS tier main quest definitely won't come up short on us.”

“Got it!”

.....

Cries of agony rang out from the island. All of the [Flying Dragon] players were trying really hard and had fought with Chi Yu Han for seven whole minutes. It wasn't until Black Tortoise had been instantly killed by Chi Yu Han, was the island finally cleared of [Flying Dragon] players. However, one Assassin was running away under [Stealth]!

“Keng!”

Li Mu's Tian Cheng Sword flew out of his sheath and killed him. Then, he smiled, “Guild Master, is it our turn yet?”

“No, wait another 3 minutes! Wait until the BOSS' Holy Realm finishes....”

“Alright!”

Waiting 3 minutes was torturing. We had to watch as Chi Yu Han's health went from 6% to 27%. Right as the Holy Realm disappeared, I immediately raised my two swords. I stepped onto the island by myself and threw my Cold Iron Sword. The blade spun with a “Shua Shua” and pierced through Chi Yu Han. I then opened my hand and cast a [Great Realm of Desolation], easily dragging Chi Yu Han's aggro onto myself.

Wan Er and Qing Qian all followed behind me. The two Healers' heals both fell upon me and my [Wall of Dou Qi] did all it could to stand against the attacks. Even after Chi Yu Han lost his Holy Realm buff, he was still extremely strong. Even though I wasn't being killed instantly, every attack he threw was extremely painful. In the blink of an eye, my health dropped to the bottom. My [Binding Chains] failed, and the beautiful little miss raised her two daggers and charged at him. She activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool] and dealt 9 consecutive attacks, sealing Chi Yu Han in ice.

I set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] beside me, increasing the damage we dealt while I barraged the BOSS with attacks. As a strategizer, I had to carefully calculate my attack, defense and health. I had a 10% Drain, so,

when I hit critical health, I didn't have to only rely on the Healers. My own drain was also a great factor in my health recovery, that was something I knew very well.

“MISS ! ”

“MISS ! ”

Both of my attacks missed, and couldn't interrupt the BOSS' [Soul Soldiers]. Another tragedy was going to hit. Wan Er and I fell down in a pool of blood and died together!

Li Mu and Wang Jian immediately raised their swords. Li Mu shouted, “Healers, don't worry about us. First revive Xiao Yao and Cang Tong. A life for a life, leave the [Grip of Compassion] for them!”

Chi Yu Han roared and swung his sword. After a few attacks, both Li Mu and Wang Jian fell to their knees. Qing Qian raised her dagger and dashed over. She ambushed with a [Gouge] and successfully stunned the BOSS. She then used a [Twin Blade Harmony] to deal damage. After the barrage of attacks, Chi Yu Han immediately swung a blade at her!

“Ah.....”

The beautiful girl looked up and saw the Heavens Spite Sword coming down on her. She quickly raised her two daggers above her head to parry the attack. “Keng!” She was thrown into the air. She lost 6000 health, and was in the critical zone. Furthermore, she almost fell into the lava.

On the bright side, Qing Qian managed to win us a precious second for Wan Er and I to revive. After that, we all got a [Grip of Compassion], filling up our health. I threw a [Combo]+[Strength of a Thousand Men] onto the BOSS. I successfully locked the aggro on myself, and activated [Halberd Flame] at the BOSS. Not far from me, the god behind the Azure Dragon Crossbow roared and shot several cold arrows into Chi Yu Han's body.

Even though Chi Yu Han had [Stepping into the Holy Realm], he only had around 30% of his normal strength, and so he couldn't take that kind of damage. His body was no longer as strong as it had been before, and he

had lost a lot of health. He only had around 3% of his health left. Furthermore, he was in the cooldown for the Holy Realm, and so for 30 minutes, he wouldn't be able to use the skill!

.....

While we were fighting, Wan Er suddenly squinted her eyes and stared forward, "There's something moving over there. There's an Assassin. Dong Cheng, hurry up and brighten the area!"

Once Dong Cheng activated a [Magma Abyss], and immediately cast [Revealing Light]. Suddenly, a light flashed across the sky brightening up the whole map, and revealed seven assassins. They were all very close to me. It was obvious that they were planning on killing me while I fought the BOSS. F*ck, thank god Wan Er, that Hermit God Moon Elf has such strong instinct, or else we would've been in danger!

"Let me!"

Wang Jian charged forward and rammed into my shoulder, helping me dodge a [Gouge]. In the end. Right as he was about to be stunned for half a second, he swung his sword and activated [Halberd Whirlwind]. Fierce winds surrounded the blade, hitting all of the Assassins. Three of them had been instantly killed. I took the chance to kill two others, while Dong Cheng Yue's [Thunderbolt Finger] finished off the last two.

However, Wang Jian's [Halberd Whirlwind] ended up attracting some of the BOSS's aggro. Chi Yu Han killed him with one sweep. Wang Jian ended up saying, "Brother Xiao Yao, don't revive me. It wastes too much of the Healer's time. They should focus on healing Brother Xiao Yao. Wait until you kill the BOSS, then revive me!"

Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring both nodded. After all, Wang Jian was the Guild Master of [Zhan Long: First Division]. That kind of wisdom and judgement in battle was extremely above average. What made me extremely grateful was the fact that there were quite a few people like Wang Jian in [Zhan Long]. Whether it was Wan Er, Qing Qian or Matcha, they are all said to be extremely talented and brave players. Old K, One Second Hero, Bai Qi and Dong Cheng Lei all possess a courage

and determination that no one can stop!

.....

“I’m going to transform!” I said as I saw that the BOSS’ health had dropped to 2%. We needed to kill him quickly, to avoid any other problems. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated my special skill.

Wan Er plunged a dagger into the BOSS’ chest plate and giggled, “Pig, are you transforming into a girl?”

I frowned. She actually has the heart to tease me at such a critical moment? The little miss really is rebellious...

“Hong!”

Dragon roars rang throughout the cave and I entered into 60 seconds of Dragon Transformation. I swung my sword and charged straight at the BOSS. After activating the skill, all of my stats had increased, making me strong enough to attack Chi Yu Han straight on.

Each of my attacks sliced into the BOSS, dealing enormous amounts of damage. The two Healer girls continuously gave me health. Dong Cheng Yue and Dancing Forest didn’t let up on their skills either. Finally, Chi Yu Han’s health was completely drained before the 60 seconds were up!

.....

“Father, I have already done all that I can. I have no way of fulfilling your dying wish!”

Chi Yu Han angrily roared and knelt to the ground. “Peng!” The dazzling armor that he wore exploded and equipments fell onto the ground. Damn, so many!

After he had lost all of his health, Chi Yu Han weakly knelt on the ground while we focused on the rewards that we got.

I walked forward and immediately put everything he dropped into my bag, in case Assassins wanted to come and steal our things. Afterwards, I glanced through them and saw that there was a total of 3 equipments.

There was a shining long sword, a fire red chest plate, and an extremely delicate necklace. Looks like they were all pretty good equipments!

Chapter 492: Flame Prison Armor

As I gripped the longsword, I felt a cold energy seep into my palm. The blade was segmented and gave off a frosty feel. It looked very awesome. I reached out and waved my hand over the blade and let the stats appear in the air —

[Ice Feather Sword] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Attack: 2500-3250

Strength: +110

Endurance: +107

Agility: +105

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 31%

Additional: Ignores 35% of the target's defense

Special: [Drain], 15% of the damage dealt to the target is transferred to the user's HP

Special: [Ice Feather], activates an ice attack which has a 100% probability of sealing the target in ice for 7 seconds. Uses 70 points of Rage and has a 30 minute cool down

Required Level: 90

Required Class: Heavy Armor

.....

“Damn.....” Li Mu's eyes nearly rolled out of his head, “Isn't that sword too tyrannical? That attack power is already higher than Xiao Yao's Dragon Reservoir Sword. That 15% drain is already a lot, but now it even has a 100% Ice Seal effect? This is just too ruthless. As long as that [Ice Feather] hits its target, then you'll practically win.”

I nodded and quickly forfeited the ROLL and smiled, “For the moment, I still like my Cold Iron Sword, and so I don't plan on changing my supporting equipment.”

Wang Jian hesitated for a second, “Brother Xiao Yao, what are you doing....? This is the Ice Feather Sword, a Superior Saint Tier weapon. How can you give it up so easily?”

I smiled, “It’s nothing really. I’m actually more interested in the chest plate from later. Most importantly, most of my attack relies on the Dragon Reservoir Sword. It has a 100% [Kill for Blood], which completely beats the Ice Feather’s attack. Therefore, how about you two decide who gets the Ice Feather Sword?”

Li Mu laughed and forfeited from the ROLL, “That’s alright. Wang Jian’s weapon isn’t that good, we should just give this Ice Feather Sword to him.”

I nodded and tossed the sword to Wang Jian. He was almost ready to cry. He didn’t even have to go through the heartrending process of rolling for the sword. Why wouldn’t he be happy?

I moved on to look at the next equipment. The second equipment was a flaming chest plate that gave off a holy glow. The intricate work on the armor showed how extraordinary this piece of armor was. As I held it in my hand, I felt warmth seeping into my palm. This armor’s defense was definitely pretty high. I waved my hand over it and the stats appeared in the air—

[Flame Prison Armor] (Saint Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1450

Strength: +112

Endurance: +110

Agility: +105

Additional: Increases the user’s defense and magic defense by 40%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 20%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 3500

Special: [Flame Domain], when activated, it decreases all fire damage dealt to any friends within a 100 yard radius by 50%

Required Level: 90

Required Class: Heavy Armor

.....

As I looked at the Flame Prison Armor, I began to tremble. These stats are just too broken. It increases both the health and the defense and that [Flame Domain] could practically flip the world upside down, with that decrease in fire damage to all friends within a 100 yards. That implied that in a team battle, all members of the same guild within a 100 yards would receive half the damage from main skills like [Magma Abyss], [Pillars of Fire and Ice], and [Fire Rain]. This also meant that during a team battle, all of the heavy armor players would have no fear of the enemy's magic attacks!

I raised the Flame Prison Armor and looked at my own Magic Spite Armor before smiling, "Come, brothers, let's ROLL!"

Li Mu grinned, "Why aren't you giving this one away?"

I didn't hide any of my intentions, "Because my survivability is higher than the both of you, and so I have more use to the team with this.

Wang Jian waved his hand and forfeited from the ROLL. He smiled, "I'll be too greedy if I were to take both the armor and the Ice Feather Sword!"

Li Mu ended up rolling for the armor against me. I won with a 99 against his 18. Li Mu could only ruefully smile, "Damn, does the difference in our numbers have to do with the difference in our appearance?!"

Allenwa note:cough cough mc power cheating

Wan Er grinned, "Probably..."

I equipped the Fire Prison Armor and tossed the Magic Spite Armor to Li Mu. The Magic Spite Armor was still a pretty good piece of equipment at this time. After I equipped the Fire Prison Armor, my stats increased exponentially—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon City Guardian)

Level: 91

Attack: 5717-7042

Defense: 6378

Health: 21202

Mana: 6759

Charm: 198

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 15

.....

Both my defense and my health are enough to rebel against the heavens. I looked through my stats again, and saw that I already had 9 Saint Tier equipments. Even Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword only had around 4-7 Saint Tier Equipments. Looking at all of the only person who has more Saint Tier Equipments than me was probably Jiu Li City's Fang Ge Que. While we were doing the SSS Tier Main Quest, Fang Ge Que probably hasn't been sitting around, there's no doubt about that. Every major city has its own main quests.

I continued looking through the equipment. There was a sparkling necklace. I waved my hand over it, and the stats appeared —

[Wonderland Necklace] (Saint Tier)

Agility: +110

Endurance: +106

Strength: +102

Additional: Increases the user's close combat attack power and attack speed by 30%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 2700

Additional: Increases the killing power of Assassin type skills by 25%

Special: [Wind Stepper] Increases the user's movement speed by 11%

Required: 90

.....

I looked around the map and saw three Assassins. Wan Er smiled to me, “Nevermind, let’s just ROLL for it, that way it’s more fair!”

“Ok.” I slowly nodded. It really is hard to choose between them.

The numbers quickly came out, and Wolf won with a 79. He raised the necklace, almost as though he can’t believe his eyes. It was as though he became Cinderella. If we were to let him get a few more equipments, he would never be able to stay friends with someone like Fox who doesn’t have a single Saint Tier equipment.

Chi Yu Han dropped three extraordinary Saint Tier equipments, he really was generous!

I flipped through my bag for the other things he dropped, and actually found a purple colored skill book. I waved my hand over it, and all of the heavy armor players started drooling—

[Glacial Armor] (SS tier): Condenses Dou Qi energy and increases the user’s defense by 10% and the user’s MaxHP by 5%. The durability of the armor is proportional to the user’s attack power. Required: Level 80 Warrior, Cannot be used with [Wall of Dou Qi], [Dou Qi Lightning] or [Dou Qi Armor]. Learning this skill means that it will replace any of the others. Requires 5 points of rage!

.....

Raising the [Glacial Armor] skill book, I smiled, “A Lv 10 [Glacial Armor] would increase defense by 100% and MaxHP by 50%. Its an extremely savage defense BUFF skill. I really like my [Wall of Dou Qi] skill, since it looks really cool. You two, what do you plan on doing?”

“How about we ROLL for it?” Wang Jian said.

Li Mu nodded. A few minutes later, Li Mu’s face turned green, “For a system like ROLL, there’s no such thing as love anymore. From the beginning, I’ve never won! This is so unfair!”

I nodded, “Just accept fate...”

Wang Jian quickly learned the skill and gave a shout to summon the [Glacial Armor]. It looked exactly like Chi Yu Han’s skill. He he, this skill really is useful. It adds both defense and health. It’s much more practical than [Dou Qi Armor], but it wasn’t as good as my [Wall of Dou Qi]. That was Frost’s personal skill. A Lv 10 [Wall of Dou Qi] increases my defense and magic defense by 200%, something that [Glacial Armor] could never do. At least now we could prove one point, and it was that I am the only one that can truly stand up against a Saint Tier BOSS. Li Mu and Wang Jian are best as supporters.

After I organized everything and all of the rewards were split up, Wan Er fluttered her eyes and said, “Let’s go. We should head out. I just got information that [Flying Dragon], [Hero’s Mound], and [Wrath of the Heroes] have all scattered....”

I nodded and stood up. I then looked at Chi Yu Han who lain weakly on the floor. I raised my sword and walked over and then knelt on one knee beside him, before I softly said, “Chi Yu Han, I will bring you back to Ba Huang City. Princess Angela is very kindhearted. She definitely won’t make things difficult for you. As long as you give up any vengeful thoughts, then Ba Huang City won’t kill you. That, I am sure of.”

Chi Yu Han didn’t have any strength as he laid there, but he flashed a cold smile, “You have no idea how shameless and hypocritical the royal family can be. You will regret trusting them forever....”

Chi Yu Qing helped Chi Yu Han up and softly said, “Brother, hurry up and recover your strength...”

.....

I grabbed the binding chains and shook them. They began to move on their own, and bound Chi Yu Qing and Chi Yu Han together. This chain was made specially. This way, even if Chi Yu Han was a god, he would still have to follow my commands.

I looked into the distance and said, “Let’s go. It seems as though we’re going to have to go up each and every floor on our own. Looks like the

[Flying Dragon] people have left a chain for us to climb. We'll go from the 7th floor to the 6th, and then go straight up!"

"Ok!"

After a few ups and downs, Wan Er and I managed to take everyone up to the sixth floor. Afterwards, everyone all climbed up the chain. Furthermore, now that there was no Chi Yu Han, the Sword Saint Abyss didn't seem that scary.

.....

"Shua!"

With one in each hand, I held onto Chi Yu han and Chi Yu Qing and dashed upward. I turned around to look and saw that Wan Er and the others were all following behind. I set down Chi Yu Qing and Chi Yu Han. The two BOSS NPC's were recovering energy. Our whole team escorted them back to Ba Huang City.

We passed through the Sword Saint Abyss. At the border of the Grave of the Warring States, Chi Yu Han suddenly saw the forest ending and stopped.

"Why aren't you walking?"

I pulled on the magic chains, but Chi Yu Han gritted his teeth and didn't walk forward. His hands were even bleeding, but he wouldn't take another step. All he did was look into the distance and said, "I want...I want to see him one more time before I die...."

"See who?" I asked.

"My father...." CHi Yu Han's ruthless eyes turned soft as he said, "I want to see my father, is that alright? I just have this one small request.... They all said that father was buried here, but Qing Er and I have never been able to visit him..."

"There's only a forest over there, I don't think there's anything else?" I said.

Chi Yu Han persevered, "No... I can feel his rueful spirit, I.... I beg of

you.... Let me just see him once....”

“Alright!”

Wan Er, Qing Qian and I all exchanged glances. I turned around and entered the forest. There must be some kind of cutscene that’s related to this.

.....

Deep in the forest, there was a pile of crumbled walls and fence. This place was in the middle of construction, and there was a totem pole that had the characters “Royal Tomb” carved in it.

Wan Er looked at the database and said, “Ba Huang City’s Royal Graveyard, 37 years ago. The Royal General Chi Yan has followed orders and stopped the construction of the royal tomb. Later on, I met unfortunate luck...”

“Chi Yan is your father?” I asked.

Chi Yu Han nodded, “That’s right....”

As he finished talking, Chi Yu Han shuffled over with the chains bound at his feet, and continuously pulled away all of the broken stones. Even though his nails were broken and his palms were bloody, he continued his arduous quest.

Chi Yu Qing had tears rolling down her face, “Brother, don’t.... Don’t be like this....”

Chapter 493: Chi Yan

“What exactly is buried here?”

I furrowed my brow and then raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I dug it deep into the ground to help Chi Yu Han. As the earth shattering number one Saint Swordsman, there probably aren't many things that he desired, much less make him look as miserable as to get on his hands and knees to dig. This must be something that is extremely important.

Under the movement of the sword, the rocks slowly loosened up. Finally, after a “Hua La” sound, an enormous hole appeared before me. On it were carved three large characters— “Royal Graveyard Entrance”!

“Sha Sha....”

Wan Er walked over to the front and then pulled on my left hand and softly said, “It's an entrance....”

I nodded.

All Chi Yu Han could do was stand there weakly. Both of his hands were dripping with blood. He was extremely weak at the moment, now that he was bound by the magic sealing chains, but he still managed to muster the strength to walk over to the entrance. Chi Yu Qing followed close behind him. Since I was a part of the quest, I brought Li Mu and the others and followed behind them, into the entrance.

Within the dry cave, there was a decaying smell in the air. This was where Chi Yan had supervised the construction of the Royal Grave.

Chi Yu Han held onto the wall and hobbled over in a daze, leaving a bloody streak across the wall. He carefully looked around him, and shakily said, “That year, I was just three years old, but...but I will never forget this place. Father once took me here. Father... father's footsteps are everywhere here....”

Chi Yu Qing quietly said, “Brother....”

“They said, that father died in the middle of battle. But.... but I know. The last time I saw father was right here. Father didn't die from battle,

but rather...”

Suddenly, Chi Yu Han stopped talking. He looked towards an enormous crystal and reached out to touch it.

“Shua!”

It was a memory crystal. Within seconds, the scenery around us began to melt away, taking us into the memory. The scenery began turning into the Grave from thirty seven years ago. Chi Yan was fully suited in armor and had a loving look in his eyes. He softly said, “Yu Han, you are the son of I, Chi Yan, meaning that you will definitely become a courageous hero. Grow up quickly. I am going to teach you everything that I have learned in my life, and let you become an undefeated commander....”

Beside Chi Yan, a chamberlain whispered, “General, this afternoon, his majesty will give his last command. He has chosen Luo Lie as the commander of his armies. Furthermore, he wants to take seventeen of our most famous generals....”

Chi Yan trembled for a second, and then gritted his teeth. But, he then looked at the small Chi Yu Han in his arms and said, “Has his majesty already made up his mind? I.... Chi Yan, in the mind of his majesty, am I just a pawn.... Right now, is it time for us to give up on everything and run?”

The chamberlain nodded, “General, it’s best if we plan first!”

Before Chi Yan could respond, a soldier bringing the command knelt to the ground and said, “My lord, just now, the four royal mages have come to the Royal Grave. I don’t know what they are planning!”

Chi Yan didn’t say anything, but red magic suddenly crawled across the floor and wrapped around his feet. He looked down, his eyes filled with desperation and anger. As he held Chi Yu Han, he looked up and roared, “Luo Lei, even if I, Chi Yan, am considered useless to you, must you leave us father and son with no way to live!? Did you think that by using the Dragon Seal on me, you’ll be able to shut up all dissents!?”

At the end of the grave, an old man carrying a staff walked over, a cruel

smile on his lips, “Chi Yan, you old bastard. Your life is going to end here. Did you think that you would be able to continue living here and tell the world that you died in the grave that you yourself built?”

Chi Yan bellowed, “Lei Ge, you bastard!”

“Ha ha ha....”

This Lei Ge Mage raised his staff, and a red light in the shape of a dragon suddenly flew out from the head. “Hong!” The light surrounded Chi Yan and crushed his armor, causing blood to flow out. All Chi Yan did was bend over, and protect Chi Yu Han in his arms. He coughed up blood, and his entire body seemed to be crushed under the weight of the chains.

“Quick!”

Chi Yan took Chi Yu Han from his arms and handed it to a guard beside him and shouted, “Escape from the second exit! Take this child and send him to the southernmost Chi You Tribe to train. Do not tell him who his father was. Never let him come back to Ba Huang City. Hurry!”

The entire grave began to rumble. As the four mages continued their pressure. The pillars in the Royal Grave began to crack. Boulders rolled down from the second floor, and Chi Yan was trapped. He suddenly raised his arms and caught a falling rock, and like that, using just his own mortal strength, he held up hundreds of tons of weight.

“General!”

The soldier turned around, with tears running down his face.

Chi Yan gritted his teeth. Before he died, he gave one last longing look at the little Chi Yu Han, and with a shaky voice, “Tell him... tell him that his father really loved him, loved him so much...”

Lei Ge laughed and raised a single hand. One after another, magic arrows shot into Chi Yan’s body. His flesh began to rip apart like cotton. Chi yan’s abdomen had been torn apart. “Ka Cha!” His left arm broke. “Peng!” The stone beam fell onto his shoulder, but Chi Yan remained strong. He watched the soldier disappear to the end of the grave. Chi Yan

suddenly grabbed his sword with his right hand and threw it!

“Pu Chi!”

The sword pierced right into Lei Ge’s chest. He dumbly stood there, and fell to the ground.

“Peng....”

Chi Yan was forced to his knees from the weight, but still didn’t give up. His eyes were red and blood dripped down his face from his eyes. Suddenly, everything turned dark, and he used up the last sliver of his strength, before mumbling, “Yu Han, my dear son, I wish that I could watch you grow up, but I am sorry it seems I’m not fated to see you grow.....”

Gripping his right fist, Chi Yan’s veins suddenly burst, and Dou Qi energy circled around his body. Slowly, a bright light flashed, and in his place, was an enormous crystal. Even if it meant using up the last bit of energy, he chose to turn himself into a rock in order to protect Chi Yu Han.

.....

“Father, father....”

Chi Yu Han knelt on the ground with tears rolling down his cheeks. He shuffled forward on his knees, all the way to the fallen grave. Surprised, he saw that Chi Yan had turned into an enormous boulder, kneeling there. His left hand had collapsed from the weight, and his right arm was slashed, with wounds that cut to the bone.

Chi Yu Han softly touched the injuries on his father’s arm. He couldn’t stop the tears, “Father.... You said before that you would teach me how to ride a horse, and teach me swordsmanship. You said that you’d teach me how to condense my Dou Qi, or even the art of battle... Father, I still remember all of your words, I remember them all. Just open your eyes and look at me, Yu Han has grown up....”

Chi Yu Qing knelt beside Chi Yu Han and cried, “Father, father....”

Right at that moment, “Peng” it was the sound of cracks. Chi Yan’s stone body broke apart and the entire room seemed to rumble. Chi Yu Han leapt forward to protect his father’s body. “Ahhh”, “Release me! Damn you magic seal, release me! I... I can protect my father! Why, why must you treat me like this...”

I charged forward and held up a broken beam. Li Mu and Wang Jian all rushed over to help hold up the beam. With the strength of three heavy armor players, the beams stopped falling down.

At that moment, Chi Yan’s stone body suddenly flashed, and Chi Yan’s ghost appeared in front of it. He had the same loving look that he had in the memory as he looked upon Chi Yu Han. Warmly, he said, “Yu Han, being able to see you and Yu Qing grow up into adults makes me extremely happy....”

“Father, is that you?” Chi Yu Han exclaimed in delight.

Chi Yan softly said, “You can say it is me, and you can say it is not. This is a sliver of my spirit that is tied to this place. Right now, I have something to tell you.”

Chi Yu Han responded, “Father, tell me....”

Chi Yan looked up, but couldn’t see the sky, and slowly said, “Throughout my life, I have always had a deep love for Ba Huang City, this beautiful home. And thus, even though I knew that my king wants to kill me, I didn’t lead a rebellion. I have seen far too much blood flow during battle. Starting a war will only lead to the deaths of more innocents. You too. As generals, the reason we fight wars and protect our nations, is for the sake of world peace. Even if we were to suffer humiliation, we must quietly take it all. Remember, do not start a rebellion. These are the last words I leave you with. Please, live out your life peacefully....”

“Shua!”

Chi Yan’s figure disappeared

.....

“This place is going to collapse, hurry up and leave!” Wan Er said in a low voice.

I quickly shouted “Take Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing and go!”

Wan Er and Qing Qian each dragged the two NPCs and ran out of the grave. Li Mu, Wang Jian and I conferred, and charged out together!

“Hong hong hong....”

After several rumbles and crashes, the entire Royal Grave turned into a pile of rubble.

Chi Yu Han stood there quietly. After half of a second, he suddenly looked towards me and said, “Youngster, I will follow you back to Ba Huang City and receive judgement. Thank you, for letting me see my father one last time...”

I nodded, “Then let’s go. Back to Ba Huang City. I believe that Princess Angela will definitely give you justice.”

“Ok!”

.....

And so, the strongest man in the land, who had reached the Holy Domain, willingly followed us back to Ba Huang City.

When we entered the city, we went straight towards the royal palace. As though something important had happened, the number of guards in front of the royal palace had significantly increased. One of them raised their sword and said, “Who are you? How dare you trespass Ba Huang City’s royal palace!”

I said, “I have brought someone that Princess Angela needs.”

“Who?”

I side stepped and revealed the two siblings, Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. At that moment, the soldier suddenly jumped, “That... Then you two follow me!”

We slowly walked up the steps towards Ba Huang City’s Great Hall. We

were met by a crowd of guards. In the distance, there were countless swordsmen and archers awaiting us.

“Da da da....”

The Moon Elf Princess Angela stepped forward and pulled out her sword. Astonished, she looked at me, “You actually managed to complete the quest!”

I nodded with a smile, “I just couldn’t dishonor your command!”

Chapter 494: Sword Tempest

I fished out the command scroll and handed it over to Angela. I brought Li Mu, Wan Er and the rest up the staircase to the grand hall. I stood amongst all of the officials, with Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing behind me.

Angela walked up to the throne and handed the command scroll to Luo Lei and smiled, "Father, they really completed the quest. They have brought the awakened Chi Yu Han from the Sword Saint Abyss to here!"

Luo Lei suddenly stood up and he touched his hilt before saying, "Chi Yu Han, do you know that you have committed a great crime?"

Chi Yu Han held his head high and smiled up at the Duke, "Luo Lei. Thirty seven years ago, you secretly commanded four royal mages to kill one of the empire's founding fathers, Chi Yan. Does that count as a great crime?"

Luo Lei jolted and roared, "Chi Yu Han, many years ago, you lead the Bai Meng Army to massacre three of Ba Huang City's battle camps. You killed over ten thousand of my soldiers. It's time that I clear this debt with you!"

On the steps, the commander of the Desolate Dragon Army, Forgotten Sea raised his heavy sword and walked forward, "Your majesty, Chi Yu Han is guilty. We cannot forgive him. I believe that you must bring down the death penalty in order to gain the trust of the officials of Ba Huang City!"

Chi Yu Han gritted his teeth and said with pride, "Do what you wish, why waste your breath!"

Chi Yu Qing's eyes widened, "Now that Brother and I have come to Ba Huang City, we never had any hope in leaving!"

"Hmph!"

Luo Lei brushed his sleeve and said, "Seeing as it is like this, then I'll do just as you wish..."

Angela immediately carried The Destroyer before walking over and said,

“Father, even though the siblings Chi Yu Qing had a dispute with Ba Huang City, but it’s clear that they were deceived. They did all of this because they were grieving for their father. I think that, since Chi Yu Han has the strength to step into the Holy Realm, why don’t you be generous and let the siblings use their strength to serve Ba Huang City. That is also Ba Huang City’s fortune!”

Luo Lei gritted his teeth and said, “This.... Angela, do you know, that this Chi Yu Han is Ba Huang City’s thorn in the side? Once he regains his strength, he will definitely massacre Ba Huang City. When the time comes, he will summon the veterans of Bai Meng Army, and all will be too late then.”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked over. In a heavy voice, I said, “My lord, Chi Yu Han has already made a promise, that he will never bring troops to fight Ba Huang City. Furthermore, when he first lead his army against Ba Huang City, it was just for the sake of staying loyal to his father. He should not be killed for something like that!”

Luo Lei looked at me and furrowed his eyebrows, “Seeing as the people of Ba Huang City are making a plea for you. Then, Chi Yu Han, I will temporarily lock you and your sister Chi Yu Qing in the Royal Prison until there is a viable plan!”

Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing didn’t make a sound and were lead away by the guards. Before he left the hall, Chi Yu Han looked at me, and his eyes were filled with gratitude, “Thank you. There aren’t many people out there willing to stand up for me, Chi Yu Han. You are one of them, thank you....”

I nodded, and watched Chi Yu Han walk out.

Afterwards, the most important part came. Luo Lei walked down from the throne and raised his royal sword. He then walked over to me with a broad smile on his face, “Brave adventurers. You have eliminated Ba Huang City’s greatest threat. Now, I will give you the reward you deserve. Come, this is what you have earned!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the SSS Tier Main Quest [Sword Saint Chi Yu Qing]. You have obtained the reward, Level + 2, Charm +12, Gold +30000. Your reputation in Ba Huang City and Dragon City has greatly increased. In addition, you have obtained the quest reward [Sword Tempest] (SSS)!

.....

My heart started to beat quicker. I quickly opened my bag, and saw a dark green skillbook quietly sitting in a corner. It looked extremely ancient. There was no need to think further, it was the SSS tier skill book. My luck really was really amazing! I pulled out the skill book and waved my hand over it. The stats appeared before my eyes, and I was overjoyed —

[Sword Tempest] (SSS) : Condenses Dou Qi energy and turns it into flame energy that is injected into the weapon. Swinging the sword creates a trail of flames that will deal three hits to all targets within a 30 yard radius. The damage is correlated with the attack power of the user and the skill level. You must be at least Lv 90 and a Swordsman in order to learn the skill. Requires 10 points of charm.

“Shua!”

The [Sword Tempest] skill book disappeared and like that, I obtained the ultimate AOE close combat skill. [Sword Tempest] was similar to Wang Jian’s [Halberd Whirlwind] but it had three attacks compared to his one. Clearly it was much more terrifying. Furthermore, as my attack power is so high, it is much more effective.

“Pa.....”

Beside me, Wan Er pointed at her wrist and smiled, “My reward was a Saint Tier wrist guard. Pig, how about yours?”

I smiled, “Get away, give me some space”

“Eh.... this bastard...” Dong Cheng Yue pulled Qing Qian back a few steps and smiled, “Looks like you learned some kind of skill?”

I nodded, and roared to activate [Sword Tempest]. At that moment, all of

the power in my body began to glow and funnel into my long sword. In the next moment, the earth began to tremble. I suddenly raised both my arms and spun around. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword began to swing around. Flames began to rise around me, and created an enormous shockwave. The flames that surrounded my sword created an attack effect that lasted for three seconds before finally stopping.

“F*ck....” Li Mu made a fist, “I obtained a Saint Tier armor, but it looks like it really isn’t as good as the Guild Master’s skill....”

On the ground, there were several sword marks. My one [Sword Tempest] had destroyed most of Ba Huang City’s great hall. I immediately called everyone to leave, so that Luo Lei doesn’t make us pay for the repairs.

.....

“Melon, what did you get?” I asked.

Qing Qian smiled and suddenly raised a dagger. At that moment, “Shua!”, an enormous hammer came down from the skies. “Peng!” It smashed into the palace gardens. Mud splattered everywhere. This was a long distance attack. All around the hammer were icicle needles. Looks like the attack power isn’t normal.

“Is it just an attack?” I asked.

“No, it has around a 5 yard radius. It has splash damage, alright...”

“Ha ha, then congratulations. What’s it called?”

“Glacial Hammer! Its an SS tier skill. Brother Xiao Yao, why are you asking about the name...”

“Oh, just to take note...”

“Alright....”

.....

I came into the marketplace and everyone put all of their outfits into the guild storage. We collected around 120 outfits in total in the [Zhan Long] guild storage. I shot a glance at the beautiful little miss. Wan Er, as

the Vice Guild Master, gave me a cute smile, “Alright, I will list out the top 120 heavy armor players....”

“Yup, I’ll wait online. How long will it take?”

“Ten minutes is enough!”

“Ok!”

Wan Er raised her Dragon’s Kiss dagger and prettily sat on a bench beside a stream. A breeze brushed through her hair. Qing Qian sat beside Wan Er to give her advice. Darling Duck and Dancing Forest both went to sleep. I walked over to the National Beauty and looked at our operations. Everything was doing well. Before the second player store appears, the National Beauty will continue to flourish. In addition, trade continuously breaks new grounds in the game. The situation should only get better.

Countless players came and left the store. Each of them snuck glances at Wan Er and Qing Qian. Clearly, [Zhan Long]’s two vice guild masters were beauties. And they were some of the top players. Most importantly, the two girls had pretty good equipment. In , the higher level the equipment was, the more exquisite and intricate it looks. These two girls were dressed in intricate armor and were extremely beautiful, it wasn’t strange that they would draw so many looks.

Not long after, Wan Err hopped off the bench and walked over, “The list is out, should we have them come over themselves to get the outfits?”

“Yup, I’ll leave this to you two. Wan Er, let’s get ready to log off. It’s already lunch. We should go eat a bit and sleep...”

“Alright!”

.....

On the side, Wolf raised his dagger and walked over, “Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Huh?” I smiled, “Is there something wrong, Little Wolf? Why aren’t you sleeping?”

Little Wolf laughed, “I do have some business. This morning, Old K and

Matcha said that [Zhan Long] Studio hasn't gotten together for a long time. And so, we're planning on eating together later. Afterwards, we'll go to KTV and sing for a bit, how does that sound? Why don't you bring the beauties Miss Lin and Dong Cheng?"

Wan Er couldn't help but laugh, "I'm coming too?"

"Of course, you're the Vice Guild Master!"

Dong Cheng then stuck her chest out and said, "You could say that this is a meeting of [Zhan Long]'s top level players. I'm not going to miss this, after all, I am one of the four Elders aren't I?"

Qing Qian cried out, "I want to go too!"

I smiled, "Wait until Melon is in Hang Zhou, then we can play."

"Alright....."

.....

I then logged off. Everyone was either hungry or tired to death. I was going to the school cafeteria first to eat and then go sleep.

I slept all the way until six before getting out of bed. I quickly got out of bed and washed up. Afterwards, I put on some clean clothes and walked out. Tang Gu stuck his head out from under his covers and looked at me, "Li Bastard, I heard that you had just finished completing the Sword Saint Abyss map? You even stood up against [Hero's Mound: Division One], [Flying Dragon], and [Wrath of the Heroes]?"

I smiled, "Yea, what's up with that Glasses Brother?"

"Uh huh, nothing. I just joined [Hero's Mound] and am serving Q-Sword to destroy you bunch of arrogant bastards!"

I smiled, and patted his covers, "Just come at me you fat uncle. Later on, when [Zhan Long] fights [Hero's Mound] and I see you on the frontlines, I won't show any mercy to you. Old K's battle axe has been thirsty for a long time!"

Tang Gu grinned, "You old man! You're leaving pretty late in the night, are you on a date with the beauty Cang Tong?"

“Nope. [Zhan Long]’s Hang Zhou officers are getting together.”

“Bullshit, how about you bring me?”

“You’re one of the scums in [Hero’s Mound], as if I’d bring you....”

“You old man, you really aren’t generous....”

Chapter 495: Breathless

When I went down the stairs, I ran straight towards the girl's dorm. In the distance, I saw Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue standing under a streetlight. They both wore a jacket and a skirt, and looked very pure. The two natural beauties really made one stop and take in the scene. I ran to the parking lot and started up the A4. The two girls got onto the car and followed me to the destination.

Our dinner was going to be at Xiang Wei Gan, and we had already made reservations for a personal room. Furthermore it was at a table that could seat 15 people, though I wasn't sure who else was coming besides us.

Ten minutes later, we entered the second floor private room in Xiang Wei Gan. Once I opened up the door, I heard Matcha smile and call out, "Boss, you're finally here!"

I hesitated for a second, and besides the four people from [Zhan Long]'s studio, Rainy and Wang Jian were also there. There was also a boy and two girls who were around 20 years old that I didn't recognize.

"This...." I was puzzled.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng also followed me into the room. Dong Cheng Lei walked over with a smile, "Yue Er, you finally came!"

"Bro!"

A wide grin appeared on Dong Cheng's face as she sat beside Dong Cheng Lei. She then looked over her brother's face and furrowed her brows, "Brother, why's your face hurt? There's a really deep cut too...."

Dong Cheng Lei broke into a candid smile, "Yesterday while I was practicing my punches, I accidentally broke an iron flag pole, and it smashed into my face...."

I was speechless.

Dong Cheng Yue couldn't say anything. Finally she cautioned, "Next time be more careful, got it?"

Dong Cheng Lei said, "Ok, I got it. I will."

Wolf stood up and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, sit over here. How about I introduce you to our new friends? Oh, not exactly introduce, how about you try and guess. See if you can guess the three big members of [Zhan Long]!"

Wna Er playfully pushed me with a smile, "Hurry up, Guild Master!"

I stumbled and walked over to Wolf. The girl that sat beside him stood up. She seemed very reserved, and dipped her head in a polite small bow, "Boss, you know who I am?"

I carefully studied her, and saw the innocent look on her eyebrows and smiled, "Moon Feather!"

She smiled back, "Boss, you're really amazing! I had changed 10% of my appearance in the game, and you still managed to figure out who I am!"

Afterwards, another girl stood up and gave a sweet smile, "Boss, then who do you think I am? Actually.... Actually I'm Dancing Forest. Can you tell?"

I glanced over the mounds on her under her t-shirt and smiled, "Save it, Dancing Forest's chest is at least 36Cs. At most, you have around a B. You must be Tang Xing?"

Tang Xing widened her mouth, "Damn, boss really is wise. You can recognize people just based on the size of their chest. This must be some SSS tier skill?"

I laughed, "Haha, that's enough from you!"

At that moment, the boy beside Tang Xing stood up and gave me a naive smile, "Brother Xiao Yao, what about me?"

I thought about it for a second and said, "Star Blade, right?"

"Pro!"

Star Blade smiled, "You're really worthy of being called our boss. You're pretty good at recognizing people."

I nodded with a smile, and opened my two hands, “Don’t be polite. Why don’t we sit and talk? That’s right, didn’t all of you guys live out of town? How did you guys find the time to come to Hang Zhou?”

Tang Xing replied, “Moon Feather wanted to come to Hang Zhou to get together and meet up with boss. Thus, we all bought airplane tickets to come over here. Star Blade heard that we were coming to Hang Zhou to see all of the [Zhan Long] studio high levelers, and so he decided to come along too. He doesn’t have class today, but it looks like he has a lot of money too...”

Moon Feather said, “I heard that Star Blade’s old man gives him 1 million in allowance every month....”

My eyes widened, “Rich man, how about we become friends?!”

Star Blade gave a helpless smile, “Boss, even you’re mocking me. Its nothing like that, what my old man gives to me is just investments for starting up my career. Unfortunately, I don’t know what profession I should go into, and so I put a lot of it into games....”

I nodded, “Yup yup, this meeting is fate, why don’t we all sit down to talk!”

“Alright!”

.....

Very soon, the dishes began to come.

Wang Jian and Rainy were sitting next to each other. Wang Jian seemed to whisper something, making Rainy smile. After Meng Qin died, Rainy was extremely depressed. After all that time had passed, it was clear she was very grateful that he was by her side. On top of that, we could tell that Wang Jian, that bastard, truly liked Rainy. Otherwise, he wouldn’t stay with her all these days in Hang Zhou.

After the beer and and wine had been poured, I stood up and raised my cup, “How about I make a toast!”

Everyone raised their cups and stood up.

The private room quieted down and everyone expectantly looked at me. I thought about it for a second and then smiled, "To be honest, after the battle in the Purple Demon Forest, everyone here, besides Wan Er and Dong Cheng had lost ten levels. Q-Sword had achieved his goal in that battle, and it was the fault of my carelessness. I, Li Xiao Yao, had been crazy in the head from my need for vengeance. At that moment, I hadn't done what a Guild Master should do. And so, today, with this cup of wine, I apologize to everyone. The people from the Valiant Bravery aren't here now, and so I toast to them from a distance. You are all my brothers and sisters. The Purple Demon Forest, was my fault!"

When I fished talking, I raised my cup and finished all of the wine.

Matcha bit her lip and said, "Boss, the battle in the Purple Demon Forest really isn't your fault. If we were to let [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] to die, then how would the people of Ba Huang City look upon [Zhan Long]? How would players around the world look at us? I think that at the battle at Purple Demon Forest, we had to die. Using ten levels to exchange for a Dragon's Den, and using ten levels in return for the respect of our allies and enemies, is that not worth it?"

Old K laughed, "I don't really know how to talk, but everything that Matcha had said was exactly what I had on my mind. Li Youngster, you're our Guild Master because everyone here believes in you. There's no need to blame yourself. If even you aren't enough to be [Zhan Long]'s leader, then who can?"

Matcha smiled, "Either way I don't think I have that strength...."

Wang Jian gritted his teeth, "Actually, in the Purple Demon Forest Battle, Q-Sword had calculated every last move. Those Death God Arrows, with the poisonous vines that they attacked with, and the Purple Demon Forest, which was extremely dense with trees, allowed them to tie the Death God Arrows in between the trees and leave us with no escape route. If it was any other place, the strength of those arrows would be greatly decreased, and at most it would kill a thousand of our men, and not four thousand. Guild Master, nobody blames you for the battle at Purple Demon Forest. I believe in you, and that fact will never change.

Those people that did complain about you have already been kicked by Wang Jian and I...'

"F*ck...." Wan Er almost giggled aloud.

I nodded, "I still need to thank everyone, thank you for all of your support..."

.....

After an hour, we had eaten and drank our fill, and everyone drunkenly headed to the KTV that was across the road. This was a pretty high tier KTV, and so we got a private room, and sang our hearts out.

I sat at the corner of the room, and gripped a bottle of beer as I chugged it down. These days, whether I'm in the game, or in reality, I've been under too much stress. It's rare that I get the chance to loosen up.

Wolf and Matcha sang a duet, "Because of Love", while Old K heckled them on the side. Wang Jian and Rainy all gave silly laughs.

"Hua...."

I quietly stood up, with a bottle of beer in my hand and walked to the door. I lightly leaned against the wall, and listened to everyone laughing. At the same time, I made sure to observe every person's movement on the outside. I had to protect Wan Er, since that was my responsibility. I couldn't forget that while I was in the middle of being happy.

"Sha sha...."

Under the dark light, Wan Er walked over with her own bottle of beer. The light of the screen reflected off of her beautiful face, and she grinned, "What's wrong Pig, are you not having fun?"

I shook my head, "No, I'm having lots of fun."

"Then why aren't you going to sing?"

"I'm tone deaf..."

"Alright...." Wan Er reached out and pulled on my wrist. Warmth filled my chest. She smiled, "Don't stand there by yourself. Come, how about I

sing a song for you, alright?”

I couldn't help but smile, “Wu, is our little miss finally going to gift us with a song? Maybe ‘Heart of Time’?”

“Aw, don't. How about I sing an English song for you? Alright?”

“Ok, alright....”

I grunted my agreement. I could see that Wan Er's beautiful eyes were filled with love. Even though we hadn't said anymore, we could still understand what the other was thinking in their heart. That was more than enough.

.....

Wan Er walked up front and chose a song. I sat beside the stand, and chugged some more beer. Her beautiful eyes never left my face. She picked up the microphone and began to sing Breathless. Her sweet voice rang through the karaoke room—

you leave me breathless

you're everything good in my life

you leave me breathless

I still can't believe that you're mine

.....

My English actually wasn't that bad, and I could pretty much understand it all. On top of that, there was Chinese translations beside the lyrics.

Wan Er looked at me, with a blush rising in her cheeks. Her beautiful eyes kept gazing at me, and didn't glance at the screen even once. Just like that, she sang those moving lyrics. The technique and talent she had when she first sang “Heart of Time” from a few years ago was still there. Stupefied, I sat there at the table, staring at her. Even the hand that was holding the beer started to loosen. Watching Wan Er, my heart felt more and more moved. But, when I thought of her position, and my own position, and everything that we faced, I knew, that there was no way that

I could walk by her side until the end.

I rubbed my nose and looked away from her.

Wan Er walked over to me, and placed her face on my chest. Then she turned around and said, "I'm going to the bathroom...."

Stunned, I looked at her. But all I could feel were the wet tears on my chest....

.....

Around half of a minute later, Wan Er didn't come back and I started to get worried. I then straightened out my clothes and walked out of the private room.

The boys and girls bathroom was linked. Walking in, I could hear a familiar voice coming from inside—

"Rainy, from the first time I laid eyes on you, I've liked you, I really really like you.... I'm not a man of many words, and I don't know how else to confess to you, but I want to be with you, really...."

It was Wang Jian's voice. Dang, he's confessing to Rainy in the bathroom?

I heard footsteps heading over, looks like Rainy was coming over. Not good, I couldn't wreck their moment. I glanced over, and saw an open door. I quickly pulled it open. Just as I was about to step in, a frail body leapt into my arms and pulled me in. It was Wan Er, and she was quietly listening against the wall.

She's eavesdropping!

I glared and said, "F*ck, aren't you being too obvious?!"

Wan Er's face turned completely red, "Aren't you doing the same.... Furthermore, I just happened to hear, I'm not eavesdropping!"

"So you have an excuse...." I shushed her, "We need to be quieter.... Let's not mess up this confession...."

"Ok ok...."

And so, the two of us hid in the single bathroom and quietly, “happened to hear” Wang Jian confess. At that moment, [Zhan Long]’s Vice Guild Master’s eavesdropping curiosity was being awakened.

Chapter 496: Wang Jian's Confession

Wang Jian silently leaned against the cold tile wall. He looked up at the ceiling, and with a trembling voice, he muttered, "I don't know what possessed me. It's just that, every day, I just want to be able to see your figure and hear your voice. When I see you sad or worried, I feel as though my heart has been stabbed. I don't know if this is what it means to be in love, and I don't want to debate over whether it is or isn't love, but.... But I just want to be by your side...."

Rainy stood there, without moving an inch. Tears were starting to roll down her cheeks.

Wang Jian continued, "I'm not asking for you to do anything, nor am I asking for you to love me. I just don't want you to push me away. Without you, I don't know what I will become. I might even forget how to smile or stand...."

He then gave a mocking laugh, "Someone like me, who even I don't respect, doesn't deserve you. I don't deserve the amazing you. I don't have the charisma, nor wisdom that Guild Master has. But, the love that I have for you will never change. Rainy, I love you, and I don't ask that you return those feelings, nor do ask that you acknowledge me or anything. All I want is to stay by your side and watch over you. I love you, I really really love you...."

Rainy's two eyes began to quiver, and she cried, "I'm sorry... I'm sorry, I can't.... I can't right now. I.... Brother, he...."

Wang Jian choked a little, "That's ok, I'm still young, I can keep on waiting for you...."

.....

"So romantic...."

Wan Er thoughtfully muttered as she leaned closer to the door.

I also leaned forward and said, "Wan Er, don't take up so much space, let me see too..."

“No, a heartless bastard like you would never understand!”

“Who said I wouldn’t understand?”

As we argued about it, suddenly a “Pa!” Sounded out and the doors lock broke off. Wan Er and I immediately lost balance. While I was falling, I reached out and spun around, catching Wan Er in my arms to protect her from the fall. “Pa!” We hit the ground. So painful!

“Wu....” Wan Er lay on my chest as she rubbed her shoulder and cried a little in pain. She then looked up at me.

I also looked down at her, only to see that the two mounds under the little miss’ T-shirt were pressing against my chest. I could feel the warmth from her body radiating at me, and the squishiness was just amazing....

“You....” Wan Er’s cheeks were completely red, her beautiful eyes were filled with embarrassment, “Why are you still looking!”

I immediately looked away, “Wan Er, hurry up and get off me...”

“Why?!”

“If you stay like this, there’s going to be a reaction....”

“Ah?” Wan Er exclaimed. Her face completely red, she stood up, and then straightened out her skirt. She then reached a hand out to pull me up.

At that moment, Wang Jian and Rainy looked towards us, both shocked. Rainy’s small mouth widened into an O, “Guild Master, Cang Tong, what are you guys doing, hiding in there?”

Wan Er and I both jolted. Feeling guilty, we didn’t know what to say and just looked at each other. After a few seconds, Wan Er tried to mumble an explanation of what happened. Finally, I said, “Wan Er said that there wasn’t any toilet paper in the bathroom and had me come.....”

Wan Er blushed, and though she looked as though she wanted to bite my head off, she didn’t respond. All she did was purse her lips and say, “Hurry up and go back pig, don’t annoy me to death...”

I reached out and grabbed Wan Er's small hand, making a successful escape. The two of us ran down the KTV hallway, all the way back to our private room

I felt an indescribably sweet feeling in my heart. Was this the feeling of love? That old geezer told me that love was a type of strength, but it could also be a type of obstacle. It was either the supporting force of a practitioner, or it could become a practitioner's trial. As for me, I wasn't sure which it was yet.

.....

When we returned to our KTV private room, Fox and Old K were singing a noisy, cacophonous duet. Matcha sat on the side with Wolf, Moon Feather and Tang Xin, and they drank while having a light conversation. When they saw Wan Er and I come back, they immediately pulled us over into the group. Dong Cheng Yue was bright red from the alcohol. Wolf raised a bottle and clinked it against Dong Cheng's and said, "Beautiful Dong Cheng, why don't I see your bodyguard The Seventh Tang today?"

Dong Cheng pursed her lip, "I don't know. I didn't tell him when I logged off..."

I smiled, "Are you still mad at Tang Qi? There really is no need. He didn't do anything wrong anyway. Everyone has their own leader and orders to follow. As a bodyguard, however, he is pretty well qualified, and pretty strong."

Dong Cheng spun around and looked at me, "Who told him to make 4000 of [Zhan Long]'s members lose 10 levels? Did you forget about that debt? Do you not hate him for that?"

I silently pondered about it for a few seconds and then raised my fist, "I hate the cruel methods that [Hero's Mound] had used. I hate how Q-Sword had committed all kinds of crimes against us. But, we still have a long future ahead of us in the game, and [Zhan Long] will undoubtedly bump heads against [Hero's Mound] time and time again. Just one defeat doesn't prove anything. If Tang Qi wants to stay in [Hero's Mound], then let him stay there. Either way, only when he is supporting Q-Sword, that

venerable enemy, will [Zhan Long] become even stronger!”

Wan Er smiled, “Yup, the stronger the enemy, the stronger [Zhan Long] will become!”

I nodded and explained, “Dong Cheng, later, tell Tang Qi to not let the events in the game affect his relations in real life. After all, he is getting paid by your old man to be with you, and he’s pretty nice to you.”

“Alright....” Dong Cheng bit her lip and said, “Every time I think of how Melon’s sister, Tang Xing, Wang Jian and the others had been killed and forced to lose ten levels, fury would just start to fill up my gut. Li Xiao Yao, look into my eyes and tell me, if you were in the Purple Demon Forest ambushing [Hero’s Mound] would you personally kill Tang Qi?”

I jolted, and then slowly said, “Nevermind, talking about stuff like that is pointless. Everyone’s perspective is different. Tang Qi has been a student of the Shu Mountain Tang Sect ever since he was a kid. Maybe his sense of loyalty is even stronger than ours. You can’t blame this entire event on him. Dong Chen, if you’re angry, then next time, when [Zhan Long] is fighting with [Hero’s Mound] then how about you kill Tang Qi. Just use your fire spells to instantly kill him, or your ice skills to slowly kill him. You could even kill him in his sleep. Aren’t those all dependent on your mood anyway....”

Dong Cheng blushed, “Who wants to kill him in his sleep!? Hmph, do you not understand my heart? For a high level skill like killing him in his sleep, I’ll only do that for you....”

My mouth twitched, “There you go again. We were just talking normally. Damn, why are you hugging me....”

Matcha, Wolf and the others laughed. Wan Er seemed to be helpless and pulled at my arm as she watched us play.

.....

I don’t know how much more time passed, but everyone had drank their fill. Right at that moment, my phone suddenly rang. It was Qing Qian’s number, and I immediately picked it up—

“Qing Qian, what’s up?”

“Brother Xiao Yao!” Qing Qian’s voice was urgent, “Hurry up and get online, something big has happened!”

“What?”

“Ba Huang City... Ba Huang City’s Duke Luo Lei has given the command, that in the courtyard of the royal palace, he will, to the helpless Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, burn them to dust!”

“What!?” I suddenly stood up from the sofa, my voice trembling, “Didn’t Luo Lei agree to us, and Angela, that he wouldn’t kill Chi Yu Han? This... isn’t he going back on his word?!”

Qing Qian said, “Brother, you still don’t get it? Chi Yu Han has the strength of the Holy Domain, it’s just been sealed. Either way, he is still a great worry for Luo Lei, and so Luo Lei wants to deal with him quickly. The poor Chi Yu Han had given up all of his fight and followed us back to Ba Huang City, only to end up in such a situation. He and Chi Yan have pretty much been used and then tossed away, right?”

I gritted my teeth, “I cannot let Chi Yu Han die, or else I’ll feel guilty my whole entire life. Even if he’s just a pile of numbers, I can’t let this happen!”

Qing Qian exclaimed, “Brother Xiao Yao, what are you planning?”

I said in a low voice, “Go to Ba Huang City and persuade Luo Lei. If I can’t persuade him, then I’ll go to the Royal Courtyard and invade the execution stage!”

“Eh....” Qing Qian hesitated, and then smiled, “Alright, now I’m sure that the person who picked up the phone is Brother Xiao Yao, only you would think of doing something so crazy. Hurry up, I’m waiting for you!”

“Ok!”

.....

I hung up the phone, and gave a brief explanation to everyone. The party was over and everyone went back to their own rooms to prepare!

At the bottom of the stairs, I waved my hand at some people who were hiding not far in the distance. It was Lin Tian Nan's people who were sent here to protect the little miss. Too bad I had already figured them out. I waved at them to come over with the car. Not long after, we arrived at Liu Hua University, I took the two girls back to the girls dorm, and then dashed back to my own room. Online!

"Shua!"

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City. I first fixed up my equipment a little and replenished my potions. When I finished my preparations, I created a party and invited the ten people who were originally part of the quest. But that wasn't enough. I then had Wolf, Old K, and Matcha each create a 1000 man team of [Zhan Long] elites to gather at Ba Huang city.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and immediately walked forward. I lead them all into the palace and ran straight for the great hall.

"Sha sha...."

My Cloud Stepping Boots stepped onto the red carpet laid across the great steps. It was at that moment that I understood, that this red carpet was dyed in blood. It was to display the fear and terror that was associated with royal power. There wasn't anything that Luo Lei wouldn't do. Chi Yan and Chi Yu Han were the perfect examples. When needed, he would bring back a strong general from the garrisons, and after they had accomplished their task, he would kill them. It was the same with Yue Fei, Han Xin and Li Shan*.

*TL Note: Famous generals who were killed by their leaders in Chinese history.

.....

"Little hero, why have you come here today?!" Luo Lei suddenly stood up from the throne and said a sentence that almost made me laugh out loud.

Standing before all of the officials, I shivered for a second, and then looked at Luo Lei, Your majesty, you promised us that you wouldn't kill

Chi Yu Han. Why is it, that before the day is even over, you have decided to use the fire punishment on Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing?”

Luo Lei’s face turned dark, “This is something that everyone here has already discussed. As an adventurer, you shouldn’t be interfering with our decisions, isn’t that right?”

I gave a slight smile and said, “That’s right. I’m just a small adventurer, and I don’t understand any big picture ideas. But I do know, that Chi Yu Han has already put down all of his past hostility. If my lord were to kill him now, then that would be going against justice, and it would be going against the laws of a generous knight. Duke Luo Lei, you are the leader of Ba Huang City, a hero that everyone respects. Is this really something you should be doing?”

On the side, Angela gritted her teeth and then softly said, “Don’t say anymore... I beg you.... No more....”

Luo Lei raised his eyebrows, and then pulled out his sword and pointed it at me, “Guards, drag this youngster out. Even if you are Dragon City Frost’s student, that does not mean you can do whatever you want here!”

“No need to drag me out!”

I raised my arm and said, “I can walk on my own...”

Chapter 497: Justice of the Human Realm

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and turned around to leave. I took Wan Er, Qing Qian, Li Mu and the rest back out the palace hall. Li Mu quietly said, “Now what do we do? Luo Lei that old geezer is determined to kill Chi Yu Han. What options do we have left?”

I furrowed my brows and said, “There’s no other way. I’m planning on forcing my way onto the execution stage and saving Chi Yu Qing and Chi Yu Han. But, that might lead to everyone being seen as an enemy of Ba Huang City.”

Wan Er gave a light nod and said, “Yes, this is very serious business. We must make sure that we plan out every move, thoroughly, or else we’ll implicate everyone in [Zhan Long]!”

Li Mu and Wang Jian both smiled, “It’s nothing. We don’t care about that. As long as we’re with the Guild Master, Brother Xiao Yao, then there’s nothing wrong with being chased after. Who doesn’t want to do something crazy while they’re young?”

I gave a wry smile and said, “Alright, then how about we go crazy this time, for the sake of our promise to Chi Yu Han! Us ten people are going to enter the palace gardens and force our way in and save Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. Matcha and Old K will meet us with our people and block the army and the guards and send us out of the city. We’ll do that. Our only job is to bring Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing out of there alive!”

“Alright!”

.....

Everyone went around the royal palace, and headed straight for the gardens. In the distance, we could see that there were already quite a few NPC guards guarding the entrance. I glanced at them and said, “These are all Lv 90 Phantom Tier NPC’s. They don’t seem to have any strength. Later, I’ll charge straight through them. Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, Wan Er and Little Dance will go and clear out the area. Let’s first get into the gardens and plan out the rest later. We must be fast. Hit them with all

we've got, and finish them before they call the other guards. If the other guards come, then we'll have a problem!"

Wan Er nodded and said, "Understood, you have to be careful!"

"Ok!"

I raised my sword with both my hands and walked forward. At that moment, a guard holding a halberd shouted, "My lord, the Duke has given us orders, to stop anybody from entering the execution stage!"

I furrowed my brows and looked into the distance. All I saw was Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing tightly bound in chains to the cross. Chi Yu Han's armor had been peeled off, and you could see the dried blood on the tattered remains of his clothing. His hair was scattered. Who would have thought that the respectful Sword Saint, would arrive in this state.

A few soldiers raised stick of fire and walked over. "Shua!" The hay lit up.

I abruptly gripped the long sword in my hand and shouted, "Move away!"

Two guards raised their halberd and said, "Adventurer, even though your street cred is extremely high, but if you are planning on going against royal orders, then we have the right to kill you on the spot!"

I smiled and charged forward. I threw a [Wind Blade] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and shattered one of the halberds in a guard's hand. Then I slashed with my Cold Iron Sword and cut down the other guard. A whole team of NPC guards also rushed forward. I raised both swords, and raging winds began to rise around me. Suddenly, I activated [Sword Tempest] and "Hong!" Forced down the great gate, killing all of the NPC team.

Behind me, Dancing Forest shot a [Hell's Meteor Shower], while Qing Qian used a [Grip of the Firefox] and a [Glacial Hammer]!

"Ding!"

System Notification: You have already triggered a battle. Do you and

your team accept an SSS Tier Main Quest [Justice of the Human Realm]!

.....

Without any hesitation, I used my position as the leader of the team and accepted the quest!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations! You and your team have accepted the SSS Tier Main Quest [Justice of the Human Realm]!

Quest Details: Kill your way into the royal palace and save Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. However, you must be careful. All people who participate in this event will be chased after for the initial 24 hours of this quest. Furthermore, Ba Huang City will list all participants as wanted, and all of the city’s NPCs and players will hunt down the participants. You will then suffer a punishment worse than you can imagine!

.....

Without any hesitation, I charged forward. I met with the guards face on and slaughtered them. My Flaming Tiger God immediately roared and charged forward. I then used a [Blade Rush] and rushed 5 yards forward. I then swung both of my swords and advanced as I killed several NPCs. In the distance, I saw that the two posts were catching on fire. Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing were in the middle of the flames, bound by the chains and forced to cook alive. Their strength was sealed and they couldn’t force their way out. With their superhuman durability, how could they possibly withstand the pain for such a long time?!

Beside the execution stage, a general pulled out his sword and shouted, “Guards, kill these people. Damn it, to think that they’d actually charge into the royal palace, are they crazy!?”

It was none other than the commander of the Desolate Dragon Army—Forgotten Sea. He was known as the number one strongest man in Ba Huang City. Of course, that’s without Dragon City. Now that Dragon City and Ba Huang City have allied together, Luo Lin and Frost’s strength are

well above that of Forgotten Sea.

.....

A group of NPC archers all shot their arrows. I calmly activated my [Wall of Dou Qi]. “Keng keng keng!” My Flame Prison Armor blocked the arrows coming at me. Even though it didn’t hurt that much, there was far too many. Within seconds, my health fell 50%. Even I was feeling nervous. Wan Er and Li Mu had all been blocked outside, and there were more and more NPC armies. They were about to set up a formation.

I gritted my teeth and activated [Dragon Transformation]. With a dragon’s roar, the armor around me turned into dragon’s scales and the two swords I had in my hand also underwent the transformation. I immediately obtained the ability to fly. I lunged forward with my Cloud Stepping Boots, and flew straight at Chi Yu Han.

“Pa!”

I grabbed the wooden poles, there was just a step between Chi Yu Han and I. He widened his eyes and stared at me, “You.... what are you doing?”

I smiled and said, “Taking you and your sister out of here!”

“Are.... are you crazy?” Chi Yu Han exclaimed, “You’re an adventurer of Ba Huang City. How can you disobey a royal command?”

“I don’t have to be loyal to a king, I just need to be loyal to my friends!”

Chi Yu Han’s eyes were filled with puzzlement. Maybe he really couldn’t understand the customs of humans. But very soon, he reacted and said, “This iron chain that is binding me is forged from a thousand year frozen iron. Even a thousand ton hammer cannot break it open. You have no way with it....”

I didn’t say anything. I just raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw it at the chain with a “Keng!”. Spark flew, leaving a deep dent in the iron. Yup, the Saint Tier Dragon Reservoir Sword can cut it. And so, I threw several more cuts. At that moment, Chi Yu Han shouted, “Careful, behind you!”

I felt it, it was an attack from Forgotten Sea. He was one of the BOSSes of Ba Huang City, and definitely shouldn't be underestimated!

I used [Haste] and raised my two swords in front of my chest. Forgotten Sea's long sword carried flames, it was [Hao Ran's Slice]!

"Keng!"

I felt as though I had been hit by a heavy hammer and was pushed backwards. "Keng!" I was rammed into the wood and I dropped 5000 health. Looks like Forgotten Sea's attack was but 30% of Chi Yu Hans'. It was 't that much!

I raised a hand and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out of its sheath with a "Keng!" And it flew straight towards Forgotten Sea. I then turned around and cut apart the chains with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, while giving myself some health. I then took two more attacks on my back from Forgotten Sea. At that moment, blood started to drip from my mouth. Chi Yu Han's eyes turned red as he watched me, "Youngster, you're suffering so much...."

I then threw another slice, and finally "Keng!", the chain broke apart. I reached out and caught Chi Yu Han's weak body. Without a moment's hesitation, I immediately flew towards Chi Yu Qing. I changed the attack path of the [Blade Rush] and used my Dragon Reservoir Sword to attack. I threw 6 cuts. Chi Yu Qing's body loosened and I caught her. With both BOSSes in my arms, I flew out.

Behind me, Forgotten Sea angrily shouted. He cut down my Flaming Tiger God and shouted, "Bastard, where are you taking these two criminals? Are you crazy?!"

On the ground Wan Er raised her Dragon's Kiss dagger and charged her way through the encirclement and shouted, "Pig, run! I will hold off Forgotten Sea!"

"Careful!"

I quickly charged out. Behind me, Wan Er activated her [Blade of the Death God]. Her dagger flew right at Forgotten Sea. Right afterwards, the

Dragon's Kiss Dagger let loose with a [Flying Dagger]+[Blade of the Death God]. Forgotten Sea's body trembled. He gritted his teeth and began to condense his Dou Qi. He suddenly swung his longsword and threw a cut, "Wench, get out!"

"Peng!"

It was such a heavy attack. After all, Wan Er was an Assassin. Her body flew out like a bullet. She didn't even have the chance to pull out her Iron Umbrella. Miserably, she fell into the rock garden.

Li Mu and Wang Jian both charged forward, "Hurry up, run this way!"

Right in front of the royal palace, a group of guards charged over, but on the outside, Old K, Bai Qi, Dong Cheng Lei, and One Second Hero had already lead a group of [Zhan Long] players over. With an angry bellow, they charged right at the palace guards. Once they started fighting with the NPCs, the player names immediately turned red. This meant that the [Zhan Long] players were now enemies of Ba Huang City!

Holding Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, I dashed outward. I didn't even spend a lot of effort to attack, and just used [Blade Spin] and [Sword Tempest]. Darling Duck was spam healing me while Dancing Forest raised her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou to help cover my retreat.

In the palace hall, Luo Lei raised his sword and walked over, eyes blood red. He roared, "This mob of disgraceful adventurers have really gone crazy. These madmen, must be completely massacred, or else Ba Huang City will never be at peace! Send down my command, I am going to hunt them all down and kill them!"

Angela raised her Destroyer, and widened her eyes as she stared at me, "You guys.... What are you guys doing.... Why has this developed to this point..."

.....

"Ding!"

System Notification: Players, please be aware, Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Yue Qing Qian, General Li Mu, General Wang Jian,

Hero Ran Min, Dancing Forest, Wolf Totem and 247 others have started a rebellion. From this point onwards, until 24 hours later, killing any of these players will lead to an abundant reward from the Duke.

Furthermore, killing these rebel players will lead to one piece of Saint Tier equipment as a reward. Please, do not miss this great opportunity!

.....

This system notification was basically adding snow to the frost. Just as I thought, this quest can oppose the heavens. This is an extremely grim test that [Zhan Long] is destined to undergo. It's possible that we will be hunted by every player in Ba Huang City!

My heart was starting to feel a little doubt, "Maybe, I shouldn't have dragged everyone into this...."

General Bai Qi raised his battle axe and walked beside me and laughed, "What are you talking about. At most it's losing one level, that's nothing!"

Li Mu nodded as well, "I want to mobilize the entire [Zhan Long] guild to participate in this battle. I will make it clear that those who don't want to participate don't have to. This way, we can tell just exactly which players we can rely on, and who joined just to waste time here...."

Wan Er smiled and nodded, "Ok, this is a pretty good opportunity to strengthen our guild's bonds!"

.....

A few minutes later, Qing Qian smiled, "So aggressive. 97.8% of the players who are online agree to battle. This cohesion has to be number one on the Chinese Server!"

I nodded, "Be careful, we're almost at the Northern Gate!"

Chapter 498: The World as the Enemy

“Don’t worry....”

Qing Qian fluttered her eyes and smiled, “Matcha and I have already made preparations. The NPCs at the North Gate have all been completely killed. The only problem is that all of the [Zhan Long] members that have killed an NPC have become red names, and so, some have been killed by other players. The reward that the system is giving is just too good, and so some people just couldn’t help it and acted...”

Matcha threw a [Phantom Ray Slash] while retreating and said, “The system really is cruel. Clearly they are pushing [Zhan Long] to the edge.”

Wan Er caught up to us with only critical health left. With her clothes fluttering behind her, she smiled, “We have to trust in the system. If this is an SSS Tier Main Quest scene, then as long as we get past these 24 hours, and Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing haven’t died, then [Zhan Long] will receive a reward that is well worth all the trouble!”

“Yup!”

.....

The once familiar Ba Huang City North Gate Marketplace, looked much different at this moment. We saw a group of NPC soldiers in battle against a player made formation. Tang Xing raised a long halberd and shouted, “Hold off the NPCs, let Guild Master and the others take Chi Yu Han out! All [Zhan Long] players, be aware, do not attack players that have not attacked us. Only if you’ve been attacked, can you fight back!”

At the gate, there were at least a thousand [Zhan Long] players that had been split in two and were fighting off both NPCs and players. One Second Hero leapt onto a statue at the North Gate and raised his spear up high and shouted, “All Ba Huang City players, this is one of [Zhan Long]’s quests. Please, do not attack any of [Zhan Long]’s red name players. We are not your enemies. I hope that everyone will give [Zhan Long] this favor. I, Cheng Yong Jie, thank everyone!”

Before he even finished talking, “Pa!” an iron arrow smacked right into One Second Hero’s forehead. He immediately pulled it out, and swung his spear, “F*ck, that’s just too disrespectful, no?!”

Dancing Forest raised her long bow and “Shua!” A [Meteor Shot] flew out, killing the Archer in one blow. Her beautiful eyes were filled with killing intent, “What’s the point of talking with this bunch of f*cking trash, hurry up and break us out of here! Boss, where are we heading towards?”

I said without thinking, “Green Qilin Abyss, escort Chi Yu Han to the Green Qilin Abyss, that’s our territory!”

“Alright!”

I then reached out and “Shua!” Released Chi Yu Han from his magic sealing chains. I then asked, “Do you have the strength to fight?”

Chi Yu Han’s face turned green and he shook his head, “I’m very sorry... all of my strength has been used up. Those magic binding chains have been using up my Dou Qi energy this entire time. For the moment, I cannot help you. However, walking on my own is no problem!”

I nodded and said, “Alright!”

I then released Chi Yu Qing from her magic binding chains. However, her training was far worse than her brothers, and so she didn’t even have the strength to walk. I then picked her up with my left hand, and raised my Dragon Reservoir with my right and charged forward towards the North Gate bridge. There were a dozen Ba Huang Players lined up over there, a total of 4 Archers, 5 heavy armor types, and 3 Mages.

The Berserker at the front raised his battle axe and shouted, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, put down the NPC in your hands, or else don’t blame me if I don’t show any mercy!”

I couldn’t help but smile, “You want to take this NPC and trade it for some rewards?”

“So what?”

“Do you think that you’ll even have the life left to trade it in?” I smiled, “Friend, please move away, or else don’t blame me for not showing any mercy!”

“Mind yourself!” The Berserker raised his battle axe and charged forward, “Brothers, don’t worry about anything else, just kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. If you kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, then the first Saint Tier equipment will basically become ours! Xiao Yao Zi Zai has at least 7 or 8 Saint Tier equipments, any one of them dropping is enough to let us live in luxury for a year!”

These stupid bastards, for the sake of money, they were willing to do anything.

I raised my sword and flew forward. My Cloud Stepping Boots went in a diagonal line, dodging quite a few [Scattered Shot] attacks. My left arm then jolted, dealing a [Combo] right into the Berserker. Blood spurted from the slice, and he was instantly killed. I then spun around, and activated [Sword Tempest], throwing everyone around me into the air. In just those three attacks, I killed an Archer and a Swordsman. Seeing the situation turn bad, the Mages used a [Dimensional Leap] and retreated backwards, only to be killed by Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng’s long range attacks. This time we had to be merciless, or else other people would think that [Zhan Long] was easy to bully, and the number of people that would hunt us down would increase.

.....

Holding Chi Yu Qing, I led Chi Yu Han out of the city as quickly as I could. Once my Cloud Stepping Boots hit grass, I let out a sigh of relief. However, another group of players charged from the bushes to attack us. It was players from [Valley of the Gods]. There were around 500 of them, and were lead by the Vice Guild Master War Tent. War Tent swung the long sword in his hand with a cruel smile, “Charge, while [Zhan Long]’s players are still in Ba Huang City, kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

I could hear the players from [Valley of the Gods] coming at us from all directions. Then, around 100 yards away from me, “Shua Shua Shua!”

Wang Jiang lead a group of Division One players right at them. He pointed his sword forward and shouted, "Kill them! Surround the [Valley of the Gods]' players that War Tent has brought. To think that they'd have the guts to try make an enemy out of [Zhan Long], kill them all!"

I shouted, "Wang Jiang, don't get obsessed with the battle, once the rest of our team catches up, immediately retreat!"

"Understood, Guild Master!"

Looking behind me, numerous bodies of [Zhan Long] lined along the bridge and in the marketplace. For 24 hours, these bodies won't disappear, that was one of the rules of the SSS Tier Main Quest. Any players that have died within the quest cannot revive for another 24 hours, or else there would be an endless revival, an awful bug in a battle type quest like this.

.....

Behind me, I saw that Wan Er, Qing Qian, Li Mu, and Wang Jian had all caught up. Even though there were quite a few players in Ba Huang City, not everyone there wanted to pick a fight with [Zhan Long]. Besides, our players were going to be hunted for 24 hours, that was plenty of time to fix up equipment and make full preparations. Of course, [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes], [Hero's Mound] and [Thousand Burial] definitely weren't going to let up a chance like this.

I dashed through the Ba Huang Forest, leading around 1500 of [Zhan Long]'s players. We moved in a circle formation, while I stood at the forefront. It would be a humiliation to me if they were to make me hide at the center of the circle. Besides, with my stats and skills, it would be a waste to not let me fight.

"Careful!"

Qing Qian looked forward and said, "There's people over there. It looks like it's a team of [Flying Dragon] players. They probably want to ambush us!"

"Be careful of [Beast Traps]!" I shouted.

A row of Mages in the front immediately reacted and activated [Revealing Light], illuminating all of our surroundings. Just as I expected, there were quite a few [Beast Traps] all around the forest. This was an Archer's fourth advancement skill. When their traps had been revealed, the Archers shot out long range attacks, destroying their [Beast Trap]. Dong Cheng flew up and opened a path for us.

"Kill!"

The sounds of battle rose from the bushes and [Flying Dragon]'s 300 man grinding team charged at us. They were too rash!

Mu Tian raised his battle axe and shouted, "Don't kill people that don't have red names! Pick out the people with red names and kill those, there are battle point rewards! The more red name players we kill, the higher chance of getting a Saint Tier equipment at the end! Brothers of [Flying Dragon], we must not miss this once in a blue moon opportunity! Even if it means that we have to die!"

The crowd of people all shouted and charged over. For the sake of money, people will die, for the sake of food, birds will die*, they're probably acting on that principle.

*TL Note: Chinese proverb

With a slight tremble, my blade cut into the crowd with a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. I then used a [Seven Stars Teleportation], and "Shua!" Moved right to beside Mu Tian. Mu Tian freaked out and immediately activated his [Berserker God] skill. Unfortunately, that skill only avoided magic damage, what use did it have against me? I stabbed my Dragon Reservoir Sword right through his chest and activated [Wind Blade] killing him in one blow!

Looking at Mu Tian's widened eyes, I smiled, "Too bad, you are destined to die before you kill even one!"

Countless arrows and spells covered the sky and flew right at us. Both sides were starting to increase the firepower. We had quite a few players that had red names, and the enemy was only attacking those players, turning them into red names in our names. We then fought back, making

it even more clear which side was which.

Li Mu, Old K, Dong Cheng Lei and One Second Hero charged at the front, quickly slashing apart the 300 people from [Flying Dragon]. Our 1500 man army advanced forward, leaving the ground covered with nearly 300 bodies!

“Shua!”

One critical health Swordsman charged at me and threw a [Fire Spear] at my shoulder. At that point I was attacking another person and couldn't dodge the attack. All I could do was take the hit, but whatever. However, right at that moment, Chi Yu Han suddenly threw out a punch. “Peng!” That poor Swordsman flew out a dozen meters, and ended up in a thorny bush.

Dou Qi energy revolved around Chi Yu Han's arm. He took a deep breath and said, “My strength is slowly recovering....”

I nodded, “That's good, or else we really won't be able to hold off Ba Huang City!”

Chi Yu Han's arm trembled, and he slowly condensed the Heaven's Spite Sword and softly said, “Don't worry, I, Chi Yu Han, will definitely not allow my friends to fight on their own!”

“Ok!”

.....

At that moment, I started hearing people charging towards us from behind. Wan Er furrowed her elegant brows and said, “Ba Huang City has sent out their NPC cavalry to hunt us down! The cavalry is relatively fast, we have to hurry up and enter into the Green Qilin Abyss to fight on the defense, or else it'll be too difficult for us to fight like this!”

“Agreed! Everyone, advance at full speed!”

However, the number of players we had with us were far too many. With a blink of an eye tens of thousands of players and countless NPCs chased up to us. Our movement speed was far slower than that of the

cavalry. Furthermore, we were slower because we had to heal ourselves.

“Not good, there’s no way for all of us to escape!” Li Mu gritted his teeth and said, “Guild Master, you take the brothers and go first! I’ll take the Valiant Bravery Camp’s 100 people to hold them off!”

I nodded, “Brother, promise to meet me in Green Qilin Abyss, alive!”

Li Mu smiled, “Alright, brother, just because of what you’ve said, I will do all I can to make it back to Qilin Abyss alive. However, the prerequisite is that you have to take Chi Yu Han alive to Green Qilin Abyss. Don’t waste everyone’s efforts. Everyone’s hoping to get a lot of rewards from this quest!”

“Yup you got it!”

.....

The number of players ahead of us was increasing steadily and I was starting to get more and more worried. The true enemy hasn’t even appeared yet. [Vanguard] will definitely try and interfere with this [Zhan Long] event. I just don’t know when Jian Feng Han plans on acting!

Chapter 499: Death Count

“Careful, it’s another wave of [Flying Dragon] players!”

Wan Er’s clear eyes stared directly in front of us as she instructed, “Yao Yan, Dong Cheng, charge forward with me. Old K, Cang Lei, cover us!”

Qing Qian looked at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, what about you?”

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and gazed worriedly behind me, “You guys take some people to charge forward. I’m going back to take a look. I don’t care how, I’m going to bring Li Mu back, alive. You guys head forward first, I’ll meet up with you guys soon!”

Qing Qian nodded.

One Second Hero raised his halberd and shouted, “There’s still 7700 yards until Green Qi Lin Abyss, charge forward!”

.....

“Sha sha....”

I left our big formation and dashed back by myself, only to see that there were players hunting us down everywhere. Quite a few players had voluntarily chosen to enter the Ba Huang City camp, and listed themselves under the list of pursuers. Furthermore, the scale of this SSS Tier Main Quest was extremely large, and a ranking system was already created—

Ba Huang City Camp:

Drunken Spear Death Count: 11

Fierce Tiger Death Count: 7

Dawn Hero Death Count: 6

War Tent Death Count: 5

Drunken Cold Rain Death Count: 4

.....

Everyone those people killed were [Zhan Long]’s players, my brothers.

There was another red ranking on the screen, for the [Zhan Long] camp. The numbers were much higher—

Chi Yu Han Camp:

Xiao Yao Zi Zai Death Count: 41

Cang Yu Death Count: 37

Dancing Forest Death Count: 34

Cang Tong Death Count: 33

General Li Mu Death Count: 31

.....

Eh, this is what it really means to be in a main quest. Us ten participants of the quest will get an extremely generous reward at the end of it; it was also similar to a city-wide event, such that the death count would determine how much experience and rewards each participant got. The only problem was that the difficulty of this quest was just too hard. Right now, practically every player and NPC in Ba Huang City have formed an army to specifically hunt down [Zhan Long], a single guild!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword gave a purple glow as I cut down a thrush. I leapt over and sprinted forward. In the distance, numerous corpses of [Zhan Long] players laid there. All of the players from the later portion of the quest had been basically killed off. Furthermore, in the open field, there was a line of NPC cavalymen passing through. Luckily I was hidden in the bushes, or else I would've been chased down by them.

“F*ck....”

I cursed under my breath. Right in front of me, a group of players rushed out. One of them was a Lv 85 Swordsman who swung his blade and laughed, “Such a great feeling! I heard that all of [Zhan Long]’s players were dragons and tigers, but in reality, they’re just mortals in the end! Under the blade of a [Skyshaker Slash] they will still die. Hei hei, everyone, work hard, and kill more [Zhan Long] players. Let’s try and get that Saint Tier equipment for ourselves!”

I squinted and saw that the Swordsman's ID was "Godly Maple Road". He was the Guild Master of the Ba Huang City ranked 17th guild, "CEO", and could be considered a pretty famous person in Ba Huang City. Even though I didn't know him personally, now that I've bumped into him, I might as well take this opportunity to duel. Either way, he only brought around a dozen people. If they were to bump into Li Mu, he might not be able to deal with them on his own.

"Shua...."

I activated [Haste] and charged right at Godly Maple Road from my hiding spot. My Cold Iron Sword flew before me with the power of [Blade Spin].

Who knew that Godly Maple Road's movements in the game were actually pretty good. Once he saw the bushes moving, he immediately activated a [Dou Qi Armor] and shifted his boots, dodging the first attack of my Cold Iron Sword. I had already gotten close to him and light reflected off of my Dragon Reservoir Blade, as I threw a quick slash right at his throat.

"Not good, it's Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

The second Godly Maple Road shouted, he quickly acted and lowered his blade, activating a [Blade Rush], dodging the attack from my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

"MISS ! "

He really does have amazing maneuvers! Godly Maple Road spun around and shouted, "Surround him!"

The other three Swordsman charged over, their blades glowing with the light from [Skyshaker Slash] and [Combo], cutting off all possible escape routes. To be able to get ranked 17th in Ba Huang City, this guild really had a few talents!

"Pa!"

Calmly, I reached up to grab the returning Cold Iron Sword and suddenly shifted to dodge Godly Maple Road's attack. At the same time,

with my battle boots, I stepped out, using my foot as an axis to turn around. “Keng keng keng!” My Cold Iron Sword parried the [Skyshaker Slash] from two other Swordsmen. With my right arm, I activated [Wind Blade], and my Dragon Reservoir Cut right into the neck of the fourth Swordsman!

“3371 ! ”

I then lunged forward with my Cold Iron Sword, killing him in one attack. At the same time, I suddenly dipped downward, and dodged a swing from Godly Maple Road. I then kicked him in the stomach, forcing him to retreat backwards several steps before opening my palm and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“3427 ! ”

That [Dou Qi Armor] ignored 50% of the damage, making it a little hard for me to kill him!

Winds began to rise around me, becoming more and more violent and I lunged forward with a [Sword Tempest]. At that moment, all of the grass and bushes around me were practically demolished; all the Archers and Healers that were near me were instantly killed.

Godly Maple Road had parried some of the damage with his sword in front of his chest, but the force of the skill had forced him the retreat even more. His face was covered in injuries, and all he could do was stand there, stupefied. “F*ck, are Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s maneuvers on par with Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword’s? How the f*ck can he move like that, to actually be able to block the encirclement of four close combat experts!?”

One critical health Knight raised his spear and retreated, “Guild Master, let’s retreat. We’re too far from everyone else. We need to hurry up and retreat, or else we’ll be killed!”

Godly Maple Road nodded, but just as he was about to leave, I raised my left arm in a sudden motion and activated [Dragon’s Hook]!

“Shua!”

The Dragon’s hook pierced Godly Maple Road’s chest. This was a 54

yard attack. I then pulled on the Dragon's hook, dragging Godly Maple Road back towards me. My Dragon Reservoir Sword began to glow and Godly Maple Road's face turned purple, "What the f*ck, what kind of special skill is this, it's too shameless...."

"Ka Cha!"

Armor ripped apart, the [CEO]'s Guild Master was killed just like that. He dropped a Purple Tier helmet which I picked up. Then, with a slash, I scared the remaining three people into scrambling towards the forest. There was no need to chase after them. Right now, finding Li Mu was the top priority.

I opened up my map and looked at the player dots. Just as I expected, there was an orange dot to my right. Yup, it was Li Mu. Of his ten man team, he was the only one left.

There was less than 100 yards between us. I could even hear the clash of weapons further in the forest. I immediately took my Flaming Tiger God and sprinted forward.

"Hua La!"

I ignored the pain of the thorns and charged forward. A small open space appeared. Around 40 people were surrounding Li Mu; they were all players from [Wrath of the Heroes]. All of the close combat players formed a shield to prevent Li Mu's attacks, while the Archers and Mages dealt long range attacks. Li Mu looked like he only had around 30% health left, his armor was tattered and bloody. The Tian Chen Sword had cut down several of the enemy's Monks and Knights.

.....

The leader of the [Wrath of the Heroes] was someone I knew, it was the Lv 86 Swordsman Dawn Hero, Thousand Suns over Snowy Land's first boyfriend, EX-boyfriend. Of course, there has to have an "ex" in front of that, since it was already over between them.

Dawn Hero gripped a sharp blade and gave a cold smile, "Well well, if it isn't the legendary, core of [Zhan Long], the left and right arm of Xiao

Yao Zi Zai, the number one player of Valiant Bravery, General Li Mu. Where's all that strength and arrogance now? Ha ha ha, from what I see, you're just like a dead dog. Just what can you do? Why don't you just wait for your fate to come to an end!"

I softly said in the team chat, "Li Mu, I'm behind you. Do not worry, use [Chen Seal] to hold out for 7 seconds. Leave the rest to me!"

Li Mu secretly got happy. Right as his health hit the bottom, he activated the [Chen Seal], sealing himself in ice. For 7 seconds, he wouldn't take any damage, and perfect MISSES flew up from his body!

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged in without any hesitation. From a distance, I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. At the same time, casting onto Li Mu a Lv 10 [Heal]. Even though there wasn't any additional heal effect, it still gave him around 1500 health, which was better than nothing. I then activated [Blade Spin] and set a specific path. "Shua! "The Cold Iron Sword flew out, killing the enemy's Mages, Archers, and Musketeers. At the same time, my Flaming Tiger God roared and activated [Burstfire Raid] right into the crowd of long range players. Under such an abrupt barrage of attacks, the players of [Wrath of the Heroes] were completely caught unprepared. One after another, the [Mana Shield]s of the Mages broke. Before they could even activate their [Dimension Leaps], I already activated a [Sword Tempest], laying several bodies on the ground.

"F*ck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai came!" Dawn Hero raised his long sword, and knowing that he was far out of his depth, he immediately turned around to leave. He commanded the rest of the players to surrender as well.

I glanced around and saw that my Dragon's Hook cool down was over. I raised my hand and activated the attack!

"Pu chi!"

The Dragon's Hook pierced through Dawn Hero's chest and pulled him back to me in a flash. But this Dawn Hero had guts, and he took the pain and thrust his blade into the ground to stop himself.

I shouted and pulled hard with my right arm. "Peng!" Dawn Hero

involuntarily flew straight back at me. Even though his strength was pretty good, but compared to my own, it was nothing!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword swung forward, and with two cuts, I sliced through Dawn Hero's [Dou Qi Armor] and I looked back at Li Mu.

Li Mu was no idiot, and immediately understood my intention. He swung his Tian Chen and threw a [Skyshaker Slash]+[Covering Sword Slash], shattering Dawn Hero. At the same time, Li Mu smiled at him, "Even a dying dog has its moments of rebellion, see?"

Dawn Hero widened his mouth, and blood spurted out. With that, he knelt to the ground.

.....

I put away the Dragon's Hook, and grabbed Li Mu's Arm, "Yo, what are you doing?"

"Hunting them down!"

"Yea right, hurry up and run for your life. This place is covered with people trying to hunt us down and you're trying to pursue them? We have to go back to the Green Qi Lin Abyss and set up our formations. If we just keep on trying to run for our lives, then all of our people will get killed, and we can't increase our death count at all.

"Alright!"

Chapter 500: Raise the Gun-point an Inch

I fought side by side with Li Mu and made our way out of the encirclement. When we stepped into Butterfly Forest, it proved that Green Qilin Abyss was not far from us.

Right before us, a 3000 man [Zhan Long] team appeared. Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing were guarded by Wan Er and Qing Qian as they quickly retreated. It was just that Li Mu and I were moving fast enough, so we managed to catch up to them!

“Brother Li Mu, you came back alive!?” Wolf whooped.

Li Mu nodded, “Yup, thankfully Guild Master came back in time to help me out, or else I would’ve definitely been killed off by those bastards from [Wrath of the Heroes]. F*ck, they’re just too shameless....”

Qing Qian asked, “Of the 100 people who were bringing up the rear, are you the only one left?”

Li Mu’s voice turned tense, “Yea, I was the only one that could charge out of here. The other brothers all died in battle. We suffered too many losses....”

I gritted my teeth, “Let’s hurry, the enemy armies are getting close!”

Wan Er raised her dagger and walked forward saying, “Not good, there seems to be an ambush up ahead!”

“Oh? I don’t see any red dots!” One Second Hero said.

Fox squinted his eyes, “Hey, someone from Second Division, come over here and look!”

Very soon, a Moon Elf Knight carried a halberd flew over. Before she even reached the sky above the forest, the leaves suddenly began to move and rows of NPC archers suddenly appeared. They shot their bows, and the Knight gave an agonizing scream as she fell to the ground.

We had to pass through this forest to get to Green Qilin Forest, or else we would have to try and go around the Bowl Valley again. However, after

so many battles and campaigns in Bowl Valley, it is now a cursed map, and we were definitely not going there. Otherwise we'll be ambushed by [Vanguard] or some other guild and [Zhan Long]'s 3000 man army will really have it in for ourselves.

In the forest, a man slowly walked over with a battle axe. He had a commander's insignia on his shoulder. It was Ba Huang City's fourth army, Fierce Tiger Army's leader—The Barbarian Lachlan. Lachlan's battle axe was covered in flames and he had a smile on his lips, "Ignorant adventurers, did you think that you could take Chi Yu Han, that criminal, and escape from here? I, Lachlan, advise that you give up. Some of you have lead great achievements for Ba Huang City. But, if you are going to stay obstinate, then you will inevitably bring destruction to your self. Hand over Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, and I will plead mercy for you to Duke Luo Lei!"

I gripped my sword and walked over with a smile, "When I brought Chi Yu Han to Ba Huang City, didn't Luo Lei also promise me that he wouldn't kill Chi Yu Han? In the end, not two days passed before he sent out an order to burn the two siblings to death. For a vile king who doesn't keep his promises, where do I find trust?"

Lachlan roared, "Insolence!"

As he talked, he pointed his battle axe towards the forest behind him and said, "There are 5000 of the most elite archers from Ba Huang City in this forest. Do you think that you and your broken team can make it out of here alive?"

"We can try!"

I swung the Dragon Reservoir Sword in my hand and said in the guild chat, "Wei Liang, Tang Xin, has everyone gotten here yet?"

Wei Liang immediately responded, "Yup, our 7000 main force is here. We've already arrived at the northern open space of Butterfly Forest. We can see the back of Fierce Tiger's army. As long as Brother Xiao Yao gives the command, then we can launch our pincer attack!"

"Ok, when you see me attack, then you guys start as well!"

“Alright, got it!”

.....

I pointed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and softly said, “Killing these NPC’s will also result in points and experience. Seeing as the Fierce Tiger Army is trying to block our path, there is no reason to not go to battle. Brothers! Prepare to charge! Knights and Monks stay on the frontline to draw their firepower. The 120 heavy armor players that are wearing the Garrison Outfits will create the second line of attack. Once we enter the forest, we will charge straight for the archers’ formation and then activate the skill —[Impact Roar], creating 120 shockwaves that will smash those archers!”

Li Mu and Wang Jian both nodded, “Ok, understood!”

Very soon, nearly 200 Knights and Monks stood at the front row of the formation. They all had over 10,000 health and 4000 defense. As long as they have [Heavenly Shield Wall] and [Diamond Body] up, these Lv 90 Phantom Tier monsters wouldn’t be able to budget their health!

At Li Mu’s command, everyone charged towards the forest. Countless arrows covered the sky, and “Pa pa” struck the Knight and Monk shields. Looking around, I saw that quite a few of them only had half of their health left. My heart jumped, damn, these definitely weren’t Phantom Tier NPCs. I looked over, and just as I expected, all of them were Lv 90 Thunder Tier!

“Kill!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian and I lead the charge into the archers’ encirclement. Against this many Ba Huang City archer NPCs, and gritted my teeth and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Sword Tempest]. These two area skills intertwined and cut down several archers. Wang Jian also sprinted forward and activated his [Halberd Whirlwind], while Wan Er threw a [Ice Pick Whirlwind]. Dong Cheng Yue’s [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Lance] and Dancing Forest’s [Hell’s Meteor Shower] + [Meteor Shot] activated at the same time. In seconds, we completely crushed the archer team.

“Focus the fire on Lachlan!”

Wan Er Shouted. “Keng!” She raised her Dragon’s Kiss Dagger to parry Lachlan’s battle axe. She then spun around and pulled out her Iron Umbrella with a “Peng!” And rammed Lachlan into retreat. Under a barrage of the attacks from the entire [Zhan Long] army, Lachlan, that Valkyrie Tier BOSS couldn’t take it anymore. He immediately retreated. Behind the NPCs, Wei Liang and Tang Xin both lead[Zhan Long]’s elites to charge as well. In a pincer attack from both front and back, the 120 players with Garrison Outfits continuously activated [Impact Roar]es, and the NPCs were getting killed increasingly faster. Within ten minutes, with just a hundred losses, we managed to kill 5000 NPC archers, the result was rather astounding!

“Everyone, do a simple sweep of the battlefield and then leave!”

Matcha’s shoulder had a red battle flag above her shoulder. Under her command, several Ba Huang City players appeared behind us and were scouting us out. However, now that the [Zhan Long] army consolidated into one formation, it was obvious that we had over ten thousand men in our troops. These Ba Huang City players were naturally cautious at first, and didn’t dare launch any large scale attack, because they knew that doing so now would mean death. Nobody wanted to die too early on in the battle. For gamers, being prevented from playing at all for 24 hours is an extremely painful thing.

This time, Wan Er took Yao Yan and lead the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] to bring up the rear. The rest of us headed forward towards the Green Qilin Abyss. In the distant plains, I saw numerous Ba Huang City players, hunting down our lives. They wanted to exchange my small life for those Saint Tier and Valkyrie Tier equipment.

“Sha sha....”

My boots stepped out onto the grass and I raised my hand and cast [Great Realm of Desolation], right in the midst of a few Assassins under [Stealth]. I furrowed my eyebrows as I looked around at the situation. It was starting to look worse and worse for us. It appears that the enemy far

outnumbered us. I could already see quite a few players from [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragon]. This meant that they were already planning on dealing their attack on [Zhan Long].

“Boss!”

Matcha suddenly descended from the skies and landed softly on the ground, “It’s not good. Just past this forest is an open space and we’ll reach Green Qilin Abyss, however, those plains are covered with high level NPC cavalrymen!”

“What’s the situation?”

“You’ll know when you go over to look. We’re surrounded!”

“F*ck!”

My sword drooped. I took the strong [Zhan Long] army through the forest. Before I even made it through, I could hear the hooves of hundreds of battle horses beating the ground. When I finally cut through the last brush before the plains, I jumped. The plains were covered with Ba Huang City Cavalrymen. In the distance, I could see them all lined up in formation. Goddamn, this was something that I’ve only seen once before, in the Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City battle. In the end, their sole mission now is to kill [Zhan Long]!

“F*ck....” Li Mu’s voice quavered, “Isn’t it just chasing after one player guild? Is it really this necessary to use all these hundreds of armies? There are at least 50,000 elite iron horsemen, how are we supposed to fight them?”

Wolf made a fist and said, “We’re done for. All that’s left is to fight them head on. Behind me were ten thousand of [Zhan Long]’s elites. I don’t even know how many of our players could fight our way out. Right now, nobody has mounts, while all of the NPCs has horses. Soldiers against cavalrymen, we’re at too much of a disadvantage!”

Qing Qian squinted her beautiful eyes and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, what should we do?”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and slowly walked forward.

Wordlessly, I raised my sword, and finally said, “There’s nothing to hesitate over. Brothers, follow me and charge forward! Kill as many as you can! As long as we enter the Green Qilin Abyss, it will no longer be the cavalymen’s world, and they’ll have to get off their horses and fight us on foot!”

“Charge!”

Li Mu and Wang Jian each raised their swords and [Zhan Long]’s players all charged out like a flood!

.....

Right at that moment, suddenly a figure clothed in white rode out from amidst the Ba Huang City cavalymen. It was Angela, wielding her Destroyer. Behind her rode several other cavalymen, they were all Iron Cavalymen from her Blizzard Wind Army.

I immediately raised my hand and shouted, “[Zhan Long], stop your advance!”

Li Mu and the rest all stopped and looked at me.

Angela immediately rode over to me and dismounted from her horse and said, “You know, once you step out of Ba Huang City, you’re destined to become our enemy.”

I softly said, “I don’t want to take that step, but I cannot just stand by and watch Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing get burned to death, or else I will feel guilty my entire life. The person who would’ve killed them was Luo Lei, but at the same time, it would’ve been me.”

Angela bit her lip and said, “Is it really worth it?”

I gave a wry smile, “For the sake of my dreams and ideologies, then it’s worth it. Angela, do you really want to fight against us?”

Angela’s eyes turned red and she looked away. She then smiled and jumped onto her horse and said, “Let me show you.”

She turned around and raised her Destroyer and yelled, “There are no criminals here. Everyone, advance Eastward, towards the Desolate Cloud

Swamp!”

Countless cavalrymen all charged away. Watching them leave, Li Mu and Wang Jian both dropped their jaws, “This.... You could do this too?!”

Credits

Translator: [Gravity Tales](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)